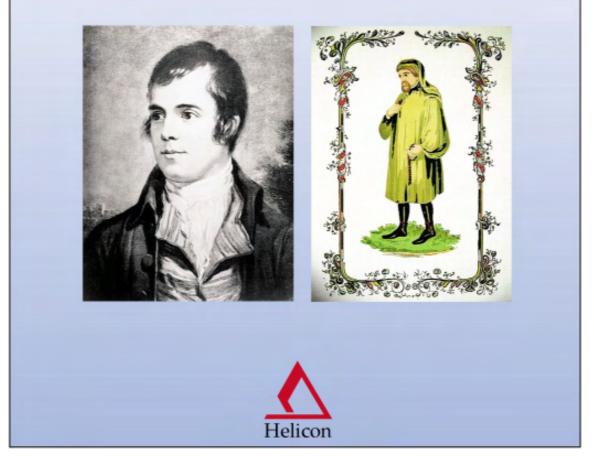
# **The HUTCHINSON**

# Encyclopedia of Literature



# The Hutchinson Encyclopedia of Literature

# Preface

*The Hutchinson Encyclopedia of Literature* is a reference book, with entries arranged in A-Z format. To go directly to a particular entry, click on the link in the table of contents. There are also links between entries - click on any underlined word to jump to the related entry.

© Copyright Research Machines plc 2006. All rights reserved. Helicon Publishing is a division of Research Machines plc.

Helicon Publishing New Mill House 183 Milton Park Abingdon Oxon OX14 4SE e-mail: <u>helicon@rm.com</u> Web site: <u>www.helicon.co.uk</u>

Cover photographs © Billie Love.

# Table of contents

#### Α

Aakjaer, Jeppe Aarestrup, Carl Ludvig Emil Aasen, Ivar Andreas Abbey, Edward Abbot, Robert Sengstacke Abbotsford Abbott, Jacob Abbt, Thomas à Beckett, Gilbert Abbott Abe Kobo Abercrombie, Lascelles Abish, Walter About, Edmond François Valentin Abrahams, Peter Abrams, Meyer (Howard) Abse, Dannie Abu-al-Ala al-Maarri Abû Mâdî, Ilyâ Abú Nuwás, Hasan ibn Háni Academy, the Accademia della Crusca Acciaiuoli, Donato Accius, Lucius Accolti, Benedetto Accolti, Bernardo Accolti, Francesco Achad Haam Achebe, Chinua Achilles Tatius Acker, Kathy Ackroyd, Peter Acmeist movement Acosta, José de Actius, Lucius Acuña, Cristóval de Adagia Adam, Juliette Adam, Paul-Auguste-Marie Adam de la Halle Adamic, (Alojzij) Louis Adams, Charles Follen

Adams, Douglas (Noël) Adams, Henry Brooks Adams, Richard (George) adaptation (arts) Adcock, (Kareen) Fleur Addison, Joseph Ade, George Adeler, Max Adler, Elmer Adlington, William Adolphus, John Leycester Ady, Endre Aelfric Aeneid Aeschylus Aesop African literature Agate, James (Evershed) Agnon, Shmuel Yosef Ahlberg, Allan Aidoo, Ama Ata Aiken, Conrad Potter Aiken, Joan (Delano) Ailly, Pierre d' Ainsworth, William Harrison Aitmatov, Chingiz Akhmatova, Anna Akins, Zoe Aksakov, Sergei Timofeyevich Akutagawa, Ryunosuke Alain-Fournier Alamanni, Luigi Alarcón, Juan Ruiz de Alarcón, Pedro Antonio de Alas, Leopoldo Albee, Edward (Franklin) Alberti, Rafael Alcaeus Alciati, Andrea Alciphron Alcman Alcoforado, Marianna Alcott, Louisa May Aldington, Richard Aldiss, Brian W(ilson) Aldrich, Thomas Bailey

Aleardi, Aleardo Alecsandri, Vasile Aleixandre, Vicente Alemán, Mateo Alexander, William Alexandru, Ion Alexis, Willibald Alfadir Alford, Henry Alger, Horatio Algren, Nelson Abraham Alice's Adventures in Wonderland Alishan, Leon allegory Allen, (William) Hervey (Jr) Allen, Frederick Lewis Allen, Paula Gunn Allende, Isabel Allibone, Samuel Austin Allingham, Margery Louise Allingham, William Almagest Almeida-Garrett, João Baptista da Silva Leitão Almqvist, Carl Jonas Love Alonso, Dámaso al-Rayhânî, Amîn Alvaro, Corrado Amado, Jorge Amari, Michele Ambler, Eric Amerbach, Johannes American Academy of Art and Letters American literature Amis, Kingsley (William) Amis, Martin Louis **Ammianus Marcellinus** Ammons, A(rchie) R(andolph) Amory, Thomas Amyot, Jacques Anacreon 'Ancient Mariner, The Rime of the' Ancrene Riwle Andersen, Hans Christian Anderson, Sherwood Andrade, Mario de André, Bernard

Andrews, William Loring Andreyev, Leonid Nicolaievich Andric, Ivo Andromache Aneirin Angeli, Pietro Angelo Angelou, Maya Anglo-Saxon Chronicle Anglo-Saxon literature Angry Young Men Animal Farm Anna Karenina Anstey, F anthology Anthony, Michael Antigone antihero Antin, Mary antislavery literature Antonius, Brother Antony and Cleopatra <u>Aphthonius</u> Apion Apollinaire, Guillaume Apollonius of Rhodes 'Apollonius of Tyre' Apollo poets Apperley, Charles James Applegate, Jesse Apuleius, Lucius Arabian Nights Arabic literature Aragon, Louis Arany, János Arason, Jón Aratus Arbuthnot, John Archer, Jeffrey Howard Archilochus Ardizzone, Edward Aretino, Pietro Argens, Jean-Baptiste de Boyer Argenson, Marc Antoine René de Voyer Argentine literature Arghezi, Tudor Ari, Thorgilsson

Àrîda, Nasîb Arion Ariosto, Ludovico Aristophanes Aristophanes of Byzantium Aristotle Arlen, Michael Armitage, Simon Arndt, Ernst Moritz Arnim, Bettina von Arnim, Elizabeth Mary, Countess von Arnim Arnim, Ludwig Achim von Árni Magnússon Arnold, Edwin Arnold, Matthew Arrianus, Flavius Ars poetica Arthur, Timothy Shay Arundel Marbles Asachi, Gheorghe Asbjörnsen, Peter Christen Asch, Sholem Asclepiades Ashbery, John Lawrence Ashbridge, Elizabeth Ashford, Daisy (Margaret Mary Julia) Ashton, Winifred Asimov, Isaac Askew, Anthony Asturias, Miguel Ángel Athenaeus Athenodorus Cordylion Atherton, Gertrude Franklin Atkinson, Katea Atterbom, Per (Daniel Amadeus) Attic orators Attius, Lucius Atwood, Margaret (Eleanor) Aubanel, Théodore Aubignac, François Hedelin, Abbé d'Aubignac Aubigné, Théodore Agrippa d' Aubrey, John 'Aucassin et Nicolette' Auchincloss, Louis (Stanton) Auden, W(ystan) H(ugh) Aulnoy, Marie Catherine, Baronne d'Aulnoy

Aumonier, Stacy Aurelius, Victor Sextus Aurispa, Giovanni Auroras of Autumn, The Ausonius, Decimus Magnus Austen, Jane Auster, Paul Austin, Alfred Australian literature autobiography Avery, Samuel Putnam Avianus Avram, Henriett D (Davidson) Avvakum, Archpriest Awdry, W(ilbert) V(ere) Ayenbite of Inwit Ayer, Edward Everett Ayme, Marcel Azorín

#### В

Babbitt Babel, Isaak Emmanuilovich Babrius Bacchelli, Riccardo Bacchylides Bacon, Delia Salter Bacon, Robert Baconian theory Bacovia, George Badius Ascensius, Jodocus bad quartos Baggesen, Jens Immanuel Bagnold, Enid (Algerine) Bagritsky, Eduard Bahr, Hermann Baïf, Jean Antoine de Bailey, Philip James Baillie, Grizel Baillie, Joanna Bainbridge, Beryl Baker, Augusta Braxton Baker, George Pierce Baker, Nicholson Baker, Ray Stannard

Balan Balassi, Bálint Baldwin, James Arthur Baldwin, William Bale, John Balin and Balan ballad (literature) ballade Ballantine, James Ballantyne, R(obert) M(ichael) Ballard, J(ames) G(raham) Ballet Shoes Balmont, Konstantin Dmitrievich Balzac, Honoré de Balzac, Jean Louis Guez de Bancroft, Hubert Howe Bandello, Matteo Bang, Herman Joachim Bangs, John Kendrick Banim, John (1798-1842) and Michael (1796-1874) Banks, Iain Menzies Banks, Lynne Reid Bannatyne Club Banville, John Banville, Théodore Faullain de Baraka, (Imamu) Amiri Barash, Asher Barbaro, Ermolao (bishop of Verona) Barbaro, Ermolao (patriarch of Aquileia) Barbaro, Francesco Barbauld, Anna Laetitia Barbellion, W(ilhelm) N(ero) P(ilate) Barbey d'Aurevilly, Jules-Amedée Barbier, Henri-Auguste Barbour, John Barbu, Ion Barbusse, Henri Barclay, Alexander Barclay, John Baretti, Giuseppe Barham, Richard Harris Baring, Maurice Baring-Gould, Sabine Barker, Clive Barker, George Granville Barker, Pat(ricia Margaret)

'Barlaam and Josaphat' Barlow, Joel Barnes, Barnabe Barnes, Djuna Chappell Barnes, Julian (Patrick) Barnes, William Barnfield, Richard Baroja, Pio Barres, (Auguste-)Maurice Barrett Browning, Elizabeth Barrington, Jonah Barry, Sebastian Barstow, Stan Bartas, Guillaume de Saluste du Barth, John Simmons Barthelme, Donald Barthes, Roland Bartlett, John Bartoli, Adolfo Bartoli, Daniello Barudi, Mahmud Sami al-Bashkirtseff, Marie Basho **Bassus Caesius** Bataille, Georges Bataille, Henri Bates, H(erbert) E(rnest) Bates, Katherine Lee Baudelaire, Charles Pierre Baum, L(yman) Frank Bawden, Nina Mary Baxter, James Keir **Bay Psalm Book** Bazin, René-François-Nicolas-Marie Beach, Moses Yale Beach, Rex Ellingwood Beach, Sylvia Woodbridge Beadle, Erastus Flavel Beat Generation Beattie, James 'Beauty and the Beast' Beauvoir, Simone de Beccadelli, Antonio Beccaria, Antonio Becher, Johannes R Beckford, William (Thomas)

Beddoes, Thomas Lovell Bedny, Demian Beecher, Harriet Beeding, Francis Beer, Patricia Beerbohm, (Henry) Max(imilian) Beets, Nikolaas Behan, Brendan Francis Behn, Aphra Beith, John Hay Bekker, Elizabeth Belgian literature Belinski, Vissarion Grigorievich Bell, John Joy Bell, Sam Hanna Bellamy, Edward Belleau, Rémy Belleforest, François de Belli, Giuseppe Giocchomo Bellman, Carl Michael Bello, Andrés Belloc, (Joseph) Hilaire (René Pierre) Belloc Lowndes, Marie Adelaide Bellow, Saul Bely, Andrei Bembo, Pietro Bemelmans, Ludwig Benchley, Robert Charles Benda, Julien Benét, Stephen Vincent Benivieni, Girolamo Benn, Gottfried Bennett, (Enoch) Arnold Bennett, James Gordon Benoit de Sainte-Maure Benson, Arthur Christopher Benson, E(dward) F(rederic) Benson, Robert Hugh Benson, Stella Bentley, Edmund Clerihew Bentley, Phyllis Eleanor Beowulf Béranger, Pierre Jean de Berceo, Gonzalo de Bérenger de la Tour Beresford, John Davys

Bergengruen, Werner Berger, John Peter Berger, Thomas Louis Bergman, Hjalmar Bergson, Henri Louis Bernanos, Georges Bernard, Tristan (Paul) Bernard de Ventadour Bernardin de Saint-Pierre, Jacques-Henri Berners, Juliana Berni, Francesco Bernstein, Herman Beroaldo, Filippo the Elder Beroaldo, Filippo the Younger Berry, James Berry, Mary Berry, Wendell (Erdman) Berryman, John Bersuire, Pierre Bertaut, Jean Bertrand, Jacques-Louis-Napoleon Besant, Walter bestiary best-seller Betjeman, John Betrothed, The Betti, Ugo **Bevis of Hampton** Bialik, Chaim Nachman Bianco, Margery Bichsel, Peter Bielski, Martin Bierce, Ambrose Gwinnett **Biggers**, Earl Derr Biggles Bilderdijk, Willem Billings, Josh **Billy Bunter** Binchy, Maeve Bingham, Millicent (Todd) Binyon, (Robert) Laurence biography Bion Biondi, Gian Francesco Bird, Robert Montgomery Birmingham, George A

Birney, (Alfred) Earle Bishop, Elizabeth Bishop, John Peale Bisticci, Vespasiano da Bjørnson, Bjørnstjerne Martinius Black, William Black Beauty Black Boy Blacklock, Thomas Blackmore, R(ichard) D(oddridge) Blackmore, Richard Black Mountain poets Blackmur, R(ichard) P(almer) Blackwood, Algernon (Henry) Blaga, Lucian Blair, Robert (poet) Blake, George (writer) Blake, William Blanchard, Edward Litt Leman Blanchot, Maurice Blanco-Fombona, Rufino blank verse Blasco Ibáñez, Vicente Blessington, Marguerite Gardiner Blicher, Steen Steensen Blind, Mathilde Blind Harry Blixen, Karen Bloch, Jean-Richard Blok, Alexander Alexandrovich Blondel Bloomfield, Robert **Bloomsbury Group** Blume, Judy Blumenthal, Joseph Blunden, Edmund (Charles) Blunt, Wilfrid Scawen Bly, Robert Elwood Blyton, Enid Mary Boccaccio, Giovanni Boccalini, Trajano Bodenheim, Maxwell Bogan, Louise Boiardo, Matteo Maria, Count of Scandiano Boileau Despréaux, Nicolas Boissard, Maurice

Boker, George Henry Boland, Eavan (Aisling) Böll, Heinrich (Theodor) Bond, (Thomas) Michael Bone, David William Boner, Ulrich Bonnefoy, Yves Bonnin, Gertrude Bontempelli, Massimo Bontemps, Arna (Wendell) **Booker Prize for Fiction** Boon, Louis-Paul Boorde, Andrew Boothe, Clare Borchert, Wolfgang Bordeaux, Henry Borden, Mary Borel, Petrus Borges, Jorge Luis Borgese, Giuseppe Antonio Borlase, William Boron, Robert de Borrow, George (Henry) Bosboom-Toussaint, Anna Louisa Geertruida Boscán Almogaver, Juan Bosco, Henri Bostius, Arnoldus Boswell, James Botev, Khristo Botkin, B(enjamin) A(lbert) Botta, Carlo Giuseppe Guglielmo Bottome, Phyllis Bottomley, Gordon Boudinot, Elias Bouhours, Dominique Bourbon, Nicholas Bourget, Paul Bourne, Randolph (Silliman) Bowdler, Thomas Bowen, Elizabeth (Dorothea Cole) Bowles, Jane Bowles, Paul Bowles, William Lisle Bowra, (Cecil) Maurice Bowyer, William Boyd, Mark Alexander

Boyd, Martin Boyd, William Andrew Murray Boyesen, H(jalmar) H(jorth) Boyle, Charles Boyle, John Boyle, Kay Boz Bo Zhu Yi Brackenridge, Hugh Henry Bradbury, Malcolm (Stanley) Bradbury, Ray(mond) Douglas Braddon, Mary Elizabeth Bradford, Barbara Taylor Bradford, William Bradley, A(ndrew) C(ecil) Bradley, Edward Bradley, Katharine Harris Bradshaw, Henry Bradstreet, Anne Brady, Nicholas Bragg, Melvyn Braine, John (Gerard) Braithwaite, Edward Ricardo Braithwaite, William Stanley (Beaumont) Bramah, Ernest Brand, Max (writer) Brandes, Georg (Morris Cohen) Branner, Hans Christian Brant (Brandt), Sebastian Brasch, Charles Brathwaite, Edward Kamau Brautigan, Richard Gary Brave New World Brazil, Angela Brecht, Bertolt (Eugen Berthold Friedrich) Bredero, Gerbrand Adriaanszoon Breen, Patrick Breidfjord, Sigurdur Breitinger, Johann Jakob Breitmann, Hans Bremer, Fredrika Bremond, Henri Brennan, Christopher John Brenner, Joseph Hayyim Brentano, Klemens Brent-Dyer, (Gladys) Elinor M(ay)

Breton, André Breton, Nicholas Breytenbach, Breyten Brickhill, Paul Chester Jerome Bridel, Philippe Sirice Brideshead Revisited Bridges, Robert Seymour (poet) Brierley, Benjamin Briggs, Raymond Redvers Brighton Rock Brink, André P(hilippus) Brittain, Vera (Mary) Broch, Hermann Brod, Max Brodkey, Harold (born Aaron Roy Weintraub) Brodsky, Joseph Alexandrovich Bromfield, Louis Brucker Brontë Brontë, Anne Brontë, Charlotte Brontë, Emily Brooke, Charlotte Brooke, Henry Brooke, Rupert (Chawner) Brooke, Stopford Augustus Brookner, Anita Brooks, Cleanth Brooks, Gwendolyn (Elizabeth) Brooks, Maria Brooks, Noah Brooks, Van Wyck Brophy, Brigid (Antonia) Brophy, John Brother Antonius Brothers Karamazov, The Brown, Alice Brown, Charles Brockden Brown, Dan(iel) Brown, George Douglas Brown, George Mackay Brown, Ivor John Carnegie Brown, John (English poet) Brown, John (Scottish essayist) Brown, Margaret Wise Brown, Rita Mae Brown, Sterling (Allen)

Brown, Thomas Brown, Thomas Edward Brown, William Wells (born 'William') Browne, Charles Farrar (born Brown) Browne, William Brownell, William Crary Browning, Elizabeth (Moulton) Barrett Browning, Robert Bruce, Michael Brunetière, (Vincent de Paul Marie) Ferdinand Bruni, Leonardo Bryant, William Cullen Bryson, Bill Bryusov, Valery Yakovlevich Buchan, Anna Buchan, John Buchan, Peter Buchanan, Robert Williams Buck, (Franklyn Howard) Frank Buck, Pearl S(ydenstricker) Buckler, Ernest Redmond Buckley, William F(rank) Budaeus Budaeus, Guglielmus **Buddenbrooks** Budgell, Eustace Buff, Charlotte Bukowski, Charles Bulatovic, Miodrag Bulgakov, Mikhail Afanasyevich Bull, Olaf Jacob Martin Luther Bullett, Gerald William Bulwer-Lytton, Edward George Earle Bunin, Ivan Alexeyevich Bunner, Henry Cuyler Bunting, Basil Bunting, Edward Buntline, Ned Bunyan, John Burchiello, Domenico Bürger, Gottfried August Burgess, Anthony Burgess, Frank Gelett Burgess, Melvin Burgess, Thornton W (Waldo) Burke, Kenneth

Burke, Thomas Burnand, Francis Cowley Burnet, John Burnett, Frances Eliza Hodgson Burney, Charles Burney, Fanny (Frances) Burns, John Horne Burns, Robert Burroughs, Edgar Rice Burroughs, John Burroughs, William S(eward) Bush, Douglas (John Nash) Bussy, Roger de Rabutin Butcher, Samuel Henry Butler, William Francis Butler, Samuel (17th century) Butler, Samuel (19th century) Butor, Michel Marie François Buxtorf, Johannes (I) Byatt, A(ntonia) S(usan) Bykau, Vasil Byrne, Donn Byrom, John Byron, George Gordon, 6th Baron Byron Byzantine literature

## С

Caballero, Fernan Cabell, James Branch Cable, George Washington Caedmon Caeiro, Alberto Cahan, Abraham Cain, James M(allahan) Caine, Thomas Henry Hall Calderini, Domizio Calderón de la Barca, Pedro Caldwell, Erskine Preston Calisher, Hortense Calkins, (Earnest) Elmo Callaghan, Morley Edward Callanan, Jeremiah J(oseph) Callimachus (poet) Callisthenes Callistratus

Calverley, Charles Stuart Calvino, Italo Cambridge, Richard Owen Camoëns, Luis Vaz de Campbell, David Campbell, Helen Stuart (born Helen Campbell Stuart) Campbell, John Francis Campbell, Joseph Campbell, Joseph Campbell, Roy Campbell, Thomas Campion, Thomas Campos, Alvaro de Camus, Albert Canadian literature Canby, Henry Seidel cancionero Candide Canetti, Elias Canfield, Dorothy Frances Canterbury Tales, The Cantos, The Cantù, Cesare Cantwell, Robert (Emmett) Cao Chan Capek, Karel Capek-Chod, Karel Matej Capote, Truman Captain Marvel Capuana, Luigi Caragiale, Ion Luca Carcano, Giulio Carco, Francis. Cardarelli, Vincenzo Cardenal, Pierre Carducci, Giosuè Carew, Thomas Carey, Henry Carey, Peter Philip caricature Carleton, Will Carleton, William Carlyle, Jane (Baillie) Carlyle, Thomas carmagnole Carman, William Bliss

Carmeliano, Pietro Carnegie, Dale Carnegie Medal Caro, Annibale Caro, Robert Allen Caroline literature Carossa, Hans Carpenter, Edward Carpentier, Alejo Carr, John Dickson Carrera Andrade, Jorge Carroll, Lewis Carter, Angela Carter, Elizabeth Carter, Nick Cartland, (Mary) Barbara (Hamilton) carvel Carver, Raymond Cary, (Arthur) Joyce (Lunel) Cary, Alice (1820-1871) and Phoebe Cary, Elisabeth Luther Casa, Giovanni della Casanova de Seingalt, Giovanni Giacomo Casaubon, Isaac Castanheda, Fernão Lopes de Castello Branco, Camillo Ferreira Botelho, Visconde de Corrêa Botelho Castelvetro, Lodovico Casti, Giambattista Castiglionchio, Lapo da Castiglione, Baldassare Castilho, Antonio Feliciano Castillejo, Cristóbal de Castro, Rosalia de Catch-22 Catcher in the Rye, The Cather, Willa Sibert Cato, Dionysius Cat on a Hot Tin Roof Cats, Jakob Catullus, Gaius Valerius Causley, Charles Stanley Cavafy, Constantinos. Cavalcanti, Guido Cavalier poets Cayrol, Jean Cech, Svatopluk

Cecil, (Edward Christian) David Céitinn, Seathrún Cela, Camilo José Celan, Paul Celestina, La Céline, Louis-Ferdinand Celtis, Konrad Cendrars, Blaise cento Cercamon Cerf, Bennett Alfred Cernuda, Luis Cervantes, Saavedra, Miguel de Cesarotti, Melchiorre Chabon, Michael Chalmers, Alexander Chambers, E(dmund) K(erchever) Chambers, Ephraim Chambers, Robert chambers of rhetoric Chamfort, Sébastien Roch Nicolas Chamisso, Adelbert von Champfleury Chand, Prem Chandler, Raymond Thornton chanson de geste Chanson de Roland chapbook Chapelain, Jean Chapman, George Chapman, John Jay Chapone, Hester Chariton Charly, Louise Charrière, Isabelle Agnès Elizabeth van Zuylen de Charron, Pierre Charteris, Leslie Chase, James Hadley Chasles, Victor Euphémien Philarete Chastelard, Pierre de Boscosel de Chastellain, Georges Chateaubriand, François Auguste René, Vicomte de Chatterji, Bankim Chandra Chatterton, Thomas Chatwin, (Charles) Bruce Chaucer, Geoffrey

Chaudhuri, Nirad Chandra Chaulieu, Guillaume Amfrye, Abbé de Cheever, John Cheke, John Chekhov, Anton Pavlovich Chelcický, Petr Chenedolle, Charles-Julien Lioult de Chénier, André Marie de Chénier, Marie Joseph Blaise de Chernyshevski, Nikolai Gavrilovich Cherry Orchard, The Chesnut, Mary Boykin Chesnutt, Charles Waddell Chesterfield, Philip Dormer Stanhope, 4th Earl of Chesterfield Chesterton, Cecil Edward Chesterton, G(ilbert) K(eith) Chevalier, Tracy Chiabrera, Gabriello Chiarini, Giuseppe Child, Francis James children's literature Chinese literature Chisholm, Hugh Cholmondeley, Mary Chopin, Kate Choromanski, Michal chorus (theatre) Chrétien de Troyes Christie, Agatha Mary Clarissa Christine de Pisan Chukovsky, Kornei Ivanovich Church, Richard (poet) Churchill, Charles Churchill, Winston (US writer) Churchyard, Thomas Cibber, Colley Cicero, Marcus Tullius 'Cid, El cantar' (or 'poema de mio') Cielo D'Alcamo Cinna, Gaius Helvius Cino da Pistoia Clampitt, Amy Clancy, Tom Clanvowe, John Clare, John Clarissa

Clarke, Austin Clarke, Charles Cowden Clarke, Gillian Clarke, Marcus Andrew Hislop Clarke, Mary Victoria Cowden classicism Claudel, Paul (Louis Charles Marie) Claudian Claus, Hugo Clausen, Wendell (Vernon) Clavell, James du Maresq Cleary, Beverly (born Bunn) Cleland, John Clemens, Samuel Langhorne Clerk, John Cleveland, John Clive, Caroline Clough, Arthur Hugh Coatsworth, Elizabeth (Jane) Cobb, Irvin Shrewsbury Cocaio, Merlin Cockerell, Sydney Carlyle Cocteau, Jean Codex Exoniensis Codrescu, Andrei (Betty Laredo, Maria Parfeni, Urmuz, pen-names) Coetzee, J(ohn) M(ichael) Coffey, Brian Coggan, (Frederick) Donald Cohen, Leonard Cole, Margaret Isabel Coleridge, (David) Hartley Coleridge, Mary Elizabeth Coleridge, Samuel Taylor Coleridge, Sara Colette, Sidonie-Gabrielle Colgan, John Collier, John Payne Collins, (William) Wilkie Collins, Billy Collins, Michael Collins, Tom Collins, William Collodi, Carlo Colocci, Angelo Colonna, Francesco Colonna, Vittoria

Colum, Padraic Combe, William comic relief <u>commedia</u> Complutensian Polyglot Compton-Burnett, Ivy conceit Concord, Book of Conington, John Connell, Evan S(helby), Jr Connell, F Norreys Connolly, Cyril (Vernon) Conrad, Joseph Conrad, Michael Georg Conradi, Hermann Conscience, Hendrik Constable, Henry Constant de Rebecque, (Henri) Benjamin 'Constitution of Athens' Converse, Harriet (Arnot) Maxwell Cooke, (Alfred) Alistair Cooke, John (Esten) Cookson, Catherine (Ann) Coolbrith, Ina Donna Coolidge, Susan Cooper, Edith Cooper, Giles Stannus Cooper, James Fenimore Cooper, Jilly Cooper, Thomas Cooper, William Coornheert, Dirck Volckertszoon Coover, Robert (Lowell) Cope, Jack Cope, Wendy Coppard, A(Ifred) E(dward) Coppée, François-Edouard Joachim Corbière, Tristan Corelli, Marie Corinna Corkery, Daniel Cormac MacCulinan Corneille, Thomas Cornford, Frances Crofts **Cornish literature** Cornwall, Barry

Cornwell, Patricia Corso, Gregory (Nunzio) Cortázar, Julio Corvo, Baron Cory, William Johnson Cosbuc, George Cossa, Pietro Costa, Claudio-Manoel de Cotin, Charles Cottle, Joseph Cotton, Charles Country Diary of An Edwardian Lady, The Couperus, Louis Coupland, Douglas Courier, Paul Louis Courthope, William John Courtier, The Cowley, Abraham Cowley, Malcolm Cowper, William Cozzens, James Gould Crabbe, George Crace, Jim Craik, Dinah Maria Crane, (Harold) Hart Crane, R S (Ronald Salmon) Crane, Stephen Crapsey, Adelaide Crashaw, Richard Crates Cratinus Crawford, Francis Marion Crawford, Robert Creanga, Ion Creeley, Robert (White) Crescimbeni, Giovanni Maria Crèvecoeur, Michel Guillaume Jean de Crichton, Michael Crime and Punishment crime fiction Criterion, The Croce, Benedetto Crockett, Samuel Rutherford Crocus, Cornelius Crofts, Freeman Wills Croisset, Francis de.

Croker, Thomas Crofton Croly, George Crompton, Richmal Cronin, A(rchibald) J(oseph) Crosby, (Henry Sturgis) Harry Crosby, Caresse (born Polly Jacob) Cross, Amanda Crowley, John Crowquill, Alfred Cruz, Juana Inés de la, Sor Cueva, Juan de la Cullen, Countee Cumberland, Richard Cummings, Bruce Frederick Cummings, E(dward) E(stlin) Cunha, Euclydes Rodrigues Pimenta da Cunningham, Allan (poet) Cunningham, J V (James Vincent) Cunningham, Michael Cunningham, Peter Cunninghame-Graham, Robert (18th century) Cunninghame-Graham, Robert Bontine Curnow, Allen Curtis, George William Cymbeline Cynewulf Cynthius Cyrano de Bergerac, Savinien Czech literature

## D

Dabrowska, Maria Da Costa, Izaak Dafydd ap Gwilym Daglish, Eric Fitch Dahl, Roald Dahlberg, Edward Daiches, David Dalin, Olof von Dana, Richard Henry, Jr Dana, Richard Henry, Sr dandy Dane, Clemence Daniel, Arnaut Daniel, Père Gabriel Daniel, Samuel Daninos, Pierre Danish literature Dannay, Frederic D'Annunzio, Gabriele Dante Alighieri Dagigi, Abu Mansur d'Arblay, Madame Darío, Rubén Darley, George Dasent, George Webbe Dashwood, Edmée Elizabeth Monica Dass, Petter Daudet, (Alphonse Marie) Léon Daudet, Alphonse Daurat, Jean. Davanzati, Chiaro Davenant, William David Copperfield Davidson, John Davie, Donald Alfred Davies, (William) Robertson Davies, John Davies, William Henry Davin, Dan(iel Marcus) Daviot, Gordon Davis, Rebecca Harding Davis, Richard Harding Davis, Thomas Osborne Dawe, (Donald) Bruce Day, John Day, Thomas Day-Lewis, C(ecil) Dazai, Osamu De Amicis, Edmondo Deane, Seamus Death of a Salesman De Bernières, Louis de Burgos, Julia Decadents Decameron, The Decembrio, Angelo Decembrio, Pier Candido Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire Dedekind, Friedrich Deeping, (George) Warwick

Deffand, Marie de Vichy-Chamrond Defoe, Daniel De Forest, John William Dehmel, Richard Deighton, Len (Leonard Cyril) Dekker, Eduard Douwes Delafield, E M de la Mare, Walter John Deland, Margaretta Wade de la Roche, Mazo Delavrancea, Barbu Deledda, Grazia DeLillo, Don Dell, Ethel M(ary) Del Monte, Pietro Deloney, Thomas Deloria, Ella Cara del Rey, Lester (Ramon Felipe San Juan Mario Silvio Enrico) De Marchi de Morgan, William (Frend) Denby, Edwin Denham, John Dennis, John Dent, Joseph Malaby de Paola, Tomi De Quincey, Thomas De Roberto, Federico Déry, Tibor Derzhavin, Gavrila Romanovich Desai, Anita De Sanctis, Francesco Deschamps, Eustache Deshoulières, Madame Antoinette Du Ligier de la Garde Desmarets de Saint-Sorlin, Jean Desnos, Robert Des Périers, Bonaventure Desportes, Philippe De Tabley, John Byrne, Leicester Warren, Baron De Tabley detective fiction Deutsch, Babette Deutsch, Niklaus Manuel De Vere, Aubrey De Vere, Aubrey Thomas Devlin, Denis Dewey, Melvil Dexter, Colin

Diable boîteux, Le diablo cojuelo, El dialogue Dial, The Diana, La diary Diat, Louis Felix Díaz del Castillo, Bernal Dick, Philip K(endred) Dickens, Charles (John Huffam) Dickens, Monica (Enid) Dickey, James Lafayette Dickinson, Emily Elizabeth Dickinson, Goldsworthy Lowes Dickson, Carter Didion, Joan di Donato, Pietro Diego, José de Dierx, Léon Diggelmann, Walter Matthias Dilke, Charles Wentworth dime novel Dinarchus Dinesen, Isak Ding Ling Dio Chrysostom **Diodorus Siculus Diogenes** Laertius **Dionysius of Halicarnassus Dionysius** Periegetes dirge Disch, Thomas M(ichael) Dispatches D'Israeli, Isaac dissociation of sensibility Divine Comedy, The Dixon, Franklin W Dixon, Henry Hall Dixon, Richard Watson Dixon, William Hepworth Djerassi, Carl Djilas, Milovan Dobell, Bertram Dobell, Sydney Thompson Dobie, J(ames) Frank Döblin, Alfred

Dobrovský, Josef Dobson, Henry Austin Doctor Faustus, The Tragical History of Doctorow, E(dgar) L(awrence) Dr Zhivago Dodd, William Dodge, Mary Elizabeth Dodgson, Charles Lutwidge Dodsley, Robert Doherty, Berlie Dolce, Lodovico dolce stil nuovo Doll's House, The Donaldson, Stephen Reeder Don Juan Donleavy, J(ames) P(atrick) Donne, John Don Quixote de la Mancha Doolittle, Hilda doppelgänger Dorat, Jean Dorgeles, Roland. Dorset Dos Passos, John Roderigo Dostoevsky, Fyodor Mihailovich Double Indemnity Doughty, Charles Montagu Douglas, (George) Norman Douglas, Alfred (Bruce), Lord Douglas Douglas, Gavin Douglas, Keith Castellain Douglas, Lloyd Cassel Douglas, O Douglas-Home, William Dove, Rita Dove Cottage Dowden, Edward Downing, Major Jack Dowson, Ernest Christopher Doyle, Arthur Conan Doyle, Roddy Drabble, Margaret Drachmann, Holger Henrik Herholdt Dracula Drago, Luis María dramatic monologue

Draper, Elizabeth Drayton, Michael Dreiser, Theodore Herman Albert Drieu la Rochelle, Pierre-Eugène Drinkwater, John Droste-Hülshoff, Annette Elizabeth, Baroness von Drummond, William Drummond de Andrade, Carlos Dryden, John du Bellay, Joachim Du Bos, Charles Duclos, Charles Pinot Dudintsev, Vladimir Dmitriyevich Duffy, Carol Ann Duffy, Charles Gavan Du Fu Duhamel, Georges Dumas, Alexandre (*fils*) Dumas, Alexandre (*père*) Du Maurier, Daphne Du Maurier, George (Louis Palmella Busson) Dumitriu, Petru Dunbar, Paul Laurence Dunbar, William (poet) Duncan, Robert (Edward) Duncan de Cerisantis, Mark Dunmore, Helen Dunn, Douglas (Eaglesham) Dunnett, Dorothy Dunsany, Edward John Moreton Drax Plunkett Dunton, John Durant, Will(iam James) Duranty, Edmond Duras, Marguerite Durcan, Paul D'Urfey, Thomas Durrell, Gerald (Malcolm) Durrell, Lawrence (George) Dutch literature Dutt, Ramesh Chandra Dutton, Geoffrey Duun, Olav Duvernois, Henri Dwight, Timothy Dyce, Alexander Dyer, Edward

Dyer, John

# Ε

Earle, John Eastman, P(hilip) D(ey) Eberhart, Richard Ghormley Eck, Johann Eckermann, Johann Peter Eco, Umberto Ecole Romane Edda Eddison, Eric Rucker Edel, (Joseph) Leon Edgeworth, Maria Edgeworth, Richard Lovell Edson, J(ohn) T(homas) Edwards, Amelia Ann Blandford Edwards, Edward Edwards, Richard Eeden, Frederik Willem van Egan, Pierce Eggleston, Edward Egilsson, Sveinbjörn Ehrenburg, Ilya Grigorievich Eichendorff, Joseph Freiherr von Ekelöf, Gunnar Ekwensi, Cyprian Electra elegy elegy Eliot, George Eliot, T(homas) S(tearns) Elizabethan literature Elliot, Jane Elliott, Ebenezer Ellis, Albert Ellis, Bret Easton Ellis, Edward Sylvester Ellis, George Ellis, (Henry) Havelock Ellison, Ralph Waldo Ellroy, James Ellwood, Thomas Eluard, Paul Elytis, Odysseus

Elzevir, Louis emblem Emecheta, (Florence Onye) Buchi Emerson, Ralph Waldo Eminescu, Mihail Encyclopédie Endo, Shusako Paul English literature English literature, medieval Ennius, Quintus Enoch of Ascoli Enright, D(enis) J(oseph) Ensler, Eve Eötvös, József Ephron, Nora epic Epicharmus epigram epigraphy Epimenides Epinay, Louise Florence Pénille epistle epode Equicola, Mario Erasmus, Desiderius Erceldoune, Thomas of Ercilla y Zúñiga, Alonso de Erckmann-Chatrian Erdrich, (Karen) Louise Erinna Erskine, John Ervine, St John (Greer) Esdaile, Arundell James Kennedy Esenin, or Yesenin, Sergey Aleksandrovich Espronceda, José de Esquiros, Henri-François-Alphonse essay Estaunié, Edouard Estienne, Charles Estius Estonian literature Eucken, Rudolf Christoph Eugene Onegin Eugenides, Jeffrey Eupolis Euripides

Eusden, Laurence Evans, Caradoc Evelyn, John Everson, William Oliver Ewald, Johannes Ewart, Gavin (Buchanan) Ewing, Juliana Horatia Orr exemplum Exeter Book

## F

Faber, Geoffrey Cust fable fabliau Fabre d'Eglantine, Philippe François Nazaire Fadeev, Aleksandr Aleksandrovich Faerie Queene, The Faesi, Robert Faguet, Emile Faidit, Gaucelme Fairburn, Arthur Rex Dugard Fairless, Michael fairy tale Faithfull, Emily Falco, Gian Falconer, William Falkberget, Johan Falkland, Samuel Falkner, John Meade Fallada, Hans Fall of Man, the Fanon, Frantz Omar Fanshawe, Richard fantasy fiction Fanthorpe, U(rsula) A Farazdaq, al-Fargue, Léon-Paul Faria e Sousa, Manuel de Farid ud-din 'Attar Farjeon, Eleanor Farjeon, Herbert Farnham, Thomas Jefferson Farnol, John Jeffrey Farrar, Frederic William Farrell, J(ames) G(ordon)

Farrell, James T(homas) Farrère, Claude Fast, Howard Melvin Fathers and Sons Fauchet, Claude Faulk, John Henry Faulkner, William (Cuthbert) Fauset, Jessie R(edmon) Fausset, Hugh l'anson Faust Faust, Frederick Shiller Fear and Loathing in Las Vegas Fearing, Kenneth Flexner 'Federalist Papers' Federal Writers' Project Federman, Raymond Fedin, Konstantin Aleksandrovich Feiffer, Jules Feijoo y Montenegro, Benito Jerónimo Feinstein, Elaine Feith, Rhijnvis Felltham, Owen feminist criticism femme fatale Fénelon, François de Salignac de la Mothe Fenoglio, Beppe Fenton, Elijah Fenton, James (Martin) Ferber, Edna Ferdausi Ferguson, Samuel Fergusson, Robert Ferlinghetti, Lawrence Monsanto Fermor, Patrick (Michael) Leigh Fernández de Avellaneda, Alonso Ferragus Ferreira, Antonio Ferrier, Susan (Edmonstone) Fescennine verses Fet, Afanasi Afanasievich Feuchtwanger, Lion Feuillet, Octave Feydeau, Ernest Aimé Ficino, Marsilio fiction Fiedler, Leslie Aaron

Field, Eugene Field, Michael Fielding, Helen Fielding, Henry Fielding, Sarah Fields, James Thomas Fiennes, Celia Figaro Figueroa, Francisco de Filicaia, Vincenzo da Filmer, Robert Filson, John Finnish literature Fiocchi, Andrea Firbank, (Arthur Annesley) Ronald Firdausi Firenzuola, Agnolo First Folio Fisher, Carrie Fisher, Dorothy Canfield Fisher, M(ary) F(rances) K(ennedy) Fiske, John Fitzgerald, Edward Fitzgerald, F(rancis) Scott (Key) Fitzgerald, Penelope (Mary) Flateyjarbok Flaubert, Gustave Flecker, (Herman) James Elroy Flecknoe, Richard Fleming, Ian Lancaster Fleming, Margaret Flemish literature Fleshly School Fletcher, Giles (lawyer) Fletcher, Giles (poet) Fletcher, John Gould Fletcher, Phineas Flexner, Stuart Berg 'Floire et Blanchefleur' Florian, Jean Pierre Claris de Florio, John Flowers of Evil Fogazzaro, Antonio Folengo, Teofilo Folger, Emily Clara Folger, Henry Clay

Folgore da San Gimignano Follain, Jean Follett, Ken Folquet de Marseille Fontainas, André Fontane, Theodor Foote, Shelby Forbes, Esther Forbes, Robert Bennet Ford, Ford Madox Ford, John (writer) Ford, Richard Forester, C(ecil) S(cott) Forrester, Alfred Henry Forster, E(dward) M(organ) Forster, John Forster, Margaret Forsyth, Frederick Foscolo, Ugo Fouqué, Friedrich Heinrich Karl de la Motte Fowles, John Robert Fox, John Frame, Janet Paterson France, Anatole Francis, Dick Franco, Veronica Franey, Pierre Frank, Anne(lies Marie) Frank, John Paul Frank, Waldo (David) Frankau, Gilbert Frankau, Pamela Frankenstein (book) Franklin, (Stella Marian Sarah) Miles Franzen, Jonathan Fraser, Antonia (Pakenham) Fraunce, Abraham Frayn, Michael Frazier, Charles Frederic, Harold Fredro, Aleksander Free, John Freeman, Douglas Southall Freeman, John Freeman, Mary E(leanor) Freeman, Richard Austin

free verse Freiligrath, Ferdinand Frénaud, André French, Marilyn French-Canadian literature French literature Freneau, Philip Morin Frere, John Hookham (author) Freyre, Gilberto de Mello Freytag, Gustav Frietschie, Barbara Fröding, Gustaf frontier literature Frost, Robert Lee Frugoni, Carlo Innocenzo Frulovisi, Tito Livio Fry, Stephen Fuentes, Carlos Fukuzawa, Yukichi Fuller, Henry Blake Fuller, Roy (Broadbent) Fuller, Thomas Funk, Isaac K(auffman) Furphy, Joseph Futurism Fuzuli Fyleman, Rose

## G

Gaboriau, Emile Gaddis, William Gaines, Ernest J(ames) Galczynski, Konstanty Ildefons Gale, Zona Gallant, Mavis Gallegos Freire, Rómulo Gallico, Paul (William) Galsworthy, John Galt, John Garborg, Arne García Calderón, Ventura García Lorca, Federico García Márquez, Gabriel (Gabo) Garcilaso de la Vega (poet) Gardiner, Alfred George

Gardner, Erle Stanley Gardner, John (Champlin), Jr Gargantua and Pantagruel Garland, Hamlin Garnett, David Garnett, Richard Garnier, Robert Garrett, Almeida Garrod, Heathcote William Garshin, Vsevolod Mikhailovich Gascoigne, George Gaskell, Elizabeth Cleghorn Gass, William Howard Gates, Henry Louis Gaultier, Bon. Gautier, Théophile Gay, John Gazes, Theodore Geijer, Erik Gustaf Geisel, Theodor Seuss Gelber, Jack Gellert, Christian Fürchtegott Gellhorn, Martha Ellis Gelsted, Otto Genlis, Stéphanie-Félicité, comtesse de Genlis Gentlemen Prefer Blondes George, Stefan German literature Gerstenberg, Heinrich Wilhelm von Gerusalemme liberata/Jerusalem Delivered Gesta Romanorum Gezelle, Guido Pierre Théodore Joseph Ghil, René Ghosts Gibbings, Robert Gibbon, Lewis Grassic Gibbons, Stella (Dorothea) Gibran, Kahlil Gibson, Wilfrid Wilson Gibson, William Gide, André (Paul Guillaume) Gifford, William Gilbert, W(illiam) S(chwenck) Gil Blas de Santillane Gilchrist, Ellen Gilder, Richard Watson

Gildersleeve, Basil (Lanneau) Gilgamesh Ginsberg, (Irwin) Allen Giono, Jean Giovanni, Nikki (Yolande Cornelia, Jr) Giraldi, Giambattista Cinzio Giraud de Borneil Giraudoux, (Hippolyte) Jean Gissing, George Robert Giunti (Junta) Press Giusti, Giuseppe Gjellerup, Karl Glasgow, Ellen Anderson Gholson Glaspell, Susan Glatigny, Albert Gleig, George Robert Gleim, Johann Wilhelm Ludwig Glen, William Glover, Denis Glück, Louise Elisabeth <u>Glyn, Elinor</u> Gobán Saor Gobineau, Joseph Arthur, Comte de Godden, (Margaret) Rumer Godfrey, Thomas Godoy y Alcayaga, Lucila Godwin, Francis Godwin, William Goetel, Ferdynand Goethe, Johann Wolfgang von Goga, Octavian Gogarty, Oliver St John Gogol, Nicolai Vasilyevich Gold, Michael Golden Ass, The Golden Legend 'Goldilocks and the Three Bears' Golding, Louis Golding, William (Gerald) Goldsmith, Oliver Gollancz, Israel Goncharov, Ivan Alexandrovitch Goncourt, de Góngora y Argote, Luis de Goodrich, Samuel Griswold Good Soldier Svejk, The

Goodwin, William Watson 'Goody Two-Shoes' Googe, Barnabe Gordimer, Nadine Gordon, Richard Gore, Catherine Gorell, Ronald Gorell Barnes Gorey, Edward (St John) Gorgias Gorky, Maxim Gorsedd Gorter, Herman Gosse, Edmund William Gosson, Stephen Gotham, Tales of the Mad Men of gothic novel Gottschall, Rudolf von Gottsched, Johann Christoph Gould, Gerald Gould, Nathaniel Gourmont, Rémy de Gozzano, Guido Gustavo Gozzi, Gasparo Graf, Arturo Grafton, Sue Graham, Ennis Graham, Harry Jocelyn Clive Graham, Robert Graham, Stephen Graham, W(illiam) S(ydney) Grahame, Kenneth Grandbois, Alain Granger, James Granville, George, Baron Lansdowne Grass, Günter (Wilhelm) Graves, Alfred Perceval Graves, Robert (Ranke) Gravity's Rainbow Gray, Alasdair James Gray, David Gray, Thomas Gray, William Grayson, David Grayson, David Grazzini, Anton Francesco Great Expectations

Great Gatsby, The Greek Anthology Greek literature Green, Julien Green, Roger Lancelyn Green, Samuel Greenaway, Emerson Greenberg, Blu Greenblatt, Stephen Greene, (Henry) Graham Greenwell, Dora Greenwich Village Gregory, Augusta Gregory, Horace (Victor) Grenville, Kate Greville, Fulke Grévin, Jacques Grey, (Pearl) Zane Griboedov, Alexandr Sergeevich Grieg, Nordahl Grierson, George Abraham Grieve, Christopher Murray Griffin, Gerald Grigson, Geoffrey Edward Harvey Grillparzer, Franz Grimald, Nicholas Grimm brothers Grimmelshausen, Hans Jakob Christofel von Gringore, Pierre Griselda Grisham, John Griswold, Rufus Wilmot Groto, Luigi Grove, Frederick Philip Grub Street Grundtvig, Nicolai Frederik Severin Grundy, Mrs Guare, John Guareschi, Giovanni Guarini, Giovanni Battista (poet) Guarino, Battista Guarino da Verona Guérin, Georges Maurice de Guerrazzi Guest, Charlotte Guevara, Fray Antonio de

Guidi, Alessandro Guillaume de Lorris Guillaume de Poitiers Guinizelli, Guido Guinzburg, Alfred (Kleinert) Güiraldes, Ricardo Guiraut de Bornelh Guiterman, Arthur Guittone d'Arezzo Gulliver's Travels Gumilev, Nikolai Stepanovich Gunn, Neil Miller Gunn, Thom(son) William Guralnik, David B(ernard) Gurney, Ivor (Bertie) Guterson, David Gutzkow, Karl Ferdinand Guy of Warwick Guzmán de Alfarache Gwynn, Stephen Lucius

## Η

Habberton, John Habington, William Hadas, Moses Hâfiz, Shams al-Din Muhammad Hagedorn, Friedrich von Haggard, H(enry) Rider haiku Haines, Helen Elizabeth Hakim, Tawfiq al-Haldeman-Julius, Emanuel Hale, Edward Everett Hale, Nancy Hale, Sarah Josepha Buell Hale, William Gardner ha-Levi, Judah Halévy, Ludovic Haley, Alex(ander Murray Palmer) Haliburton, Thomas Chandler Hall, Anna Maria Hall, Donald (Andrew, Jr) Hall, Edward Hall, James Hall, Willis

Hallam, Arthur Henry Halleck, Fitz-Greene Hallgrímur Pétursson Halliburton, Richard Halliwell-Phillipps, James Orchard Hall-Stevenson, John Hamann, Johann Georg hamasa Hamburger, Michael (Peter Leopold) Hamerling, Robert Hamilton, Anthony Hamilton, Anthony Walter Patrick Hamilton, Edith Hamilton, Elizabeth Hamilton, Mary Agnes Hamilton, William (poet) Hamlet Hamlyn, Paul Bertrand Hammerton, John Alexander Hammett, (Samuel) Dashiell Hammon, Jupiter Hamp, Pierre Hamsun, Knut Handke, Peter Handler, Daniel Hannay, James Owen Hansberry, Lorraine Hansen, Martin Alfred Hansson, Ola Hapgood, Norman Harcourt, Alfred Hardenberg, Friedrich von Hardiman, James Hardy, Thomas (novelist) Hardy, Thomas Duffus (scholar) Hardyng, John Häring, Georg Wilhelm Harker, Lizzie Allen Harkness, Georgia Elma Harland, Henry Harlem Renaissance Harper, Frances Ellen Watkins Harper, Michael (Steven) Harris, Benjamin Harris, Frank Harris, Joel Chandler

Harris, Thomas Harrison, Mary St Leger Harrison, Tony Harry the Minstrel Harte, Bret Hartley, L(eslie) P(oles) Hartmann, Carl Sadakichi Harvey, Gabriel Harwood, Gwen Hašek, Jaroslav Hathaway, Anne Havlícek, Karel Hawes, Stephen Hawke, Ethan Hawker, Robert Stephen Hawkes, John Clendennin Burne, Jr Hawkesworth, John Haworth Haworth Parsonage Hawthorne, Nathaniel Hay, Gilbert Hay, lan Hayden, Robert (Earl) Hayley, William Hayward, Abraham Haywood, Eliza Hazard, Paul Hazlitt, William HD Head, Bessie Emery Heaney, Seamus Justin Hearn, (Patrick) Lafcadio (Tessima Carlos) Heart of Darkness Heart of Midlothian, The Hebbel, Christian Friedrich Hecataeus Hecht, Anthony (Evan) Hecko, František Hedda Gabler Heidenstam, Verner von Heidi Heijermans, Herman Heike monogatari Heilbrun, Carolyn Heilprin, Michael Heine, Heinrich (Christian Johann)

Heinlein, Robert A(nson) Heliade-Radulescu, Ion Heliand, The Heliodorus Heller, Joseph Helps, Arthur Hemans, Felicia Dorothea Hemingford, Walter Hemingway, Ernest (Miller) Hemon, Louis Henley, William Ernest Hennique, Léon Henri, Adrian Maurice Henry, O Henry of Huntingdon Henryson, Robert Henry the Minstrel herbal Herbelot de Molainville, Barthélemy d' Herbert, A(lan) P(atrick) Herbert, Frank Patrick Herbert, George Herbert, Thomas Herbert, Zbigniew Herbst, Josephine (Frey) Herd, David Herder, Johann Gottfried von Heredia, José-María de Herford, Oliver Hergesheimer, Joseph Herling-Grudzinski, Gustaw Hermogenes Hernandez, José Hernández, Miguel Herodianus, Aelius Herondas Hero of Our Time, A Herr, Michael Herrera, Fernando de Herrick, Robert Herrick, Robert (US novelist) Herriot, James Hersey, John (Richard) Hertz, Henrik Hervieu, Paul Ernest Herzog

Hesiod Hesse, Hermann Hesychius of Miletus Hewlett, Maurice Henry hexameter Heyer, Georgette Heylin, Peter Heym, Georg Heyse, Paul von Heyward, Du Bose Heywood, John Hiawatha, The Song of Hibberd, Jack Hichens, Robert Smythe Higgins, George Vincent Higgins, Jack Higginson, Thomas Wentworth (Storrow) Highet, Gilbert Highsmith, Patricia Hikmet, Nazim Hildegard of Bingen Hill, Aaron Hill, George Birkbeck Norman Hill, John Hill, Susan Elizabeth Hillerman, Tony Hillyer, Robert (Silliman) Hilton, James Hilton, Walter Himes, Chester (Bomar) Hinden, Rita Hindus, Maurice Gerschon Hinton, Nigel Hirtius, Aulus Historia Augusta historical novel Hitchens, Christopher Hitch-Hiker's Guide to the Galaxy, The Hitti, Philip K(huri) Hlavácek, Karel Hoban, Russell Conwell Hobbit, The Hoby, Sir Thomas Hoccleve, Thomas Hocking, Joseph Hocking, Silas Kitto

Hodgson, Ralph Hoffer, Eric Hoffman, Alice Hoffman, Charles Fenno Hoffmann, Amadeus (Ernst Theodor Wilhelm) Hoffmann, August Heinrich Hofmannsthal, Hugo von Hogg, James Hogg, Thomas Jefferson Holberg, Ludwig Holcroft, Thomas Hölderlin, (Johann Christian) Friedrich Holland, Josiah Gilbert Holland, Philemon Hollinghurst, Alan Holm, Saxe Holme, Constance Holmes, John Clellon Holmes, Oliver Wendell (writer) Holmes, Sherlock Holt, Henry Holtby, Winifred Hölty, Ludwig Heinrich Christoph Holub, Miroslav Homer Hood, Robin Hood, Thomas Hooft, Pieter Corneliszoon Hook, Theodore Edward Hope, Anthony Hope, Christopher (David Tully) Hope, Laurence Hopkins, Gerard Manley Horace Hornby, Nick Horne, Richard Henry Hornung, E(rnest) W(illiam) Houghton, Richard Monckton Milnes, 1st Baron Houghton Housman, A(Ifred) E(dward) Housman, Laurence Hovey, Richard Howard, Elizabeth Jane Howard, Richard (Joseph) Howatch, Susan Howe, Irving Howell, James

Howells, William Dean Howitt, William Howl Hrabal, Bohumil Hubbard, Elbert Green Huch, Ricarda Hudson, W(illiam) H(enry) Hughes, (James) Langston Hughes, Richard (Arthur Warren) Hughes, Shirley Hughes, Ted (Edward James) Hughes, Thomas Hugo, Victor (Marie) Hulme, Keri Hulme, T(homas) E(rnest) Human Comedy, The Hume, Alexander Hume, Fergus Humilis Humphrey, William Humphries, (George) Rolfe Hunchback of Notre Dame, The Huneker, James Gibbons Hungarian literature Hunt, Violet Hunt, (James Henry) Leigh Hunter, Evan Hurst, Fannie Hurston, Zora Neale Hu Shi Hutchinson, Arthur Stuart Menteth Hutton, Will(iam) Nicholas Huxley, Aldous (Leonard) Huxley, Elspeth Josceline Huygens, Constantijn Huysmans, J(oris) K(arl) Hviezdoslav Hyde, Douglas Hyne, Charles John Cutcliffe Wright Hypnerotomachia Polifili

### 

<u>iambic</u> Ibáñez, Vicente Blasco Ibn Bajja Ibn Ezra, Abraham Ibn Gabirol, Solomon ben Judah Ibuse, Masuji lbycus Icaza, Jorge Ignatow, David IIf, Ilya Arnoldovich lliad Illyés, Gyula Imagism Imber, Naphtali Herz Immermann, Karl Leberecht Importance of Being Earnest, The improvisation (arts) Imru'-al-Qays Inchbald, Elizabeth In Cold Blood Indian literature Indritz, Phineas Ingelow, Jean Ingraham, Prentiss Inoue, Yasushi interlude (drama) Invisible Man lon (poet) Igbal, Muhammad Ireland, William Henry Iriarte, Tomas de Irish literature Irish revival Iron, Ralph Irving, John Winslow Irving, Washington Isaacs, Jorge Isaacs, Susan Isaeus Isham, Samuel Isherwood, Christopher (William Bradshaw) Ishiguro, Kazuo Iskander, Fazil Abdulovich Isla, José Francisco de Isocrates Italian literature Iwaszkiewicz, Jaroslaw

Jackson, (George) Holbrook Jackson, Charles (Reginald) Jackson, Helen Hunt Jackson, Shirley Jacob, Joseph Jacob, Max Jacob, Naomi Ellington Jacob, Violet Jacobs, Harriet Ann Jacobs, W(illiam) W(ymark) Jacobson, Dan(iel) Jacopone da Todi Jahnn, Hans Henny Jalal-al-Din Rumi James, Alice James, Henry James, M(ontague) R(hodes) James, P(hyllis) D(orothy) Jameson, (Margaret) Storm Jami Jammes, Francis Jane Eyre Janin, Jules-Gabriel Japanese literature Jarrell, Randall Jashar (Old Testament) Jazz Age Jean de Meung Jeffers, (John) Robinson Jeffrey, Francis, Lord Jeffrey Jeffrey, William Jelinek, Elfriede Jennings, Elizabeth Joan Jensen, Johannes Vilhelm Jerrold, Douglas Jerrold, Douglas William Jesse, F(riniwyd) Tennyson jest book Jewett, Sarah Orne Jewish-American writing Jewsbury, Geraldine (Ensor) Jhabvala, Ruth Prawer Jiménez, Juan Ramón **Jindyworobaks** Jocelin Jodelle, Etienne

Jóhann Sigurjónsson Johns, W(illiam) E(arl) Johnson, B(ryan) S(tanley William) Johnson, Eyvind Olof Verner Johnson, James Weldon Johnson, Linton Kwesi Johnson, Lionel Pigot Johnson, Louis Johnson, Pamela Hansford, Lady Snow Johnson, Robert Underwood Johnson, Samuel Johnston, (William) Denis Johnston, Arthur Johnston, Jennifer Prudence Jónas Hallgrímsson Jones, David Jones, Ebenezer Jones, James Jones, LeRoi Jones, Louis C(lark) Jones, Steve Jones, Thomas Gwynn (poet) Jong, Erica Mann Jordan, June Jordan, Thomas Joscelin of Furness Joseph of Exeter Joubert, Joseph Jovellanos, Gaspar Melchor de Joyce, James (Augustine Aloysius) József, Attila Judson, Edward Zane Carroll Jünger, Ernst Jungle Book, The Junot, Laure Sainte-Martin-Permon Junqueiro, Abilio Manuel Guerra Just So Stories Just William Juvenal

# Κ

<u>Kafka, Franz</u> <u>Kafkaesque</u> <u>Kahn, Gustave</u> Kailyard School Kaiser, Georg Kalevala Kalidasa Kalidasa Kallman, Chester (Simon) Kane, Sheikh Hamidou Kapital, Das Karadzic, Vuk Stefanovic Karásek ze Lvovic, Jiri Karavelov, Lyuben Karlfeldt, Erik Axel Karr, (Jean-Baptiste-)Alphonse Kasack, Hermann Kasprowicz, Jan Kataev, Valentin Petrovich Kaufman, George S(imon) Kavanagh, Dan Kavanagh, Patrick (Joseph) Kawabata, Yasunari Kaye-Smith, Sheila Kazantzakis, Nikos Kazin, Alfred Keable, Robert Keane, John B(rendan) Keating, Geoffrey Keating, H(enry) R(eymond) F(itzwalter) Keats, Ezra Jack Keats, John Keble, John Keeley, Edmund (Leroy) Keene, Carolyn Keene, Donald (Lawrence) Keillor, Garrison Edward Keller, Gottfried Keller, Helen Adams Kelly, Hugh Kelman, James Kemal, Yashar Kempe, Margerie Kendall, Henry Clarence Keneally, Thomas Michael Kennedy, A(lison) L(ouise) Kennedy, John Pendleton Kennedy, Margaret Kennedy, William Joseph Kennelly, Brendan

Kent, William Charles Mark (writer) Kente, Gibson Kenyon, (Jennifer) Jane Ker, William Paton Kerner, Justinius Andreas Christian Kerouac, Jack (Jean Louis) Kertész, Imre Kesey, Ken Elton Keyes, Frances Parkinson Keyes, Sidney Arthur Kilworth Khalifa, (Mustafa ibn 'Abdallah Katib Chelebi) Hajji Khagani Khlebnikov, Viktor (Velemir) Vladimirovich Kickham, Charles Joseph Kielland, Alexander Lange Kierkegaard, Søren Aabye 'Killers, The' Kilmer, Joyce Kincaid, Jamaica Kinck, Hans Ernst King, Stephen (Edwin) King Lear Kingo, Thomas Hansen Kingsley, Charles Kingsley, Henry King-Smith, Dick (Ronald Gordon) Kingsolver, Barbara Kingston, Maxine Hong Kingston, William Henry Giles Kinnell, Galway Kinsella, Thomas Kipling, (Joseph) Rudyard Kirkoswald Kirstein, Lincoln Edward Kisfaludy, Károly Kit-Cat Club Kittredge, George Lyman Kivi, Alexis Kizer, Carolyn (Ashley) Klein, Abraham Moses Klima, Ladislav Klinger, Friedrich Maximilian von Kloos, Willem Johan Klopstock, Friedrich Gottlieb Kneale, Matthew Knickerbocker School

Knight, Eric Mowbray Knight, Sarah Kemble Knowles, James Thomas Knox, Bernard MacGregor Walker Knox, Vicesimus Koch, Kenneth (Jay) Kochanowski, Jan Koch, Charles Paul de Koestler, Arthur Kokoschka, Oskar Kollár, Jan Koltsov, Aleksei Vasilievich Konstantinov, Aleko Koontz, Dean R(ay) Kornaros, Vitsentzos Korolenko, Vladimir Galaktionovich Kosinski, Jerzy Nikodem Kosztolányi, Deszö Kráľ, Janko Krasicki, Ignacy Krasinski, Zygmunt Krasko, Ivan Kraszewski, Józef Ignacy Kraus, Karl Krauss, Ruth (Ida) Kristeva, Julia Krleza, Miroslav Kroeger, Alice Bertha Krutch, Joseph Wood Kryukov, Fyodor Kukucín, Martin Kumin, Maxine Kundera, Milan Kunhardt, Dorothy Kunitz, Stanley (Jasspon) Kuznetsov, Anatoly Vasilyevich Kyd, Thomas

### L

<u>Labé, Louise</u> <u>Laberius, Decimus</u> <u>La Boétie, Etienne de</u> <u>La Bruyère, Jean de</u> <u>Laclos, Pierre-Ambroise-François Choderlos de</u> <u>La Cour, Paul</u> Lady Chatterley's Lover La Farge, Oliver (Hazard Perry) Lafayette, Marie-Madeleine La Fontaine, Jean de Laforet, Carmen Díaz Laforgue, Jules Lafreri, Antonio Lagerkvist, Pär Fabian Lagerlöf, Selma Ottiliana Lovisa La Guma, Alex(ander) Laharpe, Jean François de lai Laidlaw, William Lamartine, Alphonse Marie Louis de Lamb, Caroline Lamb, Charles Lamb, Mary Ann Lamming, George William La Mothe le Vayer, François L'Amour, Louis Lampedusa, Giuseppe Tomasi di Lampman, Archibald Landino, Cristoforo Landnamabok Landon, Letitia Elizabeth Landor, Walter Savage Lang, Andrew Langgässer, Elisabeth Langhorne, John Langland, William Languet, Hubert Lanier, Sidney Lanman, Charles La Noue, François de Lansky, Aaron Lanson, Gustave Larbaud, Valéry Larcom, Lucy Lardner, Ring(gold Wilmer) Larguier, Léo Larkin, Philip Arthur La Rochefoucauld, François Larra, Mariano José de Lasker-Schuler, Else Laski, Marghanita Latini, Brunetto

Latin literature La Tour du Pin, Count Patrice de Lattimore, Richmond (Alexander) Latvian literature Laube, Heinrich Laughlin, James Laurence, (Jean) Margaret Laurenziana, Bibliotheca (library) Lautréamont, comte de Lave, Camara Lavin, Mary Lawrence, D(avid) H(erbert) Lawrence, George Alfred Lawrence, T(homas) E(dward) Laws, G(eorge) Malcolm (Jr) Lawson, Henry Lawson, John Howard Laxness, Halldór Gudjónsson Layamon Layton, Irving Lazarillo de Tormes Lazarillo de Tormes Lazarus, Emma Lea, Henry Charles Leacock, Stephen Butler Lear, Edward Leary, Timothy Leatherstocking Tales, The Leautaud, Paul Leaves of Grass Leavis, F(rank) R(aymond) Le Bossu, René Le Carré, John Lecavele, Roland Leconte de Lisle, Charles Marie René Lee, (Nelle) Harper Lee, Gypsy Rose Lee, Manfred B Lee, Sophia Le Fanu, (Joseph) Sheridan Lefkowitz, Mary Rosenthal Le Fort, Gertrud von Le Gallienne, Richard legend Legouve, Gabriel Jean Baptiste Ernest-Wilfrid Le Guin, Ursula K(roeber)

Lehmann, John Frederick Lehmann, Wilhelm Lehrer, Jim Lehtonen, Joel Leino, Eino Leland, Charles Godfrey Lem, Stanislaw Lemaître, Jules Lemonnier, Camille Lenau, Nikolaus L'Engle, Madeleine Lennep, Jacob van Lennox, Charlotte Lenox, James León, Luis de Leonard, Elmore (John, Jr) Leonard, Hugh Leoniceno, Niccolò Leonidas (epigrammatist) Leonov, Leonid Maksimovich Leopardi, Giacomo, Count Leopardi Le Queux, William Tufnell Lermontov, Mikhail Yurevich Le Sage, Alain-René Leskov, Nikolai Semenovich Lesmian, Boleslaw Lessing, Doris May Le Sueur, Meridel letter Let Us Now Praise Famous Men Lever, Charles James Leverson, Ada Levertin, Oscar Ivar Levertov, Denise Levi, Peter Levi, Primo Levin, Harry (Tuchman) Levine, Philip Levy, Andrea Lewes, George Henry Lewis, (Harry) Sinclair Lewis, (Percy) Wyndham Lewis, Alun Lewis, C(live) S(taples) Lewis, Cecil Day Lewis, Dominic Bevan Wyndham

Lewis, Matthew Gregory Leypoldt, Frederic Libanius Libra Lie, Jonas Lieber, Francis Life Liliencron, Detlev von limerick Lindgren, Astrid Lindsay, (Nicholas) Vachel Lindsay, David (poet) Lindsay, Jack Lingard, Joan Linklater, Eric Linna, Väinö Linnankoski, Johannes Lion, the Witch and the Wardrobe, The Li Po Lippard, George Lippincott, Joshua (Ballinger) Lippmann, Walter Lipsius, Justus Lispector, Clarice Lissauer, Ernst literary criticism literary prizes <u>literary society</u> literati literature Lithuanian literature Little John Little Review, The Littleton, Mark Little Women Lively, Penelope Margaret Liveright, Horace (Brisbin) Living Theater Livius Andronicus, Lucius Llewellyn, Richard Lochhead, Liz Locker-Lampson, Frederick Lockhart, John Gibson Lockhart, Robert Hamilton Bruce Lodge, David John Lodge, George Cabot

Lodge, Thomas Loetscher, Hugo Lofting, Hugh John Logan, John Logue, Christopher Lolita London, Jack (John Griffith Chaney) Long Day's Journey into Night, A Longfellow, Henry Wadsworth Longinus, Dionysius Cassius Longley, Michael Longstreet, Augustus Baldwin Longus Lonnbohm, Eino Leopold Lönnrot, Elias Look Back in Anger Loos, Anita Lope de Vega, (Carpio) Felix López, Iñigo López de Mendoza López de Ayala, Pedro Lorca, Federico García Lord, Daniel A(loysius) Lorde, Audre (Geraldine) Lord Jim Lord of the Rings, The Loris Lost Generation, the Lothrop, Harriet Mulford Loti, Pierre Loudon, Samuel Lourie, Richard Louvet de Couvrai, Jean-Baptiste Louw, Nicholaas Petrus van Wyk Lovecraft, H(oward) P(hillips) Lovelace, Richard Lover, Samuel Lowell, Amy Lawrence Lowell, J(ames) R(ussell) Lowell, Robert Traill Spence, Jr Lowe-Porter, H(elen) T(racy) Lowry, (Clarence) Malcolm (Boden) Lowth, Robert Lucan Lucas, Craig Lucas, Edward Verrall Luce, (Ann) Clare Boothe

Lucian Lucilius, Gaius Lucky Jim Ludlum, Robert Ludwig, Otto Luhan, Mabel Dodge Lu Hsün Luis de León, Fray Lull, Ramón Luna, Álvaro de Luo Guan Zhong Luo Kuan-chung Lurie, Alison Lusiad, The Luska, Sidney Lu Xun, pen-name of Chon Shu-jêu Luzan Claramunt de Suelves y Gurrea, Ignacio de Luzi, Mario Lycophron Lydgate, John Lyly, John Lynd, Robert Lyndsay, David Lysias Lysistrata Lytton, (Edward) Robert Bulwer Lytton, Edward George Earle Lytton Bulwer

#### Μ

Mab, Queen Macaulay, (Emilie) Rose Macaulay, Thomas Babington McAuley, James Phillip McBain, Ed Macbeth Macbeth, George Mann McCabe, Patrick MacCaig, Norman McCarthy, (Charles) Cormac MacCarthy, Denis Florence MacCarthy, Desmond McCarthy, Mary Therese MacColla, Fionn McCourt, Frank (Francis) McCullers, (Lula) Carson

McCullough, David Gaub MacDiarmid, Hugh McDonagh, Martin MacDonagh, Thomas Macdonald, George Macdonald, Ross MacDonald, Thomas Douglas Macdonell, Archibald Gordon Macedonski, Alexandru McEwan, Ian (Russell) McGahern, John MacGill, Patrick McGinley, Phyllis McGough, Roger MacGreevy, Thomas McGuane, Thomas (Francis III) Mácha, Karel Hynek Machado, Antonio Machado, Manuel Machado de Assis, Joaquim Maria Machar, Josef Svatopluk Machaut, Guillaume de Machen, Arthur Machiavelli, Niccolò MacInnes, Colin Mackail, Denis George Mackail, John William McKay, Claude MacKaye, Percy (Wallace) Macken, Walter MacKenna, Stephen Mackenzie, (Kenneth) Seaforth Mackenzie, Compton Mackenzie, Henry Mackintosh, Elizabeth Maclaren, lan MacLaverty, Bernard McLaverty, Michael Maclean, Alistair Maclean, Fitzroy Hew MacLeish, Archibald MacLennan, (John) Hugh Macleod, Fiona McMurtry, Larry Jeff MacNamara, Brinsley McNamara, Joseph D

MacNeice, (Frederick) Louis McNeile, (Herman) Cyril McNickle, (William) D'Arcy McNulty, John Augustine MacOrlan McPhee, John (Angus) Macpherson, (Jean) Jay Macpherson, James Madách, Imre Madame Bovary Madariaga, Salvador de Madeleva, Sister Mary Maerlant, Jacob van Maeterlinck, Maurice Polydore Marie Bernard Maffei, Scipione Magic Mountain, The magic realism Mahabharata Mahfouz, Naguib Mahjar poets Mahon, Derek Mahony, Francis Sylvester Mailer, Norman Kingsley Main Street Maiorescu, Titu Maitland, Richard Making of Americans, The Malamud, Bernard Malet, Lucas Malherbe, François de Mallarmé, Stéphane Mallet, David Malloch, David Malone, Edmund Malory, Thomas Malouf, David George Joseph Malraux, André (Georges) Maltz, Albert Mameli, Goffredo Mamet, David (Alan) Mandelstam, Osip Emilevich Mandeville, Bernard de Mandeville, John Mangan, James Clarence Manheim, Ralph Manilius, Marcus

Manley, Mary de la Riviere Mann, Heinrich Mann, Margaret Mann, Thomas Mannin, Ethel Edith Manning, Olivia Mary Manning, Robert Mannyng, Robert Manrique, Jorge Mansfield, Katherine Mantel, Hilary Manzoni, Alessandro Mao Dun Map, Walter Mapu, Abraham Marcabru Marcel, Gabriel March, Ausiàs Marciana, Biblioteca (Florence) Marciana, Biblioteca (Venice) Mareuil, Arnaut de Marie de France Marinetti, (Emilio) Filippo Tommaso Marini, Giambattista Marivaux, Pierre Carlet de Chamblain de Markham, Edwin Markham, Gervase Markham, Mrs Marlowe, Christopher Marmontel, Jean François Marot, Clément Marple, Miss Marquand, J(ohn) P(hillips) Márquez, Gabriel García Marquis, Don(ald Robert Perry) Marryat, Frederick (Captain) Marsh, (Edith) Ngaio Marshall, James (Edward) Marshall, Paule Martel, Yann Martí, José Julian Martial, (Marcus Valerius Martialis) Martin, Allie Beth Dent Martin, Lowell Arthur Martin, Steve Martin, Theodore

Martin, Violet Florence Martin du Gard, Roger Martineau, Harriet Martinez de la Rosa, Francisco de Paula Martínez Ruiz, José Martín Fierro Martinson, Harry Edmund Marullus, Michael Marvell, Andrew Masefield, John Mason, A(Ifred) E(dward) W(oodley) Mason, Bobbie Ann Mason, Ronald Alison Kells Mason, William Masses, The Massey, Gerald Massingham, Harold John Masters, Edgar Lee Masters, John Mather, Cotton mathnavi Matthews, James Brander Matthiessen, F(rancis) O(tto) Matthiessen, Peter Maturin, Charles Robert Maugham, (William) Somerset Maugham, Robin Cecil Romer Maupassant, (Henry René Albert) Guy de Maupin, Armistead Mauriac, François Maurois, André Maurras, Charles Marie Photius May, Thomas (writer) Mayakovsky, Vladimir Vladimirovich Mayhew, Henry Maynard, François Mayne Reid, Thomas Mayo, Katherine McInerney, Jay Medea Mee, Arthur Megasthenes Mehta, Ved Parkash Meistersinger Melcher, Frederic Gershom Meleager

Meléndez Valdés, Juan Meli, Giovanni Melville, Herman Mena, Juan de Ménage, Gilles Menard, Louis Nicolas Mencken, H(enry) L(ouis) Mendele, Mokher Sefarim Mendès, Catulle Menéndez y Pelayo, Marcelino Menken, Adah Isaacs Merat, Albert Merchant of Venice, The Mercier, Louis Sébastien Meredith, George Meredith, Scott Meres, Francis Merezhkovski, Dmitri Sergeevich Mérimée, Prosper Mermaid Tavern Merrie England Merrill, James (Ingram) Merrill, Stuart Merriman, Brian Merriman, Henry Seton Merritt, LeRoy Charles Merton, Thomas (James) Merwin, W(illiam) S(tanley) Metalious, Grace metaphysical poets Metastasio Metcalf, Keyes (Dewitt) Mew, Charlotte Mary Meyer, Conrad Ferdinand Meynell, Alice Christiana Gertrude Meynell, Wilfrid Michaux, Henri Michener, James A(Ibert) Mickiewicz, Adam Bernard Middlemarch: A Study of Provincial Life Middleton, Richard Barham Midsummer Night's Dream, A Migne, Jacques Paul Mikes, George Mikes, Kelemen Mikhailovski, Nikolai Konstantinovich

Mikszáth, Kálmán Milam, Carl Hastings Millar, Kenneth Millay, Edna St Vincent Miller, Henry Valentine Miller, Hugh Miller, Joaquin Miller, Perry (Gilbert Eddy) Miller, William (Scottish) Millin, Sarah Gertrude Mill on the Floss, The Milne, A(lan) A(lexander) Milosz, Czeslaw Milton, John (poet) Mimnermus Minarik, Else Holmelund Minot, Laurence Mirbeau, Octave Henri Marie Miró, Gabriel Miron, Gaston Mirrlees, Hope Mirror for Magistrates Misanthrope, The Misérables, Les Mishima, Yukio Mistral, Frédéric Mistral, Gabriela Mitchel, John Mitchell, Adrian Mitchell, James Leslie Mitchell, Margaret Mitchell, Silas Weir Mitchison, Naomi Mary Margaret Mitford sisters Miyamoto, Musashi Mo, Timothy Moberg, (Carl Artur) Vilhelm Moby-Dick Mockel, Albert Henri Louis mod (meeting) Moe, Jørgen Ingebretsen Molesworth, Mary Louisa Molinier, Guilhem Molnár, Ferenc Molza, Francesco Maria Momaday, N(avarre) Scott

Mombert, Alfred Monk, Maria Monkhouse, Allan Monkhouse, William Cosmo monologue Monro, Harold Edward Monroe, Harriet Monroe, Margaret Ellen Monsarrat, Nicholas John Turney Montagu, Elizabeth Montagu, Lady Mary Wortley Montague, C(harles) E(dward) Montague, John Montaigne, Michel Eyguem de Montale, Eugenio Montemayor, Jorge de Montesquiou-Fezensac, Robert Montfaucon, Bernard de Montgomerie, Alexander Montgomery, James Montgomery, Lucy Maude Montgomery, Robert Montherlant, Henri Marie Joseph Millon de Monti, Vincenzo Moody, William Vaughn Moorcock, Michael John Moore, Anne Carroll Moore, Bessie B(oehm) Moore, Brian Moore, George Augustus Moore, John (novelist) Moore, Marianne (Craig) Moore, Michael Moore, Thomas Moore, Thomas Sturge (20th century) Moorhouse, Geoffrey Moor Park (Surrey) Moraes, Dom Moravia, Alberto More, Hannah More, Paul Elmer Moréas, Jean Moreau, Hégésippe Morellet, L'Abbé André Morgan, Charles Langbridge Morgan, Sydney

Morgenstern, Christian Móricz, Zsigmond Mörike, Eduard Mori Ogai Morley, Christopher Darlington Morris, Jan Morris, Lewis Morris, William Morris, Wright (Marion) Morrison, Arthur Morrison, Toni Morsztyn, Jan Andrzej Morte D'Arthur, Le Mortimer, John Clifford Moschus Moses of Khoren Motherwell, William Motion, Andrew Motley, Willard (Francis) Mottram, R(alph) H(ale) Moultrie, John Mourning Becomes Electra Mourning Dove (born Humishima or Christine Quintasket) Mousetrap, The Mphahlele, Es'kia (Ezekiel) Mrs Dalloway <u>Mu'allagat</u> Muckrakers, the Mudge, Isadore Gilbert Muir, Edwin Muldoon, Paul Mulford, Clarence Edward Multatuli multidimensional Mumford, L(awrence) Quincy Münchhausen, Karl Friedrich Hieronymus, Freiherr (Baron) von Münchhausen Munday, Anthony Munro, Alice Munro, H(ector) H(ugh) Munro, Neil Munthe, Axel Martin Fredrik Murakami, Haruki Murasaki, Shikibu Muratori, Lodovico Antonio 'Murders in the Rue Morgue, The' Murdoch, (Jean) Iris

Murger, (Louis) Henri Murner, Thomas Murphy, Arthur Murphy, Dervla Mary Murphy, Richard Murray, (George) Gilbert (Aimé) Murray, Charles Murray, Les(lie) A(llan) Musashi, Miyamoto Muschg, Adolf Musil, Robert Musmanno, Michael Angelo Mussato, Albertino Musset, (Louis Charles) Alfred de Mutanabbi, al-, Abu al-Tayyib Myers, F(rederic) W(illiam) H(enry) Myers, L(eopold) H(amilton)

## Ν

Nabokov, Vladimir Vladimirovich Naevius, Gnaeus Naidu, Sarojini Naipaul, V(idiadhar) S(urajprasad) Naked and the Dead, The Naked Lunch Name of the Rose, The Narayan, R(asipuram) K(rishnaswamy) Narnia, Chronicles of Nash, (Frederic) Ogden Naughton, Bill Navagiero, Andrea Ndebele, Njabulo (Simakahle) Neapolitan Academy Nebrija, Elio Antonio Martínez de Cala de Nedim Negri, Ada Nekrasov, Nikolai Alekseevich Nelligan, Emile Nemcová, Bozena Nemerov, Howard Stanley Nepos, Cornelius Neruda, Jan Neruda, Pablo Nerval, Gérard de Nesbit, E(dith)

Nestroy, Johann Nepomuk Nether Stowey Neuberger, Richard Lewis New Apocalypse Newbery Medal Newbolt, Henry John Newby, (George) Eric New Criticism Newdigate, Roger Newell, Robert Henry Newhall, Nancy New Zealand literature Nexö, Martin Andersen Nezval, Vitezslav Ngugi wa Thiong'o Nibelungenlied Niccolini, Giovanni Battista Nichols, Grace Nicolai, Christoph Friedrich Nicoll, John Ramsay Allardyce Nicolson, Adela Florence Nicolson, Harold George Nicolson, Marjorie Hope Ní Dhomhnaill, Nuala Niemcewicz, Julian Ursyn Nietzsche, Friedrich Wilhelm Nijhoff, Martinus Nims, John Frederick Nin, Anaïs Nineteen Eighty-Four 19th-century English literature Nizami Nizan, Paul Njal's Saga Nkosi, Lewis Noailles, Anna noble savage, the Nobre, Antonio Nodier, Charles Nom Nonnus Norris, Charles Gilman Norris, Frank (Benjamin Franklin) Norris, Kathleen North, Christopher North, Thomas

Norton, Caroline Norton, Charles Eliot Norton, Mary Norwid, Cyprian Kamil Nossack, Hans Erich Nouveau, Germain nouveau roman Novalis novel Noyes, Alfred nursery rhyme

## 0

Oates, Joyce Carol Oberon Obey, André Objectivism O'Brian, Patrick O'Brien, (Josephine) Edna O'Brien, Fitz-James O'Brien, Flann O'Brien, Kate Ó Bruadair, Dáibhi Ó Cadhain, Máirtín Ó Conaire, (Seán-)Pádraic O'Connor, (Mary) Flannery O'Connor, Frank O'Curry, Eugene Ó Dálaigh, Muireadhach Albanach ode O'Donnell, Peadar Odoyevsky, Vladimir O'Duffy, Eimar (Ultan) Odyssey Oe, Kenzaburo Oedipus the King and Oedipus at Colonus Oehlenschläger, Adam Gottlob Ó Faoláin, Seán O'Flaherty, Liam Ogier le Danois O'Grady, Standish James O'Hara, Frank O'Hara, John Henry 0 Henry Ó hEódhasa, Eochaidh

Ohnet, Georges Oisin Okri, Ben Ó Laoghaire, An tAthair Peadar Oldcastle, John Old English literature Oldfather, William Abbott Old Man of the Sea Olesha, Yuri Karlovich Oliphant, Laurence Oliphant, Margaret Olson, Charles John Omar Khayyám Ondaatje, (Philip) Michael O'Neddy, Philothée One Flew Over the Cuckoo's Nest O'Neill, Eugene Gladstone Onetti, Juan Carlos Onions, George Oliver O'Nolan, Brian On the Road Opie Opitz, Martin Oppen, George **Oppenheim**, Edward Phillips **Oppenheim**, James O'Rahilly, Egan oral literature Orange Prize Ó Rathaille, Aodhagán Orczy, Emma Magdalena Rosalia Marie Josepha Barbara Ó Reachtabhra, Antoine O'Reilly, John Boyle Oresteia Oriani, Alfredo Ó Riórdáin, Seán O'Riordan, Conal Holmes O'Connell Orlando Furioso Orti Oricellari Ortiz, Simon (Joseph) Orwell, George Orzeszkowa, Eliza (born Pawlowska) Osbourne, Lloyd O'Shaughnessy, Arthur William Edgar Ossian Ó Súilleabháin, Eoghan Ruadh

O'Sullivan, Seumas Othello Ouida Oursler, (Charles) Fulton Outsider, The Overbury, Thomas Øverland, Arnulf Ovid Owen, John Owen, Wilfred Edward Salter 'Owl and the Nightingale, The' 'Owl and the Pussycat' Oxenham, John Oxford, Edward de Vere, 17th Earl of Oxford Oyono, Ferdinand Léopold Oz, Amos Ozanam, Antoine Frédéric Ozick, Cynthia

#### Ρ

Pack, Robert Pacuvius, Marcus Page, Thomas Nelson Paglia, Camille Painter, William Palahniuk, Chuck Palamas, Kostes Palazzeschi, Aldo Palés Matos, Luis Paley, Grace Palgrave, Francis Turner Palin, Michael Edward Palissot de Montenoy, Charles Palma, Ricardo Paludan, Jacob Paludan-Müller, Frederik pamphlet Panduro, Leif Panormita, II Panter-Downes, Mollie Patricia Papini, Giovanni Paradise Lost Paral, Vladimir Parandowski, Jan Pardo Bazán, Emilia

Paretsky, Sara Pargeter, Edith Parini, Giuseppe Parini, Jay (Lee) Parker, Dorothy Parkman, Francis Parley, Peter Parley, Peter Parnassiens, Les Parnell, Thomas Parr, Samuel Parra, de las, Teresa Parrington, V(ernon) L(ouis) Parrish, Anne Parry, Milman Parry-Williams, Thomas Herbert Partisan Review Pascoli, Giovanni Pasek, Jan Chryzostom Pasolini, Pier Paolo Pasquier, Etienne Pasquin Passage to India Pasternak, Boris Leonidovich Paston Letters Pater, Walter Horatio Paterson, Banjo (Andrew Barton) Pather Panchali Paton, Alan Stewart Patten, Brian Patten, Gilbert Patterson, Harry Pattie, James Ohio Pattison, Mark Paul, Elliot Harold Paulding, James Kirke Paulhan, Jean Paustovski, Konstantin Georgievich Pavese, Cesare Payn, James Paz, Octavio Peacock, Thomas Love Peake, Mervyn Laurence Pearse, Patrick Henry Pearson, Hesketh Peele, George

Péguy, Charles Pierre Peire d'Auvergne Pekar, Harvey Peletier, Jacques Pellico, Silvio Pemberton, Max Pembroke, Mary, Countess of Pembroke Pembroke, William Herbert, 3rd Earl of Pembroke PEN pensée Pepys, Samuel Percy, Thomas Percy, Walker Perec, Georges Pereda, José Maria de Perelman, S(idney) J(oseph) Peretz, Isaac Leib Pérez de Ayala, Ramón Pérez de Guzmán, Fernán Pérez Galdós, Benito Perotti, Niccolò Perrault, Charles Perry, Grace Perry, Lilla Cabot Perse, Saint-John Persian literature Persius, Flaccus Aulus Pessoa, Fernando Antonio Nogueira Peter Pan Peter Rabbit Peters, Ellis Petöfi, Sándor Petrarch Petrescu, Cezar Petronius, Gaius Petrov, Evgeni Peyton Place Pforzheimer, Carl H(oward) Phaedrus Philips, Ambrose Phillimore, Francis Phillips, Caryl Phillips, David Graham Phillips, Jayne Anne Phillips, John Phillips, Stephen

Phillpotts, Eden **Philostratus** Phrynichus picaresque Picture of Dorian Gray, The Pierce, William L 'Pierce the Plowman's Crede' Piercy, Esther June Piercy, Marge Pierre, D B C Piers Plowman Pilcher, Rosamunde **Pilgrim's Progress** Pillow Book, The Pindar Pindar, Peter Pindemonte, Ippolito Pinocchio Pinter, Harold Pirandello, Luigi Pirckheimer, Willibald Pirke Aboth Piron, Alexis Pitcairne, Archibald Pitter, Ruth Pius, Miroslav Plaatje, Sol(omon) T(shekisho) Plaidy, Jean Plath, Sylvia Plautus, Titus Maccius Pléiade, La Plimpton, George Arthur Pliny the Elder Pliny the Younger Plisnier, Charles Plomer, William (Charles Franklyn) Plutarch Po Chü-i Poe, Edgar Allan poet laureate Poetry: A Magazine of Verse Poggio Bracciolini, Giovanni Francesco Pohl, Frederik Poirier, Richard Poirot, Hercule **Polish literature** 

Politian political art Poliziano, Angelo Pollard, Alfred William Ponge, Francis Pontan, Jirí Pontano, Giovanni Pontoppidan, Henrik Poole, William Frederick Popa, Vasko Pope, Alexander Porgy and Bess Porson, Richard Porta, Carlo Porter, Eleanor Porter, Gene Stratton Porter, Jane Porter, Katherine Anne Maria Veronica Callista Russell Porter, Peter Porter, William Sydney Portuguese literature Potok, Chaim Potter, (Helen) Beatrix Potter, Dennis Christopher George Potter, Harry Potter, Stephen (Meredith) Pound, Ezra Loomis Powell, Anthony Dymoke Powell, Dilys Powell, Lawrence Clark Power, Effie Louise Powers, J(ames) F(arl) Powys, John Cowper Powys, Llewelyn Powys, Theodore Francis Praed, Winthrop Mackworth Praise of Folly, The praise poem Pramoedya Ananta Toer Pratt, Edwin John Preda, Marin Prelutsky, Jack Prévert, Jacques Prévost, Jean Prévost d'Exiles, Antoine François Pride and Prejudice

Priestley, J(ohn) B(oynton) Pringle, Thomas Prior, Matthew Prishvin, Mikhail Mikhailovich Pritchett, V(ictor) S(awdon) Prix Goncourt problem plays, Shakespeare's Procopius Procter, Adelaide Ann Procter, Bryan Waller Propertius, Sextus prose Proulx, E(dna) Annie Proust, Marcel Prout, Father Provençal literature Prudentius Prus, Boleslaw Przybyszewski, Stanislaw Psalmanazar, George Psellus, Michael Constantine Psichari, Jean Psycharis, Jannis Puig, Manuel Pulitzer, Joseph Pullman, Philip Purdy, James Amos Pushkin, Aleksandr Sergeyevich Putnam, George Haven Puzo, Mario Pye, Henry James Pym, Barbara Mary Crampton Pynchon, Thomas

## Q

<u>qasida</u> <u>Quarles, Francis</u> <u>Quasimodo, Salvatore</u> <u>Queen, Ellery</u> <u>Queiros, José Maria Eça de</u> <u>Queneau, Raymond</u> <u>Quevedo y Villegas, Francisco Gómez de</u> <u>Quintus, Smyrnaeus</u> <u>Quiroga, Horacio</u> <u>Quixote, Don</u> R

Raabe, Wilhelm Rabassa, Gregory Rabelais, François Racan, Honoré de Bueil, Marquis de Racine, Louis Radcliffe, Ann Radiguet, Raymond Raiftearaí, Antoine Raimbaut de Vaqueiras Raimbaut d'Orange Raine, Craig Anthony Raleigh, Walter Alexander (literature) Ramayana Ramsay, Allan (poet) Ramuz, Charles Ferdinand Rand, Ayn Randall, James Ryder Randolph, Thomas Ranganathan, Shivala Ramanrita Rankin, Ian Ransom, John Crowe Rao, Raja Raoul de Houdenc Raphael, Frederic 'Rapunzel' Raspe, Rudolf Erich Ratushinskaya, Irina 'Raven, The' Rawlings, Marjorie Kinnan Rawlinson, George Raymond, Walter Read, Herbert (Edward) Read, Opie Percival reader-response theory Reader's Digest Reaney, James Rebreanu, Liviu reception theory Rechy, John (Francisco) Red and the Black, The Red Badge of Courage, The Redding, J(ay) Saunders Redol, Antonio Alves 'Red Riding Hood'

Reed, Ishmael (Scott) Reed, Talbot Baines Reeve, Clara Reeve, Henry Reeves, James Reeves, William Pember Regio, José Régnier, Henri François Joseph de Régnier, Mathurin Reid, Forrest Reid, Mayne Reis, Ricardo <u>Rej, Mikolaj</u> Remarque, Erich Maria Renaissance English literature Renan, (Joseph) Ernest Renart, Jean Rendell, Ruth Barbara Renn, Ludwig Republic, The Restif, Nicolas Edme Restoration **Restoration literature** Reuter, Gabriele Rexroth, Kenneth Reymont, Wladyslaw Stanislaw Reznikoff, Charles Rhapsodists Rhétoriqueurs, Les Rhys, Ernest Percival Rhys, Jean Ribeiro, Bernardim Rice, Anne Rice, James Rich, Adrienne Rich, Barnabe Richards, Frank Richards, I(vor) A(rmstrong) Richardson, Dorothy (Miller) Richardson, Henry Handel Richardson, Samuel Riche, Barnaby Richler, Mordecai Richter, Jean Paul (Johann Paul Friedrich) riddle Riding, Laura

Rifbjerg, Klaus Riley, James Whitcomb Rilke, Rainer Maria Rimbaud, (Jean Nicolas) Arthur rímur Rinehart, Mary Roberts 'Ringuet' Rip Van Winkle Ritchie, Anne Isabella, Lady Ritson, Joseph Rittenhouse, Jessie Bell Rivarol, Antoine de Rivière, Jacques Rizal Mercado y Alonzo Realonda, José Roa Bastos, Augusto Robbe-Grillet, Alain Robbins, Harold Robert of Brunneborn **Robert of Gloucester** Roberts, Charles George Douglas Roberts, Kenneth Lewis Roberts, Morley Robertson, William Robin Hood Robinson, (Esmé Stuart) Lennox Robinson, Edwin Arlington Robinson, Henry Crabb Robinson, Roland Robinson Crusoe Roche, Mazo de la Roche, Regina Maria Rochester, John Wilmot, 2nd Earl of Rochester Rode, Helge Rodenbach, Georges Rodgers, W(illiam) R(obert) Roelants, Maurice Roethke, Theodore Huebner Rogers, Samuel Rohmer, Sax Rojas, Fernando de Roland Roland, Chanson de Roland Holst-van der Schalk, Henriette Rolfe, Frederick (William) Rolleston, Thomas William Rölvaaq, O(le) E(dvart)

Romains, Jules romance Roman de la Rose Roman plays, the Romansch literature Romeo and Juliet Ronsard, Pierre de Roper, William Roscoe, William Roscommon, Wentworth Dillon (poet) Rosegger, Peter Rosenberg, Isaac Rosenthal, Jack Morris Rose, Roman de la Rosmini, Carlo de Ross, Martin Rossetti, Christina Georgina Rossetti, Dante Gabriel Rossetti, Gabriele Rossetti, William Michael Roth, Henry Roth, Joseph Roth, Philip (Milton) Rottingdean Roumanille, Joseph Rousseau, Jean Baptiste Rousseau, Jean-Jacques Rowlandson, Mary Rowling, J(oanne) K(athleen) Rowse, A(Ifred) L(eslie) Rowson, Susanna Roy, Arundhati rubáiyát Rucellai, Giovanni Rückert, Friedrich Rudel, Jaufre Rudel, Jaufré Rudge, William Edwin Rudolf of Ems Ruiz, Juan Rukeyser, Muriel Runeberg, Johan Ludvig Runyon, (Alfred) Damon Rushdie, (Ahmed) Salman Ruskin, John Russ, Joanna

Russell, Charles Edward Russell, George William Russell, William Clark Russian literature Russo, Richard Rustaveli, Shota Rutebeuf Rutherford, Mark Rutilius Namatianus, Claudius Rydberg, (Abraham) Viktor

#### S

Saavedra Fajardo, Diego de Saba, Umberto. Sabatini, Rafael Sábato, Ernesto Sa-Carneiro, Mario de Sacchetti, Franco Sacher-Masoch, Leopold von Sachs, Hans Sachs, Nelly Sackville, Thomas Sackville-West, Vita (Victoria Mary) Sade, Donatien Alphonse François, comte de Sá de Miranda, Francisco S'adi Sa'di Sadleir, Michael (Thomas Harvey) Sadoveanu, Mihail Sæmundr, Sigfússon saga Sagan, Françoise Saint-Amant, Marc Antoine Girard de Saint-Denys-Garneau, Hector de Sainte-Beuve, Charles Augustin Saint-Evremond, Charles de Marguetel de Saint-Denis Saint-Exupéry, Antoine Marie Roger de Saint-Gelais, Mellin de Saint-Lambert, Jean-François, Marquis de Saint-Pierre, Jacques Henri Bernadin de Saint-Pol-Roux Saintsbury, George Edward Bateman Saint-Simon, Louis de Rouvroy, duc de Saki Salinger, J(erome) D(avid)

Sallust, Gaius Sallustius Crispus Salmon, André Salutati, Coluccio Samain, Albert Sambucus, Johannes samizdat Sana'i Sánchez, Luis Rafael Sanchez, Sonia Sand, George Sandburg, Carl August Sandeau, Jules Sandemose, Aksel Sandoz, Mari(e Susette) Sandys, John Edwin Sannazaro, Jacopo Santillana, Iñigo López de Mendoza, Margues de Sapper Sappho Saramago, José Sargeson, Frank Sarolea, Charles Saro-Wiwa, Ken Saroyan, William Sarraute, Nathalie Ilyanova Sarton, (Eleanor) May Sartre, Jean-Paul Sassoon, Siegfried Loraine satire Saturnian Verse Saunders, Hilary Aidan St George Sause-Hall, Frédéric. Savage, Richard Savile, Henry Saxo Grammaticus Sayce, Archibald Henry Sayers, Dorothy L(eigh) Sayers, Peig Scaliger, Joseph Justus Scarfe, Francis Harold Scarlet Pimpernel, The Scarron, Paul Scarry, Richard (McClure) scene Scève, Maurice Scheherazade

Schendel, Arthur François Emile van Schiller, Johann Christoph Friedrich von Schlegel, (Karl Wilhelm) Friedrich von Schlegel, August Wilhelm von Schlumberger, Jean Schnitzler, Arthur Schreiner, Olive Emilie Albertina Schubart, Christian Friedrich Daniel Schwartz, Delmore Schwob, Marcel Sciascia, Leonardo scolion Scott, Alexander Scott, Duncan Campbell Scott, Francis Reginald Scott, Hugh Stowell Scott, Michael Scott, Paul Mark Scott, Walter Scottish Gaelic literature Scribe, Augustin Eugène script (theatre) Scudéry, Magdeleine de Seagull, The Sears, Minnie Earl Secret Diary of Adrian Mole Aged 13 3/4, The Secret Garden, The Secundus, Johannes Sedgwick, Catherine Maria Sedley, Charles Seeger, Alan Seeley, John Robert Seferis, George Segalen, Victor Seghers, Anna Seifert, Jaroslav Selby, Hubert, Jr Sembène Ousmane Semonides Sempill, Francis Sempill of Beltrees Sempill, James Sempill of Beltrees Sempill, Robert Sempill, Robert Sempill of Beltrees Sendak, Maurice (Bernard) Seneca, Lucius Annaeus Seneca, Marcus (Lucius) Annaeus

Senghor, Léopold Sédar sensibility Serao, Matilda Service, Robert William set (theatre) Seth, Vikram Seton, Ernest Thompson Settle, Elkanah Seuss, Dr Seven Wise Masters, The Sévigné, Marie de Rabutin-Chantal, Marquise de Sévigné Seward, Anna Sewell, Anna Sexton, Anne Shabbi, Abu'l-Qasim al-Shadwell, Thomas Shah, Eddy (Selim Jehane) Shakespeare, William (dramatist) Shapcott, Jo Shapiro, Karl (Jay) Sharp, William Sharpe, Tom Shaw, Henry Wheeler Shawqi, Ahmad Shchedrin, N Sheehan, Patrick Augustine Sheldon, Charles Monroe Shelley, Mary Wollstonecraft Shelley, Percy Bysshe Shenshin Shenstone, William Shepherd Tony Sherwood, Mary Martha Shevchenko, Taras Hryhorovych Shields, Carol Shimazaki, Toson Shirley, James Shlonsky, Abraham Sholokhov, Mikhail Aleksandrovich Shores, Louis Shorter, Clement King Shorthouse, Joseph Henry short story Shute, Nevil Sidney, Margaret Sidney, Philip

Siegel, Jerry Sienkiewicz, Henryk Adam Alexander Sigerson, Dora Sigourney, Lydia Sikelianos, Angelos Silius Italicus, Tiberius Catius Asconius Silkin, Jon Silko, Leslie Sillanpää, Frans Eemil Sillitoe, Alan Silone, Ignazio silver age Silverstein, Shel(by) Simenon, Georges Joseph Christian Simic, Charles Simms, William Gilmore Simon, Claude Eugène Henri Simonides Sinbad the Sailor Sinclair, May Sinclair, Upton Beall Singer, Isaac Bashevis Singer, Israel Joshua Singleton, Charles S(outhward) Sinyavski, Andrei Donatovich Sitwell, Edith (Louisa) Sitwell, Sacheverell skaldic poetry Skelton, John Skene, William Forbes Skram, (Bertha) Amalie Sládkovic, Andrej Slaveykov, Pencho Petko Slaveykov, Petko Rachev Slavici, Ioan 'Sleeping Beauty, The' Slessor, Kenneth Adolf Slick, Sam Sloan, Eric Slovak literature Slowacki, Juliusz <u>Smectymnuus</u> Smiley, Jane Smith, Alexander (writer) Smith, Ali Smith, Arthur James Marshall

Smith, Dodie Smith, Horatio Smith, Iain Crichton Smith, James (writer) Smith, Logan Pearsall Smith, Pauline (Janet) Smith, Samuel Francis Smith, Seba Smith, Sydney Smith, Zadie Smollett, Tobias George Smyth, Herbert Weir Snicket, Lemony Snodgrass, W(illiam) D(eWitt) Snorri Sturluson Snow, C(harles) P(ercy) Snyder, Gary Sherman Söderberg, Hjalmar Eric Fredrik Solinus, Gaius Julius Solís y Ribadeneyra, Antonio de Solomos, Dionysios Soloviev, Vladimir Sergeyevich Solzhenitsyn, Alexander Isayevich Somerville and Ross 'Song of Myself' sonnet Sons and Lovers Sontag, Susan Sophocles Sordello Sorel, Charles, Sieur de Souvigny Sörensen, Villy Soseki, Natsume Sound and The Fury, The Soupault, Philippe Soutar, William South African literature Southern US fiction Southey, Robert Southwell, Robert Soyer, Raphael Soyinka, Wole Spanish literature Spark, Muriel Spedding, James Speight, Johnny

Spence, (James) Lewis Thomas Chalmers Spencer, Elizabeth Spender, Stephen (Harold) Spenser, Edmund Spiegel, Henrik Laurensz Spielhagen, Friedrich Spillane, Mickey (Frank Morrison) Spingarn, Joel (Elias) Spitteler, Carl Friedrich Georg Sponde, Jean de Spottiswood, Alicia Ann Sprat, Thomas Spring, Howard Spyri, Johanna Squire, J(ohn) C(ollings) Staël, Anne Louise Germaine Necker, Madame de Stafford, Jean stage direction Stallworthy, Jon Howie Stambolov, Stefan Standing Bear, Luther Standish, Burt L Stanyhurst, Richard Stapledon, (William) Olaf Staring, Anthony Christiaan Winand Statius Stead, Christina Ellen Steadman, Ralph Stedman, Edmund Clarence Steel, Danielle Steele, Richard Stefan Ólafsson Stefánsson, David Stegner, Wallace (Earle) Steig, William Stein, Gertrude Steinbeck, John Ernst Stendhal Stephen, Leslie Stephens, James Steppenwolf Sterne, Laurence Sternheim, Carl Stesichorus Stevens, Wallace Stevenson, Robert Louis Balfour

Stiernhielm, Georg Stifter, Adalbert St John, Hector Stobaeus, Johannes Stockton, Frank Stoke Poges Stoker, Bram Stokes, Whitley Stolberg, Christian, Count Stolberg, Friedrich Leopold, Count Stone, Irving Stone, Robert Anthony Storm, Theodor Woldsen Story, William Wetmore Stout, Rex (Todhunter) Stowe, Harriet Elizabeth Beecher Strachey, (Giles) Lytton Strada, Jacopo Strand, Mark Straparola, Giovanni Francesco Strassburg, Gottfried von Stratemeyer, Edward L stream of consciousness Streuvels, Stijn strophe Struwwelpeter Štúr, L'udovít Styron, William Clark Suares, André Suckling, John Sudermann, Hermann Sue, Eugène (Joseph Marie) Sukenick, Ronald Sully-Prudhomme, (René François) Armand Supervieille, Jules Surrey, Henry Howard, Earl of Surrey Surtees, R(obert) S(mith) Svengali Svevo, Italo sweetness and light Swift, Graham Swift, Jonathan Swinburne, Algernon Charles Swindells, Robert Swiss Family Robinson, The Sylva, Carmen

Symbolism (poetry) Symonds, John Addington Symons, Arthur William Symons, Julian (Gustave) symposium synthesis (literature) Szymborska, Wislawa

#### Т

Tabari, al-, Abu Ja'far Muhammad ibn-Jarir Tabley, Baron de Tagore, Rabindranath Tailhade, Laurent Taine, Hippolyte Adolphe Tallemant des Réaux, Gédéon Taming of the Shrew, The Tan, Amy Tanizaki, Jun-ichiro Tannhäuser Tansillio, Luigi Tarkington, (Newton) Booth Tarzan Tasso, Bernardo Tasso, Torquato Tassoni, Alessandro Tate, (John Orley) Allen Tate, James (Vincent) Tate, Nahum Tatius, Achilles Tauchnitz, Christian Bernhard Freiherrvon Tawfiq al-Hakim Taylor, Bayard Taylor, Edward Taylor, Mildred D Taylor, Peter (Hillsman) Teasdale, Sara Tegnér, Esaias Teixeira, de Pascoaes Tel Quel Tempest, The Tennant, Emma (Christina) Tenney, Tabitha Tennyson, Alfred Terence Terhune, Albert Payson

Terkel, 'Studs' Tess of the d'Urbervilles Testi, Fulvio textual criticism Tey, Josephine Thacher, John Boyd Thackeray, William Makepeace Thayer, Ernest Lawrence Theocritus Theognis of Megara Théophile Theophrastus Theroux, Paul Edward Thesiger, Wilfred Patrick Thiard, Pontus de Thibaudet, Albert Thibault, Jacques Anatole François Thin Man, The Thirkell, Angela Margaret Thomas, (Philip) Edward Thomas, Augustus Thomas, Isaiah Thomas, R(onald) S(tuart) Thomas the Rhymer Thomas the Tank Engine Thompson, Alice Thompson, Dorothy Thompson, Hunter S(tockton) Thompson, Jim Thomsen, Grímur Thoor Ballylee Thorbergur Thórdarson Thórdarson Ólafr Thórdarson Sighvatr Thordárson Sturla Thoreau, Henry David Thoroddsen, Jón Thousand and One Nights Three Musketeers, The Three Sisters, The Thubron, Colin Gerald Dryden Thurber, James Grover Tibbles, Susette La Flesche Tibullus, Albius Ticknor, William Davis Tieck, (Johann) Ludwig

**Timotheus of Miletus** Titcomb, Timothy Toíbín, Colm To Kill a Mockingbird Tolkien, J(ohn) R(onald) R(euel) Toller, Ernst Tolstoy, Alexei Nikolaievich Tolstoy, Leo Nikolaievich Tom Brown's Schooldays Tom Jones Tomlinson, H(enry) M(ajor) Tom Sawyer, The Adventures of Toomer, Jean (Eugene Nathan) Topelius, Zacharias Torga, Miguel Toulet, Paul-Jean Tourgée, Albion (Winegar) Townsend, Sue (Susan) Train, Arthur C(heney) Trakl, Georg Trapido, Barbara Traven, B(en) Treasure Island Tremain, Rose Trench, Richard Chenevix Treves, Frederick Trevor, William Trial, The Trillin, Calvin (Marshall) Trilling, Lionel Trissino, Gian Giorgio Tristan l'Hermite Tristan, Flora Tristram Shandy Trollope, Anthony Trollope, Frances Trollope, Joanna Troyat, Henri Trumbo, (James) Dalton Trumbull, John Tryon, Thomas Tschudi, Gilg Tsvetayeva, Marina Ivanovna Tuckerman, Frederick Goddard Tuckerman, Henry Theodore Tudor, Tasha

Tufte, Edward R(olf) Tu Fu Tulsi Das Turgenev, Ivan Sergeievich Turkish literature Tuwhare, Hone Tuwim, Julian Tvardovsky, Alexander Twain, Mark Twardowski, Samuel Twelfth Night 20th-century English literature Tyler, Anne Tyler, Royall Tynan, Katharine Tyndale, William Tyrtaeus Tyutchev, Fedor Ivanovich Tzara, Tristan

#### U

Übermensch Uhland, Johann Ludwig Ukrainian literature Ulysses Unamuno, Miguel de Unanimism 'Uncle Remus' Uncle Tom's Cabin Uncle Vanya Underhill, Evelyn Undset, Sigrid Ungaretti, Giuseppe United States literature Unruh, Fritz von Unsworth, Barry Foster Unwin, Stanley Updike, John Hoyer Uppdal, Kristofer Urfé, Honore d' <u>Ur-Hamlet</u> Uris, Leon (Marcus) Utopia Utopia Uttley, Alison

V

Vachell, Horace Annesley Vailland, Roger Valentine and Orson Valerius Flaccus, Gaius Valerius Maximus Valéry, Paul Amboise Vallancey, Charles Valle-Inclán, Ramón María de Vallejo, César Vallès, Jules Van Allsburg, Chris Vancura, Vladislav van der Post, Laurens Jan Van Dine, SS Van Doren, Carl Clinton Van Doren, Mark Albert Van Druten, John Van Duyn, Mona (Jane) Van Dyke, Henry Vanity Fair Van Lerberghe, Charles Vargas Llosa, (Jorge) Mario (Pedro) Varius Rufus, Lucius Varnhagen von Ense, Carl August Vauquelin de la Fresnaye, Jean, Sieur des Yveteaux Vauvenargues, Luc de Clapiers, Marquis de Vega, Lope Felix de (Carpio) Vegetius Vélez de Guevara, Luis Vendler, Helen (Hennessy) Vercors Verde, Cesario Verga, Giovanni Vergil Verhaeren, Emile Verlaine, Paul Marie Vermeylen, August Verne, Jules verse Verwey, Albert Very, Jones Vesaas, Tarjei Vestdijk, Simon Viau, Théophile de

Viaud, (Louis Marie) Julien Vidal, Gore Viebig, Clara Vielé-Griffin, Francis Viereck, George Sylvester Vigny, Alfred Victor, comte de Villani, Giovanni Villehardouin, Geoffroy de Villena, Enrique de Villiers de l'Isle Adam, (Jean Marie Philippe) Auguste, comte de Villon, François Vincent of Beauvais Virgil Vitrac, Roger Vittorini, Elio Vives, Juan Luis Vizenor, Gerald Vlastos, Gregory Vogüé, (Charles Jean) Melchior, Vicomte de Voiculescu, Vasile Voiture, Vincent Voltaire Voluspá Vondel, Joost van den Vonnegut, Kurt, Jr Vörösmarty, Mihály Voznesensky, Andrey Andreyevich Vrchlický, Jaroslav Vysotsky, Vladimir Semenovich

#### W

Wain, John (Barrington) Wakoski, Diane Walcott, Derek Walton Walden Walker, Alice Malsenior Walker, James Cooper Wall, Mervyn Eugene Welply Wallace, (Richard Horatio) Edgar Wallace, Irving Walpole, Horace Walser, Martin Walser, Robert Walsh, Maurice Walton, Izaak War and Peace Ward, Artemus Warner, Charles Dudley Warner, Marina Sarah Warner, Susan Bogert Warren, Mercy Otis Warren, Robert Penn Wassermann, Jakob Waste Land, The Water Babies, The Waterhouse, Keith Spencer Watkins, Vernon Watson, John (writer) Watson, William Waugh, Alec (Alexander Raban) Waugh, Edwin Waugh, Evelyn (Arthur St John) Way of All Flesh, The Wazyk, Adam Webb, Francis Webster, Jean Weems, Mason Locke Weinstein, Nathan Wallenstein Weiss, Peter (Ulrich) Welch, (Maurice) Denton Weldon, Fay Welhaven, Johan Sebastian Cammermeyer Wellek, René Wells, H(erbert) G(eorge) Welsh, Irvine Welsh literature Welty, Eudora Alice Weöres, Sándor Werfel, Franz Wergeland, Henrik Arnold Wescott, Glenway Wesley, Mary West, Nathanael West, Rebecca Westall, Robert Western Weston, Elizabeth Jane Wetherell, Elizabeth Weyman, Stanley John Wharton, Edith Newbold Wheatley, Dennis Yates

Wheatley, Phyllis Wheelwright, John Brooks Wheen, Francis White, Bailey (June) White, E(Iwyn) B(rooks) White, Edmund (Valentine, III) White, Joseph Blanco White, Patrick Victor Martindale White, T(erence) H(anbury) White, Walter (Francis) White, William Allen White, William Hale Whitman, Cedric (Hubbell) Whitman, Walt(er) Whitney, Anne Whittier, John Greenleaf Wickram, Jörg Widdemer, Margaret Wideman, John Edgar Widener, Harry Elkins Wiechert, Ernst Wieland, Christoph Martin Wiener, Franz Wiesel, Elie(zer) Wiggin, Kate Douglas Wigginton, (B) Eliot Wigglesworth, Michael Wilbur, Richard Purdy Wilcox, Ella Wilde, Jane Francesca Wilde, Oscar (Fingal O'Flahertie Wills) Wildenbruch, Ernst von Wilder, Laura (Elizabeth) Ingalls Wiley, Charles Wilhelm Meister's Apprenticeship Willard, Nancy William of Tyre Williams, C K Williams, Charles (Walter Stansby) Williams, Hugo Williams, Ifor Williams, John (Alfred) Williams, Margery (Winifred) Williams, Raymond (Henry) Williams, William Carlos Willis, Nathaniel Parker

Willis, Ted Wilson, A(ndrew) N(orman) Wilson, Angus (Frank Johnstone) Wilson, Colin Henry Wilson, Edmund Wilson, Halsey William Wilson, Jacqueline Wilson, John (writer) Wilson, John Dover (scholar) Winchilsea, Anne Finch, Countess of Wind in the Willows, The Winnie-the-Pooh Winsor, Justin Winters, (Arthur) Yvor Wirt, William Wister, Owen Wither, George Wizard of Oz, The Wonderful Wodehouse, P(elham) G(renville) Woestijne, Karel van de Wolcot, John Wolf, Christa Wolfe, Charles Wolfe, Gene Rodman Wolfe, Humbert Wolfe, Thomas Clayton Wolfe, Tom Wood, Mrs Henry Woodberry, G(eorge) E(dward) Woods, Margaret Louisa Woolf, (Adeline) Virginia Woolrich, Cornell Woolson, Constance Fenimore Worcester, Joseph E(merson) Wordsworth, William Wouk, Herman Wright, Harold Bell Wright, Richard (Nathaniel) Wulfstan Wuthering Heights Wylie, Elinor Hoyt Wylie, Philip Gordon Wyndham, John Wyntoun, Andrew of Wyspianski, Stanislaw Wyss, Johann David

#### Wyss, Johann Rudolf

# Χ

#### Xingjian, Gao

# Υ

Yale School Yeats, W(illiam) B(utler) Yellow Book, The yellow press Yerby, Frank (Garvin) Yevtushenko, Yevgeny Aleksandrovich Yezierska, Anzia Yolen, Jane (Hyatt) Young, Andrew John Young, E(mily) H(ilda) Young, Edward Young, Francis Brett Yourcenar, Marguerite Yugoslav literature

# Ζ

Zamfirescu, Duiliu Zamyatin, Evgeni Ivanovich Zangwill, Israel Zapolska, Gabriela Zaturenska, Marya Zephaniah, Benjamin Obadiah Igbal Zeromski, Stefan Zeyer, Julius Zhukovski, Vasili Andreevich Zimmermann, Johann Georg von Zinovyev, Alexander Aleksandrovich Zola, Émile Edouard Charles Antoine Zollinger, Albin Zoshchenko, Mikhail Mikhailovich Zrínyi, Miklós Zsamboky, János Zuckmayer, Carl Zukofsky, Louis Zurara, Gomes Eanes de Zurita, Jerónimo de Zweig, Stefan

# Aakjaer, Jeppe (1866-1930)

Danish poet and novelist. Born in Jutland into a poor peasant family, he was an anticleric who became an impassioned campaigner for the rights of peasant workers. He is best remembered for his poetry, especially *Rugens sange/Song of the Rye* (1906).

# Aarestrup, Carl Ludvig Emil (1800-1856)

Danish poet. An aesthete with a warm admiration of female beauty and an unusual frankness in erotic description, he was little known until the posthumous publication of his poems in 1863, followed by an edition of his *Samlede Digte/Collected Poems* (1877).

Born in Copenhagen, Aarestrup was a physician by profession and published only one volume of poetry, *Digte/Poems* (1838), during his lifetime.

### Aasen, Ivar Andreas (1813-1896)

Norwegian philologist, poet, and dramatist. Through a study of rural dialects, connecting them with Old Norwegian, he evolved a native country language, which he called *Landsmål* (now known as *Nynorsk* or New Norwegian) and which he intended should replace literary Dano-Norwegian.

Landsmål was recognized 1885 alongside Riksmål, or Bokmål, which is a development of Danish (at one time the official and literary language of Norway). Aasen published a grammar, Det norske folkesprogs grammatik/A Grammar of the Norwegian Folk Language (1948), and a dictionary, Ordbog over det norsk folkesprog/Dictionary of the Norwegian Folk Language (1850). He also wrote plays and poems in Landsmål.

## Abbey, Edward (1927-1989)

US author and conservationist. His novels include *The Monkey Wrench Gang* (1976), about a gang of ecological saboteurs. This was a best-seller, making Abbey a cult hero.

Although Abbey disapproved of ecological extremists, his writings and public statements were characteristically quirky. He published his first book, *Jonathan Troy*, in 1954. In *Desert Solitaire* (1968) - an account of his years as a part-time ranger in the Arches National Monument, Utah - he called for a ban on motor vehicles in wilderness preserves.

#### Abbot, Robert Sengstacke (1868-1940)

US publisher and editor, born in Simons Island, Georgia. In 1905 he founded the *Chicago Defender*, which he edited until 1940. Committed to defending the rights of African Americans, the paper was ran celebrated campaigns attacking racism and social injustice, in particular lynching.

## Abbotsford

home of Scottish novelist Walter <u>Scott</u> from 1811, on the right bank of the River Tweed, Borders region, Scotland. Originally a farmhouse, it was rebuilt 1817-25 as a Gothic baronial hall, and is still in the possession of his descendants.

## Abbott, Jacob (1803-1879)

US author. He entered the ministry of the Congregational Church, but is best known for his educational and religious writings. His first book, *The Young Christian* (1832), was followed by some 200 others.

## Abbt, Thomas (1738-1766)

German writer. Born at Ulm, he was a friend of Gotthold Lessing and Moses Mendelssohn, and contributed to the *Literaturbriefe*, a literary weekly which appeared 1759-65. He wrote *Vom Tod furs Vaterland/On Death for the Fatherland* (1761) and *Vom Verdienst/On Merit* (1765).

#### à Beckett, Gilbert Abbott (1811-1856)

English humorous writer. He was the author of comic histories of England and Rome and *The Comic Blackstone* (1844) on English law. He also wrote over 50 plays and helped to dramatize some of Dickens's novels.

#### Abe Kobo (1924-1993)

Japanese novelist and playwright. He was a leader of the avant-garde, and his familiarity with Western literature, existentialism, surrealism, and Marxism

influenced his distinctive treatment of the problems of alienation and loss of identity in post-war Japan. His books include the claustrophobic novel *Suna no onna/ Woman of the Dunes* (1962) and minimalist plays such as his trilogy *Bo ni natta otoko/The Man Who Turned into a Stick* (1969).

#### Abercrombie, Lascelles (1881-1938)

English poet and scholar. He published *Interludes and Poems* (1908) and several other volumes of verse and verse dramas before World War I. Among Abercrombie's critical works are a study of Thomas Hardy (1912), *Principles of English Prosody* (1924), and *Poetry: Its Music and Meaning* (1932). His *Collected Poems* appeared in 1930.

## Abish, Walter (1931-)

US writer of Austrian-Jewish origin. His novels, short stories, and poetry experiment with language and sound. He uses an unexpressive, formalist style to investigate modern history and morality in such novels as *Alphabetical Africa* (1974), in which each chapter contains words all starting with the same letter, and *How German Is It?* (1980), an ironic guidebook that reveals the darkness and guilt behind the materialism of post-war Germany.

# About, Edmond François Valentin (1828-1885)

French writer. His novels include *Le Roi des montagnes/The King of the Mountains* (1856), *Le Nez d'un notaire/The Lawyer's Nose* (1862), *L'Homme à l'oreille cassée/ The Man with the Broken Ear* (1867), *Le Cas de M Guérin* (1862), and *Le Roman d'un brave homme/The Story of a Good Man* (1880).

He also contributed to journals, founded *Le XIX Siècle/The Nineteenth Century* in 1871, and wrote *Le Progrès*, a study of social reforms, and *ABC du travailleur/ Handbook of Social Economy; or, The Worker's ABC* (1868; translated 1872).

## Abrahams, Peter (1919-)

South African novelist. He was South Africa's first prolific black writer, whose novels are distinguished by a passionate anti-racism. Best known for the novel *Mine Boy* (1946), Abrahams wrote all his fiction after going into exile in 1939. He spent the next 20 years in Britain, before emigrating to Jamaica in 1959.

In early novels, such as Song of the City (1945), freedom of mind is put ahead of

political freedom. In later novels, however, such as *A Wreath for Udomo* (1956) and *A Night of Their Own* (1965), political change is seen as a requirement for freedom of mind. The later phase of Abrahams's fiction is marked by an increased interest in colonialism, and in the role of the artist in relation to the people. Other works include *Return to Goli* (1953), a documentary account of a return visit he made to South Africa in 1952, his autobiography *Tell Freedom* (1954), and the novels *The Path of Thunder* (1948), *Wild Conquest* (1951), and *The View from Coyaba* (1985).

## Abrams, Meyer (Howard) (1912-)

American literary critic and educator. A major historical and humanistic critic, his work on the English Romantic poets include *The Mirror and the Lamp* (1953). He taught English literature at Cornell University from 1945-83.

# Abse, Dannie (1923-)

Welsh poet, novelist, and dramatist. His first volume of verse was After Every Green Thing (1949), and subsequent volumes include White Coat, Purple Coat: Collected Poems 1948-1988 (1989), Remembrance of Crimes Past (1990), and Selected Poems (1994). Ash on a Young Man's Sleeve (1954) and There Was a Young Man from Cardiff (1991) are semi-autobiographical novels about his Jewish upbringing. A Poet in the Family (1974) is an autobiography.

Abse was born in Cardiff, educated at the University of South Wales and Monmouthshire, and at King's College, London, where he qualified as a physician in 1950. He was poet-in-residence at Princeton University 1953-54. His verse reflects both his background and his subsequent day-to-day experiences. His most notable play is the one-act *Gone and In the Cage*, published in *Three Questor Plays* (1967). *Intermittent Journals* (1995) comprises literary, medical, and personal reminiscences.

# Abu-al-Ala al-Maarri (or Abu'l-'Ala al-Ma'arri) (973-1057)

Arab writer and poet. He was a notable humanist, distinguished by his hatred of injustice, hypocrisy, and superstition. His works include poems under the title *Saqt uz Zand*, later poems the *Luzumiyyat*, and a collection of letters.

## Abû Mâdî, Ilyâ (c. 1890-1957)

Lebanese poet. Abû Mâdî published several books, notably *AI-Jadowil/The Brooks*, in 1925. Largely self-taught, he set up a biweekly, then daily, literary review entitled

al-Samir which he edited it until his death.

Abû Mâdî left Lebanon for Egypt where he worked as a tobacconist, before emigrating to the USA in 1911. He was known as a romantic poet.

## Abú Nuwás, Hasan ibn Háni (c.760-c. 815)

Arab poet. Considered to be one of the greatest poets of the Abbasid period, he is celebrated for the freedom, eroticism, and ironic lightness of touch he brought to traditional forms.

He was educated at Basra, spent a year in the desert among the Arabs, and later lived under the protection of the caliph Harun al-Rashid in Baghdad. The *Divan des Abu Nuwas*, translated by A von Kremer, was published in Vienna in 1855; it was published in the original in Cairo 1860; and in Beirut 1884.

## Academy, the

British literary and artistic journal, founded in 1869 by the scholar and lecturer C E C B Appleton (1841-1879) and published until 1909. Among its many contributors were Matthew Arnold, William Michael, Dante Gabriel Rossetti, Francis Turner Palgrave, and William Morris.

## Accademia della Crusca

or Furfuratorum

#### (Italian crusca 'bran that remains after the bolting of flour')

Italian academy founded in Florence in 1582 by the writer Antonio Francesco Grazzini (1503-1584). It aimed at purifying and cultivating Italian language and literature, and its *Vocabolario degli Accademici della Crusca* (first edition 1612) is still a model for works of the kind. The Académie Française was modelled on this one.

## Acciaiuoli, Donato (1429-1478)

Italian scholar and humanist. He studied under the Byzantine scholar John Argyropoulos in Florence and became renowned for his knowledge of Greek, translating Plutarch's *Lives*, and Aristotle's *Politics* and *Ethics*. In 1473 he became a member of the council of magistrates in Florence.

## Accius (or Actius or Attius), Lucius (170-c. 85 BC)

Roman tragic poet. He wrote more than 40 tragedies on Greek themes but only two on Roman themes. About 700 lines of his work survive.

### Accolti, Benedetto (1415-1464)

Italian jurist and writer. Born in Arezzo, he taught law at the university of Florence and in 1458 became chancellor of the Florentine republic. He is chiefly remembered for his history of the First Crusade, which is the basis of the epic poem *Gerusalemme liberata* (1574) by the Italian poet <u>Tasso</u>.

# Accolti, Bernardo (1458-1535)

#### also known as Unico Aretino

Italian writer, the son of Benedetto <u>Accolti</u>. He acquired renown at several Italian courts, notably Mantua and Urbino, as a reciter of impromptu verse. His comedy *Virginia*, based on a story in Boccaccio's *Decameron*, was first performed in 1494, and printed in 1535.

## Accolti, Francesco (1416-c. 1484)

also known as Francesco Aretino

Italian jurist and writer, the brother of Benedetto <u>Accolti</u>. He is best know for his verse translation (published in 1528) of *De bello italico adversus Gothos/The Italian War Against the Goths* by Leonardo <u>Bruni</u>.

## Achad Haam (or Ahad ha-Am) (1858-1927)

#### pseudonym of Asher Ginzberg

Jewish writer, philosopher, and Zionist leader. He founded the periodical *Ha-Shiloa* (1897), and stressed the necessity for a renewal of the Hebrew spirit. In 1907 he moved to London and in 1922 to Palestine, where he settled. He was a close adviser of the Zionist leader Chaim Weizmann.

Born in the Ukraine, he went to Palestine in 1891 and 1893 and became convinced that Zionism needed to emphasize its cultural and spiritual nature, thus disagreeing with the political aims of many other Zionists. He also warned, in 1891, that the Arabs of Palestine were opposed to Jewish political designs on their territory.

# Achebe, Chinua (1930-)

#### born Albert Chinualumogu Achebe

Nigerian novelist. His themes include the social and political impact of European colonialism on African people, and the problems of newly independent African nations. His best-known work is the influential *Things Fall Apart* (1958), one of the first African novels to achieve a global reputation.

His other novels include *Arrow of God* (1964), which depicts traditional Ibo society and the response of individual Ibos to European missionaries and administrators. *No Longer at Ease* (1960), *A Man of the People* (1966), and *The Anthills of Savannah* (1987) reveal the lasting effects of colonialism for contemporary Nigerians. Achebe has also published children's books, *Chike and the River* (1972) and *How the Leopard Got Its Claws* (1973), a collection of short stories, *Girls at War and Other Stories* (1972), and a volume of poetry, *Christmas in Biafra* (1973). He also founded and edited *Okike* (1971), an African journal of new writing, and has received numerous awards.

## Achilles Tatius (lived 2nd century AD)

Greek writer of Alexandria. His *Romance of Leucippe and Clitophon* influenced the growth of the novel in Europe.

#### Acker, Kathy (1944-1997)

US postmodern, feminist author. One of the new wave of avant-garde writers influenced by cult figures such as William Burroughs and Georges Bataille, Acker's eclectic style attracted notoriety when she published *Blood and Guts in High School* in 1978. In this novel, her juxtaposition of elements of autobiography, plagiarism, and pornography challenged the reader's concept of fiction and pushed back the boundaries of writing.

At the age of 18 she began to work in the sex industry as a stripper and show girl. Meanwhile she wrote journalistic pieces on the porn industry, inspired by the work of Burroughs. Her first two novels reflect his influence on her work: *I Dreamt I Was a Nymphomaniac: Imagining* (1974) and *The Childlike Life of the Black Tarantula* (1975). However, with these books Acker also established her own style, characterized by a refusal to develop plot, and provocative description of the sexual, the brutal, and the ugly.

The US feminist movement embraced Acker as a voice of the new counterculture, but in the mid-1980s her love-hate relationship with her home country led her to move to England. Acker also turned to performance art; her spiky punk hair, leather clothing, body piercings, and tattoos added to her notoriety, and she soon became a well-known figure. In 1990 Acker set up a department of writing at the San Francisco Art Institute.

#### Ackroyd, Peter (1949-)

English novelist, biographer, reviewer, and poet. His novel *Hawksmoor* (1985) won the Whitbread award, and *T S Eliot* (1984) won the Whitbread prize for biography. Ackroyd's other books include the novels *Chatterton* (1987), *The House of Doctor Dee* (1993), *Milton in America* (1996), and *The Clerkenwell Tales* (2003), and biographies of Ezra Pound (1987), Charles Dickens (1990), William Blake (1995), and Thomas More (1998). His work often blurs the distinction between biography and fiction.

Ackroyd was born in London, England, which he describes as the 'landscape for my imagination' in most of his books. He was educated at Clare College, Cambridge, and Yale University, Connecticut. In 1973 he joined the staff of the *Spectator* magazine, becoming the principal book reviewer for *The Times* newspaper in 1986. He published two books of verse in the 1970s but gave up poetry as a medium of communication in favour of prose because of its comparative 'intransigence'.

#### Acmeist movement

movement in early 20th-century Russian poetry reacting against Symbolism. Acmeists developed a neoclassical emphasis on clear words about demystified realities. Major figures include Osip <u>Mandelshtam</u>, Anna <u>Akhmatova</u>, and Nikolay Gumilyov (1886-1921), founder of the Acmeist organ *Apollon* (1909-17).

#### Acosta, José de (c. 1539-1600)

Spanish Jesuit and writer. From 1571 to 1587 he lived in South America as a missionary and wrote a history of that continent, *Historia natural y moral de las Indias/A Natural and Moral History of the Indies*, published in 1590.

see Accius.

### Acuña, Cristóval de (1597-c. 1650)

Spanish Jesuit missionary. He wrote an account of a journey of exploration down the Amazon River, which appeared 1641 as *Nuevo descubrimiento del gran río de las Amazonas*.

# Adagia

collection of Latin proverbs and allusions published by the Dutch humanist <u>Erasmus</u> in 1500. The texts and his commentaries were meant to encourage the use of a correct and elegant Latin style. The book quickly became enormously successful, with numerous editions appearing during the 16th century.

# Adam, Juliette (1836-1936)

#### born Juliette Lamber

French writer. She wrote stories as well as books on political and social subjects, and founded the *Nouvelle revue* 1879. Her salon was politically influential.

#### Adam, Paul-Auguste-Marie (1862-1920)

French novelist. His work includes *Chair molle* 1885, written in the style of Emile Zola; stories of historical investigation; four romances of the Napoleonic period, including *La Force* (1899); and an autobiographical novel, *Jeunesse et amours de Manuel Héricourt* (1913).

#### Adam de la Halle (c. 1240-c. 1290)

French lyric poet, dramatist, and composer. His *Jeu de la feuillée* (*c.* 1277) is one of the earliest French comedies. His *Le Jeu de Robin et Marion*, written in Italy about 1282, is a theatrical work with dialogue and songs set to what were apparently popular tunes of the day. It is sometimes called the forerunner of comic opera.

# Adamic, (Alojzij) Louis (c. 1899-1951)

Yugoslavian-born writer who emigrated to the USA in 1913. Adamic wrote many articles, stories, and books based on his experiences in the USA and his former life in Yugoslavia, the best known being *Native's Return: An American Immigrant Visits Yugoslavia and Discovers His Old Country* (1934). He was killed by a gunshot wound.

Adamic became an American citizen in 1918 and served in the US Army in World War I. Although he supported Tito, he was opposed to Soviet communism. Upon his death there was inconclusive speculation as to whether he had committed suicide or been murdered by Soviet agents.

### Adams, Charles Follen (1842-1918)

US humourous dialect poet. A dry-goods dealer in Boston, he diverted himself by writing poems in Pennsylvania German dialect (or 'Pennsylvania Dutch'), similar to the popular ballads of US author Hans Breitmann (1824-1903). He became widely known for 'Leedle Yawcob Strauss' (1878). His collected poems were published in 1910.

### Adams, Douglas (Noël) (1952-2001)

English novelist and scriptwriter, author of a series of best-selling space-fiction books which began with <u>The Hitch-Hiker's Guide to the Galaxy</u> (originally a radio serial in 1978 and published in 1979). He has also written the absurdist detective books *Dirk Gently's Holistic Detective Agency* (1987) and *The Long Dark Tea-Time of the Soul* (1988), and a non-fiction book about endangered species, *Last Chance to See*.

#### Adams, Henry Brooks (1838-1918)

US historian and novelist, a grandson of President John Quincy Adams. He published the nine-volume *History of the United States During the Administrations of Jefferson and Madison* (1889-91), a study of the evolution of democracy in the USA.

# Adams, Richard (George) (1920-)

English novelist. He wrote *Watership Down* (1972), a story of rabbits who escape from a doomed warren and work together to establish a new one. *Tales from Watership Down* (1996) continues the mythology. His other novels using animals as main characters are *Shardik* (1974), *The Plague Dogs* (1977), and *Traveller* (1988),

while *The Girl on the Swing* (1980) and *Maia* (1984) have human protagonists. He has also written *The Days Gone By: An Autobiography* (1990).

#### adaptation

#### (Latin *adaptare*, 'to fit to')

in literature and music, a term used to denote the modification of a particular art form to allow its suitable expression in another form, for example the adaptation of a play from a novel or the adaptation of a piece of music for a different type of instrument.

### Adcock, (Kareen) Fleur (1934-)

New Zealand poet, based in England. She has developed a distinctive, unsentimental poetic voice with which she coolly explores contemporary life, love, and personal relationships. Her collections include *The Eye of the Hurricane* (1964), *High Tide in the Garden* (1971), *The Inner Harbour* (1979), and *Time Zones* (1991).

Born in Papakura, New Zealand, Adcock received most of her education in England before returning to university in New Zealand. Following the end of her first marriage she returned to England. She edited *The Oxford Book of Contemporary New Zealand Verse* (1982) and translated medieval Latin poems under the title *The Virgin and the Nightingale* (1983). Trained as a classicist, she worked as a librarian and lecturer in New Zealand.

#### Addison, Joseph (1672-1719)

English poet and dramatist, and one of the most celebrated of English essayists. In 1704 he commemorated Marlborough's victory at Blenheim in a poem commissioned by the government, 'The Campaign'. He subsequently held political appointments and was a Member of Parliament for Malmesbury from 1708 until his death. From 1709 to 1711 he contributed to the *Tatler* magazine, begun by Richard <u>Steele</u>, with whom he was cofounder in 1711-12 of the *Spectator*.

His neoclassical blank verse tragedy *Cato* (1713) was highly respected in the 18th century, but as a poet and dramatist Addison formerly held a much higher place than he now does. His essays, however, set a new standard of easy elegance in English prose and his work foreshadows modern journalism.

US humorist and playwright. His *Fables in Slang* (1900) was so successful that he wrote six volumes under various titles. He also wrote novels and plays, including *The Country Chairman* (1903), *The College Widow* (1904), and *The Fair Co-ed* (1908).

### Adeler, Max (1847-1915)

#### pseudonym of Charles Heber Clark

US writer and journalist. Among his works, mostly humorous, are *Out of the Hurly-Burly* (1874), *Elbow-Room* (1876), *Random Shots* (1879), the novel *The Quakeress* (1905), and a collection of short stories, *By the Bend in the River* (1914).

# Adler, Elmer (1884-1962)

US printer. A collector of books and fine prints, he founded Pynson Printers in 1922, and the *Colophon: A Book Collector's Quarterly.* in 1930. He moved his collection to Princeton University in 1940, where he established a department of graphic arts and was a professor and curator.

# Adlington, William (lived 16th century)

English translator and writer. He is known for his translation of Apuleius' *Golden Ass* (1566).

# Adolphus, John Leycester (1795-1862)

English writer and lawyer. His *Letters to Richard Heber, Esq.*, published anonymously 1821, demonstrated that Walter Scott was the author of the Waverley novels; his *Letters from Spain* appeared 1858.

# Ady, Endre (1877-1919)

Hungarian poet. Born at Érmindszent, he spent part of his youth in Paris and the influence of modern French literature can be seen in many of his earlier poems. His mature work is characterized by its violence, originality, beauty, and strength. He died in a Budapest sanatorium.

# Aelfric (c. 955-1020)

English writer and abbot. Between 990 and 998 he wrote in vernacular Old English prose two sets of sermons known as *Catholic Homilies*, and a further set known as *Lives of the Saints*, all of them largely translated from Latin. They are notable for their style and rhythm.

# Aeneid

Latin narrative poem or epic by <u>Virgil</u> in 12 books, composed in the traditional Homeric metre of hexameters. Written during the last ten years of the poet's life (29-19 <sub>BC</sub>), it celebrates Roman imperial values in the role of its Trojan hero Aeneas, who is destined to found a new city in Italy. After the fall of Troy, Aeneas wanders the Mediterranean with his companions until, landing in North Africa, he falls in love with Dido, Queen of Carthage. He later deserts her and establishes the Trojans in Latium, where the king of the Latini offers him his daughter Lavinia in marriage. Aeneas is opposed by Turnus, a rival suitor, but eventually kills the latter in single combat. The poem is indebted to many predecessors (Apollonius of Rhodes and the Latin writers Ennius and Lucretius) in addition to Homer's *Odyssey* and *Iliad*.

# Aeschylus (c. 525-c. 456 BC)

Athenian dramatist. He developed Greek tragedy by introducing the second actor, thus enabling true dialogue and dramatic action to occur independently of the chorus. Ranked with <u>Euripides</u> and <u>Sophocles</u> as one of the three great tragedians, Aeschylus composed some 90 plays between 500 and 456 BC, of which seven complete tragedies survive in his name: *Persians* (472 BC), *Seven Against Thebes* (467 BC), *Suppliants* (463 BC), the <u>Oresteia</u> trilogy (Agamemnon, Libation-Bearers, and *Eumenides*) (458 BC), and *Prometheus Bound* (the last, although attributed to him, is of uncertain date and authorship).

Aeschylus was born at Eleusis in Attica and known to have fought at the Battle of Marathon 490 BC. Towards the end of his life, he left Athens for Sicily. His work is characterized by spectacular tragedy, ornate language, and complex and vigorous use of choral song and dance. His *Oresteia* trilogy is the only surviving example from antiquity of three connected plays performed on the same occasion.

# Aesop

by tradition, a writer of Greek fables. According to the historian Herodotus, he lived in the mid-6th century BC and was a slave. The fables that are ascribed to him were collected at a later date and are anecdotal stories using animal characters to illustrate moral or satirical points.

# African literature

African literature was mainly oral until the 20th century and oral traditions of proverbs, mythological narratives, and poetry persist and influence contemporary writing. There exists a wide variety of narrative, dramatic, and lyric forms. In prose narrative, the folk tale, often featuring an animal hero, is one of the most common genres; stories of a trickster-hero (in the form of a spider, a tortoise, a rabbit, a human, or a god) are particularly popular. There are also many religious myths, and stories that preserve in legendary form the history and world view of particular groups.

#### oral literature

**Poetic forms** are often tied to particular occupations or cults, for example, the *ijala* performed by Yoruba hunters, or the songs of the Ewe fishing communities. Religious poetry includes hymns to the gods and allusive (making indirect references) and highly symbolic oracular, prophetic poems, such as the *Ifa* used by the Yoruba for divination; and didactic, instructional pieces in Hausa or Swahili, sometimes revealing Islamic influence. In most African languages there are numerous laments or dirges, love songs, children's chants, war poems, and poems of praise (such as the <u>praise poem</u> of southern Africa) and attack. Drums and horns are often used to communicate or emphasize the tonalities in some African languages, and transmission of poetry by drums is widespread in the Democratic Republic of Congo (formerly Zaire), Ghana, and Nigeria. The epic is not typical of African culture, although the Mwindo epic of the Bantu-speaking Nyanga people in the Democratic Republic of Congo (formerly Zaire), which intermingles prose and verse, has been collected and published, and the long Swahili *utenzi* have been compared to epics.

Traditional African drama, often associated with ritual and social events, tends to emphasize mime, dance, music, costumes, and masks rather than verbal art. Its influence on contemporary African drama is particularly significant. New oral literary forms continue to be developed for radio and popular song.

#### written literature in African languages

Some Swahili and Hausa literature, religious in direction and influenced by Arabic, dates from the 16th century. The didactic 18th-century *Inkeshafe*, a poem of 79 stanzas, describes ancient Swahili culture and moralizes on the transitory nature of power and riches. There are numerous narrative poems in Swahili, ranging from 100 to 6,000 four-line stanzas, generally recounting episodes from the early struggles of Islam. East Africa has been the source of much contemporary political and lyrical poetry in Swahili; Shaaban Robert (1909-1962) is a well-known Swahili poet.

In western and southern African languages, the first written works are associated with Christian missionary activity in the 19th and early 20th centuries. Hymns and didactic tales analogous to Bunyan's *Pilgrim's Progress* and rejecting non-Christian practices and beliefs are typical. For example, Thomas Mofolo's (1875-1948) *Chaka* 

(1911), written in Sotho and later translated into English, is a powerful portrayal of the Zulu leader Shaka as a kind of Macbeth figure led astray by a demonic shaman. Another significant vernacular writer (working in commonly spoken dialects) is the Yoruba novelist, Chief D O Fagunwa (1910-1963). The most famous of his six works, *Ogboju ode ninu igbo irunmale/The Brave Hunter in the Forest of the Four Hundred Gods* (1938), recounts the adventures of Akara-Ogun, the son of a witch and a well-known hunter, and belongs both in form and content to the traditional Yoruba folk tale.

#### poetry and plays

Most vernacular compositions tend to be in the form of drama or poetry rather than fiction. F Kwasi Fiawoo's (1891-1969) Ewe play, *Toko Atolia/The Fifth Landing Stage* (1937), has become a modern classic. Ghanaian poet J H Kwabena Nketia (1921-) writes in Twi, his native language. In addition to a Luo novel, Okot p'Bitek (1931-1982) from Uganda wrote three long satiric poems in Acholi, *Song of Lawino* (1966), *Song of Ocol* (1970), and *Song of a Prisoner* (1971), all translated into English by the author.

#### African literature in European languages

Individual African-born writers have made sporadic contributions to European letters since the Renaissance, mainly in English, French, and Portuguese. Early works include those of the classical scholar Juan Latino, an enslaved African who later became a professor at the University of Granada in 1557, the 18th-century Sengalese-American poet Phyllis <u>Wheatley</u>, and the Nigerian Olaudah Equiano, whose vivid account of his early life in Africa, his enslavement, his later adventures as a freed man, and his involvement in the abolitionist movement (which fought for the ending of slavery), went into eight editions in 18th-century England.

Among the earlier landmarks of African writing are the South African historical novel of pre-colonial times *Mhudi* (written in 1917, published in 1930) by Sol Plaatje (1877-1932) and the plays and poetry of H I E Dhlomo (1905-1945), recreating African landscapes and the achievements of heroes such as the Zulu leader Shaka. Later writing, including autobiographies such as that by Es'kia Mphalele (1919-), has paid more attention to the themes of urban deprivation and political oppression and violence, particularly in South Africa. This has energized the poetry of the exiled Dennis Brutus (1924-) and the novels of Alex La Guma (1925-1985), and features in the work of the Kenyan writer <u>Ngugi wa Thiong'o</u> and the Nigerian novelist Cyprian Ekwensi (1921-). The reassertion of pre-colonial communal life, myth, and tradition, associated with condemnation of the cultural disruptions caused by colonists or Christian missionaries, has been a significant concern of the Ghanaian poet Kofi Awoonor (1935-) and of Nigerian writers such as Chinua <u>Achebe</u>, the Ibo poet Christopher Okigbo (1922-1967), and the novelist Amos Tutuola (1920-1997), who wrote *The Palm-Wine Drunkard* (1952).

#### Afro-American literature

The considerable body of writing by Afro-Americans, especially in the 1920s, in turn influenced French-speaking writers from Africa and the Caribbean. Chief among

these were the black American writer W E B Du Bois who became a citizen of Ghana, the Martinique poet Aimé Césaire (1913-), and Senegal's president, Léopold Senghor, who were advocates of the concept of Negritude (blackness, belonging to a black culture), affirming a growing sense of African personality and political and cultural identity in the colonial and postcolonial period. Senghor's resonant poems, often annotated for musical accompaniment, imitate the modes of Wolof and Serer ceremonial praise songs. Senghor's Anthologie de la nouvelle poésie nègre et malgache (1948), with its preface by Jean-Paul Sartre, remains a monument to the Negritude movement, which is also associated with Camera Laye's (1928-1980) autobiographical Enfant Noir/The Dark Child (1953, Birago Diop's (1906-1989) recreations of the subject and style of griot tales in Les Contes d'Amadou Koumba/ Tales of Amadou Koumba (1947), the work of the Zairean poet Tchicaya U'Tam'si (1931-1988), and the journal *Présence Africaine*. However, more recent Francophone novelists, such as Mongo Beti (1932-) and Ferdinand Oyono (1929-), while critical of colonialism, have satirized what they feel to be a tendency in Negritude to over-romanticize traditional African society.

#### literature in English

Africans who write in English have generally rejected Negritude as an unrealistic idealization of the African past. Chinua <u>Achebe</u>'s widely acclaimed novels *Things Fall Apart* (1958) and *Arrow of God* (1964) draw on the language and forms of oral culture to recreate the conflicts within traditional Ibo society and to show how those conflicts were exacerbated by colonialism. The plays of the Nigerian author Wole <u>Soyinka</u> also reject attempts to glamorize the past. *The Road* (1965) interweaves Yoruba and Christian metaphysics and rituals. In South Africa, drama has been an important instrument of political protest, particularly in the work of Athol Fugard.

#### writing in Portuguese

The struggle for independence in Angola produced revolutionary poetry, written in Portuguese, by Veriato da Cruz (1928-1973), Angostino Neto (1922-1979), and Alda do Espirito Santo (1926-). Kulungano (Marcellino dos Santos) (1929-) and Noemia de Sousa (1927-) write of despair and oppression among the poor of Mozambique. Mozambique poet José Craveirinha (1926-) has won European literary awards.

Important **women writers** include the South Africans Bessie Head (1937-1986) and Miriam Tlali (1933-), the Nigerian Flora Nwapa (1931-), and Mariama Bâ (1929-1981) from Senegal.

# Agate, James (Evershed) (1877-1947)

English essayist and theatre critic. His reviews, many of which were published, were noted for their wit, clarity, and seriousness. He wrote *Ego*, a diary in nine volumes published 1935-49.

# Agnon, Shmuel Yosef (1888-1970)

#### pseudonym of Samuel Joseph Czaczkes

Israeli novelist. Born in Buczacz, Galicia (now part of western Ukraine), he made it the setting of his most celebrated work, *Tmol Shilshom/A Guest for the Night* (1937) (translated 1968). He shared the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1966 with Nelly <u>Sachs</u>.

# Ahlberg, Allan (1938-)

English writer of numerous children's books, many of which were illustrated by his wife, Janet, who died in 1994. Having trained as a teacher, Ahlberg's work takes advantage of his knowledge of children, and can be seen in his collections of poetry *Please Mrs Butler* (1984) and *Heard it in the Playground* (1990) which together won the 1990 Signal poetry award, one of many awards received by the pair. The first books Janet and Allan Ahlberg wrote together were the *Brick Street Boys* series, and their last collaboration was *The Jolly Postman* (1986), which has become one of the best-selling children's books of all time.

# Aidoo, Ama Ata (1940-)

Ghanaian dramatist and writer. She writes in English about the challenges of modern women in traditional African cultures. *Dilemma of a Ghost* (1965), her best-known play, deals with the difficulties of reconciling a Western education and African values and traditions. She has also written novels such as the semi-autobiographical *Our Sister Killjoy* (1977), and short stories, collected in *No Sweetness Here* (1970).

Other works include the poetry collections *Talking to Sometime* (1985) and *Birds and Other Poems* (1987), the children's short-story collection *The Eagle and the Chickens* (1986), and the novel *Changes: A Love Story* (1991).

# Aiken, Conrad Potter (1889-1973)

US poet, novelist, and short-story writer. His *Selected Poems* (1929) won a Pulitzer Prize. His works were influenced by early psychoanalytic theory and the use of the stream-of-consciousness technique. His verse, distinguished by its musicality, includes 'A Letter from Li Po' (1955) and *A Seizure of Limericks* (1964). His novels include *Great Circle* (1933), and his collected short stories were published in 1960.

# Aiken, Joan (Delano) (1924-)

English novelist and writer of critically acclaimed historical and mystery books for children including *The Wolves of Willoughby Chase* (1962) and *The Jewel Seed* (1997).

Her first publication was a collection of short stories for children, *All You've Ever Wanted* (1953). Other novels include *Black Hearts in Battersea* (1964), *Midnight is a Place* (1974), *The Shadow Guests* (1980), *The Cuckoo Tree* (1981), *Mansfield Revisited* (1984), *Deception* (1987), and *Jane Fairfax* (1990).

# Ailly, Pierre d' (1350-1420)

French geographer and theologian. As a cardinal he became involved in the Great Schism, arguing for the supremacy of Church councils over popes. He is best remembered for his book *Imago mundi/Image of the World* (about 1410), one of the leading geographical texts of the period, which strongly influenced Christopher Columbus.

# Ainsworth, William Harrison (1805-1882)

English historical novelist. He wrote more than 40 novels and helped popularize the legends of Dick Turpin in *Rookwood* (1834) and Herne the Hunter in *Windsor Castle* (1843).

Ainsworth was born in Manchester. He completed his studies in London, where he was introduced into musical and literary circles. Among his friends were Charles Dickens and William Thackeray. His novels include *Jack Sheppard* (1839), *Old St Paul's* (1841), and *The Lancashire Witches* (1849).

# Aitmatov, Chingiz (1928-)

Kirghiz novelist. His work, drawing on oral epic tradition (the Kirghiz language had no alphabet until 1928), dramatizes the conflict between the tribal customs of the Kirghiz nomads and the Western values of the Soviet administration, as in *Bely parokhod/The White Steamship* (1970) and *I dolshe veka dlitsya den/The Day Lasts Longer than a Century* (1980). His short-story collection *Povesti gor I stepey/Tales of Mountains and Steppes* (1963) won the 1963 Lenin Prize. He received the Soviet state prize for literature in 1968.

He was a correspondent for the newspaper *Pravda* in Kirghiz 1959-66. Other works include *Trudnaya pereprava/A Difficult Passage* (1956), *Litsom k litsu/Face to Face* (1957), *Proshchay, Gulsary!/Farewell, Gulsary!* (1967), and *Pervy uchitel/The First* 

Teacher (1967).

# Akhmatova, Anna (1889-1966)

#### pen-name of Anna Andreevna Gorenko

Russian poet. She was a leading member of the <u>Acmeist movement</u>. Among her works are the cycle *Requiem* (1963), written in the 1930s and dealing with the Stalinist terror, and *Poem Without a Hero* (1962, begun 1940).

#### Akins, Zoe (1886-1958)

US writer. She wrote poems, literary criticism, and plays, including *The Greeks Had a Word for It* (1930). She was born in Missouri.

#### Aksakov, Sergei Timofeyevich (1791-1859)

Russian writer. Born at Ufa, he became a civil servant, and under the influence of Nicolai Gogol, he wrote autobiographical novels, including *Chronicles of a Russian Family* (1856) and *Years of Childhood* (1858).

#### Akutagawa, Ryunosuke (1892-1927)

Japanese writer of stories, plays, and poetry. Noted for stylistic virtuosity, he wrote autobiographical fiction and grim satirical fables such as 'Kappa' (1927), but his best works are stories derived from 12th- and 13th-century Japanese tales, retold in the light of modern psychology. Among the best known are 'Jigokuhen' (1918), the story of an obsessively ambitious artist, and 'Rashomon', the basis for a film of the same name by Akira Kurosawa (1951).

#### Alain-Fournier (1886-1914)

#### pen-name of Henri-Alban Fournier

French novelist. His haunting semi-autobiographical fantasy *Le Grand Meaulnes/The Lost Domain* (1913) was a cult novel of the 1920s and 1930s. His life is intimately recorded in his correspondence with his brother-in-law Jacques Rivière. He was killed in action on the Meuse in World War I.

# Alamanni, Luigi (1495-1556)

Italian poet and humanist. He spent much of his life as an exile at the French court and so played an important role in introducing the literature and thought of the Italian Renaissance to 16th-century France. His works, strongly influenced by Greek and Roman classics, include *La coltivazione/Agriculture* (1546), a lengthy imitation of <u>Virgil'sGeorgics</u>.

# Alarcón, Juan Ruiz de (c. 1581-1639)

Mexican-born Spanish dramatist. His work includes heroic drama and comedies of intrigue, his masterpiece being *La Verdad sospechosa/The Suspicious Truth* (imitated by French dramatist Corneille in *Le Menteur*).

# Alarcón, Pedro Antonio de (1833-1891)

Spanish journalist and writer. The acclaimed *Diario/Diary* (1859) was based upon his experiences as a soldier in Morocco. His novel *El sombrero de tres picos/The Three-Cornered Hat* (1874; translated 1905) was the basis of Manuel de Falla's ballet of the same name.

Alarcón's other novels, including *El escándalo/The Scandal* (1875), *El niño de la bola/The Infant with the Globe* (1880; translated 1955), and *El capitán veneno/Captain Spitfire* (1881; translated 1886), project a romanticized picture of traditional Spanish life. He intervened in political life in defence of conservative values.

# Alas, Leopoldo (1852-1901)

Spanish novelist and literary critic. His masterpiece, published under the pseudonym of Clatin, is *La Regenta* (1884), the tragic study of a sensitive woman in a dull and hypocritical provincial milieu.

# Albee, Edward (Franklin) (1928-)

US dramatist. Associated with the Theatre of the Absurd, he is best known for his play *Who's Afraid of Virginia Woolf*? (1962, filmed 1966), a grim depiction of a miserable marriage. His other internationally-performed plays include *The Zoo Story* (1960), *The American Dream* (1961), and *Tiny Alice* (1965). *A Delicate Balance* (1966) and *Seascape* (1975) both won Pulitzer Prizes, and *Three Tall Women* (1994)

marked his return to critical acclaim.

### Alberti, Rafael (born 1902)

Spanish poet. His early work, influenced by surrealism, included 'Sobre los angeles/ Concerning the Angels' 1927-28, a vivid account of an emotional crisis. After 1931 he became a communist and was forced to leave Spain as a result of the Civil War. He settled in South America.

Other works include 'A la pintura/On Painting' 1945, and an autobiography *La arboleda perdida/The Lost Grove* (1942; translated 1976). *Rafael Alberti: Selected Poems*, edited by Ben Bellitt, was translated by Lloyd Mallan in 1961.

#### Alcaeus (c. 611-c. 580 вс)

Greek lyric poet. Born at Mytilene in Lesvos, a contemporary of <u>Sappho</u>, he was a member of an aristocratic family opposed to the ruling tyrants, and spent time in exile. The surviving fragments of his poems deal with politics, drinking, and love. The Alcaic stanza is named after him.

#### Alciati, Andrea (1492-1550)

Italian humanist lawyer. He wrote in particular on civil law. He also found time to produce his *Emblemata* (1531), one of the first and most popular collections of allegorical images, which had a profound influence on the imagery of Mannerist and baroque art.

In his *Emblemata* each image is accompanied by a Latin inscription pointing up its moral or spiritual meaning. There were many editions of the book and it was widely translated.

#### Alciphron

Greek writer. His prose epistles consist of four groups: letters from fishermen, farmers, parasites, and courtesans. The scenes are set in Athens in the 4th century BC and the style is vivid and graceful, though somewhat artificial.

Greek lyric poet. He composed choral works for Spartan festivals, especially songs to be sung by two choirs of girls.

The longest surviving fragment of his work is the 'Parthenion/Maiden-song', which was discovered 1855.

With Stesichorus, he was a leader of the Dorian school of choral poetry. His work is filled with colour, freshness, and delicate imagery.

# Alcoforado, Marianna (1640-1723)

Portuguese nun. The 'Lettres portugaises/Letters of a Portuguese Nun' (1669), a series of love letters supposedly written by her to a young French nobleman (who abandoned her when their relationship became known), is no longer accepted as authentic.

# Alcott, Louisa May (1832-1888)

US author. Her children's classic *Little Women* (1869) drew on her own home circumstances; the principal character Jo was a partial self-portrait. Sequels to *Little Women* were *Good Wives* (1869), *Little Men* (1871), and *Jo's Boys* (1886).

Aldington, Richard (1892-1962)

#### pen-name of Edward Godfree Aldington

English poet, novelist, and critic. A leading Imagist (see <u>Imagism</u>), he published the collection *Images* (1915). He wrote biographies of the English writers D H Lawrence and T E Lawrence and his novels include *Death of a Hero* (1929) and *All Men are Enemies* (1933). He was married to the US poet Hilda <u>Doolittle</u> (1913-37).

# Aldiss, Brian W(ilson) (1925-)

English novelist, science-fiction writer, anthologist, and critic. His futuristic novels include *Non-Stop* (1958), *Barefoot in the Head* (1969), the 'Helliconia' trilogy (1982-85), and *Somewhere East of Life* (1994). He has also published several volumes of short stories, including *The Canopy of Time* (1959), *Starswarm* (1964), and *Seasons in Flight* (1984). *Trillion Year Spree* (1986) is a revised edition of his history of science fiction, *Billion Year Spree* (1973).

Bury My Heart at WHSmith's, a volume of autobiography, was published in 1990.

# Aldrich, Thomas Bailey (1836-1907)

US poet and editor. *The Story of a Bad Boy* (1870), which is partly autobiographical, was followed by the novels *Prudence Palfrey* (1874), *The Queen of Sheba* (1877), and *The Stillwater Tragedy* (1880). From 1881 to 1890, as editor of the *Atlantic Monthly*, he wielded a commanding influence over American letters. His collected writings were published 1907.

# Aleardi, Aleardo (1812-1878)

#### adopted name of Gaetano Aleardi

Italian poet and patriot. His poems are full of passionate hopes for the liberation of Italy. They include 'II Monte Circello/Mount Circello' (1852), 'Le città italiane marinare e commercianti/Italian Maritime and Commercial Cities' (1856), 'I tre fiumi/ The Three Rivers' (1857), and 'Triste dramma/Sad Drama' (1859).

# Alecsandri, Vasile (1821-1890)

Romanian poet and dramatist. As a director of the new National Theatre in Iasi from 1840, he wrote *Chirita in Iasi* (1850) and *Chirita in provincie* (1852). Later he turned to historical drama. His collection of folk poetry, *Poesii populare* (1852), was a milestone in Romanian literature.

# Aleixandre, Vicente (1898-1984)

Spanish lyric poet. His verse, such as the surrealist *La destrucción o el amor/The Destruction of Love* (1935) (translated 1976), had Republican sympathies, and his work was for a time banned by Franco's government. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1977.

# Alemán, Mateo (1547-post 1615)

Spanish novelist. He was the author of the popular picaresque novel *Guzmán de Alfarache* (1599). He also published a life of St Antonio of Padua (1604) and *Ortografía castellana/Castilian Orthography* (1609), a treatise on spelling.

He was born in Seville, the son of a Jewish prison doctor. He studied medicine in

Salamanca and Alcalá, and emigrated to Mexico in 1608.

# Alexander, William (1567-1640)

#### Earl of Stirling

Scottish poet. Besides *Aurora* (1604) and *Recreations with the Muses* (1637), he wrote the four 'monarchic tragedies' *Darius* (1603), *Croesus* (1604), *The Alexandraean Tragedy* (1605), and *Julius Caesar* (1607), in the style of Seneca.

As a courtier, he followed James VI to England. In 1626 he was appointed secretary of state for Scotland and in 1633 was made an earl.

# Alexandru, Ion (1942-)

Romanian poet. His early works contain echoes of Lucian Blaga (1895-1961). Philosophical reflection and a search for moral purity and for the absolute characterize his strikingly musical verse.

# Alexis, Willibald

pseudonym of German novelist Georg Häring.

#### Alfadir

'all-father', the highest of Odin's many names in Snorri Sturluson's Edda.

# Alford, Henry (1810-1871)

English scholar, poet, and cleric. His chief work, a critical edition of the New Testament in Greek in four volumes, was published 1849-61. His scholarly *Chapters on the Poets of Ancient Greece* appeared 1841. He was appointed dean of Canterbury 1857.

# Alger, Horatio (1832-1899)

US writer of children's books. He wrote over 100 didactic moral tales in which the heroes rise from poverty to riches through hard work, luck, and good deeds, including the series 'Ragged Dick' from 1867 and 'Tattered Tom' from 1871.

### Algren, Nelson Abraham (1909-1981)

US novelist. His best-known novel was *The Man with the Golden Arm* (1949; filmed 1956), a story about gambling and drug addiction, which won the first National Book Award. Other works include two travel books, the prose-poem *Chicago: City on the Make* (1951), and the novel *A Walk on the Wild Side* (1956; filmed 1962), set in a New Orleans brothel.

# Alice's Adventures in Wonderland

children's story, published in 1865, by Lewis <u>Carroll</u> (originally published as *Alice's Adventures Under Ground*). Alice dreams she follows the White Rabbit down a rabbit hole and meets fantastic characters such as the Cheshire Cat, the Mad Hatter, and the King and Queen of Hearts. With its companion volume *Through the Looking-Glass, and What Alice Found There* (1872), it is one of the most quoted works in the English language. Both volumes were illustrated by John Tenniel.

An Alice-in-Wonderland situation has come to mean an absurd or irrational situation, because of the dreamlike logic of Alice's adventures in the book.

# Alishan, Leon (1820-1901)

Armenian poet and historian. His works include *Armenian Popular Songs*, translated 1852, historical monographs, and translations of English, German, and French poetry, including Byron's *Childe Harold*. He wrote historical, geographical, and botanical works on Armenia.

#### allegory

in literature, the description or illustration of one thing in terms of another, or the personification of abstract ideas. The term is also used for a work of poetry or prose in the form of an extended metaphor or parable that makes use of symbolic fictional characters.

An example of the use of symbolic fictional character in allegory is the romantic epic *The Faerie Queene* (1590-96) by Edmund Spenser in homage to Queen Elizabeth I. Allegory is often used for moral purposes, as in John Bunyan's *Pilgrim's Progress* 

(1678). Medieval allegory often used animals as characters; this tradition survives in such works as *Animal Farm* (1945) by George Orwell.

### Allen, (William) Hervey (Jr) (1889-1949)

US novelist, poet, and biographer. He is best known for his biography of Edgar Allan Poe, *Israfel* (1926), and the swashbuckling historical novel set in the Napoleonic period, *Anthony Adverse* (1933).

His diary of World War I, *Toward the Flame* (1926), was highly regarded. He published many volumes of poetry in the 1920s, and - after the popularity of *Anthony Adverse* - he wrote many other historical novels. Later novels were *Action at Aquila* (1938), *The Front and the Fort* (1943), *Bedford Village* (1945), and *The City in the Dawn* (1947).

# Allen, Frederick Lewis (1890-1954)

US author and editor. He became editor of *Harper's Magazine* in 1941 and was widely known for his colourful works of social history, including *Only Yesterday* (1931).

# Allen, Paula Gunn (1939-)

Laguna/Sioux scholar. A poet and novelist, Allen has incorporated feminist issues into her writing on Indian culture. Primarily associated with the Native American Studies program at the University of California: Berkeley, her books include *The Woman Who Owned the Shadows* (1983), *The Sacred Hoop* (1986), and *Spider Woman's Granddaughters* (1989).

# Allende, Isabel (1942-)

Peruvian-born Chilean novelist. She is one of the leading exponents of <u>magic</u> realism. After the assassination in 1973 of her uncle, Chile's socialist president Salvador Allende, she lived in exile in Venezuela. Her first novel *La casa de los espíritus/The House of the Spirits* (1982; filmed 1993) is a detailed account of family life during the preceding tumultuous years.

Allende worked as a journalist 1964-84. Her later novels *De amor y de sombra/Of Love and Shadows* (1984) and *Eva Luna* (1987) combine fantasy with the 'real' worlds of investigative journalism, film-making, and politics. She has also published short stories and children's books.

# Allibone, Samuel Austin (1816-1889)

US bibliographer. His three-volume *Critical Dictionary of English Literature and British and American Authors* was published in 1858 and 1871.

Between 1867 and 1879, as editor of the American Sunday School Union, Allen published many indices and anthologies, including *An Alphabetical Index to the New Testament* (1868) and *Prose Quotations from Socrates to Macaulay* (1876).

### Allingham, Margery Louise (1904-1966)

English detective novelist. She created detective Albert Campion in *The Crime at Black Dudley* (1929). Her detective fiction displays wit and ingenuity and includes *More Work for the Undertaker* (1949). Her mystery thrillers include *Tiger in the Smoke* (1952) and *The Beckoning Lady* (1955). *The Oaken Heart* (1941) is an account of village life during World War II.

# Allingham, William (1824-1889)

Irish poet. His work frequently has a strong regional and nostalgic quality; in *Laurence Bloomfield in Ireland* (1864) he displays an acute agrarian realism. Other volumes of his verse include *Poems* (1850) and *Irish Songs and Poems* (1887).

His *Diary*, edited 1907 by his wife, tells of his friendships with Tennyson, Leigh Hunt, and Dante Gabriel Rossetti and the influence of the Pre-Raphaelite Brotherhood.

# Almagest

#### (Arabic *al* 'the' and a corruption of the Greek *megiste* 'greatest')

book compiled by the Egyptian astronomer Ptolemy during the 2nd century, which included the idea of an Earth-centred universe; it was translated into Arabic in the 9th century. Some medieval books on astronomy, astrology, and alchemy were given the same title.

Each of the 13 sections of the book deals with a different branch of astronomy. The introduction describes the universe as spherical and contains arguments for the Earth being stationary at the centre. From this mistaken assumption, it goes on to describe the motions of the Sun, Moon, and planets; eclipses; and the positions, brightness, and precession of the 'fixed stars'. The book drew on the work of earlier

astronomers such as Hipparchus.

# Almeida-Garrett, João Baptista da Silva Leitão (1799-1854)

Portuguese poet and politician. The leader of the Portuguese Romantic movement, he also took an active part in the political movements of his country. Of his plays, *Frei Luis de Sousa/Brother Luiz de Sousa* (1844; translated 1909), built on the pattern of classical Greek tragedy, is considered the finest national drama of Portugal.

His other works include an epic poem called *Dona Branca* (1826), *Romanceiro*, a collection of Portuguese folk tales, and *Folhas caídas*, a volume of lyrics.

#### Almqvist, Carl Jonas Love (1793-1866)

Swedish author. His literary career began 1832 with the first of his series of romances; this and much of his subsequent works were collected in two series of *Törnrosensbok/The Book of the Thorn Rose* 1832-51. His succeeding lyrics, dramas, and philosophical, aesthetic, moral, and educational works show remarkable versatility.

#### Alonso, Dámaso (1898-1990)

Spanish poet and critic. His best-known poetry is the volume *Hijos de la ira/ Children of Wrath* (1944; translated 1970), but his main achievement was his reappraisal of the poetry of Góngora and St John of the Cross.

al-Rayhânî, Amîn (1876-1940)

Lebanese-born poet. Amîn moved to New York City with his family in 1888. His works include He wrote 'Myrtle and Myrrh' (1905) and 'The Book of Khalid' (1911). He was often referred to as the 'father of prose poetry in Arabic'.

#### Alvaro, Corrado (1895-1956)

Italian novelist. His chief novel, *Gente in Aspromonte/Revolt in Aspromonte* (1930; translated 1962), and his collection of short stories *Settantacinque racconti/Seventy-five Tales* (1955) focus on the reality as well as the myths of his home region, Calabria.

# Amado, Jorge (1912-2001)

Brazilian novelist. His first novel, *O país do carnaval/The Country of the Carnival* (1932), follows a youthful member of the intelligentsia seeking political answers in the wake of the revolution of 1930. Amado's next few novels outlined his personal manifesto and highlighted the cause of various exploited groups in society. Gabriela, cravo e canela/Gabriela, Clove and Cinnamon (1952) marked a change in style and emphasis and focused on sociopolitical change.

He was imprisoned for his leftist political beliefs in 1935 and spent several years in exile, though he briefly represented the Communist Party of Brazil as federal deputy of the Brazilian parliament 1946-47.

Subsequent books, such as Dona Flor e seus dois maridos: História moral e de amor/ Dona Flor and Her Two Husbands (1966) and O gato malhado e a andorinha sinha/ The Swallow and the Tom Cat (1976) show equal social awareness and compassion, but are more subtle, and use irony to good effect.

# Amari, Michele (1806-1889)

Italian historian, orientalist, and politician. His best-known work, *La Guerra del Vespro Siciliano/The History of the War of the Sicilian Vespers* (1841; translated 1850), was prohibited and he fled to France, returning to Italy in 1859 to fight under Garibaldi. He was minister of public instruction 1862-64 and professor of Arabic at Pisa and Florence until 1878.

# Ambler, Eric (1909-1998)

English novelist. He excelled in narrating swift, suspenseful action. He used Balkan/ Levant settings in the thrillers *The Mask of Dimitrios* (1939) and *Journey into Fear* (1940). His other books include *The Care of Time* (1981).

# Amerbach, Johannes (1443-1513)

Swiss printer and publisher. After studying in Paris he set up a printing press in Basel in 1478 and specialized in producing high quality texts of the works of the Church Fathers. His house became a virtual academy for northern European scholars, one of the leading figures who visited him being Johannes Reuchlin. This intellectual tradition was continued by Amerbach's successor, the publisher Johann Froben.

### American Academy of Art and Letters

group of US citizens qualified by notable achievements in art, literature, or music, selected from the membership of the National Institute of Arts and Letters. These two institutions merged in 1976 to form the American Academy and Institute of Arts and Letters. The academy's aim is the furtherance of literature and the fine arts in the USA; its headquarters are in New York.

#### American literature

see United States literature.

# Amis, Kingsley (William) (1922-1995)

English novelist and poet. He was associated early on with the <u>Angry Young Men</u> group of writers. His sharply ironic works include his first novel, the best-selling <u>Lucky Jim</u> (1954), a comic portrayal of life at a provincial university. His later novels include the satiric comedy *The Old Devils* (1986), for which he won the Booker Prize.

Amis was the son of a clerk in south London. After serving in the Royal Signals Corps during World War II, he attended Oxford University. At Oxford, he considered himself a communist, but eventually he became a staunch Conservative. He was a gifted and hard-working writer, determined to type 500 words each day. He was a lecturer at University College, Swansea, Wales (1949-61). He married twice, first in 1948 to Hilary, the mother of his two sons, including the novelist Martin <u>Amis</u>, and a daughter. In 1965, he married novelist Elizabeth <u>Howard</u>; they divorced in 1983. He was knighted in 1990.

#### Amis, Martin Louis (1949-)

English novelist and journalist. His works are characterized by their sharp black humour and include *The Rachel Papers* (1973), a memoir of adolescence told through flashbacks, *Dead Babies* (1975), which addresses decadence and sadism, *Money* (1984), *London Fields* (1989), and *Time's Arrow* (1991). Later works include *The Information* (1995), *Night Train* (1997), *Heavy Water and Other Stories* (1998), *Yellow Dog* (2003), and his memoir *Experience* (2000).

Born in Oxford, England, the son of novelist and poet Kingsley <u>Amis</u>, Martin Amis spent his childhood in Wales and, briefly, the USA. After settling in Cambridge, England, his parents divorced. Amis studied at Exeter College, Oxford University. In 1971, he began work as a book reviewer for the *Observer* and subsequently held

editorial posts at the *Times Literary Supplement* and the *New Statesman*. He has been a special writer of the *Observer* since 1980, and has contributed regularly to the *Sunday Telegraph* and *New York Times*.

### Ammianus Marcellinus (lived 4th century)

Roman soldier and historian. The surviving books of his work, dealing with contemporary affairs in the later Roman Empire, rank him as the last major Roman historian.

# Ammons, A(rchie) R(andolph) (1926-)

US poet and teacher. Ammons taught at Cornell University from 1964 onwards. He is noted as a poet in the transcendental tradition.

# Amory, Thomas (1691-1788)

Irish novelist. Born in Dublin, Amory studied medicine at Trinity College, before moving to London, where he lived as a recluse, devoting all his time to writing. His main works are *Memoirs of Several Ladies of Great Britain* (1755), concerned with learned women living in remote and scenic retreats, and the *Life of John Buncle*, *Esq.*, *Containing various Observations and Reflections, Made in Several Parts of the World* (1756-66). Written in the form of a first-person narrative, the *Life of John Buncle* blends theology and utopian fantasy with a sentimental account of eight marriages to intellectual women, and includes much discussion of Anglo-Irish society and native Irish culture.

Amory also wrote a manuscript on *The Ancient and Present State of Great Britain*, which was accidently burned.

# Amyot, Jacques (1513-1593)

French bishop and classical scholar, one of the leading translators of his day. From 1536 to about 1546 he was professor of Latin and Greek at Bourges, where he began translating classical works, notably Plutarch's *Lives*. When retranslated into English by Thomas <u>North</u> in 1579, this became <u>Shakespeare's</u> major source for his Roman plays.

Anacreon

Greek lyric poet. He lived in Abdera, Samos, and Athens, where he was favoured both before and after the institution of democracy. His love poetry, of great charm, was later widely imitated in verse known as the *Anacreontics*.

# 'Ancient Mariner, The Rime of the'

poem by Samuel Taylor <u>Coleridge</u>, published in 1798, describing the curse that falls upon a mariner and his ship when he shoots an albatross.

### **Ancrene Riwle**

#### (Middle English 'anchorites' rule')

medieval prose treatise by an unknown English author. Many versions exist, in French and Latin as well as in English. These include *Ancrene Wisse/Anchorites' Guide*, which is of linguistic interest because it represents a local written standard language used in southeastern England in the early 13th century.

The work was originally written to guide three sisters who had taken holy vows but did not belong to a religious order. It calls for a life of rigorous renunciation, although its tone is softened by the author's humanity and wit.

# Andersen, Hans Christian (1805-1875)

Danish writer of fairy tales. Examples include 'The Ugly Duckling', 'The Snow Queen', 'The Little Mermaid', and 'The Emperor's New Clothes'. Their inventiveness, sensitivity, and strong sense of wonder have given these stories perennial and universal appeal; they have been translated into many languages. He also wrote adult novels and travel books.

#### Andersen, Hans Christian



#### (Image © Corel)

Bronze statue of Danish writer Hans Christian Andersen in Copenhagen. Andersen was born in Odense in 1805, the son of a shoemaker, but at the age of 14 ran away from home to live in Copenhagen.

#### Anderson, Sherwood (1876-1941)

US short-story writer and novelist. He is best known for his sensitive, poetic, and experimental naturalism, dealing with the desperation of small-town Midwestern life. His most highly acclaimed work is the story-cycle *Winesburg, Ohio* (1919); other works include the novel *Dark Laughter* (1925) and the collection of short stories *Death in the Woods* (1933).

A member of the Chicago Group, he was encouraged by Theodore <u>Dreiser</u>, Carl <u>Sandburg</u>, and later influenced by Gertrude <u>Stein</u>.

#### Andrade, Mario de (1893-1945)

Brazilian novelist and poet, whose modernist works emphasized the distinct cultural and linguistic dissociation of Brazil from Portugal.

During his life Andrade produced, and published many books, which ultimately gained him posthumous international notoriety and fame. He maintained an active

life in the arts and held the directorship of the Departamento de Cultura (Department of Culture) in São Paulo. His works include *Ha uma g*"*Ita de sangue em cada poema/There is a Drop of Blood in Each Poem* (1917) and *O movimento modernisto/The Modernist Movement*(1942).

André, Bernard (c. 1450-c. 1522)

Blind French poet at the court of Henry VII and Henry VIII of England. Born at Toulouse, he arrived in England in late 1485. His first English patron may have been Richard Foxe but he was soon employed at the royal court; he was a central figure of what he himself called Henry VII's *grex poetarum* (flock of poets). He wrote mainly in Latin, producing poems on royal occasions, as well as a *Vita Henrici Septimi/Life of Henry VII* (c 1502).

# Andrews, William Loring (1837-1920)

US bibliophile. A wealthy businessman, he collected rare books, and from 1865, commissioned limited editions distinguished for their typography, illustrations, and bindings. He was founder of the Grolier Club in New York City.

# Andreyev, Leonid Nicolaievich (1871-1919)

Russian author. Many of his works show an obsession with death and madness, including the symbolic drama *Life of Man* (1907), the melodrama *He Who Gets Slapped* (1915), and the novels *Red Laugh* (1904) and *S.O.S.* (1919) published in Finland, where he fled after the Russian Revolution.

# Andric, Ivo (1892-1974)

Yugoslav novelist and nationalist. He became a diplomat, and was ambassador to Berlin in 1940. *Ma Drini cuprija/The Bridge on the Drina* (1945) is an epic history of a small Bosnian town. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1961.

# Andromache

tragedy by <u>Euripides</u>, of uncertain date. Hermione, wife of Neoptolemus, seeks revenge on Andromache, her husband's lover, whom she blames for her own childlessness, but fails in her attempt to kill Andromache and her son. Neoptolemus is murdered by Orestes, a former suitor of Hermione.

### Aneirin

Welsh poet. He wrote the core of the epic poem *Y Gododdin* (*c.* 600), one of the earliest known poems in Welsh. It describes a battle at Catraeth (Catterick) where the British tribe from Dun Edin (Edinburgh) were heavily defeated by the Northumbrians.

# Angeli, Pietro Angelo (1517-1596)

#### also known as Pier Angelo Bargeo

Poet from Barga, near Lucca. He wrote in both Italian and Latin; his *Siriade* (1591), a Latin epic on the crusader conquest of Jerusalem, was heavily drawn upon by <u>Tasso</u> in his own epic *Gerusalemme conquistata*.

### Angelou, Maya (1928-)

#### born Marguerite Annie Johnson

US writer and black activist. She became noted for her powerful autobiographical works, *I Know Why the Caged Bird Sings* (1970) and its five sequels up to *A Song Flung Up to Heaven* (2002). Based on her traumatic childhood, they tell of the struggles towards physical and spiritual liberation of a black woman from growing up in the US South to emigrating to Ghana.

Angelou was born in St Louis, Missouri. The name Maya originated with her elder brother who called her 'My' or 'Mine'. After her parents' divorce Angelou was raised by her paternal grandmother. She wanted to become a professional dancer and had a featured role in a stage production, *Porgy and Bess*. She also edited magazines, and after the success of *I Know Why the Caged Bird Sings*, wrote for television, seeing many of her works turned into films. Her work reached its largest single audience in January 1993 when she recited her poem 'On the Pulse of Morning' at the inauguration of US president Bill Clinton.

# Anglo-Saxon Chronicle

a history of England from the Roman invasion to the 11th century, consisting of a series of chronicles written in Old English by monks, begun in the 9th century (during the reign of King Alfred), and continuing until 1154.

The Chronicle, comprising seven different manuscripts, forms a unique record of early English history and also of the development of Old English prose up to its final stages. By 1154 Old English had been superseded by Middle English.

#### Anglo-Saxon literature

another name for Old English literature.

### Angry Young Men

journalistic term applied to a loose group of British writers who emerged in the 1950s after the creative hiatus that followed World War II. They revolted against the prevailing social mores, class distinction, and 'good taste'. Their dissatisfaction was expressed in works such as Kingsley Amis's *Lucky Jim* (1954), John Osborne's *Look Back in Anger* (1956), Colin Wilson's *The Outsider* (1956), John Braine's *Room at the Top* (1957), and John Wain's *Hurry on Down* (1953).

Also linked to the group was theatre critic Kenneth Tynan.

#### Animal Farm

novel by George <u>Orwell</u> published in 1945. In this political fable based on the Russian Revolution, farm animals, led by the pigs Snowball and Napoleon, eject their human exploiters and try to turn their farm into a Utopia. The enterprise fails because of corruption and weakness from within, the leaders end up masquerading as humans, and their society becomes a totalitarian police state. Written in stark, simple prose, it is perhaps the most read of Orwell's novels.

#### Anna Karenina

novel by Leo <u>Tolstoy</u>, published 1873-77. It describes a married woman's love affair with Vronski, a young officer, which ends with her suicide.

#### Anstey, F (1856-1934)

#### pseudonym of Thomas Anstey Guthrie

English writer of fantasy novels. Vice Versa (1882) is the story of a man who

exchanges bodies with his young son. Other novels include *The Tinted Venus* (1885), *A Fallen Idol* (1886), *Baboo Jabberjee BA* (1897), and *The Brass Bottle* (1900).

#### anthology

#### (Greek 'bouquet')

collection of verse by various authors, particularly of shorter poems such as epigrams. The earliest known of these is the *Greek Anthology*, which includes a shorter collection by <u>Meleager</u>, known as the *Garland*.

#### Anthony, Michael (1932-)

Trinidadian novelist. In 1954 he went to London, where he published sparingly written novels drawing on his childhood. These include *The Games Were Coming* (1963), *The Year of San Fernando* (1965), *Green Days by the River* (1967), and *King of the Masquerade* (1974). After returning to Trinidad, he published a collection of short stories, *Cricket in the Road* (1973).

#### Antigone

tragedy by <u>Sophocles</u>, thought to have been written about 443 BC. Antigone buries her brother Polynices, in defiance of the Theban king Creon, who imprisons her in a cave. Persuaded by the visionary Tiresias to change his mind, Creon finds Antigone has hanged herself. He then learns of the suicide of his son, Haemon, who was to marry Antigone.

#### antihero

the protagonist of a novel or play who, instead of displaying heroic or sympathetic characteristics, is incompetent, foolish, and often immoral. Examples include Don Quixote in Cervantes'*Don Quixote* (1605) and Jimmy Porter in John Osborne's play *Look Back in Anger* (1957).

#### Antin, Mary (1881-1949)

Russian-born author. Her books, such as *From Polotzk to Boston* (1899) and *The Promised Land* (1912), detailed immigrant life in America. A lecturer and activist, she campaigned against restrictive immigration legislation.

### antislavery literature

in the US abolitionist movement, works published from around 1820 that promoted the end of slavery. Books, newspapers, pamphlets, poetry, published sermons, songs, slave narratives, and other forms of literature spread the abolitionist message throughout the North, and enraged and threatened the South. Key abolitionist newspapers were David Walker's *Appeal*, William Lloyd Garrison's *The Liberator*, and Frederick Douglass's *The North Star*.

Slave narratives (personal accounts of what life in bondage was like), gave northerners an idea of the reality of slavery and countered the more idyllic proslavery portrayals written by white slaveholders. Bestselling slave narratives included Frederick Douglass'*Narrative of the Life of Frederick Douglass* (1845), William Wells Brown's *Narrative*, and Solomon Northrup's *Twelve Years a Slave*. Many were translated into French, German, Dutch, and Russian. Slave narratives also facilitated antislavery lectures when their authors went on tour in the USA and abroad.

The most widely read antislavery novel was *Uncle Tom's Cabin* (1851-52), by the white pro-abolitionist Harriet Beecher <u>Stowe</u>. Its sentimental portrayal of meek Christian slaves confronted by the evil of the institution of slavery won increased support for the abolitionist movement and sparked a series of adaptations to the stage which played to enthusiastic audiences throughout the world.

#### Antonius, Brother

US poet; see William Everson.

#### Antony and Cleopatra

tragedy by William Shakespeare, written and first performed in 1607-08. Mark Antony falls in love with the Egyptian queen Cleopatra in Alexandria, but returns to Rome when his wife, Fulvia, dies. He then marries Octavia to heal the rift between her brother Octavius Caesar and himself. Antony returns to Egypt and Cleopatra, but is finally defeated by Octavius. Believing Cleopatra dead, Antony kills himself, and Cleopatra takes her own life rather than surrender to Octavius.

# Aphthonius (lived c.AD 400)

Greek rhetorician. Born in Antioch, he was a pupil of Libanius. His Progymnasmata,

an introduction to the study of rhetoric, was in common use for a thousand years.

# Apion (lived 1st century AD)

Greek grammarian and head of the Alexandrian school. Apion's story of 'Androcles and the Lion', from his *Aegyptiaca*, survives in Aulus Gellius'*Noctes Atticae*. His Homeric glossary, based on Aristarchus of Samothrace, survives in fragments.

# Apollinaire, Guillaume (1880-1918)

#### pen-name of Guillaume Apollinaire de Kostrowitsky

French poet of aristocratic Polish descent. He was a leader of the avant-garde in Parisian literary and artistic circles. His novel *Le Poète assassiné/The Poet Assassinated* (1916), followed by the experimental poems *Alcools/Alcohols* (1913) and *Calligrammes/Word Pictures* (1918), show him as a representative of the Cubist and Futurist movements.

Born in Rome and educated in Monaco, Apollinaire went to Paris 1898. His work greatly influenced younger French writers, such as Louis <u>Aragon</u>. He coined the term 'surrealism' to describe his play *Les Mamelles de Tirésias/The Breasts of Tiresias* (1917).

# Apollonius of Rhodes (or Apollonius Rhodius) (lived 3rd century BC)

Greek poet. He was the author of the epic *Argonautica*, which tells the story of Jason and the Argonauts and their quest for the Golden Fleece. A pupil of <u>Callimachus</u>, he was for a time head of the library at Alexandria.

Apollonius was innovative in making Medea's love for Jason an integral part of his story. It is likely that Virgil was influenced by this when he wrote about Dido's love for Aeneas.

# 'Apollonius of Tyre'

medieval tale, supposedly of Greek origin. Apollonius of Tyre reveals the incest of King Antiochus with his daughter and flees from Antioch, returning after the king's death. On the voyage his wife apparently dies when giving birth to his daughter. She is thrown overboard and the daughter is left at Tarsus. The three are eventually reunited.

The story, first mentioned towards the end of the 6th century, was universally popular during the Middle Ages. John Gower's *Confessio Amantis* (1390) incorporated it, and Shakespeare used it in *Pericles* (1608-09).

# Apollo poets

group of poets associated with *Apollo*, a literary periodical published in Cairo 1932-34. The group was strongly influenced by French and English Romantic poetry, and most of its members' work was highly subjective and lyrical.

*Apollo* was edited by Ahmad Zaki Abu Shadi (1892-1955) and served as a medium for the work of young poets and critics at the forefront of literary development. Apart from Abu Shadi, other notable contributors were Ibrahim Nagi (1893-1953) and 'Ali Mahmud Taha (1902-1949).

# Apperley, Charles James (1779-1843)

Welsh sporting writer, who used the pseudonym 'Nimrod'. His best-known works include *Nimrod's Hunting Tours* (1835), *The Chase, the Turf and the Road* (1837), *Memoirs of the Life of the Late John Mytton* (1837), and *The Life of a Sportsman* (1842).

Born near Wrexham, he was educated at Rugby and went on to become a cornet in the dragoons. Later he started writing and joined the staff of the *Sporting Review*.

#### Applegate, Jesse (1811-1888)

US colonist and cattleman. Applegate raised beef cattle in the Umpqua valley and wrote the Western classic *A Day with the Cow Column in 1843* (1876). He was an influential supporter of President Abraham Lincoln and the Union.

# Apuleius, Lucius (lived 2nd century AD)

Roman lawyer, philosopher, and writer. He was the author of <u>*The Golden Ass*</u>, or *Metamorphoses*, a prose fantasy.

Born at Madaura in North Africa, he was educated at Carthage and Athens. He travelled extensively in the East in order to become an initiate of religious mysteries, and then practised for some time as an advocate in Rome. Returning to Africa he married a rich widow, Aemilia Pudentilla, whose family charged him with having won her by magic. His defence survives: *Apologia* or *De Magia*. He was

acquitted and devoted the remainder of his life to philosophy and literature. His main work, *The Golden Ass*, is the only complete Latin novel to survive.

### Arabian Nights

tales in oral circulation among Arab storytellers from the 10th century, probably having their roots in India. They are also known as *The Thousand and One Nights* and include 'Ali Baba', 'Aladdin', 'Sinbad the Sailor', and 'The Old Man of the Sea'.

They were supposed to have been told to the sultan Shahryar by his bride Scheherazade to avoid the fate of her predecessors, who were all executed following the wedding night to prevent their infidelity. She began a new tale each evening, which she would only agree to finish on the following night. After 1,001 nights the 'sentence' was rescinded.

The earliest complete Arabic version dates from 1814-18, over 100 years later than the first European translation in 12 volumes 1704-08, by French writer Antoine Galland, which made the work famous. Some of the best known episodes, such as Aladdin and Ali Baba, have no earlier source than Galland, who may have actually written the tales.

The earliest version in English dates from 1708; translations were also made by E W Lane 1838-40 and Richard Burton, who published a complete version 1885-88.

# Arabic literature

literature written in the Arabic language, the literature of Arabs and the Islamic world.

# Aragon, Louis (1897-1982)

French poet and novelist. Beginning as a Dadaist, he became one of the leaders of Surrealism, published volumes of verse, and in 1930 joined the Communist Party. Taken prisoner in World War II, he escaped to join the Resistance; his experiences are reflected in the poetry of *Le Crève-coeur/Heart-break* (1941) and *Les Yeux d'Elsa/Elsa's Eyes* (1942).

His novels include the surrealist *Le Paysan de Paris/The Nightwalker* (1926), describing the relentless decay of the European bourgeoisie, and later social-realistic novels, including *Les Communistes/The Communists* (1949-51), *La Semaine sainte/Holy Week* (1958), *La Mise à mort/The Kill* (1965), and *Blanche, ou l'oubli/Blanche or Forgetting* (1967).

#### Arany, János (1817-1882)

Hungarian writer. His comic epic *The Lost Constitution* (1846) was followed in 1847 by *Toldi*, a product of the popular nationalist school. In 1864 his epic masterpiece *The Death of King Buda* appeared. During his last years Arany produced the rest of the *Toldi* trilogy, and his most personal lyrics.

### Arason, Jón (1484-1550)

Icelandic priest, bishop of the northern diocese in Iceland. He introduced printing there, about 1530, and vigorously opposed the Lutheran Reformation which the Danish king Christian III was forcing upon the country. Because of his resistance he was outlawed, arrested, and beheaded with which opposition to the Reformation effectively ended.

Arason was also a poet with both devotional and secular works ascribed to him.

# Aratus (315-245 BC)

Greek poet. While residing at the court of Antigonus II Gonatus he wrote his celebrated astronomical poem 'Phaenomena', which was very popular in ancient times and was translated into Latin by Cicero.

# Arbuthnot, John (1667-1735)

Scottish writer and physician. He attended Prince George and then Queen Anne from 1705 to 1714. He was a friend of Alexander Pope, Thomas Gray, and Jonathan Swift and was the chief author of the satiric *Memoirs of Martinus Scriblerus* (1741). He created the English national character of John Bull, a prosperous farmer, in his 'History of John Bull' (1712) pamphlets advocating peace with France.

# Archer, Jeffrey Howard (1940-)

#### Baron Archer of Weston-super-Mare

English writer and politician. He was a Conservative member of Parliament 1969-74, and a best-selling novelist and dramatist. His political career was marred by a scandal in which he was accused of making payments to a prostitute, and he was later imprisoned for creating a false alibit for a libel case against the *Daily Star*.

His books, which often concern the rise of insignificant characters to high political office or great business success, include *Not a Penny More, Not a Penny Less* (1975), *Kane and Abel* (1979), *First Among Equals* (1984), and *The Fourth Estate* (1997). His short stories are collected in *To Cut a Long Story Short* (2000). He wrote and starred in the play *The Accused* (2000).

#### Archilochus

Greek poet. Born on the island of Paros, he wrote the earliest Greek personal poetry, concentrating on themes of war and sexuality. He is disarmingly frank on both topics, but also prone to personal invective.

He wrote in the iambic metre, which was later used for tragedy. Only fragments of his work survive.

# Ardizzone, Edward (1900-1979)

British illustrator, author, and teacher. A prolific artist, he illustrated over 180 books, and as an official war artist during World War II he completed some 520 works 1940-45. He was author of the 'Tim' series of children's books, the first of which was *Little Tim and the Brave Sea Captain* (1936).

# Aretino, Pietro (1492-1556)

Italian writer. He earned his living, both in Rome and Venice, by publishing satirical pamphlets while under the protection of a highly placed family. His 'Letters' 1537-57 are a unique record of the cultural and political events of his time, and illustrate his vivacious, exuberant character. He also wrote poems and comedies.

Aretino, born in Arezzo, began as a protégé of Pope Leo X, but left Rome after the publication of his lewd verses. He settled in Venice, and quickly became known as the 'Scourge of Princes' with his vicious satires on powerful contemporaries; he was also well paid for not taking up his pen.

# Argens, Jean-Baptiste de Boyer (1704-1771)

#### Marquis d'Argens

French writer. Born at Aix-en-Provence, he was invited to Potsdam by Frederick the Great 1744. His chief works are *Lettres juives/The Jewish Letters* (1736), *Lettres chinoises/Chinese Letters* (1739-40), *Lettres cabalistiques/Cabalistic Letters* (1741),

and the 14-volume *Histoire de l'esprit humain/History of the Human Spirit* (1765-68).

# Argenson, Marc Antoine René de Voyer (1722-1787)

#### Marquis de Paulmy d'Argenson

French diplomat and man of letters. His library was sold after his death to the comte d'Artois (later Charles X) and formed the nucleus of the Bibliothèque de l'Arsenal, Paris. He published *Mélanges tirés d'une grande bibliothèque/Miscellanea Drawn from a Great Library* (1779-88).

# Argentine literature

the literature of Argentina since independence in 1816. The first Latin American territory to revolt against Spain, in 1810, Argentina developed a distinct literary tradition in which Romanticism was energized by imaginative responsiveness to the empty loneliness of the pampas and by liberal resentment of the ruralist dictatorship of Juan Manuel Rosas (died 1852), often equated with barbarism.

Important early writers include the politically disaffected poet Esteban Echeverría (1805-1851) and José Mármol (1817-1871), author of the melodramatic romantic novel *Amalia* (1851). The *gaucho* or nomadic cattleman, resented by progressive critics of Rosas' pastoral vision of Argentina, was transformed by the industrialization that spelled his extinction into a tragically romantic figure, as in *Martín Fierro* 1872-79 by José Hernández (1834-1886). This in turn influenced novels of idealized *gaucho* adventure and coming of age such as *Don Segundo Sombra* (1926) by Ricardo <u>Güiraldes</u> and contributed to the 20th-century literary obsession with Argentine identity, heroism, and masculinity or machismo in works such as the epic quest-novel *Adán Buenosayres* (1948) by Leopoldo Marechal (1900-1970) and the psychological or philosophical fictions of Ernesto Sábato (1911- ) and Eduardo Mallea (1903- ).

Poets such as Leopoldo Lugones (1874-1938) registered modernist reactions against romantic and realist convention, influenced by the French avant-garde while retaining distinctively Argentine settings and national concerns. In politically troubled modern Argentina, cosmopolitan and often apolitical experimental and modernist writing, typified by the influential fictions of Jorge Luis Borges and Julio Cortázar (1916-1984), has provoked neo-realist or socialist reactions in the work of Manuel Puig (1932-1990) and the committed Marxist novelist David Viñas (1929- ).

# Arghezi, Tudor (1880-1967)

pseudonym of Ion Theodorescu

Romanian poet, pamphleteer, essayist, and novelist. His life as a monk and experiences of imprisonment for political writing provided inspiration for his poetry and novels. Two cycles of poems, *1907* (1955) and *Cîtare omului/Ode to Man* (1956), elevated Arghezi to the status of a classic writer.

# Ari, Thorgilsson (c. 1067-1148)

#### called 'the Wise'

Icelandic priest, described as the 'father of Icelandic historiography'. His *Íslendingbók/Book of the Icelanders* is a concise and accurate survey of Icelandic history from when the island was first settled to about 1120. Ari makes ample use of oral sources and is highly critical in his approach. He may further have laid the foundations of the *Landnámabók/Book of Settlements* and other historical works.

# Àrîda, Nasîb (1887-1946)

Syrian-born poet. Settling in New York City, Àrîda worked as a journalist and was a member of the Pen Bond, a group of noted Arab emigré writers. Offended by American materialism, he longed for his homeland. His poems were collected and published as 'Al-Arwah, al-Ha'ira/Troubled Spirits', (1946).

# Arion (lived 7th century BC)

Greek writer, reputedly the first to introduce choral works known as dithyrambs. He returned to the court of Periander of Corinth after visiting Italy and Sicily.

Legend records that he was saved from drowning by a dolphin, which was charmed by his song.

# Ariosto, Ludovico (1474-1533)

Italian poet. He wrote Latin poems and comedies on classical lines. His major work is the poem <u>Orlando furioso</u> (1516, published in 1532), an epic treatment of the <u>Roland</u> story, the perfect poetic expression of the Italian Renaissance.

Ariosto was born in Reggio, and joined the household of Cardinal Ippolito d'Este in 1503. He was frequently engaged in ambassadorial missions and diplomacy for the Duke of Ferrara, whose service he entered in 1518. He was governor of Garfagnana 1522-25, a province in the Apennines, where he was mostly occupied in suppressing

bandits and enforcing order. After three years he retired to Ferrara to work on the final revision of *Orlando furioso*.

# Aristophanes (c. 445-c. 380 BC)

Greek comedy dramatist. Of his 11 extant plays (of a total of over 40), the early comedies are remarkable for the violent satire with which he ridiculed the democratic war leaders. He also satirized contemporary issues such as the new learning of Socrates in *The Clouds* (423 BC) and the obsession with war, with the sexstrike of women in *Lysistrata* (411 BC). The chorus plays a prominent role, frequently giving the play its title, as in *The Wasps* (422 BC), *The Birds* (414 BC), and *The Frogs* (405 BC).

### Aristophanes of Byzantium (c. 257-c. 183 BC)

Greek scholar. His works included editions of Homer and other poets, and his arguments to the plays of <u>Aristophanes</u> and the tragedians are largely preserved. He also did valuable work as a lexicographer and grammarian.

He studied at Alexandria under Zenodotus and Callimachus, and was appointed head of the museum library about 187 BC.

# Aristotle (384-322 BC)

Greek philosopher who advocated reason and moderation. He maintained that sense experience is our only source of knowledge, and that by reasoning we can discover the essences of things, that is, their distinguishing qualities. In his works on ethics and politics, he suggested that human happiness consists in living in conformity with nature. He derived his political theory from the recognition that mutual aid is natural to humankind, and refused to set up any one constitution as universally ideal. Of Aristotle's works, around 22 treatises survive, dealing with logic, metaphysics, physics, astronomy, meteorology, biology, psychology, ethics, politics, and literary criticism.

Aristotle was born in Stagira in Thrace and studied in Athens, where he became a distinguished member of the Academy founded by Plato. He then opened a school at Assos. At this time he regarded himself as a Platonist, but his subsequent thought led him further from the traditions that had formed his early background and he was later critical of Plato. In about 344 BC he moved to Mytilene in Lesvos, and devoted the next two years to the study of natural history. Meanwhile, during his residence at Assos, he had married Pythias, niece and adopted daughter of Hermeias, ruler of Atarneus.

In 342 BC he accepted an invitation from Philip II of Macedon to go to Pella as tutor to Philip's son Alexander the Great. In 335 BC he opened a school in the Lyceum (grove sacred to Apollo) in Athens. It became known as the 'peripatetic school' because he walked up and down as he talked, and his works are a collection of his lecture notes. When Alexander died in 323 BC, Aristotle was forced to flee to Chalcis, where he died.

Among his many contributions to political thought were the first systematic attempts to distinguish between different forms of government, ideas about the role of law in the state, and the conception of a science of politics.

In the *Poetics*, Aristotle defines tragic drama as an imitation (mimesis) of the actions of human beings, with character subordinated to plot. The audience is affected by pity and fear, but experiences a purgation (catharsis) of these emotions through watching the play. The second book of the *Poetics*, on comedy, is lost. The three books of the *Rhetoric* form the earliest analytical discussion of the techniques of persuasion, and the last presents a theory of the emotions to which a speaker must appeal.

### Arlen, Michael (1895-1956)

#### adopted name of Dikran Kuyumjian

Bulgarian writer of Armenian descent. He became a naturalized British subject 1922. His best-selling novel, *The Green Hat* (1924), reflected the stylishly irresponsible spirit of the 1920s.

His other books include *Ghost Stories* (1927), *Lily Christine* (1928), and *Hell! said the Duchess* (1934).

### Armitage, Simon (1963-)

English poet. He uses the honest, no-nonsense language and rhythms of the village where he lives, Marsden, near Huddersfield, England. He explores themes of belief, trust, creation, sacrifice, and identity in everyday life, with subjects as wide-ranging as cricket matches, love affairs, and astronomy. He won an Eric Gregory Award in 1988 and the *Sunday Times* Young Writer of the Year Award in 1993. Collections of poetry include *Zoom!* (1989), *Kid* (1992), *Book of Matches* (1993), and *The Dead Sea Poems* (1995).

Armitage was born in Huddersfield, Yorkshire, and grew up in West Yorkshire. After taking a degree in geography, he worked with young offenders for two years. He then went to Manchester University where he qualified as a social worker. In 1989 his work was featured on *New Voices*, a radio series. He has also published novels which include *Little Green Man* (2001), a dark tale about male friendship, and *The White Stuff* (2004), about the search for family and identity.

# Arndt, Ernst Moritz (1769-1860)

German poet, historian, and patriot. In 1803 he published *Versüch einer Geschichte der Leibeigenschaft in Pommern und Rügen*, a history of serfdom which led to its abolition in Pomerania 1806. In 1806 he issued the call to the Germans to throw off the yoke of France, and was forced into exile in Sweden to escape Napoleon.

He was born at Schoritz, the son of an emancipated serf. Appointed to the University of Bonn as professor of history 1818, he threw himself into the movement for constitutional reform and was suspended from his post 1819-40. A monument in his honour was erected in Bonn 1865.

# Arnim, Bettina von (1785-1859)

German writer, sister of Clemens <u>Brentano</u>. She married the writer Ludwig Achim von <u>Arnim</u> (1811). Her publication *Goethes Briefwechsel mit einem Kinde/Goethe's Correspondence with a Child* 1835 purported to be a collection of correspondence between herself and Goethe, but was later proved to be largely fictitious.

She also wrote on political and social questions.

# Arnim, Elizabeth Mary, Countess von Arnim (1866-1941)

English writer, born in Sydney, Australia; a cousin of New Zealand writer Katherine <u>Mansfield</u>. She became widely known for the lively wit of her writing.

Her first book, *Elizabeth and her German Garden* (1898), contained amusing sketches of her domestic life. Later novels include *The Enchanted April* (1922), *Introduction to Sally* (1926), *The Jasmine Farm* (1934), and *Mr Skeffington* (1940).

# Arnim, Ludwig Achim von (1781-1831)

German Romantic poet and novelist. He wrote short stories, a romance *Armut*, *Schuld und Busse der Gräfin Dolores/Countess Dolores* (1810), and plays, but left the historical novel *Die Kronenwächter* (1817) unfinished. With Clemens <u>Brentano</u> he collected the German folk songs in *Des Knaben Wunderhorn/The Boy's Magic Horn* (1805-08), several of which were set to music by Mahler.

# Árni Magnússon (1663-1730)

Icelandic scholar and antiquarian. He was professor of Danish antiquities at Copenhagen University from 1701, where he assembled his collection of medieval Icelandic manuscripts. Although much of his work was lost in the fire of 1728, he did great service to the study of Old Icelandic literature by establishing the Arnamagnæan Collection of old manuscripts in Copenhagen. Many of the manuscripts have now been returned to their Icelandic homeland.

# Arnold, Edwin (1832-1904)

English scholar and poet. He wrote *The Light of Asia* (1879), a rendering of the life and teaching of the Buddha in blank verse. *The Light of the World* (1891) retells the life of Jesus.

# Arnold, Matthew (1822-1888)

English poet and critic. His poem 'Dover Beach' (1867) was widely regarded as one of the most eloquent expressions of the spiritual anxieties of Victorian England. In his highly influential critical essays collected in *Culture and Anarchy* (1869), he attacked the smugness and ignorance of the Victorian middle classes, and argued for a new culture based on the pursuit of artistic and intellectual values.

Arnold was the son of Thomas Arnold, headmaster of Rugby school. He was born in Laleham, Middlesex, and educated at Rugby School, Winchester, and Oxford University, where he won the Newdigate prize in 1843 with a poem on the former English Lord Protector, Oliver Cromwell. He published two unsuccessful volumes of anonymous poetry, but two further publications in his name were published in 1853 and 1855. He was appointed professor of poetry at Oxford University in 1857. After leaving this post in 1867, he concentrated on prose writing. In 1883 he received an annual pension of £250, and the same year lectured in the USA. He died in Liverpool, and was buried in Laleham.

# Arrianus, Flavius (c. AD 96-c. 175)

Greek historian and philosopher. He was governor of Cappadocia 131-37 and archon of Athens 147-48. The latter years of his life were spent at Nicomedia, where he wrote *Anabasis of Alexander*, a history of the campaigns of Alexander the Great; *Indica* and *Periplus of the Euxine*; and *Campaign against the Alani* (a fragment).

#### or Epistle to the Pisos

poem by <u>Horace</u>, of uncertain date. It is a discussion of dramatic poetry based on Greek textbooks but full of the poet's own observations. It was regarded as an authoritative treatise and had an immense influence on the development of European drama.

It is unlikely that the poem was intended as a complete theory. It may have been written to dissuade one of the younger Pisos from a poetical career.

# Arthur, Timothy Shay (1809-1885)

US writer. He was the author of moral and domestic tales, notably *Ten Nights in a Bar Room* (1854), and founded *Arthur's Home Magazine* in (1853).

# **Arundel Marbles**

Latin Marmora Arundelliana

major portion of an important Greek chronicle discovered on the island of Paros. The author's intention was to list the main events of Athens from the period of Cecrops (a mythical king, attributed to about 1581 Bc) up to 264-263 BC (probably the author's own time). The *Arundel Marbles*, which contains 93 lines (with several lacunae, or gaps), was brought to England in 1627 on behalf of Thomas Howard, Earl of Arundel, and was published in London 1628.

# Asachi, Gheorghe (1788-1869)

Romanian teacher and writer. He was a leading figure in the Romanian cultural renaissance of the early 19th century. In 1813 Asachi introduced Romanian as the language of instruction in schools, and in 1829 he founded one of the first Romanian newspapers, *Albina româneasca*. He also helped to institute the Drama Conservatory at lasi in 1836 and wrote two historical dramas, *Petru Rares* (1837) and *Elena Dragos de Moldavia* (1863).

# Asbjörnsen, Peter Christen (1812-1885)

Norwegian writer and folklorist. In collaboration with Jørgen <u>Moe</u>, he wrote the collection *Norske Folkeeventyr/Norwegian Folk Tales* 1841-44. On his own he published *Norske Huldreeventyr og Folkesagn/Norwegian Fairy Tales and Folk* 

*Legends* 1845-47, in which much of the growing national spirit in Norwegian literature can be traced.

### Asch, Sholem (1880-1957)

Polish-born US novelist and dramatist. He wrote in Yiddish from 1904 onwards, beginning with the story 'Dos Shtetl/The Little Town', a classic tragicomedy of life in a small Jewish settlement. His 1907 play *Gott fun Nekoma/The God of Vengeance* became the first Eastern European Jewish play to be presented on a Western European stage when it was produced by Max Reinhardt in Berlin in 1910.

Asch's first stories were written in Hebrew, but under the influence of Isaac Peretz, he began producing works in Yiddish. Asch became a US citizen in 1920, and settled in Israel in 1954. He wrote numerous novels and short stories, such as the novel *Der Tilim Yied/Salvation* (1934), *Tales of My People* (1948), and *Passage in the Night* (1953). He also wrote historical and religious novels, including *Kiddush Hashem/For the Sanctification of the Name* 1920 and a trilogy on New Testament themes written in English: *The Nazarene* (1939), *The Apostle* (1943), and *Mary* (1949). Asch sought a reconciliation between Christianity and Judaism.

### Asclepiades (lived 3rd century BC)

Greek epigrammist and lyric poet of Samos, after whom the Asclepiad metre was named. His lyrics are rhythmic and musical and he injected new life into the epigram as a poetic form; 45 of his epigrams have survived.

# Ashbery, John Lawrence (1927-)

US poet and art critic. His collections of poetry - including *Self-Portrait in a Convex Mirror* (1975), which won a Pulitzer Prize - are distinguished by their exuberant artifice and strong visual and musical elements. His most experimental work, *Europe* (in *The Tennis Court Oath* (1962)), uses montage and collage methods derived from cubist painting. Other volumes include *Some Trees* (1956), *Houseboat Days* (1977), *As We Know* (1979), *A Wave* (1984), *And the Stars Were Shining* (1994), *Girls on the Run* (1999), *Your Name Here* (2000), and *Chinese Whispers* (2002).

# Ashbridge, Elizabeth (1713-1755)

#### born Elizabeth Sampson

English-born American Quaker. She is remembered for her autobiography Some

Account of the Fore-Part of the Life of Elizabeth Ashbridge, first published in England 1774. The book is a frank account of her unhappy marriage and her search, with the help of various religious groups, for a sincere religious faith. It is remarkable both as the spiritual testament of an intelligent and courageous woman, and also as a revealing (and often unflattering) depiction of life in colonial America in the first half of the 18th century.

# Ashford, Daisy (Margaret Mary Julia) (1881-1972)

English writer. *The Young Visiters* (1919), a novel of unconscious humour, was written when she was nine. Sponsored by the novelist and playwright J M Barrie, the book won instant success by its artless charm. It retained its popularity and became a juvenile classic.

She also wrote *Where Love Lies Deepest* (1920) and *Love and Marriage* (1965). All her published work was written by the time she was 15.

# Ashton, Winifred

real name of English novelist and dramatist Clemence Dane.

# Asimov, Isaac (1920-1992)

Russian-born US author and editor of science fiction and nonfiction. He published more than 400 books, including his science fiction novels *I*, *Robot* (1950) and the *Foundation* trilogy (1951-53), continued in *Foundation's Edge* (1983). His two-volume work *The Intelligent Man's Guide to Science* (1960) gained critical acclaim.

# Askew, Anthony (1722-1774)

English scholar. He helped to develop public interest in rare manuscripts, scarce editions, and fine copies, and collected an extensive library. His manuscript volume of transcribed inscriptions is in the British Museum, London.

# Asturias, Miguel Ángel (1899-1974)

Guatemalan author and diplomat. He published poetry, Guatemalan legends, and novels, such as *El señor presidente/The President* (1946), *Men of Corn* (1949), and *Strong Wind* (1950), attacking Latin-American dictatorships and 'Yankee

imperialism'. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1967.

He initially studied law and then Central American ancient culture, in Paris, France, before returning to Guatemala in 1933. In 1942 he was elected to the Guatemalan Congress and between 1946 and 1954 held diplomatic posts in Central and South America, before being temporarily exiled. He was ambassador to France 1966-70.

### Athenaeus (lived 3rd century)

Greek writer, born at Naucratis in Egypt; he studied at Alexandria and Rome. He wrote a miscellany *Deipnosophistae/Scholars at Dinner* in the form of conversations of learned guests at a prolonged feast. The book affords valuable information on Greek letters and science, and is one of the main sources for fragments of lost comedies and other works. Of the original 30 books only 15 and an abridgement survive.

# Athenodorus Cordylion (lived 1st century BC)

Head of the Pergamum library. Later he settled in Rome and died in the house of Cato the Younger about 47 BC.

### Atherton, Gertrude Franklin (1857-1948)

US novelist. Her novels include *The Californians* (1898), a historical novel; *The Conqueror* (1902), a fictional biography of the US statesman Alexander Hamilton; *Julia France and Her Times* (1912), a society novel; and *Black Oxen* (1923), whose theme is glandular rejuvenation.

### Atkinson, Katea (1951-)

#### born Katherine Atkinson

English novelist who won the Whitbread Book of the Year prize with her first novel *Behind the Scenes at the Museum* (1995). After studying at university in Dundee, Scotland, she worked as a teacher and wrote short stories, for which she also won prizes. Her second novel, *Human Croquet*, was published in 1997, and her third, *Emotionally Weird*, in 2000.

Atterbom, Per (Daniel Amadeus) (1790-1855)

Swedish poet and critic. His works include two poetic dramas, the incomplete *Fågel Blå/The Blue Bird* and *Lycksalighetens Ö/The Isle of Bliss* (1824-27), and a series of lyrics *Blommorna/The Flowers* (1812-36). His work is characterized by philosophic and religious meditations and obscure allegory.

#### Attic orators

the ten leading Attic orators recognized by Alexandrian scholars from the period 450-300 BC. These were Antiphon, Andocides, Lysias, Isocrates, Isaeus, Lycurgus, Aeschines, Demosthenes, Hyperides, and Dinarchus.

#### Attius, Lucius

see Accius.

# Atwood, Margaret (Eleanor) (1939-)

Canadian novelist, short-story writer, and poet. Her novels often treat feminist themes with wit and irony, and include *The Handmaid's Tale* (1986, filmed 1990, opera 2003), *The Blind Assassin* (2000, Booker Prize), and *Oryx and Crake* (2003).

Born in Ottawa, Ontario, and educated at the University of Toronto, Atwood has lived and worked in the USA, UK, and central Europe. Atwood's novels include *The Edible Woman* (1969), *Life Before Man* (1979), *Bodily Harm* (1981), *Cat's Eye* (1989), *The Robber Bride* (1993), and *Alias Grace* (1996). Collections of poetry include *The Circle Game* (1966), *Power Politics* (1971), *You are Happy* (1974), and *Interlunar* (1984).

### Aubanel, Théodore (1829-1886)

French writer. In collaboration with Frédéric <u>Mistral</u> and Joseph Roumanille, he devoted himself to the work of reviving and continuing the Provençal language and <u>Provençal literature</u>.

### Aubignac, François Hedelin, Abbé d'Aubignac (1604-1676)

French writer and critic. He defended the dramatic unities in his four-volume *Pratique du théâtre* (1657), and was the first to throw doubts on the existence of

the ancient Greek poet Homer in his Conjectures académiques (1715).

# Aubigné, Théodore Agrippa d' (1552-1630)

French soldier and scholar. A Huguenot, he fought for the cause with the pen and the sword. Early in his career he was a companion of Henry of Navarre, the future Henry IV, but left his court when Henry converted in 1593. Aubigne's writings comprise mainly histories of France justifying the Huguenot position: the *Histoire universelle* (1560-1601 and 1616-19) and the verse *Les Tragiques* (begun in 1577, published in 1616). He could also, however, write love poetry (*Printemps*, 1571-73) and satire (for example, his *Confession catholique du Sieur de Sancy*, 1598-1600, attacking Protestants who abjure).

# Aubrey, John (1626-1697)

English biographer and antiquary. He was the first to claim Stonehenge as a Druid temple. His *Lives*, begun in 1667, contains gossip, anecdotes, and valuable insights into the celebrities of his time. It was published as *Brief Lives* in 1898. *Miscellanies* (1696), a work on folklore and ghost stories, was the only work to be published during his lifetime.

# 'Aucassin et Nicolette'

13th-century French tale of romantic adventure. Aucassin's obsessive love for Nicolette, a Saracen girl brought up as a Christian, is opposed by his father, the count of Beaucaire. After strange adventures and long separation, he is united with Nicolette, now found to be the daughter of the king of Carthage.

The tale was described by its unknown author as a *chantefable*, since songs and prose narrative alternate. Arabic and Byzantine sources have been suggested, but more obvious is its relationship with <u>'Floire et Blanchefleur'</u>. Gentle humour and a vein of parody add to the work's freshness and charm.

# Auchincloss, Louis (Stanton) (1917-)

US lawyer and writer. After World War II, Auchinloss took up a career as a Wall Street lawyer, a profession he continued to pursue while he gained a reputation as a writer in the tradition of Henry James.

# Auden, W(ystan) H(ugh) (1907-1973)

English-born US poet. He wrote some of his most original poetry, such as *Look*, *Stranger!* (1936), in the 1930s when he led the influential left-wing literary group that included the writers Louis <u>MacNeice</u>, Stephen <u>Spender</u>, and Cecil <u>Day-Lewis</u>. Auden moved to the USA in 1939, became a US citizen in 1946, and adopted a more conservative and Christian viewpoint, for example in *The Age of Anxiety* (1947). He also wrote verse dramas with English writer Christopher <u>Isherwood</u>, such as *The Dog Beneath the Skin* (1935) and *The Ascent of F6* (1936), and opera librettos, notably for Russian-born composer Igor Stravinsky's *The Rake's Progress* (1951). Auden was professor of poetry at Oxford 1956-61. His last works, including *Academic Graffiti* (1971) and *Thank You*, *Fog* (1973), are light and mocking in style and tone, but are dazzling virtuoso performances by a poet who recognized his position as the leading writer in verse of his time.

Auden was born in York and studied at Oxford University. On moving to the USA, he became associate professor of English literature at the University of Michigan in 1939. Later he spent part of each year in Austria, and returned to live in England a year before his death.

### Aulnoy, Marie Catherine, Baronne d'Aulnoy (1650-1705)

French writer. Her six volumes of *Contes de fées/Fairy Stories* (1698), which contain 'The Blue Bird' and 'The Yellow Dwarf', have had a lasting success. She also wrote several romances, now forgotten, and the lively but untrustworthy *Mémoires de la Cour d'Espagne/Memoirs of the Spanish Court*.

### Aumonier, Stacy (1887-1928)

English writer. His novel *The Querrils* (1919) tells of a wartime family. His collections of stories include *Heartbeat* (1922), *Overheard: Fifteen Tales* (1924), *The Baby Grand* (1926), and *Little Windows* (1931).

### Aurelius, Victor Sextus

Roman historian. He wrote biographies of the emperors from Augustus to Constantius II.

Aurispa, Giovanni (1376-1459)

born Giovanni Pichumerio

Sicilian-born teacher of Greek and collector of manuscripts. He played an important role in the development of Greek studies during the Renaissance and collected several rare manuscripts of classical Greek literature, including a version of Homer's *Illiad* and the works of the dramatists <u>Aeschylus</u> and <u>Sophocles</u>.

### Auroras of Autumn, The

collection of poems 1950 by US poet Wallace <u>Stevens</u>. The title poem is a dense, meditative lyric on the poet's anxieties about religious belief. It uses the Northern Lights as an image for a world flickering between bright summer and dark winter.

# Ausonius, Decimus Magnus (c. 310-c. 395)

Latin poet, son of a physician from Burdigala (Bordeaux), where he received his education. He first became an advocate, and later a professor of grammar and rhetoric. He was so successful that the emperor Valentinian invited him to Rome to be tutor to his son Gratian. When Gratian came to the throne he rewarded his teacher, giving him the prefectures of Gaul and Italy, and, in 379 made him consul. Ausonius retired to Burdigala on Gratian's death 383.

# Austen, Jane (1775-1817)

English novelist. She described her raw material as 'three or four families in a Country Village'. *Sense and Sensibility* was published in 1811, *Pride and Prejudice* in 1813, *Mansfield Park* in 1814, *Emma* in 1816, and *Northanger Abbey* and *Persuasion* together in 1818, all anonymously. She observed speech and manners with wit and precision, and her penetrating observation of human behaviour results in insights that go beyond the limitations of the historical period. Many of her works have been successfully adapted for film and television.

Austen was born in Steventon, Hampshire, where her father was rector. She was sent to school in Reading with her elder sister Cassandra, who was her lifelong friend and confidante, but she was mostly taught by her father. In 1801 the family moved to Bath and after the death of her father in 1805, to Southampton, settling in 1809 with her mother and sisters in a house in Chawton, Hampshire, provided by her brother Edward (1768-1852). She died in Winchester, and is buried in the cathedral. Austen's novels reveal her to be a scrupulous and conscious artist who is consistently concerned with the accuracy of information used. This commitment to precision is mirrored in her precise use of language. Describing individuals coping with ordinary life and social pressures, she probes the centres of human experience, using a sharp, satiric wit to expose the follies, hypocrisies, and false truths of the world. Although she was a contemporary of Romanticism, her novels retain a certain classicism and detachment, always keeping a sense of proportion. Most involve a movement towards self-realization, felt particularly in *Emma*. Austen's plot is often conveyed by dialogue, which also reveals character.

# Auster, Paul (1947-)

US writer. Making experimental use of detective story techniques, he has explored modern urban identity in his acclaimed *New York Trilogy: City of Glass* (1985), *Ghosts* (1986), and *The Locked Room* (1986). Later novels include *In the Country of Last Things* (1987), *Moon Palace* (1989), *The Music of Chance* (1991), and *Mr Vertigo* (1994).

He has also published works in a variety of other literary genres, for example the memoir *The Invention of Solitude* (1982), the poetry collections *Unearth* (1974) and *Wall Writing* (1976), the essay collections *White Spaces* (1980) and *The Art of Hunger* (1982), and the screenplay for the film *Smoke* (1995).

# Austin, Alfred (1835-1913)

English poet. His satirical poem *The Season* (1861) was followed by plays and volumes of poetry little read today. *The Garden that I Love* (1894) is a prose idyll. He was poet laureate 1896-1913.

# Australian literature

Australian literature begins with the letters, journals, and memoirs of early settlers and explorers. The first poet of note was Charles Harpur (1813-1868); idioms and rhythms typical of the country were developed by, among others, Henry Kendall (1841-1882) and Andrew Barton (Banjo) <u>Paterson</u>. More recent poets include Christopher <u>Brennan</u> and Judith Wright, Kenneth <u>Slessor</u>, R D (Robert David) Fitzgerald (1902-1987), A D (Alec Derwent) Hope (1907-2000), James McAuley (1917-1976), and poet and novelist David <u>Malouf</u>. Among early Australian novelists are Marcus <u>Clarke</u>, Rolfe Boldrewood, and Henry Handel <u>Richardson</u>. Striking a harsh vein in contemporary themes are the dramatist Ray Lawler and novelist Patrick <u>White</u>; the latter received the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1973. Thomas <u>Keneally</u> won the 1982 Booker Prize for *Schindler's Ark*.

The growth of Australian cinema in the 1970s and 1980s helped and benefited from a late flowering of Australian drama. Aboriginal culture, used as an imaginative resource by nationalist writers between the wars, has given rise both to translated collections of oral poetry, myth, and narrative, and to a modern, politically radical, tradition of Aboriginal literature in English.

### autobiography

a person's own biography, or written account of his or her life, distinguished from a journal or <u>diary</u> by being a connected <u>prose</u> narrative, and distinguished from memoirs by dealing less with contemporary events and personalities. *The Boke of Margery Kempe* (*c.* 1432-36) is the oldest known autobiography in English.

Forms of autobiography include the **confessional**, which attempts to make a faithful description of moral weakness and the inner life, as in the influential *Confessions* of St Augustine (early 5th century) and the *Confessions* of the French philosopher and writer Jean-Jacques <u>Rousseau</u> (1781); the **would-be exemplary**, seeking to promote a particular cause or outlook espoused by the writer, as in *Mein Kampf*, written in the 1920s by the future German dictator Adolf Hitler, or the autobiography of English philosopher John Stuart Mill (1873); and **military and political memoirs**, intended as contributions to history.

### Avery, Samuel Putnam (1822-1904)

US art connoisseur and philanthropist. One of the founders of the Metropolitan Museum in New York, Avery also endowed and built the Avery Architectural Library at Columbia College in 1891.

### Avianus (lived c.AD 400)

Roman fable writer. Written in elegiac couplets, his fables number 42 in total.

# Avram, Henriett D (Davidson) (1919-)

US librarian. Avram worked in private industry and in government; holding important positions at the Library of Congress. An information systems specialist, she brought expertise to cataloguing and library automation.

### Avvakum, Archpriest (1621-1682)

#### pen-name of Avvakum Petrovich

Russian Orthodox cleric and writer. He was a key figure in the religious and literary history of Russia. Avvakum was the leader of the 'Old Believers', those who rejected the church reforms initiated by Patriarch Nikon, and who still today form a separate sect of the Russian Orthodox Church (the Raskolniki).

Avvakum was arrested in 1653 and exiled to a remote region. During the last 12 years of his life, spent in an underground prison, he issued numerous instructions to his followers and produced his autobiography *Zhitie protopopa Avvakuma/The Life of the Archpriest Avvakum*. In addition to their theological content, his writings make innovative use of vernacular Russian. Unrepentant to the last, he was burnt at the stake in 1682.

# Awdry, W(ilbert) V(ere) (1911-1997)

English author and Church of England clergyman. His railway stories for young people, especially those featuring 'Thomas the Tank Engine', delighted generations of children. The first Thomas book, *The Three Railway Engines*, appeared in 1945, and *Thomas, the Tank Engine* a year later.

Over 25 books followed, each based on a real experience, until *Tramway Engines* appeared in 1972. After this date Awdry's son, Christopher, succeeded to the authorship. Awdry was born in Ampfield, Hampshire.

# Ayenbite of Inwit

#### Remorse of Conscience

prose translation of a popular French treatise, *Somme des vices et des vertus*. Completed in 1340 by an Augustinian monk, Dan Michel of Northgate, Canterbury, it is mainly of philological interest as an example of Kentish dialect.

# Ayer, Edward Everett (1841-1927)

US book collector. Ayer donated his personal collection to the Newberry Library in Chicago in 1911. He was one of the founders of the Field Natural History Library, and he became its first president in 1893.

# Ayme, Marcel (1902-1967)

French writer. He wrote numerous novels, including *La Jument verte/The Green Mare* (1933), *Le Chemin des écoliers* (1946), *Uranus* (1948), and *Les Tiroirs de l'inconnu* (1960); short stories; three volumes of children's stories; and volumes of essays. After World War II he also wrote a number of successful plays, including *La Mouche bleue* (1957), *Patron* (1960), and *Le Minotaure* (1963).

# Azorín (1873-1967)

#### pen-name of José Martínez Ruiz

Spanish writer. His works include volumes of critical essays and short stories, plays, and novels, such as the autobiographical *La voluntad/The Choice* (1902), describing the spiritual pessimism of his generation, and *Antonio Azorín* (1903). He adopted the name of the hero of the latter as his pen-name.

His feeling for atmosphere and time centres on Castilian landscape and history in works such as *Los pueblos/Towns* (1905) and *Castilla/Castille* (1912). His literary criticism is exemplified in *Lecturas españoles/Spanish Readings* (1912), *Clásicos y modernos* (1913), *Las valores literarias* (1913), and *Al margen de los clásicos* (1915). In all his work there is an intensely personal tone, and his influence in the first two decades of the 20th century was very powerful.

# Babbitt

satirical novel 1922 by Sinclair Lewis about a Midwestern businessman obsessed with commerce, clubs, and material values. 'Babbittry' came to mean a type of Middle American cultureless innocence.

# Babel, Isaak Emmanuilovich (1894-1940)

Russian writer. Born in Odessa, he was an ardent supporter of the Revolution and fought with Budyenny's cavalry in the Polish campaign of 1921-22, an experience which inspired *Red Cavalry* (1926). His other works include *Stories from Odessa* (1924), which portrays the life of the Odessa Jews.

# Babrius (lived 2nd century AD)

writer of the oldest existing collection of fables, written in Greek. Though little is known about him, he was probably Roman and lived in Syria, where his stories first gained popularity. In 1842 a manuscript of his fables was discovered in a convent on Mount Athos, Greece. There were 123 fables, arranged alphabetically, but stopping at the letter O. They are standard stories, mostly concerning beasts, associated with <u>Aesop</u>.

Italian novelist and literary critic. He wrote two historical novels remarkable for their wealth of detail, their humour, and their finished style: *II diavolo al Pontelungo/The Devil at the Long Bridge* (1927) and *II mulino del Po/The Mill on the Po* (1938-40).

Both are set in the 19th century. The former deals with a socialist group; the latter, a three-volume novel of epic dimensions, is set against the Risorgimento (Italian unification movement).

# Bacchylides (lived early 5th century BC)

Greek lyric poet, born at lulis on the island of Ceos. He was a nephew of <u>Simonides</u>, and lived for some time with his uncle and <u>Pindar</u> at the court of Hieron I at Syracuse. Nothing was known of his poetry until the discovery in 1896 at Oxyrhynchus of a papyrus containing 14 odes and six dithyrambs (choral hymns).

# Bacon, Delia Salter (1811-1859)

US author and lecturer. Her lectures and dramatic readings achieved the status of public performances. She devoted her last years to championing the case for Francis Bacon's authorship of William Shakespeare's plays, a theory that Nigel <u>Hawthorne</u> helped her to publish.

### Bacon, Robert (died 1248)

English writer and monk. He was the brother or uncle of the scientist Roger Bacon. Among his works are *Liber in sententias Petri Lombardi* and *Sectiones ordinariae*.

### **Baconian theory**

the claim that the plays of Shakespeare were in fact written by the Elizabethan writer and statesman Francis Bacon. The theory was first suggested by the US diplomat Joseph C Hart in his book *Romance of Yachting* (1848) and developed by the US writer Delia Bacon in *The Philosophy of the Plays of Shakespeare Unfolded* (1857). The Baconian theory is not taken seriously by scholars as there is ample evidence to link Shakespeare to the plays.

The basic argument in support of the Baconian theory is that a mere actor (Shakespeare) whose formal education did not go beyond that of a provincial grammar school would not have been capable to writing plays that teem with literary, scientific and philosophical references. Some researchers also claim to have found codes revealing Bacon's authorship carefully concealed in the texts of the plays.

A related theory - accepted by several leading writers and thinkers, including the Austrian psychoanalyst Sigmund Freud - is that the plays were written by a number of contemporary figures, mostly aristocrats who wanted to remain anonymous, and bought by Shakespeare, who presented them under his own name.

Bacovia, George (1881-1957)

#### pseudonym of Gheorghe Vasiliu

Romanian poet. *Plumb/Lead* (1916), his first volume of poems, shows the influence of <u>Symbolism</u>. Melancholy and pessimism characterize Bacovia's work; the volumes *Scintei Galbene/Collected Poems* (1926) and *Bucati de noapte* (1926) evoke an atmosphere of damp, rain, and snow, where decay is ever present.

### Badius Ascensius, Jodocus (1461/2-1535)

#### also known as Josse Bade

Flemish-born French scholar and printer. In 1503 he opened a publishing house in Paris and during the next 30 years produced over 800 books, among them the early works of the Dutch scholar <u>Erasmus</u>. His finely edited works in Greek and Latin played an important role in furthering Renaissance humanism in France.

### bad quartos

early editions of Shakespeare's plays with incomplete or highly corrupt texts. They are (with dates publication): *Henry VI, Part II* (1594), *Henry VI, Part III* (1595), *Henry V* (1600), *Romeo and Juliet* (1597), *Hamlet* (1603), and *The Merry Wives of Windsor* (1602).

These were pirated editions published by printers who used foul papers (an author's drafts), prompt books (annotated editions used by theatre companies), or versions written down in shorthand during performances. The standard editions of these plays appeared in the First Folio of 1623.

### Baggesen, Jens Immanuel (1764-1826)

Danish poet. He spent much of his life abroad, and wrote in German as well as in

Danish. His works include the lively and informal travel book *Labyrinthen/The Labyrinth* 1792-93, and both satirical verse and lyrical love poetry.

### Bagnold, Enid (Algerine) (1889-1981)

English novelist and dramatist. Her novel *National Velvet* (1935), about a girl who wins the Grand National on a horse won in a raffle, was made into a film in 1944 starring Elizabeth Taylor. Her most notable play was *The Chalk Garden* (1954).

# Bagritsky, Eduard (1895-1934)

pen-name of Eduard Dzyubin

Russian poet. One of the constructivist group, he published the heroic poem *Lay About Opanas* 1926, and collections of verse called *The Victors* 1932 and *The Last Night* 1932.

# Bahr, Hermann (1863-1934)

Austrian novelist, critic, and dramatist. An important influence on contemporary literary movements, he wrote *Die Überwindung des Naturalismus* (1891), involved himself with Impressionism and Symbolism, and in 1914 wrote *Expressionismus*. His plays include *Der Meister* (1903) and *Das Konzert* (1909), and his novels *Die Rahl* (1908) and *Himmelfahrt* (1916).

### Baïf, Jean Antoine de (1532-1589)

French poet, born in Venice. A member of the <u>*Pléiade*</u> group of poets, he was notable for applying classical prosody to French verse. His poems include *Les Amours* (1552), *Les Amours de Francine* (1555), *Oeuvres en rime* (1572-73), and *Mimes, enseignements et proverbes* (1576).

# Bailey, Philip James (1816-1902)

English poet. In 1839 he published his poem *Festus*, a version of the Faust legend. He continued to revise and enlarge it in successive editions for the next 50 years.

His later poems - *The Angel World* (1850), *The Mystic* (1855), and *The Universal Hymn* (1867) - were, comparatively, failures.

# Baillie, Grizel (1665-1746)

#### born Grizel Hume

Scottish poet. Her songs include 'And werena my heart licht I wad dee'.

She was the daughter of the Covenanter Patrick Hume, 1st Earl of Marchmont. In 1684 she supplied her father with food while he hid in the vault of Polwarth church, and she accompanied him when he fled abroad 1686-88. In 1692 she married the son of Robert Baillie of Jerviswood.

# Baillie, Joanna (1762-1851)

Scottish poet and dramatist. Her series of *Plays on the Passions* (1798-1836) are written with vigour and were admired by the novelist Walter Scott. One of them was the tragedy *De Montfort*, made popular through the acting of Philip Kemble and Sarah Siddons. Among Baillie's finest works are her songs and ballads written in Scottish dialect.

# Bainbridge, Beryl (1934-)

English novelist. Her writing has dramatic economy and pace, is acutely observed, and peppered with ironic black humour, and often deals with the tragedy and comedy of human self-delusion. Bainbridge achieved critical acclaim with *The Dressmaker* (1973), set in wartime England. *Birthday Boys* (1991), *Every Man for Himself* (1996), and *Master Georgie* (1998) are novels of historical realism centring respectively on R F Scott's expedition to the South Pole, the sinking of the *Titanic*, and the Crimean War. *Every Man for Himself* won the 1996 Whitbread Novel Award, *Master Georgie* was shortlisted for the 1998 Booker Prize, and *According to Queeney* (2001) made the longlist for the 2001 Booker Prize.

Bainbridge's other works include *The Bottle Factory Outing* (1974), *Injury Time* (1977), and *An Awfully Big Adventure* (1989).

# Baker, Augusta Braxton (1911-)

US librarian and storyteller. Baker was the children's librarian and storytelling specialist of the New York Public Library and the public library of Trinidad. Her numerous anthologies of children's fiction include several about African-American life.

### Baker, George Pierce (1866-1935)

US teacher and director. A professor of drama at Harvard, his course in playwrighting led to the formation of the influential 47 Workshop. His students included Eugene O'Neill.

# Baker, Nicholson (1957-)

US novelist. His first novel, *The Mezzanine* (1988), was followed by *Room Temperature* (1990), *Vox* (1992), and *The Fermata* (1994). Often pornographic, his novels are notable for their attention to detail and lack of plot, with common themes being sex and assassination.

# Baker, Ray Stannard (1870-1946)

US writer. Among his numerous publications are *Woodrow Wilson and World Settlement, a History of the Peace Conference* (1922). He co-edited *The Public Papers of Woodrow Wilson* (1925-26), and his final two volumes of the authorized biography of Wilson (1927-39) won a Pulitzer Prize.

Under the pseudonym David Grayson, he also published collections of essays including *Adventures in Understanding* (1925) and *Adventures in Solitude* (1931).

### Balan

one of the brothers Balin and Balan.

# Balassi, Bálint (1554-1594)

Hungarian poet, born in Bohemia. He produced, for the first time in Hungarian, lyric poetry of great beauty and freshness, as in *A végek dicsérete/In Praise of the Marches* (1589).

Much of Balassi's life was spent fighting the occupying Turks, and in litigation to recover his estates. Couched in a variety of original verse forms, his works treat the themes of love, God, and the military life: his poems include the Julia cycle (1587); the Anna poems (1578); and *Adj má csendességet/Grant Me Peace* (1591).

# Baldwin, James Arthur (1924-1987)

US writer and civil-rights activist. He portrayed with vivid intensity the suffering and despair of African-Americans in contemporary society. After his first novel, *Go Tell It on the Mountain* (1953), set in Harlem, and *Giovanni's Room* (1956), about a homosexual relationship in Paris, his writing became more politically indignant with *Another Country* (1962) and *The Fire Next Time* (1963), a collection of essays.

Born in Harlem, New York City, the illegitimate son of a servant, Baldwin adopted the name of his stepfather. After being brought up in poverty, Baldwin graduated from high school and, after a number of badly paid jobs, wrote book reviews and essays for a number of magazines. He lived in Europe for ten years and then returned to the USA, where he became involved in the southern school desegregation movement. Other works include his play *The Amen Corner* (1955), the autobiographical essays *Notes of a Native Son* (1955), and the novel *Just Above My Head* (1979).

# Baldwin, William (lived c. 1560)

English poet. He edited and contributed to the first edition of *A Mirror for Magistrates* (1559), a collection of tales on the downfall of illustrious men which was highly influential in the 16th century. Separate works include *Canticles or Ballads of Solomon* (1549) and a popular prose *Treatise of Moral Philosophy* (1547).

# Bale, John (1495-1563)

English writer and cleric. His *King John* provides a link between religious drama and the Elizabethan chronicle history play; it is considered to be the first English historical play.

He was also the author of a number of virulently anti-Catholic plays, which he seems to have written as Protestant counterparts to the still popular Catholic mystery plays and morality drama.

# **Balin and Balan**

two brothers in Thomas Malory's *Le Morte d'Arthur* about 1470. During his adventures Balin meets his brother Balan; they fail to recognize each other, fight, and both are killed.

# ballad

#### (Latin ballare 'to dance')

literary genre of traditional narrative poetry, widespread in Europe and the USA. Ballads are simple in metre, sometimes (as in Russia) without regular lines and rhymes or (as in Denmark) dependent on assonance. Concerned with some strongly emotional event, the ballad is halfway between the lyric poem and the <u>epic</u>. Most English ballads date from the 15th century but may describe earlier events. Poets involved in Romanticism both in England and in Germany were greatly influenced by the ballad revival, as seen in, for example, the *Lyrical Ballads* (1798) of English poets <u>Wordsworth</u> and <u>Coleridge</u>. *Des Knaben Wunderhorn/The Boy's Magic Horn* (1805-08), a collection edited by German writers Klemens <u>Brentano</u> and Achim von <u>Arnim</u>, was a major influence on 19th-century German poetry. The ballad form was adapted in 'broadsheets' (so called because they were printed on large sheets of paper), with a satirical or political motive, and in the 'hanging' ballads purporting to come from condemned criminals.

Historically, the ballad was primarily intended for singing at the communal ringdance, the refrains representing the chorus.

Opinion is divided as to whether the authorship of the ballads may be attributed to individual poets or to the community. Later ballads tend to centre on a popular folk hero, such as Robin Hood or Jesse James.

In 19th-century music the refined drawing-room ballad had a vogue, but a more robust tradition survived in the music hall; folk song played its part in the development of pop music, and in this genre slow songs are often called 'ballads', regardless of content.

# ballade

in literature, a poetic form developed in France in the later Middle Ages from the ballad, generally consisting of one or more groups of three stanzas of seven or eight lines each, followed by a shorter stanza or envoy, the last line being repeated as a chorus. In music, a ballade is an instrumental piece based on a story; a form used in piano works by Chopin and Liszt.

# Ballantine, James (1808-1877)

Scottish writer and artist. One of the sentimental 'Whistle-Binkie' poets, he is known for *The Gaberlunzie's Wallet* (1843), a miscellany, *The Miller of Deanhaugh* (1845), and some popular songs, including 'Castles in the Air' and 'Ilka Blade o' Grass'.

One of the first to revive the art of glass painting, he was appointed to make

stained-glass windows for the House of Lords, London, 1844.

# Ballantyne, R(obert) M(ichael) (1825-1894)

Scottish writer of children's books. Six years with the Hudson's Bay Company provided material for *The Young Fur Traders* (1856), after which he produced numerous moral adventure tales set in various parts of the world, such as *The Coral Island* (1857), *Martin Rattler* (1858), and *The Dog Crusoe* (1861). Other well known works are *The Gorilla Hunters* (1862) and *Black Ivory* (1873).

# Ballard, J(ames) G(raham) (1930-)

English novelist. He became prominent in the 1960s for his science fiction works on the theme of catastrophe and collapse of the urban landscape. His fundamentally moral vision is expressed with an unrestrained imagination and a pessimistic irony.

Born in Shanghai, China, he was educated at Cambridge University, England, before becoming a writer. His first novel was *The Drowned World* (1962), and later works include *Crash!* (1973), *High-Rise* (1975), the partly autobiographical *Empire of the Sun* (1984, filmed 1987), dealing with his internment in China during World War II, and the autobiographical novel *The Kindness of Women* (1991).

### **Ballet Shoes**

novel for children by British author Noel Streatfield (1895-1986), published in 1936, which describes the dancing careers of three adopted children, Pauline, Petrova, and Posy Fossil, brought up in London by a wealthy guardian. This story marked the birth of the career-novel genre, which she continued in *Tennis Shoes* (1937) and *White Boots* (1951).

# Balmont, Konstantin Dmitrievich (1867-1942)

Russian poet and translator. He was the most talented of the older Symbolists (see <u>Symbolism</u>). His verse has a songlike quality and combines technical experimentation in form and rhythm with erotic and exotic subject matter. Examples of his work are *Budem kak solntse/Let us be like the Sun* (1903) and *Poeziia kak volshebstvo/Poetry as Sorcery* (1915).

Balmont was a prolific writer and colourful personality. After 1918 he lived in exile in Paris, and published *Stikhi o Rossii/Verses about Russia* (1924).

# Balzac, Honoré de (1799-1850)

French writer. He was one of the major novelists of the 19th century. His first success was *Les Chouans/The Chouans*, inspired by Walter Scott. This was the beginning of the long series of novels *La Comédie humaine/The <u>Human Comedy</u>* which includes *Eugénie Grandet* (1833), *Le Père Goriot* (1834), and *Cousine Bette* (1846). He also wrote the Rabelaisian *Contes drolatiques/Ribald Tales* (1833).

Born in Tours, Balzac studied law and worked as a notary's clerk in Paris before turning to literature. His first attempts included tragedies such as *Cromwell* and novels published under a pseudonym with no great success. A venture in printing and publishing 1825-28 involved him in a lifelong web of debt. His patroness, Madame de Berny, figures in *Le Lys dans la vallée/The Lily in the Valley* (1836). Balzac intended his major work *La Comédie humaine* to comprise 143 volumes, depicting every aspect of society in 19th-century France, of which he completed 80. Titles and characters include *Cousin Pons* (1847); and the doctor of *Le Médicin de la campagne/The Country Doctor* (1833), the great businessman of *La Maison de Nucingen/The House of Nucingen* (1838), and the cleric of *Le Curé de village/The Village Parson* (1839). Balzac corresponded constantly with the Polish countess Evelina Hanska after meeting her 1833, and they married four months before his death in Paris. He was buried in Père Lachaise cemetery, Paris.

# Balzac, Jean Louis Guez de (1597-1654)

French essayist. His writings mark the beginning of a polish and elaboration previously unknown in French composition. His 'Lettres' were published in 1624, 'Le Prince' (1631), 'Discours' (1644), 'Le Barbon' (1648), 'Le Socrate chrétien' (1652), and 'Aristippe' (1658).

He went to Italy with Cardinal de la Valette and was struck by the rich smoothness of the Italian style as compared with that of his own country.

### Bancroft, Hubert Howe (1832-1918)

US historian. His publications include *The Native Races of the Pacific States*, *The History of Pacific States*, and *Essays* (39 volumes) 1875-90.

# Bandello, Matteo (1485-1561)

Italian writer. He is best known for his collection of stories *Novelle/Tales* (1554), inspired by the *Decameron* (1353) by <u>Boccaccio</u>. Many of the stories in Bandello's

collection were translated into French by François Belleforest (1559-82) and were in turn soon translated into English. These English translations, by Geoffrey Fenton, Arthur Brooke, and William Painter, provided <u>Shakespeare</u> with the material for several plays, including *Romeo and Juliet* and *Much Ado About Nothing*.

### Bang, Herman Joachim (1857-1912)

Danish writer. He was the chief exponent of Danish Impressionism. His style relies on visual suggestion and he presents his characters through their actions rather than by direct characterization. His novels mostly deal with the lonely and miserable lives of insignificant people.

His works include *Haabløse Slaegter/Generations without Hope* (1880), *Stille Existenser/Quiet Existences* (1886), *Stuk/Stucco* (1887), *Tine* (1889), and *Ludvigsbakke* (1896).

# Bangs, John Kendrick (1862-1922)

US writer and editor. He published many extravagantly farcical works, including *Tiddledywinks Tales* (1890), *Mr Bonaparte of Corsica* (1895), and *A Houseboat on the Styx* (1895).

He also edited the magazines Harper's Weekly 1898-1901 and Puck 1904-05.

# Banim, John (1798-1842) and Michael (1796-1874)

Irish writers. The brothers' joint work *Tales by the O'Hara Family* was the first to chronicle Irish peasant life, agrarian unrest, and the violence to which it led. Written somewhat in the manner of Walter <u>Scott's Waverley</u> novels, the stories mirror the views of the Irish Catholic peasantry and emerging middle class in the period leading up to Catholic emancipation. Begun in 1822, they include the trilogy *Crohoore of the Bill-hook*, *The Fetches*, and *John Doe* (1825); and *The Nowlans* and *Peter at the Castle* (1826).

# Banks, Iain Menzies (1954-)

Scottish writer. His themes include modern culture, politics, and technology, usually set in his native Scotland. His controversial first novel *The Wasp Factory* (1984) involves an adolescent multiple-murderer, and was criticized for its violence but critically acclaimed for its original style. His subsequent novels include *The Crow Road* (1992), *A Song of Stone* (1997), and *Dead Air* (2003). As Iain M Banks he

produces works of science fiction, including *Against a Dark Background* (1993) and *Inversions* (1998).

# Banks, Lynne Reid (1929-)

English writer. She was widely acclaimed for her novel *The L-Shaped Room* (1961), the first of a trilogy completed with *The Backward Shadow* (1970) and *Two Is Lonely* (1974). Her novels deal with young working- and lower-middle-class people coming to terms with sexuality and family life, told from a female perspective.

Born in London, she trained at the Royal Academy of Dramatic Art (RADA) and worked as an actor and journalist before turning to writing. She has also published plays, biographical fiction, and children's books, including *Broken Bridge* (1994).

# Bannatyne Club

literary club founded in Edinburgh in 1823 by the novelist Walter <u>Scott</u> and other Scottish antiquaries for the printing of rare works relating to Scottish history, literature, and antiquities. Scott was the first president.

By the time the club was dissolved 1861, it had been responsible for the printing of 116 works, which are indispensable for Scottish studies.

# Banville, John (1945-)

Irish writer and literary editor. Born in Wexford town, he worked for the *Irish Press* and became literary editor of the *Irish Times* in 1988. His first publication was the 1970 collection of short stories, *Long Larkin*, but he is best known for his novels, such as *The Book of Evidence* (1989), shortlisted for the Booker Prize and winner of the Guinness Peat Aviation Award. *Birchwood* (1973) establishes an interest in the Irish big house theme which, in combination with the history of science, philosophy, and art, operates in many of his novels. His rich, articulate writing style won him critical praise in later novels such as *The Untouchable* (1998) and *Eclipse* (2000).

*The Book of Evidence, Ghosts* (1993), and *Athena* (1995) comprise a trilogy centred on the main character Freddie Montgomery and examine, often with self-conscious ironic humour, notions of beauty, love, art, and writing. He has also written books about scientists: *Doctor Copernicus* (1976), *Kepler* (1981), *Newton Letter* (1982), and *Mefisto* (1986).

Banville, Théodore Faullain de (1823-1891)

French writer. He produced volumes of verse, including *Les Cariatides/The Caryatids* (1842); comedies, including *Gringoire* (1866); and tales. His delightful handling of <u>ballades</u>, rondeaux, and other medieval forms of verse was the starting point of a notable revival of these forms.

# Baraka, (Imamu) Amiri (1934-)

#### born LeRoi Jones

US poet, dramatist, and militant activist. One of the leading black voices of his generation, he promoted black poetry and theatre, as well as producing volumes of poetry, novels, plays, and cultural analyses, including *Blues People* (1963), a study of jazz. He began his literary career with personal and romantic poetry, as in *Preface to a Twenty Volume Suicide Note* (1961), before turning to the theatre as a revolutionary force for black separatism in such plays as *Dutchman* and *The Slave* (both 1964).

In 1965 he converted to Islam and changed his name, as part of his campaign for African-American consciousness. His ideological focus shifted in the 1970s, attacking capitalism as much as racism. His *Selected Plays and Prose* and *Selected Poetry* were both published in 1979, and *The Autobiography of LeRoi Jones* in 1984.

# Barash, Asher (1889-1952)

Israeli novelist and writer of short stories. Born in Poland, Barash went to Palestine as a young man and settled in Tel Aviv-Yafo. His books, which are written in Hebrew and are mainly about the Jews in Galicia, include *Tmunot Mibet Mivshal-Haschechar* (1928).

# Barbaro, Ermolao (1410-1471)

#### called 'the Elder'

Venetian cleric and humanist author. Born into the influential Barbaro family, his teachers included (as well as <u>Guarino</u>) his own uncle, Francesco <u>Barbaro</u>. His career was spent in papal service: he was sent, for example, to France in 1460 on a diplomatic mission; he was appointed bishop of Treviso in 1443 and transferred to Verona in 1453.

At the age of 12 he translated some Aesop fables into Latin (dedicating them to Ambrogio Traversari). Antonio Beccaria was his secretary in Verona; they both became involved in a literary dispute on the moral merits of the ancient poets (Barbaro being sceptical they had any). Barbaro also produced a *Life of St* 

Athanasius, mainly translated from Eusebius.

# Barbaro, Ermolao (1454-1493)

#### called 'the Younger'

Venetian humanist teacher and classical scholar. Born into the influential Barbaro family, his teachers included (as well as Pomponio Leto and Theodore <u>Gazes</u>) his own uncle, also called Ermolao <u>Barbaro</u>. He lectured in Venice on Aristotle and produced a commentary on Pliny the Elder, *Castigiones Plinianae* (1492-93). He was employed by Venice as a diplomat until he fell into disgrace by accepting Pope Innocent VIII's appointment as patriarch of Aquileia in 1491.

# Barbaro, Francesco (1390-1454)

Venetian politician and humanist author. In his political career, he became the governor of several Venetian territories and led the defence of Brescia against the Milanese army of Niccolò Piccinino. In his youth, however, he had been educated by Gasparino Barzizza and by <u>Guarino</u>, who taught him Greek; he also spent time with the Florentine humanist coterie and dedicated his *De Re Uxoria/On Wifely Matters* (1416) to a leading Florentine, Lorenzo di Giovanni de' Medici. In later years he acted as patron to Flavio Biondo, among others.

# Barbauld, Anna Laetitia (1743-1825)

born Anna Laetitia Aikin

English poet and editor, a sister of John Aikin. She published *Hymns in Prose for Children* (1781), followed by *Evenings at Home* (1796), and edited *Selections from the English Essayists*, *The Letters of Samuel Richardson*, and a 50-volume collection of the British novelists, with an introductory essay, in 1810.

# Barbellion, W(ilhelm) N(ero) P(ilate)

pseudonym of English diarist Bruce Frederick Cummings.

Barbey d'Aurevilly, Jules-Amedée (1808-1889)

French novelist and critic. He was opposed to the realistic trends of the 19th century. Among his novels are *Une vieille Maîtresse/The Old Mistress* (1851), *L'Ensorcelée/The Bewitched Woman* (1854), and *Les Diaboliques* (1874; short stories). His critical writings include *Les Oeuvres et les hommes du XIX<sup>e</sup> siècle/The Works and the Men of the 19th Century* (26 volumes) (1860-1909) and *Le Théâtre contemporain/The Contemporary Theatre* (5 volumes) 1888-96.

### Barbier, Henri-Auguste (1805-1882)

French poet. He was a voluminous writer, mainly of political satire. The work for which he is best known is *lambes* (1831), a series of satirical poems in which he portrays the life of his time in a rugged, forcible style.

Among his other works are II pianto (1833) and Lazare (1837).

# Barbour, John (c. 1320-1395)

Scottish poet. His epic 13,000-line poem *The Brus* (written 1374-75, printed 1571) chronicles the war of Scottish independence and includes a vivid account of Robert Bruce's victory over the English at Bannockburn in 1314. It is among the earliest known works of Scottish poetry.

# Barbu, Ion (1895-1961)

#### pseudonym of Dan Barbilian

Romanian poet, translator, and mathematician. From 1925 his poetic output dealt increasingly in complex metaphors that drew on his extensive mathematical knowledge (he was professor of mathematics at Bucharest from 1929 onwards). His collection *Joc secund/Mirrored Play* appeared in 1930.

Barbu made his debut in Alexandru Macedonski's magazine *Literatorul* (1918). His early poems were modelled on the French 19th-century group *Les<u>Parnassiens</u>*, and between 1920 and 1925 his verse had a Turkish flavour.

# Barbusse, Henri (1873-1935)

French writer. His novel *Le Feu/Under Fire* (1916), based on his experiences in World War I, was awarded the Prix Goncourt in 1917.

Among his other novels are Les Suppliants/The Supplicants (1903), L'Enfer/The

Inferno (1908), and Clarté/Clarity (1918). After the war he joined the Communist Party and was a frequent contributor to the communist daily paper L'Humanité and to Le Monde. His later writings are mainly nonfictional and reflect his political interests.

### Barclay, Alexander (c. 1475-1552)

British poet, probably born in Scotland, although most of his life was spent in England. His *The Shyp of Folys* (1509) is a verse adaptation of Sebastian <u>Brant</u>'s *Das Narrenschiff/The Ship of Fools* (1494), satirizing the social vices of the age.

His other works are five *Egloges* (written about 1514), the earliest English pastorals; *The Myrrour of Good Maners* (1523); and a translation of the Roman historian <u>Sallust's</u>*Jugurtha*, together with other translations.

# Barclay, John (1582-1621)

English satirist. His *Euphormionis Satyricon* 1603-07 is a Latin satire directed against the Jesuits; *Argenis* (1621), a political romance, was also written in Latin.

# Baretti, Giuseppe (1719-1789)

Italian writer and critic. He is noted for his common-sense criticism and attacks on the slovenly use of Italian. He praised Shakespeare at the expense of the French dramatists Molière and Racine, and considered his best work to be the *Discours sur Shakespeare et sur M de Voltaire* 1777.

Baretti was one of the first Italians to earn his living as a professional writer. He ridiculed the Arcadian movement in *La frusta letteraria*, written under the pseudonym of Aristarco Scannabue. In 1757 he went to London, where he met the lexicographer Samuel Johnson. He also published an English-Italian dictionary 1760.

# Barham, Richard Harris (1788-1845)

English writer. He was the author of verse tales of the supernatural and of black comedy. *The Ingoldsby Legends by Thomas Ingoldsby* were collected in book form 1840 and 1847; their high spirits, amazing rhymes, and inexhaustible humour account for their lasting popularity.

### Baring, Maurice (1874-1945)

English writer. His work includes poetical plays, short stories, fairy tales, essays, novels (notably *The Lonely Lady of Dulwich* 1934), translations, and several books about Russian literature.

### Baring-Gould, Sabine (1834-1924)

English writer and cleric. His work includes novels and books of travel, mythology, and folklore; he also wrote the words of the hymn 'Onward, Christian Soldiers'.

### Barker, Clive (1952-)

English writer, film director, screenwriter, and producer. His stories, published as a three-volume set entitled *Books of Blood* (1984-85) are in the sensationalist tradition of horror fiction. He made his debut as a film director with the successful cult horror film *Hellraiser* (1987), which was based on one of his novellas.

Barker went on to produce two sequels to *Hellraiser* (1988, 1992) and the horror film *Candyman* (1992) and its sequel (1995). He wrote and illustrated the children's book *The Thief of Always* (1992).

### Barker, George Granville (1913-1991)

English poet. He is known for his vivid imagery, as in *Calamiterror* (1937), *The True Confessions of George Barker* (1950), *Collected Poems* (1930-50), and the posthumously published *Street Ballads* (1992).

### Barker, Pat(ricia Margaret) (1943-)

English writer. She received critical acclaim for her 'Regeneration' trilogy, an evocative exploration of World War I, comprising *Regeneration* (1991), *The Eye in the Door* (1993; winner of the Guardian Fiction Prize), and *The Ghost Road* (1995; winner of the Booker Prize). Other novels include *Another World* (1997) and *Double Vision* (2003).

### 'Barlaam and Josaphat'

Christian religious romance popular in the Middle Ages. The story has affinities with

the life of Buddha; it also contains an abbreviated version of the *Apology* of the 2ndcentury Greek Christian Aristides, and the story of the caskets used by Shakespeare in *The Merchant of Venice*.

The Greek version has been attributed to St John of Damascus (*c.* 676-*c.* 754), but probably belongs to the previous century. Modern writers have traced an original Sanskrit source from which the Christian version is derived through Manichean channels.

# Barlow, Joel (1754-1812)

US poet and diplomat. A member of the literary circle the 'Connecticut Wits', he published an epic entitled *The Vision of Columbus* (1787), but is particularly remembered for 'Hasty Pudding' (1796), a celebration of an American dessert. As US consul in Algiers 1795-97, he gained the release of American hostages taken by the Barbary pirates operating against US and European shipping. On diplomatic mission to France 1811, he died while accompanying Napoleon in his retreat from Russia 1812.

Born in Redding, Connecticut, USA, Barlow was educated at Yale University. Living as an expatriate in Europe, Barlow was deeply affected by the philosophical ideals of the Enlightenment and was granted citizenship in revolutionary France.

### Barnes, Barnabe (c. 1569-c. 1609)

English poet and dramatist. Persuaded to write (if Thomas Nashe is to be believed) by Gabriel <u>Harvey</u>, he produced a collection of sonnets, elegies, odes, and madrigals entitled *Parthenophil and Parthenophe* (1593), and *A Divine Century of Spiritual Sonnets* (1595). His tragedy *The Devil's Charter* was printed in 1607 and performed before James I.

### Barnes, Djuna Chappell (1892-1982)

US writer. Her most celebrated novel was *Nightwood* 1936, a dark and idiosyncratic study of decadence. She lived in Paris from the 1920s and her work was much influenced by European surrealism. She was also the author of short stories, plays, poems, essays, and portraits.

### Barnes, Julian (Patrick) (1946-)

English novelist and critic. His first novel, Metroland, was published in 1981,

followed by *Before She Met Me* in 1982. It was his third novel, *Flaubert's Parrot* (1984) - skilfully combining fiction, biography, and essay - that brought him an international reputation, winning the French *Prix Medicis Etrangère* (the first British book to do so). Later works include *The Porcupine* (1992), a political parable, *Cross Channel* (1996), a collection of stories about the British in France, *England, England* (1998), a futuristic comedy (shortlisted for the Booker Prize in 1998), and *Love, Etc* (2000), a novel.

His work is characterized by a distinctive blend of irony, intellectual playfulness and a subtle, tightly controlled style. He has also published detective novels under the name Dan Kavanagh.

His other works include the novels *Staring at the Sun* (1986), *A History of the World in 101/2 Chapters* (1989), and *Talking It Over* (1991). He has also worked as a journalist and critic, notably for the *Times Literary Supplement*; *Letters from London 1990-1995* (1995) is a collection of articles written as London correspondent of the *New Yorker*.

### Barnes, William (1801-1886)

English poet, critic, and philologist. He published volumes of poetry in the Dorset dialect, admired for its charm, linguistic interest, and metrical innovation. Among his works are *Poems of Rural Life in the Dorset Dialect* (1844), *Hwomely Rhymes* (1859), and *Poems of Rural Life in Common English* (1868).

# Barnfield, Richard (1574-1627)

English poet. His works include *The Affectionate Shepherd* (1594), a pastoral based on the Roman poet Virgil's second eclogue; *Cynthia, with certaine Sonnets and the Legend of Cassandra* (1595); and *The Encomion of Lady Pecunia and other poems* (1598).

The latter contains two of his best-known songs: 'As it fell upon a day' and 'If music and sweet poetry agree'. These were reprinted in *The Passionate Pilgrim* (1599), and for many years were attributed to Shakespeare, whom Barnfield seems to have known.

# Baroja, Pio (1872-1956)

Spanish novelist of Basque extraction. His works include a trilogy dealing with the Madrid underworld, *La lucha por la vida/The Struggle for Life* (1904-05), and the multivolume *Memorias de un hombre de acción/Memoirs of a Man of Action* (1913-28). His severe attitude to life is best seen in *El árbol de la ciencia/The Tree of Knowledge* (1911), based on the story of his youth.

# Barrès, (Auguste-)Maurice (1862-1923)

French writer and nationalist activist. In a trilogy of novels collectively entitled *Le Culte du moi/The Cult of the Ego* (1888-91) he expounded an individualistic philosophy, the need to cultivate all aspects of a personality. He emerged as a champion of regionalism and nationalism in his second trilogy of novels, *Le Roman de l'énergie nationale/The Novel of National Energy* (1897-1902).

Nationalism, particularly French nationalism in the context of German-occupied Alsace-Lorraine, was also the theme of his novels *Au Service de l'Allemagne/In the Service of Germany* (1905) and *Colette Baudoche* (1909), to which he gave the collective title *Les Bastions de l'Est/Bastions of the East*.

# Barrett Browning, Elizabeth

English poet; see Browning, Elizabeth Barrett.

# Barrington, Jonah (c. 1760-1834)

Irish lawyer and historian, best remembered for *Personal Sketches of His Own Times* (3 volumes, 1827-32) containing comical historical portraits of political and legal figures. Born at Knapton in County Laois, Barrington was educated at Trinity College, Dublin. He was called to the bar in 1788, became Admiralty Court judge in 1798, and was knighted in 1807. In 1830, after he was removed from office for embezzlement, he lived in exile, where he wrote *The Rise and Fall of the Irish Nation* (1833). He died in France, having fled there in 1815 to escape creditors.

# Barry, Sebastian (1955-)

Irish novelist, poet, and dramatist, born in Dublin and educated at Trinity College, Dublin. His material is set in Ireland and the USA and deals with themes of isolation and abandonment against the backdrop of recent history. Barry's novels include *Macker's Garden* (1982), *The Engine by OwI-Light* (1987), and *The Whereabouts of Eneas McNulty* (1998), while his poems include the collections *The Water-Colourist* (1983) and *The Rhetorical Town* (1985). His plays include *Boss Grady's Boys* (1988), *The Steward of Christendom* (1995), and *Hinterland* (2002). English novelist. His realist novels describe northern working-class life and include *A Kind of Loving* (1960) (filmed in 1962), a first-person, present-tense narrative of a young man trapped into marriage. He ranks with John <u>Braine</u>, Alan Sillitoe, David Storey, and Keith Waterhouse as a contributor to the modern regional novel.

His other novels include *A Raging Calm* (1968), *B Movie* (1987), and *Next of Kin* (1991). He also wrote television dramas, including *Joby* (1976) and *The Man Who Cried* (1993), and many radio plays for the BBC, including *The Desperadoes* (1964), *We Could Always Fit a Sidecar* (1974), and *Foreign Parts* (1990). His autobiography, *In My Own Good Time*, was published in 2001.

# Bartas, Guillaume de Saluste du (1544-1590)

French poet. His religious poem *La Semaine, ou Création du monde/The Week, or Creation of the World* (1578), an epic on the Creation, probably inspired by the Italian poet Torquato Tasso's *Sette giornate/Seven Days*, soon went through at least 25 editions and was translated into 6 languages. His *La Seconde Semaine/The Second Week* (1584-1603) was unfinished.

Bartas was a Huguenot and served Henry IV at court and as a soldier. He died from wounds received at the Battle of Ivry.

Barth, John Simmons (1930-)

US novelist and short-story writer. He was influential in the 'academic' experimental movement of the 1960s. His works, typically encyclopedic in scale, are usually interwoven fictions based on language games, his principal concerns being the nature of narrative and the relationship of language to reality. His novels include *The Sot-Weed Factor* (1960), *Giles Goat-Boy* (1966), *Chimera* (1972), which won the National Book Award, *Letters* (1979), *Sabbatical: A Romance* (1982), *The Last Voyage of Somebody the Sailor* (1991), and *Coming Soon!!!* (2001).

# Barthelme, Donald (1931-1989)

US writer. His innovative short stories, often first published in the *New Yorker* magazine, display a minimalist economy and a playful sense of the absurd and irrational, as in the collection *Sixty Stories* (1981). He also wrote the novellas *Snow White* (1967), *The Dead Father* (1975), *Paradise* (1986), and *The King* (1991). Barthelme's works have been seen as model texts for literary criticism based on Deconstruction.

# Barthes, Roland (1915-1980)

French critic and theorist of semiology, the science of signs and symbols. One of the French 'new critics' and an exponent of structuralism, he attacked traditional literary criticism in his first collection of essays, *Le Degré zéro de l'écriture/Writing Degree Zero* (1953).

Barthes's main aim was to expose the bourgeois values and ideology he saw as implicit in the seemingly 'natural' and innocent language of French literature. For Barthes, a text was not a depiction of the world or the expression of an author's personality, but a system of signs in which meanings are generated solely by the interplay of these signs.

In *Mythologies* (1957) he used this structuralist approach to the study of signs in everyday life, looking at such things as toys, advertisements, and wrestling. This and similar studies had a profound influence on the study of popular culture.

# Bartlett, John (1820-1905)

US bookseller. He compiled *Bartlett's Familiar Quotations* (1855) and published his authoritative *Concordance to Shakespeare* (1894).

He was the owner of the University Book Store in Cambridge, Massachusetts, for many years; after the Civil War he worked for the New York publisher Little, Brown, of which he became a senior partner in 1878.

### Bartoli, Adolfo (1833-1894)

Italian writer. He published editions of old Italian texts and catalogues of manuscripts, as well as a seven-volume critical history of Italian literature from the 14th century, *Storia della letteratura italiana* (1878-89).

# Bartoli, Daniello (1608-1685)

Italian writer and Jesuit monk. His main work is his *Istoria della Compagnia di Gesù/ History of the Society of Jesus* (1650-73), though his writings also include moral, apologetic, scientific, and linguistic studies.

#### Barudi, Mahmud Sami al- (1839-1904)

Egyptian nationalist activist and poet. He was a leading figure of the modern Arabic

literary renaissance. Much of his work was modelled on classical Abbasid poetry, of which he compiled an important anthology. His own verse was published posthumously in two volumes.

Barudi was a fervent nationalist; his participation in an unsuccessful revolt in 1882 against British rule in Egypt led to 17 years' exile in Ceylon (now Sri Lanka). During his enforced absence from Egypt, he wrote nostalgically of his homeland.

### Bashkirtseff, Marie (1860-1884)

Russian diarist and painter. Her intimate diaries, written in French from the age of 13, were cited by the French feminist Simone de Beauvoir as the archetypal example of 'self-centred female narcissism', but also revealed the discovery by the female of her independent existence. She died of tuberculosis at 24.

# Basho (1644-1694)

#### pen-name of Matsuo Munefusa

Japanese poet. He was a master of the **haiku**, a 17-syllable poetic form with lines of 5, 7, and 5 syllables, which he infused with subtle allusiveness. His *Oku-no-hosomichi/The Narrow Road to the Deep North* (1694), an account of a visit to northern and western Honshu, consists of haiku interspersed with prose passages.

# Bassus Caesius (lived 1st century)

Roman lyric poet of Nero's reign. He was a friend of Perseus, whose works he edited and whose sixth satire is addressed to him. Fragments of his works survive, and he is generally identified as the author of a partially extant treatise, *De Metris*. Bassus is said to have perished in the eruption of Vesuvius AD 79.

# Bataille, Georges (1897-1962)

French journalist, economist, poet, and prose writer. His fiction includes *Madame Edwarda* (1937), *L'Abbé C* (1950), *Le Bleu du ciel/Blue of Noon* (1957), and *Ma Mère/ My Mother* (1966). He also produced essays on art, texts about aesthetics and writing, and books of philosophical meditation.

Bataille was influential as a writer and as editor of the monthly journal *Critique*, which he edited from 1946 until his death.

# Bataille, Henri (1872-1922)

French writer. Apart from two volumes of poetry - *La Chambre blanche/The White Chamber* (1895) and *Le beau Voyage/The Beautiful Trip* (1905) - he wrote for the theatre. Among his plays, which enjoyed great popular success, are *Maman Colibri/ Mother Hummingbird* (1904), *La Marche nuptiale/The Wedding March* (1905), and *La Chair humaine/Human Flesh* (1922).

# Bates, H(erbert) E(rnest) (1905-1974)

English writer. Of his many novels and short stories, *The Jacaranda Tree* (1949) and *The Darling Buds of May* (1958) particularly demonstrate the fineness of his natural observation and compassionate portrayal of character. His work captures the feeling of life in the changing countryside of England in a simple, direct manner.

Bates was born in Rushden, Northamptonshire, and educated at Kettering Grammar School. He worked as a reporter and warehouse clerk before publishing *The Two Sisters* at the age of 21. From that time he published almost one book a year; in all about 30 novels and as many volumes of short stories. *Fair Stood the Wind for France* (1944) was based on his experience as a squadron leader in World War II, during which time he also wrote stories under the pseudonym Flying Officer X. His five novels featuring the Larkin family began with *The Darling Buds of May*, which was followed by *A Breath of French Air* (1959), *When the Green Woods Laugh* (1960), *Oh! To be in England* (1963), and *A Little of What You Fancy* (1970). The novels were filmed as a television series in the 1990s.

# Bates, Katherine Lee (1859-1929)

US poet. She is best known for her patriotic poem 'America the Beautiful' (1895). Her *Selected Poems* appeared in 1930.

# Baudelaire, Charles Pierre (1821-1867)

French poet. His immensely influential work combined rhythmical and musical perfection with a morbid romanticism and eroticism, finding beauty in decadence and evil. His first and best-known book of verse was *Les Fleurs du mal/<u>Flowers of</u> <u>Evil</u> (1857). He was one of the main figures in the development of Symbolism.* 

Baum, L(yman) Frank (1856-1919)

US writer. He was the author of the children's fantasy *The Wonderful Wizard of Oz* (1900) and its 13 sequels.

The series was continued by another author after his death. The film *The Wizard of Oz* (1939) with Judy Garland became a US classic.

### Bawden, Nina Mary (1925-)

English writer. Her novels, which focus on the lives of the middle classes, include *Who Calls the Tune* (1953), *Circles of Deceit* (1987), and *Family Money* (1991). Among her books for children are *The Witch's Daughter* (1966), *Carrie's War* (1973), the story of a child being evacuated to Wales during World War II, *Keeping Henry* (1988), and *The Real Plato Jones* (1994).

# Baxter, James Keir (1926-1972)

New Zealand critic and poet. Together with Louis Johnson, he founded and edited the magazine *Numbers* 1954-60. His criticism was collected in *The Fire and the Anvil* (1955), *The Man on the Horse* (1968), and the influential *Aspects of Poetry in New Zealand* (1969). His verse collection *Runes* appeared posthumously in 1973.

# Bay Psalm Book

Puritan rendering of the psalms into metre, printed in 1640; it is considered the first work of American literature.

Written by Richard Mather, John Eliot, and 28 other ministers of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, it was published by Stephen Day in Cambridge, Massachusetts, in an edition of 1,700 copies.

# Bazin, René-François-Nicolas-Marie (1853-1932)

French writer. His novels are usually set in a provincial (often peasant) environment, such as Brittany, Alsace, or Burgundy. He is noted as a stylist, using the French language with precision and elegance.

His novels include *De toute son âme/Redemption* (1897), *La Terre qui meurt/ Autumn Glory* (1899), *Les Oberlé/The Children of Alsace* (1901), *Le Blé qui lève/The Coming Harvest* (1907), and *Magnificat* (1931).

### Beach, Moses Yale (1800-1868)

US publisher and inventor. Beach's inventions include rag-cutting machinery that esaed the process of paper-making. He bought the *New York Sun* in 1838 and was its editor until 1848.

# Beach, Rex Ellingwood (1877-1949)

US novelist. His Alaskan adventure novels include *Pardners* (1905), *The Spoilers* (1906), *The Silver Horde* (1909), and *The Iron Trail* (1913).

# Beach, Sylvia Woodbridge (1887-1962)

US bookseller and publisher. In 1919 Woodbridge established the Shakespeare and Company bookshop in Paris, which became an avant-garde publishing house and mecca for American expatriates. In 1922 she published the first edition of James Joyce's *Ulysses*, which had been rejected by other publishers as pornographic. She never reopened the shop but she was widely honoured for her support of Joyce and other authors.

# Beadle, Erastus Flavel (1821-1894)

US publisher. He was a co-publisher of cheap and popular <u>dime novels</u>, bringing literature to the masses and fostering the myth of the US frontier.

### **Beat Generation**

#### or Beat movement

US social and literary movement of the 1950s and early 1960s. Members of the Beat Generation, called **beatniks**, responded to the conformist materialism of the period by adopting lifestyles derived from Henry David Thoreau's social disobedience and Walt Whitman's poetry of the open road. The most influential writers were Jack Kerouac (who is credited with coining the term), Allen <u>Ginsberg</u>, and William <u>Burroughs</u>.

Other cultural reference points were contemporary jazz, Buddhist philosophy, and the use of psychotropic drugs to heighten experience and affirm their antiauthoritarian stance. The movement had no shared artistic credo beyond breaking the current literary orthodoxy, and its definition was largely historical. Most representative and influential were Kerouac's novel <u>On the Road</u> 1957 and Ginsberg's poem *Howl* (1956), which used less conventionally structured forms alternately to celebrate the 'beatific' spirit of Beat and to indict the repressiveness of modern society. Other prominent literary figures were poet and publisher Lawrence Ferlinghetti, poet Gregory Corso, and novelist John Clellon Holmes.

# Beattie, James (1735-1803)

Scottish poet and philosopher. His 'Essay on Truth' 1770, written to disprove the empiricism of philosopher David Hume, was praised by the lexicographer Samuel Johnson in his zeal for Christianity. In 1771-74 Beattie published *The Minstrel*, the poem for which alone he is remembered, containing some beautiful descriptive passages.

# 'Beauty and the Beast'

European folk tale. A traveller receives mysterious overnight hospitality in a woodland palace, meeting the benevolent owner, a hideous creature, the following morning. The Beast, furious at the theft of a rose by the traveller, agrees to forgive him on condition that the traveller's daughter, Beauty, comes willingly to live with him in the palace. Beauty consents and grows to love the Beast for his gentle character, finally breaking the spell of his hideous appearance by agreeing to marry him. The story first appeared in English in 1757 in a translation from the French version of Madame de Beaumont.

# Beauvoir, Simone de (1908-1986)

French socialist, feminist, and writer. She played a large role in French intellectual life from the 1940s to the 1980s. Her book *Le Deuxième Sexe/The Second Sex* (1949), one of the first major feminist texts, is an encyclopedic study of the role of women in society, drawing on literature, myth, and history. In this work she argues that the subservient position of women is the result of their systematic repression by a male-dominated society that denies their independence, identity, and sexuality.

She also published novels, including *Les Mandarins/The Mandarins* (1954; winner of the Prix Goncourt), and many autobiographical volumes. She taught philosophy at the University of Paris 1931-43 and was a lifelong companion of the philosopher Jean-Paul <u>Sartre</u>; *La Cérémonie des Adieux/Adieux: A Farewell to Sartre* (1981) gives an intimate insight into their relationship.

# Beccadelli, Antonio (1394-1471)

#### called 'll Panormita'

Italian poet. He came to fame in 1425 when he published his collection of Latin poems *Hermaphroditus*. Containing poets that explicitly avowed homosexual love, the book was condemned by the Church and copies publicly burnt, though he was widely admired by scholars and patrons and found work at the courts of Pavia and Naples.

### Beccaria, Antonio (c. 1400-1474)

Italian humanist translator. He travelled to England and was appointed secretary to Humphrey, Duke of Gloucester, in about 1438. He translated works by Plutarch and Athanasius into Latin, as well as a tale by Boccaccio. He also acted as a royal orator in England. He returned to Italy about 1446 and entered the service of Ermolao Barbaro, bishop of Verona.

# Becher, Johannes R (1891-1958)

German expressionist poet. His revolutionary antiwar sentiments were embodied in his exuberant early verse, which includes *Verfall und Triumph/Decline and Triumph* (1911-14) and *An Europa/To Europe* (1916). His work was characterized by apocalyptic images and telegrammatic exclamation.

At the end of World War I, Becher took part in the failed left-wing Spartacist revolt in Berlin. He joined the Communist Party, and was forced into exile when the Nazis came to power. He returned from the USSR in 1945 and settled in East Germany, where he was appointed minister for culture in 1954. Becher's later work, which was more conventional in tone, includes *Heimkehr/Homecoming* (1946), *Nationalhymne der DDR/National Anthem of the GDR* (1949), *Liebe ohne Ruh/Love without Rest* 1957, and *Du bist für alle Zeit geliebt/You Are Loved for All Time* (1960).

# Beckford, William (Thomas) (1759-1844)

English writer and eccentric. At 21 he inherited the family fortune. He wrote, originally in French, *Vathek* 1787, a fantastic Arabian Nights tale. Although frequently abroad (he wrote perceptively about his travels), he was several times elected to Parliament. In 1796 he had the family seat of Fonthill Abbey, Wiltshire, rebuilt by James Wyatt as a Gothic fantasy, and lived there until retiring to Bath 1822.

# Beddoes, Thomas Lovell (1803-1849)

English poet and dramatist. His unfinished revenge drama *Death's Jest Book*, begun 1825 and frequently revised, was published 1850. Many of his lyrical poems, such as 'If there were dreams to sell', are justly admired.

# Bedny, Demian (1883-1945)

#### pseudonym of Yesfim Alekseevich Pridvorov

Soviet poet and propagandist. He was a member of the Bolshevik party from 1912. His simple verses, in the form of pithy slogans and satirical attacks on class enemies, were very popular during the Civil War and in the 1920s. Bedny came to be regarded as the unofficial poet laureate of the revolution by Lenin and Trotsky, although his opera libretto *Bogatyri/The Warriors* 1936 was criticized.

# Beecher, Harriet

unmarried name of US author Harriet Beecher Stowe who wrote Uncle Tom's Cabin.

# Beeding, Francis

pseudonym adopted jointly by Hilary <u>Saunders</u> and John Leslie Palmer (1885-1944) as co-authors of thrillers. Their best known work is *The House of Dr Edwardes* (1927), the basis for Alfred Hitchcock's acclaimed film *Spellbound* (1945).

### Beer, Patricia (1924-1999)

English writer, best known as a poet. Her work appears to deal with simple material in a simple manner, but with such precision and sensitivity that it is rarely dull or commonplace. Her later work is more innovative technically, using freer syntax and experimental rhythms.

Her verse includes *Loss of the Magyar* (1959), *The Survivors* (1963), and *The Estuary* (1971). She published an autobiography, *Mrs Beer's House* (1968), and a penetrating study of women writers of the 19th century, *Reader, I Married Him* (1974).

Beerbohm, (Henry) Max(imilian) (1872-1956)

English caricaturist and author. A perfectionist in style, he contributed to *The Yellow Book* (1894); wrote a novel of Oxford undergraduate life, *Zuleika Dobson* (1911); and published volumes of caricature, including *Rossetti and His Circle* (1922). He succeeded George Bernard Shaw as critic to the *Saturday Review* in 1898.

### Beets, Nikolaas (1814-1903)

Dutch poet and writer. His collection of humorous sketches *Camera Obscura* (1839) was first published under the pseudonym Hildebrand. He also wrote critical essays, the best of which are contained in 'Verscheidenheden meest op letterkundig gebied/ Diverse Writings Mainly on Literature' (1859). His poetry was published in four volumes 1873-81.

# Behan, Brendan Francis (1923-1964)

Irish writer and dramatist, born in Dublin and educated by the Christian Brothers until the age of 14. Behan's extended family included many talented musicians and writers as well as Republican activists. An important figure of both controversy and literary brilliance, Behan is best known for his autobiography *Borstal Boy* (1958), based on his experiences of prison and knowledge of the workings of the IRA. These themes are revisited in his play *The Quare Fellow* (1954), and tragicomedy *The Hostage* (1958), first written in Gaelic as *An Giall*. Behan's other output included poetry in Gaelic, radio plays, and some late volumes of reminiscence and anecdote, notably *Brendan Behan's New York* (1964).

Behan's plays are imbued with black humour and a grim realism; it was largely Joan Littlewood's adaptation of *The Hostage* for the London stage which imparted to it a strong music-hall sensibility, which includes song and dance. After living a hard life of drinking and being a famous figure of the Dublin literary and pub scene, Behan died young and, many believe, before his best work could be produced.

# Behn, Aphra (1640-1689)

English novelist and dramatist. She was the first woman in England to earn her living as a writer. Her works were criticized for their explicitness; they frequently present events from a woman's point of view. Her novel *Oroonoko* (1688), based on her visit to Suriname, is an attack on slavery.

Between 1670 and 1687 fifteen of her plays were produced, including *The Forced Marriage* (1670) and *The Rover* (1677). As in *The Lucky Chance* (1686), condemnation of forced and mercenary marriages was a recurring theme in her work. She had the patronage of James I and was employed as a government spy in Holland in 1666.

# Beith, John Hay

real name of lan Hay, English novelist.

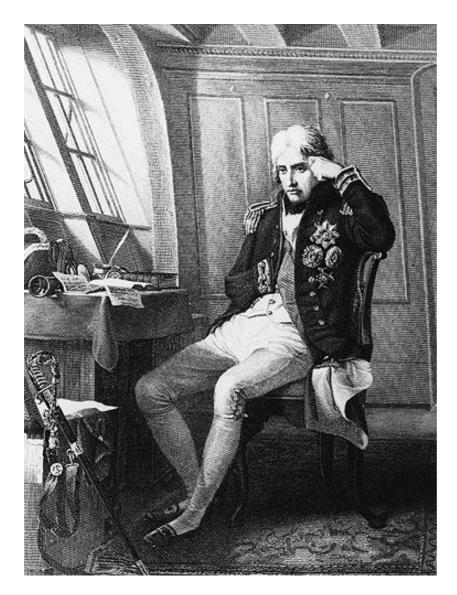
# Bekker, Elizabeth (1738-1804)

Dutch poet and novelist. She showed vivacity and independent wit in her *Economische liedjes/Economic Ditties* 1780. The epistolary novel *Sara Burgerhart* (1782) was modelled on the work of the English novelist Samuel <u>Richardson</u>. It was followed by the eight-volume *Willem Levend* (1785).

# **Belgian literature**

there are three literary traditions in the area now called Belgium: Flemish, French, and Walloon. For the Flemish tradition see <u>Flemish literature</u>. The French includes the 12th-century novella *Aucassin et Nicolette*, the literature associated with the 15th-century Burgundian court, 19th-century naturalists, aesthetes, and Symbolists (notably Emile Verhaeren (1855-1916)), and internationally known writers as different as the dramatist Maurice <u>Maeterlinck</u> and the crime novelist Georges <u>Simenon</u>. Local dialects of Latin and French in the Walloon provinces gave rise to a distinctive vernacular literature, mainly poetic and dramatic, dating back to the 12th century but centred on Liège from the 17th century.

#### Nelson



#### (Image © Billie Love)

The English admiral Horatio Nelson, on board his flagship *Victory* before the Battle of Trafalgar, in 1805. Nelson's successes at sea during the Napoleonic Wars made him a national hero, but he is best remembered for his defeat of a combined French and Spanish fleet at Cape Trafalgar which ended Napoleon's campaign to invade Britain. He was mortally wounded in the conflict.

# Belinski, Vissarion Grigorievich (1811-1848)

Russian literary critic and journalist. He was one of the leaders of the Westernists and a representative of a new generation of radical intelligentsia in Russia. He founded the sociological ('critical realist') school of literary criticism, which was dominant in Russia until the end of the 19th century and was to form the basis for socialist realism in the USSR.

Belinski was influenced by German idealist philosophy, and hailed the realist approach of such Russian writers as Nicolai Gogol, Mikhail Lermontov, and the young

Fyodor Dostoevsky. He was popularly known as 'frenzied Belinski', as a result of his radical views and passionate rhetoric in voicing them. This is epitomized by his 'Letter to Gogol' in 1847, in which he criticizes a new book by the writer for its conservative and pietistic tone. His *Selected Philosophical Works* appeared in 1956.

### Bell, John Joy (1871-1934)

Scottish novelist. His *Wee MacGreegor* (1902), humorous sketches in Glasgow dialect, sold 250,000 copies and was followed by *Mistress McLeerie* (1903), *Wee MacGreegor Again* (1904), *Oh Christina* (1909), and *Wee MacGreegor Enlists* (1915).

# Bell, Sam Hanna (1909-1990)

Scottish-born writer and broadcaster. Bell moved to Strangford Lough, County Down, Northern Ireland, as a child and then to Belfast in 1921. Opposed to traditional Unionism, he co-founded the socialist journal *Lagan* (1943) with the Belfast playwright John Boyd (1912-) and Bob Davison. He worked extensively with BBC Northern Ireland as a documentary script writer and producer. Much of Bell's radio work dealt with folklore and folk music, and he also wrote about Ulster culture. His short stories and novels include *December Bride* (1951), subsequently made into a film; and *Across the Narrow Sea* (1987), a study of the effects of plantation in 17th-century Ulster.

# Bellamy, Edward (1850-1898)

US author and social critic. His utopian novel *Looking Backward: 2000-1887* (1888), was a huge best-seller and inspired wide public support for his political programme of state socialism. He published a second utopian novel, *Equality* (1897).

Born in Chicopee Falls, Massachusetts, Bellamy wrote for the *New York Post* and the *Springfield Union*. He founded the Springfield *Daily News* in 1880 and later the *New Nation* but eventually, deeply concerned with the social problems of the day, he abandoned journalism to become a full-time author.

# Belleau, Rémy (c. 1528-1577)

French poet, a member of the <u>Pléiade</u> group. The poems in Amours et nouveaux eschanges des pierres précieuses/Love Poems and New Exchanges of Precious Stones (1576) describe the properties of precious stones. Belleau's chief work is La Bergerie/ Pastorale (1565), a prose and verse pastoral; it includes the poem 'Avril/April'.

# Belleforest, François de (1530-1583)

French author and courtier. His *Histoires Tragiques/Tragic Stories* (1559-82) is a collection of tales, most of them translations from the Italian collection *Novelle/Tales* (1554) by the Italian writer Matteo <u>Bandello</u>. He also drew from other sources, notably 12th-century Danish writer <u>Saxo Grammaticus</u>, from whom he took the story of Hamlet.

There is good reason to believe that Shakespeare took several of his plots and incidents from Belleforest's book - notably elements of the plays *Hamlet*, *Much Ado About Nothing*, and *Twelfth Night*. A number of Belleforest's stories were translated as early as 1566 by the English writer Geoffrey Fenton as *Certaine Tragicall Discourses*.

# Belli, Giuseppe Giocchomo (1791-1863)

Italian poet. He wrote more than 2,000 sonnets in the Roman dialect which provide a brilliantly observed satiric account of early 19th-century papal Rome.

# Bellman, Carl Michael (1740-1795)

Swedish songwriter and poet. His reputation rests on his lyrics, which he set to music, especially *Fredmans Epistlar/Epistles of Fredman* and *Fredmans Sånger/Songs of Fredman*, mostly written 1768-74. These give a vivid picture of Stockholm, often peopled by rogues and drunkards.

Realism is combined with humour and a supreme technical skill, making Bellman one of the few Swedish poets of universal importance. Lyrical descriptions of nature jostle with tavern scenes, his mood veering rapidly from exuberance to fear of death.

# Bello, Andrés (1781-1865)

Venezuelan poet and polymath. Regarded as the intellectual father of Latin America, a friend and teacher of the patriot Simón Bolívar, he translated the Romantics Byron and Hugo but defended Neoclassicism in literature. He celebrated the flora of tropical America in the widely read Virgilian stanzas *Silvas a la agricultura de la zona tórrida/Agriculture in the Tropics* (1826), part of an unfinished epic *América*. In the service of the new republic of Chile he was an enormously influential educational and legal reformer; he also published an important grammar of the Spanish language in 1847 which is still in use.

# Belloc, (Joseph) Hilaire (René Pierre) (1870-1953)

French-born British writer. He wrote nonsense verse for children, including *The Bad Child's Book of Beasts* (1896) and *Cautionary Tales for Children* (1907). Belloc also wrote historical, biographical, travel, and religious books (he was a devout Catholic). With G K <u>Chesterton</u>, he advocated a return to the late medieval guild system of commercial association in place of capitalism or socialism.

# Belloc Lowndes, Marie Adelaide (1868-1947)

English novelist, the sister of Hilaire <u>Belloc</u>. She established her reputation as a teller of stories combining exciting incident with psychological interest; among them are *Barbara Rebell* (1905) and *The Lodger* (1913).

# Bellow, Saul (1915-2005)

Canadian-born US novelist. From his first novel, *Dangling Man* (1944), Bellow typically set his naturalistic narratives in Chicago and made his central character an anxious, Jewish-American intellectual. Other works, known for their skilled characterization, include *The Adventures of Augie March* (1953), <u>Herzog</u> (1964), *Mr Sammler's Planet* (1970), and *Humboldt's Gift* (1975). He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1976.

In *The Adventures of Augie March* and *Henderson the Rain King* (1959), he created confident and comic picaresque heroes, while *Herzog* pitches a comic but distressed scholar into a world of darkening humanism. Later works, developing Bellow's depiction of an age of urban disorder and indifference, include *The Dean's December* (1982), *More Die of Heartbreak* (1987), and the novella *A Theft* (1989). Other works include *Him with His Foot in His Mouth* (1984), *Something to Remember Me By* (1992), *The Actual* (1997), and *Ravelstein* (2000). He won the National Book Award in 1954, 1965, and 1971, and the Pulitzer Prize in 1976.

# Bely, Andrei (1880-1934)

#### pseudonym of Boris Nikolaevich Bugaev

Russian poet, novelist, literary theorist, and leader of the younger Symbolists (see <u>Symbolism</u>). Bely's intense awareness of a spiritual dimension to existence led him to embrace several mystical philosophies, including millenarianism and theosophy. His metaphysical questionings are clear in the recurring theme of a tension between inner experience and social reality in his poetry, and also dictated its convoluted,

ornamental style. His works include the novel *Peterburg/Petersburg* (1913-14) and *Zoloto v lazure/Gold in Azure* (1904; poems).

Bely wrote a sequence of four novels modelled on musical structures, *Simfonii/ Symphonies* 1899-1908. His application of musical theory to literature and his use of neologisms (new words and expressions) make his work arcane and inaccessible, yet he exerted a considerable influence on prose style in the 1920s.

# Bembo, Pietro (1470-1547)

Italian scholar, poet, and humanist. He was secretary to Pope Leo X 1513-21 and later official historian of Venice. As a scholar he edited the works of <u>Petrarch</u> and Dante, and played an important role in the development of Italian by suggesting that the works of Petrarch and <u>Boccaccio</u> should be used as models. His literary reputation was established by his *Gli Asolani/The People of Asolani* (1505), a set of dialogues on love dedicated to Lucrezia Borgia.

Bembo was an important figure in the revival of vernacular poetry, and started a vogue for imitations of Petrarch. He showed a much greater sensitivity to form than did those humanists who concentrated on classical literature. His *Prose della volgar lingua/Prose in the Vernacular* (1525), in which he cites Petrarch and Boccaccio as models for a vernacular suitable both for literature and for practical discourse, was the first critical history of Italian literature since Dante.

He was also a leading member of the sceptical group of writers and intellectuals that flourished around Leo X, and was patron of the free-thinking philosopher Pietro Pomponazzi.

# Bemelmans, Ludwig (1898-1962)

Austrian-born writer and illustrator. Bemelmans emigrated to New York City in 1914 and worked at various occupations. He wrote for periodicals, and became famous for his children's books, such as *Madeline* (1939), which he illustrated as well as wrote.

# Benchley, Robert Charles (1889-1945)

US humorist, actor, and drama critic. His books include *Of All Things* (1921) and *Benchley Beside Himself* (1943). His film skit *How to Sleep* illustrates his ability to extract humour from everyday life.

# Benda, Julien (1867-1956)

French writer and philosopher. He was an outspoken opponent of the philosophy of Henri <u>Bergson</u>, and in 1927 published a manifesto on the necessity of devotion to the absolute truth, which he felt his contemporaries had betrayed, *La Trahison des clercs/The Treason of the Intellectuals*.

# Benét, Stephen Vincent (1898-1943)

US poet, novelist, and short-story writer. He won a Pulitzer Prize in 1929 for his narrative poem of the Civil War, *John Brown's Body* (1928). One of his short stories, 'The Devil and Daniel Webster', became a classic and was made into a play, an opera, and a film (*All That Money Can Buy*; 1941). He published more than 17 volumes of verse and prose.

# Benivieni, Girolamo (1453-1542)

Italian poet and humanist. One of the many writers who enjoyed the patronage of Lorenzo de' Medici, he became known for his long poem *Canzone d'amore/Song of Love* (*c.* 1487), an adaptation of Plato's *Symposium*. Later he came under the influence of the religious leader Savonarola and wrote religious poetry.

# Benn, Gottfried (1886-1956)

German lyric poet and writer. Experience as a military physician during World War I encouraged a cynically pessimistic emphasis on human degeneracy and physical decay in his early collections such as *Morgue* and *Fleisch/Flesh*, (both 1917). His autobiography *Doppelleben/Double Life* (1950) describes a gradual mellowing into pragmatism.

# Bennett, (Enoch) Arnold (1867-1931)

English novelist, playwright, and journalist. His major works are set in the industrial 'five towns' of the Potteries in Staffordshire (now Stoke-on-Trent) and are concerned with the manner in which the environment dictates the pattern of his characters' lives. They include *Anna of the Five Towns* (1902), *The Old Wives' Tale* (1908), and the trilogy *Clayhanger*, *Hilda Lessways*, and *These Twain* (1910-15).

Bennett often describes working-class life in great detail but rarely offers any comments or judgements on it. He also wrote a number of successful plays including *Milestones* (with Edward Knoblock; 1912).

### Bennett, James Gordon (1795-1872)

Scottish-born journalist and newspaper publisher. In 1835, with \$500 capital, Bennett launched the *New York Herald*, a daily paper aimed at a mass audience. Unlike other newspapers, the *Herald* had no political allegiance, and its coverage extended to sports and fashion, as well as to business and finance. Bennett also featured sensational stories and made heavy use of. By the 1860s the *Herald* was the city's most popular paper, but not its most prestigious.

# Benoit de Sainte-Maure (lived c. 1155-75)

#### or Sainte-More

French poet. His *Roman de Troie/Romance of Troy*, a poem of 30,000 octosyllabic lines, is important both in the history of courtly <u>romance</u> and for its part in popularizing the story of Troy during the Middle Ages.

### Benson, Arthur Christopher (1862-1925)

English poet and essayist. He published studies of Archbishop William Laud (1887), the Pre-Raphaelite Dante Gabriel Rossetti (1904), and the critic Walter Pater (1906), among others, as well as several works of fiction and some poetry. He also wrote the words of the patriotic song 'Land of Hope and Glory', for which Edward Elgar composed the music.

He was the eldest son of Edward White Benson.

# Benson, E(dward) F(rederic) (1867-1940)

English writer. He specialized in novels gently satirizing the foibles of upper-middleclass society, and wrote a series of books featuring the formidable female antagonists Mapp and Lucia, including *Mapp and Lucia* (1931). He was a son of Edward White Benson.

# Benson, Robert Hugh (1871-1914)

English writer, son of the cleric Edward White Benson. He wrote both novels and religious works, although most of his later works of fiction are vehicles for Catholic

propaganda. His poems were published shortly after his death.

His works include *The Light Invisible* (1903), *By What Authority* (1904), *The King's Achievement* (1905), *The Queen's Tragedy* (1905), *Lord of the World* (1907), *The Conventionalists* (1908), and *The Dawn of All* (1911).

### Benson, Stella (1892-1933)

English novelist. Her works include *I Pose* (1915), *This is the End* (1917), *Living Alone* (1919), *Goodbye, Stranger* (1926), and *Tobit Transplanted* (1931).

# Bentley, Edmund Clerihew (1875-1956)

English writer. He invented the four-line humorous verse form known as the clerihew, first collected in *Biography for Beginners* (1905) and then in *More Biography* (1929). He was also the author of the classic detective story *Trent's Last Case* (1913), introducing a new naturalistic style that replaced Sherlock Holmesian romanticism.

It was followed by *Trent's Own Case* (1936), in which he collaborated with H Warner Allen, and *Trent Intervenes* (1938), a volume of short stories.

# Bentley, Phyllis Eleanor (1894-1977)

English novelist. Many of her novels have Yorkshire backgrounds; they include *Environment* (1922), *Cat-in-the-Manger* (1923), *A Modern Tragedy* (1934), *Sleep in Peace* (1938), and *Take Courage* (1940).

# Beowulf

Old English poem of 3,182 lines, thought to have been composed in the first half of the 8th century. It is the only complete surviving example of Germanic folk epic and exists in a single manuscript copied in England about 1000 and now housed in the Cottonian collection of the British Museum, London.

The hero Beowulf delivers the Danish king Hrothgar from the water demon Grendel and its monstrous mother, and, returning home, succeeds his cousin Heardred as king of the Geats. After 50 years of prosperity, he is killed slaying a dragon.

# Béranger, Pierre Jean de (1780-1857)

French poet. He wrote light satirical lyrics dealing with love, wine, popular philosophy, and politics. Many of his verses were printed satires against the government that succeeded the fall of Napoleon.

### Berceo, Gonzalo de (c. 1180-c. 1246)

Spanish poet. He was a priest and his poems, mostly based on Latin originals, are sacred in theme; they include *Milagros de Nuestra Señora/Miracles of Our Lady* and several lives of saints, including the *Vida de Santa Oria/Life of St Oria*. The earliest known Castilian poet, he is sometimes considered the founder of Spanish poetry.

### Bérenger de la Tour (died c. 1559)

French poet. His verse is characterized by elegance and verve, if at times it lacks good taste. It includes *Le Siècle d'or* (1551), *Choreide ou Louange du bal, aux dames* (1556), *L'Amye des amyes* (1558), an imitation of <u>Ariosto</u>, and *L'Amye rustique* (1558).

# Beresford, John Davys (1873-1947)

English novelist. His first novel, *The Early History of Jacob Stahl* (1911), established his reputation as a writer of the realist school deriving from George Gissing.

### Bergengruen, Werner (1892-1964)

German novelist and poet. A convert to Catholicism, he had his greatest success with the novel *Der Grosstyrann und das Gericht/A Matter of Conscience* (1935), which denounces human weakness and frailty in the face of temptation.

His technical mastery is also evident in his short stories: *Der Tod von Reval/The Death of Reval* (1939) and *Novellenbuch/Book of Short Stories* (1962). Two important collections of verse are *Dies irae* (1945) and *Die heile Welt/The Healed World* (1950).

English left-wing art critic and writer. In his best-known book, *Ways of Seeing* (1972), he valued art for social rather than for aesthetic reasons. He also attacked museums for preserving what is by nature transient. His novels include *A Painter of Our Time* (1958) and *G* (1972; Booker Prize).

Other novels include *The Book of Clive* (1962), *Corker's Freedom* (1964), and the trilogy *Into Their Labours* (1991).

Berger, Thomas Louis (1924-)

US writer. His satirical novels include the picaresque sequence *Crazy in Berlin* (1958), *Reinhart in Love* (1961), *Vital Parts* (1970), and *Reinhart's Women* (1981). Other novels include *Neighbors* (1980; filmed in 1981), which portrays the absurdities of suburban life, *Meeting Evil* (1992) and *Best Friends* (2003).

Berger also parodied the Western in *Little Big Man* (1964; filmed in 1970), and the detective genre in *Who is Teddy Villanova*? (1977).

Bergman, Hjalmar (1883-1931)

Swedish novelist and dramatist. His pessimism and realistic clarity of vision are tempered by humour, as in his novel *Clownen Jack/Jack the Clown* (1930), or by irony and brilliant satire, as in *Markurells i Wadköping/The Markurells of Wadköping* (1919). He was equally popular as a playwright (*Swedenhielms* 1925, *Patrasket/The Rabble* 1928), and one of the few Swedish writers of genuine comedies. He also wrote scripts for films and radio.

# Bergson, Henri Louis (1859-1941)

French philosopher. He believed that time, change, and development were the essence of reality. He thought that time was a continuous process in which one period merged imperceptibly into the next. In *Creative Evolution* (1907) he attempted to prove that all evolution and progress are due to the working of the *élan vital*, or life force. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1927.

### Bernanos, Georges (1888-1948)

French writer. His strongly Catholic viewpoint is expressed in, for example, his *Journal d'un curé de campagne/The Diary of a Country Priest* (1936). His theme is almost always the struggle for the soul of the individual between the forces of good and evil, which he portrays with originality and intense conviction.

# Bernard, Tristan (Paul) (1866-1947)

French writer and dramatist. His early plays were vaudevilles of irony and mocking humour, such as L'Anglais tel qu'on le parle/English as It Is Spoken (1899); his later plays include *Triplepatte* (1905; with André Godfernaux) and Le petit Café/The Small Café (1911). His novels, like his plays, satirize human weaknesses; they include Mémoires d'un jeune homme rangé/Memoirs of a Dutiful Young Man (1899).

# Bernard de Ventadour (lived late 12th century)

Provençal troubadour, probably born at the château of Ventadour. His father is said to have been a soldier and his mother a kitchen maid. He is known to have attended the coronation of Henry II of England and Eleanor of Aquitaine in 1154. Some 40 of his poems remain, notable for their freshness and lack of artifice.

# Bernardin de Saint-Pierre, Jacques-Henri (1737-1814)

French writer. His masterpiece was *Paul et Virginie*, a sentimental idyll of love set in Mauritius. It was followed by *La Chaumière indienne/The Indian Cottage* (1790). Both had great influence on Romantic literature by their new note of exoticism.

# Berners, Juliana

#### or Bernes; or Barnes

English writer. She is the supposed author of the hunting treatises in *The Boke of St Albans*, printed 1486.

# Berni, Francesco (1497-1535)

Italian poet. A writer of comic verse, burlesque poetry is known after him as *poesia bernesca*. He is most notable, however, for a work which was not burlesque: his Tuscan revision of <u>Boiardo's</u>*Orlando innamorato*.

Bernstein, Herman (1876-1935)

Russian-born US writer and diplomat. He became a correspondent for the *New York Herald* with the American Expeditionary Force in Siberia. His sensational *Willy-Nicky Correspondence* (1918) printed secret telegrams exchanged between the ex-Kaiser Wilhelm II and Tsar Nicholas II.

# Beroaldo, Filippo the Elder (1453-1505)

Italian humanist lecturer and writer. From 1472 until his death he was professor of rhetoric at Bologna University. He produced a series of editions and commentaries on classical texts, the most extensive of which was his commentary on Apuleius'*Golden Ass*.

Beroaldo's wide-ranging knowledge was displayed in his discussion of adages, which was imitated by his pupil Polydore Vergil and, indirectly, by Erasmus. His classical commentaries included Aulus Gellius, St Basil, Juvenal, Pliny the Younger, Plutarch, Suetonius, and Vegetius. He also acted as public orator to the Bentivoglio rulers of Bologna.

# Beroaldo, Filippo the Younger (1472-1518)

Italian humanist editor, nephew of Filippo <u>Beroaldo</u> the Elder. He was appointed secretary to Cardinal Giovanni de' Medici, who was elected Pope Leo X in 1513 and made Beroaldo prefect of the Vatican Library (Biblioteca Apostolica Vaticana). When a codex of the 'lost' first books of Tacitus'*Annals* came into the Pope's possession in about 1508, Beroaldo edited the work and saw it through the printing press in 1515.

Beroaldo's other works include epigrams and a translation of Isocrates'Ad Demonicum.

# Berry, James (1924-)

West Indian author. Many of Berry's stories and poems reflect his West Indian background and celebrate the cultural identity of West Indians living in both the UK and the Caribbean. He won the National Poetry Prize in 1981 was awarded the OBE for services to poetry in 1990.

Born in Jamaica, Berry moved to the USA when he was 17. Hating the racial intolerance he witnessed there, he returned to Jamaica four years later. Finding his homeland now too claustrophobic, he travelled to the UK where he settled in 1948. His works include *Fractured Circles* (1979), *News from Babylon* (1984), and *Bluefoot Traveller* (1985). An anthology of poetry, *A Thief in the Village*, won the Grand Prix prize in 1987.

# Berry, Mary (1763-1852)

English writer. She collected and edited the *Works of Horace Walpole* (1798) and published *England and France: A Comparative View of the Social Condition of both Countries* (1844). Also of interest are her *Journals* and *Correspondence* (1866).

# Berry, Wendell (Erdman) (1934-)

US poet and writer. A regional writer of novels and essays, Berry is known for his poetry, including 'The Country of Marriage' (1973), and his deep feeling for rural life and the land.

# Berryman, John (1914-1972)

US poet. His emotionally intense, witty, and personal works often deal with sexual torments and are informed by a sense of suffering. After collections of short poems and sonnets, he wrote *Homage to Mistress Broadstreet* (1956), a romantic narrative featuring the first American poet, Anne Dudley (born 1612), and then introduced his guilt-ridden, anti-heroic alter-ego, Henry, in 77 *Dream Songs* (1964; Pulitzer Prize) and *His Toy, His Dream, His Rest* (1968).

His poetry has much in common with that of the 'confessional' poets, but his use of humour sets it apart. He also wrote short stories and a biography of Stephen Crane 1950.

# Bersuire, Pierre (c. 1290-1362)

French scholar. A friend of the Italian writer <u>Petrarch</u>, whom he met at Avignon, he is remembered as the author of a very early and widely influential translation of the Roman historian Livy (1352-56). He also wrote a widely read guide to the Bible.

# Bertaut, Jean (1552-1611)

French court poet under Henry III and Henry IV. He imitated Pierre de <u>Ronsard</u> and Philippe <u>Desportes</u> and wrote both love poetry and religious verse (including paraphrases of the psalms). He became bishop of Sées in 1606.

# Bertrand, Jacques-Louis-Napoleon (or Aloysius) (1807-1841)

French writer. His important work was all published posthumously: *Keepsake fantasque* (1923; poems, essays, and correspondence) and *La Volupté et pièces diverses* (1926). He has been called a precursor of the Symbolists, by whom he was much admired.

### Besant, Walter (1836-1901)

English writer. He wrote novels in partnership with James Rice (1843-1882), and produced an attack on the social evils of the East End of London, *All Sorts and Conditions of Men* (1882), and an unfinished *Survey of London* (1902-12). He was the brother-in-law of the feminist activist Annie Besant. Knighted in 1895.

### bestiary

in medieval times, a book with stories and illustrations which depicted real and mythical animals or plants to illustrate a (usually Christian) moral. The stories were initially derived from the Greek *Physiologus*, a collection of 48 such stories, written in Alexandria around the 2nd century.

Translations of the *Physiologus* into vernacular languages (French, Italian, and English) date from the 13th century; illustrated versions are known from the 9th century. Much of later and contemporary folklore about animals derives from the bestiary, such as the myth of the phoenix burning itself to be born again.

### best-seller

book that achieves large sales. Listings are based upon sales figures from bookstores and other retail stores.

The Bible has sold more copies worldwide than any other book over time, but popular and commercial examples include Charles Monroe Seldon's *In His Steps* (1897), Margaret Mitchell's *Gone With the Wind* (1936), and Dale Carnegie's *How to Win Friends and Influence People* (1937). Current best-seller lists appear in newspapers, magazines, and book trade publications.

# Betjeman, John (1906-1984)

English poet and essayist. He was the originator of a peculiarly English light verse, nostalgic, and delighting in Victorian and Edwardian architecture. He also wrote

prose works on architecture and social history which reflect his interest in the Gothic Revival. His *Collected Poems* appeared in 1958 and a verse autobiography, *Summoned by Bells*, in 1960. Betjeman's verse, seen by some as facile, has been much enjoyed for its compassion and wit, and its evocation of places and situations. He was knighted in 1969 and became poet laureate in 1972.

Betjeman was born in London and educated at Oxford University. During World War II he had a post at the Admiralty, and after that worked for a time for the British Council. He was a contemporary of English-born poet W H <u>Auden</u> at Oxford, but he had little in common with the poets of the 1930s. His verse is traditional in form - favouring <u>iambic</u> lines and a conversational clarity - and subject matter. He recalls with great precision and affection details of his childhood in north London and holidays in Cornwall.

### Betrothed, The

#### Italian I promessi sposi

romantic historical novel by Alessandro <u>Manzoni</u>, published 1825-27 and in its final form 1840-42. Set in Lombardy in 1628-31, during the Spanish administration and a popular insurrection in Milan, it follows the fortunes of two poor silk weavers whose marriage is prevented until the last chapter by the interference of the tyrannical Don Rodrigo.

# Betti, Ugo (1892-1953)

Italian dramatist. Some of his most important plays, such as *Frana allo scalo nord/ Landslide at the North Station* (1936), concern the legal process (Betti was a judge for many years) and focus on the themes of justice and moral responsibility. Of his many other plays, often austere, even pessimistic, the best known include *La padrone/The Mistress* (1927), *Delitto all'isola delle capre/Crime on Goat Island* (1948), and *La Regina e gli insorte/The Queen and the Rebels* (1949).

### **Bevis of Hampton**

Principal character of an English medieval <u>romance</u>. He journeyed to Ermony (Armenia), where he won the affection of the king, Ermyn, and the love of his daughter Josian. The conquest of Brademond of Damascus, the slaying of a ferocious boar and dragon, and the overthrow of a giant named Ascapart, are among his achievements. He possessed a sword called Morglay and a horse called Arundel, after which he named his castle.

# Bialik, Chaim Nachman (1873-1934)

Jewish poet, writer, and translator, born in Ukraine. He established his literary reputation with the publication of *Ha-Matmid/The Talmudic Student*. Bialik came to be acknowledged as the greatest modern Hebrew poet, but was also an essayist, short-story writer, and editor. His promotion of the Hebrew language and his powerful indictments of inhumanity led to his being acclaimed during his lifetime as one of the 'Sages of Odessa' and the unofficial voice of the Jews of Eastern Europe.

Bialik's poetry expressed the longings and frustrations of Eastern European Jewish life at a time when the disintegration of its traditions and mass emigration to the USA were changing the old order. In particular, great Zionist feeling was aroused by his poem 'Be-Ir ha-Haregah/In the City of Slaughter' (1903), which was written after a pogrom. Bialik lived in Palestine from 1924.

# Bianco, Margery

US writer; see Margery Williams.

# Bichsel, Peter (1935-)

Swiss writer. Excelling at the short story and miniature, he describes states of mind and attitudes with deceptive simplicity, as in *Eigentlich möchte Frau Blum den Milchmann kennenlernen/And Really Frau Blum Would Very Much Like to Meet the Milkman* (1964).

Primarily interested in moods, he explores moral complexities, the anonymity of modern life, and lack of communication, in a tight, evocative style. *Kindergeschichten/Children's Stories* (1969) has a fairy-story quality, whereas his short novel (or loosely connected series of prose pieces) *Die Jahreszeiten/The Seasons* (1967) explores the possibilities of writing itself.

# Bielski, Martin (c. 1495-1575)

Polish chronicler and poet. His *Kronika Polska* was the first book of chronicles written in the Polish language.

### Bierce, Ambrose Gwinnett (1842-c. 1914)

US author. After service in the American Civil War, he established his reputation as a

master of the short story, his themes being war and the supernatural, as in *Tales of Soldiers and Civilians* (1891) and *Can Such Things Be*? (1893). He also wrote *The Devil's Dictionary* (1911; first published as *The Cynic's Word Book* in 1906), a collection of ironic definitions showing his sardonic humour. He disappeared in Mexico in 1913.

### Biggers, Earl Derr (1884-1933)

US novelist. He created the Chinese investigator Charlie Chan in a series of detective stories, beginning with *The House Without a Key* (1925).

# **Biggles**

#### in full Captain James Bigglesworth

fictional World War I flying hero created by the English author W E <u>Johns</u>. Biggles was first introduced in short stories published in *Popular Flying*, a magazine founded by Johns in 1932; the character, together with his companions Algy and Ginger, later featured in over 70 novels, now increasingly criticized for alleged chauvinism, racism, and sexism.

# Bilderdijk, Willem (1756-1831)

Dutch poet, dramatist, and essayist. Skilful at rhetoric, he was, however, unable to control his emotions, so that his writing often shows an absurd blend of Romantic content and classical or rococo form.

His works include *Dichtwerken/Poetical Works* (16 volumes) 1856-59, *Geschiedenis des vaderlands/History of the Fatherland* (13 volumes) 1832-53, and an unfinished epic *De ondergang der eerste wareld/The Decline of the First World* 1820.

# Billings, Josh (1818-1885)

#### pseudonym of Henry Wheeler Shaw

US humorous writer. His unorthodox spelling and dry humour attracted attention, and he became a regular contributor to New York city papers. His works include *Josh Billings, His Sayings* (1865), and a parody annual, *Farmer's Allminax* (1869-80).

### **Billy Bunter**

in Britain, fat, bespectacled schoolboy who featured in stories by Frank <u>Richards</u>, set at Greyfriars School. His adventures, in which he attempts to raise enough money to fund his passion for eating, appeared in the children's paper *Magnet* between 1908 and 1940, and subsequently in books in the 1940s and on television from 1952-62.

# Binchy, Maeve (1940-)

Irish journalist and author. Born in Dublin and educated at University College, Dublin, the city and its environs often form a backdrop to her work. She has written a number of plays, but is best known as a writer of short stories and novels. Among her collections of short stories are *Victoria Line, Central Line* (1987) and *Dublin 4* (1982). Her novels usually involve the lives of ordinary people, and include *Light a Penny Candle* (1982), *Firefly Summer* (1987), *Circle of Friends* (1990; filmed 1995), *The Copper Beech* (1992), *The Glass Lake* (1994), *Evening Class* (1996), *Tara Road* (1998), *Scarlet Feather* (2001), and *Quentins* (2002).

Binchy worked as a teacher and part-time travel writer before joining the *Irish Times* in 1969, later becoming the paper's London correspondent. She wrote for the paper until she announced her retirement in 2000, saying that *Scarlet Feather* would be her last. Several of her plays have been staged in Dublin, and she won awards both at home and abroad for her television play *Deeply Regretted By* (1979).

# Bingham, Millicent (Todd) (1880-1968)

US geographer and woman of letters. While still a student, Bingham published two works on urban geography, an interest which she maintained until the 1930s. Bingham's mother, Mabel Loomis Todd, had long been a publisher of Emily Dickinson's work, and Bingham later shifted her interests, becoming an expert on Dickinson's life and work.

# Binyon, (Robert) Laurence (1869-1943)

English poet. His ode 'For the Fallen' (1914) is frequently quoted in war memorial services and was set to music by English composer Edward Elgar. Binyon's verse volumes include *London Visions* (1896); his art criticism includes *Painting in the Far East* (1908).

biography

account of a person's life. When it is written by that person, it is an <u>autobiography</u>. Biography may consist simply of the factual details of a person's life told in chronological order, but has generally become a matter of interpretation as well as historical accuracy. Unofficial biographies (not sanctioned by the subject) have frequently led to legal disputes over both interpretation and facts.

#### history, Europe

Among ancient biographers are the Greek Xenophon and <u>Plutarch</u>, the Roman Tacitus and Suetonius, and the authors of the Gospels of the New Testament. Medieval biography was mostly devoted to religious edification and produced chronicles of saints and martyrs; among secular biographies are *Charlemagne* by Frankish monk Einhard (*c.* 770-840), *Alfred* by Welsh monk Asser (died *c.* 910), and *Petrarch* by <u>Boccaccio</u>.

### history, UK

In England true biography begins with the early Tudor period and such works as *Sir Thomas More* (1626), written by William Roper, the son-in-law of the English politician and writer Sir Thomas More. By the 18th century it became a literary form in its own right through the book *Lives of the Most Eminent English Poets* (1779-81) by English writer Samuel Johnson and the biography of Johnson by James Boswell biography (1791). Nineteenth-century biographers include English writers Robert <u>Southey</u>, Elizabeth <u>Gaskell</u>, George Henry <u>Lewes</u>, and Scottish writer Thomas <u>Carlyle</u>. The general tendency in biographies of the Victorian period was to provide great detail and suppress the more personal facts. The book *Eminent Victorians* (1918) by English writer Lytton <u>Strachey</u> opened a new era of frankness in the history of biography.

### 20th century, USA and UK

Twentieth-century biographers include US academic Richard Ellmann (who wrote on the Irish writers James <u>Joyce</u> and Oscar <u>Wilde</u>), and English writer Elizabeth Longford (who wrote on Queen Victoria and the Duke of Wellington).

### biographical reference works

The earliest **biographical dictionary** in the accepted sense was that of French philosopher Pierre Bayle (1696), followed during the 19th century by the development of national biographies in Europe, and the foundation of the *English Dictionary of National Biography* in 1882 and the *Dictionary of American Biography* in 1928.

# Bion (lived *c*. 100 BC)

Greek bucolic (pastoral) poet, born near Smyrna, who lived mostly in Sicily. The

best of his few surviving poems is 'Lament for Adonis'.

### Biondi, Gian Francesco (1572-1644)

Italian writer. Introduced to the court of James I in England, he won the king's confidence and later a title. He wrote a *Storia delle guerre civili fra le case di York et di Lancastro/History of the Wars of the Roses* (1637).

### Bird, Robert Montgomery (1804-1854)

US playwright and novelist. His most successful dramatic work was the tragedy *The Gladiator* (1831), about Spartacus. As a novelist, he published *Calavar* (1834) and its sequel *The Infidel* (1835), about Cortez in Mexico, and *Nick of the Woods* (1837).

# Birmingham, George A

pseudonym of Irish novelist James Hannay.

# Birney, (Alfred) Earle (1904-1995)

Canadian poet. His work bridges the gaps between traditional and experimental writing, and his handling of everyday language has been widely influential. Collections include *Selected Poems* (1966), *The Poems of Earle Birney* (1969), and *Collected Poems* (1975).

### Bishop, Elizabeth (1911-1979)

US poet and writer. Bishop was the consultant in poetry at the Library of Congress, 1949-50. She then spent more than 20 years in Brazil and taught at Harvard in the 1970s. She is known for her meditative and personal poetry, as seen in the collection, *North and South - A Cold Spring* (1955).

### Bishop, John Peale (1892-1944)

US poet and writer. Bishop published his first book of poetry, *Green Fruit* in 1917. He went on to become editor of *Vanity Fair*, but later wrote novels, short stories,

and literary criticism.

# Bisticci, Vespasiano da (1421-1498)

Florentine bookseller, scholar, and biographer. Responding to the huge demand for books in the 15th century, he became the largest employer of copyists in Europe, and the agent for the three greatest collectors of manuscripts of the early Renaissance: Cosimo de' Medici, Pope Nicholas V, and Federico da Montefeltro, Duke of Urbino.

# Bjørnson, Bjørnstjerne Martinius (1832-1910)

Norwegian novelist, playwright, poet, and journalist. His plays include *The Newly Married Couple* (1865) and *Beyond Human Power* (1883), dealing with politics and sexual morality. Among his novels is *In God's Way* (1889). He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1903.

# Black, William (1841-1898)

Scottish novelist. He achieved popularity with *A Daughter of Heth* (1871). He wrote vivid descriptions of Scottish scenery and outdoor life, but his work became repetitive.

# Black Beauty

novel by Anna <u>Sewell</u>, published in 1877. It describes the experiences of the horse, Black Beauty, under many different owners, and revived the genre of 'animal autobiography' popular in the late 18th and early 19th centuries. Although now considered to be a children's book, it was written to encourage sympathetic treatment of horses by adults.

# Black Boy

autobiography of the US left-wing writer Richard Wright, published 1945, which gives a vivid and harrowing account of a black boy's experience of growing up in the USA.

# Blacklock, Thomas (1721-1791)

Scottish poet. Some early poems published 1746 led to his education at Edinburgh, where he studied divinity. He was an early admirer and friend of the poet Robert <u>Burns</u> and persuaded him to abandon his plans for leaving Scotland for the West Indies.

# Blackmore, R(ichard) D(oddridge) (1825-1900)

English novelist. His romance *Lorna Doone* (1869), set on Exmoor, southwest England, in the late 17th century, won him lasting popularity.

He published 13 other novels, including *Cradock Nowell* (1866), *The Maid of Sker* (1872), *Alice Lorraine* (1875), and *Springhaven* (1887).

# Blackmore, Richard (1654-1729)

English writer and physician to William III and Queen Anne. He wrote dull and turgid epics, ridiculed by the satirical poet Alexander <u>Pope</u> in his *Dunciad*, though they were praised by the essayist Joseph Addison.

# **Black Mountain poets**

group of experimental US poets of the 1950s who were linked with Black Mountain College, a liberal arts college in North Carolina. They rejected the constraints of rhyme and metre and the politically conservative orthodoxy of T S Eliot's classical, academic poetry. Instead, they pioneered open forms and drew on a wide range of non-Western cultures or hermetic traditions. Leading members included Charles <u>Olson</u> and Robert Creeley (1926-).

The Black Mountain College 1933-56 was a unique experiment in a utopian educational community, attracting many of the period's finest poets, painters, and musicians, especially under the rectorship of Olson 1951-56. Painters who came to teach, exhibit or work collaboratively included Franz Kline, Willem de Kooning, and Robert Rauschenberg; writers who taught or studied included Edward Dahlberg, Paul Blackburn, Denise Levertov, LeRoi Jones, Gilbert Sorrentino, Robert Creeley, who edited *Black Mountain Review* (1954-57), and Robert Duncan; music and dance was represented by John Cage and Merce Cunningham. The College's interaction of disciplines traditionally kept apart led to prototypes of the multimedia events and happenings that became common in the 1960s.

# Blackmur, R(ichard) P(almer) (1904-1965)

US literary critic and poet. Self-educated, he became a prominent critic of modern literature in the 1920s and 1930s, later writing critical theory. He also published three volumes of poems. His critical works include *The Expense of Greatness* (1940), *Language as Gesture* (1952), and *The Lion and the Honeycomb* (1955).

From 1936 to 1938 he held a Guggenheim fellowship, and he was professor of English at Princeton University 1948-65.

### Blackwood, Algernon (Henry) (1869-1951)

English novelist. He was greatly interested in the occult and has been called 'the ghost man' because of his subjects. His novels include *John Silence* (1908), *The Human Chord* (1910), and *The Wave* (1916). *Tongues of Fire* (1924) and *Tales of the Uncanny and Supernatural* (1949) are volumes of short stories.

### Blaga, Lucian (1895-1961)

Romanian poet, dramatist, and philosopher, born in Transylvania. He was a leading figure of 20th-century Romanian letters. His poetry includes the collections *Poemele lumini/Poems of Light* (1919), *La cumpana apelor/At the Watershed* (1933), and *Nebanuitele trepte/Unsuspected Steps* (1943).

In 1921, Blaga helped found *Gindirea*, a review to promote literature, inspired by the Orthodox Church and Romanian village life. German literary and philosophical thought influenced Blaga's writings on society and culture, such as *Trilogia cunoasterii/Trilogy of Knowledge* (1931-34), *Trilogia culturii/Trilogy of Culture* (1936-37), and *Trilogia valorilor/Trilogy of Values* (1939-42).

# Blair, Robert (1699-1746)

Scottish poet and cleric. His one outstanding work is *The Grave* (1743), a poem in blank verse, nearly 800 lines long. In some passages it rises to sublimity, although in others it sinks to the commonplace. It was illustrated by William <u>Blake</u>.

# Blake, George (1893-1961)

Scottish novelist and journalist. In direct opposition to the sentimental Kailyard School, his novels are set in urban industrial Scotland. *The Shipbuilders* (1935) is about Glasgow in the Depression.

*Mince Collop Close* (1923), a sordid tale of slum life in Glasgow, was followed by *The Wild Men* (1925) and *The Path of Glory* (1929), a war story. Returning to Scotland in 1932, he settled in Helensburgh and published several works with a Clyde setting, including *Down to the Sea* (1937) and *The Firth of Clyde* (1952).

### Blake, William (1757-1827)

English poet, artist, engraver, and visionary, and one of the most important figures of English Romanticism. His lyrics, often written with a childlike simplicity, as in *Songs of Innocence* (1789) and *Songs of Experience* (1794), express a unique spiritual vision. In his 'prophetic books', including *The Marriage of Heaven and Hell* (1790), he created a vast personal mythology. He illustrated his own works with hand-coloured engravings.

Blake was born in London and, at the age of 14, was apprenticed to an engraver before entering the Royal Academy in 1778. He then became an independent engraver and in 1782 married Catherine Boucher, who collaborated with him on many of his projects. *Songs of Innocence* was the first of his own poetic works that he illustrated and engraved, in his highly individual style which is ultimately based on Italian artists Michelangelo and Raphael. The complementary volume, *Songs of Experience*, which contains the poems 'Tyger! Tyger! burning bright' and 'London', expresses Blake's keen awareness of cruelty and injustice. After 1804 he devoted himself to illustrative work and to large watercolour designs for the biblical *Book of Job* (1821), John Milton's *Paradise Lost* (1822), and Dante's *Divina commedia* (1825). Blake's poem 'Jerusalem' (1820) was set to music by Charles Parry.

# Blanchard, Edward Litt Leman (1820-1889)

English writer of dramas, farces, and burlesques. For 37 years he wrote the annual pantomime for the Drury Lane Theatre in London, and he sold plays to provincial theatres at ten shillings an act.

# Blanchot, Maurice (born 1907)

French critic and novelist. Between 1930 and 1939 he wrote mainly for the rightwing press. *Faux pas* (1943) brings together some 60 of the literary essays he contributed to the *Journal des débats* 1941-44. After 1940 Blanchot's own narratives paralleled his theoretical writings. Venezuelan diplomat and writer. He was born in Caracas and lived there until his opposition to the dictatorship of Juan Vicente Gómez forced him into exile in Europe. He also campaigned against US influence in Latin America. Blanco-Fombona published influential literary essays on modernism. His novel *Hombre de oro/Man of Gold* (1916) bitterly attacked the corrupt state of Spanish-American politics.

#### blank verse

in literature, the unrhymed iambic pentameter or ten-syllable line of five stresses. First used by the Italian Gian Giorgio Trissino in his tragedy *Sofonisba* (1514-15), it was introduced to England in about 1540 by the Earl of Surrey, who used it in his translation of Virgil's *Aeneid*. It was developed by Christopher Marlowe and Shakespeare, quickly becoming the distinctive verse form of Elizabethan and Jacobean drama. It was later used by Milton in *Paradise Lost* (1667) and by Wordsworth in *The Prelude* (1805). More recent exponents of blank verse in English include Thomas Hardy, T S Eliot, and Robert Frost.

After its introduction from Italy, blank verse was used with increasing freedom by Shakespeare, John Fletcher, John Webster, and Thomas Middleton. It was remodelled by John Milton, who was imitated in the 18th century by James Thomson, Edward Young, and William Cowper, and revived in the early 19th century by Wordsworth, Shelley, and Keats, and later by Lord Tennyson, Robert Browning, and Algernon Charles Swinburne.

### Blasco Ibáñez, Vicente

see Ibáñez, Vicente Blasco, Spanish novelist and politician.

## Blessington, Marguerite Gardiner (1789-1849)

#### Countess of Blessington; born Marguerite Power

Irish writer. A leading member of literary society, she published *Conversations with Lord Byron* 1834, travel sketches (*The Idler in Italy* 1839, *The Idler in France* 1841), and novels.

## Blicher, Steen Steensen (1782-1848)

Danish novelist and poet. After translating 1807-09 the works of the Scottish poet James Macpherson attributed to the mythical Ossian, his greatest achievements were in the short story form, with collections such as *Brudstykker af en* 

Landsbydegns Dagbog/Fragments of the Diary of a Country Sexton (1824), Samlede Noveller/Collected Stories 1833-34), set in the Jutland countryside and often conveying a mood of disillusion and disappointment.

### Blind, Mathilde (1841-1896)

#### born Mathilde Cohen

English writer. Visits to Scotland inspired two long poems, *The Prophecy of St Oran* (1881) and *The Heather on Fire* (1886), the latter a passionate outcry against the Highland Clearances. *The Ascent of Man* (1889) is an epic poem dealing with Charles Darwin's theory of evolution.

She also wrote biographies of the novelist George Eliot (1883) and the French intellectual Jeanne Roland de la Platière (1886).

### **Blind Harry**

another name for Harry the Minstrel, Scottish poet.

## Blixen, Karen (1885-1962)

#### Baroness Blixen; born Karen Christentze Dinesen

Danish writer. She wrote mainly in English and is best known for her short stories, Gothic fantasies with a haunting, often mythic quality, published in such collections as *Seven Gothic Tales* (1934) and *Winter's Tales* (1942) under the pen-name **Isak Dinesen**. Her autobiography *Out of Africa* (1937; filmed 1985) is based on her experience of running a coffee plantation in Kenya.

## Bloch, Jean-Richard (1884-1947)

French novelist, dramatist, and essayist. He established his reputation with his second novel, *Et Compagnie/... & Co.* (1918). He also published volumes of tales, travel books, a play (*Le dernier Empereur/The Last Emperor* 1926), and essays, including 'Offrande à la politique/Offering to Politics' (1933) and 'Naissance d'une culture/Birth of a Culture' (1936). A communist, he spent the war years 1941-45 in Moscow.

# Blok, Alexander Alexandrovich (1880-1921)

Russian poet. As a follower of the French Symbolist movement, he used words for their symbolic rather than actual meaning. He backed the 1917 Revolution, as in his poems *The Twelve* (1918) and *The Scythians* (1918), the latter appealing to the West to join in the revolution.

### Blondel

#### or Blondel de Nesle

French poet, probably from Nesle in Picardy. There is a legend that it was he who discovered the English king Richard (I) the Lion-Heart at the castle of Dürnstein, Austria, where the king had been imprisoned on his way back from the Third Crusade.

# Bloomfield, Robert (1766-1823)

English poet. His first and chief poem, *The Farmer's Boy* (1800), met with great success. Other works include *Rural Tales* (1802) and *Wild Flowers* (1806).

## **Bloomsbury Group**

intellectual circle of writers and artists based in Bloomsbury, London, which flourished in the 1920s. It centred on the house of publisher Leonard Woolf and his wife, novelist Virginia <u>Woolf</u>. Typically modernist, their innovative artistic contributions represented an important section of the English avant-garde.

The circle included the artists Duncan Grant and Vanessa Bell, the biographer Lytton <u>Strachey</u>, art critics Roger Fry and Clive Bell, and the economist John Maynard Keynes. From their emphasis on close interpersonal relationships and their fastidious attitude towards contemporary culture arose many accusations of elitism. They also held sceptical views on social and political conventions and religious practices.

## Blume, Judy (1938-)

#### born Judy Sussman

US novelist. Bored with suburban life, Blume turned to writing and illustrating children's stories. After many rejections, she published *Are You There God? It's Me, Margaret* (1970), *Blubber* (1974), and *Tiger Eyes* (1981), and several other novels for

teenagers, that broke new ground in their frank treatment of sensitive issues. Her novel for adults, *Summer Sisters*, was published in 1998.

### Blumenthal, Joseph (1897-1990)

US printer, book designer, and publisher. Blumenthal founded the Spiral Press in 1926. He printed fine editions of many texts but was renowned for his special editions of the poems of Robert Frost. Blumenthal designed the Spiral typeface, which was later re-named Emerson.

After closing the Spiral Press in 1971, Blumenthal organized a famous exhibit at the Morgan Library, *The Art of the Printed Book* (1973), and he wrote several books on this subject.

### Blunden, Edmund (Charles) (1896-1974)

English poet and critic. He served in World War I and published the prose work *Undertones of War* (1928). His poetry is mainly about rural life. Among his scholarly contributions was the discovery and publication of some poems by the 19th-century poet John <u>Clare</u>.

### Blunt, Wilfrid Scawen (1840-1922)

English poet. He travelled in the Middle East, becoming a supporter of Arab nationalism. He also supported Irish home rule (he was imprisoned 1887-88), and wrote anti-imperialist books as well as poetry and diaries.

## Bly, Robert Elwood (1926-)

US writer. His book *Iron John: A Book About Men* (1990), in which he argued that men needed to rediscover the warrior side of their natures, started the 'men's movement'. His collection *Light Around the Body* (1967) won the National Book Award for poetry.

### Blyton, Enid Mary (1897-1968)

English writer of children's books. She used her abilities as a trained teacher of young children and a journalist, coupled with her ability to think like a child, to produce books at all levels which, though criticized for their predictability and lack

of characterization, and more recently for social, racial, and sexual stereotyping, satisfy the reader's need for security. Her best-selling series were, the *Famous Five* series, the 'Secret Seven', and 'Noddy'.

In 1951 she had 31 different titles published, and ten years after her death she was the fourth most translated author in the world. In 1996 Trocadero plc, a British property and leisure company, paid £14.25m for the residual copyrights in over 700 of her books.

## Boccaccio, Giovanni (1313-1375)

Italian writer and poet. He is chiefly known for the collection of tales called the <u>Decameron</u> (1348-53). Equally at home with tragic and comic narrative, he laid the foundations for the humanism of the Renaissance and raised vernacular literature to the status enjoyed by the ancient classics.

He was born in Florence but lived in Naples 1328-41, where he fell in love with the unfaithful 'Fiammetta' who inspired his early poetry. Before returning to Florence in 1341 he had written the romance *Filostrato* and the verse narrative *Teseide* (used by Chaucer in his *Troilus and Criseyde* and 'The Knight's Tale'). *Teseide* is the first romantic narrative to appear in the Italian language in *ottava rima*, the metre adopted by <u>Ariosto</u> and <u>Tasso</u>. The narrative poem *Filostrato* is also written in *ottava rima*. Boccaccio was much influenced by the poet <u>Petrarch</u>, whom he met in 1350.

## Boccalini, Trajano (1556-1613)

Italian satirist and political writer. His *Ragguagli di Parnaso/Dispatches from Parnassus* (1613) deal with contemporary topics and personalities, both private and political.

### Bodenheim, Maxwell (1893-1954)

#### born Maxwell Bodenheimer

US poet and writer. Bodenheimer published 11 volumes of poetry, including *Minna and Myself* in 1918, and novels, which were considered to be indecent. As editor of the poetry magazine *Others*, a poetry magazine, he is credited with discovering Hart Crane.

US poet and writer. Bogan was poetry editor of the *New Yorker* from 1931 to 1969. She was an influential critic and a noted lyrical poet, her work including 'The Blue Estuaries' (1968).

### Boiardo, Matteo Maria, Count of Scandiano (1434-1494)

Italian translator and poet. He is famed for his *Orlando innamorato/Roland in Love* (1487), a chivalrous epic glorifying military honour, patriotism, and religion. <u>Ariosto</u>'s *Orlando furioso* (1516) was conceived as a sequel to this work.

# Boileau Despréaux, Nicolas (1636-1711)

French poet and critic. After a series of contemporary satires, his 'Epîtres/ Epistles' (1669-77) led to his joint appointment with the dramatist Jean Racine as royal historiographer in 1677. Later works include *L'Art poétique/The Art of Poetry* (1674) and the mock-heroic *Le Lutrin/The Lectern* (1674-83).

### Boissard, Maurice

pseudonym of French theatre critic and writer Paul <u>Leautaud</u>, used when writing for the *Mercure de France* and the *Nouvelle revue française*.

## Boker, George Henry (1823-1890)

US playwright, poet, and diplomat. His verse play *Francesca da Rimini* (1855) is sometimes claimed to be the greatest US tragedy of the 19th century. Boker was also well known for his sonnets, of which he wrote over 300. His chief works were collected in *Plays and Poems* (1856).

He was US minister to Turkey 1871-75 and Russia 1875-79.

# Boland, Eavan (Aisling) (1944-)

Irish poet and academic. Born in Dublin and educated in London, New York, and Trinity College, Dublin, Boland has lectured and taught creative writing in Ireland and the USA. Most significantly she helped open Irish poetry to the female voice and experience as in *In Her Own Image* (1980), *The Journey and Other Poems* (1986), and *Against Love Poetry* (2001). With the 1975 publication of *The War Horse*, Boland turned her attention to 'the Troubles' in Northern Ireland, but always with a clear and poignant attention to how the home environment and community are affected by political violence. She addressed this tension between domesticity and disruption again in *In a Time of Violence* (1994). In 1980 she co-founded Arlen House, a feminist press.

Boland's first collection of poetry, *New Territory* (1967), included a retelling of the Ulster cycle saga 'Tochmarc Étaíne/Wooing of Étain' and a contemplation of Irish history. Her later pamphlet 'A Kind of Scar' (1988) analysed the position of women poets in the Irish literary tradition and the lasting impact of the personification of sovereignty as a woman in ancient Gaelic culture. Her autobiography *Object Lessons* was published in 1996.

### Böll, Heinrich (Theodor) (1917-1985)

German novelist. A radical Catholic and anti-Nazi, he attacked Germany's political past and the materialism of its contemporary society. His many publications include poems, short stories, and novels which satirized West German society, for example *Billard um Halbzehn/Billiards at Half-Past Nine* (1959) and *Gruppenbild mit Dame/ Group Portrait with Lady* (1971). He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1972.

## Bond, (Thomas) Michael (1926-)

English children's author. He is the creator of the enormously popular Paddington Bear, the hapless hero of almost 40 stories since his debut in *A Bear called Paddington* (1958); the small bear's exploits have also been animated for television. Along with other fictional animal characters, Bond also created Monsieur Pamplemousse, who featured in a series of adult novels (1983-93).

### Bone, David William (1874-1959)

Scottish novelist. He went to sea at 15 and rose to become commodore of the Anchor Line fleet. His novels are all about the sea. *Merchantmen at Arms* (1919), illustrated by his brother Muirhead Bone, tells of the work of the merchant service in World War I.

### Boner, Ulrich (lived c. 1324-1349)

Swiss writer of fables. His book of 100 fables, *Der Edelstein/The Precious Stone*, was one of the first German books to be printed, 1461.

# Bonnefoy, Yves (1923-)

French poet, literary critic, art critic, and translator. Best known in English-speaking countries for his poetry, he has also translated Shakespeare and published several collections of essays on poetry and aspects of art.

# Bonnin, Gertrude (1876-1938)

#### born Gertrude Simmons; pseudonym Zitkala-Sa (Red Bird)

American Indian writer and activist. A teacher and later a professional violinist, she wrote stories, many of which were published in *Harper's Monthly*, and also autobiographical sketches, which appeared in *Atlantic Monthly*. She became involved in American Indian affairs, being a founder member of the National Council of American Indians, which was set up in 1926. She published *Old Indian Legends* (1901) and *American Indian Stories* (1921).

## Bontempelli, Massimo (1878-1960)

Italian writer. From classical beginnings, he became a Futurist and humorist, and described his art as 'magic realism'. He wrote several novels, numerous volumes of verse, plays, and various other works, and was intensely active as a journalist and contributor to literary reviews.

## Bontemps, Arna (Wendell) (1902-1973)

US writer, anthologist, and librarian. Bontemps spent most of his career as a librarian and public Relations officer. He published poetry, children's books, and several novels. His 1925 poem, 'Golgatha Is a Mountain', won the Alexander Pushkin Award, and his *Story of the Negro* won the 1956 Jane Addams Children's Book Award.

Bontemps' work was first published in1923 in *Crisis*, the magazine of the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People. He guest-lectured at various universities and was the editor of *American Negro Poetry*. Bontemps co-edited several anthologies with Langston Hughes, and the two men's extensive correspondence was published in 1980.

British literary prize of £50,000 awarded annually (from 1969) to a Commonwealth writer by the Booker company (formerly Booker McConnell) for a novel published in the UK during the previous year.

The first recipient of the prize in 1969 was P H Newby for *Something to Answer For*. Other notable winners have included V S <u>Naipaul</u> (1971), Iris <u>Murdoch</u> (1978), William <u>Golding</u> (1980), Salman <u>Rushdie</u> (1981), Kingsley <u>Amis</u> (1986), and Margaret <u>Atwood</u> (2000).

## Boon, Louis-Paul (born 1912)

Flemish novelist. His pessimistic view of social injustice is relieved by humorous irony in his most accomplished and structurally complex novels, *De Kapellekensbaan* (1953) and its sequel *Zomer to Ter-Muren* (1956).

### Boorde (or Borde), Andrew (c. 1490-1549)

English physician and author. He travelled widely throughout Europe and wrote the first travel handbook of Europe, the earliest modern work on hygiene, and the first printed specimen of the gypsy language.

## Boothe, Clare

US journalist, playwright, and politician; see Clare Boothe Luce.

### Borchert, Wolfgang (1921-1947)

German dramatist and prose writer. He was wounded during World War II while serving on the Russian front, where he had been sent for making anti-Nazi comments. *Draussen vor der Tür/The Outsider* (1947) is a surreal play about the chaotic conditions that a German soldier finds when he returns to Germany after walking home from the Russian front.

### Bordeaux, Henry (1870-1963)

French novelist. His works, many of which are set in his native Savoie, include *La Peur de vivre* (1902), *La Croisée des chemins* (1909), *La Résurrection de la chair* (1920), and *La Cendre chaude* (1939).

### Borden, Mary (1887-1968)

US novelist, a British subject from 1918. Her intelligent novels about human relationships include *The Romantic Woman* (1919), *Flamingo* (1927), and *Martin Merriedew* (1952). *Forbidden Zone* (1929) is a collection of stories, prose pieces, and poems about her war experiences.

### Borel, Petrus (1809-1859)

also known as *Borel d'Hauterive*; called 'le Lycanthrope' (the Werewolf); born Joseph-Pierre Borel

French novelist and poet. He was one of the most devoted and extravagant followers of the Romantic school. His chief works are a book of poems, *Rhapsodies* (1832), a volume of short stories, *Champavert, contes immoraux* (1833), and a melodramatic novel, *Madame Putiphar* (1839).

## Borges, Jorge Luis (1899-1986)

Argentine poet and short-story writer. He was an exponent of <u>magic realism</u>. In 1961 he became director of the National Library, Buenos Aires, and was professor of English literature at the university there. He is known for his fantastic and paradoxical work *Ficciones/Fictions* (1944). He became blind in later life, but continued to write.

Borges explored metaphysical themes in early works such as *Ficciones* and *El Aleph/ The Aleph, and other Stories* (1949). In a later collection of tales *El informe de Brodie/Dr Brodie's Report* (1972) he adopted a more realistic style, reminiscent of the work of the young Rudyard <u>Kipling</u>, of whom he was a great admirer. *El libro de arena/The Book of Sand* (1975) marked a return to more fantastic themes.

## Borgese, Giuseppe Antonio (1882-1952)

Italian writer and critic. His novel *Rubè* (1921) set out to portray the duel between the warlike idealism and the basic pacifism of the Italians. He was an opponent of fascism, and in 1931 went to the USA.

English antiquary. In his *Philosophical Transactions* he published an essay on Cornish diamonds, and was made a Fellow of the Royal Society in 1750. Subsequently he produced several works, including *Antiquities of Cornwall* (1754), and presented collections to the Ashmolean Museum in Oxford.

### Boron, Robert de

Burgundian poet. He wrote in about 1200 a romance of the Holy Grail: *Joseph d'Arimathie*, in 3,514 octosyllabic lines, describing the recovery of the legendary receptacle in which Christ's blood was caught and how it was brought to the West; *Merlin*, a fragment; and *Perceval*.

# Borrow, George (Henry) (1803-1881)

English writer and traveller. He travelled on foot through Europe and the East. His books, incorporating his knowledge of languages and Romany lore, include *The Zincali, or an Account of the Gypsies in Spain* (1841), *The Bible in Spain* (1843), *Lavengro* (1851), *The Romany Rye* (1857), and *Wild Wales* (1862).

## Bosboom-Toussaint, Anna Louisa Geertruida (1812-1886)

#### born Anna Louisa Geertruida Toussaint

Dutch novelist. Her works, many of them stories of Dutch history, are colourful representations of the manners and customs of the people; they are also remarkable for their historical and psychological insight. Her masterpiece is *Het Huis Lauernesse* (1841), describing an episode of the Reformation.

## Boscán Almogaver, Juan (c. 1495-1542)

Spanish poet. His works were published posthumously in 1543 in three books, the first containing traditional Castilian metres, the second and third innovatory imitations of Italian poetry, particularly that of <u>Petrarch</u>. This introduction into Spain of Italian metres marked an important departure for Spanish poetry.

### Bosco, Henri (1888-1976)

French novelist. His novels, which often depict life in the Provençal countryside,

include Le Sanglier/The Wild Boar (1932), Hyacinthe (1940), Le Mas Théotime/Farm in Provence (1944), Le Jardin d'Hyacinthe/Hyacinthe's Garden (1946), L'Enfant et la rivière/The Child and the River (1953), and Sabinus (1957). He also wrote volumes of poetry, nonfictional prose works, and memoirs.

### Bostius, Arnoldus (1446-1499)

Flemish Carmelite monk and scholar, born and based in Ghent. He wrote theological and historical works, and was a frequent letter writer. His correspondents included several Italian and Low Countries humanists, such as Ermolao <u>Barbaro</u> the Younger, Cornelio Vitelli, Robert Gaguin, Cornelis Gerard, and Erasmus. Through his epistles and the works that they dedicated or sent to him, he was able to act as a conduit for communication between different coteries of scholars.

# Boswell, James (1740-1795)

Scottish biographer and diarist. He was a member of Samuel <u>Johnson</u>'s Literary Club and the two men travelled to Scotland together in 1773, as recorded in Boswell's *Journal of a Tour to the Hebrides* (1785). His *Life of Samuel Johnson* was published in 1791. Boswell's ability to record Johnson's pithy conversation verbatim makes this a classic of English biography.

Boswell was born in Edinburgh. He qualified as a lawyer in 1766 but centred his ambitions on literature and politics. He first met Johnson in 1763, and following a European tour, established a place in his intimate circle, becoming a member of the Literary Club in 1773. On his succession to his father's estate in 1782, Boswell made further attempts to enter Parliament, qualified to practise as a barrister in England in 1786, and was recorder of Carlisle from 1788-90. In 1789 he settled in London.

## Botev, Khristo (1848-1876)

Bulgarian poet and leader of the national liberation movement. At the outbreak of the 1876 uprising against the Ottoman Empire, he led an expedition against the army of occupation, but was killed. His patriotic poems, though few in number, made a lasting impression on Bulgarian literature.

# Botkin, B(enjamin) A(lbert) (1901-1975)

US folklorist. Botkin was folklore editor of the Federal Writers' Project from 1938 to 1939 and head of the Library of Congress folk song archive in the 1940s. He turned to writing subsequently, collecting before folklore, stories, and ballads which he

published in many anthologies, including Treasury of American Folklore (1944).

# Botta, Carlo Giuseppe Guglielmo (1766-1837)

Italian historian. In contrast with his life, his historical works are surprisingly reactionary. They include *Storia dell'indipendenza degli Stati Uniti d'America* and *Storia d'Italia in continuazione a quella del Guicciardini fino al 1789*.

### Bottome, Phyllis (1884-1963)

English novelist. Her first novel, *Raw Material*, was accepted when she was 17, and later she was successful also as a short-story writer.

Her books include *The Dark Tower* (1909), *Windlestraws* (1929), *The Mortal Storm* (1937; an anti-Nazi novel), *Masks and Faces* (1940), *From the Life* (1944), *Fortune's Finger* (1950), and *Man and Beast* (1953). In 1939 she published a life of Alfred Adler, whose psychological theories she much admired.

### Bottomley, Gordon (1874-1948)

English poet and dramatist. His most successful verse drama, *King Lear's Wife* (1915), is a prelude to Shakespeare's play, and his finest lyrical verse is collected in *Poems of Thirty Years* (1925).

## Boudinot, Elias (c. 1803-c. 1839)

#### born Elias Galegina

Cherokee writer and leader. The first editor of the *Cherokee Phoenix*, 1828-34, he was murdered by other Cherokee for his support of Cherokee land cessions. He also wrote a novel and translated part of the Bible into Cherokee.

## Bouhours, Dominique (1628-1702)

French Jesuit and critic. A grammarian and literary critic, he also wrote religious works and letters against Jansenism.

His linguistic views were first expressed in the *Entretiens d'artiste et d'Eugène* (1671) and then in *Doutes sur la langue française* (1674), *Remarques nouvelles sur la* 

*langue française* (1675), and *La manière de bien penser dans les ouvrages de l'esprit* (1687).

### Bourbon, Nicholas (1503-1550)

French humanist poet and Evangelical. He was imprisoned in Paris for his criticism of the church in *Nugae/Trifles* (1533); after his release he crossed to England in 1534, where he received the protection of Anne Boleyn. He became acquainted with other Evangelicals, including Hans Holbein, whom he remembered in the second edition of *Nugae* (1538). After returning to France, he became tutor to Marguerite of Navarre's daughter.

### Bourget, Paul (1852-1935)

French poet, novelist, and critic. His early work was deeply influenced by the determinist philosophy of Hippolyte <u>Taine</u>, but the novel *Le Disciple/The Disciple* (1889) marks a reaction against determinism. Many of his later novels are coloured by right-wing royalist and Catholic views.

### Bourne, Randolph (Silliman) (1886-1918)

US essayist and literary critic. Bourne graduated from Columbia University within a year of matriculating. He contributed articles about general literacy and cultural issues to the *New Republic* during World War I, but his commitment to pacifism led him to also publish in the more radical *Masses*.

## Bowdler, Thomas (1754-1825)

English editor. His expurgated versions of Shakespeare and other authors gave rise to the verb **bowdlerize**.

### Bowen, Elizabeth (Dorothea Cole) (1899-1973)

Irish novelist and short-story writer. Born in Dublin of Anglo-Irish descent, she moved to England as a child. She published her first volume of short stories, *Encounters* in 1923. Her novels include *The Death of the Heart* (1938), *The Heat of the Day* (1949), and *The Little Girls* (1964).

Her first novels The Hotel (1927) and Last September (1929) introduced a familiar

character type in Bowen's fiction, that of an older woman whose presence and influence is ultimately damaging to the protagonists.

### Bowles, Jane (1917-1973)

#### born Jane Sydney Auer

US writer. After her marriage to the writer Paul Bowles in 1938, she lived mostly abroad. Her literary reputation rests on a slender output from the 1940s and 1950s (a novel - *Two Serious Ladies* (1943) - a play, and a volume of stories), that is notable for its feminism and oblique. A stroke left her unable to read or write for the last fifteen years of her life.

### Bowles, Paul (1910-1999)

US writer and composer. Born in New York City, he studied music composition with Aaron Copland and Virgil Thomson, writing scores for ballets, films, and an opera, *The Wind Remains* (1943), as well as incidental music for plays. He settled in Morocco, the setting of his novels *The Sheltering Sky* (1949, filmed 1990) and *Let It Come Down* (1952), which chillingly depict the existential breakdown of Westerners unable to survive self-exposure in an alien culture. Other works include *A Thousand Days for Mokhtar* (1989) and *Too Far from Home* (1994). His autobiography, *Without Stopping*, was published in 1972.

Bowles settled permanently in Tangier with his wife, the writer Jane Bowles (1917-1973), after World War II and became greatly influenced by Moroccan storytelling he later turned to transcribing and translating tales by Muhammad Mrabet and others.

### Bowles, William Lisle (1762-1850)

English poet. His *Fourteen Sonnets on Picturesque Spots* (1789) had a considerable influence on the young Romantic poets William Wordsworth, Samuel Taylor Coleridge, and Robert Southey.

His longer poems include *The Spirit of Discovery* (1804), *The Missionary of the Andes* (1815), and *The Grave of the Last Saxon* (1822). In 1806 he published his edition of Alexander Pope's works, with critical notes.

### Bowra, (Cecil) Maurice (1898-1971)

British scholar, born in China, appointed professor of poetry at Oxford University in 1946, and vice chancellor from 1951 to 1954. He was an accomplished classical scholar with a wide knowledge of many literatures and was also a gifted writer and translator.

## Bowyer, William (1699-1777)

English printer and classical scholar. His chief work was *Conjectural Emendations of the Greek Testament* (1763). He also wrote two essays on the origin of printing, published in 1774, and translated the French philosopher Rousseau's first *Discourse* in 1751.

Bowyer was educated at Cambridge and became his father's partner in business in 1722. The company was chosen to print the votes of the House of Commons in 1729 and the journal of the House of Lords in 1767.

# Boyd, Mark Alexander (1553-1601)

Scottish scholar. He is best known for his exquisite sonnet 'Fra Bank to Bank'. His *Epistolae Heroides et Hymni* are to be found in Arthur <u>Johnston's</u>Deliciae Poetarum Scotorum (1637). Among his prose and verse manuscripts are *In Institutiones Imperatoris Commenta* and *L'Estat du royaume d'Escosse à present*.

# Boyd, Martin (1893-1972)

Australian novelist. His chief work is the *Langton Tetralogy*, comprising the novels *The Cardboard Crown* (1952), *A Difficult Young Man* (1955), *Outbreak of Love* (1957), and *When Blackbirds Sing* (1962). The power of time, the illogicality of history, and the subtleties of Australian-European cultural transactions are themes developed in these and other Boyd novels.

# Boyd, William Andrew Murray (1952-)

Ghanaian-born British novelist and short-story writer. He has won wide critical acclaim since *A Good Man In Africa* (1981; filmed in 1994) won the Whitbread Award for best first novel and the Somerset Maugham award.

A Good Man in Africa is a dark comedy about an alcoholic British civil servant who gets drawn into local corruption in the fictional African capital where he is stationed, while the country falls into chaos. Other works include An Ice-Cream War (1982), Stars and Bars (1984; filmed in 1988), The New Confessions (1987),

*Brazzaville Beach* (1990), *The Blue Afternoon* (1993), *Armadillo* (1998; filmed for BBC in 2001), and *Any Human Heart* (2002). His fictional biography *Nat Tate: An American Artist 1928-1960* (1998) duped several prominent art critics, who claimed to have heard of the fictional painter.

## Boyesen, H(jalmar) H(jorth) (1849-1895)

Norwegian literary critic and writer. Boyesen travelled to America in 1869 and was a journalist before becoming a tutor at Urbana University. He went on to teach at Cornell and Columbia University, and was known for such scholarly works as *Goethe and Schiller* (1879). Boyesen also wrote several novels as well as children's stories and poetry.

# Boyle, Charles (1676-1731)

### 4th Earl of Orrery

Irish soldier, diplomat, and writer. His 1695 edition of the *Epistles of Phalaris* led to a controversy with Richard Bentley, who proved that they were spurious.

# Boyle, John (1707-1762)

#### 5th Earl of Cork and of Orrery

Irish biographer and scholar, a member of the prominent Boyle political dynasty. Born in England and educated at Oxford, he visited Dublin in 1732, but settled in Marston, Somerset, having conceived a dislike for Dublin society. His most celebrated work was a rancorous biography of his former friend Jonathan <u>Swift</u>, *Remarks on the Life and Writings of Dr Jonathan Swift* (1751), written six years after its subject's death.

Boyle was also a close friend of Alexander Pope and Samuel Johnson. In the same year as his biography of Swift appeared, he was responsible for a highly regarded translation of the *Letters of Pliny*.

# Boyle, Kay (1903-1992)

US writer. Boyle joined the American expatriate community in Europe in 1923, returning to America after World War II as the *New Yorker*'s European Correspondent. A number of Boyle's 50 books drew on her European experience. She won two O Henry Awards for short stories, collections of which include *Thirty* 

### Boz

pseudonym under which Charles <u>Dickens</u> published a collection of satires on institutions, pictures of private individuals, and fairy tales of the vulgarity of his world (originally written for the *Morning Chronicle*), with the title *Sketches by Boz* 1836.

The *Pickwick Papers* was first published under the same name 1836-37. Boz was, in fact, a nickname of his brother.

# Bo Zhu Yi (or Po Chü-i) (772-846)

Chinese poet. President from 841 of the imperial war department, he criticized government policy and wrote poems dealing with the social problems of his age. He is said to have checked his work with an old peasant woman for clarity of expression.

### Brackenridge, Hugh Henry (1748-1816)

Scottish-born author and judge. Brackenridge emigrated to the USA as a child. He helped to establish the first newspaper and bookstore in frontier Pittsburgh and went on to become a Supreme Court Justice. He is best known for *Modern Chivalry* (1792-1815), regarded as the first novel based in the American West and still a pertinent satire of the social and political conditions of the era.

## Bradbury, Malcolm (Stanley) (1932-2000)

English novelist and critic. His fiction includes comic and satiric portrayals of provincial British and US campus life: *Eating People is Wrong* (1959) (his first novel), *Stepping Westward* (1965), and *The History Man* (1975). *Dr Criminale* (1992) is an academic satire with a 1990s setting. His critical works include *The Modern American Novel* (1983) and *The Modern British Novel* (1993). He was knighted in 1999.

## Bradbury, Ray(mond) Douglas (1920-)

US author. He is best known as a writer of science fiction, a genre he helped make 'respectable' to a wider readership. His work is concerned with the hazards of

unregulated technology and shows nostalgia for small-town Midwestern life, and includes *The Martian Chronicles* (1950), *Fahrenheit 451* (1953), *R is for Rocket, S is for Space* (1962), *Something Wicked This Way Comes* (1962), and *Yestermorrow* (1991).

Some of his short stories are collected in *The Stories of Ray Bradbury* (1980) and *One More for the Road* (2002). He also has written several volumes of poetry, television and motion-picture screenplays, radio dramas, and children's stories. He was awarded the National Book Award's 2000 medal for distinguished contribution to American letters.

# Braddon, Mary Elizabeth (1837-1915)

English novelist. Her first best-seller was *Lady Audley's Secret* (1862) and she went on to write about 70 novels in all. Most were sensational stories of murder, blackmail, and intrigue, but they also had feminist undertones and presented a challenge to Victorian morality.

Several of her books first appeared as serials in various magazines. She edited several herself, including the *Belgravia* 1866-99.

Other novels include Aurora Floyd (1863), Henry Dunbar (1864), Birds of Prey (1867), and Ishmael (1884).

# Bradford, Barbara Taylor (1933-)

English novelist. She is internationally known for her best-selling romantic trilogy, *A Woman of Substance* (1979), *Hold the Dream* (1985), and *To Be the Best* (1988). Bradford writes about strong, adaptable women triumphing in a man's world due to their intellect and indomitable spirit.

Bradford was born in Leeds, and worked as a journalist specializing in interior design, before leaving for the USA, where she now lives. Her early publications, books of domestic advice such as *How to Solve Your Decorating Problems* and three volumes of *How to be a Perfect Wife*, appeared during the 1960s and 1970s.

# Bradford, William (1663-1752)

English-born printer. Emigrating to Pennsylvania in 1685, he set up the first colonial printing press outside New England and the first colonial paper mill. Moving to New York, Bradford founded that colony's first paper, the *New York Gazette*, in 1725.

# Bradley, A(ndrew) C(ecil) (1851-1935)

English literary critic and scholar. His study of *Hamlet*, *King Lear*, *Othello*, and *Macbeth* in *Shakespearean Tragedy* (1904) looked at the plays in terms of their major characters, psychology, and textual imagery. His *Oxford Lectures on Poetry* (1909) were delivered while he was professor of poetry at Oxford 1901-06.

### Bradley, Edward (1827-1889)

English humorous writer and cleric. As a contributor to *Punch*, under the pen-name Cuthbert Bede, he was well known to his contemporaries. He is remembered now for his *Adventures of Mr Verdant Green*, an Oxford Freshman 1853.

### Bradley, Katharine Harris

English writer; her works with Edith Cooper were published under the pseudonym Michael <u>Field</u>.

## Bradshaw, Henry (1831-1886)

English scholar and librarian. His discovery 1857 of the *Book of Deer* threw new light on ancient Celtic languages and literature, as did another discovery of manuscripts containing the earliest remains of the Waldensian language and literature.

## Bradstreet, Anne (c. 1612-1672)

#### born Anne Dudley

English-born American poet. Her volume of verse, *The Tenth Muse*, was published in London, England, in 1650. Her poems were pious but often also witty, and show an intense imagination applied to domestic and colonial life.

## Brady, Nicholas (1659-1726)

Irish poet and cleric. The metrical version of the psalms he made in collaboration with Nahum <u>Tate</u> gradually superseded the older version of Thomas Sternhold (1500-1549) and John Hopkins (died 1570). Brady also wrote a tragedy, *The Rape* (1652).

## Bragg, Melvyn (1939-)

English television presenter and executive, also author, who began presenting and editing the subsequently long-running ITV arts documentary series *The South Bank Show* in 1978. He was head of arts at London Weekend Television (LWT) from 1982 until 1990, when he was appointed LWT's controller of arts and also chairman of Border Television. He has also presented *Start the Week* for BBC Radio. In 1997 he conducted a revealing Channel 4 studio interview with Dennis Potter, made shortly before Potter died. His novel *A Time to Dance* was adapted for television in 1992. His novel *The Soldier's Return*, written in 1999, won excellent reviews and is considered by critics to be his best novel to date. Melvyn Bragg was created a life peer in 1998.

# Braine, John (Gerard) (1922-1986)

English novelist. His novel *Room at the Top* (1957) cast Braine as one of the leading <u>Angry Young Men</u> of the period. It created the character of Joe Lampton, one of the first of the northern working-class antiheroes, who reappears in *Life at the Top* (1962).

# Braithwaite, Edward Ricardo (1920-)

Guyanese author. His writings explore the problems and dilemmas faced by humans in inhumane situations. His experiences as a teacher in London prompted *To Sir With Love* (1959). His books *Reluctant Neighbours* (1972) and *Honorary White* (1975) deal with black-white relations.

Born in British Guiana (now Guyana) in 1920, he attended City College (now City University of New York) in 1940, and then Cambridge University, England, where he received a master's degree in physics. He was a Royal Air Force Pilot in World War II. Unable to find employment afterwards, Braithwaite became a teacher, and then a social worker, resulting in his second novel *Paid Servant* (1962). Braithwaite continued to write after serving as ambassador to the United Nations (UN) for Guyana, as Guyana's ambassador to Venezuela, and working for UNESCO in Paris, France. He has also taught English at New York University and Florida State University. He is writer in residence and a teacher of English at Howard University in Washington, DC, where he is editor of the annual publication *Faces and Voices: An Anthology of Student Literature*.

# Braithwaite, William Stanley (Beaumont) (1878-1962)

US writer and editor. Literary critic of the Boston Daily Evening Transcript until

1929 and editor of the influential annual *Anthology of Magazine Verse*, Braithwaite did much to promote American poetry. He encouraged many young African-American writers and wrote much himself. He won the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People's prestigious Spingarn Medal in 1918.

Braithwaite joined the faculty of the first African-American graduate school at Atlanta University in 1935. His *Selected Poems* was published in 1948.

Bramah, Ernest (1868-1942)

pen-name of Ernest Brammah Smith

English short-story writer. He created the characters of Kai Lung, a Chinese philosopher who appears in *The Wallet of Kai Lung* (1900), *Kai Lung Unrolls his Mat* (1928), and other works; and Max Carrados, a blind detective, hero of *The Eyes of Max Carrados* (1923) and *Max Carrados Mysteries* (1927).

### Brand, Max

pen-name of Frederick Faust

US novelist and poet. See Faust, Frederick.

## Brandes, Georg (Morris Cohen) (1842-1927)

Danish writer and literary critic. His studies of European literature were translated into English as *Main Currents in Nineteenth-century Literature* (six volumes) 1901-05. He produced influential studies on Henrik Ibsen 1898, Shakespeare 1895-96, Goethe 1915, Voltaire 1916-17, Julius Caesar 1918, Michelangelo 1921, and others.

## Branner, Hans Christian (1903-1966)

Danish novelist and dramatist. Much of his writing is connected with World War II; it includes the two long stories *Angst* (1944) and *Bjergene/The Mountains* (1953) and the novels *Rytteren/The Riding Master* (1949) and *Ingen kender Natten/No Man Knows the Night* (1955). He also wrote many fine short stories.

Brant (Brandt), Sebastian (c. 1457-1521)

German humanist and poet. One of the major figures of German Renaissance literature, Brant is best known for his long satirical poem *Das Narrenschiff/The Ship of Fools* (1494), which ridiculed the follies of his age. An immediate popular success - not least because of its outstanding woodcuts - it went into numerous editions and was quickly translated into Latin, French, Dutch, and English (in 1509 and 1517).

Born in Strasbourg, Brant taught and practised law, publishing several legal treatises, and eventually became city secretary of Strasbourg. His wide-ranging interests expressed themselves in poetry (composed initially in Latin but increasingly in German), translations from Latin and medieval German, historical works, and secular pamphlets and broadsheets.

It was his *Das Narrenschiff*, however, in which he satirizes 110 types of fool (such as the complacent priest and deceitful cook) that brought him fame and that had a lasting impact on the development of German literature. It probably gave <u>Erasmus</u> the inspiration for his satire *In Praise of Folly* (1511). It was first translated into English by Alexander <u>Barclay</u> as *Shyppe of Fooles* in 1509.

## Brasch, Charles (1909-1973)

New Zealand poet. Together with Denis Glover and James Bertram, he founded the influential literary quarterly *Landfall* in 1947. As its editor until 1966, he played an important role in publishing, criticizing, and encouraging New Zealand literature. His poetry, orthodox in *Disputed Ground* (1948) and *The Estate* (1957), became more individual with *Ambulando* (1964), *Not Far Off* (1969), and the posthumous *Home Ground* (1974).

## Brathwaite, Edward Kamau (1930-)

West Indian historian and poet. Using calypso and work songs as well as more literary verse forms, he has explored the ways in which the West Indian legacy of slavery has been transcended by the traditions of ritual, music, and dance originating in West Africa, particularly in the long poem *Masks* (1968). Other works include *Mother Poem* (1977), *Sun Poem* (1982), and the nonfiction work *The Folk Culture of the Slaves of Jamaica* (1970).

Born in Barbados, he has combined an academic career at the University of the West Indies with an imaginative and scholarly commitment to the specifically African cultural heritage of the Caribbean.

### Brautigan, Richard Gary (1935-1984)

US novelist. He lived in San Francisco, the setting for many of his playfully inventive

and humorous short fictions, often written as deadpan parodies. He became a cult figure in the late 1960s with such works as *A Confederate General from Big Sur* (1964), his best-seller *Trout Fishing in America* (1967), and *In Watermelon Sugar* (1968). His last novels, before committing suicide, were *The Tokyo-Montana Express* (1980) and *So The Wind Won't Blow It All Away* (1982).

### Brave New World

novel by Aldous <u>Huxley</u> published in 1932. It is set in the future when Humanity is totally controlled on scientific principles by eugenics and drugs. A Savage from outside the boundaries is brought inside and is ultimately maddened by the emotional triviality and meaninglessness of this society's life. The ironic title is taken from Shakespeare's *The Tempest* when Miranda delightedly exclaims 'Oh brave new world that has such people in it'.

## Brazil, Angela (1868-1947)

English writer. She founded the genre of girls' school stories, writing over 50; among them are *A Pair of Schoolgirls* (1912), *Captain Peggie* (1924), and *The New School at Scarsdale* (1940).

# Brecht, Bertolt (Eugen Berthold Friedrich) (1898-1956)

German dramatist and poet. He was one of the most influential figures in 20thcentury theatre. A committed Marxist, he sought to develop an 'epic theatre' which aimed to destroy the 'suspension of disbelief' usual in the theatre and so encourage audiences to develop an active and critical attitude to a play's subject. He adapted John Gay's *The Beggar's Opera* as *Die Dreigroschenoper/The Threepenny Opera* (1928), set to music by Kurt Weill. Later plays include *Mutter Courage und ihre Kinder/Mother Courage and her Children* (1941), set during the Thirty Years' War, and *Der kaukasische Kreidekreis/The Caucasian Chalk Circle* (1945).

As an anti-Nazi, Brecht left Germany in 1933 for Scandinavia and the USA; he became an Austrian citizen after World War II. He established the Berliner Ensemble theatre group in East Germany in 1949, and in the same year published *Kleines Organon für das Theater/Little Treatise on the Theatre*, a concise expression of his theatrical philosophy. His other works include Leben des Galilei/The Life of Galileo (1938), Der gute Mensch von Setzuan/The Good Woman of Setzuan (1943), and Der aufhaltsame Aufstieg der Arturo Ui/The Resistible Rise of Arturo Ui (1958). Dutch poet and dramatist. His devotional and love poetry often achieves a mastery of formal control over deep and turbulent feelings, and his farces (*Klucht van de koe* 1612 and *Klucht van de molenaar* 1613) and comedies reveal sympathy for workers and the poor.

### Breen, Patrick (died 1868)

US pioneer and diarist who was born in Ireland. During the winter of 1846-47, he kept a diary of the stark events of deaths, quarrels, and eventual rescue of the surviving members of his family. He came to the USA in 1828. With his wife and seven children, he joined the ill-fated expedition of pioneers known as the Donner Party. All members of the Breen family survived the harsh winter and they settled in San Benito County, California.

## Breidfjord, Sigurdur (1798-1846)

Icelandic poet, the finest of the rimur. His *Numa rimur*, composed in Greenland 1831-34 is one of the masterpieces of Iceland's 19th-century literature.

### Breitinger, Johann Jakob (1701-1776)

Swiss scholar and writer. His critical works had a great reforming influence on German literature and in this he was associated with Johann Bodmer. His writings include *Kritische Dichtkunst* (1740), a critique on the art of poetry.

### Breitmann, Hans

US writer; see Charles Godfrey Leland.

## Bremer, Fredrika (1810-1865)

Swedish novelist. She introduced the realistic family novel, gaining international recognition with *Familjen H/The H Family* (1831). She made studies of family life in both Europe and the USA, and became involved in social reform, especially the emancipation of women.

### Bremond, Henri (1865-1933)

French critic. His main work is the 11-volume Histoire littéraire du sentiment religieux en France/A Literary History of Religious Thought in France (1916-32).

### Brennan, Christopher John (1870-1932)

Australian Symbolist poet. He was influenced by Baudelaire and Mallarmé. Although one of Australia's greatest poets, he is virtually unknown outside his native country. His complex, idiosyncratic verse includes *Poems* (1914) and *A Chant of Doom and Other Verses* (1918).

### Brenner, Joseph Hayyim (1881-1921)

Jewish novelist, born in Bulgaria. He served in the Russian army, but fled to London in 1905 and settled in 1908 in Palestine, where he founded the Histadruth, the general confederation of labour. He was killed in rioting in 1921. His novels describe his experiences of life in Russia, the East End of London, and the early Jewish settlements in Palestine.

## Brentano, Klemens (1778-1842)

German Romantic writer. He published a seminal collection of folk tales and songs with Ludwig von <u>Arnim</u> (*Des Knaben Wunderhorn/The Boy's Magic Horn*) (1805-08), and popularized the legend of the Lorelei (a rock in the River Rhine). He also wrote mystic religious verse, as in *Romanzen von Rosenkranz/Romances of the Rosary* (1852), and short novels.

## Brent-Dyer, (Gladys) Elinor M(ay) (1894-1969)

#### born Elinor Dyer

English children's writer. Author of 98 schoolgirl novels, her fourth book, *The School at the Chalet* (1925), established her popular 'Chalet School' series, which were set in an English school in the Austrian Tyrol and featured the heroine Jo Bettany.

Brent-Dyer was born in South Shields, Tyne and Wear, and educated at Leeds University, later becoming headmistress of the Margaret Roper Girls' School in Hereford. The first of her schoolgirl novels, *Gerry Goes to School*, appeared in 1922, and the final book in the series, *Prefects of the Chalet School*, was published posthumously in 1970.

# Breton, André (1896-1966)

French writer and poet. He was among the leaders of the Dada art movement and was also a founder of surrealism, publishing *Le Manifeste de surréalisme/Surrealist Manifesto* (1924).

Les Champs magnétiques/Magnetic Fields (1921), written with fellow Dadaist Philippe Soupault, was an experiment in automatic writing. Breton soon turned to surrealism. Influenced by communism and the theories of psychoanalyst Sigmund Freud, he believed that on both a personal and a political level surrealist techniques could shatter the inhibiting order and propriety of the conscious mind (bourgeois society) and release deep reserves of creative energy.

# Breton, Nicholas (c. 1545-c. 1626)

English poet and satirist. A very versatile writer, he produced many works of poetry, including *The Passionate Shepherd* (1604). His prose works include *Wit's Trenchmour* (1597) (about angling) and *Strange News out of Divers Countries* (1622).

# Breytenbach, Breyten (1939-)

South African writer. In 1975 he was sentenced to seven years in prison for his involvement with the anti-apartheid movement. His prison autobiography, *The True Confessions of an Albino Terrorist* (1984), is regarded as a classic of prison literature. He has also published novels noted for their blend of fantasy and realism, such as *Memory of Snow and Dust* (1989), and volumes of poetry in Afrikaans, including *And Death White As Words* (1978).

Much of Breytenbach's writing, including the travel commentaries *A Season in Paradise* (1981), *Return to Paradise* (1993), and *Dogheart* (1999), explores the anguish of the dissident who has rejected his own Afrikaner heritage but can never quite be African. Other works include the novel *Mouroir: Mirror Notes of a Novel* (1984), and the volumes of poetry *In Africa Even the Flies are Happy* (1978) and *Judas Eye* (1988). A volume of non-fiction, *End Papers: Essays, Letters, Articles of Faith, Workbook Notes*, appeared in 1986.

### Brickhill, Paul Chester Jerome (1916-1991)

Australian writer. His book *The Great Escape* (1951) was based on his own experience as a prisoner of war during World War II. It was filmed in 1963. He also

## Bridel, Philippe Sirice (1757-1845)

#### called 'le doyen Bridel'

Swiss writer. His *Poésies helvétiennes/Swiss Poems*, with their picturesque settings and allusions to the nation's past, helped give Swiss literature written in French a stronger sense of individuality.

### **Brideshead Revisited**

novel (1945) by Evelyn <u>Waugh</u>. The plot revolves around the deep fascination Charles Ryder feels for the Roman Catholic Flyte family who own the great house, Brideshead. The conclusion contains a melancholy affirmation of spiritual values in spite of human unhappiness. It marked a development beyond Waugh's previous career as a satirist. The book was successfully dramatized for television in the 1980s.

### Bridges, Robert Seymour (1844-1930)

English poet and critic. He was poet laureate from 1913 to 1930. His topographical poems and lyrics, which he began to publish in 1873, demonstrate a great command of rhythm and melody. He wrote *The Testament of Beauty* (1929), a long philosophical poem. In 1918 he edited and published posthumously the poems of Gerard Manley <u>Hopkins</u>.

Sensitivity to the influence of the English countryside and history characterized Bridges's work. He was a lyric poet of classical purity and sometimes of remarkable beauty. His *Collected Poems* (1912) were widely acclaimed and enlarged editions followed in 1936 and 1953.

# Brierley, Benjamin (1825-1895)

English writer. He wrote in Lancashire dialect. In 1869 he started *Ben Brierley's Journal*, a weekly, which continued until 1891. He wrote several works under the pseudonym 'Ab-o'-th'-Yate', including *Tales and Sketches of Lancashire Life* (1862-63).

Briggs, Raymond Redvers (1934-)

English writer and illustrator of children's books including *Father Christmas* (1973) and *The Snowman* (1979), both of which use his hallmark comic-strip format and have been made into successful animated films.

Other works include Father Christmas Goes on Holiday (1975), Fungus the Bogeyman (1977), Gentleman Jim (1980), When the Wind Blows (1983), and The Tin-Pot Foreign General and the Old Iron Woman (1985). He was awarded the Kate Greenaway Medal in 1966 and 1973, and won Children's Author of the Year in 1992.

## **Brighton Rock**

novel by Graham <u>Greene</u> published in 1938. Seventeen-year-old Pinkie, seeking distinction through crime, commits a squalid murder. He marries Rose, a fellow Roman Catholic, to prevent her giving evidence against him, but he is finally brought to justice through the efforts of Ida, an acquaintance of the murdered man. Although there are detective story elements, the main interest of the novel lies in its early expression of Greene's lifelong struggle with moral and spiritual questions.

# Brink, André P(hilippus) (1935-)

South African novelist, dramatist, and critic. One of the most talented and prolific of modern Afrikaner writers, Brink has published in Afrikaans and in English and has received international recognition both for his opposition to apartheid and for his fiction. Brink's first works were largely apolitical, but the novel *Kennis van die Aand/Looking on Darkness* (1973), which treated the theme of interracial sexual relations, was banned in South Africa as was 'n Droë wit seisoen/A Dry White Season (1979; filmed 1989), a story about a white liberal investigating the death of a black political activist.

A lecturer in Afrikaans at Rhodes University 1961-91, Brink was a leading figure in the literary movement known as the Sestigers ('people of the sixties'), a small group of Afrikaner writers who challenged their own tradition by exploring such subjects as religion and sex. Brink's later novels, which display his tendency for metafictional strategies, include *On the Contrary* (1993), *Devil's Valley* (1998), *The Other Side of Silence* (2002), and *Before I Forget* (2004). Since 1991 he has been professor of English literature at the University of Cape Town.

## Brittain, Vera (Mary) (1893-1970)

English socialist writer. During World War I, she was a nurse to troops overseas from 1915 to 1919, as told in her book *Testament of Youth* (1933); *Testament of Friendship* (1940) commemorates English novelist Winifred Holtby.

Brittain was born in Newcastle-under-Lyme, Staffordshire, and studied at Oxford University. After World War I she worked as a freelance journalist. During the 1920s she was active in the feminist 'Six Point' group. She married political scientist George Catlin (1896-1979); their daughter is the politician Shirley Williams, aspects of whose childhood are recorded in her mother's *Testament of Experience* (1957).

### Broch, Hermann (1886-1951)

Austrian novelist. He used experimental techniques in *Die Schlafwandler/The Sleepwalkers* (1932), *Der Tod des Vergil/The Death of Virgil* (1945), and *Die Schuldlosen/The Guiltless* (1950), a novel in 11 linked stories. He moved to the USA in 1938 to avoid persecution by the Nazis.

## Brod, Max (1884-1968)

Czech novelist, composer, and biographer. He was a close friend of Franz Kafka, whose work he promoted and published; he also wrote a biography of the latter. He himself wrote 20 novels, including *Tycho Brahe* (1928), *Galileo* (1948), *Reubeni* (1925), and *Unambo* (1949). Much of his writing has a Jewish theme; an important philosophical work, *Paganism, Christianity, and Judaism* (1921), helped to establish him as a leading Jewish thinker. At his death in Tel Aviv, he left behind him almost 30 years of creative work in music, drama, and Jewish literature. Brod was born in Prague, in the modern-day Czech Republic.

# Brodkey, Harold (born Aaron Roy Weintraub) (1930-1996)

US writer and poet. He was known for his essays, poetry, and short stories, such as *First Love and Other Sorrows* (1957), and *Stories in an Almost Classical Mode* (1988). A detailed stylist, he spent many years working on the long, autobiographical *A Party of Animals*.

Brodkey was born in Alton, Illinois. His mother died when he was very young and he was adopted. He studied at Harvard, but little is known about this reclusive writer except information gleaned from his writings. Some critics say he had an obsessive attachment to his own biography, excerpts of which were published as *Women and Angels* (1985).

### Brodsky, Joseph Alexandrovich (1940-1996)

Russian poet. He emigrated to the USA in 1972. His work, often dealing with themes of exile, is admired for its wit and economy of language, particularly in its use of

understatement. Many of his poems, written in Russian, have been translated into English (*A Part of Speech* (1980)). Later in his career he also wrote in English. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1987 and became US poet laureate in 1991.

# Bromfield, Louis Brucker (1896-1956)

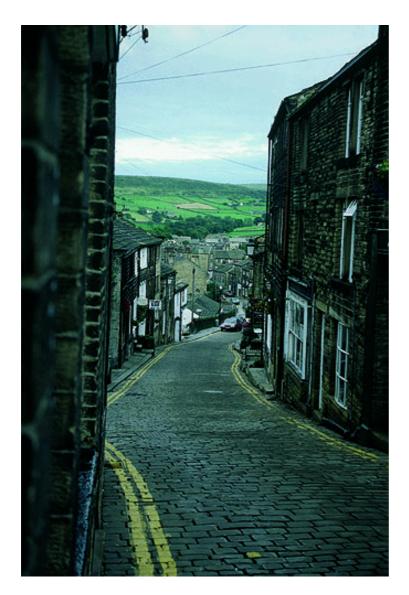
US novelist. Among his books are *The Strange Case of Miss Annie Spragg* (1928), *The Rains Came* (1937), and *Mrs Parkington* (1943), dealing with the golden age of New York society.

# Brontë

three English novelists, daughters of a Yorkshire parson. Charlotte <u>Brontë</u> (1816-1855), notably with <u>Jane Eyre</u> (1847) and <u>Villette</u> (1853), reshaped autobiographical material into vivid narrative. Emily <u>Brontë</u> (1818-1848) in <u>Wuthering Heights</u> (1847) expressed the intensity and nature mysticism which also pervades her poetry (*Poems*, 1846). The more modest talent of Anne <u>Brontë</u> (1820-1849) produced Agnes Grey (1847) and The Tenant of Wildfell Hall (1848).

The Brontës were brought up by an aunt in their father's rectory (now a museum) at <u>Haworth</u> in Yorkshire. In 1846 the sisters published a volume of poems under the pennames Currer (Charlotte), Ellis (Emily), and Acton (Anne) Bell. In 1847 (using the same names), they published the novels *Jane Eyre*, *Wuthering Heights*, and *Agnes Grey*. During 1848-49 Emily, Anne, and their brother Patrick Branwell (1817-1848) all died of tuberculosis, aided in Branwell's case by alcohol and opium addiction; his portrait of the sisters survives. Charlotte died during pregnancy in 1855. The sisters share a memorial in Westminster Abbey, London.

Brontë



(Image © Research Machines plc)

Haworth, a village in West Yorkshire, England, and the home of the Brontë sisters. It was at Haworth, during the first half of the 19th century, that Charlotte wrote *Jane Eyre*, Anne wrote *The Tenant of Wildfell Hall* and, most famously, Emily wrote *Wuthering Heights*, the story of the doomed love of Cathy and Heathcliff.

## Brontë, Anne (1820-1849)

English novelist and member of the <u>Brontë</u> family. Although considered to have a more modest talent than her sisters Charlotte <u>Brontë</u> and Emily <u>Brontë</u>, her works include the fiction *Agnes Grey* (1847) and *The Tenant of Wildfell Hall* (1848).

Anne successfully held posts as a governess in England. She was particularly close to Emily, and shared with her an imaginary world they called 'Gondal', which gave rise to the bulk of Emily's poetry. Her own verse has less distinction, and her reputation has been overshadowed by that of her sisters. She died at Scarborough of tuberculosis.

# Brontë, Charlotte (1816-1855)

English novelist and member of the <u>Brontë</u> family. Her most famous novels are <u>Jane</u> <u>Eyre</u> (1847) and *Villette* (1853).

After the early death of her mother, Charlotte attended a school for clergymen's daughters at Cowan Bridge with her older sisters, Maria and Elizabeth, and Emily <u>Brontë</u>. She suffered intensely, watching the health of her older sisters rapidly deteriorate; after their deaths from consumption Emily and Charlotte were brought home. In 1831 Charlotte went to another school, at Roe Head House. This was a happy period during which she made lifelong friends and correspondents. However, she returned to Haworth in 1832, owing to ill health. Charlotte married her father's curate, A B Nicholls, in 1854, and died during pregnancy.

Throughout her early years, Charlotte was writing and, with her brother, Branwell, she created an elaborate imaginary world, described and illustrated in many volumes of verse and prose. These works illustrate the native fertility of mind which later, disciplined by contact with the outside world, produced Charlotte's great novels. From 1835 to 1838 she worked as a teacher for her former headmistress, but this ended in a quarrel and estrangement. Various posts as governess in private families proved equally unhappy for Charlotte. She was, however, ambitious for herself and her sisters, and her aunt agreed to support them in the venture of a small private school. To improve her French for this purpose, Charlotte moved to Brussels in 1842. After her return in 1844, Charlotte's letters to her teacher, M Héger, show that she was deeply and unhappily in love with him.

Brontë



#### (Image © Billie Love)

English novelist Charlotte Brontë, eldest of the three literary Brontë sisters. She abandoned a career in teaching to write poetry, published under the male pseudonym Currer Bell. Charlotte was the only sister to achieve recognition during her lifetime, for her second and most famous novel *Jane Eyre*(1847).

## Brontë, Emily (1818-1848)

English novelist and member of the <u>Brontë</u> family. Her works include <u>Wuthering</u> <u>Heights</u> (1847) and her *Poems* (1846).

Emily's unusual character and intellect seem to have been unrecognized by her family until quite late in her short life. She was passionately attached to the wild countryside around her home, and always pined in any other surroundings. In her only novel, *Wuthering Heights*, she portrays the influence of the elements and elemental passions on human souls; the strangeness of the characters contrasts with the realistic description of the bleak moorland setting, yet the two are inseparable.

She deliberately rejected the idea that her stay in Brussels (1842-43) might influence her, and chose rather to retain her originality of thought. Her sister Charlotte Brontë was astonished by her poetry and regarded her work as unparalleled. She died from tuberculosis.

### Brooke, Charlotte (c. 1740-1793)

Irish translator and anthologist. Her *Reliques of Irish Poetry* (1789) is a primary anthology, with extensive notes and introductory comments, of poems and songs that she translated from Irish into English. Her work included the first translations of songs by Carolan. Born in Rantavan, County Cavan, she was educated by her father, the novelist Henry Brooke (1703-1783), and published an edition of his poetry in 1792. Brooke is now seen as a major force in the development of cultural nationalism.

## Brooke, Henry (c. 1703-1783)

Irish novelist and poet. The only one of his works now read is the novel *The Fool of Quality* (1766-70). His poem *Universal Beauty* (1735) was admired by the satirist Alexander Pope, and is said to have suggested Erasmus Darwin's long poem *Botanic Garden*.

# Brooke, Rupert (Chawner) (1887-1915)

English poet. He stands as a symbol of the World War I 'lost generation'. His five war sonnets, including 'The Soldier', were published after his death. Other notable poems are 'Grantchester' (1912) and 'The Great Lover', written in 1914. Brooke's war sonnets were published in *1914 and Other Poems* (1915); they caught the prevailing early wartime spirit of selfless patriotism.

Brooke was born in Rugby, Warwickshire. He was awarded a fellowship at King's, his own college at Cambridge University, in 1913, but having had a nervous breakdown he travelled abroad. He toured America (*Letters from America*, 1916), New Zealand, and the South Seas, and in 1914 became an officer in the Royal Naval Volunteer Reserve. After fighting at Antwerp, Belgium, he sailed for the Dardanelles, but died of blood poisoning on the Greek island of Skyros, where he is buried.

## Brooke, Stopford Augustus (1832-1916)

English cleric and scholar. He became chaplain-in-ordinary to Queen Victoria in 1875, but left the Church of England in 1880 and until 1895 was Unitarian minister at

Bedford Chapel. He published, among other works, *Freedom in the Church of England* (1871), *Theology in the English Poets* (1874), and *History of Early English Literature* (1892).

### Brookner, Anita (1928-)

English novelist and art historian. She was Reader at the Courtauld Institute 1977-88, and Slade Professor of Fine Art at Cambridge 1967-68, the first woman to hold the post. Her novel *Hotel du Lac* (1984) won the Booker Prize.

Her skill in fiction is in the subtle portrayal of hopelessness and lack of vitality in her female characters. Her other novels include *A Misalliance* (1986), *Latecomers* (1988), *A Closed Eye* (1991), *Family Romance* (1993), *A Private View* (1994), *Altered States* (1996), *Falling Slowly* (1998), *Undue Influence* (1999), *The Next Big Thing* (2002), and *The Rules of Engagement* (2003). *Soundings* (1997) is a collection of lectures and reviews, and *Romanticism and its Discontents* (2000) is a historical survey about the romantic hero in writing and painting.

### Brooks, Cleanth (1906-1994)

US literary critic. He was the leading New Critic of the 1940s-1950s, recognized for his critical acuity in close readings of modern literature in 'The Well Wrought Urn' (1947) and other essays. He published important works on Milton, Thomas Percy, and William Faulkner.

He was born in Murray, Kentucky. He was a professor at Yale for almost thirty years 1946-75.

### Brooks, Gwendolyn (Elizabeth) (1917-2000)

US poet and novelist. In 1950 her verse narrative *Annie Allen* (1949) won the first Pulitzer Prize awarded to a black American woman. Other works include the volumes of verse *A Street in Bronzeville* (1945), *Selected Poems* (1963), and *Riot* (1970), and the novel *Maude Martha* (1953).

She was born in Topeka, Kansas, but based in Chicago. She was publicity director for the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People in Chicago in the 1930s. She taught at many institutions and succeeded Carl Sandburg as poet laureate of Illinois (1968). She was poetry consultant at the Library of Congress 1985-86.

US writer. She published *Judith*, *Esther and other Poems* (1820); an epic poem *Zophiel* (1834); and *Idomen*, *or the Vale of Yumuri* (1843), an autobiographical novel.

#### Brooks, Noah (1830-1903)

US journalist. A close adviser to President Abraham Lincoln, he later became editor of the *New York Tribune* and *New York Times* 1871-84. He also wrote two of the earliest boys' novels about baseball, *The Fairport Nine* (1880), and *Our Base Ball Club* (1884).

He was born in Castine, Maine, but moved west and cofounded a California paper, *The Daily Appeal* (1860). He became Washington correspondent of the *Sacramento Union*.

### Brooks, Van Wyck (1886-1963)

US literary critic and biographer. His five-volume *Makers and Finders: A History of the Writer in America, 1800-1915* (1936-52) was an influential series of critical works on US literature. The first volume *The Flowering of New England* (1936) won a Pulitzer Prize.

An earlier work, *America's Coming-of-Age* (1915), concerned the Puritan heritage and its effects on American literature. His other works include studies of Mark Twain, Henry James, and Ralph Waldo Emerson.

# Brophy, Brigid (Antonia) (1929-1995)

English writer. Opera is a frequent element in her work, for example in the novel *The Snow Ball* (1964). The narrator of *In Transit* (1969) is in the predicament of having forgotten his or her sex as well as identity.

Her lives of the artist Aubrey Beardsley (*Black and White*, 1968) and the writer Ronald Firbank (*Prancing Novelist*, 1973) were written as much in defence of her own views as the lives of her subjects, both flamboyant dandies. She also campaigned successfully for the introduction in the UK of public lending right.

# Brophy, John (1899-1965)

English novelist. His works include *The Bitter End* (1928) and *Waterfront* (1934), both set in his native Liverpool; the war stories *Immortal Sergeant* (1942) and

Spearhead (1943); and a novel about Shakespeare, Gentleman of Stratford (1939).

In 1930 he collaborated with the lexicographer Eric Partridge in *Songs and Slang of the British Soldier*, 1914-18.

### **Brother Antonius**

US poet; see William Everson.

### Brothers Karamazov, The

novel by Fyodor <u>Dostoevsky</u>, published 1879-80. It describes the reactions and emotions of four brothers after their father is murdered. One of them is falsely convicted of the crime, although his illegitimate brother is guilty.

#### Brown, Alice (1857-1948)

US writer. She takes New England life as her theme. Her collections of short stories include *Meadow Grass* (1895), *Tiverton Tales* (1899), and *Homespun and Gold* (1920), and her novels *The Day of His Youth* (1897) and *The Willoughbys* (1935).

#### Brown, Charles Brockden (1771-1810)

US novelist and magazine editor. He introduced the American Indian into fiction and is called the 'father of the American novel'. Inspired by the writings of William Godwin and Mrs Radcliffe, his *Wieland* (1798), *Ormond* (1799), *Edgar Huntly* (1799), and *Arthur Mervyn* (two volumes: 1799, 1800) imported the Gothic and fantastic traditions into US fiction.

#### Brown, Dan(iel) (1964-)

US writer. He is best known for his highly popular international bestseller *The Da Vinci Code* (2003), a historical thriller. His other novels include *Digital Fortress* (1999), *Angels and Demons* (2000), and *Deception Point* (2001). Like *The Da Vinci Code*, they involve secret societies, conspiracies, and code-breaking.

### Brown, George Douglas (1869-1902)

Scottish novelist. *House with the Green Shutters* (1901), written under the pseudonym George Douglas, represents some of the harder aspects of Scottish life; its harsh realism and tragic quality are in stark contrast with the work of the sentimental, rural Kailyard School.

### Brown, George Mackay (1921-1996)

Scottish writer. He published volumes of poetry and short stories collected in *A Calendar of Love* (1967) and *A Time to Keep* (1969). He also wrote historical essays in *An Orkney Tapestry* (1969); a play, *A Spell for Green Corn* (1970); and a novel, *Greenvoe* (1972), all dealing with the peasant life and values of his native Orkney.

### Brown, Ivor John Carnegie (1891-1974)

British journalist and writer. Among his works are *The Meaning of Democracy* (1920), *Masques and Phases* (1927), and *Brown Studies* (1930). From 1942 to 1948 he edited the *Observer*.

# Brown, John (1715-1766)

#### called 'Estimate Brown'

English poet and dramatist. He defended utilitarianism as a philosophy in his 'Essay on the Characteristics of Shaftesbury' (1751). His *Estimate of the Manners and Principles of the Times* (1757), a vehement satire on luxury, was exceedingly popular, and his *Barbarossa* (1754) was played with success by David Garrick.

#### Brown, John (1810-1882)

Scottish essayist. His essays are simple and unaffected; they include 'Rab and his Friends' (1859; about a dog) and 'Marjorie Fleming' (1863), and were collected in *Horae Subsecivae* (1858-82) and *John Leech* (1877).

# Brown, Margaret Wise (1910-1952)

US author. She was a gifted writer of many innovative books of verse and stories for children, notably *Goodnight Moon* (1947). She died suddenly in France after an

operation for appendicitis.

Born in New York City, she studied in Switzerland (1923-25) and Hollins College, Virginia (1928-32). She worked for the Bureau of Educational Experiments (later Bank Street School) as a publisher, edited children's books for William R Scott 1938-41, and divided her time between New York City and Vinal Haven, Maine.

### Brown, Rita Mae (1944-)

US writer. Involved in feminist and radical lesbian activism in the 1970s, she later withdrew to concentrate on writing. Her zesty, best-selling first novel, *Rubyfruit Jungle* (1973), was followed by other fiction, poems, essays, and screenplays. Later books include *Bingo* (1988).

She was born in Hanover, Pennsylvania, and studied at New York University.

# Brown, Sterling (Allen) (1901-1989)

US poet, teacher, and writer. He is known as a poet and a founder of black literary criticism, as in *Negro Poetry and Drama* (1937), but above all he was an influential teacher and encourager of black American writers before they were widely recognized.

He was born in Washington, DC. He graduated from Williams College in 1925, then studied at Harvard for his masters degree, and was based in Washington, DC. He taught primarily at Howard University 1929-69.

Brown, Thomas (1663-1704)

English satirical writer. He is said to have escaped expulsion from Christ Church College, Oxford, by spontaneously adapting Martial's epigram 'Non amo te, Sabidi' as 'I do not love thee, Doctor Fell' when asked for a translation by the dean.

#### Brown, Thomas Edward (1830-1897)

Manx poet. He published a number of poems, the chief of which were in Manx dialect, including *Fo'c'sle Yarns* (1881), *The Doctor and other Poems* (1887), *The Manx Witch* (1889), and *Old John* (1893).

# Brown, William Wells (born 'William') (c. 1816-c. 1884)

US reformer, writer, and abolitionist. His pioneering works of black fiction and history include his autobiography *Narrative of William W Brown, A Fugitive Slave* (1847), *The Negro in the American Rebellion* (1867), and *Clotel, or The President's Daughter* (1853), long thought to be the first novel by a black American.

He was born in Lexington, Kentucky. After adopting the name of the Wells Brown who assisted his escape from slavery (1834), he lectured and wrote widely on abolition and other reform causes. His main novel was based on the rumour that Thomas Jefferson had fathered a child with a slave woman; when published in the USA in 1864 it was delicately retitled, *Clotelle: A Tale of the Southern States*.

# Browne, Charles Farrar (born Brown) (1834-1867)

#### pen-name Artemus Ward

US writer and humorist. He created the blustery character Artemus Ward, through whom he satirized contemporary society in the Cleveland *Plain Dealer* letters 1857-59. This series of letters, describing his observations and thoughts, were part of the ongoing American tradition of 'unlettered' colloquial writing culminating in Mark Twain's work. He also invented the comic lecture.

He was born in Waterford, Maine. Browne joined *Vanity Fair*'s staff in 1859 and after 1861 toured the USA and England impersonating Ward. His comic writings include the books *Artemus Ward: His Book* (1862) and *Artemus Ward: His Travels* (1865). He died of tuberculosis while on a lecture tour in England.

# Browne, William (c. 1590-c. 1645)

English poet. His chief works were *Britannia's Pastorals* (1613-16), *The Shepheard's Pipe* (1614; with three friends), and *The Inner Temple Masque* (1615; printed 1772).

He was the author of an epitaph on the Countess of Pembroke, long attributed to Ben Jonson, beginning 'Underneath this sable hearse'.

# Brownell, William Crary (1851-1928)

US critic. His works include *French Art* (1892) and studies of Victorian and American 'prose masters' (1901, 1909). Other works are *Criticism* (1914), *Standards* (1917), and *The Genius of Style* (1924).

# Browning, Elizabeth (Moulton) Barrett (1806-1861)

English poet. In 1844 she published *Poems* (including 'The Cry of the Children'), which led to her friendship with and secret marriage to Robert <u>Browning</u> in 1846. She wrote *Sonnets from the Portuguese* (1850), a collection of love lyrics, during their courtship. She wrote strong verse about social injustice and oppression in Victorian England, and she was a learned, fiery, and metrically experimental poet.

Elizabeth Barrett was born near Durham. Her early years were spent in Herefordshire, but later, after a financial setback, the family lived in London. She suffered illness as a child, led a sheltered and restricted life, and was from the age of 13 regarded by her father as an invalid. In this cramped atmosphere her chief interests were literary. A brief stay in Torquay, Devon, with her brother Edward ended with his death by drowning in 1840. With the appearance of *Poems* (1844), her reputation was established. She was freed from her father's oppressive influence by her marriage to Robert Browning and moved to Italy in 1846. The couple settled in Florence, where their son Robert was born in 1849. Her health improved and she produced her mature works, including a new and greatly enlarged edition of her *Poems* (1850), containing the *Sonnets from the Portuguese*. They are probably her best work, and their beauty of sentiment and musical phrasing is undeniable. She died in Florence, and a volume of *Last Poems* was issued in 1862.

# Browning, Robert (1812-1889)

English poet. His work is characterized by the accomplished use of <u>dramatic</u> <u>monologue</u> (in which a single imaginary speaker reveals his or her character, thoughts, and situation) and an interest in obscure literary and historical figures. It includes *Pippa Passes* (1841) (written in dramatic form) and the poems 'The Pied Piper of Hamelin' (1842), 'My Last Duchess' (1842), 'Home Thoughts from Abroad' (1845), and 'Rabbi Ben Ezra' (1864). He was married to Elizabeth Barrett <u>Browning</u>.

Browning was born in London and was educated privately. He wrote his first poem 'Pauline' (1833) under the influence of Shelley; it was followed by *Paracelsus* (1835). From 1837 Browning achieved moderate success with his play *Strafford* and several other works, though the narrative poem *Sordello* (1840) was initially criticized. In the pamphlet series *Bells and Pomegranates* (1841-46), which contained *Pippa Passes, Dramatic Lyrics* (1842), and *Dramatic Romances* (1845), he included the dramas *King Victor and King Charles* (1842), *Return of the Druses* (1843), and *Colombe's Birthday* (1844).

In 1845 he met Elizabeth Barrett; they eloped the following year and went to Italy. There he wrote *Christmas Eve and Easter Day* (1850) and much of *Men and Women* (1855), the latter containing some of his finest love poems and dramatic monologues. He published no further collection of verse until *Dramatis Personae* (1864), which was followed by *The Ring and the Book* (1868-69), based on an Italian murder story.

After his wife's death in 1861 Browning settled in England and enjoyed an established reputation, although his later works, such as *Red-Cotton Night-Cap Country* (1873), *Dramatic IdyIIs* (1879-80), and *Asolando* (1889), prompted opposition by their rugged obscurity of style.

Bruce, Michael (1746-1767)

Scottish poet. His longest poem, *Lochleven*, shows the influence of James Thomson. His finest poem is the *Elegy Written in Spring*.

# Brunetière, (Vincent de Paul Marie) Ferdinand (1849-1906)

French writer and critic. In *Le Roman naturaliste/The Naturalist Novel* (1883) he attacked the French realist or naturalistic writers, especially those of the school of Emile Zola. He wrote several critical works on French literature.

Among these are Etudes critiques sur l'histoire de la littérature française/Essays in French Literature: A Selection (1880-1907), L'Evolution des genres dans l'histoire de la littérature/Evolution of the Genres in the Literary History (1890), L'Evolution de la poésie lyrique en France au XIX<sup>e</sup> siècle/Evolution of Lyric Poetry in France in the 19th Century (1894), and Nouveaux essais sur la littérature contemporaine/New Essays on Contemporary Literature (1895).

Bruni, Leonardo (c. 1370-1444)

also known as Leonardo Aretino

Italian humanist scholar and historian. Chancellor of Florence 1427-44, he was one of the leading scholars of his day, translating Plato, <u>Aristotle</u> and <u>Plutarch</u> into Latin. He is best known for his *Historiarum Florentini populi libri/A History of Florentine People*, an influential history of Florence that presents the city as the heir to the republican traditions of Ancient Greece and Rome.

# Bryant, William Cullen (1794-1878)

US poet and literary figure. His most famous poem, 'Thanatopsis', was published 1817. He was co-owner and co-editor of the *New York Evening Post* 1829-78 and was involved in Democratic party politics. However, his resolute opposition to slavery converted him to Republicanism at the inception of the party 1856.

Born in Cummington, Massachusetts, Bryant briefly attended Williams College and was trained as a lawyer but throughout his life maintained a deep interest in poetry.

### Bryson, Bill (1951-)

#### born William Bryson

US writer. He is popular in both the USA and UK for his perceptive, insightful, and comical writing. His works include several travel books, for example *The Lost Continent: Travels in Small-Town America* (1988), *Notes From a Small Island* (1997), *A Walk in the Woods: Rediscovering America on the Appalachian Trail* (1997), and *Down Under* (2000), as well as studies of the English language, for example *The Mother Tongue: English and How It Got That Way* (1991) and *Bryson's Book of Troublesome Words* (2002). He also published the popular science book *A Short History of Nearly Everything* (2003).

# Bryusov, Valery Yakovlevich (1873-1924)

Russian Symbolist poet, novelist, and critic. He wrote The Fiery Angel (1908).

#### Buchan, Anna

real name of Scottish novelist O Douglas.

# Buchan, John (1875-1940)

1st Baron Tweedsmuir

Scottish writer and politician. His popular adventure stories, today sometimes criticized for their alleged snobbery, sexism, and anti-Semitism, include *The Thirty-Nine Steps*, a tale of espionage published in 1915, *Greenmantle* (1916), and *The Three Hostages* (1924).

He was Conservative member of Parliament for the Scottish universities 1927-35, and governor general of Canada 1935-40. He also wrote historical and biographical works, literary criticism, and poetry. He was created baron in 1935.

Scottish printer and ballad collector. His works include *Gleanings of Scotch*, *Irish and English: Scarce Old Ballads* (1825) and *Ancient Ballads and Songs of the North of Scotland* (1828).

### Buchanan, Robert Williams (1841-1901)

English poet, novelist, and dramatist. His verse includes *London Poems* (1866). Two of his reviews, 'The <u>Fleshly School</u> of Poetry' (1871), attacking the Pre-Raphaelite painter and poet Dante Gabriel Rossetti, and 'The Voice of the Hooligan' (1899), dealing with the writer Rudyard Kipling, roused much critical opposition.

# Buck, (Franklyn Howard) Frank (1884-1950)

US animal collector and showman. Starting in 1911, he travelled extensively to South America and Asia to buy exotic animals, which he then sold to zoos and circuses in the USA. He soon extended his operations, leading his own expeditions, and through his exhibits and lectures became both rich and famous.

He was born in Gainesville, Texas, and was interested in collecting animals from a young age. He married light-opera star Lillie West (known as Amy Leslie) in 1901; they divorced in 1916. He wrote adventure books, including *Bring 'Em Back Alive* (1930), which became a movie, starring Buck himself. He published several more books and appeared in several more movies. Popular with adults as well as children, he reportedly received thousands of fan letters.

# Buck, Pearl S(ydenstricker) (1892-1973)

US novelist. Daughter of missionaries to China, she spent much of her life there and wrote novels about Chinese life, such as *East Wind-West Wind* (1930) and *The Good Earth* (1931), for which she received a Pulitzer Prize in 1932. She was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1938.

# Buckler, Ernest Redmond (1908-1984)

Canadian novelist. From a Novia Scotia farming background, he has published verse and distinguished short stories, including *The Rebellion of Young David and Other Stories* (1975). He is best known for his first novel, *The Mountain and the Valley* (1952), which traces the secret growth of artistic vision in a country boy.

# Buckley, William F(rank) (1925-)

US conservative political writer, novelist, and founder-editor of the *National Review* (1955). In such books as *Up from Liberalism* (1959), and in a weekly television debate *Firing Line*, he represented the 'intellectual' right-wing, antiliberal stance in US political thought. One of the most widely syndicated US columnists - appearing in over 300 newspapers - Buckley has written many best-selling books, including *God and Man at Yale* (1977), *Stained Glass* (1979), *Elvis in the Morning* (2001), and *Getting it Right* (2003).

In 1991 Buckley received the Presidential Medal of Freedom.

#### **Budaeus**

Latin form of Guillaume Budé.

# Budaeus, Guglielmus

Latin name of French scholar Guillaume Budé.

# **Buddenbrooks**

novel by the German writer Thomas <u>Mann</u>, published in 1901. Set in northern Germany during the 19th century, it describes the decline of a family.

# Budgell, Eustace (1686-1737)

English essayist. He contributed to the *Tatler* and the *Spectator*. He lost £20,000 in the South Sea Bubble, was attacked in writing by the satirical poet Alexander Pope, and eventually drowned himself in the Thames.

# Buff, Charlotte (1753-1828)

German woman loved by the writer Johann Wolfgang von <u>Goethe</u> in his youth. When they met in Wetzlar, near Frankfurt, in June 1772, she was engaged to Georg Christian Kestner (1741-1800), whom she later married 1773. She was the prototype of Goethe's heroine in *The Sorrows of Young Werther* (1774).

# Bukowski, Charles (1920-1994)

German-born US writer. In his many poetry collections, six novels, short stories, and essays, he created the persona of himself as an ugly lover and angry drunk, an outsider trapped in a gutter world of comic pathos and glimpsed beauty. His work, which includes *Post Office* (1971), achieved cult status on both sides of the Atlantic.

#### films and poetry

Drawn from a collection of short stories called *Erections*, *Ejaculations*, *Exhibitions* and *General Tales of Ordinary Madness* (1971), a film version of some of his stories appeared in 1982 under the title *Tales of Ordinary Madness*, and his 1979 screenplay *Barfly* was filmed in 1987. His verse, a revolt against academic or intellectual tradition, is widely popular and has a genuine appeal beyond its immoderate subject matter.

# Bulatovic, Miodrag (1930-1991)

Serbian writer. Self-educated and first noted as a lyric poet drawing on his country's oral tradition, he later disclosed a gift for original, courageous, and grimly satiric narrative. He has published short stories and popular novels of which *Crveni petao leti prema nebu/The Red Cockerel* (1959) and *Heroj na magarcu/Hero on a Donkey* (1964) are the best known.

# Bulgakov, Mikhail Afanasyevich (1891-1940)

Russian novelist and playwright. His novel *The White Guard* (1924), dramatized as *The Days of the Turbins* (1926), dealt with the Revolution and the civil war. His satiric approach made him unpopular with the Stalin regime, and he was unpublished from the 1930s. He is most famous internationally for his novel *The Master and Margarita* (1967), a fantasy about the devil appearing in Moscow.

# Bull, Olaf Jacob Martin Luther (1883-1933)

Norwegian lyric poet. He often celebrated his birthplace Christiania (now Oslo) in his poetry. He was the son of the humorist and fiction writer **Jacob Breda Bull** (1853-1930).

In his first published work, *Digte/Poems* (1909), he introduced a reflective, serious poetry, written in classically regular form, combining springtime joy with consciousness of the transience of all life. His later poetry is generally darker in mood, but returns often to the theme of art's ability to transcend mortality and fix

the passing moment for ever, as in 'Metope' (1927).

### Bullett, Gerald William (1893-1958)

English novelist and poet. His novels include *The History of Egg Pandervil* (1928), *Nicky, Son of Egg* (1929), *The Jury* (1935), *The Snare of the Fowler* (1936), and *When the Cat's Away* (1940). He also published several volumes of short stories and edited poetry anthologies.

### Bulwer-Lytton, Edward George Earle

#### **1st Baron Lytton**

English writer; see Edward Lytton.

#### Bunin, Ivan Alexeyevich (1870-1953)

Russian writer. He was the author of *The Village* (1910), a novel which tells of the passing of peasant life; and the short story collection *The Gentleman from San Francisco* (1916) (about the death of a millionaire on Capri), for which he was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1933. He was also a poet and translated Byron into Russian.

#### Bunner, Henry Cuyler (1855-1896)

US poet. He edited the comic weekly *Puck*, to which he contributed jokes, poems, and stories, 1878-96. His first published book, *Airs from Arcady and Elsewhere* (1884), was followed by a collected edition in 1896. His best-known poem is 'The Way to Arcady'.

#### Bunting, Basil (1900-1985)

English poet. His verse was given little attention when it first appeared in the 1930s, but he was rediscovered in the 1960s and some of his finest work, often dealing with autobiographical material, appeared after 1965. The long poem *Briggflatts* (1966) is organized as a sonata and is dense with historical and personal allusion.

# Bunting, Edward (1773-1843)

Irish collector of traditional music. Born in Armagh, he lived in Drogheda from 1782 and eventually settled in Dublin in 1819. A trained organist, Bunting made a major contribution to the survival of Irish music with his *General Collection of The Ancient Music of Ireland* (1796); subsequent editions in 1809 and 1840 added hundreds of new pieces. Much of the material was gathered during his travels across Ireland. His collections inspired writers and Irish nationalists alike, and continue to serve as the foundational texts for research into traditional Irish music, in particular airs for the harp.

# Buntline, Ned

adopted name of US author Edward Zane Carroll Judson.

# Bunyan, John (1628-1688)

English writer, author of *The<u>Pilgrim's Progress</u>* (first part 1678, second part 1684), one of the best-known English religious allegories (a symbolic story with meaning beyond its literal reading).

Bunyan was born in Elstow, near Bedford. At 16, he was drafted into the Parliamentary army to fight in the Civil War, probably his first experience of stern and impassioned Puritanism. In 1649 he married his first wife, Margaret Bentley, who introduced him to religious work. A Baptist, he was imprisoned in Bedford from 1660 until 1672 for unlicensed preaching and wrote *Grace Abounding* in 1666, which describes his early spiritual life. He started to write *The Pilgrim's Progress* during a second jail sentence from 1676 until 1677. Written in straightforward language with fervour and imagination, it achieved immediate popularity and was highly influential.

#### Burchiello, Domenico (c. 1404-1449)

#### born Domenico di Giovanni

Italian poet. His poems, mostly sonnets of the burlesque type and often licentious, had great contemporary popularity.

Opposed to the Medici, he was forced into exile when they returned to Florence in 1434. His poems, which reflect a vernacular tradition, include an attack on Cosimo de' Medici ('O humil popul/O humble people'); though he was no Medicean and no humanist, the collectors of his works included Lorenzo de' Medici 'the Magnificent'.

# Bürger, Gottfried August (1747-1794)

German Romantic poet. He may be said to have introduced the ballad into German literature, and is remembered for his ballad *Lenore* (1773).

Such works as *Lenore*, *Der wilde Jäger*, and *Das Lied vom braven Manne* are almost unequalled for dramatic intensity, virility of style, and atmospheric suggestiveness.

# Burgess, Anthony (1917-1993)

#### pen-name of John Anthony Burgess Wilson

English novelist, critic, and composer. A prolific and versatile writer, Burgess wrote about 60 books as well as screenplays, television scripts, and reviews. His work includes *A Clockwork Orange* (1962) (made into a film by Stanley Kubrick in 1971), a despairing depiction of high technology and violence set in a future London terrorized by teenage gangs, and the panoramic *Earthly Powers* (1980).

#### style

Burgess's works often show an experimental approach to language - A Clockwork Orange is written in 'nadsat', the imaginary argot of the teenage narrator, and his fictional biography of Shakespeare, Nothing Like the Sun (1964), is written in a mock-Elizabethan dialect. His vision has been described as bleak and pessimistic, but his work is also comic and satiric, as in his novels featuring the poet Enderby.

# Burgess, Frank Gelett (1866-1951)

US humorous writer. He published collections of poems, stories, and sketches, including *Goops and How to be Them* (1900); *Are You a Bromide?* 1897, a satire on platitudes; and *Burgess Unabridged* (1914), which introduced the word 'blurb'.

His well-known quatrain about the Purple Cow appeared in the first issue of the *Lark* magazine (1895-97), which he edited.

#### Burgess, Melvin (1954-)

English author. His often controversial books for children and teenagers have received wide critical acclaim, including *Junk* (1996) which focuses on homelessness and heroin addiction and won the Carnegie Medal and *Guardian* Fiction Prize.

Other works include The Cry of the Wolf (1990), An Angel for May (1992), The Baby

and Fly Pie (1993), Bloodtide (1999), The Ghost Behind the Wall (2000), My Life as a Bitch (2001), and Doing It (2003).

#### Burgess, Thornton W (Waldo) (1874-1965)

US writer. He published 54 books of stories for children, based on the bedtime stories he told to his son. The first two were *Old Mother West Wind* (1910) and *Mother West Wind's Children* (1911). Many featured a cast of animals with human names, talking and acting like people.

He was born in Sandwich, Massachusetts. He was a magazine writer and editor 1895-1911, and a syndicated newspaper columnist 1912-60. He promoted conservationist ideas through his books and his Radio Nature League, founded in 1925.

### Burke, Kenneth (1897-1993)

US literary critic. His works on the psychology of literary criticism were so advanced that he was called 'the critics' critic'. Among his publications are *Permanence and Change* (1935), *Attitudes towards History* (1937), *The Philosophy of Literary Form* (1941), *A Rhetoric of Motives* (1950), and *Language as Symbolic Action* (1960).

#### Burke, Thomas (1886-1945)

English novelist and descriptive writer, who became known as the supreme interpreter of London's East End and Chinatown. His works include *Nights in Town* (1915), *Limehouse Nights* (1916), *The Real East End* (1932), and *London in My Times* (1934).

His verse includes *Pavements and Pastures* (1912) and *London Lamps* (1917); and his novels *Murder at Elstree* (1936), *Abduction* (1939), and the autobiographical *The Wind and the Rain* (1924).

# Burnand, Francis Cowley (1836-1917)

English humorist. His popular burlesques included *Black-eyed Susan* (1866) and *Cox and Box* (1867). He was editor of *Punch* 1880-1906 and published *Happy Thoughts* (1868), many other popular books, and an autobiography, *Records and Reminiscences* (1904).

### Burnet, John (1863-1928)

Scottish scholar of ancient Greek. His publications include a critical edition (Oxford) of Plato's works (1900-13) which became the standard edition of its time.

### Burnett, Frances Eliza Hodgson (1849-1924)

English writer. She emigrated with her family to the USA in 1865. Her novels for children include the rags-to-riches tale *Little Lord Fauntleroy* (1886) and *The <u>Secret</u> <u>Garden</u> (1911), which has its values anchored in nature mysticism.* 

# Burney, Charles (1757-1817)

English classical scholar. His valuable library was acquired by Parliament and deposited in the British Museum as the **Burney Library**.

# Burney, Fanny (Frances) (1752-1840)

English novelist and diarist. She achieved success with *Evelina*, an epistolary novel published in 1778, became a member of Samuel Johnson's circle, and received a post at court from Queen Charlotte. She published three further novels, *Cecilia* (1782), *Camilla* (1796), and *The Wanderer* (1814).

# Burns, John Horne (1916-1953)

US novelist. He is known for his acclaimed novel *The Gallery* (1946), a passionate, episodic story set in Naples and North Africa and based on his service in the US army during World War II. He wrote two other novels while an expatriate in Italy, where he died.

#### Burns, Robert (1759-1796)

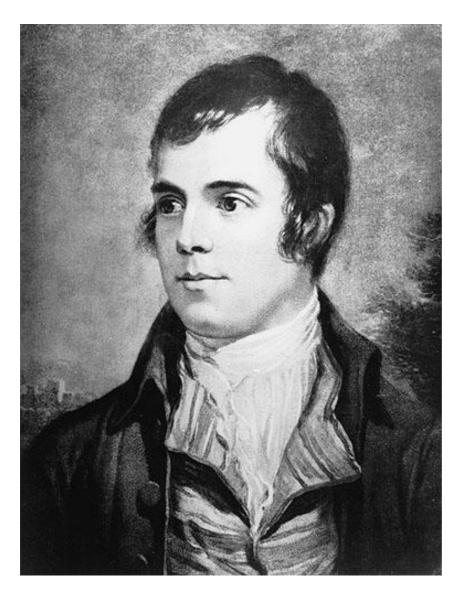
Scottish poet. He used a form of Scots dialect at a time when it was not considered suitably 'elevated' for literature. Burns's first volume, *Poems, Chiefly in the Scottish Dialect*, appeared in 1786. In addition to his poetry (such as 'To a Mouse'), Burns wrote or adapted many songs, including 'Auld Lang Syne'.

**Burns Night** is celebrated on 25 January, his birthday. His strength lies in his essential sincerity to his own experience and the extraordinary vitality of its

expression.

Born in Alloway, near Ayr, and went to the village school, and he became joint tenant with his brother Gilbert of his late father's farm at Mossgiel in 1784, but it was unsuccessful. Burns intended to emigrate to Jamaica with Mary Campbell as his wife, but she died. He later commemorated this romance in several poems, including 'Highland Mary'. In 1786, to earn money for his passage, he published Poems, Chiefly in the Scottish Dialect. It was an immediate success and contained much of his best work especially in social criticism, including 'The Twa Dogs', 'Hallowe'en', 'The Holy Fair', 'To a Mouse', 'To a Mountain Daisy', and 'The Cotter's Saturday Night'. Burns was thereafter welcomed among intellectuals and aristocrats and was dissuaded from going abroad. In 1788 he used his capital to try a new farm, Ellisland, on the banks of the Nith near Dumfries. This farm also proved unsatisfactory and in 1791 he moved to Dumfries and became a full-time excise officer. In 1792 he nearly lost his job because of his radical opinions. Meanwhile he began the provision of songs for the Scots Musical Museum and also for Thomson's Select Collection of Original Scottish Airs - many of his own composition, many based on older verses or fitted to old tunes. This was entirely a labour of love, for he received no payment.

#### **Burns**





(Image © Billie Love)

Robert Burns, Scottish poet and writer of traditional folk songs. His work, written in the Scottish vernacular, led to his acceptance as the national poet of Scotland, and he is celebrated by his countrymen on his birthday, Burns Night (25 January). The Burns supper traditionally includes a haggis and recitations of his poetry.

# Burroughs, Edgar Rice (1875-1950)

US novelist. He wrote *Tarzan of the Apes* (1914; filmed 1918), the story of an aristocratic child lost in the jungle and reared by apes, and followed it with over 20 more books about the Tarzan character. He also wrote a series of novels about life on Mars, including *A Princess of Mars* (1917) and *Synthetic Men of Mars* (1940).

# Burroughs, John (1837-1921)

US nature writer. His prose works include *Wake-Robin* (1871); *Birds and Poets* (1877), in which a poetic spirit infuses the descriptions; and *Locusts and Wild Honey* (1879), in which he adopts a more scientific approach. He published the volume of verse *Bird and Bough* (1905).

# Burroughs, William S(eward) (1914-1997)

US author. One of the most culturally influential post-war writers, his work is noted for its experimental methods, black humour, explicit homo-eroticism, and apocalyptic vision. In 1944 he met Allen Ginsberg and Jack Kerouac, all three becoming leading members of the <u>Beat Generation</u>. His first novel, *Junkie* (1953), documented his heroin addiction and expatriation to Mexico, where in 1951 he accidentally killed his common-law wife. He settled in Tangier in 1954 and wrote his celebrated anti-novel <u>Naked Lunch</u> (1959). A landmark federal court case deemed *Naked Lunch* not obscene; this broke the ground for other books, helping to eliminate censorship of the printed word in the USA.

In Paris, he developed collage-based techniques of writing, resulting in his 'cut-up' science fiction trilogy, *The Soft Machine* (1961), *The Ticket That Exploded* (1962), and *Nova Express* (1964). For these books he would literally cut up, reposition and paste in pieces of narrative from various sources, in order to see what kind of creative results they generated. Later, more conventionally written novels, include *Cities of the Red Night* (1981), *Place of Dead Roads* (1984), and *The Western Lands* (1987). His 'Selected Letters 1945-59' were published 1993.

# Bush, Douglas (John Nash) (1896-1983)

Canadian scholar, literary historian, and educator. He trained generations of literary scholars and published widely on the classical tradition in Renaissance and Romantic literature.

He was born in Morrisburg, Ontario, Canada. He was an English professor at Harvard 1936-66.

### Bussy, Roger de Rabutin (1618-1693)

#### comte de Bussy

French writer. Banished from the court 1659, he wrote the *Histoire amoureuse des Gaules/History of Love Affairs of the Gauls* for the amusement of his mistress. This offended the king and Bussy was sent to the Bastille, from which he was liberated only on condition that he retired to his estates. Here he wrote his *Mémoires* and *Correspondance*.

# Butcher, Samuel Henry (1850-1910)

Irish classical scholar. He collaborated with Andrew Lang in a translation into English prose of Homer's *Odyssey* (1879). His works include *Some Aspects of the Greek Genius* (1891) and *Aristotle's Theory of Poetry and Fine Art* (1895).

# Butler, William Francis (1838-1910)

Irish soldier and writer. Born in Suirville, Tipperary, he joined the British army in 1858, and served in Canada 1867-73, where his experiences provided the material for his popular work *The Great Lone Land* (1872). He served on the Red River expedition (1870-71), on the Ashanti expedition (1873), and in the Sudan (1884-85) and South Africa (1888-99). Butler also published biographies of Charles George Gordon and Sir Charles Napier, together with several travel books.

# Butler, Samuel (1612-1680)

English satirist. His best-known poem *Hudibras*, published in three parts in 1663, 1664, and 1678, became immediately popular for its biting satire against the Puritans and on other contemporary issues.

Butler also wrote minor poetic satires, and prose 'characters' not published until 1759. He was a strong influence on the poetry of Jonathan <u>Swift</u>.

#### Butler, Samuel (1835-1902)

English writer. He made his name in 1872 with a satiric attack on contemporary utopianism, *Erewhon* (an anagram of *nowhere*). He is now remembered for his unfinished, semi-autobiographical discursive novel, *The <u>Way of All Flesh</u>*, a study of Victorian conventions, the causes and effects of the clash between generations, and religious hypocrisy (written and frequently revised 1873-84 and posthumously published in 1903).

*The Fair Haven* (1873) examined the miraculous element in Christianity. *Life and Habit* (1877) and other works were devoted to a criticism of the theory of natural selection. In *The Authoress of the Odyssey* (1897) he maintained that Homer's *Odyssey* was the work of a woman.

### Butor, Michel Marie François (1926-)

French writer. He was one of the <u>nouveau roman</u> novelists who made radical changes in the traditional form. His works include Passage de Milan/Passage from Milan (1954), L'Emploi du temps/Passing Time (1956), La Modification/The Modification (1957), Dégrès/Degrees (1960), and Improvisations sur Michel Butor/ Improvisations on Michel Butor (1993). Mobile (1962) is a volume of essays.

# Buxtorf, Johannes (I) (1564-1629)

German Hebrew scholar. Professor of Hebrew at Basel 1591-1629, he brought a new discipline and depth to Hebrew studies, largely by drawing on rabbinical scholarship. His published works include grammars, dictionaries, and biblical commentaries.

# Byatt, A(ntonia) S(usan) (1936-)

English novelist and critic. Her fifth novel, *Possession* (1990, filmed 2002) won the Booker Prize. *The Virgin in the Garden* (1978) is a confident, zestfully handled account of a varied group of characters putting on a school play during the coronation year of 1953. Part of a sequence, it was followed by *Still Life* (1985), and *Babel Tower* (1996).

Byatt was born in Sheffield and educated at a Quaker boarding school (with her sister, novelist Margaret <u>Drabble</u>) and at Newnham College, Cambridge. Her critical

works include *Degrees of Freedom* (1965), the first major study of Iris Murdoch. She was a lecturer at University College, London, England, 1972-83.

# Bykau, Vasil (1924-2003)

#### Russian Vasily Bykov

Belorussian writer. In novels such as *The Ordeal* (1970) and *The Mark of Doom* (1982) Bykau seeks to crystallize a specifically Belorussian sense of identity by exploring the severe wartime ordeals of small groups of ordinary people under German occupation.

An outspoken critic against Belorussian president Lukashenko, he lived in exile in Finland, Germany, and the Czech Republic from 1998 until his death.

# Byrne, Donn (1889-1928)

#### pseudonym of Brian Oswald Donn-Byrne

US novelist, born in New York of Irish parents. He wrote three volumes of short stories and eleven novels, of which *Messer Marco Polo* (1921), about the traveller, was his chief success. *Blind Raferty* (1924), *Hangman's House* (1926), and *Destiny Bay* (1928) have Irish settings.

# Byrom, John (1692-1763)

English poet and inventor of a shorthand system. He studied medicine in Montpelier, France, returning to teach an improved system of shorthand in Manchester and London. In 1740 he gave up teaching, and wrote verses and genial satire on topics of the day. His *Diary and Remains* was published 1854-57.

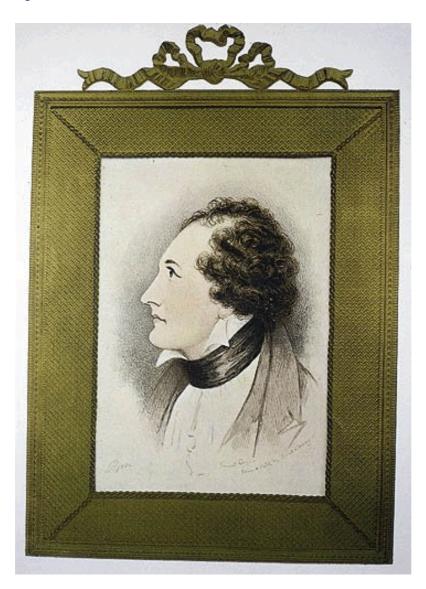
# Byron, George Gordon, 6th Baron Byron (1788-1824)

English poet. He became the symbol of Romanticism and political liberalism throughout Europe in the 19th century. His reputation was established with the first two cantos (divisions within a poem) of *Childe Harold* (1812). Later works include *The Prisoner of Chillon* (1816), *Beppo* (1818), *Mazeppa* (1819), and, most notably, the satirical *Don Juan* (1819-24). He left England in 1816 and spent most of his later life in Italy.

Born in London and educated at Harrow and Cambridge University, he succeeded to

the title of baron in 1798. Byron published his first volume *Hours of Idleness* in 1807 and attacked its harsh critics in *English Bards and Scotch Reviewers* (1809). Overnight fame came with the first two cantos of *Childe Harold*, which romantically describes his tours in Portugal, Spain, and the Balkans (third canto 1816, fourth 1818). In 1815 he married mathematician Ann Milbanke (1792-1860), with whom he had a daughter, Augusta Ada Byron. The couple separated shortly after the birth amid much scandal. He then went to Europe and became friendly with Percy Bysshe <u>Shelley</u> and his wife Mary <u>Shelley</u>. He engaged in Italian revolutionary politics and sailed to Greece in 1823 to further the Greek struggle for independence, but died of fever at Missolonghi.

#### **Byron**



(Image © Billie Love)

A portrait of Byron by E Lloyd, from a sketch by Byron's contemporary and friend, Count Alfred d'Orsay. Byron was also a friend of Lady Marguerite Gardiner, Countess of Blessington and author of *A Journal of Conversations with Lord Byron*. Marguerite left her husband and Ireland in 1829 and moved to London, to live with her lover, d'Orsay.

# **Byzantine literature**

literature of the Byzantine Empire, 4th-15th centuries. It was written mainly in the Greek *koine*, a form of Greek accepted as the literary language of the 1st century and increasingly archaic and separate from the spoken tongue of the people. Byzantine literature is chiefly concerned with theology, history, and commentaries on the Greek classics. Its chief authors are the theologians Athanasius, Basil, Gregory of Nyssa, Gregory of Nazianzus, John Chrysostom, Cyril of Alexandria (all 4th century), and John of Damascus (8th century); the historians Zosimus (*c.* 500), Procopius (6th century), <u>Psellus</u> (1018-1097), Bryennius and his wife Anna Comnena (*c.* 1100), and Georgius Acropolita (1220-1282).

The literary encyclopedia *Suda*, which provides a wealth of information on classical and Byzantine literature, was compiled in about 975. Drama was nonexistent, and poetry, apart from the hymns of the 6th-8th centuries, was scanty and stilted, but there were many popular works about the lives of the saints. The tradition ended with the fall of Constantinople in 1453.

# Caballero, Fernan (1796-1877)

#### pseudonym of Cecilia Francisca Josefa Bohl von Faber

Spanish novelist, born at Morges, Switzerland. Her first novel, *La gaviota* (1849), created the type of the Andalusian village romances in Spain. She published many other works, including *Cuentos y poesias populares Andaluces* (1859), the earliest collection of Spanish folk tales and songs.

# Cabell, James Branch (1879-1958)

US novelist. He made his name with *Jurgen* (1919). Many of his stories are set in the imaginary country of Poictesme, and the series entitled the 'Biography of Manuel' traces the lineage of its nobility from Dom Manuel, Count of Poictesme, to his Virginian descendants.

# Cable, George Washington (1844-1925)

US writer. He wrote about Creole life in *Old Creole Days* (1879), *The Grandissimes* (1880), *Dr Sevier* (1884), and the historical work *The Creoles of Louisiana* (1884).

# Caedmon (lived c. 660-670)

Earliest known English Christian poet. According to the Northumbrian historian Bede, when Caedmon was a cowherd at the monastery of Whitby, he was commanded to sing by a stranger in a dream, and on waking produced a hymn on the Creation. The poem is preserved in some manuscripts. Caedmon became a monk and may have composed other religious poems.

### Caeiro, Alberto

assumed name, or 'heteronym', of Portuguese poet Fernando Pessoa.

# Cahan, Abraham (1860-1951)

Russian-born US editor and writer who emigrated to the USA in 1882. He wrote realistic novels of Jewish immigrant life, written variously in English and Yiddish; the best known of his works in English are *YekI: A Tale of the New York Ghetto* (1896) and *The Rise of David Levinsky* (1917).

He was born in Podberezya, Russia. He continued his youthful revolutionary political activism after emigrating to the USA (1882), where he taught English to immigrants. In 1897 he founded and for 50 years edited the influential Yiddish-Ianguage *Jewish Daily Forward*.

# Cain, James M(allahan) (1892-1977)

US novelist. He wrote a series of popular novels in the taut, economical idiom of 'hard-boiled' fiction, derived in the main from Ernest Hemingway. Written with compelling power, his major novels - *The Postman Always Rings Twice* (1934), *Mildred Pierce* (1941), and *Double Indemnity* 1943 - were made into key works of *film noir* during the 1940s.

# Caine, Thomas Henry Hall (1853-1931)

English novelist. He published *The Shadow of a Crime* (1885); subsequent novels include *A Son of Hagar* (1887), *The Deemster* (1887), *The Manxman* (1894), *The Eternal City* (1901), *The Master of Man* (1921), and *The Woman of Knockaloe* (1923). Several of his novels were dramatized.

# Calderini, Domizio (1446-1478)

Italian humanist commentator on classical texts. He was appointed to teach rhetoric and Greek at the University of Rome in 1470, and became a papal secretary to Sixtus IV in 1471. His commentary on Martial (1473), dedicated to Lorenzo de' Medici, caused a dispute with Niccolò <u>Perotti</u>. Humanist teacher Giorgio Merula launched another attack on this commentary in 1478, but Calderini was posthumously defended by Italian humanist teacher Cornelio Vitelli.

# Calderón de la Barca, Pedro (1600-1681)

Spanish dramatist and poet. After the death of Lope de Vega in 1635, he was considered to be the leading Spanish dramatist. Most celebrated of the 118 plays is the philosophical *La vida es sueño/Life is a Dream* (1635).

Calderón was born in Madrid and 1613-19 studied law at Salamanca. In 1620 and 1622 he was successful in poetry contests in Madrid; while still writing dramas, he served in the army in Milan and the Netherlands (1625-35). By 1636 his first volume of plays was published and he had been made master of the revels at the court of Philip IV, receiving a knighthood in 1637. In 1640 he assisted in the suppression of the Catalan rebellion. After the death of his mistress he became a Franciscan 1650, was ordained 1651, and appointed as a prebendary of Toledo in 1653. As honorary chaplain to the king 1663, he produced outdoor religious plays for the festival of the Holy Eucharist. He died in poverty.

His works include the tragedies *EI pintor de su deshonra/The Painter of His Own Dishonour* (1645), *EI alcalde de Zalamea/The Mayor of Zalamea* (1640), and *EI médico de su honra/The Surgeon of His Honour* (1635); the historical *EI príncipe constante/The Constant Prince* (1629); and the dashing intrigue *La dama duende/The Phantom Lady* (1629).

#### Caldwell, Erskine Preston (1903-1987)

US novelist. He achieved great popular success with *Tobacco Road* (1932) and *God's Little Acre* (1933). These were vivid, bawdy depictions of poverty-stricken Southern sharecroppers in the Depression, which bordered on sensationalist melodrama. His literary autobiography, *Call It Experience*, was published 1951.

# Calisher, Hortense (1911-)

US writer. She wrote short stories and novels, typically set among New York's upper middle class but also dealing with a range of subjects including racial conflict. She was best known for her short stories, published in a collected edition in 1975.

She was born in New York City. A Barnard graduate, she held visiting lectureships at many universities.

# Calkins, (Earnest) Elmo (1868-1964)

US advertising executive and author. He was founding president of Calkins and Holden, New York City (1902-31), regarded as the first modern agency for producing integrated advertising campaigns incorporating high-quality copy and art. He coauthored (with Ralph Holden) the first advertising textbook, *Modern Advertising* (1905).

He was born in Geneseo, Illinois. He was a talented copywriter, first in Illinois and then in New York City. In his later years he was an essayist and author; severely hearing-impaired since his youth, he often wrote on the problems of the deaf.

# Callaghan, Morley Edward (1903-1990)

Canadian novelist and short-story writer. His realistic novels include *Such Is My Beloved* (1934), *More Joy in Heaven* (1937), and *Close to the Sun Again* (1977).

Deeply influenced both by the Depression and the teaching of the Catholic modernist Jacques Maritain, he characteristically writes about social misfits and outcasts and the possibilities of personal salvation through the power of love.

His other works include *They Shall Inherit the Earth* (1935), *The Loved and the Lost* (1951), *Stories* (1959), and *A Passion in Rome* (1961).

# Callanan, Jeremiah J(oseph) (1795-1829)

Irish poet. Callanan was born in Cork and educated at Trinity College, Dublin. He is notable for a handful of poems, most of them very free variations of Gaelic originals. His 'Outlaw of Loch Lene' (1828) is the best known and most haunting.

# Callimachus (c. 310-c. 240 вс)

Greek poet, critic, and scholar. Born in Cyrene, he taught in Alexandria, Egypt, where he is reputed to have been head of the great library. As a scholar he numbered among his pupils Aristophanes of Byzantium, Eratosthenes, the geographer and polymath, and Apollonius of Rhodes. His best-known work in antiquity was the *Aetia*, containing explanations, written in elegiac couplets, of familiar legends and customs; only fragments of this work survive. He is known for

his epigrams and hymns, which reveal him as a poet of great craftsmanship, ingenuity, and elegance.

# Callisthenes (c. 360-328 BC)

Greek historian, nephew of the philosopher Aristotle. He accompanied Alexander the Great, King of Macedonia, to Asia and wrote an account of the expedition, a history of Greece 387-357  $_{BC}$ , and a history of the Phocian war. A few fragments survive.

Callisthenes objected to Alexander's adoption of Oriental manners and customs. He was charged with complicity in the conspiracy of Alexander's attendant Hermolaus and died in prison.

### Callistratus (lived 4th century BC)

Athenian general and orator. In 361 he was condemned to death for having advised a temporary occupation of Oropus by the Thebans, who subsequently refused to evacuate the place. He escaped to Methone in Macedonia, but returned to Athens 355 and was executed. It was Callistratus's defence on his trial that persuaded Demosthenes to study oratory.

#### Calverley, Charles Stuart (1831-1884)

English poet and parodist. He translated the *IdyIIs* of the Greek poet <u>Theocritus</u> into English verse, but is best remembered for the parodies contained in *Fly Leaves* (1872).

### Calvino, Italo (1923-1985)

Italian writer and journalist. His imaginative, lyrical fantasies and allegories have made him one of the great 20th-century Italian writers. His novels include *II* sentiero dei nidi di ragno/The Path to the Nest of Spiders (1947), II visconte dimezzato/The Cloven Viscount (1952), II barone rampante/The Baron in the Trees (1957), II cavaliere inesistente/The Nonexistent Knight (1959), Le cosmicomiche/ Cosmicomics (1965), Le città invisibili/Invisible Cities (1972), II castello dei destini incrociati/The Castle of Crossed Destinies (1973), and Se une notte d'inverno un viaggiatore/If on a Winter's Night a Traveller (1979). His essay collections include Una petra sopra: Discorsi di letteratura e società/The Uses of Literature (1980) and Why Read the Classics? (1999).

# Cambridge, Richard Owen (1717-1802)

English poet. He wrote the *Scribleriad* (1751), satirizing false poetical taste, and published imitations of <u>Horace</u>.

# Camoëns (or Camões), Luis Vaz de (1524-1580)

Portuguese poet and soldier. He went on various military expeditions, and was shipwrecked in 1558. His poem *Os Lusiades/The Lusiads* (1572) tells the story of the explorer Vasco da Gama and incorporates much Portuguese history; it was immediately acclaimed and has become the country's national epic. His posthumously published lyric poetry is also now valued.

# Campbell, David (1915-1979)

Australian poet. His first poems were in a ballad style, but he was later influenced by surrealism and by his own translations from Russian of the work of Osip <u>Mandelstam</u>. The traditional collection *Modern Australian Poetry* (1970) was followed by *Selected Poems 1942-1970* (1973), in which Campbell incorporated a new post-surrealist element also seen in *Starting from Central Station* (1973) and *Devil's Rock* (1974).

# Campbell, Helen Stuart (born Helen Campbell Stuart) (1839-1918)

US author and reformer. She created widespread public awareness of poverty with *The Problem of the Poor* (1882), *Prisoners of Poverty* (1887), and *Women Wage-Earners* (1893).

She was born in Lockport, New York. In the 1860s she published fiction, some under the name of Helen Stuart Campbell, which she eventually adopted.

# Campbell, John Francis (1822-1885)

Scottish folklorist. Indirectly inspired by the <u>Grimm brothers</u>, he organized the collection of a large corpus of ballads and folk tales and published *Popular Tales of the West Highlands* 1860-62. Under the title *More West Highland Tales*, further material has been edited by others.

# Campbell, Joseph (1879-1944)

Irish poet. Born in Belfast, he emigrated to New York after the Irish Civil War (1922-23), but returned in 1935 to live in County Wicklow. Under the influence of Douglas <u>Hyde</u> and the Irish literary revival he began collecting folk songs, being strongly attracted to the Ulster folk tradition. Among his publications are *The Gilly of Christ* (1907), *Irishry* (1913), *Earth of Cualann* (1917), and *Complete Poems* (1963).

# Campbell, Joseph (1904-1987)

US mythologist and educator. He wrote analyses of comparative mythology, such as *The Hero with a Thousand Faces* (1949), and the four-volume *Masks of God* (1959-68).

He was born in New York City. He was a professor of literature at Sarah Lawrence College 1934-72. Although his scholarship has been criticized, he attained the status of a virtual guru through a series of television interviews by Bill Moyers in 1985-86.

# Campbell, Roy (1901-1957)

#### born Royston Dunnachie Campbell

South African poet. His poetry is noted for its technical mastery and exuberant metaphor, employed to satiric ends in his attack on the South African 'way of life' in *The Wayzgoose* (1928) and on English literary coteries in *The Georgiad* (1931). Among his most successful other works are the narrative poem 'The Flaming Terrapin' (1924), the collection *Adamastor* (1930), and his translations from Baudelaire, Lorca, and St John of the Cross.

Born in Durban, Campbell lived in France and Spain (where he became a bullfighter and was an outspoken supporter of Franco during the Spanish Civil War) and served with the Commonwealth forces in World War II, after which he lived in England before finally settling in Portugal. He recorded his flamboyant life in two autobiographies, *Broken Record* (1934) and *Light in a Dark House* (1951).

# Campbell, Thomas (1777-1844)

Scottish poet. After the successful publication of his philosophical poem *The Pleasures of Hope* (1799), he travelled in Europe, where he wrote the stirring song 'Ye Mariners of England' and witnessed from a distance the battle which inspired another war song 'The Battle of Hohenlinden'. He also wrote notable ballads, including 'Lord Ullin's Daughter'.

# Campion, Thomas (1567-1620)

English poet and musician. He was the author of the critical *Art of English Poesie* (1602) and four books of *Ayres* (1601-17), for which he composed both words and music.

The *Art of English Poesie* is an attack on the use of rhyme and a plea for the adoption of unrhymed metres formed on classical models, such as are used in Campion's own 'Rose-cheeked Laura, Come'. He also wrote *Poemata* (1595), in Latin, containing poems, elegies, and epigrams.

# Campos, Alvaro de

assumed name, or 'heteronym', of Portuguese poet Fernando Pessoa.

# Camus, Albert (1913-1960)

Algerian-born French writer. His works, such as the novels *L'Etranger/The Outsider* (1942) and *La Peste/The Plague* (1948), owe much to existentialism in their emphasis on the absurdity and arbitrariness of life. Other works include *Le Mythe de Sisyphe/The Myth of Sisyphus* (1943) and *L'Homme révolté/The Rebel* (1951). Camus's criticism of communism in the latter book led to a protracted quarrel with the philosopher Jean-Paul Sartre. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1957.

The plays *Le Malentendu/Cross Purpose* and *Caligula* (both 1944), and the novel *L'Etranger* ('the study of an absurd man in an absurd world') explore various aspects of 'the Absurd', while *Le Mythe de Sisyphe* is a philosophical treatment of the same concept. With *Lettres à un ami allemand/Letters to a German Friend* (1945), *La Peste*, the play *L'Etat de siège/State of Siege* (1948), and *L'Homme révolté*, Camus moved away from metaphysical alienation and began to explore the problem of suffering in its more historical manifestations, and the concept of revolt.

# **Canadian literature**

Canadian literature in English began early in the 19th century in the Maritime Provinces with the humorous tales of T C Haliburton (1796-1865). Charles Heavysege (1816-1876) published poems combining psychological insight with Puritan values. The late 19th century brought the lyrical output of Charles G D <u>Roberts</u>, Bliss Carman (1861-1929), Archibald Lampman (1861-1899), and Duncan Campbell Scott (1862-1944). Realism in fiction developed with Frederick P <u>Grove</u>, Mazo <u>de la Roche</u>, creator of the 'Jalna' series, and Hugh <u>MacLennan</u>. Humour of worldwide appeal emerged in Stephen <u>Leacock</u>; Brian <u>Moore</u>, author of *The Luck of Ginger Coffey* (1960); and Mordecai <u>Richler</u>. Also widely read outside Canada was L M Montgomery (1874-1942), whose *Anne of Green Gables* (1908) became a children's classic. US novelist Saul Bellow and the communication theorist Marshall McLuhan were both Canadian-born, as were contemporary novelists Robertson <u>Davies</u> and Margaret <u>Atwood</u>.

Recent poetry and fiction, stimulated by journals such as *The Canadian Forum* (founded in 1920) and *Canadian Fiction Magazine* (founded in 1971) and by a growing number of literary prizes, has become increasingly international in outlook while also drawing attention to contemporary Canadian issues such as racial and linguistic minorities and the environment.

# Canby, Henry Seidel (1878-1961)

US editor and author. He helped found the *Saturday Review of Literature* and as its first editor 1924-36, made it into a top literary magazine; he also wrote literary biographies and criticism, and a three-volume autobiography.

He was born in Wilmington, Delaware, and taught English at Yale University for over 20 years.

#### cancionero

#### (Spanish; Portuguese cancioneiro)

collection of early lyrical poems, especially those collections made by the poetic guilds that flourished in Spain and Portugal in the Middle Ages.

The oldest is that made about 1445 by Juan Alfonso de Baena for King Juan II, the poems of which belong to the 14th and 15th centuries.

# Candide

satire by <u>Voltaire</u>, published in 1759. The hero experiences extremes of fortune in the company of Dr Pangloss, a personification of the popular belief of the time (partly based on a misunderstanding of German philosopher Gottfried Leibniz) that 'all is for the best in the best of all possible worlds'. Voltaire exuberantly demonstrates that this idea is absurd and inhumane.

# Canetti, Elias (1905-1994)

Bulgarian-born writer. He was exiled from Austria in 1937 and settled in England in 1939. His books, written in German, include *Die Blendung/Auto da Fé* (1935). He was concerned with crowd behaviour and the psychology of power, and wrote the anthropological study *Masse und Macht/Crowds and Power* (1960). He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1981.

#### memoirs

His three volumes of memoirs are *Die gerettete Zunge: Geschichte einer Jugend/ The Tongue Set Free: Remembrance of a Childhood* (1977), in which he writes of his earliest years; *Die Fackel im Ohr: Lebensgeschichte 1921-31/The Torch in My Ear* (1980), set mainly in Vienna and covering the period when Canetti came under the spell of satirist Karl Kraus; and *Das Augenspeil/The Play of the Eyes* (1985), which covers the years 1931-37, and is rich in satirical insights into the artistic Viennese society of the time.

# Canfield, Dorothy Frances

US writer. See Fisher, Dorothy Canfield.

# Canterbury Tales, The

unfinished collection of stories in prose and verse (*c.* 1387) by Geoffrey <u>Chaucer</u>, told in Middle English by a group of pilgrims on their way to Thomas à Becket's tomb at Canterbury. The tales and preludes are remarkable for their vivid character portrayal and colloquial language, and they were a major influence on the development of <u>English literature</u>.

Each of the thirty or so pilgrims was meant to tell two stories on the way, and two on the return journey. Though it comprises 17,000 lines of prose and verse, including prologues and epilogues, the 24 stories only constitute less than a fifth of the projected work, which was never put into any proper order. They range from the romance of the 'Knight's Tale' to the mock heroism of the 'Nun's Priest's Tale' (a lesson against vanity), the comedy of the 'Merchant's Tale', and the bawdy humour of the 'Miller's Tale'.

# Cantos, The

series of 117 poems written 1925-69 by US poet Ezra <u>Pound</u>. An epic work, its complex collage structure contains a vast body of information drawn from diverse cultures using several languages. It attempted a massive, unifying reappraisal of

history, but ended incomplete in fragmentation.

It is a key work of modern poetry.

# Cantù, Cesare (1804-1895)

Italian historian and novelist. His *Storia universale/A History of the World* (1836-42; in 35 volumes) is often polemical, and written with a strong clerical bias. He also wrote numerous works on Italian history and histories of Greek, Latin, and Italian literature.

# Cantwell, Robert (Emmett) (1908-1978)

US editor and writer. His long career in magazine publishing included editorships at *New Outlook, Newsweek, and Sports Illustrated* (1956-73). He is best known for such proletarian novels of the 1930s as *The Land of Plenty* (1934).

He was born in Little Falls (now Vader), Washington. He also wrote biographies, (including lives of Nathaniel Hawthorne (1934) and the ornithologist Alexander Wilson (1961), and the historical study, *The Hidden Northwest* (1972).

# Cao Chan (or Ts'ao Chan) (1719-1763)

Chinese novelist. His tragicomic love story *Hung Lou Meng/The Dream of the Red Chamber*, published in 1792, involves the downfall of a Manchu family and is semi-autobiographical.

# Capek, Karel (1890-1938)

Czech writer. His works often deal with social injustice in an imaginative, satirical way. *R.U.R.* (1921) is a play in which robots (a term he coined) rebel against their controllers; the novel *War with the Newts* (1936) is a science fiction classic.

# Capek-Chod, Karel Matej (1860-1927)

Czech writer of social and moral analytical and satirical novels. A pessimist and determinist, Capek presented his characters as helpless puppets of fate and technological progress. His novel *Turbina/The Turbine* (1916) turns the spotlight on industrial capitalism. Intellectual circles at the turn of the century are scrutinized in

Antonin Vondrejc (1917-18). The novel Ad hoc (1919) moves between the home front and scenes of fighting during World War I.

# Capote, Truman (1924-1984)

#### pen-name of Truman Streckfus Persons

US novelist, journalist, and playwright. After achieving early success as a writer of sparkling prose in the stories of *Other Voices, Other Rooms* (1948) and the novel *Breakfast at Tiffany's* (1958), Capote's career flagged until the sensational 'non-fiction novel'<u>*In Cold Blood*</u> (1965) made him a celebrity.

He was born in Louisiana and his early works, including *The Grass Harp* (1951), are about the South. He then moved to New York, where he wrote further novels and scripts for theatre and films, and produced documentary pieces for the *New Yorker* magazine. Later works included *Music for Chameleons* (1980) and the posthumously published *Answered Prayers* (1986), an unfinished novel of scandalous socialite gossip.

# **Captain Marvel**

US comic-book character created 1940 by C(larence) C(harles) Beale (1910-1989). Captain Marvel is a 15-year-old schoolboy, Billy Batson, who transforms himself (by saying 'Shazam') into a superhuman hero wearing a red-and-yellow caped athletic suit.

# Capuana, Luigi (1839-1915)

Italian writer. He was at his best as a storyteller and novelist, particularly when dealing with the world of his infancy and youth. Among these works are *Giacinta* (1879), *II marchese di Roccaverdina* (1901), and two collections of Sicilian fairy tales. As a critic he is best known for *Gli ismi contemporanei* (1898).

# Caragiale, Ion Luca (1852-1912)

Romanian dramatist and short-story writer. His collections of sketches, together with his stage comedies *O noapte furtunoasa/A Stormy Night* (1880), *O scrisoare pierduta/A Lost Letter* (1884), and *D-ale carnavalului/Carnival Scenes* (1885), now regarded as classics, show him as a master of comic dialogue.

Some of Caragiale's stories, such as 'La Hanul lui Mînjoala/Mînjoala's Inn' contain

supernatural elements. *Napasta/The False Accusation* (1890) is a psychological drama, and the play *Kir Ianulea* (1909) is the masterpiece of his last period.

#### Carcano, Giulio (1812-1884)

Italian poet and novelist. His novels and collections of short stories, often dealing with domestic life, include *Racconti semplici* (1843), *Damiano* (1850), *Dodici novelle* (1853), and *Gabrio e Camilla* (1874). His collections of poetry include *Poesie edite ed inedite* (1861-70) and *Poesie varie* (1875).

#### Carco, Francis. (1886-1958)

#### pseudonym of François Carcopino

French poet and novelist, born in New Caledonia. His novels and short stories dealing with the Parisian underworld include *Jésus-Ia-Caille* (1914) and *L'Homme traqué* (1922).

#### Cardarelli, Vincenzo (or Nazareno) (1887-1959)

Italian writer. He collaborated in founding the review *La voce* and later ran the magazine *La ronda* 1919-23. His most important volume of poetry is *Prologhi/ Prologues* (1916).

#### Cardenal, Pierre (or Peire) (c. 1180-c. 1278)

Provençal poet. Some 70 of his poems remain, the great majority of them being *sirventes* in which he eloquently and tellingly satirizes the vices of the nobility and clergy.

He was an ardent supporter of Count Raymond VII of Toulouse and was primarily a moralist.

#### Carducci, Giosuè (1835-1907)

Italian poet and critic. His revolutionary *Inno a Satana/Hymn to Satan* (1865) was followed by several other volumes of verse, in which his nationalist sympathies are apparent. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1906.

# Carew, Thomas (c. 1595-c. 1640)

English poet. Often associated with the <u>'Cavalier poets'</u>, he was a courtier and gentleman of the privy chamber to Charles I, for whom he wrote the spectacular masque *Coelum Britannicum* (1634). *Poems* (1640) revealed his ability to weave metaphysical wit, eroticism, and a jewelled lyricism in his work.

His first important work was an elegy written on the death of the metaphysical poet John Donne, which was published in 1633 in the first edition of Donne's poetry. His love poems, especially 'The Rapture' and delicate lyrics such as 'Ask me no more where Jove bestows', were widely circulated in manuscript.

# Carey, Henry (1687-1743)

English poet and musician. He wrote the song 'Sally in Our Alley'. 'God Save the King' (both words and music) has also been attributed to him.

# Carey, Peter Philip (1943-)

Australian novelist. Noted for his imaginative use of <u>magic realism</u>, he won the Booker Prize for his novels *Oscar and Lucinda* (1988, filmed 1997) and *True History of the Kelly Gang* (2001). His other works include *Bliss* (1981, filmed 1985), *Illywhacker* (1985), and *Jack Maggs* (1998, Commonwealth Writers' Prize).

He has also published short story collections, including *The Fat Man in History* (1974) and *War Crimes* (1979).

#### caricature

in the arts or literature, an exaggerated portrayal of an individual or type, aiming to ridicule or otherwise expose the subject; in art, features are often made comical or grotesque. Classical and medieval examples of pictorial caricatures survive. Artists of the 18th, 19th, and 20th centuries have often used caricature as a way of satirizing society and politics. Notable exponents include the French artist Honoré Daumier and the German George Grosz. In literature, caricatures have appeared since the comedies of Aristophanes in ancient Greece. Shakespeare and Dickens were adept at creating caricatures.

Grotesque drawings have been discovered in Pompeii and Herculaneum, and Pliny refers to a grotesque portrait of the poet Hipponax.

Leonardo da Vinci was one of the first artists to use the principles of caricature. These were developed in the humorous drawings of the Carracci family and their Bolognese followers (the Italian 'eclectic' school of the 16th century). In 1830 Charles Philipon (1800-1862) founded in Paris *La Caricature*, probably the first periodical to specialize in caricature.

## Carleton, Will (1845-1912)

US poet. He published *Farm Ballads* (1873), containing the poem 'Over the Hill to the Poorhouse', and *City Ballads* (1885), among other collections.

## Carleton, William (1794-1869)

Irish novelist. Born into a Gaelic-speaking family in Prillisk, County Tyrone, he was educated in hedge-schools (informal and clandestine Catholic schools held out of doors in good weather). *The Black Prophet* (1846) is based on his personal experience of the 1817 and 1822 famines. Among his other novels are *Fardorougha the Miser* (1837), *Rody the Rover* (1845), *Valentine MacClutchy* (1845), and *The Tithe Procter* (1849).

His contributions to the *Christian Examiner* were published as *Traits and Stories of the Irish Peasantry* (1830-33). Critical of Catholic fundamentalism, the stories capture the energy and gloom, humour and violence of pre-famine rural Ireland. The collection was published by the Dublin publisher Curry & Company, and marked a revival of Irish publishing; the book was powerful evidence that an Irish writer did not necessarily require a British-backed publisher.

# Carlyle, Jane (Baillie) (1801-1866)

#### born Jane Welsh

Scottish letter-writer, wife of the essayist and social historian Thomas <u>Carlyle</u> from 1826. She resented her husband's preoccupation with his books, and their relationship became increasingly strained. However, her affection for her husband is apparent in her voluminous correspondence, which also illustrates her natural vivacity and wit.

# Carlyle, Thomas (1795-1881)

Scottish essayist and social historian. His works include the partly autobiographical *Sartor Resartus/The Tailor Retailored* (1833-34), reflecting his loss of Christian

belief; *The French Revolution* (1837); and the long essay 'Chartism' (1839), attacking the doctrine of *laissez faire*. His prose style was idiosyncratic, encompassing grand, thunderous rhetoric and deliberate obscurity.

#### carmagnole

#### (from Carmagnola in northern Italy)

wild song and dance that accompanied the peasant costume of the same name, from Piedmont and the Midi, worn by southern French revolutionaries to Paris in 1793. The song and dance were very popular with the revolutionaries during the Terror in Paris.

The refrain of each verse was: 'Vive le son, vive le son / Dansons la Carmagnole / Vive le son du canon!'.

## Carman, William Bliss (1861-1929)

Canadian poet. His first collection was *Low Tide on Grand-Pré* (1893). With Richard <u>Hovey</u>, he produced three volumes of *Songs from Vagabondia* (1894, 1896, and 1901).

He also edited *The Oxford Book of American Verse* in 1927, and developed his philosophy of nature-worship in the essays in *The Kinship of Nature* (1903).

## Carmeliano, Pietro (1451-1527)

Italian humanist poet, born in Brescia. His career was spent in England, where he arrived in 1481. He dedicated poems to Edward IV, Edward's son (*De Vere/On Spring*, 1482), and Richard III. After 1485 he produced several poems celebrating Henry VII's reign. He received royal patronage and was appointed royal secretary about 1495. The succession of Henry VIII in 1509 made patronage less secure, but Carmeliano remained in England.

#### Carnegie, Dale (1888-1955)

US author and teacher. He wrote the best-selling self-help book *How to Win Friends* and *Influence People* (1937). His courses in public speaking, which drew huge audiences, first won him fame, and he was asked to publish them as a book. His other books include *Little Known Facts About Well Known People* (1934) and *How to Stop Worrying and Start Living* (1948).

## Carnegie Medal

#### in full Library Association Carnegie Medal

annual award for an outstanding book for children written in English and published in the UK. The medal was first awarded in 1937 to Arthur Ransome's *Pigeon Post* (in the *Swallows and Amazons* series). It is named after US industrialist and philanthropist Andrew Carnegie.

## Caro, Annibale (1507-1566)

Italian poet. He made fine translations from Latin of Virgil's *Aeneid* (1581) and Longus' *Daphnis and Chloë*.

Other works include a comedy, *Gli straccioni*, written about 1544. He frequently favoured the burlesque.

## Caro, Robert Allen (1935-)

US historian. His works include *The Power Broker*, a biography of US urban planner Roger Moses and study of New York City, which won the 1975 Pulitzer Prize for Biography, and the multi-volume biography *The Years of Lyndon Johnson*, which includes *The Path to Power* (1982), *Means of Ascent* (1990), and *Master of the Senate* (2002), which won the 2003 Pulitzer Prize for Biography.

## Caroline literature

literature in Britain during the reign of Charles I (1625-49). The title 'Caroline' derives from the Latin for Charles, *Carolus*. The period was marked by increasing religious and social tension, which eventually found expression in the English Civil War.

This short period marks the watershed between the culture of <u>Elizabethan literature</u> and Jacobean literature in England. To some extent, the Caroline period sees the death of many major authors and the birth of important authors of the period of <u>Restoration literature</u>, but there is not the same wealth of authors specifically associated with Caroline literature as with other literary periods.

German writer. His work as a physician greatly influenced his writings, both in subject matter, for example *Doktor Bürgers Ende/The End of Dr Bürger* (1913) and *Der Arzt Gion/Doctor Gion* (1931), and in his objective outlook and keen observation. Autobiographical works include *Eine Kindheit/A Childhood* (1922) and the war diary *Rumänisches Tagebuch/A Roumanian Diary* (1924).

## Carpenter, Edward (1844-1929)

English socialist and writer. He campaigned for such causes as sexual reform, women's rights, and vegetarianism. He lived openly as a homosexual and made a plea for sexual toleration in *Love's Coming of Age* (1896).

# Carpentier, Alejo (1904-1980)

Cuban novelist. His weighty novels and stories treat the paradoxes of Latin American history. In *Los pasos perdidos/The Lost Steps* (1953), a failed musician searches for his roots, and for a return to creativity, as the answer to a sterile city life. This novel also allegorizes the predicament of the Latin American artist coming to terms with the contradictions of society.

Other works by Carpentier include *El siglo de las luces/Explosion in the Cathedral* (1962), which dramatizes the contradictions inherent in a revolution; *Ecue-Yamba-O*, an early work of (1933), which portrays the black ethnic culture of Cuba; and *El reino de este mundo/The Kingdom of this World* (1947) which explores the Haitian revolution led by Henri Christophe against the French colonists in 1791.

# Carr, John Dickson (1905-1977)

US writer. His ingenious detective stories include *The Crooked Hinge* (1938), *The Sleeping Sphinx* (1947), *Scandal at High Chimneys* (1959), and many others. He also wrote crime mysteries under the names of Carr Dickson and Carter Dickson.

In 1949 he published a life of the writer Arthur Conan <u>Doyle</u>, and with Adrian C Doyle, Sir Arthur's youngest son, wrote *The Exploits of Sherlock Holmes* (1954) in an attempt to resuscitate the detective.

# Carrera Andrade, Jorge (1903-1978)

Ecuadorean poet and diplomat who helped to found the Ecuadorean Socialist Party in 1926. His first poetry collection, *Estanque inefable/Ineffable Pond* (1922),

consisted of mostly rural poems. In the course of his diplomatic career he held positions in Europe, Japan, and South America. His travels influenced his writing as evidenced by his adaptation of the Japanese haiku verse form into Spanish. Translations of his poems include *Selected Poems* (1972).

## Carroll, Lewis (1832-1898)

#### pen-name of Charles Lutwidge Dodgson

English author of the children's classics <u>Alice's Adventures in Wonderland</u> (1865) and its sequel *Through the Looking-Glass, and What Alice Found There* (1872). Among later works was the mock-heroic narrative poem *The Hunting of the Snark* (1876). He was a lecturer in mathematics at Oxford University from 1855 until 1881 and also published mathematical works.

Dodgson first told his fantasy stories to Alice Liddell and her sisters, daughters of the dean of Christ Church, Oxford University. His two Alice books brought 'nonsense' literature to a peak of excellence, and continue to be enjoyed by children and adults alike. Dodgson was a prolific letter writer and one of the pioneers of portrait photography (his sitters included John Ruskin, Alfred Tennyson, and D G Rossetti, as well as children). He was also responsible, in his publication of mathematical games and problems requiring the use of logic, for a general upsurge of interest in such pastimes. He is said to be, after Shakespeare, the most quoted writer in the English language.

Carroll



#### (Image © Billie Love)

English author Charles Lutwidge Dodgson, who wrote under the pseudonym Lewis Carroll, aged 66, shortly before he died in 1898. His famous children's books *Alice's Adventures in Wonderland* (1865) and *Through the Looking Glass* (1872) are classics of English literature, combining fantastic adventure and nonsense.

## Carter, Angela (1940-1992)

English writer of the <u>magic realist</u> school. Her works are marked by elements of Gothic fantasy, a fascination with the erotic and the violent, tempered by a complex lyricism and a comic touch. Her novels include *The Magic Toyshop* (1967) (filmed in 1987) and *Nights at the Circus* (1984). She co-wrote the script for the film *The Company of Wolves* (1984), based on one of her stories. Her last novel was *Wise Children* (1991).

*Shaking a Leg: Collected Writings and Journalism*, edited by Jenny Uglow, was published posthumously in 1997.

## Carter, Elizabeth (1717-1806)

English poet and translator. She published her *Poems upon Particular Occasions* at the age of 21. Her translation of the work of the Greek philosopher Epictetus, published 1758, won the admiration of the lexicographer Samuel Johnson.

## Carter, Nick

US writer; see Edward L Stratemeyer.

# Cartland, (Mary) Barbara (Hamilton) (1901-2000)

English romantic novelist. She published her first book, *Jigsaw* in 1921 and then produced a prolific stream of stories of chastely romantic love, usually in idealized or exotic settings, for a mainly female audience. Her novels include *Love Climbs In* (1978) and *Moments of Love* (1981).

At the time of her death, it was calculated that she had written 723 publications. Mostly romantic fiction, these also include several volumes of autobiography, including *Reach for the Stars* (1994). She was appointed DBE in 1991.

#### carvel

in Manx and Breton literature, a carol or ballad. Originally it referred to words set to a dance measure.

## Carver, Raymond (1938-1988)

US short-story writer and poet. His writing deals mainly with blue-collar middle America, depicting failed, empty lives in a spare prose. His major works include *Will You Please Be Quiet, Please* (1976), *What We Talk About When We Talk About Love* (1981), *Cathedral* (1983), and *In a Marine Light* (1988), a collection of poetry.

A collection of previously unpublished short stories and pieces of non-fiction were published posthumously in 2000 under the title *Call If You Need Me: The Uncollected Fiction and Prose*, edited by William L Stull.

# Cary, (Arthur) Joyce (Lunel) (1888-1957)

Irish-born British writer. Cary was born in Londonderry, Northern Ireland, studied at Oxford, Edinburgh, and Paris, later settling in England from 1920. He drew on his experiences gained in the Nigerian political service (which he entered in 1913) as a backdrop to such novels as *Mister Johnson* (1939), and used the trilogy form to look at a subject from different viewpoints. The first and best known of his trilogies was about the life of an artist, Gulley Jimson, and comprised the novels *Herself Surprised* (1941), *To Be a Pilgrim* (1942), and *The Horse's Mouth* (1944).

# Cary, Alice (1820-1871) and Phoebe (1824-1871)

US poets. They were sisters. They published a joint volume, *Poems*, 1849 and in 1850 moved to New York where they became the centre of a literary circle, producing collections of poems, hymns, and parodies.

## Cary, Elisabeth Luther (1867-1936)

US writer. She became the first full-time art critic for the *New York Times* 1908-27. She also wrote many translations from the French, and critical studies of such writers as Ralph Waldo Emerson and Christina Rossetti.

She was born in Brooklyn, New York. She was educated privately, studied art for many years. She was the owner and editor of *The Script*, an art magazine, 1905-08.

## Casa, Giovanni della (1503-1556)

Italian writer and cleric. His treatise on courtly manners, *Galateo*, written 1551-55, printed in 1558, was attempted to follow the success of Baldassare Castiglione's *The Courtier* by providing would-be social climbers with an easy guide to etiquette and modern manners.

## Casanova de Seingalt, Giovanni Giacomo (1725-1798)

Italian adventurer, spy, violinist, librarian, and, according to his *Memoires* (published 1826-38, although the complete text did not appear until 1960-61), one of the world's great lovers. From 1774 he was a spy in the Venetian police service. In 1782 a libel got him into trouble, and after more wanderings he was in 1785 appointed librarian to Count Waldstein at his castle of Dûx in Bohemia. It was here that Casanova wrote his *Memoires*.

## Casaubon, Isaac (1559-1614)

Swiss-born French classical scholar. He published editions of numerous ancient writers, including Aristotle, Theophrastus, Polybius, Theocritus, Persius, and Suetonius. His own works include the treatises *De Satirica Graecorum Poësi et Romanorum Satira/On Greek and Roman Satire* (1605) and *De Libertate Ecclesiastica/On the Liberty - or Free Estate - of the Church* (1607).

His *Correspondence*, in Latin, and his diary, *Ephemerides*, were published posthumously.

## Castanheda, Fernão Lopes de (c. 1500-1559)

Portuguese chronicler. He produced a ten-volume *História do descobrimento e conquista da India pelos portugueses/History of the Discovery and Conquest of India by the Portuguese*, though only eight volumes were published during his lifetime. The first work of its kind, it was immensely popular and was translated into French, Castilian, Italian, and English.

Castanheda stressed his narrative was drawn from personal experience, not hearsay (a veiled reference to João de Barros's chronicle), which drew praise from Barros's successor Diogo do Couto.

## Castello Branco, Camillo Ferreira Botelho, Visconde de Corrêa Botelho (1825-1890)

Portuguese novelist. His work fluctuates between mysticism and bohemianism, and includes *Amor de perdição/Love of Perdition* (1862), written during his imprisonment for adultery, and *Novelas do Minho* (1875), stories of the rural north.

## Castelvetro, Lodovico (1505-1571)

Italian scholar and critic. One of the leading linguists of his day, he wrote on the evolution of Italian, and commentaries on Dante and <u>Petrarch</u>. He also translated Aristotle's *Poetics* and published an influential commentary on it in 1570.

Casti, Giambattista (1724-1803)

Italian poet. His chief works are *Novelle galanti* 1793, a collection of tales in ottava rima, the plots of which are taken chiefly from the writers <u>La Fontaine</u> and <u>Boccaccio</u>, and *Gli animali parlanti/The Talking Animals* (1802), an elaborate poetical allegory.

## Castiglionchio, Lapo da (1406-1438)

Italian humanist author, a native of Florence. He produced two tracts written in humanist Latin, *Comparatio inter rem militarem et studia litterarum/A Comparison of Arms and Letters* and *De Curiae Commodis/On the Benefits of Court*. He was a respected and prolific translator from Greek, producing versions of works by Plutarch, Lucian, and Isocrates, among others.

Castiglionchio dedicated his works to a range of leading figures, including Alfonso V, Cosimo de'Medici, and Humfrey, Duke of Gloucester. However, his dedications (letters or verse prefacing a literary work and presenting it to a particular person) outnumbered his works since he indulged in the practice of dedicating a text to more than one patron. For example, he presented one of his Plutarch translations to Pope Eugenius IV but he also dedicated the work to Cardinal Giordano Orsini.

# Castiglione, Baldassare (1478-1529)

## Count Castiglione

Italian writer and diplomat. He described the perfect Renaissance gentleman in *II cortegiano/The Courtier* (1528). Written in the form of dialogues, this work is one of the noblest expressions of the Renaissance spirit, and has been translated into most European languages.

Castiglione was born in Casàtico, near Mantua. He served the duke of Milan, and in 1506 was engaged by the duke of Urbino on a mission to Henry VII of England. He was made a count in 1511. In 1524 he was charged by Pope Clement VII with the difficult task of settling a dispute between the pope and the Holy Roman emperor Charles V. This took him to Spain, where he was naturalized and became bishop of Avila.

# Castilho, Antonio Feliciano (1800-1875)

#### Visconde de Castilho

Portuguese poet. His poems *Amor e melancholia* (1828), *A primavera* (1837), and *O outono* (1863) paved the way for the Portuguese Romantic movement.

## Castillejo, Cristóbal de (c. 1494-1550)

Spanish poet. His poems, including *Sermón de amores/Sermon on Love Affairs* (1542) and *Diálogo de las condiciones de las mujeres/Dialogue on the Condition of Women* (1544), are written in a bright or satirical style, with great verve.

## Castro, Rosalia de (1837-1885)

Spanish poet. Her delightful verse in the Galician dialect, *Cantares gallegos* (1863) and *Follas novas* (1880), have a gentle sadness and musicality which seem to be lost in her work written in Spanish, *En las orillas del Sar* (1884).

## Catch-22

black-humour novel by Joseph <u>Heller</u>, published in 1961, about a US squadron that is ordered to fly an increased number of bombing missions in Italy in World War II; the crazed military justifications involved were described by the novel's phrase 'Catch-22', which has come to represent the dilemma of every available choice being wrong.

# Catcher in the Rye, The

novel by US writer J D <u>Salinger</u>, published in 1951, about a young man growing up and his fight to maintain his integrity in a 'phoney' adult world; it has become an international classic.

## Cather, Willa Sibert (1873-1947)

US novelist and short-story writer. Her novels frequently explore life in the pioneer West, both in her own time and in past eras; for example, *O Pioneers!* (1913) and *My Antonia* (1918), and *A Lost Lady* (1923). *Death Comes for the Archbishop* (1927) is a celebration of the spiritual pioneering of the Catholic Church in New Mexico. She also wrote poetry and essays on fiction.

Cather was born in a small farming community in Virginia. Educated at the University of Nebraska, she edited a magazine in Pittsburgh, writing short stories to help fill its pages. Later she became managing editor of *McClure* magazine. In 1912 she left to concentrate on her writing. She ordered that her letters should be burned at her death.

# Cato, Dionysius (lived 3rd century)

Reputed author of *Dionysii Catonis Disticha de Moribus ad Filium* (3rd or 4th century), a book of moral injunctions and precepts which was very popular in the Middle Ages. It was translated into many languages, and Caxton printed a version at Westminster 1483.

# Cat on a Hot Tin Roof

play 1950 by US writer Tennessee Williams. Family tensions are revealed when a dying wealthy cotton planter, the repressive Big Daddy, makes known the terms of his will, which states that each of his sons must have children. The play ends with the suggestion that the childless son, an alcoholic struggling with homosexual guilt, will be saved by his wife, the 'cat' of the title.

# Cats, Jakob (1577-1660)

Dutch poet. His popularity (some 50,000 copies of his works were sold during his lifetime) persisted into the 19th century. His long didactic poems include *Trou-Ringh/Wedding Ring* (1637) and *Spieghel van den ouden ende nieuwen tijdt/Mirror of the Old and the New Times* (1632).

# Catullus, Gaius Valerius (c. 84-54 BC)

Roman lyric poet. He wrote in a variety of metres and forms, from short narratives and hymns to epigrams. He moved with ease through the literary and political society of late republican Rome. His love affair with the woman he called 'Lesbia' provided the inspiration for many of his poems.

# Causley, Charles Stanley (1917-2003)

English poet. His first volume of verse, *Farewell Aggie Weston* (1951), reflected his service in the Royal Navy during World War II. Recent collections of his verse include *Collected Poems 1951-1997* (1997) and *Collected Poems for Children* (1996). His work is rooted in the life and folklore of his native Cornwall and makes use of ballad material and religious themes. He was awarded the Queen's Gold Medal for Poetry in 1986.

Other collections include Union Street (1957), Underneath the Water (1968), Figgie

Hobbin (1970) (for children), and Secret Destinations (1984).

# Cavafy, Constantinos. (1863-1933)

#### pen-name of Konstantínos Pétrou Kaváfis

Greek poet. An Alexandrian, he shed light on Greek history, recreating the classical period with zest. He published only one book of poetry and remained almost unknown until translations of his work appeared 1952.

He pictured Hellenistic and also Byzantine scenes in simple language in which archaic nuances give, even to dramatic and erotic episodes, ironic ambiguity frequently sharpened into a compassionate satire.

## Cavalcanti, Guido (c. 1255-1300)

Italian poet. A Florentine and friend of Dante, he was a leading exponent of the *dolce stil nuovo* (sweet new style). His 'Donna mi prega/A Lady Asks Me' is a philosophical poem about love, and he also wrote sonnets and *ballate* or ballads. His favourite theme was the anguish of love.

## **Cavalier poets**

poets of Charles I's court, including Thomas <u>Carew</u>, Robert <u>Herrick</u>, Richard <u>Lovelace</u>, and John <u>Suckling</u>. They wrote witty, lighthearted lyrics about love and loyalty to the monarch.

## Cayrol, Jean (1911-2005)

French poet and novelist. His experience of German concentration camps provided the dominant metaphor in his work, that of a derelict and suffering humanity cast out into a world of signs and objects. Among his works are *Poèmes de la nuit et du brouillard/Poems of the Night and the Fog* (1945), *Lazare parmi nous/Lazarus Among Us* (1950), and the trilogy *Je vivrai l'amour des autres/I Shall Live the Love of Others* (1947-50).

Cech, Svatopluk (1846-1908)

Czech poet and novelist. He was one of the principal architects of Czech nationalism. His verse is richly rhetorical and full of vivid images. Cech's varied work includes epics based on Czech history, idylls, and satirical and philosophical poems. His prose satires on Czech bourgeois mentality in *The True Story of Mr Broucek's Excursion to the Moon* and *Mr Broucek's New Epoch-Making Excursion, This Time to the Fifteenth Century*, both published in 1888, were later the subjects of operas by Leoš Janácek.

Cech also wrote political and social poems; his collection of verse *Songs of a Slave* (1894) is a broadside against the Austrian monarchy which ruled over the Czech people at that time.

## Cecil, (Edward Christian) David (1902-1986)

#### Lord Cecil

English critic and biographer. His works include *The Stricken Deer* (1929, a life of the poet William Cowper); biographies of the writers Walter Scott (1933), Jane Austen (1935), and Thomas Hardy (1943); and a two-part study of the politician William Melbourne (1939 and 1954). His critical works include *Early Victorian Novelists* (1934) and *The Fine Art of Reading and Other Literary Studies* (1957).

## Céitinn, Seathrún

Gaelic name of Irish Gaelic poet and historian Geoffrey Keating.

## Cela, Camilo José (1916-2002)

Spanish novelist. Among his novels, characterized by their violence and brutal realism, are *La familia de Pascual Duarte/The Family of Pascal Duarte* (1942) and *La colmena/The Hive* (1951). He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1989.

He has written many other works of uneven merit, remarkable for their wit and frank treatment of sexual themes.

## Celan, Paul (1920-1970)

Romanian-born Jewish poet. He survived a Nazi labour camp and settled in Paris, France, in 1948, where he worked as a translator. Considered outstanding by many, his work slowly gained recognition as a difficult but valid new statement in German poetry. In 1958 he was awarded the Bremen Prize, and in 1960, the George Buechner Prize. His *Death Fugue* and *The Straightening* are seen as classic expressions of the Jewish experience during the Nazi persecution. Celan was born in Bukovina, Romania.

## Celestina, La

Spanish novel, published anonymously 1499 under the title *La Comedia de Calisto y Melibea*, but generally known as *La Celestina* from its principal character. Written in dialogue form, probably by Fernando de Rojas (*c.* 1465-1541), the work owes its success to its intense tragic power and magnificent characterization.

## Céline, Louis-Ferdinand (1894-1961)

#### pen-name of Louis-Ferdinand Destouches

French novelist. His writings aroused controversy over their cynicism and misanthropy. His best-known work is *Voyage au bout de la nuit/Journey to the End of the Night* (1932).

Later novels include *Mort à crédit/Death on the Installment Plan* (1936), *Guignol's Band* (1944), *D'un château à l'autre/From Castle to Castle* (1956), *Nord/North* (1960), and the posthumously published *Le Pont de Londres/London Bridge* (1964; the second volume of *Guignol's Band*).

## Celtis, Konrad (1459-1508)

German humanist and poet. One of the leading figures in the German Renaissance, he sought both to imitate Italian humanism and also to revive German culture. He taught classics and literature at a number of German universities, wrote plays and poetry, rediscovered German literary works, established a number of debating societies, and edited Latin classics, notably Tacitus'*Germania* in 1500. In 1487 he became the first German poet laureate.

## Cendrars, Blaise (1887-1961)

#### pseudonym of Frédéric Sause-Hall

French writer. An associate of the avant-garde poet <u>Apollinaire</u>, he wrote poetry with Futurist tendencies (for example, *Prose du Transsibérien et de la petite Jehanne de France/Prose of the Transsiberian and of Little Jehanne of France* 1913) and novels conveying the excitements of an active and varied life.

His volumes of poetry include Les Pâques à New York/Easter in New York (1912), Dixneuf poèmes élastiques/Nineteen Elastic Poems (1919), and Feuilles de route/ Travel Warrants (1924). His novels include L'Or/Sutter's Gold (1925) and Emmènemoi au bout du monde/Take Me to the End of the World (1955).

#### cento

#### (Greek kentron; Latin cento 'patchwork')

literary work consisting of passages from other writings. Composition of centos was a popular literary exercise in Roman times; in particular, Virgil's <u>Aeneid</u> formed the basis of several centos, including Decimus Magnus <u>Ausonius'sCento nuptialis</u> - a highly explicit account of the consummation of a marriage - and Capitulus's attack on the immorality and luxury of monasteries, written in 1535.

## Cercamon (lived *c.* 1135-45)

Provençal troubadour. Half a dozen of his lyrics survive, simple in language and archaic in form. <u>Marcabru</u> is said to have been his pupil.

#### Cerf, Bennett Alfred (1898-1971)

US editor and publisher. In 1925 he co-purchased the rights to the Modern Library series, and subsequently founded Random House 1927. The company grew to be one of the world's largest publishing houses.

Born in New York, Cerf was educated at Columbia University and briefly worked as a reporter for the *New York Herald Tribune*. He published several collections of humour and appeared as a regular panellist on the popular television show 'What's My Line?'

#### Cernuda, Luis (1902-1963)

Spanish poet. He produced a single volume of poetry, *La realidad y el deseo*, composed between 1930 and the end of his life; it is a sad but dignified, austere record of his personal struggle against despair.

Cervantes, Saavedra, Miguel de (1547-1616)

Spanish novelist, dramatist, and poet. His masterpiece <u>Don Quixote de la Mancha</u> (in full *El ingenioso hidalgo Don Quixote de la Mancha*) was published in 1605. In 1613 his Novelas ejemplares/Exemplary Novels appeared, followed by Viaje del Parnaso/ The Voyage to Parnassus (1614). A spurious second part of Don Quixote prompted Cervantes to bring out his own second part in 1615, often considered superior to the first in construction and characterization.

Cervantes entered the army in Italy, and was wounded in the sea battle of Lepanto in 1571 against the Ottoman empire. On his way back to Spain in 1575, he was captured by Barbary pirates and taken to Algiers, where he became a slave until ransomed in 1580.

Returning to Spain, he wrote several plays, and in 1585 his pastoral romance *La Galatea* was printed. *Don Quixote* was an immediate success and was soon translated into English and French.

## Cesarotti, Melchiorre (1730-1808)

Italian writer. His *Filosofia delle lingue/Philosophy of Language* (1785) advocates a free development of language, as opposed to the teaching of the <u>Accademia della</u> <u>Crusca</u> in Florence.

He also wrote *Filosofia del gusto/Philosophy of Taste* and was responsible for the definitive edition of James <u>Macpherson's</u> works attributed to Ossian, 1773. This exercised a great influence in Italy and elsewhere. He also made a prose translation of the *Iliad*, which he followed with a long verse paraphrase, running into ten volumes, called *La Morte d'Ettore*.

## Chabon, Michael (1963-)

US writer, author of *The Amazing Adventures of Kavalier & Clay* (2000), which won the 2001 Pulitzer Prize for Fiction.

Born in Washington, DC, his other works of fiction include *The Mysteries of Pittsburgh* (1988), *A Model World* (1991), *Wonder Boys* (1995, filmed 2001), *Werewolves in Their Youth* (1999), and the children's novel *Summerland* (2002).

## Chalmers, Alexander (1759-1834)

Scottish biographer and editor. His *Glossary to Shakespeare* appeared 1797 and *British Essayists* (45 volumes) 1817. His reputation rests chiefly on his *General Biographical Dictionary* in 32 volumes, 1812-17.

# Chambers, E(dmund) K(erchever) (1866-1954)

English scholar and drama historian. His principal works are *The Medieval Stage* (1903) and *The Elizabethan Stage* (1923), in which he shows the connection between the political and social history of England and the growth and flowering of drama. The latter book gives the story of each stage company in great detail.

Other publications include Arthur of Britain (1927) and William Shakespeare: A Study of the Facts and Problems (1930).

# Chambers, Ephraim (1680-1740)

English encyclopedist. In 1728 he published his *Cyclopaedia, or Universal Dictionary of Arts and Sciences* in competition with John Harris's *Lexicon Technicum/Technical Lexicon* (1704). A French translation gave rise to the <u>Encyclopédie</u> of Diderot and d'Alembert.

## Chambers, Robert (1802-1871)

Scottish publisher and writer. With his brother, William Chambers, he founded the publishing firm of W & R Chambers. He was at first only a contributor to Chambers's *Edinburgh Journal* started by his brother in 1832. Later he became joint editor, and did much to ensure the success of the paper. He wrote *The Life and Works of Robert Burns* (1851), for which he gathered many hitherto unpublished details from the poet's sister.

Chambers was born in Peebles, Scotland, and educated at the local school. In 1818 he opened a book stall in Leith Walk in Edinburgh, Scotland. In 1825 he published *Traditions of Edinburgh*, which won him the friendship of Walter Scott. He was also an ardent scientist, and visited Scandinavia and Canada for geological exploration, the results of which are contained in *Tracings of the North of Europe* (1850) and *Tracings in Iceland and the Faroe Islands* (1856). In 1844 he published anonymously *Vestiges of the Natural History of Creation* and in 1864 *The Book of Days*.

## chambers of rhetoric

amateur literary societies in the Netherlands and France during the 15th and 16th centuries. The members were mainly middle-class townspeople who formed associations similar to guilds in order to promote their love of poetry and drama. The chambers of rhetoric often organized public celebrations.

They were usually very traditional in their literary interests, but in the Netherlands (where they were called *rederijkers*) they did play an important role in the development of secular drama and then poetry. The leading Dutch writers to emerge from the *rederijker* tradition were Dirck <u>Coornheert</u> and Henrick <u>Spiegel</u>.

## Chamfort, Sébastien Roch Nicolas (1741-1794)

French writer and moralist. His comedies, ballets, and critical writings, as well as his brilliant conversation, attracted a wide circle of admirers of every class. He is now best remembered for his *Maximes, caractères et anecdotes* (published posthumously).

Louis XVI and Marie Antoinette favoured his writing, but he was keenly opposed to the royalist party. Because of this stance he became suspect during the Revolution, and committed suicide.

# Chamisso, Adelbert von (1781-1838)

#### pen-name of Louis-Charles-Adélaïde Chamisso de Boncourt

French-born German biologist and writer, author of the fairy tale *Peter Schlemihl's wundersame Geschichte/Peter Schlemihl's Remarkable Story* (1814). One of the most prominent German Romanticists, he published books on biology, a novel, and works of poetry. Some of his poems were set to music by Robert Schumann. He was also a zoologist and was the first to report the peculiar sexual cycle of some forms of molluscs.

# Champfleury (1821-1889)

#### pseudonym of Jules Fleury-Husson

French novelist. He joined the bohemian circle of Charles <u>Baudelaire</u> and Henri <u>Murger</u>, and was an acknowledged leader of the realistic school.

Among his novels are *Les Bourgeois de Molinchart* (1855), a satirical tale of provincial life among the middle classes; *Les Amoureux de Sainte Périne* (1859); and *Le Violon de faïence* (1862).

#### pen-name of Danpat Rai Srivastava

Indian novelist and short-story writer. Prem Chand's early writing was in Urdu; his first major work in Hindi was *Sevasadana/House of Service* (1918). In *Godan/The Gift of a Cow* (1936), he presented an authentic portrait of Indian village life. He wrote over 300 short stories.

## Chandler, Raymond Thornton (1888-1959)

US novelist. He turned the pulp detective mystery form into a successful genre of literature and created the quintessential private eye in the tough but chivalric loner, Philip Marlowe. Marlowe is the narrator of such books as *The Big Sleep* (1939; filmed 1946), *Farewell My Lovely* (1940; filmed 1944), *The Lady in the Lake* (1943; filmed 1947), and *The Long Goodbye* (1954; filmed 1975). He also wrote numerous screenplays, notably *Double Indemnity* (1944), *Blue Dahlia* (1946), and *Strangers on a Train* (1951).

#### chanson de geste

#### (medieval French 'song of (great) deeds')

one of a genre of epic poems of medieval Europe, based on a legendary Carolingian past and dealing with matters of importance to the military classes - loyalty, lineage, courage, fighting skills, and battle tactics - often against an imaginary 'Saracen' foe. It probably developed from oral poetry recited in royal or princely courts.

## Chanson de Roland

11th-century epic poem which tells of the real and imaginary deeds of Roland and other knights of Charlemagne, and their last stand against the Basques at Roncesvalles. It is an example of the *chanson de geste*.

#### chapbook

small pamphlet of 16 or 24 pages, illustrated by woodcuts and sold by **chapmen**, or itinerant pedlars, during the 18th century. Their subjects included medieval romance, popular folk heroes, and synoptic versions of literary classics such as *The Pilgrim's Progress* and *Robinson Crusoe*.

Chapbooks circulated in their thousands, maintaining links with the traditional oral

culture of the Middle Ages. They persisted until the early 19th century.

## Chapelain, Jean (1595-1674)

French poet and critic. He wrote a volume of *Odes* and a mediocre epic, *La Pucelle/ The Virgin*. He figured prominently at Madame de Rambouillet's salon and was one of the founders of the French Academy.

## Chapman, George (c. 1559-1634)

English poet and dramatist. His translations of the Greek epics of Homer (completed 1616) were the earliest in England; his plays include the comedy *Eastward Ho* (with Ben Jonson and John Marston, 1605) and the tragedy *Bussy d'Ambois* (1607).

Chapman's translations of Homer are among the most faithful to the original in English verse. Of his plays, *All Fools* (1605) and *The Widow's Tears* (1612) are among his better comedies, whereas *Bussy d'Ambois* is a tragedy written in the tradition of the Roman writer Lucius Seneca. Chapman also published several other translations and various poetical works.

## Chapman, John Jay (1862-1933)

US man of letters. He published poems, plays, translations, and essays renowned for critical power and stylistic grace.

He was born in New York City. He was ndependently wealthy.

Chapone, Hester (1727-1801)

English essayist. Her *Letters on the Improvement of the Mind* (1773) was very popular in girls' educational circles.

# Chariton (lived 2nd century)

Greek romance writer, born at Aphrodisias in Caria. His *Loves of Chaereas and Callirrhoe*, some episodes of which are historical, is set at the time of the Peloponnesian War.

## Charly, Louise

Real name of French poet Louise Labé.

## Charrière, Isabelle Agnès Elizabeth van Zuylen de (1740-1805)

Dutch writer who wrote in French and lived in Switzerland. Her works include plays, tracts, and novels, among them *Caliste* (1786). She had many early feminist ideas.

## Charron, Pierre (1541-1603)

French writer and preacher. A close friend of <u>Montaigne</u>, he is best known for his book *De la Sagesse/Wisdom* (1601), in which he argued for religious tolerance. The book's sceptical claim that it is impossible to know anything for certain - a view severely censured by the Sorbonne and leading figures in the Catholic Church - made him a forerunner of 17th-century deism.

## Charteris, Leslie (1907-1993)

#### adopted name of Leslie Charles Bowyer Yin

Singapore-born US novelist. His varied career in many exotic occupations gave authentic background to some 40 novels about the Saint, a gentleman adventurer on the wrong side of the law. The novels have been adapted for films, radio, and television. The first was *Enter the Saint* (1930).

## Chase, James Hadley (1906-1985)

#### pen-name of René Raymond

English author. He wrote the hard-boiled thriller *No Orchids for Miss Blandish* (1939) and other popular novels.

## Chasles, Victor Euphémien Philarete (1798-1873)

French writer and critic. He did much to introduce English, Russian, and Scandinavian literature to France, and wrote widely on literary and historical

subjects.

## Chastelard, Pierre de Boscosel de (1540-1563)

French poet. In 1561 he went to Scotland in the suite of Mary Queen of Scots, with whom he fell violently in love. Having twice been found hiding in her room, he was hanged.

## Chastellain, Georges (c. 1404-1475)

French poet and chronicler. Employed by both Philip the Good and Charles the Bold, he wrote *Chronique des ducs de Bourgogne/Chronicle of the Dukes of Burgundy* and other similar chronicles, and a number of epitaphs, rondeaux, and ballades.

## Chateaubriand, François Auguste René, Vicomte de (1768-1848)

French writer. He was a founder of Romanticism. Having lived in exile from the French Revolution between 1794 and 1800, he wrote *Atala* (1801; based on his encounters with North American Indians), *Le Génie du christianisme/The Genius of Christianity* (1802) - a defence of the Christian faith in terms of social, cultural, and spiritual benefits - and the autobiographical *René* (1805).

He visited the USA in 1791 and, on his return to France, fought for the royalist side, which was defeated at Thionville in 1792. He lived in exile in England until 1800. When he returned to France, he held diplomatic appointments under Louis XVIII, becoming ambassador to Britain in 1822. He later wrote *Mémoires d'outre-tombe/ Memoirs from Beyond the Tomb* (1848-50), an account, often imaginary, of his own life.

# Chatterji, Bankim Chandra (1838-1894)

Indian novelist. Born in Bengal, where he established his reputation with his first book, *Durges-Nandini* (1864), he became a favourite of the nationalists. His book *Ananda Math* (1882) contains the Indian national song 'Bande-Mataram'.

## Chatterton, Thomas (1752-1770)

English poet. His medieval-style poems and brief life were to inspire English Romanticism. Having studied ancient documents, he composed poems he ascribed to a 15th-century monk, 'Thomas Rowley', and these were at first accepted as genuine. He committed suicide after becoming destitute.

Seeking a patron, he sent examples to the writer Horace <u>Walpole</u>, who, after originally being taken in, was advised that they were forgeries. In 1770 Chatterton moved to London, where during the four months until his death he contributed prose and satirical verses to various periodicals. He poisoned himself with arsenic, after having lived for weeks on the verge of starvation. His death gripped the imagination of the Romantic poets and tributes were paid to his memory by Coleridge, Shelley, Keats, and Wordsworth.

## Chatwin, (Charles) Bruce (1940-1989)

English writer. His works include *The Songlines* (1987), written after living with Australian Aborigines; the novel *Utz* (1988), about a manic porcelain collector in Prague; and travel pieces and journalism collected in *What Am I Doing Here* (1989).

# Chaucer, Geoffrey (c. 1340-1400)

English poet. *The <u>Canterbury Tales</u>*, a collection of stories told by a group of pilgrims on their way to Canterbury, reveals his knowledge of human nature and his stylistic variety, from the sophisticated and subtly humorous to the simple and bawdy. His early work shows formal French influence, as in the dream-poem *The Book of the Duchess* and his adaptation of the French allegorical poem on courtly love, *The Romaunt of the Rose*, in which the meaning is conveyed in symbols. More mature works reflect the influence of Italian realism, as in *Troilus and Criseyde*, a substantial narrative poem about the tragic betrayal of an idealized courtly love, adapted from the Italian writer <u>Boccaccio</u>. In *The Canterbury Tales* he shows his own genius for metre (rhythm) and characterization. Chaucer was the most influential English poet of the Middle Ages.

Chaucer was born in London, the son of a wine dealer. Taken prisoner in the French wars, he had to be ransomed by Edward III in 1360. In 1366 he married Philippa Roet, sister of Katherine Swynford, the mistress and later third wife of John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster. Payments during the period 1367-74 indicate a rising fortune and show that Chaucer made several journeys abroad, both on military service and public business. He was sent to Italy (where he may have met the writers Boccaccio and Petrarch), France, and Flanders. He was controller of wool customs (1374-86), and of petty customs (1382-86). He became justice of the peace for Kent in 1385 and member of Parliament for Kent in 1386. In 1389 he was made clerk of the king's works, and superintended undertakings at Woolwich and Smithfield. In 1391 he gave up the clerkship and accepted the position of deputy forester of North Petherton, Somerset. Late in 1399 he moved to Westminster and died the following year; he was buried in the Poets' Corner of Westminster Abbey.

#### Chaucer



(Image © Philip Sauvain Picture Collection)

A portrait of the English poet Geoffrey Chaucer on horseback. Chaucer was born in London, and travelled widely in France, and in Italy, where he was possibly influenced by the writers Boccaccio and Petrarch.

#### Chaucer



#### (Image © Billie Love)

English poet Geoffrey Chaucer, best known for *The Canterbury Tales*. Chaucer was also active as a diplomat and civil servant for several English kings, holding posts such as comptroller in the Customs House, and justice of the peace and knight of the shire in Kent.

## Chaudhuri, Nirad Chandra (1897-1999)

Indian writer and broadcaster. He attracted attention with his *Autobiography of an Unknown Indian* (1950) which illuminates the clash of British and Indian civilizations. A first visit to England, previously known to him only through its literature, produced the quirky *A Passage to England* (1959). Later works include *The Continent of Circe* (1965), an erudite critique of Indian culture, and *Thy Hand Great Anarch* (1987), critical of the impact of British culture on India.

## Chaulieu, Guillaume Amfrye, Abbé de (c. 1639-1720)

French poet and wit, called the 'Anacreon of the Temple'. He was one of the most prominent French poets at the beginning of the 18th century. His compositions were generally lyrical quatrains, such as 'La Solitude de Fontenay', 'La Goutte', and the 'Ode sur l'inconstance'.

## Cheever, John (1912-1982)

US writer. His stories and novels focus on the ironies of upper-middle-class life in suburban America. His short stories were frequently published in the *New Yorker* magazine. His first novel was *The Wapshot Chronicle* (1957), for which he won the National Book Award. Others include *Falconer* (1977). His *Stories of John Cheever* (1978) won a Pulitzer Prize.

# Cheke, John (1514-1557)

English classical scholar. The first regius professor of Greek at Cambridge 1540-51, he encouraged the spread of classical humanism and was largely responsible for introducing the Erasmian pronunciation of Greek.

# Chekhov, Anton Pavlovich (1860-1904)

Russian dramatist and writer of short stories. His plays concentrate on the creation of atmosphere and delineation of internal development, rather than external action. His first play, *Ivanov* (1887), was a failure, as was *The SeaguII* (1896) until revived by Stanislavsky in 1898 at the Moscow Art Theatre, for which Chekhov went on to write his finest plays: <u>Uncle Vanya</u> (1897), *The <u>Three Sisters</u>* (1901), and *The <u>Cherry</u> <u>Orchard</u> (1904).* 

Chekhov was born in Taganrog, southern Russia. He qualified as a doctor in 1884, but devoted himself to writing short stories rather than practising medicine. The collection *Particoloured Stories* (1886) consolidated his reputation and gave him leisure to develop his style, as seen in *My Life* (1895), *The Lady with the Dog* (1898), and *In the Ravine* (1900).

#### Chekhov



#### (Image © Billie Love)

A photograph taken in 1900 of the two Russian writers Anton Chekhov (on the left) and Maxim Gorky. In his early writing career, Gorky became friends with Chekhov, whose frail health as a result of contracting tuberculosis in 1892 caused him to move to the warmer climate of the Crimea. There Chekhov encouraged Gorky to write his most famous play, *The Lower Depths*(1902).

## Chelcický, Petr (c. 1390-c. 1460)

Czech writer and theologian. The most influential writer of the Hussite religious reformation movement, he composed a number of Bible commentaries and treatises, written in a vigorous, popular style, among them *The Net of Faith*.

Chelcický was a believer in nonviolence, and held that true Christians should refrain from the pursuit of riches and power. The Russian novelist Leo Tolstoy, who learnt of Chelcický from Czech friends, regarded him as his precursor.

# Chenedolle, Charles-Julien Lioult de (1769-1833)

French poet. A member of Madame de <u>Staël's</u> circle, he belonged to the Romantic school of poets; his principal works are *Le Génie de l'homme/The Genius of Man* (1807) and *Etudes poétiques/Poetic Studies* (1820).

## Chénier, André Marie de (1762-1794)

French poet. His lyrical poetry was later to inspire the Romantic movement, but he was known in his own time for his uncompromising support of the constitutional royalists after the Revolution. In 1793 he went into hiding, but finally he was arrested and, on 25 July 1794, guillotined. While in prison he wrote *Jeune Captive/ Captive Girl* and the political *lambes*, published after his death.

## Chénier, Marie Joseph Blaise de (1764-1811)

French dramatist and poet, the younger brother of André de Chénier. His tragedies include *Charles IX* (1790), *Henry VIII* (1791), *Jean Calas* (1791), and *Timoléon* (1794). He wrote the words of the national song 'Le Chant du départ' (1794).

## Chernyshevski, Nikolai Gavrilovich (1828-1889)

Russian publicist and literary critic. He was the leader of the radical intelligentsia in the 1850s and 1860s. His novel *Chto delat'?/What Is to Be Done?* (1864) was an inspiration to the Russian revolutionary movement, as were his many articles in the radical monthly the *Contemporary* 1854-64. He appealed to both Populists and Marxists. Chernyshevski's opposition to tsarist rule led to his being sentenced to 7 years' forced labour and 12 years' exile in Siberia.

In his aesthetic writings, such as the essay 'The Aesthetic Relations of Art and Reality', Chernyshevski expounded a utilitarian view of art.

# Cherry Orchard, The

play by Anton <u>Chekhov</u>, first produced in Moscow in 1904. Its theme is the demise of the way of life of a landowning family, symbolized by the felling of a cherry orchard after it has been sold to a developer.

## Chesnut, Mary Boykin (1823-1886)

#### born Mary Boykin Miller

US diarist. A staunch supporter of the Confederacy, she is remembered for the diary she kept during the American Civil War. The most extensive diary of the Civil War, it provides a frank, detailed, and perceptive account of the South in this period. Though a passionate defender of the Southern way of life, including slavery, she was aware of the social and moral problems created by slavery and sympathetic to the suffering of slaves. Her diary was first published in 1905 as *A Diary from Dixie*.

## Chesnutt, Charles Waddell (1858-1932)

US novelist. One of the earliest black novelists, he published a number of works that confronted the racial issue directly, including *The House Behind the Cedars* (1900), *The Colonel's Dream* (1905), and *The Marrow of Tradition* (1901).

# Chesterfield, Philip Dormer Stanhope, 4th Earl of Chesterfield (1694-1773)

English politician and writer. He was the author of *Letters to his Son* (1774), which gave voluminous instruction on aristocratic manners and morals. A member of the literary circle of Swift, Pope, and Bolingbroke, he incurred the wrath of Dr Samuel Johnson by failing to carry out an offer of patronage.

## Chesterton, Cecil Edward (1879-1918)

English writer and journalist, the brother of G K Chesterton. He wrote antiliberal books, collaborated with the humorist Hilaire <u>Belloc</u> on *The Party System* (1911), and edited the antibureaucratic *New Witness*.

## Chesterton, G(ilbert) K(eith) (1874-1936)

English novelist, essayist, and poet. He wrote numerous short stories featuring a Catholic priest, Father Brown, who solves crimes by drawing on his knowledge of human nature. Other novels include the fantasy *The Napoleon of Notting Hill* (1904) and *The Man Who Was Thursday* (1908), a deeply emotional allegory about the problem of evil.

# Chevalier, Tracy (1962-)

US writer. Her novel *Girl with a Pearl Earring* (1999; filmed 2003), a fictionalized account of the subject of a well-known painting by the 17th-century Dutch artist Johannes Vermeer, became an international bestseller, acclaimed for its simple, clean prose and rich atmosphere.

Her other novels, also based on historical works of art, include *The Virgin Blue* (1997), *Falling Angels* (2001), and *The Lady and the Unicorn* (2003).

## Chiabrera, Gabriello (1552-1638)

Italian poet. He wrote many odes, lyrics, and canzonettas (songs), taking the Greeks, especially <u>Pindar</u>, as models. He was particularly interested in metrical experiments and the relation between poetry and music.

## Chiarini, Giuseppe (1833-1908)

Italian poet and critic. A distinguished scholar, he contributed greatly towards a broadening of contemporary Italian culture, particularly through his editorship of several literary magazines. His finest poems, which reveal the influence of Giosuè Carducci, are full of charm, especially *In Memoriam* (1875) and *Lacrymae* (1879).

## Child, Francis James (1825-1896)

US scholar. He gathered together the largest surviving collection of ancient English and Scottish ballads in *English and Scottish Popular Ballads* (1882-98), which remains the authoritative collection.

He also edited the works of the English poet Edmund Spenser in 1855, and published *Four Old Plays* (1848) and *Observations on the Language of Chaucer's 'Canterbury Tales'* (1863).

## children's literature

works specifically written for children. The earliest known illustrated children's book in English is <u>Goody Two Shoes</u> (1765), possibly written by Oliver Goldsmith. **Fairy tales** were originally part of a vast range of oral literature, credited only to the writer who first recorded them, such as Charles Perrault. During the 19th century several writers, including Hans Christian Andersen, wrote original stories in the fairy-tale genre; others, such as the Grimm brothers, collected (and sometimes adapted) existing stories.

## 19th century

Early children's stories were written with a moral purpose; this was particularly true in the 19th century, apart from the unique case of Lewis Carroll's <u>Alice</u> books. The late 19th century was the great era of children's literature in the UK, with Lewis Carroll, Beatrix Potter, Charles Kingsley, and J M Barrie. It was also the golden age of illustrated children's books, with such artists as Kate Greenaway and Randolph Caldecott. In the USA, Louisa May Alcott's *Little Women* (1869) and its sequels found a wide audience.

Adventure stories have often appealed to children even when these were written for adults; examples include *Robinson Crusoe* by Daniel Defoe; the satirical *Gulliver's Travels* by Jonathan Swift; and *Tom Sawyer* (1876) and *Huckleberry Finn* (1884) by Mark Twain.

## 20th century

Among the most popular 20th-century children's writers in English in the UK have been Kenneth Grahame (*The Wind in the Willows*, 1908) and A A Milne (*Winnie the Pooh*, 1926); and, in the USA, Laura Ingalls Wilder (*Little House on the Prairie*, 1935), E B White (*Stuart Little*, 1945, *Charlotte's Web*, 1952), and Dr Seuss (*The Cat in the Hat*, 1957). The Canadian Lucy Maud Montgomery's series that began with Anne of Green Gables (1908) was widely popular. Roald <u>Dahl's James and the Giant</u> *Peach* (1961) is the first of his popular children's books, which summon up primitive emotions and are dominated by moral themes. More realistic stories for teenagers are written by US authors such as Judy Blume and S E Hinton. Towards the end of the 20th century and into the 21st century, the *Harry Potter* series by English author J K <u>Rowling</u>, which ventures into the world of wizardry, became exceptionally popular.

## fantasy

Many children's writers have been influenced by J R R <u>Tolkien</u>, whose *The Hobbit* (1937) and its sequel, the three-volume *Lord of the Rings* (1954-55), are set in the comprehensively imagined world of Middle-earth. His friend C S <u>Lewis</u> produced the allegorical chronicles of Narnia, including *The Lion, the Witch and the Wardrobe* (1950). Rosemary Sutcliff's (*The Eagle of the Ninth*, 1954), Philippa Pearce's (*Tom's Midnight Garden*, 1958), and Penelope Lively's (*The Wild Hunt of Hagworthy*, 1971) are other outstanding books by children's authors who have exploited an enduring fascination with time travel.

## **Chinese literature**

the earliest written records in Chinese date from about 1500  $_{BC}$ ; the earliest extant literary works date from about 800  $_{BC}$ .

#### poetry

Chinese poems, often only four lines long, and written in the ancient literary language understood throughout China, consist of rhymed lines of a fixed number of syllables, ornamented by parallel phrasing and tonal pattern. The oldest poems are contained in the *Book of Songs* (800-600 BC). Some of the most celebrated Chinese poets are the nature poet T'ao Ch'ien (372-427), the master of technique Li Po (705-762), the autobiographical Bo Zhu Yi (772-846), and the wide-ranging Su Tung-p'o (1036-1101); and among the moderns using the colloquial language under European influence and experimenting in free verse are Hsu Chih-mo (1895-1931), and Pien Chih-lin (1910-).

#### prose

Histories are not so much literary works as collections of edited documents with moral comment, whereas the essay has long been cultivated under strict rules of form and style. An example of the latter genre is 'Upon the Original Way' by Han Yü (768-824), recalling the nation to Confucianism. Until the 16th century the short story was confined to the anecdote, startling by its strangeness and written in the literary language - for example, the stories of the poetic Tuan Ch'eng-shih (died 863); but after that time the more novelistic type of short story, written in the colloquial tongue, developed by its side. The Chinese novel evolved from the street storyteller's art and has consequently always used the popular language. The early romances *Three Kingdoms, All Men Are Brothers*, and *Golden Lotus* are anonymous, the earliest known author of this genre being Wu Che'ng-en (*c.* 1505-1580); the most realistic of the great novelists is Ts'ao Chan (died 1763).

Twentieth-century Chinese novels have largely adopted European form, and have been influenced by Russia, as have the realistic stories of Lu Hsün. In typical Chinese drama, the stage presentation far surpasses the text in importance (the dialogue was not even preserved in early plays), but there have been experiments in the European manner. Some recent writing such as the stories of Bai Hua (1930-) has been energized by the tension between humanist individualism and the collectivist ideology of the communist state. Personal and family experience of China's social and political upheavals in the 20th century has been recorded in some distinguished autobiographical works such as *Wild Swans: Three Daughters of China* (1991) by Jung Chang (1952-).

# Chisholm, Hugh (1866-1924)

English editor. In 1900 he was appointed joint editor of the supplementary volumes of the *Encyclopaedia Britannica*, constituting the 10th edition. In 1903 he became editor in chief of the 11th edition and he also edited the 12th. He was financial editor of *The Times* 1914-20, resigning to edit the additional post-war volumes of the *Encyclopaedia*.

## Cholmondeley, Mary (1859-1925)

English novelist. Her *Red Pottage* (1899) won considerable success. Other novels include *The Danvers Jewels* (1887), *Sir Charles Danvers* (1889), *Diana Tempest* (1893), *Moth and Rust* (1902), and *The Lowest Rung* (1908). *Under One Roof* (1918) is a book of reminiscences.

## Chopin, Kate (1851-1904)

#### born Katherine O'Flaherty

US novelist and short-story writer. Her novel *The Awakening* (1899), the story of a married New Orleans woman's awakening to her sexuality, caused a sensation of hostile criticism, which effectively ended her career. It is now regarded as a classic of feminist sensibility.

# Choromanski, Michal (1904-1972)

Polish novelist, born in Ukraine. His earliest work includes a short experimental novel and a collection of short stories, *Opowadania dvuznaczne/Ambivalent Tales*. The novel *Zazdrosc i medycyna/Jealousy and Medicine* (1932) established his reputation at home and abroad.

## chorus

in classical Greek drama, the group of actors who jointly comment on the main action or advise the main characters. The action in Greek plays took place offstage; the chorus provided a link in the drama when the principals were offstage. The chorus did not always speak in unison; it was common for members of the chorus to show some individuality. The device of a chorus has also been used by later dramatists.

# Chrétien de Troyes (died c. 1183)

French poet. His epics, which introduced the concept of the Holy Grail, include *Lancelot, ou le chevalier de la charrette (c.* 1178), written for Marie, Countess of Champagne; *Perceval, ou le conte du Graal (c.* 1182), written for Philip, Count of Flanders; *Erec (c.* 1170); *Yvain, ou le chevalier au Lion (c.* 1178); and other Arthurian romances.

# Christie, Agatha Mary Clarissa (1890-1976)

#### born Agatha Mary Clarissa Miller

English detective novelist. She is best known for her ingenious plots and for the creation of the characters Hercule <u>Poirot</u> and Miss Jane <u>Marple</u>. She wrote more than 70 novels, including *The Murder of Roger Ackroyd* (1926) and *The Body in the Library* (1942). Her play *The Mousetrap*, which opened in London in 1952, is the longest continuously running show in the world.

Her first crime novel, *The Mysterious Affair at Styles* (1920), introduced the Belgian detective Hercule Poirot. She often broke purist rules, as in *The Murder of Roger Ackroyd* in which the narrator is the murderer. She was at her best writing about domestic murders in the respectable middle-class world. A number of her books have been filmed, for example *Murder on the Orient Express* (1934; filmed 1975). She was created a DBE in 1971.

## Christine de Pisan (1364-c. 1430)

French poet and historian. Her works include love lyrics, philosophical poems, a poem in praise of Joan of Arc, a history of Charles V of France, and various defences of women, including *La Cité des dames/The City of Ladies* (1405), which contains a valuable series of contemporary portraits.

She championed her sex against the satire of Jean de Meung (who completed the *Roman de la Rose*) in *Epître du dieu d'amour/Epistle of the God of Love* (1399), as also in *Dit de la rose/Tale of the Rose* (1402).

## Chukovsky, Kornei Ivanovich (1882-1969)

Russian critic and poet. The leading authority on the 19th-century Russian poet Nekrasov, he was also an expert on the Russian language, as in, for example, *Alive as Life* 1963. He was also beloved as 'Grandpa' Kornei Chukovsky for his nonsense poems, which owe much to English nursery rhymes and nonsense verse.

## Church, Richard (1893-1972)

English poet and novelist. His *Collected Poems* appeared in 1948. His best-known novel, *The Porch* (1938), forms a sequence with *The Stronghold* (1939) and *The Room Within* (1940).

Later novels include The Sampler (1942), Green Tide (1944), and The Dangerous

*Years, Prince Albert* (1963). Among his other works are *The Growth of the English Novel* (1950) and his autobiographical volumes *Over the Bridge* (1955) and *The Golden Sovereign* (1957).

## Churchill, Charles (1731-1764)

English satirical poet. He wrote coarse personal satires, mainly dealing with political issues. They include *The Rosciad* (1761), a satire on the London stage; *The Prophecy of Famine* (1763), the first of his political satires; and *An Epistle to William Hogarth* (1763), which he wrote after a quarrel with the English artist. Churchill was an associate of the radical politician John Wilkes.

## Churchill, Winston (1871-1947)

US writer. He wrote novels dealing with US history and politics, including *Richard Carvel* (1899), *The Crisis* (1901), *A Modern Chronicle* (1910), and *A Far Country* (1915).

He graduated from the US Naval Academy in 1894, but turned to editing the *Army and Navy Journal* and to writing novels. He was a member of the New Hampshire State Legislature 1903-05.

## Churchyard, Thomas (c. 1520-1604)

English poet. He produced a number of broadsheet ballads including *Shore's Wife* (1563), *Churchyard's Chips* (1575), and *The Worthiness of Wales* (1587).

# Cibber, Colley (1671-1757)

English actor, dramatist, and poet. He wrote numerous plays, such as *Love's Last Shift, or The Fool in Fashion* (1696) and *The Careless Husband* (1705), and acted in many parts. In 1709 he became a joint proprietor of the Drury Lane Theatre, London, and was the first manager to run a theatre on strictly business lines. He was poet laureate from 1730.

His first play, *Love's Last Shift* (written to provide a bigger part for himself), was so successful that John Vanbrugh wrote a sequel to it, *The Relapse* (1696), in which Cibber played Lord Foppington.

#### Cicero, Marcus Tullius (106-43 BC)

Roman orator, writer, and politician. His speeches and philosophical and rhetorical works are models of Latin prose, and his letters provide a picture of contemporary Roman life. As consul in 63 BC he exposed the Roman politician Catiline's conspiracy in four major orations.

Born in Arpinium, Cicero became an advocate in Rome, spent three years in Greece studying oratory, and after the dictator Sulla's death distinguished himself in Rome with the prosecution of the corrupt Roman governor, Verres. When the First Triumvirate was formed 59 BC, Cicero was briefly exiled and devoted himself to literature. He sided with Pompey during the civil war (49-48) but was pardoned by Julius Caesar and returned to Rome. After Caesar's assassination in 44 BC he supported Octavian (the future emperor Augustus) and violently attacked Mark Antony in republican speeches known as the *Philippics*. On the reconciliation of Antony and Octavian, he was executed by Antony's agents.

#### 'Cid, El cantar' (or 'poema de mio')

anonymous Spanish epic poem dating from about 1140, the greatest and earliest surviving literary epic of Castile. The Cid (Arabic *sayyid*, 'master') was a historical figure, Rodrigo Díaz de Vivar (*c.* 1040-1099), a knight of Castile. The poem, written in sober and realistic language interspersed with lyrical passages and lively dialogue, celebrates his real and legendary exploits against the Moors, including his capture of the great city and plain of Valencia, and the adventures of his daughters.

## Cielo D'Alcamo

#### or Ciullo D'Alcamo

Italian poet. He is known only as the author of a spirited *Contrasto* between a lover and his lady, which is among the earliest documents of Italian literature.

#### Cinna, Gaius Helvius (died 44 BC)

Roman poet and friend of <u>Catullus</u>. As tribune of the plebs, he was murdered by the mob after Caesar's funeral in mistake for his namesake, L Cornelius Cinna. Fragments of his poems 'Smyrna' and 'Propempticon' survive.

#### born Guittoncino de' Sinibaldi

Italian poet and jurist. His love lyrics, although generally classified as belonging to the *dolce stil nuovo* (the sweet new style, characterized by clarity and philosophical treatment), anticipate in some respects those of <u>Petrarch</u>.

## Clampitt, Amy (1920-1994)

US poet. Her first major collection of poems, *The Kingfisher* (1983), influenced by the poetry of Gerard Manley Hopkins, contained descriptions of the New England coast.

Clancy, Tom (1947-)

born Thomas L Clancy Jr

US writer who originated the genre 'techno-thriller'. He writes about the US military and his attention to technological detail is so great that some of his novels are on the reading lists of US military colleges. His most famous books include *The Hunt for Red October* (1984, filmed 1990), *Patriot Games* (1987, filmed 1992), and *Clear and Present Danger* (1989, filmed 1994). All revolve around the character of Jack Ryan, a CIA analyst.

Clancy worked in insurance before publishing his first novel in 1984. Other books include *The Cardinal of Kremlin* (1988), *The Sum of All Fears* (1991, filmed 2002), *Without Remorse* (1993), *Debt of Honour* (1994), *Executive Orders* (1996), *Rainbow Six* (1998), *Red Rabbit* (2002), and *The Teeth of the Tiger* (2003). He is also interested in the computer game industry, has been actively involved in adapting several of his books into games.

## Clanvowe, John (c. 1341-1391)

English poet and courtier. His poem *The Cuckoo and the Nightingale* was once attributed to Geoffrey Chaucer and later associated with his nephew Thomas Clanvowe, but it is now ascribed, together with a religious treatise in prose, *The Two Ways*, to the elder Clanvowe.

## Clare, John (1793-1864)

English poet. His work includes *Poems Descriptive of Rural Life and Scenery* (1820), *The Village Minstrel* (1821), *The Shepherd's Calendar* (1827), and *The Rural Muse* 

(1835). The dignified simplicity and truth of his descriptions of both landscape and emotions were rediscovered and appreciated in the 20th century.

Clare was born in Helpstone, near Peterborough, and spent most of his life in poverty. He was given an annuity by the duke of Exeter and other patrons, but had to turn to work on the land. He spent his last 20 years in Northampton asylum. His early life is described in his autobiographical writings, first published in 1931.

#### Clarissa

novel (1747-48) by Samuel <u>Richardson</u> in the form of letters between the characters. The heroine is pursued by the attractive but unprincipled Lovelace. He rapes her and the consequent loss of autonomy and identity leads to her tragic decline and eventual death. The book's length (originally eight volumes) helps to explain its current lack of popularity, but Richardson's psychological subtlety and inexhaustible sympathy for his women characters ensure a place for the book in the development of the novel form.

# Clarke, Austin (1896-1974)

Irish poet. Born in Dublin, and educated at University College, Dublin, he became a leading member of the 'second wave' of the Irish literary revival. He found an alternative to the vague sensuousness of the Celtic twilight in the literature and art of medieval Ireland. From the mid-1950s he became the poet of modern Ireland's conscience, despising everything false, unnatural, and life-denying.

Coincident with this gravity is a view of Rabelaisian enjoyment, and his later poems celebrate sexual awakening. Among these collections are *Later Poems* (1961) and *Flight to Africa* (1964); *Mnemosyne Lay in Dust* (1966) is a terrifying account of mental collapse. His *Collected Plays* appeared 1963; the *Collected Poems* (1974).

## Clarke, Charles Cowden (1787-1877)

English critic. He became known for his public lectures on Shakespeare 1834-54. With his wife Mary Novello (Mary Victoria Cowden <u>Clarke</u>), he wrote *The Shakespeare Key* (1879; a commentary) and *Recollections of Writers* (1878).

# Clarke, Gillian (1937-)

Welsh poet and editor. Typically her poems begin with an everyday incident that leads to a reflection on the history, landscape, or changing social life of Wales; in

particular she focuses on the role of women in Welsh life. Clarke's critical success is based on her ability to merge these specific, local subjects - closely observed and sensitively portrayed - with universal themes.

Clarke was born in Cardiff and educated at the city's University College. Apart from two years working for the BBC in London, she has lived and worked in Wales all her life. She was editor of the *Anglo-Welsh Review* 1976-84. Her first collection of poems, *The Sundial*, was published in 1978 in Wales; it was a third collection, *Letter from a Far Country* (1982), that won her critical acclaim and a wider readership. Other volumes include *Letting in the Rumour* (1989), *The King of Britain's Daughter* (1993), *Five Fields* (1998), and *Making the Beds for the Dead* (2004).

# Clarke, Marcus Andrew Hislop (1846-1881)

Australian writer. Born in London, he went to Australia when he was 18 and worked as a journalist in Victoria. He wrote *For the Term of his Natural Life* (1874), a novel dealing with life in the early Australian prison settlements.

# Clarke, Mary Victoria Cowden (1809-1898)

English critic, wife of Charles Cowden Clarke. In addition to the works written with her husband, she published *The Complete Concordance to Shakespeare* (1844-45), *The Girlhood of Shakespeare's Heroines* (1851), *The Iron Cousin* (1854; a novel), *World-noted Women* (1858), a biography of her husband (1887), and *My Long Life* (1896).

## classicism

term used in art, music, and literature, to characterize work that emphasizes the qualities traditionally associated with ancient Greek and Roman art, that is, reason, balance, objectivity, and restraint, as opposed to the individuality of expression typical of Romanticism. Classicism and Romanticism are often considered as opposite poles of art, but in fact many artists show elements of both in their work. At certain times, however, classicism has been a dominant trend, notably during the Renaissance and the neoclassical periods. At both these times ancient art exercised a strong direct influence, but this is not an essential component of classicism. The word is often used imprecisely and sometimes conveys no more than an idea of clarity or conservatism.

Claudel, Paul (Louis Charles Marie) (1868-1955)

French poet and dramatist. A fervent Catholic, he was influenced by the Symbolists (see <u>Symbolism</u>) and achieved an effect of mystic allegory in such plays as *L'Annonce faite à Marie/Tidings Brought to Mary* (1912) and *Le Soulier de satin/The Satin Slipper* (1929), set in 16th-century Spain. His verse includes *Cinq Grandes Odes/Five Great Odes* (1910).

#### Claudian (c. 370-404)

#### born Claudius Claudianus

Last of the great Latin poets of the Roman Empire. He was probably born in Alexandria, Egypt. Although his native tongue was Greek he acquired a perfect command of Latin. He wrote official panegyrics, epigrams, and the mythological epic *The Rape of Proserpine*.

## Claus, Hugo (born 1929)

Flemish writer and dramatist. He may be the most versatile and original of Flemish writers of the second half of the 20th century, and his novels give a dispassionate account of an absurd humanity. His novels include *De metsiers/The Duck Hunt* (1950), *Het verdriet van België/The Sorrow of Belgium* (1983), and *Belladonna* (1994). He was awarded the State Prize for Dutch Letters in 1986.

## Clausen, Wendell (Vernon) (1923-)

US classicist. He was perhaps the most respected American textual critic of his generation of classicists, known for his *Appendix Vergiliana* (1966) and *Persi et luvenalis Saturae* (1959).

He was born in Coquille, Oregon. He was educated at the University of Washington and the University of Chicago. He taught at Harvard in 1959.

## Clavell, James du Maresq (1924-1994)

British writer, scriptwriter, film director, and producer. His best-selling novels include *King Rat* (1962), *Taipan* (1966), *Shogun* (1975), *Noble House* (1981), *Whirlwind* (1986), *Gai-Jin* (1993). His highly successful work as a scriptwriter included the cult sci-fi film *The Fly* (1958), the prisoner-of-war drama *The Great Escape* (1966), and *To Sir With Love* (1966), which he wrote, directed, and produced.

Born in Sydney, he was the son of a British commander stationed in Australia to help

establish the Royal Australian Navy. When Clavell was nine months old, the family was posted back to England, where he was educated at Portsmouth Grammar School, leaving at the outbreak of war to join the Royal Artillery as a young captain. In 1941 he was captured by the Japanese in Java and, at the age of 18, was shipped to Changi jail in Singapore, where he remained until the end of the war.

In 1953 he moved to Hollywood where he embarked on his career as a scriptwriter and, later, producer and director. By the time his film, *The Last Valley* (1969), a meditation on men at war starring Michael Caine, appeared, Clavell was already established as a best-selling novelist.

#### Cleary, Beverly (born Bunn) (1916-)

US writer. She is known for her popular children's books, such as *Henry Huggins* (1950) and *Ramona the Pest* (1968).

She was born in McMinnville, Oregon. She graduated from the University of California at Berkeley in 1938, worked as a librarian 1939-45, and settled in Carmel, California.

#### Cleland, John (1709-1789)

English writer. His novel *Memoirs of a Woman of Pleasure* (1748-49; also known by the name of its narrator, Fanny Hill), which he wrote to free himself from his creditors, was considered indecent by his contemporaries.

#### Clemens, Samuel Langhorne

real name of the US writer Mark Twain.

#### Clerk, John (1728-1812)

Scottish naval theoretician, author of 'Essay on Naval Tactics', first published in its entirety in 1804. His naval schemes were successfully adopted in 1782 when Lord Rodney gained a victory at sea over the French.

#### Cleveland (or Cleiveland), John (1613-1658)

English poet. He belonged to the group of Cavalier poets, but also turned his hand to

satire. His best-known satire is 'The Rebel Scot', denouncing the Scots' betrayal of Charles I; others are 'The Mixed Assembly' and 'Smectymnuus'.

#### Clive, Caroline (1801-1873)

English writer. She published several sets of poems, signed 'V.', and the sensational novel *Paul Ferroll* 1855.

## Clough, Arthur Hugh (1819-1861)

English poet. Much of his work is marked by a melancholy scepticism that reflects his struggle with his religious doubt. *The Bothie of Tober-na-Vuolich* (1848) is a witty and entertaining poem in which he presented advanced views on contemporary issues.

In 1849 he wrote 'Amours de voyage', a poem in the form of letters; 'Dipsychus', a satire, followed in 1850. His lyric 'Say not the struggle nought availeth' was published posthumously in *Poems* (1862).

## Coatsworth, Elizabeth (Jane) (1893-1986)

US writer and poet. She wrote popular books for young readers, including *The Cat Who Went to Heaven* (1930) and *The Sod House* (1954), a story of immigrants who move to Kansas.

She was born in Buffalo, New York. She studied at Vassar College and Columbia University. She married Henry Beston, the naturalist, and settled in Nobleboro, Maine in 1932.

## Cobb, Irvin Shrewsbury (1876-1944)

US writer. He was a regular staff contributor to several US magazines and he specialized in writing humorous short stories, many set in his native Kentucky. His books include *Old Judge Priest* (1915) and *Red Likker* (1929).

#### Cocaio, Merlin

pseudonym of Italian poet Teofilo Folengo.

# Cockerell, Sydney Carlyle (1867-1962)

English scholar and writer. He was a literary executor of William Morris, Wilfrid Scawen Blunt, and Thomas Hardy, and wrote various bibliographical monographs, especially on illuminated manuscripts.

# Cocteau, Jean (1889-1963)

French poet, dramatist, and film director. A leading figure in European modernism, he worked with the artist Picasso, the choreographer Diaghilev, and the composer Stravinsky. He produced many volumes of poetry, ballets such as *Le Boeuf sur le toit/The Ox on the Roof* (1920), plays like *Orphée/Orpheus* (1926), and a mature novel of bourgeois French life, *Les Enfants Terribles* (1929), which he filmed in 1948.

# **Codex Exoniensis**

another name for the Exeter Book.

# Codrescu, Andrei (Betty Laredo, Maria Parfeni, Urmuz, pen-names) (1946-)

Romanian-born US poet and writer who emigrated to the USA in 1966. His first poetry collection, *License to Carry a Gun* (1970), brought him critical acclaim, and his subsequent works reveal a provocative, humorous, and surrealistic stylist. Among other editorial and journalistic positions, he was the editor of *Exquisite Corpse: A Monthly Review of Books and Ideas* (1983).

He was born in Sibiu, Romania, and studied at the University of Bucharest. He has taught at numerous US institutions, such as Johns Hopkins 1979-80, the University of Baltimore 1982-84, and Louisiana State University in 1984. He produced several series for National Public Radio (NPR), and has been a commentator for NPR's *All Things Considered*, and for Radio Free Europe. A cross-country trip he took in his 1986 Cadillac convertible resulted in a movie, *Road Scholar* (1993).

# Coetzee, J(ohn) M(ichael) (1940-)

South African writer and critic. His work often reflects his opposition to apartheid. His novels include *Dusklands* (1974), *In the Heart of the Country* (1977), *Waiting for* 

the Barbarians (1980), Foe (1986), The Master of Petersburg (1994), and Elizabeth Costello (2003). He has won the Booker Prize twice, in 1983 for The Life and Times of Michael K, which is set during a civil war in an unspecified country (obliquely South Africa), and in 1999 for Disgrace, an uncompromising story centring on a violent attack by black men on the white protagonist and his daughter. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 2003.

A professor at the University of Cape Town since 1971, Coetzee's nonfiction includes the autobiographies *Boyhood: Scenes from a Provincial Life* (1997) and *Youth: Scenes from a Provincial Life II* (2002), as well as the critical works *White Writing* (1988), *Giving Offense: Essays on Censorship* (1996), and *The Lives of the Animals* (1999).

# Coffey, Brian (1905-1995)

Irish modernist poet, born in Dublin and educated at Clongowes Wood College and in France. His experiments with form, rhythm, and syntax indicate a distrust of the ability of language to communicate clearly and precisely, and his poetry is often interrupted by illustrations and cartoons, which challenge the reader to think beyond conventional modes of expression. He first published *Poems* (1930) with Denis <u>Devlin</u> and, after some time away from writing, published steadily in the 1970s and 1980s. His collections include *Selected Poems* (1971), *Advent* (1975), *Death of Hektor* (1980), and *Chanterelles* (1985).

Coffey initially worked as a researcher in physical chemistry in Paris but transferred into the study of philosophy at the Institut Catholique in 1933. He worked in London as a teacher during World War II, taught philosophy in the USA at St Louis, Missouri, 1947-52, and returned to London as a maths teacher in 1954.

# Coggan, (Frederick) Donald (1909-2000)

#### Baron Coggan

English prelate, archbishop of Canterbury 1974-80, and archbishop of York 1961-74. In 1975 he issued a 'call to the nation' for moral and spiritual renewal. His theological works include *On Preaching* (1978), *Mission to the World* (1982), *God of Hope* (1991), *Voice from the Cross* (1993), and *The Servant Son* (1995). In 1980 he was made a life peer.

Coggan was born in London, and educated at St John's College, Cambridge. After working as a lecturer in Semitic languages at Manchester 1931-34, he went to Wycliffe Hall, Oxford, to be ordained, and in 1937 was appointed professor of New Testament at Wycliffe College, Toronto 1937-44. He was principal of London College of Divinity 1944-56, and served as bishop of Bradford 1956-61.

#### Cohen, Leonard (1934-)

Canadian singer-songwriter, novelist, and poet. Many of his songs, such as 'Famous Blue Raincoat' and 'Bird on a Wire', are reflective poems, often with spiritual, ironic, or erotic themes, set to simple acoustic music. His albums include *Songs of Leonard Cohen* (1968), *Songs of Love and Hate* (1970), *I'm Your Man* (1988), and *The Future* (1992).

# Cole, Margaret Isabel (1893-1980)

#### born Margaret Postgate

English writer, historian, and political analyst. A socialist and feminist, she created many distinguished works including *The Makers of the Labour Movement* (1948) and an acclaimed biography of the English social reformer Beatrice Webb (1945). In addition she co-wrote *An Intelligent Man's Review of Europe Today* (1933), *A Guide to Modern Politics* (1934), and 29 detective stories.

Cole was born in Cambridge, and educated at Roedean School, Sussex. After studying classics at Girton College, Cambridge, she taught for a time at St Paul's School, London, before becoming a researcher for the Fabian Society.

## Coleridge, (David) Hartley (1796-1849)

English poet, eldest son of Samuel Taylor Coleridge. His verse lacks power but is expressive and fine in places. He wrote biographies of and edited the works of the Jacobean dramatists Philip Massinger and John Ford in 1840. He was a delicate and suggestive critic; his essays are quaintly humorous, resembling those of Charles Lamb.

## Coleridge, Mary Elizabeth (1861-1907)

English writer. Her historical romance *The King with Two Faces* (1897) about Gustavus III of Sweden made her name. Her first novel was the fantasy *The Seven Sleepers of Ephesus* (1893), and her first poems were collected in *Fancy's Following* (1896).

#### Coleridge, Samuel Taylor (1772-1834)

English poet, critic, and philosopher. A friend of the poets Robert Southey and

William <u>Wordsworth</u>, he collaborated with the latter on the highly influential collection *Lyrical Ballads* (1798), which expressed their theory of poetic sensation and was the spearhead of English Romanticism. His poems include 'The Rime of the Ancient Mariner', 'Christabel', and 'Kubla Khan' (all written 1797-98); his critical works include *Biographia Literaria* (1817).

Coleridge was born in Ottery St Mary, Devon. Following the death of his father in 1781, Coleridge was sent to Christ's Hospital school, London, from 1782-90 where a fellow pupil, Charles Lamb became a lifelong friend. In 1791 he took up a scholarship at Jesus College, Cambridge, and during his time there he was driven by debt to enlist in the Dragoons. In 1794 he became friends with Southey and together they formed a plan to set up a 'Pantisocracy', a farming commune of six families in New England, USA. The Utopian scheme never materialized. In 1795 he married Sarah Fricker (1779-1845), from whom he afterwards separated. In 1797 he moved to Nether Stowey, Somerset, and worked closely with Wordsworth on Lyrical Ballads, producing much of his finest poetry during this period. In 1798 he went to Germany where he studied philosophy and literary criticism. Returning to England, in 1800 he settled in the Lake District with Wordsworth. Suffering from rheumatic pain, Coleridge became addicted to opium. In 1802 he wrote 'Dejection: An Ode', one of his last important poems, which eloquently expresses his sense of frustration and waste. His opium consumption increased and, by 1803, he was restless and miserable and did little work. In 1804 he travelled to Malta, where he became secretary to the governor for ten months, going on to Naples and Rome, before returning to England in 1806. He arrived home miserably broken in mind and body, and moved from place to place; estranged from his wife, he was sometimes alone, sometimes with his family. From 1808 to 1819 gave a series of lectures on prose and drama, and, from 1816, lived in Highgate, London, under medical care, having guarrelled with Wordsworth. Here he produced his major prose work *Biographia* Literaria (1817), a collection of autobiographical pieces in which he develops his philosophical and critical ideas.

## Coleridge, Sara (1802-1852)

English scholar and editor. She edited the work of her father Samuel Taylor Coleridge. She was also a writer and translator. Her *Pretty Lessons in Verse for Good Children* appeared in 1834 and *Phantasmion*, an imaginative fairy tale, in 1837.

# Colette, Sidonie-Gabrielle (1873-1954)

French writer. Her best novels reveal an exquisite sensitivity, largely centred on the joys and sorrows of love, and include *Chéri* (1920), *La Fin de Chéri/The End of Chéri* (1926), and *Gigi* (1944).

She wrote with realism, sharp observation, wit, and style, and had a sensuous awareness of nature, particularly animals, as remembered from her childhood in the countryside.

# Colgan, John (1592-c. 1657)

#### also known as Seán Mac Colgáin

Irish writer, born near Carndonagh, County Donegal, Colgan travelled to Spain and joined a Franciscan order in 1618. He is remembered for two works that chronicle the lives of saints: *Acta Sanctorum Hiberniae* (1645), concerning saints with feast days between 1 January and 30 March; and *Triadis Thaumaturgae* (1647), which describes saints Patrick, Brigid, and Columba (Colum Cille).

## Collier, John Payne (1789-1883)

English Shakespearean critic. He fraudulently claimed that his amendments to Shakespeare's work in the margins of a copy of the 1632 folio (the 'Perkins folio') were genuine; they were later proved to be forgeries.

# Collins, (William) Wilkie (1824-1889)

English author of mystery and suspense novels. He wrote *The Woman in White* (1860), often called the first English <u>detective fiction</u> novel, and *The Moonstone* (1868) (with Sergeant Cuff, one of the first detectives in English literature). Both novels have been successfully dramatized for television.

Collins was born in London and qualified as a barrister. In 1848 he wrote a life of his father, the painter William Collins, and in 1850 published his first novel, *Antonina*. In 1851 he formed a friendship with the novelist Charles <u>Dickens</u>, with whom he collaborated on a number of works, including the play *A Message from the Sea* (1861).

## Collins, Billy (1941-)

US poet. Known for his graceful, moving, ironic and witty poetry, he was Poet Laureate Consultant in Poetry to the Library of Congress 2001-03. His volumes of poetry include *The Apple that Astonished Paris* (1988), *Questions about Angels* (1991), *The Art of Drowning* (1995), *Picnic, Lightning* (1997), *Sailing Alone Around the Room* (2001), and *Nine Horses* (2002).

He has served as professor of English at Lehman College, City University of New York; writer in residence at Sarah Lawrence College in Bronxville, New York; and poet in residence at Burren College of Art in Ireland. He also released a CD of his

own poetry reading, The Best of Cigarette (1997).

# Collins, Michael (1964-)

Irish-born US writer whose novel *The Keepers of Truth* (2000) was shortlisted for the 2000 Booker Prize. A novelist and short-story writer, Collins has published six books and had his works translated into 13 languages.

His short-story collections include *The Meat Eaters* (1992), *The Man Who Dreamt of Lobsters* (1993), and *The Feminists Go Swimming* (1996). Other novels include *The Life and Times of a Teaboy* (1994) and *Emerald Underground* (1998).

## Collins, Tom

pseudonym of Joseph Furphy, Australian novelist.

# Collins, William (1721-1759)

English poet. His *Persian Eclogues* four short effusions in heroic couplets published anonymously in 1742, were followed in 1746 by his *Odes on Several Descriptive and Allegorical Subjects*, 12 lyric poems which include 'Ode To Evening' and 'The Passions'. The 'Ode on the Superstitions of the Highlands', written in 1749, is an important poem in the early Romantic movement.

## Collodi, Carlo (1826-1890)

pen-name of Carlo Lorenzini

Italian journalist and writer. In 1881-83 he wrote *Le avventure di Pinocchio/The Adventures of <u>Pinocchio</u>, a children's story of a wooden puppet that became a human boy.* 

## Colocci, Angelo (1474-1547)

Italian cleric, poet, and humanist. One of the leading figures in the development of humanism in Rome, he combined an interest in Greek and Roman literature with a lively involvement in vernacular poetry, particularly the study of the origins of Italian poetry in Provence. He was himself a poet in both Latin and Italian and his house in Rome was a centre for the discussion of literary theory and scholarship.

#### Colonna, Francesco (c. 1433-c. 1527)

Italian writer. He wrote a mysterious allegorical romance, *Hypernotomachia Poliphili*, which would probably have been forgotten but for the sumptuous illustrated edition published in 1499 by Aldus Manutius.

## Colonna, Vittoria (c. 1492-1547)

Italian noblewoman and poetess. Many of her Petrarchan sonnets idealize her husband, the marquis of Pescara, who was killed at the Battle of Pavia in 1525. She was a friend of the artist Michelangelo, who addressed some of his finest sonnets to her.

#### Colum, Padraic (1881-1972)

Irish poet and dramatist. Born in Longford, he was educated at University College, Dublin, and in 1914 emigrated to the USA, where he lived in Connecticut for most of his life. Colum was associated with the foundation of the Abbey Theatre, Dublin, where his plays *The Land* (1905) and *Thomas Muskerry* (1910) were performed. His *Collected Poems* (1953) shows his gift for lyrical expression.

Other volumes of verse include *Wild Earth* (1907), *The Story of Lowry Maen* (1937), and *The Poets Circuit* (1960). His play *The Fiddler's Horse* was first produced in 1907. He also wrote many books for children and edited anthologies of Irish verse and folklore.

#### Combe, William (1741-1823)

English poet. He contributed doggerel verses to accompany a series of Thomas Rowlandson's illustrations in the *Poetical Magazine* in 1809. They were collected as *The Tour of Dr Syntax in Search of the Picturesque* (1812); there were two sequels. He also published a satire, *The Diaboliad* (1776).

#### comic relief

in literature and the media, a common device employed in serious texts to relieve tension, and sometimes to provide antithesis or irony as a comment on more serious action. One that provides all three is the 'gravedigger' scene in Shakespeare's *Hamlet*.

#### commedia

(Italian, from Greek komos 'revel', aoidos 'singer')

tale or romance with a happy ending; the term is used in Italian literature. Unlike the term 'comedy' in English literature, it applies not only to drama but also to other literary forms, such as Dante's epic poem *The Divine Comedy/Divina Commedia* (1307-21).

#### **Complutensian Polyglot**

monumental multilingual edition of the Bible published in Spain in 1520. Begun in 1502, under the patronage of Cardinal Francisco Ximénes de Cisneros, it made the Bible text available for the first time in parallel columns of Greek, Latin, and Hebrew. The project employed leading Spanish scholars, including Antonio Nebrija - but he resigned from the work because of what he considered to be the conservatism of the editing, which preferred to keep Vulgate mistranslations than to question orthodoxy. Nebrija's own desire for a philologically more accurate version of the Bible was pre-empted by Erasmus's *Novum Instrumentum*.

#### Compton-Burnett, Ivy (1884-1969)

English novelist. She used dialogue to show reactions of small groups of characters dominated by the tyranny of family relationships. Her novels, set at the turn of the century, include *Pastors and Masters* (1925), *More Women than Men* (1933), and *Mother and Son* (1955).

Her plots deal exclusively with middle- and upper-class characters and often involve mystery and violence. DBE 1967.

#### conceit

in literature, an elaborate and, sometimes, far-fetched image, which extends a metaphor into as many layers of meaning as it will bear.

Conceits thrive on relating apparently impossible objects or emotions. Shakespeare's Richard II attempts to compare his prison cell with the world. John Donne compares an icy garden to his frozen feelings after a separation from his lover.

Conceit also refers to an artistic device which has become so widely used it is conventional; using blurred or out-of-focus filming techniques to denote a memory sequence is a conceit; referring to a pool of water as a mirror can be traced through literature back to Greek mythology, and is known as a literary conceit.

#### Concord, Book of

a Lutheran statement of doctrine published in 1580. Widely adopted, it brings together the nine most important texts of Lutheran belief. These are: the Formula of Concord; two catechisms by Luther; the Confession of Augsburg by Luther, Melanchthon, Jonas, and Bugenhagen; the Apology for the Confession of Augsburg by Melanchthon; the Schmalkaldic Articles; and the Nicene, Athanasian, and Apostles' Creeds.

# Conington, John (1825-1869)

English classical scholar. He made effective verse translations of Homer, Virgil, and Horace, but his greatest work was his annotated edition of Virgil, one of the finest commentaries on the Roman poet in English.

## Connell, Evan S(helby), Jr (1924-)

US writer. He wrote a wide range of verse, realistic fiction, and non-fiction. His many books include the novels *Mrs. Bridge* (1959) and *Mr. Bridge* (1969), and the best-selling historical work *Son of the Morning Star* (1984).

He was born in Kansas City, Missouri. After graduate study at Columbia, Stanford, and San Francisco State Universities, he lived in California. He edited *Contact* magazine 1959-65.

## Connell, F Norreys

pseudonym of Irish novelist and playwright Conal O'Riordan.

# Connolly, Cyril (Vernon) (1903-1974)

English critic and writer. As a founder and editor of the literary magazine *Horizon* (1939-50), he had considerable critical influence. His works include *The Rock Pool* 

(1936), a novel of artists on the Riviera, and *The Unquiet Grave* (1944), a series of reflections published under the pseudonym of Palinurus.

## Conrad, Joseph (1857-1924)

#### pen-name of Teodor Józef Konrad Nalecz Korzeniowski

British novelist, born in Ukraine of Polish parents. His greatest works include the novels <u>Lord Jim</u> (1900), Nostromo (1904), The Secret Agent (1907), and Under Western Eyes (1911), also the short novels Heart of Darkness (1902) and The Shadow Line (1917). These combine a vivid and sensuous evocation of various lands and seas with a rigorous, humane scrutiny of moral dilemmas, pitfalls, and desperation.

Conrad was brought up in Russia and Poland. He went to sea at the age of 17, and in 1878 landed in England at Lowestoft, Suffolk, with no knowledge of English. In 1886 he gained his master mariner's certificate and became a naturalized British subject. He retired from the sea in 1894 to write, living in Kent from 1896. Although his prose is often mannered and difficult, his use of English is equally often arresting and immediate, and his interest in the limits of humanity and his concentration on subjective consciousness in his narratives are strikingly modern. His critical reputation and influence have grown steadily since his death.

## Conrad, Michael Georg (1846-1927)

German writer. His Impressionist work in the naturalist manner owed much to the French novelist Emile Zola. Among his novels are *Was die Isar rauscht* (1889-93), *Fantasio* (1889), and *Majestät* (1902), dealing with the relations of Ludwig II and Richard Wagner. He also wrote some dramas and published a volume of poetry, *Salve Regina* (1899).

## Conradi, Hermann (1862-1890)

German writer. A leader of the *Sturm und Drang* movement, he was a zealous supporter of the naturalistic tendencies of his time. His *Adam Mensch* (1889) led to a lawsuit for offending public morality. Conradi was acquitted, but died during the judicial proceedings.

The sketches *Brutalitäten/Brutalities* and *Lieder eines Sünders/Songs of a Sinner* appeared in 1886 and 1887. He also wrote the romance *Phrasen/Phrases* (1887), followed by *Wilhelm II und die junge Generation/William II and the Young Generation* (1888).

# Conscience, Hendrik (1812-1883)

Flemish novelist. Associated with the linguistic and political significance of the Flemish movement, he became one of the most popular Flemish writers, whose influence on the literary revival of Flanders was considerable. His novels include *De Leeuw van Vlaanderen/The Lion of Flanders* (1838) and *Jacob van Artevelde* (1849).

# Constable, Henry (1562-1613)

English poet. His *Diana* (1592) is a series of 23 sonnets, praised by Ben Jonson and others. He also wrote 16 *Sprituall Sonnettes to the Honour of God and hys Sayntes* and *The Shepheard's Song of Venus and Adonis*.

# Constant de Rebecque, (Henri) Benjamin (1767-1830)

Swiss-born French writer and politician. An advocate of the Revolution, he opposed Napoleon and in 1803 went into exile. Returning to Paris after the fall of Napoleon in 1814, he proposed a constitutional monarchy. He published the autobiographical novel *Adolphe* (1816), which reflects his affair with Madame de <u>Staël</u> and is one of the first analytical novels of modern literature.

## 'Constitution of Athens'

one section of a lost work (*Politieai*) by <u>Aristotle</u> on the constitutional history of 158 states. It was known only by quoted fragments until 1890, when three rolls of papyruis (now in the British Museum) were found in Egypt, containing a manuscript copy of the 'Constitution of Athens' made about AD 100. Aristotle is thought to have written the history between 328 BC and 325 BC.

# Converse, Harriet (Arnot) Maxwell (1836-1903)

US author and defender of American Indian rights. She wrote essays and romantic verse. To study and preserve Iroquois culture, she published works no longer highly regarded, but, more lastingly, she collected Indian artifacts for major museums and successfully defended American Indians' property rights in several lawsuits.

She was born in Elmira, New York, and lived in New York City after 1866.

# Cooke, (Alfred) Alistair (1908-2004)

British-born US journalist. He is best known for his writings interpreting US history and culture and for his role as television host of *Omnibus* and *Masterpiece Theater*. He presented his weekly *Letter from America* on radio for the British Broadcasting Corporation (BBC) from 1947 until his retirement in 2004.

Cooke studied theatre at Yale and Harvard universities and returned to the USA as a BBC correspondent in 1938; he became a US citizen in 1941. He was *Guardian* correspondent in the USA 1948-72. During the 1970s, he hosted the BBC-produced television series *America* 1972-73 and followed this with the best-selling book *Alistair Cooke's America* (1973), based on the series.

# Cooke, John (Esten) (1830-1886)

US writer. He wrote historical romances set in old Virginia, such as *The Virginia Comedians* (1854). He also wrote war novels and biographies of 'Stonewall' Jackson (1863) and R E Lee (1871).

He was born in Winchester, Virginia. In the US Civil War he served with the Confederate army. Returning to Virginia after the war, he wrote idealized novels of the antebellum South and a distinguished colonial state history in 1883.

# Cookson, Catherine (Ann) (1906-1998)

#### born Kate McMullen

English popular novelist. She was a prolific author of best-selling fiction. Her books, characterized by romance, were often period pieces, drawing in part from her own life experiences as a young woman growing up in the Tyneside region of northeast England. They include the Mallen trilogy (1973-74) and the Tilly Trotter series (1980-82).

She suffered recurring breakdowns in her health, the result of a rare blood disease, and, after suffering three miscarriages, her mental health collapsed completely and for some time she became a virtual recluse. It was then that she turned her hand to writing, publishing her first novel *Kate Hannigan* in 1950. Her 80 novels have been translated into 17 languages, and have sold around 100 million copies worldwide.

## Coolbrith, Ina Donna (1847-1928)

US poet. Much of her poetry is coloured by her experience of life in the mining districts of California. Her publications include *A Perfect Day and other Poems* 

(1881), The Singer of the Sea (1894), and Songs from the Golden Gate (1895).

# Coolidge, Susan (1835-1905)

#### pseudonym of Sarah Chauncy Woolsey

US writer. Her books for girls have become classics. They include the Katy books (*What Katy Did* 1872, *What Katy Did at School* 1873, *What Katy Did Next* 1886) and many others, such as *Eyebright* (1879) and *Just Sixteen* (1889).

## Cooper, Edith

English writer; her works with Katharine Bradley were published under the pseudonym Michael <u>Field</u>.

## Cooper, Giles Stannus (1918-1966)

Irish playwright and actor. Born in Carrickmines, County Dublin, he was the author of several stage plays, but was particularly noted for his radio and television dramas, which include *Mathry Beacon* (1956), *Unman, Wittering and Zigo* (1958), and *The Long House* (1965).

The style of Cooper's plays was largely naturalistic, treating the shortcomings of modern society, but he also incorporated some elements of fantasy in his works. As well as producing original writing, he adapted the work of other authors, such as Victor Hugo and Evelyn Waugh, for television.

#### Cooper, James Fenimore (1789-1851)

US writer, considered the first great US novelist. He wrote some 50 novels, mostly about the frontier, wilderness life, and the sea, first becoming popular with *The Spy* (1821). He is best remembered for his series of <u>Leatherstocking Tales</u>, focusing on the frontier hero Natty Bumppo and the American Indians before and after the American Revolution; they include *The Last of the Mohicans* (1826). Still popular as adventures, his novels have been reappraised for their treatment of social and moral issues in the settling of the American frontier.

Cooper, Jilly (1937-)

English author and journalist. Having attended Godolphin school in Salisbury, England, she worked as a journalist on regional newspapers before writing for national newspapers *The Sunday Times* and *The Mail on Sunday*. She is best known for her best-selling popular romantic fiction, some of which have been televised. Her fiction includes *Riders* (1985), *Polo* (1991), *The Man Who Made Husbands Jealous* (1993), and *Score* (1999). She has also written non-fiction on subjects such as marriage, women, and British society, topics which dominate her fiction.

## Cooper, Thomas (1805-1892)

English poet and supporter of the democratic movement of Chartism. *The Purgatory of Suicides* (1845), his longest poem, was written in prison. His two novels, *Alderman Ralph* and *The Family Feud*, appeared in 1853 and 1855 under the pseudonym of Adam Hornbook.

# Cooper, William (1910-2002)

#### pen-name of Harry Summerfield Hoff

English novelist. After *Trina* (1934), set in Yugoslavia, and three further novels under his own name, he published *Scenes from Provincial Life* (1950) under his penname, to protect identities. Subsequent novels in a similar vein of amused observation include *Scenes from Married Life* (1961) and *Scenes from Later Life* (1983). *From Early Life* (1990) is a series of autobiographical fragments.

# Coornheert, Dirck Volckertszoon (1522-1590)

Dutch humanist, scholar, and engraver. From 1566 he was a keen supporter of William the Silent in the political struggle against Spain, and had to withdraw into exile in 1568, acting as the prince's political agent in Cleves, in France. A Catholic, he argued in favour of religious toleration, and his views on free will strongly influenced the development of Arminianism. His own writings, as well as his translations of <u>Boccaccio</u>, <u>Homer</u>, and Latin authors, played an important role in the development of Dutch literature.

# Coover, Robert (Lowell) (1932-)

US writer. His first novel, *The Origin of the Brunists* (1966), established him as a postmodernist who recombined elements of mythology, Bible stories, and popular culture. His fiction, which often explored dogmatic extremism, included *The Public Burning* (1977), *A Political Fable* (1980), and *Pinocchio in Venice* (1991).

# Cope, Jack (1913-1991)

#### born Robert Knox Cope

South African writer and editor. Best known for his short stories, included in such collections as *The Tame Ox* (1960), Cope also produced a number of highly regarded novels, many of which focus on the destruction of South African black culture by whites. These include *Albino* (1964) and *The Student of Zend* (1972), which was shortlisted for the Booker Prize. In 1960 Cope founded, and until 1979 edited, the influential bilingual literary journal *Contrast* (now *New Contrast*), which published pieces in English and Afrikaans.

Other works include the short-story collections *The Man Who Doubted and Other Stories* (1967) and *Alley Cat and Other Stories* (1973); and the novels *The Fair House* (1955), *The Golden Oriole* (1958), and *The Rain-Maker* (1971), which won South Africa's prestigious CNA Prize. He also published three volumes of poetry, including *Recorded in the Sun* (1978). In 1980 he left South Africa for England, where he published *The Adversary Within: Dissident Writers in Afrikaans* (1982).

# Cope, Wendy (1945-)

English poet. Her talent for parody, and for light-hearted demolitions of men, targets male authors such as Ted Hughes or Philip Larkin; the titles *Making Cocoa for Kingsley Amis* (1986) and *Men and their Boring Arguments* (1988) indicate her approach. Her works also include *Serious Concerns* (1993) and *If I Don't Know* (2001), which was shortlisted for the Whitbread Poetry Award. She is also the author of two books for children, *Twiddling Your Thumbs* (1988) and *The River Girl* (1991).

Cope was born in Erith, Kent, and educated at Oxford. She worked as a primaryschool teacher in London for 15 years before becoming a professional writer in 1986. She was television critic for *The Spectator* magazine until 1990. She received a Cholmondeley Award in 1987 and was awarded the Michael Braude Award for Light Verse (American Academy of Arts and Letters) in 1995.

# Coppard, A(Ifred) E(dward) (1878-1957)

English short-story writer and poet. His stories have a lyric, almost poetic quality. His first book was *Adam and Eve and Pinch Me* (1921); others include *The Black Dog* (1923), *The Field of Mustard* (1926), and *Fearful Pleasures* (1946). His *Collected Poems* appeared (1928).

# Coppée, François-Edouard Joachim (1842-1908)

French writer and scholar. His numerous collections of poetry contain delightfully lyrical works and display his skill in writing Parisian elegies and idylls. He also wrote plays, and was archivist of the Comédie Française theatre 1878-84 until his election to the French Academy.

# Corbière, Tristan (1845-1875)

born Edouard Joachim Corbière

French poet. His volume of poems *Les Amours jaunes/Yellow Loves* (1873) went unrecognized until Paul Verlaine called attention to it in 1884. Many of his poems, such as *La Rhapsodie foraine/Wandering Rhapsody*, deal with life in his native Brittany.

Corelli, Marie (1855-1924)

pseudonym of Minnie Mackay

English romantic novelist. Trained for a musical career, she turned instead to writing (she was said to be Queen Victoria's favourite novelist) and published *A Romance of Two Worlds* in 1886. This was the first of a string of best-sellers. Her works were later ridiculed for their pretentious style.

## Corinna (lived 6th century BC)

Greek lyric poet. A native of Tanagra in Boeotia, she is said to have instructed <u>Pindar</u>. Very little was known of her work until the discovery in modern times, at Hermopolis in Egypt, of a papyrus containing fragments of three poems.

# Corkery, Daniel (1878-1964)

Irish writer. Born and educated in Cork, he later became professor of English literature at University College, Cork, 1931-47. His short stories accurately depict provincial life and speech and at their best have a brooding power. *The Hidden Ireland* (1925), a lyrical study of Gaelic Munster in the 18th century, had an enormous influence on contemporary Irish views of the past.

Among his collections of stories are *A Munster Twilight* (1916) and *The Stormy Hills* (1929). His criticism, as in *Synge and Anglo-Irish Literature* (1931), is often

nationalistic, but he did see Ireland's history in a European context.

# Cormac MacCulinan (836-908)

King of Ireland 901-07 and bishop of Munster. His reign was troubled by Danish invasions, and he was killed by Danes in the battle of Moy Albe.

He was also a poet and scholar. A chronicle in Irish verse, *The Psalter of Cashel*, and an etymological glossary of the Irish language, *The Glossary of Cormac* are attributed to him.

# Corneille, Thomas (1625-1709)

French writer and dramatist, brother of Pierre Corneille. He wrote a number of comedies, but is best known for his tragedies. These include the highly successful *Timocrate* (1656), *Stilicon*, *Camma*, *Maximien*, *La Mort d'Annibal*, *Ariane*, and *Le Comte d'Essex*.

His comedies include *Le Geôlier de soi-meme*, *Le Baron d'Albikrac*, *Don César d'Avalos*, and *Le Festin de Pierre* (1677), a verse adaptation of Molière's *Don Juan* (1665).

He collaborated in editing the *Mercure Galant* (founded in 1672) and in 1694 published his *Dictionnaire des arts et des sciences/Dictionary of Art and Science*.

## Cornford, Frances Crofts (1886-1960)

English poet. Her verse includes *Spring Morning* (1915), *Mountains and Molehills* (1934), and *Travelling Home* (1948); her *Collected Poems* appeared in 1954.

## **Cornish literature**

the earliest surviving written Cornish is found in some 10th-century glosses. The late Middle Ages produced some religious writing. Other literature is scanty, consisting mainly of folk tales and verses.

The first connected text is a fragment of 41 lines of verse dating from about 1400. The principal literary texts of the 15th century are a poem *Pascon agan Arluth/The Passion of Our Lord* of 1,036 lines and *Ordinalia*, three plays (8,744 lines in all) telling the biblical story from the Creation to the Ascension. There are also two later plays, the *Life of St Meriasek* and the *Creation of the World*.

# Cornwall, Barry

pseudonym of English poet Bryan Waller Procter.

# Cornwell, Patricia (1956-)

#### born Patricia Carroll Daniels

US crime writer. Cornwell's first successful novel, *Postmortem* (1990), introduced the popular character of medical examiner Kay Scarpetta, who continued to star in Cornwell's mysteries. Other novels include *Cruel and Unusual* (1993), *The Last Precinct* (2000), and *Blow Fly* (2003). She published the non-fiction work *Portrait of a Killer: Jack the Ripper Case Closed* in 2002.

## Corso, Gregory (Nunzio) (1930-2001)

US poet. He was a central member of the <u>Beat</u> poetry movement in the 1960s, with such poems as 'The Happy Birthday of Death' (1960).

He was born in New York City. He spent three years in prison as a juvenile, then worked as a manual labourer, reporter, and merchant seaman 1950-53. He taught at the State University, Buffalo, New York.

## Cortázar, Julio (1914-1984)

Argentine writer. His novels include *The Winners* (1960), *Hopscotch* (1963), and *Sixty-two: A Model Kit* (1968). One of his several volumes of short stories includes *Blow-up*, adapted for film by the Italian director Michelangelo Antonioni.

#### Corvo, Baron

assumed name of English writer Frederick Rolfe.

Cory, William Johnson (1823-1892)

English schoolteacher and poet. His collection of lyrics *lonica* was first published anonymously 1858. He wrote skilful Latin and Greek verses, his best-known poem being 'Heraclitus', a paraphrase from the Greek poet Callimachus. He also wrote the 'Eton Boating Song' 1865.

#### Cosbuc, George (1866-1918)

Romanian poet and translator, born in Transylvania. He edited the review *Tribuna*, dedicated to promoting literature based on peasant life. He also founded the family review *Vatra* in 1894 with Ion Luca Caragiale and Ioan Slavici, and, together with Alexandru Vlahuta (1858-1919), established the influential review *Samanatorul* in 1901.

Cosbuc's translation of Dante's epic *Divine Comedy* is still considered the best in Romanian.

# Cossa, Pietro (1830-1881)

Italian dramatist. His tragedy *Nerone/Nero* (1872) was acted with success, and after this he continued to write classical and historical plays, such as *Messalina* (1876) and *Plauto e il suo secolo* (1873).

Other works include his *Teatro poetico* and a volume of lyrics.

## Costa, Claudio-Manoel de (1720-1790)

Brazilian poet. Highly critical of the colonial government of Brazil, he was the anonymous author of the satirical *Cartas Chilenas*, which attacked the governor. His poem 'Villa-Rica' is based on historical subject matter.

# Cotin, Charles (1604-1682)

#### called 'l'abbé Cotin'

French preacher, poet, and advisor to Louis XIV. He studied philosophy, theology, Hebrew, Syriac, and Greek. His *Euvres mêlées* were published in 1659 and his *Euvres galantes* (1663).

English bookseller, writer, and publisher. He published works by the poets Robert Southey, Samuel Taylor Coleridge, and William Wordsworth, including the *Lyrical Ballads* of Coleridge and Wordsworth 1798 (which contained Coleridge's *Ancient Mariner*).

# Cotton, Charles (1630-1687)

English poet and translator. His *Scarronides, or the First Book of Virgil Travestied* was published anonymously 1664, and was revised in later editions, becoming more gross on each occasion. He is now chiefly remembered for his contribution, the dialogue between 'Piscator' and 'Viator', to the fifth edition of Izaak <u>Walton</u>'s *Compleat Angler* (1676). He also published a notable translation of Montaigne's *Essaies* (1685).

# Country Diary of An Edwardian Lady, The

journal by the English artist and naturalist Edith Holden (1871-1920), published in 1977, and illustrated with Holden's own watercolours. One of the longest-running best-sellers in the UK, it was one of the first books in Britain to achieve continuing sales through the development and promotion of a wide range of associated products.

# Couperus, Louis (1863-1923)

Dutch novelist. His first novel *Eline Vere* (1888), a vivid picture of society in The Hague, was an immediate success. The same psychological insight typifies the characterization of *De Stille Kracht/The Silent Force* (1900; which relates to his early life in Indonesia), *De Boeken der Kleine Zielen/The Books of the Small Souls* (1901) and *Van Oude Menschen, De Dingen Die Voorbijgaan/The Things that Pass Old People By* (1906), which constitute Couperus's finest works. His other novels, though often technically brilliant, fail to add significantly to his recurrent themes of personal impotence in the face of heredity or sexual relationships.

# Coupland, Douglas (1961-)

Canadian writer. His *Generation X* (1991) identified a generation of disillusioned twenty-somethings with little hope for the future. It was followed by *Shampoo Planet* (1992), *Life After God* (1994), *Microserfs* (1995), *Polaroids from the Dead* (1996), *Girlfriend in a Coma* (1997), and *Hey Nostradamus!* (2003).

# Courier, Paul Louis (1772-1825)

French writer. He became the leading pamphleteer in France, noted for his irony. The most acclaimed of his pamphlets, in which he describes the grievances of the peasantry in the face of oppression by the government and the clergy, include *Pétition aux deux chambres/Petition to the Two Chambers* (1816) and *Pétition pour les villageois qu'on empêche de danser/Petition for the Villagers who are Forbidden to Dance* (1820).

# Courthope, William John (1842-1917)

English literary historian. He wrote works on Shakespeare, Edmund Spenser, and Joseph Addison, and edited Alexander Pope's works in ten volumes with a biography 1871-89. His *History of English Poetry* was published in six volumes 1895-1910. He was professor of poetry at Oxford 1895-1901.

# Courtier, The

#### (Italian II cortegiano)

book published by the Italian courtier Baldassare <u>Castiglione</u> in 1528 describing the accomplishments of the ideal Renaissance courtier. Written as a dialogue between courtiers and ladies, it presents the courtier as a man of noble birth educated as a soldier, scholar and a connoisseur of the arts. The courtier should excel at a wide range of civilized pursuits, but always with effortless grace, *sprezzatura*. The book was soon widely translated (into English by Sir Thomas <u>Hoby</u> in 1561) and left a deep and lasting impact on European manners.

The book presents an idealized picture of the court of Urbino under the enlightened rule of Duke Guidobaldo da Montefeltro in 1508. Written and gradually expanded between 1508 and 1524, the book was modelled on the dialogues of the Greek philosopher Plato and on the treatise *De oratore/Orator* by the Roman orator <u>Cicero</u>.

## Cowley, Abraham (1618-1667)

English poet. He introduced the Pindaric ode (based on the work of the Greek poet <u>Pindar</u>) to English poetry, and published metaphysical verse with elaborate imagery, as well as essays. His best-known collection is *Poems* (1656).

In his own day, Cowley was considered one of the foremost poets of the age. His style, which employs many conceits, is often compared with that of John <u>Donne</u>, but

he owes as much to Ben Jonson as to Donne, standing centrally in the neoclassical tradition which links Jonson with John <u>Dryden</u>.

#### Cowley, Malcolm (1898-1989)

US literary critic and editor. As literary advisor to Viking Press from 1948-85, he edited popularly available editions of selected works of writers from Nathaniel Hawthorne and Walt Whitman to F Scott Fitzgerald and Ernest Hemingway; it is generally recognized that his edition of William Faulkner (1946) was responsible for launching Faulkner's serious reputation.

He was born in Belasco, Pennsylvania. He interrupted his studies at Harvard to serve with the American Ambulance Corps in World War I. Returning to France for graduate studies (1921-23), he got to know some of the American writers he would write of in his first widely recognized book, *Exile's Return* (1934). Meanwhile, he worked as a free-lance writer, contributing book reviews and critical essays, translating French works, and composing his own poetry. As associate editor of the *New Republic* 1929-44, he promoted contemporary American writers. Cowley encouraged later generations of writers such as John Cheever, Jack Kerouac, and Ken Kesey. He continued writing and lecturing to promote American literature until his final years.

## Cowper, William (1731-1800)

English poet. His verse anticipates Romanticism and includes the six books of *The Task* (1785). He also wrote hymns (including 'God Moves in a Mysterious Way'). Cowper's work is important for its directness and descriptive accuracy, and deals with natural themes developed later (especially in the poetry of English poet William <u>Wordsworth</u>. Cowper was also among the finest of English letter writers. His letters contain humorous accounts of the trivia of rural life and sensitive descriptions of nature, disrupted from time to time by the expression of irrational fear.

Cowper was born in Great Berkhamsted, Hertfordshire. He trained as a lawyer, but suffered a mental breakdown in 1763 and entered an asylum, where he underwent an evangelical conversion. In 1767 he moved to Olney, Buckinghamshire, where he came under the influence of John Newton (1725-1807), curate of the village. In 1779 appeared the *Olney Hymns*, written in conjunction with Newton (about 68 of the 348 hymns were by Cowper). His next volume, consisting of secular verse, appeared in 1782, and contained 'Table Talk', 'The Progress of Error', 'Truth', and 'Expostulation'. The tale of John Gilpin - a shopkeeper and his wife on an ill-fated outing - inspired a delightful humorous poem (1785). *The Task* in blank verse brought the poet unexpected success and fame. In 1794 came Cowper's final attack of mental illness, from which he never entirely recovered. 'The Castaway' (1798) gives a sad picture of his state of mind in his last years.

## Cozzens, James Gould (1903-1978)

US writer. Often promoting socially conservative views, his novels focused on the world of male professionals; his best-known works are carefully crafted character studies such as *Guard of Honor* (1948), which won a Pulitzer Prize, and *By Love Possessed* (1957).

He was born in Chicago. He was first published in *Atlantic Monthly* at age 16; his first novel appeared in 1924. Although his popularity peaked in the 1950s, he continued to publish into the late 1960s.

Crabbe, George (1754-1832)

English poet. He wrote grimly realistic verse about the poor: *The Village* (1783), *The Parish Register* (1807), *The Borough* (1810) (which includes the story used in Benjamin Britten's opera *Peter Grimes*), and *Tales of the Hall* (1819).

#### Crace, Jim

British novelist. His 1997 novel *Quarantine* won the 1997 Whitbread Novel Award and was shortlisted for the 1997 Booker Prize. He also published *Continent* (1986), *The Gift of Stones* (1988), *Arcadia* (1992), *Signals of Distress* (1995), and *Being Dead* (1999).

#### Craik, Dinah Maria (1826-1887)

#### born Dinah Maria Mulock; called 'Mrs Craik'

English novelist. She was the author of *John Halifax*, *Gentleman* (1857), the story of the social betterment of a poor orphan through his own efforts.

## Crane, (Harold) Hart (1899-1932)

US poet. His long mystical poem *The Bridge* (1930) uses the Brooklyn Bridge as a symbolic key to the harmonizing myth of modern America, seeking to link humanity's present with its past in an epic continuum. His work, which was influenced by T S Eliot, is notable for its exotic diction and dramatic rhetoric.

He committed suicide by jumping overboard from a steamer bringing him back to

the USA after a visit to Mexico.

## Crane, R S (Ronald Salmon) (1886-1967)

US literary critic and educator. A professor at the University of Chicago 1935-52, and founder of the Chicago School of literary criticism, he energetically upheld humanistic values in literature.

He was born in Tecumseh, Michigan.

#### Crane, Stephen (1871-1900)

US writer and poet who introduced grim realism into the US novel. His book *The Red Badge of Courage* (1895) deals vividly with the US Civil War in a prose of Impressionist, visionary naturalism.

#### Crapsey, Adelaide (1878-1914)

US poet. Her work anticipated that of the Imagist poets, as seen in her 'Verses' (1915).

She was born in Brooklyn Heights, New York. She attended Vassar 1897-1901, studied archaeology in Rome 1904-05, taught in America 1902-04 and 1908, and lived in Rome 1908-13. She died of tuberculosis at a sanatorium in Saranac Lake, New York.

#### Crashaw, Richard (c. 1613-1649)

English religious poet of the metaphysical school. He published a book of Latin sacred epigrams, *Epigrammatum Sacrorum Liber* (1634). His principal sacred poems were published in *Steps to the Temple* (1646).

Some secular poems were added to this work under the title *Delights of the Muses*. Later editions (1648 and 1652) contained additional poems, and others have since been added from manuscript.

Crates (lived 5th century BC)

Athenian writer of the Old Comedy (see <u>Greek literature</u>). According to Aristotle he initiated the movement away from satirical comedy towards a regular plot. The titles of ten plays are known, but only fragments of his work survive.

#### Cratinus (c. 520-423 BC)

Greek comic dramatist, predecessor of <u>Aristophanes</u>. He wrote 21 comedies, such as *Putine/The Bottle*, but only fragments of his work survive. He is credited with various improvements in the arrangement of the chorus and in Greek comedy generally, and is said to have been the first to make comedy an instrument of personal satire. He himself used it as a vehicle for audacious sarcasm, directed in at least three plays against Pericles.

#### Crawford, Francis Marion (1854-1909)

US novelist, born in Italy. His novels, set in various countries, include *Mr Isaacs* (1882), *A Roman Singer* (1884), *Saracinesca* (1887), and *A Cigarette Maker's Romance* (1890).

#### Crawford, Robert (c. 1695-1733)

Scottish poet. He is chiefly remembered for his songs, such as 'Tweedside', 'The Bush aboon Traquair', and 'The Broom of Cowdenknowes', many of which were published in the *Orpheus Caledonius* (1725), a volume of Scottish songs collected by William Thomson.

#### Creanga, Ion (1837-1889)

Romanian writer. A friend of Mihai Eminescu, he frequented the literary circle known as Junimea ('youth'), where he presented his short stories based on folklore. His most successful work, the autobiographical 'Amintiri din copilarie/Memories of My Childhood', concerns his native Moldavian village and its inhabitants. His narratives are marked by irony and humour.

#### Creeley, Robert (White) (1926-2005)

US poet and writer. Best known for his poetry, as in 'Mirrors' (1983), he also wrote criticism and fiction.

He was born in Arlington, Massachusetts. He studied at Harvard 1943-46, Black Mountain College in 1955, and the University of New Mexico in 1960. After extensive travel, he taught at New York State University at Buffalo in 1966.

#### Crescimbeni, Giovanni Maria (1663-1728)

Italian poet and critic. His *Istoria della volgar poesia* (1698; revised 1714), is still a standard work on the history of Italian poetry. The *Commentari intorno alla storia della volgar poesia* 1702-11 is the most valuable of his other works.

#### Crèvecoeur, Michel Guillaume Jean de (1735-1813)

French-born US writer. He used the pseudonym Hector St John. His volume of *Letters from an American Farmer* (1782), with its descriptions of the American frontier, encouraged many to emigrate to the USA.

# Crichton, Michael (1942-)

US novelist, screenwriter, film director, and producer. He has written the screenplays for such commercial successes as *Jurassic Park* (1993), *Rising Sun* (1993), *Twister* (1996), and *Jurassic Park: The Lost World* (1997). All of these films were based on his best-selling novels of the same names. He is also the creator of the award-winning and commercially successful US television series *ER*.

Educated at Harvard Medical School, Crichton has combined his medical experience with science fiction themes to produce a series of highly popular novels, including *The Andromeda Strain* (1969), *Disclosure* (1994), *Timeline* (1999), *Prey* (2002), and *State of Fear* (2004) (most of which were also filmed). He has also directed a number of films, including *Westworld* (1973), *Coma* (1978), and *The First Great Train Robbery* (1979).

## Crime and Punishment

novel by Russian writer Fyodor <u>Dostoevsky</u>, published 1866. It analyses the motives of a murderer and his reactions to the crime he has committed.

#### crime fiction

genre of <u>detective fiction</u> distinguished by emphasis on character and atmosphere

rather than solving a mystery. Examples are the works of US writers Dashiell <u>Hammett</u> and Raymond <u>Chandler</u> during the 1930s and, in the second half of the 20th century, US writer Patricia <u>Highsmith</u> and English author Ruth <u>Rendell</u>.

The English writer William Godwin's *Caleb Williams* (1794) is a forerunner that points to the continuing tendency in crime fiction for serious psychological exploration to be linked with political radicalism.

#### Criterion, The

English quarterly literary review 1922-39 edited by T S Eliot. His poem *The Waste Land* was published in its first issue. It also published W H Auden, Ezra Pound, James Joyce, and D H Lawrence, and introduced the French writers Marcel Proust and Paul Valéry to English-language readers.

# Croce, Benedetto (1866-1952)

Italian philosopher, historian, and literary critic; the personification of the intellectual opposition to fascism. His *Filosofia dello spirito/Philosophy of the Spirit* (1902-17) was a landmark in idealism. Like the German philosopher G W F Hegel, he held that ideas do not represent reality but *are* reality; but unlike Hegel, he rejected every kind of transcendence.

A leading liberal, he served as minister of public instruction 1920-21 under Giovanni Giolitti, and his later *Storia d'Italia dal 1871 al 1915/History of Italy from 1871-1915* (1928) provided a sophisticated vindication of the liberal regime. His 'Manifesto of Anti-Fascist Intellectuals' (1925) marked him out as a prominent opponent of Mussolini. A monarchist, he again served as a minister under Pietro Badoglio and Ivanoe Bonomi 1943-44.

#### Crockett, Samuel Rutherford (1860-1914)

Scottish novelist. In 1893 he published *The Stickit Minister*, followed by *The Raiders* and *The Lilac Sunbonnet*, both 1894. Altogether he produced some 40 novels and was one of the chief writers of the rural, sentimental <u>Kailyard School</u>.

## Crocus, Cornelius (c. 1500-1550)

Dutch educationalist and playwright. One of the first Jesuits, he became known for his school textbooks and for his Latin plays written for performance in schools. Of these the *Coemedia Sacra Joseph* (1535) was the most successful, achieving over 20

editions and being imitated as far afield as Poland (see Rej, Mikolaj).

## Crofts, Freeman Wills (1879-1957)

Irish writer of detective fiction. Crofts was born in Dublin, and worked on the railways before taking up writing. Among his 35 novels, most of which feature the character Inspector (later Superintendent) French of Scotland Yard, are *Inspector French's Greatest Case* (1925), *The Starvel Tragedy* (1927), and *The Hog's Back Mystery* (1933).

Crofts gave up his career as chief assistant engineer on the Belfast and Northern Counties Railway in 1929 in order to concentrate on his writing and later moved to England. His novels enjoyed widespread popularity, and were noted for their meticulous plotting and attention to detail.

# Croisset, Francis de. (1877-1937)

pseudonym of Franz Wiener

Belgian dramatist. He made his reputation in Paris as the author of light comedies and travel sketches, including *Le Bonheur, Mesdames* (1906) and *La Féerie cinghalaise/The Sinhalese Enchantment* (1926); some were written in collaboration with fellow dramatist Robert de Flers (1872-1927), for example, *Les Vignes du Seigneur* (1923) and *Les Nouveux Messieurs*.

# Croker, Thomas Crofton (1798-1854)

Irish writer and collector of Irish legends. Born in Cork, his works include *Researches in the South of Ireland* (1824), *Fairy Legends and Traditions of the South of Ireland* (1825-28), and *Legends of the Lakes* (1829).

The Grimm brothers translated Croker's *Fairy Legends* into German, and his work had considerable influence on 19th-century collectors of Irish folklore.

# Croly, George (1780-1860)

Irish writer, biographer, and Anglican preacher. Croly was born in Dublin and educated there at Trinity College. His literary output was based mainly on poetry and romances, including the novels *Salathiel* (1829), based on the legend of the 'Wandering Jew', and *Marston* (1846), set during the French Revolution.

Croly took holy orders in 1804 and went to London in 1810, becoming rector of St Stephen's, Walbrook, in 1835. From 1817 he published some 40 works; other titles include the tragedy *Cataline* (1822), and the satire *May Fair* (1827).

#### Crompton, Richmal (1890-1969)

#### pen-name of Richmal Crompton Lamburn

English writer. A writer of marginally feminist novels, such as her third, the semiautobiographical *Ann Morrison* (1925), she is remembered for her stories about the mischievous schoolboy William, the first of which was *Just William* (1922).

## Cronin, A(rchibald) J(oseph) (1896-1981)

Scottish novelist. The success of his novel *Hatter's Castle* (1931) enabled him to leave his practice as a physician and take up writing full time. His medical stories gave rise in the 1960s to the popular television series *Dr Finlay's Casebook* for which Cronin contributed a number of scripts.

# Crosby, (Henry Sturgis) Harry (1898-1929)

US publisher and poet. He was prominent, along with his wife, Caresse Crosby, in Parisian literary and artistic circles during the 1920s until his suicide. He published works of distinguished contemporaries, as well as his own verse and that of his wife; his diaries were published posthumously.

He was born in Boston, Massachusetts.

## Crosby, Caresse (born Polly Jacob) (1892-1970)

US publisher and poet. She wrote poetry and collaborated with her husband Harry Crosby in establishing the publishing imprint of Editions Narcisse and then Black Sun Press, which she continued after his death in 1929.

She was born in New York City, but she lived as an American literary expatriate in Paris.

Cross, Amanda

US writer and teacher; see Carolyn Heilbrun.

## Crowley, John (1942-)

US writer of science fiction and fantasy. His work includes *Little*, *Big* (1980) and *Aegypt* (1987), which contain esoteric knowledge and theoretical puzzles. Other novels include *The Deep* (1975), *Beasts* (1976), *Engine Summer* (1979), and *The Translator* (2002).

## Crowquill, Alfred

pseudonym of English writer and illustrator Alfred Forrester.

## Cruz, Juana Inés de la, Sor (1651-1695)

born Juana Inés de Asbaje y Ramirez

Mexican poet and dramatist. A nun from the age of 17, she was both poet and writer, defending her secular writings in her eloquent *Respuesta a Sor Filotea/ Response to Sister Philotea* (1691), which also argues for women's rights to education. Her poems, baroque in style, include sonnets and lyrics; her plays, in the style of <u>Calderón de la Barca</u>, include *El Divino Narciso* (1690).

# Cueva, Juan de la (1543-1609)

Spanish dramatist and poet. He wrote lyrical and epic poetry, and plays that treat classical and national themes in a romantic, epic style, published in *Primera parte de las comedias y tragedias* (1583); *El exemplar poético* (1606) is the first Spanish didactic poem.

# Cullen, Countee (1903-1946)

US poet. He was one of the leading contributors to the <u>Harlem Renaissance</u>. His particular style - as seen in such works as 'Color' (1925) and 'Copper Sun' (1927) - was more derived from European traditions than from black American idioms and has not survived his era.

He was born in New York City. Raised by foster parents, he studied at New York

University (BA 1925) and Harvard (MA 1926). He achieved some recognition for his poetry while still a student. Awarded a Guggenheim fellowship in 1928, he spent most of the next six years in Paris. On returning to New York City he taught at a junior high school (1934-46); he also edited a magazine, *Opportunity*. In addition to his poetry, he wrote a novel, *One Way to Heaven* (1932), and stories for children. Other poetry collections include *The Ballad of the Brown Girl* (1928), *The Black Christ and Other Poems* (1929), and *The Medea and Some Poems* (1935).

## Cumberland, Richard (1732-1811)

English dramatist. He wrote more than 50 plays, ranging from tragedy to sentimental comedy and comic opera, the most successful being *The West Indian* (1771), produced by David Garrick at Covent Garden in London.

He also wrote poems and prose works 1754-1811, including his memoirs (1806-07), and a source book on 18th-century theatre.

# Cummings, Bruce Frederick (1889-1919)

#### pseudonym W N P Barbellion

English writer and biologist. Under the pseudonym **W N P Barbellion** he wrote his *Journal of a Disappointed Man* (1919; published shortly before his death), using extracts from his diary to describe his early passion for natural history and the torture of his later illness (sclerosis). It is one of the great psychological revelations in English autobiography.

# Cummings, E(dward) E(stlin) (1894-1962)

US poet and novelist. His work is marked by idiosyncratic punctuation and typography (often using only lower case letters in his verse, for example), and a subtle, lyric celebration of life. Before his first collection *Tulips and Chimneys* (1923), Cummings published an avant-garde novel, *The Enormous Room* (1922), based on his internment in a French concentration camp during World War I.

His typographical experiments were antecedents of the concrete and sound poetry of the 1960s.

#### Cunha, Euclydes Rodrigues Pimenta da (1866-1909)

Brazilian writer. His novel Os Sertões/Rebellion in the Backlands (1902) describes

the Brazilian *sertão* (backlands), and how a small group of rebels resisted government troops.

## Cunningham, Allan (1784-1842)

Scottish poet and biographer. Among his works are *Traditional Tales of the English and Scottish Peasantry* (1822), *Lives of the Most Eminent British Painters, Sculptors, and Architects* (1829-33) and an epic poem in 12 parts, *The Maid of Elvar* (1833). He published an edition of Robert Burns's work in 1834 and biographies of Burns (1836) and Scottish writer David Wilkie (1843).

## Cunningham, J V (James Vincent) (1911-1985)

US poet. He was a Renaissance scholar, an essayist, and an epigrammatic poet, as in 'The Helmsman' (1942).

He was born in Cumberland, Maryland. He studied at Stanford (BA 1934; PhD 1945), and taught at many institutions, primarily at Brandeis University 1953-85.

## Cunningham, Michael (1952-)

US writer. His novels include *A Home at the End of the World* (1990; filmed 2004), *Flesh and Blood* (1995), and *The Hours* (1998, filmed 2002), which won the Pulitzer Prize for Fiction and the PEN/Faulkner Award, both in 1999.

In *The Hours*, Cunningham intertwines the story of Virginia <u>Woolf</u> with two more contemporary women, all of whom are facing emotional turmoil.

## Cunningham, Peter (1816-1869)

English writer and editor, the son of the Scottish writer Allan <u>Cunningham</u>. His chief publication was a *Handbook for London* (1849), to which later guides have been much indebted. He wrote about the lives of the architect Inigo Jones (1848) and the mistress of Charles II, NeII Gwynn (1852). He edited the works of William Drummond of Hawthornden and Samuel Johnson's *Lives of the Poets* as well as his father's *Life of Sir David Wilkie* (1843) and *Poems and Songs* (1847).

Later name of Scottish poet Robert Graham.

## Cunninghame-Graham, Robert Bontine (1852-1936)

Scottish writer, politician, and adventurer. He wrote many travel books based on his experiences in Texas and Argentina 1869-83 and in Spain and Morocco 1893-98. He became the first president of the Scottish Labour Party in 1888 and the first president of the Scottish National Party in 1928.

## Curnow, Allen (1911-2001)

New Zealand poet, dramatist, anthologist, and critic. Associated with the important Phoenix group in the 1930s, as a poet and critic he has influentially explored the possibilities of cultural identity in New Zealand, stressing both the isolation of the poet (particularly in *Island and Time*, 1941) and the need for poets and the people to speak the same language. Language itself is the focus of more recent work such as *Trees*, *Effigies*, *Moving Objects* (1972) and *An Incorrigible Music* (1979).

A selection of his plays was published in 1972 and *Collected Poems*, *1933-1973* appeared in 1974.

## Curtis, George William (1824-1892)

US writer and editor. His collections of sketches and essays include *Nile Notes of a Howadji* (1851), *Lotus Eating* (1852), *Potiphar Papers* (1853), and *Prue and I* (1856).

He was editor of *Putnam's Monthly* 1852-69 and *Harper's Weekly* from 1863 until his death, and contributed to many other magazines.

## Cymbeline

play by <u>Shakespeare</u>, first acted about 1610 and printed in 1623. It combines various sources to tell the story of Imogen (derived from Ginevra in Giovanni Boccaccio's *Decameron*), the daughter of the legendary British king Cymbeline, who proves her virtue and constancy after several ordeals.

Cynewulf (lived 8th century or 9th century)

Anglo-Saxon poet. He is thought to have been a Northumbrian monk and is the undoubted author of 'Juliana' and part of the 'Christ' in the <u>Exeter Book</u> (a collection of poems now in Exeter Cathedral, England), and of the 'Fates of the Apostles' and 'Elene' in the Vercelli Book (a collection of Old English manuscripts housed in Vercelli, northern Italy), in all of which he inserted his name by using runic acrostics.

## Cynthius

alternative name of Italian author Giambattista Cinzio Giraldi.

## Cyrano de Bergerac, Savinien (1619-1655)

French writer. Joining a corps of guards at the age of 19, he performed heroic feats. He is the hero of a classic play by Edmond Rostand, in which his excessively long nose is used as a counterpoint to his chivalrous character.

# **Czech literature**

the literature of Czechoslovakia and the Czech republic. Czech writing first flourished in the 14th century but was effectively suppressed by the Habsburg dynasty. The tradition revived in the 19th century and grew steadily until World War I. After the establishment of the independent state of Czechoslovakia in 1918, literature flourished until the communist takeover of 1948. In the 1960s, writers such as Milan <u>Kundera</u> and Miroslav <u>Holub</u> again gained attention both in Czechoslovakia and abroad. Kundera's *The Unbearable Lightness of Being* (1984) was made into an internationally successful film in 1988.

In its early years, Czech literature was heavily associated with Hussite Protestantism and the early Renaissance. Hence, the emergence of the Catholic Habsburgs effectively drove the indigenous literary tradition into exile, where the polymath Ámos Komenský (Comenius) (1592-1670) wrote his prose masterpiece *Labyrint sveta a ráj srdce/Labyrinth of the World and Paradise of the Heart* 1631. The romantic poetry of Karel Hynek <u>Mácha</u> and the *Máj* group he inspired, which included the poet Vitezslaw Hálek (1835-1874), had a great impact in the 19th century. Czech literature flourished between the world wars with the plays of Karel <u>Capek</u> and František Langer (1888-1965), the poetry of Jaroslav <u>Seifert</u>, and the later fiction of Jaroslav <u>Hašek</u>. After a brief stagnation in the early communist period, literature began to re-emerge in Czechoslovakia from the 1960s onward. From the 1970s until the fall of communism, writers played a prominent part in the democratic dissident movement, and the playwright Václav Havel (1936-) became the country's first postcommunist president 1989.

## Dabrowska, Maria (1889-1965)

Polish novelist. Her best-known work, the four-volume novel cycle *Noce i dnie/ Nights and Days* (1932-34), is an epic of life and customs of the Polish gentry between 1863 and World War I.

She also published several collections of short stories, including *Ludzie stamtad: Cykl opowiesci/Folks from over Yonder: A Cycle of Tales* (1925) and *Gwiazda zaranna/Morning Star* (1955) (published in English as *A Village Wedding and Other Stories* in 1957), wrote plays, essays, articles, and translated Pepys into Polish.

## Da Costa, Izaak (1798-1860)

Dutch poet and theologian. The ideas and manner of his earlier poetry echo those of Willem <u>Bilderdijk</u>. In 1822 Da Costa became a Calvinist, and his later work, marked by a sincere religious and nationalist fervour, includes *Bezwaren tegen de geest der eeuw/Objections to the Spirit of the Age* (1823), *Hagar* (1848), and *De slag bij Nieuwpoort/The Battle of Nieuport* (1859).

## Dafydd ap Gwilym (c. 1340-c. 1400)

Welsh poet. His work exhibits a complex but graceful style, concern with nature and love rather than with heroic martial deeds, and has references to classical and Italian poetry.

## Daglish, Eric Fitch (1892-1966)

English artist and author. He wrote a number of natural history books, and illustrated both these and classics by Izaak Walton, Henry Thoreau, Gilbert White, and W H Hudson with exquisite wood engravings.

## Dahl, Roald (1916-1990)

British writer, of Norwegian ancestry. He is celebrated for short stories with a twist, such as *Tales of the Unexpected* (1979), and for his children's books, including *James and the Giant Peach* (1961), *Charlie and the Chocolate Factory* (1964), *The BFG* (1982), and *Matilda* (1988). Many of his works have been successfully adapted for television or film. He also wrote the screenplay for the James Bond film *You Only Live Twice* (1967), and the script for *Chitty Chitty Bang Bang* (1968).

The enormous popularity of his children's books can be attributed to his weird imagination, the success of his child characters in outwitting their elders, and his repulsive detail. *The Collected Short Stories* was published in 1991. His autobiography *Going Solo* (1986) recounted his experiences as a fighter pilot in the RAF. After surviving a crash landing he was posted to Washington, where he worked with British security.

## Dahlberg, Edward (1900-1977)

US writer. After university, he joined the US expatriates in Paris in the 1920s. The 1960s saw him produce bitter social and literary criticism, verse, and an autobiography. From 1964 until his death, he taught at the University of Missouri.

He was born in Boston, Massachusetts. Illegitimate, he was sent to an orphanage in Cleveland, Ohio, as a boy, but he ran away. Before going to Paris, he studied at the University of California and Columbia University. His pioneering proletarian novels include *Bottom Dogs* (1929) and *From Flushing to Calvary*(1932) and his highly regarded autobiography is titled *Because I Was Flesh* (1964).

## Daiches, David (1912-2005)

Scottish literary critic and scholar. His works include *Critical Approaches to Literature* (1956), *The Paradox of Scottish Culture* (1964), and *Literature and Western Civilization* (1973). He wrote studies of Virginia Woolf (1942), R L Stevenson (1947), Robert Burns (1950), Willa Cather (1951), Walter Scott (1971), and Charles Edward Stuart (1973).

## Dalin, Olof von (1708-1763)

Swedish poet and historian. He started the journal *Den Svenska Argus/The Swedish Argus* (1733), modelled on the *Spectator*. A historical epic, *Svenska Friheten/Swedish Freedom* (1742), and a history of Sweden (1747-61) secured for him the post of tutor to the crown prince. He also wrote plays, epics, and occasional verse, expressing his ideas with great wit and satirical humour.

## Dana, Richard Henry, Jr (1815-1882)

US author and lawyer. He went to sea and worked for his passage around Cape Horn to California and back, then wrote an account of the journey *Two Years before the Mast* (1840). He also published *The Seaman's Friend* (1841), a guide to maritime law.

## Dana, Richard Henry, Sr (1787-1879)

US poet and critic. His first book of verse, *The Buccaneer* (1827), was followed by *Poems and Prose Writings* (1833). He was one of the founders of the *North American Review* in 1815.

He was the father of Richard Dana, Jr.

#### dandy

male figure conspicuous for tasteful fastidiousness, particularly in dress. The famous Regency dandy George ('Beau') Brummell (1778-1840) helped to give literary currency to the figure of the dandy, particularly in England and France, providing a model and symbol of the triumph of style for the Francophile Oscar <u>Wilde</u> and for 19th-century French writers such as Charles <u>Baudelaire</u>, J K <u>Huysmans</u>, and the extravagantly romantic novelist and critic Jules-Amédée Barbey d'Aurevilly (1808-1889), biographer of Brummell.

## Dane, Clemence (1888-1965)

#### pseudonym of Winifred Ashton

English novelist and dramatist. Her play A Bill of Divorcement (1921) was highly successful; it was followed by Will Shakespeare (1921); Wild December (1933), about the Brontë family of writers; and Come of Age (1934), about the poet Thomas Chatterton. Her novels include Regiment of Women (1917), Broome Stages (1931), and The Flower Girls (1954).

## Daniel, Arnaut (lived 1180-1200)

French poet, one of the Provençal troubadours. His output consists almost entirely of love songs, notable for their delicacy of sentiment, the extreme refinement and complexity of their verse forms, and, in particular, the stylistic effects derived from unusual vocabulary and difficult rhymes.

## Daniel, Père Gabriel (1649-1728)

French writer and Jesuit theologian. His *Histoire de France* (1713) was harshly criticized by the philosopher Voltaire; his *Entretiens de Cléandre et d'Eudoxe* (1694)

was an attempt to refute Blaise Pascal's views expressed in the book *Lettres* provinciales.

## Daniel, Samuel (1562-1619)

English poet. His works include the sonnet sequence *Delia* (1592) and several masques for the court (1604-14), such as *The Vision of the Twelve Goddesses* (1604), *The Queen's Arcadia* (1605), and *Hymen's Triumph* (1614).

## Daninos, Pierre (1913-2005)

French author. Originally a journalist, he was liaison agent with the British Army at Dunkirk in 1940, and created in *Les Carnets du Major Thompson/The Notebooks of Major Thompson* (1954) a humorous Englishman who caught the French imagination.

## Danish literature

Danish writers of international fame emerged in the 19th century: Hans Christian Andersen, the philosopher Søren Kierkegaard, and the critic Georg Brandes (1842-1927), all of whom played a major part in the Scandinavian literary awakening, encouraging Ibsen and others. The novelists Henrik Pontoppidan (1857-1943), Karl Gjellerup (1857-1919), and Johannes Jensen (1873-1950) were all Nobel prizewinners.

#### Dannay, Frederic

born Daniel Nathan Dannay

US writer; see Ellery Queen.

## D'Annunzio, Gabriele (1863-1938)

Italian poet, novelist, and dramatist. Marking a departure from 19th-century Italian literary traditions, his use of language and style of writing earned him much criticism in his own time. His novels, often combining elements of corruption, snobbery, and scandal, include *L'innocente/The Intruder* (1891) and *II triomfo della morte/The Triumph of Death* (1894).

His first volume of poetry, Primo vere/In Early Spring (1879), was followed by

further collections of verse, short stories, novels, and plays (he wrote the tragedies *La Gioconda* (1899) and *Francesca da Rimini* (1901) for the actor Eleonora Duse).

Elected deputy in 1897, he associated himself with the right-wing nationalism of the pre-war years, and was a controversial advocate of interventionism 1914-15, turning public opinion to the side of the Allies in 1915. After serving in World War I, he led an expedition of volunteers 1919 to capture the Dalmatian port of Fiume, which he held until 1921. His style of rule prefigured fascism, especially in its aestheticization of politics. He became a national hero, and was created Prince of Montenevoso in 1924. Influenced by the German philosopher Nietzsche's writings, he later became an ardent exponent of fascism.

# Dante Alighieri (1265-1321)

Italian poet. His masterpiece *La divina commedia/The Divine Comedy* (1307-21) is an epic account in three parts of his journey through Hell, Purgatory, and Paradise, during which he is guided part of the way by the poet Virgil; on a metaphorical level, the journey is also one of Dante's own spiritual development. Other works include *De vulgari eloquentia/Concerning the Vulgar Tongue* (1304-06), an original Latin work on Italian, its dialects, and kindred languages; the philosophical prose treatise *Convivio/The Banquet* (1306-08), the first major work of its kind to be written in Italian rather than Latin; *De monarchia/On World Government* (1310-13), expounding his political theories; and *Canzoniere/Lyrics*.

Dante was born in Florence, where in 1274 he first met and fell in love with Beatrice Portinari (described in *La vita nuova/New Life* (1283-92)). His love for her survived her marriage to another man and her death in 1290 at the age of 24. According to the writer <u>Boccaccio</u>, from 1283 to 1289 Dante was engaged in study, and after the death of Beatrice he seems to have entered into a period of intense philosophic study. In 1289 he fought in the battle of Campaldino, won by Florence against Arezzo, and from 1295 took an active part in Florentine politics. In 1300 he was one of the six priors of the Republic, favouring the moderate Guelph party rather than the extreme papal Ghibelline faction; when the Ghibellines seized power in 1302, he was convicted in his absence of misapplication of public money and sentenced to death. He escaped from Florence and spent the remainder of his life in exile, in central and northern Italy.

# Daqiqi (or Dakiki), Abu Mansur (935-980)

Persian poet. He was court poet to Nuh II of the Samanid dynasty. Only a few fragments of Daqiqi's lyric verse remain. He was asked by Nuh to turn the Pahlavi Khudhay-namak (Book of Kings) into Persian verse, but was assassinated before he could finish it.

Firdausi, who continued and completed the work begun by Daqiqi, incorporated about 1,000 of the earlier poet's verses into his great epic *Shahnama*; he claimed

that Daqiqi asked him in a dream to do so.

## d'Arblay, Madame

married name of English writer Fanny Burney.

## Darío, Rubén (1867-1916)

#### pen-name of Félix Rubén García Sarmiento

Nicaraguan poet. His first major work *Azul/Azure* (1888), a collection of prose and verse influenced by French Symbolism, created a sensation. He went on to establish **modernismo**, the Spanish-American modernist literary movement, distinguished by an idiosyncratic and deliberately frivolous style that broke away from the prevailing Spanish provincialism and adapted French poetic models. His vitality and eclecticism influenced every poet writing in Spanish after him, both in the New World and in Spain.

#### Darley, George (1795-1846)

Irish poet, critic, and mathematician. Born in Dublin and educated at Trinity College, Darley later moved to London. His first volume of poetry, *The Errors of Ecstasie*, appeared in 1822. He wrote for the *London Magazine*, was a critic for the *Athenaeum*, and wrote plays and studied English dramatists. He was also an accomplished mathematician and published textbooks on geometry, algebra, and trigonometry.

#### Dasent, George Webbe (1817-1896)

British scholar of Scandinavian literature and folklore. His publications include translations of Scandinavian tales and old Icelandic sagas, including *The Prose or Younger Edda* (1842) and *Popular Tales from the Norse* (1859), and *The Saga of Burnt Njal* (1861).

#### Dashwood, Edmée Elizabeth Monica

real name of English writer E M Delafield.

## Dass, Petter (1647-1707)

Norwegian poet. He has been called the founder of modern Norwegian poetry because of the great power of description in his verse. His best-known poem, *Nordlands Trompet/Northern Trumpet*, is a vivid description of nature and life in northern Norway. Dass also wrote lyric and religious verse.

# Daudet, (Alphonse Marie) Léon (1867-1942)

French writer and journalist. He founded the militant right-wing royalist periodical *Action Française* (1899) after the Dreyfus case. During World War II he was a collaborator with the Germans. He was the son of Alphonse Daudet.

## Daudet, Alphonse (1840-1897)

French novelist. He wrote about his native Provence in *Lettres de mon moulin/ Letters from My Mill* (1866), and created the character Tartarin, a hero epitomizing southern temperament, in *Tartarin de Tarascon* (1872) and two sequels.

Other works include the play L'Arlésienne/The Woman from Arles (1872), for which Georges Bizet composed the music; and Souvenirs d'un homme de lettres/ Recollections of a Literary Man (1889).

#### Daurat, Jean.

Alternative spelling of French poet and scholar Jean Dorat.

#### Davanzati, Chiaro

Italian lyrical poet. He began writing lyrics in the style of the Provençal troubadours and Sicilians, but later he became a follower of <u>Guittone d'Arezzo</u>. To this period probably belong his patriotic canzoni.

## Davenant, William (1606-1668)

English poet and dramatist. His *Siege of Rhodes* (1656) is sometimes considered the first English opera. His plays include *The Wits* (1633) and *Love and Honour* (1634).

He was poet laureate from 1638.

## David Copperfield

novel by Charles <u>Dickens</u>, published 1849-50. The story follows the orphan David Copperfield from his school days and early poverty to eventual fame as an author. Among the characters he encounters are Mr Micawber, Mr Peggotty, and Uriah Heep. It is perhaps the most popular of Dickens' novels and it was his own favourite.

## Davidson, John (1857-1909)

Scottish poet and dramatist. His first success came with *Fleet Street Eclogues* (1893, 1896) followed by *Ballads and Songs* (1894). His modern, realistic idiom, as in 'Thirty Bob a Week', influenced T S <u>Eliot</u>.

## Davie, Donald Alfred (1922-1995)

English poet and literary critic. His verse has a highly wrought style and grace, wedded to interests in history and politics, as exemplified in *The Forests of Lithuania* (1959). His later work is as carefully constructed, but explores freer syntactic and metrical forms. Among Davie's critical writings are *Purity of Diction in English Verse* (1952), *Thomas Hardy and British Poetry* (1972), and *Pound* (1976), about the poet Ezra Pound.

## Davies, (William) Robertson (1913-1995)

Canadian novelist. He published the first novel of his Deptford trilogy *Fifth Business* (1970), a panoramic work blending philosophy, humour, the occult, and ordinary life. Other works include *A Mixture of Frailties* (1958), *The Rebel Angels* (1981), *What's Bred in the Bone* (1986), *The Lyre of Orpheus* (1988), and *Murther and Walking Spirits* (1991).

## Davies (or Davis), John (1569-1626)

English poet and lawyer. In his *Orchestra* (1596), the world is exhibited as a dance; *Hymns to Astraea* (1599) consists of 26 acrostic poems addressed to Queen Elizabeth; and *Nosce Teipsum* (1599) is a didactic poem on the vanity of human learning and the immortality of the soul and was acclaimed by Coleridge.

## Davies, William Henry (1871-1940)

Welsh poet. He produced 20 books of verse, first becoming known for *The Autobiography of a Super-tramp* (1908). The contrast between his life as a tramp and pedlar and his work is striking, and his lyrics are comparable to the most delicate of Elizabethan verse. A collection of his poems was published in 1943.

## Davin, Dan(iel Marcus) (1913-1990)

New Zealand novelist and short-story writer. He was based in Oxford after 1945. His Irish Catholic upbringing and his wartime experience with the New Zealand Division provided the background for his acclaimed early novels *Cliffs of Fall* (1945) and *For the Rest of Our Lives* (1947).

His social and psychological concerns are reflected in *Selected Stories* (1981), in critical studies, and in an autobiography *Closing Times* (1975).

## Daviot, Gordon

pseudonym of Scottish novelist and dramatist Elizabeth Mackintosh.

# Davis, Rebecca Harding (1831-1910)

#### born Rebecca Blaine Harding

US writer, a pioneer of American naturalism. She came to prominence with her short story 'Life in the Iron-Mills' (1861; a daringly frank depiction of the harsh conditions endured by factory workers) and also with her realistic Civil War stories. She later wrote essays and also several novels, including *Waiting for the Verdict* (1868), which depicts the racism faced by African-Americans. She was the mother of the journalist Richard Harding <u>Davis</u>.

## Davis, Richard Harding (1864-1916)

US novelist and journalist. He was a war correspondent during the Spanish-American War and the Boer War in South Africa, and wrote several books about these campaigns, as well as a large number of popular adventure novels.

In 1914 he was in Mexico as war correspondent of the *New York Tribune*. Later he went to Belgium, and published *With the Allies* (1914) and *Somewhere in France* (1915).

## Davis, Thomas Osborne (1814-1845)

Irish poet and journalist. Brought up in Mallow, Cork, Davis was educated at Trinity College, Dublin, and called to the bar in 1838. Regarded as the national poet in the 19th century, Davis was a driving force behind the Young Ireland movement and highly critical of Daniel O'Connell's cautious political methods. His best work appeared in the weekly paper *The Nation*, which he helped found with Charles Gavan <u>Duffy</u> and John Blake Dillon (1814-1866). It included such political ballads as the 'Lament for Owen Roe O'Neill' and 'The Battle of Fontenoy', and some historical sketches.

## Dawe, (Donald) Bruce (1930-)

Australian poet. His most successful poems are distinguished by wittily inventive deployment of everyday language and imagery, addressing serious subjects with unsentimental yet gentle dignity. Collections include *No Fixed Address* (1962), *Condolences of the Season* (1971), and *Just a Dugong at Twilight* (1975). His collected poems were published as *Sometimes Gladness* (1978).

## Day, John (c. 1574-1640)

English dramatist. He wrote an allegorical play, *The Parliament of Bees*, which probably appeared in 1607 and in which all the characters are bees. He collaborated successfully with Thomas Dekker and others 1598-1608.

## Day, Thomas (1748-1789)

English writer. His celebrated *The History of Sandford and Merton* (1783-89) is a typical example of the moral story for children, juxtaposing the wealthy and hard-hearted Tommy Merton and the poor but good-natured Harry Sandford. The poem *The Dying Negro* (1773) was written in support of abolishing the slave trade.

# Day-Lewis, C(ecil) (1904-1972)

Irish poet. With W H Auden and Stephen Spender, he was one of the influential left-

wing poets of the 1930s. His later poetry moved from political concerns to a more traditional personal lyricism. He also wrote detective novels under the pseudonym **Nicholas Blake**. He was British poet laureate 1968-72.

His poetry, which includes *From Feathers to Iron* (1931) and *Overtures to Death* (1938), is marked by accomplished lyrics and sustained narrative power. *The Complete Poems* was published in 1992.

## Dazai, Osamu (1909-1948)

#### pen-name of Shuji Tsushima

Japanese novelist. The title of his novel *The Setting Sun* (1947) became identified in Japan with the dead of World War II.

## De Amicis, Edmondo (1846-1908)

Italian novelist, essayist, and travel writer. He was a follower of Alessandro <u>Manzoni</u>, although failing to share the same powerful creative imagination; his style is versatile and his descriptions skilful. He is known mainly for *II cuore/The Heart of a Boy* (1886), a children's book.

#### Deane, Seamus (1940-)

Northern Irish poet, novelist, and academic. Born in Londonderry, Deane was educated in Belfast and Cambridge, and settled in Dublin in 1968. His work includes *Gradual Wars* (1972), one of the first poetry collections to take 'the Troubles' as its subject; the novel *Reading in the Dark* (1998), nominated for the Booker Prize and winner of *The Guardian* Fiction Prize and the *Irish Times* Fiction Award; and *Wizard* (1999).

Deane became a Fulbright lecturer at the University of California at Berkeley 1966-68, before returning to Ireland to take up the post of professor of Modern English and American literature at University College, Dublin. In 1971 he became co-director of the Field Day Theatre Company, an appointment he held until 1993. His threevolume *Field Day Anthology of Irish Writing* was published in 1991. He has also written a book of essays, *Heroic Styles: The Tradition of an Idea* (1985).

#### Death of a Salesman

play 1949 by Arthur Miller, the story of the defeated sales representative Willy

Loman, which captured the limitations and deceptions of the American dream of success.

## De Bernières, Louis (1954-)

English writer. Using his own brand of classical realism, he uses little known historical events to explore issues of power, freedom, political ideology, and love. He is best known for his novel *Captain Corelli's Mandolin* (1994, filmed 2001), which won the 1995 Commonwealth Writers' Prize. He was the first British novelist to win this award.

De Bernières's early novels take place in South America and are both magical and violent. They include *The War of Don Emmanuel's Nether Parts* (1990), *Señor Vivo and the Coca Lord* (1991), and *The Troublesome Offspring of Cardinal Guzman* (1994). *Birds Without Wings* (2005) is set during the decline of the Ottoman Empire.

## de Burgos, Julia (1914-1953)

Puerto Rican-born poet and teacher. One of Puerto Rico's leading 20th-century poets, influenced by Pablo <u>Neruda</u>, she was a prominent member of the literary Vanguard movement in San Juan in the 1930s. Her best-known poem is 'Río Grande de Loiza'.

She was born in Carolina, Puerto Rico. She moved to New York City, where she spent her last years. Over the years, she supported herself with a variety of jobs, including teaching.

## Decadents

#### French les décadents

group of young French writers who were active from 1880 to about 1890. The movement 'L'Esprit décadent' may be considered as an early stage of <u>Symbolism</u>. The Decadents were characterized by a rejection of conventional values and a continual striving for new and more intense sensations of every kind.

In England, the movement influenced such writers as Oscar Wilde and Arthur Symons, and shared some similarities with the Aesthetic Movement.

Decameron, The

collection of tales by the Italian writer Giovanni Boccaccio, brought together 1348-53. Ten young people, fleeing plague-stricken Florence, amuse their fellow travellers by each telling a story on the ten days they spend together. The work had a great influence on English literature, particularly on Chaucer's *Canterbury Tales*.

## Decembrio, Angelo (1415-after 1467)

Italian humanist author, the younger brother of Pier Candido <u>Decembrio</u>. He entered the intellectual circle around Leonello d'Este in Ferrara and described (or mythologized) it in his *De Politia Litteraria/On The Lettered Republic* (1462).

He was born in Milan and was educated first by the humanist commentator Gasparino Barzizza, moving to Ferrara to finish his education with Battista <u>Guarino</u>. After Leonello's death he moved first to Naples and then to Spain about 1458, but eventually returned to Ferrara.

# Decembrio, Pier Candido (1399-1477)

Milanese humanist author and administrator. He entered the service of Filippo Maria Visconti in 1419, acting as his secretary and diplomat, but found time to produce Latin and Italian translations, as well as a large collection of humanist epistles. His original works included a life of Visconti, as well as a *Panegyric* of Milan (about 1436).

Self-taught in Greek, he translated works into Latin, most notably Plato's *Republic* (which his father had already translated - a factor which brought criticism on Pier Candido from his own brother, Angelo <u>Decembrio</u>); he presented this to Humfrey, Duke of Gloucester. He also, for Visconti's benefit, translated Latin texts into Italian, both classical (for example, Caesar) and humanist (Tito Livio Frulovisi's biography of Henry V).

After Visconti's death Decembrio was forced to wander Italy seeking a patron; he entered papal service, then the court of Alfonso V and ended his career in the service of the d'Este of Ferrara.

## Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire

historical work by Edward Gibbon, published in the UK in 1776-88. One of the bestknown historical works in English literature, it spans 13 centuries and is arranged in three parts. It covers the history of the empire from Trajan and the Antonines through to the Turkish seizure of Constantinople in 1453.

# Dedekind, Friedrich (c. 1525-1598)

German satirist and Protestant pastor. While a student at Wittenberg, he wrote *Grobianus Sive de Morum Simplicitate Libri Duo* (1549), one of the famous satires of the age. A book of anecdotes in Latin verse it lampoons boorish, selfish behaviour (particularly table manners) by ironically praising it. It was freely translated into German in 1551, both versions becoming immensely popular during the second half of the 16th century and throughout the 17th century.

# Deeping, (George) Warwick (1877-1950)

English novelist. He won recognition with the best-selling *Sorrell and Son* (1925), which was followed by several other novels, including *Old Pybus* (1928) and *Roper's Row* (1929).

# Deffand, Marie de Vichy-Chamrond (1697-1780)

#### Marquise du Deffand

French letter-writer, one of the most brilliant of the 18th century. Her salon in the Rue St Dominique was frequented by the most celebrated literary figures of the day, and she made herself a conspicuous and notorious figure in Parisian society.

# Defoe, Daniel (1660-1731)

English writer. His <u>Robinson Crusoe</u> (1719), though claiming to be a factual account of shipwreck and solitary survival, was influential in the development of the novel. The fictional *Moll Flanders* (1722) and the partly factual *A Journal of the Plague Year* (1722) are still read for their concrete realism. A highly productive journalist and pamphleteer, he was imprisoned in 1703 for the ironic *The Shortest Way with Dissenters* (1702).

Defoe was born in London and educated for the Nonconformist ministry, but became a hosier. He took part in Monmouth's rebellion in 1685 (in which Monmouth attempted to claim the English throne), and joined William of Orange in 1688 (who successfully claimed the throne from James II). Defoe was bankrupted three times as a result of various business ventures, once for the then enormous amount of £17,000. After his business had failed, he held a civil-service post from 1695 to 1699. Since Defoe's death, an increasing number of works have been attributed to him, bringing the total to more than 600.

#### Defoe



(Image © Billie Love)

A portrait of the English writer Daniel Defoe, *c.* 1702. His famous work *Robinson Crusoe* was written when he was nearly sixty years old. Based on the true story of the sailor Alexander Selkirk, the book tells how the fictional shipwrecked Crusoe battles for survival in virtual solitude.

## De Forest, John William (1826-1906)

US novelist. He wrote *Miss Ravenel's Conversion from Secession to Loyalty* (1867), a realistic novel of the American Civil War, in which De Forest served under Philip Sheridan, and other novels with political implications.

## Dehmel, Richard (1863-1920)

German poet. With Detlev von Liliencron, he represents the transition from the

naturalistic school to more flexible poetic forms. His poetry has a strong metaphysical bias, and owes much to the philosopher <u>Nietzsche</u> both in form and content (*Aber die Liebe* 1893, *Weib und Welt* 1896, *Die Verwandlungen der Venus* 1907).

## Deighton, Len (Leonard Cyril) (1929-)

English author of spy fiction. His novels include *The Ipcress File* (1962), *Funeral in Berlin* (1964), *An Expensive Place to Die* (1967), and the trilogy *Berlin Game*, *Mexico Set*, and *London Match* (1983-85), featuring the spy Bernard Samson.

Otherw works include *Only When I Larf* (1968) and the trilogies *Spy Hook* (1988), *Spy Line* (1989), and *Spy Sinker* (1990) and *Faith* (1994), *Hope* (1995), and *Charity* (1996). He has also published historical works on World War II, as well as several cookbooks.

## Dekker, Eduard Douwes (1820-1887)

#### pseudonym Multatuli

Dutch writer. He wrote the novel *Max Havelaar* (1860) and *Minnebrieven/Love Letters* (1861), fictional correspondence between the author, his wife, and his inspiration (Fancy). Miscellaneous essays, aphorisms, and comments are contained in his *Ideën/Ideas* (1862-77).

#### Delafield, E M (1890-1943)

# pen-name of Edmée Elizabeth Monica Dashwood; born Elizabeth Monica de la Pasture

English writer. Her amusing *Diary of a Provincial Lady* (1931) skilfully exploits the foibles of middle-class life. This was so successful that she followed it with three sequels, the last being *The Provincial Lady in War Time* (1940).

#### de la Mare, Walter John (1873-1956)

English poet and writer. His works include verse for children, such as *Peacock Pie* (1913), and the novels *The Three Royal Monkeys* (1910) (for children) and *The Memoirs of a Midget* (1921) (for adults). He excelled at creating a sense of eeriness and supernatural mystery. *The Listeners* (1912) established his reputation as a writer of delicately imaginative verse in the twin domains of childhood and

dreamland.

## Deland, Margaretta Wade (1857-1945)

US novelist. Her works, mainly set in a small Pennsylvania town and involving tormented characters, include *John Ward*, *Preacher* (1888), *The Awakening of Helen Richie* (1906), and *The Iron Woman* (1911).

## de la Roche, Mazo (1885-1961)

Canadian novelist. Experience of life in an area of southern Ontario characterized by large estates centred on big houses gave her the idea for the immensely popular 15-novel saga of the Whiteoaks of Jalna 1927-60, characterized by primitive passions seen against a background of nature and animal life and given unity by the brooding presence of the Anglo-Irish matriarch Adeline Whiteoak and her descendants.

## Delavrancea, Barbu (1858-1918)

#### pseudonym of Barbu Stefanescu

Romanian writer and dramatist. His short stories, collected in *Sultanica* (1885) and *Parazitii/Parasites* (1893), reflect contemporary Romanian society, which he regarded as decadent and parasitic. His best-known work, the novel *Hagi Tudosi* (1903), depicts the moral degeneration of a miser. His dramas are based on Romanian history.

## Deledda, Grazia (1875-1936)

Italian novelist. Her novels describe with sympathy the life of the peasants of her native Sardinia. Common themes are the family in decadence and the preoccupation with, and expiation of, sin. A fatalistic and religious atmosphere pervades *Canne al vento* (1913). She was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1926.

Among her other novels are *Dopo il divorzio/After the Divorce* (1902), *Elias Portolu* (1903), and *La madre/The Mother* (1920).

## DeLillo, Don (1936-)

US novelist. His dark and highly complex novels examine images of American

culture, power, conspiracy, and obsession. They include *Americana* (1971), *White Noise* (1985, National Book Award) <u>Libra</u> (1988), *Mao II* (1991), and *Cosmopolis* (2003). His novel *Underworld* (1998) earned him both the 1999 Jerusalem Prize and the 2000 William Dean Howells Medal.

## Dell, Ethel M(ary) (1881-1939)

British writer of romantic fiction. Her commercially successful novels usually included a hero who was ugly: *Way of an Eagle* (1912), *The Keeper of the Door* (1915), and *Storm Drift* (1930).

## Del Monte, Pietro (c. 1400-1457)

Venetian cleric, author of papalist, legal, and humanist works. During the Council of Basel, he wrote in support of papal power. Pope Eugenius IV employed him as a diplomat, sending him to England 1435-40 and France 1442-45, and appointed him bishop of Brescia in 1442. In England, Del Monte dedicated to Humfrey, Duke of Gloucester a humanist dialogue, *De Vitiorum Differencia* (mainly copied from Poggio's *De Avaritia*). In his later years he produced a voluminous *Repertorium* of canon and civil law.

#### Deloney, Thomas (c. 1543-1600)

English novelist and poet. His works portray the everyday life of middle-class citizens and artisans. The narratives are episodic in structure, but they employ humour and irony and often have a dramatic immediacy. *Jack of Newberie* (1597) tells of weavers, *The Gentle Craft* (1598) of shoemakers, and *Thomas of Reading* (1600) of clothiers.

## Deloria, Ella Cara (1889-1971)

#### born Anpetu Wastewin

Yankton Sioux scholar and writer. She worked with Franz Boas on a study of Siouan language. Her most important books are *Dakota Texts* (1932), *Speaking of Indians* (book), and the novel *Waterlily* (1988).

She was born in Wakpala, South Dakota and attended Columbia University where she carried out her linguistic research.

## del Rey, Lester (Ramon Felipe San Juan Mario Silvio Enrico) (1915-1993)

US writer and editor. After graduating from George Washington University, he moved to New York City and became a well-known and prolific fantasy and science fiction writer. He also taught fantasy fiction at New York University.

He was born in Clydesdale, Minnesota. He used many pen-names such as John Alvarez, Cameron Hall, Marion Henry, and Philip James. He also sometimes collaborated with other writers under such names as Edson McCann and Charles Satterfield. As editor of the del Rey imprint at Ballantine Books, he was credited with promoting a revival of fantasy and science fiction as a serious genre. A sampling of his own work is in *The Best of Lester del Rey* (1978).

## De Marchi (1851-1901)

Italian novelist. He adopted the narrative style of Alessandro <u>Manzoni</u> to portray the misery and the helplessness of the lower middle class. His best-known novel is *Demetrio Pianelli* (1890).

# de Morgan, William (Frend) (1839-1917)

English pottery designer and novelist. He set up his own factory in 1888 in London, producing tiles and pottery painted with flora and fauna in a style typical of the Arts and Crafts Movement. When he retired from the pottery industry, he began writing novels in the style of Charles Dickens. *Joseph Vance* (1906) was a great success; it was followed by six other novels.

## Denby, Edwin (1903-1983)

US dance critic and poet. He regarded himself as a poet, but earned his living as a dance critic, writing articles for magazines and reviews for newspapers. He published books on dance and four volumes of poetry including *Collected Poems* (1975).

He was born in China, the son of the US consul in Shanghai, and was educated at Harvard and the University of Vienna where he studied dance. He wrote for *Modern Music* and the *New York Herald Tribune*. He went freelance and wrote for such magazines as *Dance Magazine* and *Nation*, and was known for his striking metaphors and exacting reviews. An early supporter of George Balanchine's choreography, he wrote *Looking at the Dance* (1949) and *Dancers, Buildings and People in the Street* (1965). He committed suicide.

# Denham, John (1615-1669)

English poet. He was frequently linked with Edmund Waller in the century after his death as one of those who 'cleansed' the language of the excesses of the metaphysical style and helped establish the closed heroic couplet as the proper medium for the Augustan poets of the 18th century. He wrote two plays *The Sophy* (1642), a tragedy in five acts, and *The Famous Battle of the Catts in the Province of Ulster* (1668). He is chiefly remembered for his poem *Cooper's Hill* (1642), which describes the scenery of the Thames Valley at Egham, and was the model for Alexander Pope's *Windsor Forest* (1713).

# Dennis, John (1657-1734)

English critic and dramatist. He contributed to neoclassical literary theory in such works as *The Grounds of Criticism in Poetry* (1704). 'An Essay on the Genius and Writings of Shakespeare' (1712) also reveals some insight into Shakespeare's achievements. His adaptations of *The Merry Wives of Windsor* and *Coriolanus*, however, typify the excesses of the 18th century. His own plays were unsuccessful.

# Dent, Joseph Malaby (1849-1926)

English publisher. Together with the Dutton publishing house of New York, Dent founded the popular 'Everyman's Library' series of fiction, which aimed to provide working people with affordable literature for self-improvement. His illustrated books helped launch the careers of the artists Aubrey Beardsley and Arthur Rackham. Dent also became widely known as an educational publisher.

de Paola, Tomi (1934-)

#### born Thomas Anthony de Paola

US writer and illustrator. After graduation, he started as a freelance designer, illustrator, and writer. He is known for his books for young readers, such as *Helga's Dowry* (1977) and *Pancakes for Breakfast* (1978), which he illustrated as well as wrote.

He was born in Meriden, Connecticut and attended the Pratt Institute, New York, and the California College of Arts and Crafts. He settled in New London, New Hampshire.

# De Quincey, Thomas (1785-1859)

English writer. His works include *Confessions of an English Opium-Eater* (1821) and the essays 'On the Knocking at the Gate in Macbeth' (1825) and 'On Murder Considered as One of the Fine Arts' (in three parts, 1827, 1839, and 1854). He was a friend of the poets William <u>Wordsworth</u> and Samuel Taylor <u>Coleridge</u>, and his work had a powerful influence on Charles Baudelaire and Edgar Allan Poe, among others.

De Quincey is outstanding as a stylist, consciously imitating the mannered prose of the 17th century. In the essays 'Suspiria de Profundis' (1845) and 'The English Mail Coach' (1849), he began a psychological study of dreaming, examining how childhood experiences can through symbols in dreams affect the dreamer's personality. In this way he gave lasting expression to the fleeting pictures of his usually macabre dreams, and it could be said that he explored the subconscious before it was formally discovered.

## De Roberto, Federico (1861-1927)

Italian novelist. His *I vicere/The Viceroys* (1894) is a powerful portrayal of the Sicilian aristocracy during and immediately after the Risorgimento (Italian unification movement).

## Déry, Tibor (1896-1977)

Hungarian writer. The influence of surrealism is evident in his works. A spirit of philanthropic socialism underlies his major novels *Szemtöl szembe/Face to Face* (1945) and *A befejezetlen mondat/The Unfinished Sentence* (1947).

Déry was born in Budapest. He was imprisoned in 1957 for supporting the Hungarian uprising of the previous year. His autobiography *Itélet nincs/There Is No Judgement* appeared in 1969.

## Derzhavin, Gavrila Romanovich (1743-1816)

Russian poet and politician. His poetic style combined innovative language, daring imagery, and a mix of conversational and elevated registers, as in the philosophical ode 'Bog/God' (1784). He was a prominent literary figure in St Petersburg, and was briefly minister of justice under Alexander I.

A soldier and civil servant, Derzhavin won the patronage of Catherine the Great with his poem 'Oda k Felitse/Ode to Felicia' (1782), which was addressed to her. He served for a time as a provincial governor. Derzhavin's sensual and idealistic lyric

verse, such as 'Vodopad/The Waterfall' (1791-94), assures his position as one of Russia's most important and original 18th-century poets.

## Desai, Anita (1937-)

#### born Anita Mazumdar

Indian novelist. Her calm, sensitive, and often humorous style is much admired. Her early novels concentrate on the internal workings of the mind, often the mind of a woman trying to make time and a place for herself in Indian society. She has sometimes been accused of being a 'subjective writer' - one who does not place their characters in the wider world - but such accusations dismiss the importance of women's struggles in a male-dominated society.

Desai was born in Mussoorie, Uttar Pradesh, India. Her father was Bengali and her mother German. She married soon after her graduation from Delhi University in 1957 and her first novels were written while her children were small. She won international fame and popularity with *Fire on the Mountain* (1977) and *Clear Light of Day* (1980) and with the imaginative stories of the tension within families in *Games at Twilight* (1978). *Clear Light of Day, In Custody* (1984), and *Fasting, Feasting* (1999) were shortlisted for the Booker Prize. She won the Guardian Award for Children's Fiction in 1982 for *The Village by the Sea*.

#### De Sanctis, Francesco (1817-1883)

Italian critic and educationalist. His *Saggi Critici* (1863-67) and *Storia della letteratura italiana* (1872) established him as Italy's most important 19th-century critic.

Exiled from Naples for his anti-Bourbon activities, he became professor of Italian literature at Zürich Polytechnic, Switzerland, 1856 and, after the unification of Italy, was professor of comparative literature at Naples University. A successful teacher, he was deeply concerned with educational reforms, which he promoted when he was appointed minister of education in 1861.

## Deschamps, Eustache (c. 1346-c. 1406)

French poet. He was the author of more than 1,000 ballades, the epic poem *Miroir de mariage/The Mirror of Marriage*, an attack on women, and a prose work on the art of poetry.

# Deshoulières, Madame Antoinette Du Ligier de la Garde (1638-1694)

French poet. Her beauty and wit made her a prominent figure at the court of Louis XIV, and she was the centre of a circle of the most eminent literary figures of her time. She wrote odes, ballades, madrigals, and idylls.

## Desmarets de Saint-Sorlin, Jean (1595-1676)

French writer. He was one of the first members of the French Academy. His many works include the romance *Ariane* (1632), comedies, of which the best known is *Les Visionnaires/The Visionaries* (1637), and tragedies, including *Aspasie* and *Scipion l'africain/Scipio the African*. In the debate between the ancients and moderns he took the side of the moderns.

## Desnos, Robert (1900-1945)

French poet. One of the early surrealists, his poetry includes *Corps et biens* (1930), *Etat de veille* (1943), and *Calixto* (1953). He also published volumes of poetic prose, *La Liberté ou l'amour* (1927), *Deuil pour deuil* (1944), and the posthumous *La Rue de la Gaîté* (1947).

#### Des Périers, Bonaventure (c. 1510-c. 1544)

French writer and humanist. He is remembered for two works: his controversial *Cymbalum Mundi* (1537), a satirical attack on Christianity in the form of four allegorical dialogues, which was banned soon after publication, and *Nouvelles récréations et joyeux devis*, a collection of short stories providing a lively picture of 16th-century society, published posthumously in 1558.

## Desportes, Philippe (1546-1606)

French poet. He was court poet to Henry III. His poems include *Premières oeuvres/ First Works* (1573) and metrical versions of the Psalms. His love poetry, harmonious though conventional, reflects a revival of the style of the Italian poet <u>Petrarch</u>.

## De Tabley, John Byrne, Leicester Warren, Baron De Tabley (1835-1895)

English poet. He published several volumes of verse 1859-62 and 1863-68 (under the pseudonyms of George F Preston and William Lancaster), which were remarkable for their grace and refinement. They were followed by *Philoctetes* 1866, which fully illustrates his classical learning. *The Soldier of Fortune* (1876), a drama, met with a cold reception; a selection of *Poems Dramatic and Lyrical* appeared 1893-95.

## detective fiction

genre of novel or short story in which a mystery is solved mainly by the action of a professional or amateur detective. Where the mystery to be solved concerns a crime, the work may be called <u>crime fiction</u>. The traditional formula for the detective story starts with a seemingly irresolvable mystery, typically a murder, features the astute, often unconventional detective, a wrongly accused suspect to whom the circumstantial evidence points, and concludes with a startling or unexpected solution to the mystery, during which the detective explains how he or she solved the mystery.

The earliest work of detective fiction as understood today was 'The Murders in the Rue Morgue' (1841) by Edgar Allan <u>Poe</u>, and his detective Dupin became the model for those who solved crimes by deduction from a series of clues. The first English literary approach to detective fiction was made by Wilkie <u>Collins</u> in *Poor Miss Finch* (1872) and *The Law and the Lady* (1875). Arthur Conan <u>Doyle</u> created perhaps the most popular fictional sleuth, Sherlock Holmes, who first appeared in *A Study in Scarlet* (1887). The 'golden age' of the genre was the period from the 1920s to the 1940s, when many fictional detectives became household names. Leading writers were Agatha <u>Christie</u> (creator of Hercule Poirot and Miss Marple), Dorothy L <u>Sayers</u> (whose works feature Lord Peter Wimsey), Georges <u>Simenon</u> (who created Inspector Jules Maigret), and Margery <u>Allingham</u>.

Types of detective fiction include the **police procedural**, where the mystery is solved by detailed police work, as in the work of Swedish writers Maj Sjowall and Per Wahloo; the inverted novel, where the identity of the criminal is known from the beginning and only the method or the motive remains to be discovered, as in Malice Aforethought (1931) by Francis Iles; and the 'hard-boiled school' of private investigators begun by Raymond Chandler and Dashiell Hammett, which became known for its social realism and explicit violence. More recently, the form and traditions of the genre have been used as a framework within which to explore other concerns, as in Innocent Blood (1980) and A Taste for Death (1986) by P D James, The Name of the Rose (1983) by Umberto Eco, and the works of many women writers who explore feminist ideas, as in *Murder in the Collective* (1984) by Barbara Wilson. There has also been a great deal of interest in themed detective writing, often using a Roman or medieval setting, as seen in the work of Agatha Christie, Georgette Heyer, and Ellis Peters. Ruth <u>Rendell</u> has contributed significantly to the genre, writing more than a dozen novels of police procedure featuring Reginold Wexford and his ponderous associate Mike Burden. Novel approaches to detective fiction include Marion Mainwaring's Murder in Pastiche (1955), written in the styles of nine famous writers, and Dennis Wheatley's Murder Off Miami (1936), a dossier containing real clues such as photographs, ticket stubs, and hairpins for the reader

to use in solving the mystery; the solution was in a closed envelope at the back of the book.

Many works of this genre have been adapted to cinema and television with great success.

#### Deutsch, Babette (1895-1982)

US poet and writer. As well as having an academic career, she translated Russian poetry, and worked as an editor, critic, and writer of adult and juvenile fiction. Her well-received poetry was published in *The Collected Poems of Babette Deutsch* (1969).

She was born in New York City, studied at Barnard College at Columbia University, New York, and lectured at the New School for Social Research, Columbia University, and at many other institutions.

#### Deutsch, Niklaus Manuel (c. 1484-1530)

Swiss artist, writer, and religious reformer. Many of his works dwell on the morbid subjects of ghosts and death, as in the case of his best work *The Dance of Death*, painted for the Dominican monastery at Berne (destroyed in 1660, it is now known only through copies). He popularized many of the concepts of the Italian Renaissance in northern Europe. He was an active supporter of the Reformation and wrote songs, plays, and treatises in its support.

#### De Vere, Aubrey (1788-1846)

#### 2nd Baronet De Vere

Irish poet. Born at the family estate of Curragh Chase, County Limerick, he was educated at Harrow, England, and was later noted as a reforming landlord. The patriotic *The Lamentations of Ireland* (1823) and his sonnets in *Songs of Faith* (1842) were praised by William Wordsworth as 'the most perfect of our age'. His son Aubrey <u>De Vere</u> appended a memoir to the verse drama *Mary Tudor* (1884).

## De Vere, Aubrey Thomas (1814-1902)

Irish poet. De Vere was born at Curragh Chase, County Limerick, and educated at Trinity College, Dublin. His later verse was inspired by Irish themes; his *Innisfail* (1863) was a catalogue of the woes of Ireland and *The Foray of Queen Maeve* (1882)

retold legends of Ireland's heroic age. Besides poems, he also wrote prose concerning Ireland's wrongs. He was the son of the poet Aubrey <u>De Vere</u>.

De Vere published *The Waldenses, or the Fall of Rora* (1842) and in the following year issued a companion volume, *The Search after Proserpine, Recollections of Greece and other Poems. English Misrule and Irish Misdeeds* (1848) was his chief prose work; *Ireland and Proportional Representation* (1885) the last. He published his *Recollections* (1897).

## Devlin, Denis (1908-1959)

Irish writer and diplomat. Born in Greenock, Scotland, of Irish parents, he was educated at University College, Dublin, in Munich, Germany, and at the Sorbonne, Paris. Devlin's verse combines a delicate interweaving of vocalic and consonantal echoes, partly derived from Gaelic poetry, and an awareness of the varieties of European poetic tradition. His *Collected Poems* (1964) significantly extended the limits of modern Irish poetry.

Earlier works include *First Poems* (1930), *Intercessions* (1937), and *Lough Derg and Other Poems* (1946).

Dewey, Melvil (1851-1931)

US librarian. In 1876, he devised the Dewey decimal system of classification for accessing, storing, and retrieving books, widely used in libraries. The system uses the numbers 000 to 999 to designate the major fields of knowledge, then breaks these down into more specific subjects by the use of decimals.

Dewey founded the American Library Association in 1876 and the first school of library science, at Columbia University, in 1887.

#### Dexter, Colin (1930-)

English author of best-selling detective fiction and creator of Inspector Morse, who first appeared in the book *Last Bus to Woodstock* (1975) and later became the central character in a popular television series 1987-2000, starring John Thaw.

Dexter's other novels include Last Seen Wearing (1976), The Silent World of Nicholas Quinn (1977), Service of All the Dead (1979), The Dead of Jericho (1981), The Riddle of the Third Mile (1983), The Wench is Dead (1989), The Way Through the Woods (1992), and Death is Now My Neighbour (1996). The 13th, and final, novel in the Inspector Morse series was The Remorseful Day (1999). He has won several Crime Writers' Association awards for his fiction, and in 2000 was awarded an OBE

for his services to literature.

# Diable boîteux, Le

see diablo cojuelo, El.

# diablo cojuelo, El

#### The Lame Devil

Spanish satirical novel in the <u>picaresque</u> tradition by Luis Velez de Guevara (1579-1644), derived from Jewish legend. It was first published in 1641 and later adapted by Alain-René <u>Le Sage</u> as *Le Diable boîteux* (1707). The lame devil exposes hypocrisy and social evils to his companion Cleofás as they fly over the rooftops.

## dialogue

conversation between two or more people. Dialogue is direct speech, so it is represented in writing as a series of quotations, using quotation marks or, in dramatic dialogue, the characters' names followed by their speeches.

## Dial, The

US magazine of transcendentalism 1840-44, founded in Boston by several of the transcendentalist group, including Margaret Fuller (1810-1850) and Ralph Waldo Emerson, its first and second editors respectively. Publishing Henry Thoreau and other major essayists and poets, it had great intellectual influence. Several later magazines used the same title. *The Dial* of the 1920s published modern poetry and criticism under Marianne Moore's editorship.

## Diana, La

Spanish pastoral romance by Jorge de <u>Montemayor</u> published in 1559. The meandering story, with passages of rich descriptive detail, involves an enchantress and magicians, a magic potion, and a number of other complications, marvels, and relationships. Love is portrayed as irrational and painful, but ennobling. In England it influenced *Arcadia* by <u>Sidney</u>.

A prose narrative, with interspersed lyrics, it concerns the love of Sereno for Diana, who is married to Delio. It was an immense success, especially among the courtly audiences previously devoted to the romances of chivalry.

#### diary

informal record of day-to-day events, observations, or reflections, usually not intended for a general readership. One of the earliest diaries still in existence is that of a Japanese noblewoman, the *Kagero Nikki* (954-974), and the earliest known diary in English is that of Edward VI (ruled 1547-53). Notable diaries include those of English writer Samuel <u>Pepys</u> and German Jewish girl Anne <u>Frank</u>.

The English writer John <u>Evelyn</u>, the English Quaker George Fox, and 20th-century French writer André <u>Gide</u> and New Zealand writer Katherine <u>Mansfield</u> were also diarists.

# Diat, Louis Felix (1885-1957)

French-born US chef and author. He trained at the Paris and London Ritz Hotels before going to the New York Ritz-Carlton Hotel. There, he oversaw the ambitious French cuisine that the restaurant was renowned for and he popularized French cooking in books and magazines.

He was born in Montmarault, France. Known as 'Monsieur Louis', he created vichyssoise during his time at the Ritz-Carlton. His best known cookbook is *Cooking à la Ritz* (1941).

## Díaz del Castillo, Bernal (c. 1492-c. 1581)

Spanish soldier and chronicler. He arrived in the New World in 1514 with conquistador Pedro Arias de Ávila (c. 1440-1531) and took part in the exploration of the Gulf coast of Mexico in 1517 and 1518. He served as a common soldier under Pedro de Alvarado during the conquest of Mexico, and is known for his *Historia verdadera de la conquista de la Nueva España/True Account of the History of New Spain*.

# Dick, Philip K(endred) (1928-1982)

US science-fiction writer. His works often deal with religion and the subjectivity of reality. His protagonists are often alienated individuals struggling to retain their integrity in a technologically dominated world. His novels include *The Man in the* 

High Castle (1962), The Simulacra (1964), and Do Androids Dream of Electric Sheep? (1968; filmed as Blade Runner 1982).

## Dickens, Charles (John Huffam) (1812-1870)

English novelist. He is enduringly popular for his memorable characters and his portrayal of the social evils of Victorian England. In 1836 he published the first number of the *Pickwick Papers*, followed by *Oliver Twist* (1837), the first of his 'reforming' novels; *Nicholas Nickleby* (1838), *The Old Curiosity Shop* (1840), *Barnaby Rudge* (1841); and *David Copperfield* (1850). Among his later books are *A Tale of Two Cities* (1859) and *Great Expectations* (1861). All his novels were written as serials.

Dickens was born in Portsea, Hampshire, and received little formal education. A short period spent working in a blacking factory in south London, while his father was imprisoned for debt in Marshalsea prison during 1824, was followed by three years in a private school. In 1827 he became a lawyer's clerk, and then after four years a reporter for the *Morning Chronicle*, to which he contributed the *Sketches by Boz*. In 1836 he married Catherine Hogarth (1815-79).

The *Pickwick Papers* were originally intended merely as an accompaniment to a series of sporting illustrations, but the adventures of Pickwick outgrew their setting and established Dickens's reputation. In 1842 he visited the USA, where he was welcomed as a celebrity. On his return home, he satirized US democracy in *Martin Chuzzlewit* (1844). In 1843 he published the first of his Christmas books, *A Christmas Carol. Dombey and Son* (1848) was largely written abroad. *David Copperfield*, his most popular novel and his own favourite, contains many autobiographical incidents and characters; Mr Micawber is usually recognized as a sketch of his father. Dickens launched the weekly magazine *Household Words* in 1850, reorganizing it in 1859 as *All the Year Round*; many of his later stories were published serially in these periodicals. In 1858 he began giving public readings from his novels, which proved such a success that he was invited to make a second US tour 1867-68.

Among his later novels are *Bleak House* (1853), *Hard Times* (1854), *Little Dorrit* (1857), and *Our Mutual Friend* (1865). *Edwin Drood*, a mystery story influenced by the style of his friend, English author Wilkie <u>Collins</u>, was left incomplete on his death.

## Dickens, Monica (Enid) (1915-1992)

English writer. Her first books were humorous accounts of her experiences in various jobs, beginning as a cook (*One Pair of Hands*, 1939); she went on to become a novelist. She was a great-granddaughter of Charles Dickens.

Her first novel, *Mariana*, was published in 1940. In the early years of World War II she worked as a hospital nurse and then later as a fitter in a factory producing

aircraft spare parts. Her experiences again provided material for her next books, *One Pair of Feet* (1942), *The Fancy* (1943), and *Thursday Afternoons* (1945), the latter two attracting much praise. A close friend of the Samaritans' founder, Chad Varah, she founded the Samaritans in the USA.

## Dickey, James Lafayette (1923-1997)

US poet, critic, and novelist. His fiction deals mainly with guilt arising from acts of individual or collective cruelty and the struggle for survival. His powerful best-seller *Deliverance* (1970; filmed 1972) is a menacing thriller about four men canoeing down a dangerous river. His poetry, initially conservative, turned to more open forms as in *The Central Motion: Poems 1968-1978* (1979). His non-fiction *To the White Sea* was published in 1994.

# Dickinson, Emily Elizabeth (1830-1886)

US poet. She wrote most of her poetry between 1850 and the late 1860s and was particularly prolific during the Civil War years. She experimented with poetic rhythms, rhymes, and forms, as well as language and syntax. Her work is characterized by a wit and boldness that seem to contrast sharply with the reclusive life she led. Very few of her many short, mystical poems were published during her lifetime, and her work became well known only in the 20th century. The first collection of her poetry, *Poems by Emily Dickinson*, was published in 1890.

Born in Amherst, Massachusetts, she lived there in near seclusion and spent most of her adult life caring for her invalid mother. However, Dickinson also carried on lengthy correspondences with a number of friends and acquaintances, including a clergyman, Charles Wadsworth, and Samuel Bowles. Many of her letters are extraordinary artistic achievements in themselves, full of cryptic literary allusions; in some cases she used a fully-developed code based on a novel by English writer Charles <u>Dickens</u>. In 1859 she had begun to keep systematic copies of her verse and later a journalist, Thomas Wentworth Higginson, encouraged her writing. To almost everyone else it remained a secret. After Dickinson's death a collection of manuscripts was discovered by her sister, and some, according to her own orders, were destroyed.

## Dickinson, Goldsworthy Lowes (1862-1932)

English writer and intellectual. He was a lecturer at the London School of Economics and Political Science. His works include *The Greek View of Life* (1896), *The European Anarchy* (1916), *War: Its Nature, Cause and Cure* (1923), and *After Two Thousand Years* (1930).

## Dickson, Carter

Pseudonym of US crime writer John Dickson Carr.

# Didion, Joan (1934-)

US author and journalist. She is known for her terse yet eloquent views of modern American society, especially California, where she grew up. Her sharp, culturally evocative writing includes the novel *A Book of Common Prayer* (1970) and the essays of *The White Album* (1979).

Her other works include the essays *Slouching toward Bethlehem* (1968) and the novels *Run River* (1963), *Play It As It Lays* (1970), and *Democracy* (1984), which depict the cultural disintegration of modern life.

She reported on current events in *Salvador* (1983) and the state of affairs in the city in *Miami* (1987).

## di Donato, Pietro (1911-1992)

US writer. His semi-autobiographical novel, *Christ in Concrete* (1939), brought him instant fame. His subsequent fiction, mostly naturalistic portrayals of the hard lives of Italian working-class immigrants in the USA, never gained the same response as his earlier book.

He was born in West Hoboken, New Jersey. He wrote *Three Circles of Light* in 1960 and *The Penitent* in 1962.

## Diego, José de (1866-1918)

Puerto Rican-born poet and public official. He founded Puerto Rico's Autonomist Party and co-founded its Unionist Party. He was president of the House of Delegates, Puerto Rico's first legislative body under American rule, later becoming an advocate of independence.

He was born in Aguadilla, Puerto Rico. At the age of 17, he was imprisoned for political verses he wrote while studying in Spain. Works such as 'A Laura' and 'Postuma' won him a lasting reputation as Puerto Rico's finest love poet.

French poet. He was a member of the group *Les <u>Parnassiens</u>*. He is chiefly noted for the following works: *Poèmes et poésies/Poems and Poetry* (1864), *Lèvres closes/ Closed Lips* (1867), *Les Paroles d'un vaincu/The Words of a Defeated Man* (1871), and *Les Amants/The Lovers* (1879).

## Diggelmann, Walter Matthias (1927-1979)

Swiss writer. His books furiously attack the Swiss establishment, whose guilt and shame he endeavoured to arouse by suggesting complicity in World War II. *Die Hinterlassenschaft/The Inheritance* (1965) is a powerful polemical novel documenting the Swiss attitude to the German refugee issue in the 1930s.

Other novels include *Freispruch für Isidor Ruge* (1967) and *Die Vergnügungsfahrt* (1969).

# Dilke, Charles Wentworth (1789-1864)

English journalist and critic; editor and proprietor of the literary journal *Athenaeum* from 1830-46, and editor of the *Daily News* from 1846-49.

#### dime novel

melodramatic paperback novel of a series started in the USA in the 1850s, published by Beadle and Adams of New York, which frequently dealt with Deadwood Dick and his frontier adventures. Authors included Edward L Wheeler, E Z C Judson, Prentiss Ingraham, and J R Coryell. The 'Nick Carter' Library added detective stories to the genre. Dime novels attained massive sales and were popular with troops during the American Civil War and World War I.

Today's mass-market paperbacks continue to serve readers of Westerns, mystery, science fiction, romance, and detective fiction that grew out of the dime-novel concept.

## Dinarchus (c. 360-c. 290 вс)

Last of the ten Attic Orators, born at Corinth. As a metic (resident alien), he could not speak at Athens, but wrote speeches for others. In the affair of Harpalus he composed the extant prosecution speeches *Against Demosthenes*, *Against Aristogeiton*, and *Against Philocles*.

#### Dinesen, Isak

pen-name of Danish writer Karen Blixen.

# Ding Ling (1904-1986)

#### adopted name of Jiang Wei-Chih

Chinese novelist. Her works include *Wei Hu* (1930) and *The Sun Shines over the Sanggan River* (1951).

She was imprisoned by the Kuomintang (Guomindang, the nationalists under Jiang Jie Shi, or Chiang Kai-shek) in the 1930s, wrongly labelled as rightist and expelled from the Communist Party in 1957, imprisoned in the 1960s and intellectually ostracized for not keeping to Maoist literary rules; she was rehabilitated in 1979. Her husband was the writer Hu Yapin, executed by Jiang Jie Shi's police in 1931.

# Dio Chrysostom (c. 40-c. 115)

#### (Greek Chrysostomos, 'golden mouthed')

Greek sophist and rhetorician, maternal grandfather of Dio Cassius, born at Prusa in Bithynia. He settled in Rome, was banished by the emperor Domitian, but returned under Nerva. Eighty 'speeches' attributed to Dio Chrysostom have survived; they are really essays on political, moral, and philosophical subjects.

## Diodorus Siculus (lived 1st century BC)

Greek historian. His *Bibliotheca Historica* consisted of 40 books in three sections: it covered the period from before the Trojan War to Julius Caesar's Gallic campaigns. Only books 1-5 and 11-20 have survived complete, the rest only in fragments and excerpts.

Diodorus Siculus was born at Agyrium, Sicily. He cobbled his work together by pillaging earlier writers. He was quite uncritical, and his value as a historical source is accordingly varied and unreliable, depending on the quality of the source he was following at the time.

Greek writer. He was the author of an important compilation of anecdotes and quotations from the ancient Greek philosophers. It is the sole source of information we have about many of the philosophers it covers.

#### Dionysius of Halicarnassus (lived 1st century BC)

Greek critic and historian, who settled in Rome 30 BC and wrote 20 books on the early history of Rome, ten of which are extant. He also wrote on rhetoric (prose style).

# Dionysius Periegetes (lived 2nd or 3rd century)

Greek author. His 'Perigesis tes Oikoumenes/Description of the World' in 1,186 hexameter verses was a popular school book in ancient times. It was translated into Latin by Avienus.

#### dirge

#### (Latin *Dirige Domine*, from the Office for the Dead, a funeral psalm.)

song of lamentation for the dead. A poem of mourning is usually called an elegy.

# Disch, Thomas M(ichael) (1940-)

US writer and poet. A talented writer in a range of genres, he is best known for his highly original science fiction novels, including *The Genocides* (1965), *Camp Concentration* (1968), and *334* (1972).

In the 1980s he wrote a series of horror novels set in Minneapolis, Minnesota. He published the non-fiction work *The Dreams Our Stuff Is Made Of*, in which he examines the pervasive influence of science fiction, in 1998.

#### Dispatches

book 1977 by US writer Michael <u>Herr</u>. A vivid novel of war reportage, it reveals the reality of fear and death behind the images of patriotism and heroism in America's involvement in the Vietnam War. It was the first powerful treatment of the subject.

# D'Israeli, Isaac (1766-1848)

English scholar and literary historian. He was the father of Benjamin Disraeli and author of *Curiosities of Literature* (1791-1834; in six volumes) and *The Literary Character* (1795).

Other works include *Calamities of Authors* (1812), *Quarrels of Authors* (1814), an *Inquiry into the Literary and Political Character of James I* (1816), and *Commentaries on the Life and Reign of Charles I* (1828-30).

# dissociation of sensibility

divorce between intellect and emotion. T S <u>Eliot</u> coined this phrase 1921 in an essay on the metaphysical poets of the 17th century. He suggested that Donne, Marvell, and their contemporaries 'feel their thought as immediately as the odour of a rose' whereas later poets disengage intellect from emotion.

## Divine Comedy, The

epic poem by <u>Dante</u> 1307-21, describing a journey through Hell, Purgatory, and Paradise. The poet Virgil is Dante's guide through Hell and Purgatory; to each of the three realms, or circles, Dante assigns historical and contemporary personages according to their moral (and also political) worth. In Paradise Dante finds his lifelong love, Beatrice. The poem makes great use of symbolism and allegory, and influenced many English writers including Milton, Byron, Shelley, and T S Eliot.

## Dixon, Franklin W

US novelist; see Edward L Stratemeyer.

## Dixon, Henry Hall (1822-1870)

English sporting writer. Using the pseudonym 'the Druid', he began to write for the *Sporting Magazine*, in which he published three novels: *The Post and the Paddock* (1856), *Silk and Scarlet* (1859), and *Scott and Sebright* (1862). Other writings were *Field and Fern* (1865), an account of the herds and flocks of Scotland; *Saddle and Sirloin* (1870), an account of those of England, and *The Law of the Farm* (1858), a legal treatise.

#### Dixon, Richard Watson (1833-1900)

English writer and cleric. His verse includes *Historical Odes* (1864) and *Lyrical Poems* (1887), but his greatest work was his *History of the Church of England from the Abolition of the Roman Jurisdiction* (1878-1902).

# Dixon, William Hepworth (1821-1879)

English writer. His series of papers in the *Daily News* on 'The Literature of the Lower Orders' and 'London Prisons' attracted attention. In 1850 he published *John Howard and the Prison World of Europe*. A visit to the USA in 1866 was followed by *New America* (1867) and *Spiritual Wives* (1868).

# Djerassi, Carl (1923-)

Austrian-born US chemist, inventor, and writer. He became professor of chemistry at Stanford. He claims to have been the prime developer of the birth control pill, but the scientific community has disputed this. However, he did make important contributions to steroid research.

He was born in Vienna and became a refugee immigrant to the USA in 1939. It was while working for a little-known firm in Mexico City in 1951 that he was involved in the testing of the oral contraceptive - 'the pill' - that, for the first time, made birth control a simple matter for millions of women. Lately, he has taken up writing fiction and plays and, in 1998, took one of his plays to the Edinburgh Festival.

# Djilas, Milovan (1911-1995)

Yugoslav dissident and political writer. A close wartime colleague of Marshal Tito, he was dismissed from high office in 1954 and twice imprisoned 1956-61 and 1962-66 because of his advocacy of greater political pluralism and condemnation of the communist bureaucracy. He was formally rehabilitated in 1989.

## Dobell, Bertram (1842-1914)

English bookseller and editor, who is chiefly remembered for his friendship with the Scottish poet James Thomson, and for rediscovering and editing of the works of the 17th-century mystic Thomas Traherne.

# Dobell, Sydney Thompson (1824-1874)

English poet and critic. In 1850, under the pseudonym Sydney Yendys, he published *The Roman: A Dramatic Poem*, which met with great success. *Balder* appeared 1853, recounting the tale of a tortured poet who finally murdered his wife after she had gone insane following the death of their baby. Dobell also wrote *Sonnets on the War* (1855), in which he was assisted by the Scottish writer Alexander Smith (?1830-1867), and *England in Time of War* (1856), which contains the well-known refrain 'O Keith of Ravelston' in the ballad within 'A Nuptial Eve'.

# Dobie, J(ames) Frank (1888-1964)

US author and folklorist. He published 30 volumes of southwestern lore and history. He held a long tenure as a professor of English at the University of Texas and he won the presidential Medal of Freedom in 1964.

He was born in Live Oak County, Texas. He wrote *A Vaquero of the Brush Country* (1929) and *Cow People* (1964). His time at the University of Texas was marked by legendary political battles, frequent leaves, and finally dismissal.

# Döblin, Alfred (1878-1957)

German novelist. His *Berlin-Alexanderplatz* (1929) owes much to James Joyce's <u>Ulysses</u> in its minutely detailed depiction of the inner lives of a city's inhabitants, scrutinizing the social and psychological pressures exerted by the city; it is considered by many to be the finest 20th-century German novel. Other works include *November 1918: Eine deutsche Revolution/A German Revolution* (1939-50; published in four parts) about the formation of the Weimar Republic.

#### major works

After Berlin-Alexanderplatz he produced Babylonische Wanderung/Babylonian Migration 1934 and Pardon wird nicht gegeben/Men without Mercy 1935. His last important work, Hamlet oder Die lange Nacht nimmt ein Ende/Hamlet or The Long Night Never Ends 1956, powerfully observes the inner decay of a family and its relationship to a world of multilayered reality. The whole question of reality was of persistent concern to Döblin, accounting for the uneasy tension in his works between realistic rationalism and elements of mystical religion. Czech scholar, born in Slovakia. He codified the modern Czech language in his grammar of 1809, and helped to form the rules of Czech prosody (writing in verse). He wrote almost entirely in Latin and German.

Dobrovský laid the foundations for comparative Slavonic philology (the science of language) in *Institutiones linguae slavicae dialecti veteris* (1822).

# Dobson, Henry Austin (1840-1921)

English poet, critic, and biographer. He issued several books of verse, his best appearing as *Vignettes in Rhyme* (1873), *Proverbs in Porcelain* (1877), and *Old World Idylls* (1883). His collected poems were published in 1897. An authority on the Georgian period, he wrote monographs on Henry Fielding (1883), Richard Steele (1886), Oliver Goldsmith (1888), Horace Walpole (1890), William Hogarth (1891), Samuel Richardson (1902), and Fanny Burney (1903).

# Doctor Faustus, The Tragical History of

drama by Christopher <u>Marlowe</u>, published (in two versions) in 1604 and 1616, first performed in England in 1594. The play, based on a medieval legend, tells how Faustus surrenders his soul to the devil in return for 24 years of life and the services of Mephistopheles, who will grant his every wish.

# Doctorow, E(dgar) L(awrence) (1931-)

US novelist. He achieved critical and commercial success with his third novel, *The Book of Daniel* (1971), the story of the Rosenberg spy case told by their fictional son, which established Doctorow as an imaginative and experimental revisionist of American history. It was followed by his best-seller, *Ragtime* (1975; filmed 1981), which dramatized the Jazz Age.

His other novels include *Loon Lake* (1980), a montage narrative set in 1936; *World's Fair* (1985), about Jewish boyhood in 1930s New York; *Billy Bathgate* (1989), the story of a child apprenticed to the gangster Dutch Schultz; and *The Waterworks* (1994), a detective story set in New York. Later novels include *Waterworks* (2001) and *Reporting the Universe* (2003).

## Dr Zhivago

novel by the Russian writer Boris <u>Pasternak</u>, published (in Italy) 1957. The novel describes how Zhivago, a doctor and poet, becomes disillusioned with the Russian

revolution. It was banned in the USSR as a 'hostile act' and only published there in magazine form 1988.

#### Dodd, William (1729-1777)

English scholar, cleric and forger. Of his many books, a volume of selections called *The Beauties of Shakespeare* 1752 was reprinted many times. In 1763 he was appointed chaplain to the king. He was hanged for obtaining money by forgery.

## Dodge, Mary Elizabeth (1831-1905)

#### born Mary Mapes

US writer. She wrote the children's classic *Hans Brinker, or the Silver Skates* (1865), and from 1873 was editor of the influential magazine for children *St Nicholas*.

#### Dodgson, Charles Lutwidge

real name of English author Lewis Carroll.

#### Dodsley, Robert (1703-1764)

English writer and publisher. In 1735 his dramatic satire *The Toy Shop* was staged at Covent Garden Theatre, London. In the same year, with capital supplied by Alexander Pope and others, he set up in business as a bookseller. His ventures included the publication of works by Pope, Samuel Johnson, and Oliver Goldsmith. Dodsley produced a 12-volume *Select Collection of Old Plays* (1744).

#### Doherty, Berlie (1943-)

English novelist. She has written a wide variety of books in various genres for children and adults. Her published works include picture books, short stories, poetry, and the screenplay of her novel *White Peak Farm*, for which she was awarded the New York Film and TV Award. Her adult fantasy novels include *Children of Winter* (1985), in which children drawn back to the time of the Black Death must learn to survive.

Born in Liverpool, Doherty has worked in theatre, radio, television. Novels with contemporary themes include *Granny was a Buffer Girl* (1986; Carnegie Medal),

which explores the links between the generations of a family set against the history of their home city of Sheffield, *Dear Nobody* (1992; Carnegie Medal and Writers Guild Award), which deals with teenage pregnancy, and *Snake Stone* (1996), which centres on adoption and a teenager's search for connections with his past.

## Dolce, Lodovico (1508-1568)

Italian writer. He worked for the publishing house of Giolito in his native Venice. Besides translating or paraphrasing the classics, he produced (among other original pieces) *L'Aretino* (1557), a dialogue on painting.

#### dolce stil nuovo

#### (Italian 'sweet new style')

a style of Italian lyric verse written between about 1250 and 1300. It was characterized by musicality, the spiritualization of courtly love, and a mystical and philosophical strain in the analysis of love. It was expressed in sonnets, *canzoni*, and ballads. The style was developed by Guido Guinizelli (*c.* 1240-1276), Guido <u>Cavalcanti</u>, Gino da Pistoia (*c.* 1265-*c.* 1336), and above all Dante, whose lyrics in his *La vita nuova*, inspired by his love for Beatrice, are the finest examples of the *dolce stil nuovo*. It greatly influenced <u>Petrarch</u> and through him many later Italian poets.

## Doll's House, The

#### Norwegian *Et dukkehjem*

play by Henrik Ibsen, first produced in Norway 1879. It describes the blackmail of Nora, the sheltered wife of a successful lawyer, the revelation of her guilty secret to her husband, and the subsequent marital breakdown.

## Donaldson, Stephen Reeder (1947-)

US fantasy writer, author of two Thomas Covenant trilogies 1977-83. Other work includes his short-story collection *Daughter of Regals* (1984) and the Gap series (1990-96), a five-volume science-fiction adventure.

#### Italian Don Giovanni

character of Spanish legend, Don Juan Tenorio, supposed to have lived in the 14th century and notorious for his debauchery. Tirso de Molina, Molière, Mozart, Byron, and George Bernard Shaw have featured the legend in their works.

The prototype is found in the Spanish play *El burlador de Sevilla y convidado* (1630), attributed to Tirso de Molina. The story is that Don Juan, of the noble Tenorio family, is an abandoned profligate living in the days of Pedro the Cruel in Seville. When Ulloa thwarts Don Juan's schemes to seduce his daughter, he is stabbed by the dissolute lover. An atheist, Don Juan mockingly challenges a stone image of his victim to a banquet in his tomb. The outraged Ulloa comes to life, accepts, and then carries his murderer off to hell.

# Donleavy, J(ames) P(atrick) (1926-)

US-born Irish writer. His novels, which are about eccentrics, have a fierce comic energy. His picaresque masterpiece *The Ginger Man* (published in France in 1955) was banned in Ireland, the UK, and the USA until the 1960s. Later novels include *A Singular Man* (1963), *The Destinies of Darcy Dancer, Gentleman* (1977), *Leila: Further in the Life and Destinies of Darcy Dancer, Gentleman* (1983), *Are You Listening Rabbi Löw* (1987), *That Darcy, That Dancer, That Gentleman* (1994), and *Wrong Information is Being Given Out at Princeton* (1998).

Donleavy was born in New York, the son of Irish immigrants. He studied at Trinity College, Dublin, and became an Irish citizen in 1967. The controversial *The Ginger Man*, set in Dublin in the 1940s, is the story of Sebastian Dangerfield, a US expatriate; his later work *The History of the Ginger Man* (1994) is part autobiography, part literary history.

## Donne, John (1572-1631)

English poet, one of the <u>metaphysical poets</u>. His work consists of love poems, religious poems, verse satires, and sermons. His sermons rank him with the century's greatest orators, and his fervent poems of love and hate, violent, tender, or abusive, give him a unique position among English poets. A Roman Catholic in his youth, he converted to the Church of England and finally became dean of St Paul's Cathedral, London.

Donne was brought up in the Roman Catholic faith and went to Oxford at an early age to avoid taking the compulsory oath of supremacy at the age of 16. Before becoming a law student at Lincoln's Inn in 1592, he travelled in Europe. During his four years at the law courts he was notorious for his wit and reckless living, and it was probably around this time that he renounced Catholicism. In 1596 he sailed as a volunteer in an expedition against Spain with the Earl of Essex and Walter Raleigh,

and on his return became private secretary to Sir Thomas Egerton (*c*. 1540-1617), Keeper of the Seal. This appointment was ended by his secret marriage in 1601 to Ann More (died 1617), niece of Egerton's wife. They endured many years of poverty, made worse by the births, in rapid succession, of twelve children (of whom seven survived childhood). The more passionate and tender of his love poems were probably written to her.

With the accession of James I, Donne's fortune changed. In 1610 he made a bid for royal patronage with the prose work *Pseudo-Martyr* (a contribution to the disputes about the oath of supremacy and allegiance), and in 1611-13 with *Ignatius his Conclave* (an attack on the Jesuits), an *Elegy on Prince Henry*, and an *Epithalamium* for the marriage of Princess Elizabeth. In 1611 he travelled in Europe with Robert Drury, whose daughter he had already eulogized in the *First Anniversary*. In 1615 he was ordained in the Church of England, urged on by the King. In 1616 he became divinity reader of Lincoln's Inn with the responsibility of preaching there. From 1621 to his death he was dean of St Paul's, where he often preached before Charles I. He died of consumption and was buried in St Paul's.

## Don Quixote de la Mancha

satirical romance by the Spanish novelist Miguel de Cervantes, published in two parts (1605 and 1615). Don Quixote, a self-styled knight, embarks on a series of chivalric adventures accompanied by his servant Sancho Panza. Quixote's imagination leads him to see harmless objects as enemies to be fought, as in his tilting at windmills. English translators include Tobias Smollett (1775).

# Doolittle, Hilda (1886-1961)

#### pen-name HD

US poet. She went to Europe in 1911, and was associated with Ezra Pound and the English writer Richard <u>Aldington</u> (to whom she was married 1913-37) in founding the Imagist school of poetry (see <u>Imagism</u>), advocating simplicity, precision, and brevity. Her work includes the *Sea Garden* (1916) and *Helen in Egypt* (1961), as well as *End to Torment* (1958), a memoir of Ezra Pound.

## doppelgänger

(German 'double-goer') apparition of a living person, a person's double, or a guardian spirit. The German composer and writer E T A Hoffman wrote a short story called 'Die Doppelgänger' in 1821. English novelist Charles Williams (1886-1945) used the idea to great effect in his novel *Descent into HeII* (1937).

## Dorat (or Daurat), Jean (1508-1588)

French poet and classical scholar. He was the teacher of several members of *La* <u>*Pléiade*</u> and is sometimes counted a member of the group himself. As director of the Collège de Coqueret and professor at the Collège de France, he played an important part in stimulating the young humanists and introducing such writers as Pierre de Ronsard and Joachim <u>Du Bellay</u> to classical literature.

# Dorgeles, Roland. (1886-1973)

#### pseudonym of Roland Lecavele

French writer. In 1919 he published *Les Croix de bois/The Wooden Crosses*, a war novel, and *Le Cabaret de la belle femme/The Cabaret of the Beautiful Woman*, a volume of short stories. He then wrote several novels, travel books, and volumes of reminiscences, including *La Caravane sans chameaux/The Caravan without Camels* (1928), *Si c'etait vrai/If It Were True* (1934), and *Tout est à vendre/Everything for Sale* (1956).

#### Dorset

#### **1st Earl of Dorset**

title of English poet Thomas Sackville.

# Dos Passos, John Roderigo (1896-1970)

US author. He made his reputation with the war novels *One Man's Initiation* (1919) and *Three Soldiers* (1921). His major work is the trilogy *USA* (1930-36). An epic, panoramic view of US life through three decades, and inspired by a communist and anarchist historical approach, it used such innovative structural devices as the 'Newsreel', a collage of documentary information, and the 'Camera Eye', the novelist's own stream-of-consciousness.

His other works include *Manhattan Transfer* 1925, an expressionist montage novel of the modern city.

Dostoevsky, Fyodor Mihailovich (1821-1881)

Russian novelist. Remarkable for their profound psychological insight, Dostoevsky's novels have greatly influenced Russian writers, and since the beginning of the 20th century have been increasingly influential abroad. In 1849 he was sentenced to four years' hard labour in Siberia, followed by army service, for printing socialist propaganda. *The House of the Dead* (1861) recalls his prison experiences, followed by his major works *Crime and Punishment* (1866), *The Idiot* (1868-69), and *The Brothers Karamazov* (1879-80).

Born in Moscow, the son of a physician, Dostoevsky was for a short time an army officer. His first novel, Poor Folk, appeared in 1846. In 1849, during a period of intense tsarist censorship, he was arrested as a member of a free-thinking literary circle and sentenced to death. After a last-minute reprieve he was sent to the penal settlement at Omsk for four years, where the terrible conditions increased his epileptic tendency. Finally pardoned in 1859, he published the humorous Village of Stepanchikovo, The House of the Dead, and The Insulted and the Injured (1862). Meanwhile he had launched two unsuccessful liberal periodicals, in the second of which his *Letters from the Underworld* (1864) appeared. Compelled to work by pressure of debt, he quickly produced Crime and Punishment (1866) and The Gambler (1867), before fleeing the country to escape from his creditors. He then wrote The Idiot (in which the hero is an epileptic like himself), The Eternal Husband (1870), and *The Possessed* (1871-72). Returning to Russia in 1871, he again entered journalism and issued the personal miscellany Journal of an Author, in which he discussed contemporary problems. In 1875 he published A Raw Youth, but the great work of his last years is The Brothers Karamazov.

#### Double Indemnity

novel 1945 by US writer James M <u>Cain</u>. Narrated by insurance salesman, Walter Neff, the plot concerns a *femme fatale* Phyllis Nerdlinger, who entraps him into murdering her husband. The subsequent elaborate insurance fraud opens up a Pandora's box of self-destructive sexual desire, guilt, and suspicion. In 1944 it was turned into a key work of *film noir* by director Billy Wilder, who co-authored the screenplay with Raymond Chandler.

## Doughty, Charles Montagu (1843-1926)

English travel writer, author of *Travels in Arabia Deserta* (1888), an account of an astonishing and dangerous journey in an unusual literary style, written after two years in the Middle East searching for biblical relics. He was a role model for English soldier T E Lawrence ('Lawrence of Arabia'). Latterly he wrote epic poems of an experimental linguistic and metrical nature.

## Douglas, (George) Norman (1868-1952)

Austrian-born British novelist and travel writer. His travel books include *Siren Land* (1911) and *Old Calabria* (1915), dealing with Italy; his novel *South Wind* (1917) is set in his adopted island of Capri.

## Douglas, Alfred (Bruce), Lord Douglas (1870-1945)

English poet. He became closely associated in London with the Irish writer Oscar <u>Wilde</u>. Their relationship led to Wilde's conviction for homosexual activity, imprisonment, and early death, through the enmity of Douglas's father, the 8th Marquess of Queensberry. Douglas wrote the self-justificatory *Oscar Wilde and Myself* (1914) and the somewhat contradictory *Oscar Wilde, A Summing-Up* (1940).

## Douglas, Gavin (or Gawin) (c. 1475-1522)

Scottish poet. He translated into Scots Virgil's *Aeneid* (1513), including the thirteenth book added by Maffeo Vegio. He wrote the allegorical *The Palace of Honour* (*c.* 1501).

His language is more archaic than that of some of his predecessors, but Douglas had fire and a power of vivid description and his allegories are ingenious.

## Douglas, Keith Castellain (1920-1944)

English poet. During World War II he served as a tank commander in North Africa, where he wrote some of his finest poems, published after his death in *Alamein to Zem Zem* (1946). His *Collected Poems* were published in 1951. His poem 'Simplify Me When I'm Dead' is a powerfully moving vision of his own death.

Douglas attended Christ's Hospital school, Sussex, and then Blunden's, Oxford. Initially injured by a mine in North Africa, he returned to service and was killed in action in Normandy shortly after D-day.

## Douglas, Lloyd Cassel (1877-1951)

US novelist. Among his novels expressing selfnessness are *Magnificent Obsession* (1929) and *Invitation to Live* (1940). *The Robe* (1942) and *The Big Fisherman* (1949) are big novels of New Testament themes.

#### pseudonym of Anna Buchan

Scottish novelist. Her first novel, *Olivia in India* (1913), written after a visit to India, was followed by *The Setons* (1917), a picture of Glasgow suburban life. Other novels include *Penny Plain* (1920), *Priorsford* (1932), and *The House that is Our Own* (1940). She was the sister of the novelist John <u>Buchan</u>.

# Douglas-Home, William (1912-1992)

Scottish dramatist. He is noted for his comedies, which include *The Chiltern Hundreds* (1947), *The Secretary Bird* (1968), *Lloyd George Knew My Father* (1972), and *The Kingfisher* (1977). He was the younger brother of the politician Alec Douglas-Home.

As a captain in the Royal Armoured Corps during World War II, he disobeyed orders by refusing to take part in the bombardment of Le Havre because the citizens had not been evacuated. This led to a court martial and a year in prison, an experience upon which his first real success, *Now Barabbas* (1945), was based.

## Dove, Rita (1953-)

US poet and novelist. She joined the English faculty at the University of Virginia. Her poetry and her novels blend the lyrical and personal with the precise and the contemporary. She became the first black American poet laureate of the Library of Congress.

She was born in Akron, Ohio and became serious about poetry while attending Miami University, Ohio. She studied in Germany, then earned a Master of Fine Arts at the University of Iowa. She won a Pulitzer Prize for *Thomas and Beulah*. She also wrote her novels, such as *Through the Ivory Gate* (1992).

#### **Dove Cottage**

small house at Grasmere in the English Lake District where the poet William <u>Wordsworth</u> settled with his sister Dorothy in 1799, and later with his wife Mary Hutchinson in 1802. Wordsworth wrote much of his best work here, including 'Ode: Intimations of Immortality', 'Michael', and 'Resolution and Independence', before reluctantly moving to a larger house in 1808. It is now a museum with manuscripts, portraits, and other memorabilia.

#### Dowden, Edward (1843-1913)

Irish scholar and critic. He was an expert on Shakespeare, he published *Shakspeare: His Mind and Art* (1875) and *Shakspeare Primer* (1877). He also edited many of the plays. He was a close friend of the US poet Walt Whitman, and published some volumes of verse.

#### Downing, Major Jack

US journalist and writer; see Seba Smith.

# Dowson, Ernest Christopher (1867-1900)

English poet. He was one of the <u>Decadents</u> poets of the 1890s, and author of the lyric with the refrain 'I have been faithful to thee, Cynara! in my fashion'. His books of verse include *Dilemmas* (1895), *Verses* (1896), and *Poems* (1905). *The Pierrot of the Minute* (1897) is a poetic drama.

# Doyle, Arthur Conan (1859-1930)

Scottish writer. He created the detective Sherlock <u>Holmes</u> and his assistant Dr Watson, who first appeared in *A Study in Scarlet* (1887) and featured in a number of subsequent stories, including *The Hound of the Baskervilles* (1902). Among Doyle's other works is the fantasy adventure *The Lost World* (1912). In his later years he became a spiritualist and wrote a *History of Spiritualism* (1926).

Doyle was born in Edinburgh, qualified as a physician, and from 1882 to 1890 practised in Southsea. During the second South African War (or Boer War) he was senior physician of a field hospital. His *The Great Boer War* was published in 1900 and an influential pamphlet justifying the conflict, 'The War in South Africa', appeared in 1902. Doyle was knighted in 1902.

## Doyle, Roddy (1958-)

Irish novelist. His *Paddy Clarke Ha Ha Ha*, a novel about growing up in Ireland, written from the point of view of a ten-year-old boy, won the 1997 Booker Prize. Other works include *The Commitments* (1987; filmed in 1991), *The Snapper* (1990), *The Van* (1991), and *The Woman Who Walked into Doors* (1997), all of which chronicle life in contemporary working-class Dublin.

He was born in Dublin and educated at University College, Dublin. He moved into

historical fiction with *A Star Called Henry* (1999), which looks at one man's involvement in the 1916 Easter Rising. He published a biography of his parents in *Rory and Ita* (2002).

#### Drabble, Margaret (1939-)

English writer. Her novels portray contemporary life with toughness and sensitivity, often through the eyes of intelligent modern women. They include *The Millstone* (1965), *The Ice Age* (1977), *The Middle Ground* (1980), the trilogy *The Radiant Way* (1987), *A Natural Curiosity* (1989), and *The Gates of Ivory* (1991), and *The Witch of Exmoor* (1996).

## Drachmann, Holger Henrik Herholdt (1846-1908)

Danish poet and novelist. His finest work is his lyrical poetry, often dedicated to one of his many loves. He published his first volume, *Digte/Poems*, (1872), and his later verse includes *Daempede Melodier/Muted Tunes* (1875) and *Sangenes Bog/The Book of Songs* (1889). He also wrote numerous novels and stories of his travels as well as several melodramas.

#### Dracula

in the novel *Dracula* (1897) by Bram <u>Stoker</u>, the caped count who, as a vampire, drinks the blood of beautiful women. The original of Dracula is thought to have been Vlad Tepes, or Vlad the Impaler, ruler of medieval Wallachia, who used to impale his victims and then mock them.

## Drago, Luis María (1859-1921)

Argentine politician. As minister of foreign affairs under Julio A Roca, he objected to the blockade of Venezuelan ports in 1902 conducted by the UK, Italy, and Germany as a punitive measure for nonpayment of debt. He formulated the Drago Doctrine, which stated that public debt could not be used as an excuse for armed intervention in, or territorial occupation of, a state by European power. Although never universally adopted, his doctrine was influential in international law.

#### dramatic monologue

literary genre, usually of poetry, poem consisting of a speech by a single character,

in which his or her thoughts, character, and situation are revealed to the reader. It developed from the soliloquy, a monologue spoken in a play. It was a particularly popular poetical form in the 19th century. Examples include Robert Browning's 'My Last Duchess' (1842) and T S Eliot's 'Love Song of J Alfred Prufrock' (1917).

#### Draper, Elizabeth (1744-1778)

British woman to whom the novelist Laurence <u>Sterne</u> wrote letters. She was the wife of an official of the East India Company, and met Sterne on a visit to England in 1766. He fell in love with her, and described his feelings in the *Journal to Eliza* (first published 1904) and *Letters of Yorick to Eliza* (1773).

# Drayton, Michael (1563-1631)

English poet. He wrote historical poems, including *England's Heroical Epistles* (1597), and graceful pastorals and sonnets, including the sonnet sequence *Love's Idea*. His longest poetical work was the topographical survey of Great Britain, *Poly-Olbion* (1612-22), in 30 books.

# Dreiser, Theodore Herman Albert (1871-1945)

US writer. His works include the naturalist novels *Sister Carrie* (1900) and *An American Tragedy* (1925), based on the real-life crime of a young man, who in his drive to 'make good', drowns a shop assistant he has made pregnant. It was filmed as *A Place in the Sun* (1951).

Born in Terre Haute, Indiana, Dreiser was a journalist 1889-90 in Chicago and was editor of several magazines. His other novels include *The Financier* (1912), *The Titan* (1914), and *The Genius* (1915). *An American Tragedy* finally won him great popularity after years of publishing works that had been largely ignored. His other works range from autobiographical pieces to poems and short stories. Although his work is criticized for being technically unpolished, it is praised for its powerful realism and sincerity. In the 1930s he devoted much of his energy to the radical reform movement.

## Drieu la Rochelle, Pierre-Eugène (1893-1945)

French writer. He published novels, including *Le Feu follet/Will o' the Wisp* (1931), *Beloukia* (1936), *Rêveuse bourgeoisie* (1937), and *Gilles* (1939), as well as volumes of essays, many of them presenting his fascist political views, including *L'Europe contre les patries* (1931), and *Socialisme fasciste* (1934).

## Drinkwater, John (1882-1937)

English poet and dramatist. He was a prolific writer of lyrical and reflective verse, and also wrote many historical plays, including *Abraham Lincoln* (1918) and *Mary Stuart* (1921). His work had an important influence on the revival of serious drama.

## Droste-Hülshoff, Annette Elizabeth, Baroness von (1797-1848)

German poet. Although now considered one of the greatest German nature poets, she was unrecognized in her lifetime. Her book of nature poems *Heidebilder* (1844) is realistic in its exact description of the countryside. She was also preoccupied with the supernatural, as is shown by her cycle of religious poems *Das geistliche Jahr*, *nebst einem Anhang religiöser Gedichte* (1851).

# Drummond, William (1585-1649)

#### also known as Drummond of Hawthornden

Scottish poet. He was one of the first Scottish poets to use English, and his *Poems* (1614) also show the strong influence of European models. He has been called the Scottish Petrarch because of his passionate sonnets of 1616 inspired by the early death of his first love, Mary Cunningham.

## Drummond de Andrade, Carlos (1902-1987)

Brazilian writer. He is generally considered the greatest modern Brazilian poet, and was a prominent member of the modernist school. His verse, often seemingly casual, continually confounds the reader's expectations of the 'poetical'.

## Dryden, John (1631-1700)

English poet and dramatist. He is noted for his satirical verse and for his use of the heroic couplet. His poetry includes the verse satire *Absalom and Achitophel* (1681), *Annus Mirabilis* (1667), and 'A Song for St Cecilia's Day' (1687). Plays include the heroic drama *The Conquest of Granada* (1672), the comedy *Marriage à la Mode* (1673), and *All for Love* (1678), a reworking of Shakespeare's *Antony and Cleopatra*.

Dryden was born in Aldwinkle, Northamptonshire, and educated at Cambridge. In

1657 he moved to London, where he worked for the republican government of Oliver Cromwell. His stanzas commemorating the death of Cromwell appeared in 1659 and *Astraea Redux*, in honour of the Restoration, was published in 1660. He followed this with a panegyric (poem of praise) in honour of Charles II's coronation in 1661. Dryden's work reflects his changing political and religious allegiances, which were often influenced by popularity and acceptance. He was much involved in the intellectual spirit of the 'new age', being an early member of the Royal Society and committed to the society's ideal of making the language more clear and straightforward. He was one of the first to liken the reign of Charles II to that of the Roman emperor Augustus, from which the title of 'Augustan' has attached itself to the writings of Dryden's generation and that of their immediate successors. As a Roman Catholic convert under James II, lost the post of poet laureate (to which he had been appointed in 1668) after the Revolution of 1688.

## du Bellay, Joachim (c. 1522-1560)

French poet and prose writer. He published the great manifesto of the new school of French poetry, the <u>Pléiade</u>: Défense et illustration de la langue française/Defence and Illustration of the French Language (1549). He also wrote sonnets inspired by the Italian poet Petrarch and his meditations on the vanished glories of Rome, *Antiquités de Rome/Roman Antiquities* (1558), influenced English writers such as Edmund Spenser who translated some of his work. *Les Regrets/Regrets* (1558), a collection of sonnets, is his most characteristic work.

## Du Bos, Charles (1882-1939)

French writer and critic. His two main works are *Approximations* (1922-37; studies of European writers, including Blaise Pascal, Marcel Proust, Paul Valéry, Shakespeare, Shelley, Goethe, and Tolstoy) and his *Journal* (1946-57), published posthumously.

Among his other works are *Le Dialogue avec André Gide* (1929), *Byron et le besoin de la fatalité* (1929), *Du spirituel dans l'ordre littéraire* (1930), *François Mauriac et le problème du romancier catholique* (1933), and *Qu'est-ce que la littérature* (1940).

## Duclos, Charles Pinot (1704-1772)

French writer. He first wrote short stories and novels, including *Mme de Luz* (1741) and *Confessions du comte de*. (1742), but his *Histoire de Louis XI* (1745) was a more important work, and this was followed by *Considérations sur les moeurs de ce siècle* (1751).

## Dudintsev, Vladimir Dmitriyevich (1918-1998)

Soviet novelist. He wrote the remarkably frank *Not by Bread Alone* (1956), a depiction of Soviet bureaucracy and inefficiency. The authorities' campaign against the book forced the author into retreat from literary life. His only other major work was *White Coats* (1987).

# Duffy, Carol Ann (1955-)

Scottish poet. Her poems deal passionately with loss, betrayal, and love, and she brings to life domestic scenes from childhood and adolescence. She has won several awards, including first prize in the 1983 National Poetry Competition, the Scottish Arts Council Awards of Merit, for her first collection of poems, *Standing Female Nude* (1985), and her third collection, *The Other Country* (1990). In 1993 she received the Forward Poetry Prize and the Whitbread Poetry Award for her highly praised fourth collection of poems, *Mean Time*. She published her fifth collection, *The World's Wife*, in 1999.

Duffy juggles language to achieve surprising and interesting results. As well as writing her own poetry, she has edited collections of poems for children, including *I Wouldn't Thank You for a Valentine* (1992) and *Stopping for Death* (1996).

# Duffy, Charles Gavan (1816-1903)

Irish journalist, writer, and politician. Born in County Monaghan, and educated in both Catholic and Presbyterian schools, Duffy became active in 19th-century Irish nationalist movements, and co-founded the weekly political journal *The Nation* in 1842 with the poet Thomas <u>Davis</u> and John Blake Dillon. He was arrested in 1848 for his involvement in the Young Ireland rising, and in 1850 founded the Tenant League for land reform. In 1852 he was elected to Westminster as MP for New Ross, supporting the Independent Irish Party until its split in 1853. He subsequently emigrated to Australia in 1855, and became prime minister of Victoria in 1871, and later speaker of the House of Assembly.

Duffy published throughout his life, including the poetry collections *The Spirit of the Nation* (1843) and *The Ballad Poetry of Ireland* (1845), historical analyses such as *A Bird's Eye View of Irish History* (1882), and his memoirs. He was knighted in 1873 and served as the first president of the Irish Literary Society in London in 1892.

## Du Fu

another name for the Chinese poet Tu Fu.

# Duhamel, Georges (1884-1966)

French writer. *Civilisation* (1918), drawing on his experience as a surgeon in World War I, was awarded the <u>Prix Goncourt</u>, but it was for his later novels that he won most recognition. His masterpiece is the ten-volume *Chronique des Pasquier* (1933-41), in which he portrays his characters with a realism tempered by sensibility, humour, and sympathetic understanding.

## Dumas, Alexandre (1824-1895)

French author, known as Dumas *fils* (the son of Dumas *père*). He is remembered for the play *La Dame aux camélias/The Lady of the Camellias* (1852), based on his own novel, and the source of Verdi's opera *La Traviata*.

## Dumas, Alexandre (1802-1870)

French writer, known as Dumas *père* (the father). His popular historical romances were the reworked output of a 'fiction-factory' of collaborators. They include *Les Trois Mousquetaires/The Three Musketeers* (1844) and its sequels. He is best known for *Le Comte de Monte Cristo/The Count of Monte Cristo*, which appeared in 12 volumes (1845). His play *Henri III et sa cour/Henry III and His Court* (1829) established French romantic historical drama. Dumas *fils* was his son.

## Du Maurier, Daphne (1907-1989)

English novelist. Her romantic fiction includes *Jamaica Inn* (1936), *Rebecca* (1938), *Frenchman's Creek* (1942), and *My Cousin Rachel* (1951), and is set in Cornwall. Her work, though lacking in depth and original insights, is made compelling by her storytelling gift.

*Jamaica Inn, Rebecca*, and her short story *The Birds* were made into films by the English director Alfred Hitchcock. She was made a Dame of the British Empire in 1969.

## Du Maurier, George (Louis Palmella Busson) (1834-1896)

French-born British author and illustrator. He is remembered for the novel *Trilby* (1894), the story of a natural singer able to perform only under the hypnosis of Svengali, her tutor.

# Dumitriu, Petru (1924-)

Romanian novelist. A leading exponent of socialist realism in the 1950s, he won state prizes for his books. His novels include the family chronicle *Boierii/Family Jewels* (1956-57). After emigrating to the West in 1960, Dumitriu lived in Germany and wrote in French. He published the novel *Incognito* (1962) and a work of personal theology, *Au Dieu inconnu/To the unknown God* (1979).

# Dunbar, Paul Laurence (1872-1906)

US poet and novelist. The son of former slaves, he established his reputation with dialect poetry which was collected in *Lyrics of Lowly Life* (1896). His *Collected Poems* were published in 1993.

He also wrote four novels, including *The Uncalled* (1898) and *The Sport of the Gods* (1902).

## Dunbar, William (c. 1460-c. 1520)

Scottish poet at the court of James IV. His poems include a political allegory, *The Thrissil and the Rois*, written in 1503, celebrating James IV's marriage with Margaret Tudor, and the lament with the refrain 'Timor mortis conturbat me' ('Fear of death confounds me'), printed in 1508.

Dunbar has strength, swiftness, and humour in his writing. His descriptive touch is vivid and full of colour and he is a virtuoso of language and metre.

## Duncan, Robert (Edward) (1919-1988)

US poet. A key figure in the San Francisco Renaissance of the 1950s (other poets include Kenneth Rexroth (1905-1982), Gary <u>Snyder</u>, and Philip Lamantia (1927-), he was also, after meeting the poet Charles Olson, an important member of the <u>Black</u> <u>Mountain poets</u>. His first major collection, *The Opening of the Field* (1960), was influenced by Walt Whitman, Ezra Pound, William Carlos Williams, and Olson. His politically radical and formally open-ended sequence 'Passages' appeared in *Roots and Branches* (1964), *Bending the Bow* (1968), and *Ground Work: Before the War* (1984).

## Duncan de Cerisantis, Mark (died 1648)

Swedish writer of Latin verse. His 'Carmen Gratulatorium' is a poem on the marriage of Charles I of England and Henrietta Maria 1625.

## Dunmore, Helen (1952-)

English novelist, children's writer, short-story writer, and poet. Her novel A Spell of Winter won the inaugural <u>Orange Prize</u> in 1996. Her other novels include Zennor in the Darkness (1994), Burning Bright (1995), Talking to the Dead (1997), Your Blue-Eyed Boy (1999), and Mourning Ruby.

Her novel *The Siege* (2001) was shortlisted for the 2001 Booker Prize, the 2001 Whitbread Award, and the 2001 Orange Prize.

# Dunn, Douglas (Eaglesham) (1942-)

Scottish poet and short-story writer. His first book of verse, *Terry Street* (1969), mainly reflected working-class life. *Elegies* (1985), recalling his wife's death from cancer in 1981, won the Whitbread Book of the Year award. Later collections are *Dante's Drum Kit* (1993) and *The Donkey's Ears* (2000). Short stories with a variety of Scottish situations and settings are collected in *Secret Villages* (1985) and *Boyfriends and Girlfriends* (1995).

## Dunnett, Dorothy (1923-2001)

Scottish author best known for her historical adventures 'The Lymond Chronicles', featuring Francis Crawford of Lymond.

She was awarded an OBE for services to literature in 1992. Her first novel was *The Game of Kings* (1961). Other works include *King Hereafter* (1976), and the series 'The House of Niccolo'.

## Dunsany, Edward John Moreton Drax Plunkett (1878-1957)

#### 18th Baron of Dunsany

Irish writer. Born in London, he was educated at Sandhurst military college, and succeeded to his family's estate in County Meath in 1899. He was the author of a series of stories, beginning with *The Travel Tales of Mr Joseph Jorkens* (1931), which employed the convention of a narrator (Jorkens) sitting in a club or bar. He

also wrote short ironic heroic fantasies, collected in *The Gods of Pegana* (1905) and other books. His first play was *The Glittering Gate* (1909).

## Dunton, John (1650-1733)

English bookseller and political pamphleteer. His publications supported the Whig Party.

#### Durant, Will(iam James) (1885-1981)

US historian and writer, born in North Adams, Massachusetts. He published his philosophy lectures in the best-seller, *The Story of Philosophy* (1926). He left academia and, for 40 years, devoted himself to the multivolume *Story of Civilization*. The tenth volume earned him a Pulitzer Prize.

He was born in Proskurov (now Khmelnitski), Ukraine. After working as a reporter, he went to Seton Hall College (now University) in New Jersey to teach and to study for the Catholic priesthood, but he left in 1911 and took up radical politics in New York City. He became director of the Labor Temple School in 1914 while taking a PhD at Columbia University (1917). In 1935 he published *Our Oriental Heritage*, the first volume of *Story of Civilization*. Ariel Durant (born Chaya Kaufman, 1898-1981) assisted him for some years and she was credited as co-author of the last five volumes. The Durants received the Presidential Medal of Freedom in 1977. Academic historians faulted the books on various grounds but their texture and narrative - a colourful tapestry of history, culture, and biographies - made the series one of the most successful popularizations of all time and introduced millions of readers to intellectual history.

#### Duranty, Edmond (1833-1880)

French novelist. His best-known novel is *Le Malheur d'Henriette Gérard* (1860). Among others are *La Cause du beau Guillaume* (1862), *La Canne de Madame Descrieux* (1862), *Les Combats de Françoise Du Quesnoy* (1872), and *Les Six barons de Sept-Fontaines* (1878).

#### Duras, Marguerite (1914-1996)

#### adopted name of Marguerite Donnadieu

French writer, dramatist, and film-maker. Her work includes short stories ('Des Journées entières dans les arbres' 1954, stage adaptation *Days in the Trees* 1965),

plays (*La Musica/The Music* 1967), and film scripts (*Hiroshima, mon amour* 1960, *India Song* 1975). She also directed stage productions and film versions of her work. Her novels include *Le Vice-consul/The Vice-Consul* (1966), evoking an existentialist world from the setting of Calcutta (now Kolkata); *L'Amant/The Lover* (1984; Prix Goncourt), which deals with a love affair between a young French woman and a Chinese man; and *Emily L.* (1989). *La Vie matérielle* (1987) appeared in England as *Practicalities* (1990). Her autobiographical novel, *La Douleur* (1986), is set in Paris in 1945.

# Durcan, Paul (1944-)

Irish poet, winner of the Patrick Kavanagh award in 1974 and the Whitbread Poetry prize in 1990. Durcan was born in Dublin and studied archaeology and medieval history at University College, Cork. His poetry, such as *O Westport in the Light of Asia Minor* (1975), expresses a consistently humane standpoint, opposed especially against violence, and is characterized by its loose, long-line structure, and by a tone which is by turns colloquial and incantatory. His early reputation for iconoclastic satire has given way to the more meditative and reflective note evident in his autobiographical *Daddy*, *Daddy* (1990), and the politically charged *A Snail in my Prime* (1993). The collections *Crazy about Women* (1991) and *Give Me Your Hand* (1994) were inspired by paintings. Later works include *Christmas Day* (1996), *Greetings to Our Friends in Brazil* (1999), and *Cries from an Irish Caveman* (2001). He is well known for performing his poetry around the world.

Other published works include *Teresa's Bar* (1976) and *Jesus and Angela* (1988). The formal aspects of Durcan's work are thought to have been influenced by the US 'Beat Poets' and the Russian modernists.

# D'Urfey, Thomas (1653-1723)

English poet and dramatist. He is best known for his collection of songs *Pills to Purge Melancholy* (1719-20). His plays include *The Siege of Memphis* (1676), *Madame Fickle* (1677), *The Virtuous Wife* (1680), and *The Campaigners* (1698).

# Durrell, Gerald (Malcolm) (1925-1995)

English naturalist, writer, and zoo curator. He became director of Jersey Zoological Park in 1958, and wrote 37 books, including the humorous memoir *My Family and Other Animals* (1956). He was the brother of the writer Lawrence <u>Durrell</u>.

Durrell was born in Jamshedpur, India, and spent part of his childhood in Corfu, Greece, where he set up his own childhood zoo of scorpions, lizards, and eagle owls. Critical of the conditions in which most zoos kept animals, the lack of interest in breeding programmes, and the concentration on large species, such as the big cats, rhinos, and elephants, Durrell became determined to build up his own zoo, and to run it so that it could supplement conservation programmes in the wild rather than detract from them. He finally settled in Jersey, where he founded the Jersey Zoological Park. Through his work in conservation - within his zoo and as chair of the Flora and Fauna Preservation Society - and perhaps more particularly his many books and television programmes, Durrell encouraged and inspired a whole generation of naturalists, zoologists, and zoo keepers.

## Durrell, Lawrence (George) (1912-1990)

English novelist and poet. He lived mainly in the eastern Mediterranean, the setting of his novels, including the Alexandria Quartet: *Justine*, *Balthazar*, *Mountolive*, and *Clea* (1957-60). He also wrote travel books, including *Bitter Lemons* (1957) about Cyprus. His heady prose and bizarre characters reflect his exotic sources of inspiration. He was the brother of the naturalist Gerald Durrell.

## **Dutch literature**

literature of the Netherlands.

#### 12th-15th centuries

The earliest known poet to use the Dutch dialect was Hendrik (Heinrich) van Veldeke in the 12th century, but the finest example of early Gothic literature is *Van Den Vos Reinaarde/About Reynard the Fox* by a poet known as 'Willem-who-made-the-Madoc'. Most of the anonymous work produced before the Renaissance comes from the Belgian parts of the Netherlands and includes *Karel ende Elegast*, from the 12th or 13th century, a Carolingian tale of great charm and humour; the 14th-century legend *Beatrijs*; the earliest European secular plays, known as the *Abele Spelen*; and the devotional plays of the late 15th century, *Mariken van Nieumeghen* and *Elckerlyc* (the original version of the English morality play *Everyman*). By this time chambers of rhetoric, *rederijkerskamers*, had been founded in most southern and a few northern towns, and their activities stimulated dramatic productions.

#### 16th-17th centuries

During the Reformation and early Renaissance the centre of commerce and art moved from the Catholic south to the Protestant north; by the 'Golden Age' of the 17th century, Amsterdam, having supplanted Antwerp as a trading centre, had become the centre of literary activity. The renaissance of learning and art in the new state is exemplified in the brilliant circle of the Muiderkring, named after the castle of the lyricist, playwright, and historian Pieter C <u>Hooft</u>, near Amsterdam. The great poets of this time either lived in Amsterdam or belonged to Hooft's circle: the lyricist, satirist, and dramatic poet Joost van den Vondel; the dramatist and lyrical poet Gerbrand <u>Bredero</u>; the humanist and satirist Constantijn Huygens; and the popular moralist Jakob <u>Cats</u>. Of the minor poets of the 20th century, the most gifted

were Jacobus Revius (1586-1658) who, like Jan Luyken (1649-1712), wrote both devotional and secular poetry.

#### 18th century

The 18th century is more important for its classicist theory than for its literary production. Pieter Langendijk (1683-1756) wrote a number of comedies that are still performed and Justus van Effen (1684-1735) wrote some excellent essays and sketches for his journal founded on the model of the London *Spectator*. Towards the end of the century, however, a masterpiece appeared in a novel by two women, Elizabeth <u>Bekker</u> and Aagje Deken. Simultaneously, German Romanticism was influencing a number of minor sentimental poets, the finest of whom was Anthony Staring, but the most influential poet of this period was the more independent and voluminous Willem <u>Bilderdijk</u>.

#### 19th century

In the 19th century a bold attempt was made to restore a more critical approach to literature in the periodical *De Gids/The Guide*, founded by the scholar Reinier Bakhuizen van den Brink (1810-1865) and the author and critic Everhardus Potgieter (1808-1875). They failed, however, to enlist the support of Jacob Geel (1789-1862), the scholarly essayist whose style exemplified the kind of criticism needed, and *De Gids* later adopted a nationalist programme inspired by the historical novels of Walter <u>Scott</u>. The most important writers in this genre were Aernout Drost (1810-1834) for his didactic novel *Hermingard van de Eikenterpen* (1832), Jacob van Lennep, and Anna Bosboom-Toussaint. A more frivolous tone marks the work of a group of young authors of humorous sketches: G van de Linde (1808-1858), J P Hasebroek (1812-1896), J Kneppelhout (1814-1885), and Nikolaas <u>Beets</u>, influenced by the English writers Charles Lamb and Charles Dickens.

An entirely new style of prose writing was introduced in the remarkable novel *Max Havelaar* (1860) by the brilliant Romantic Eduard Douwes Dekker, who added to Laurence <u>Sterne</u>'s kind of irony a radical unorthodoxy that was nearly a century ahead of its time. His writing was acclaimed by the young poets known as the *Tachtigers*, and the journal they founded 1885, *De Nieuwe Gids/The New Guide*, became the organ of the 'Movement of 1880'. This movement, anticipated by Marcellus Emants (1848-1923) and Jacques Perk (1859-81), was headed by Willem <u>Kloos</u>, Albert Verwey, Frederik van <u>Eeden</u>, and Lodewijk van Deyssel (1864-1952), and its tenets of 'art for art's sake' and 'art is passion' influenced the poets Herman <u>Gorter</u>, Jan Hendrik Leopold (1865-1927), Henriette Roland Holst-van der Schalk (1869-1953), Peter Boutens (1870-1943), and Adriaan Roland Holst, and the short-story writer Jacobus van Looy (1855-1930).

A similar quest for renewal among the younger generation in Flanders led in 1893 to the establishment of the journal *Van Nu en Straks/Today and Tomorrow*, edited by August Vermeylen and others. Unlike the northern movement, however, this was partly inspired by the political and social aspirations of the Flemish language movement, initiated by Jan Frans Willems (1793-1846), popularized by Hendrik <u>Conscience's</u> nationalist historical novels, and attaining supreme literary expression in the poetry of Guido <u>Gezelle</u>. Whereas the naturalistic novel in the north was eclipsed by the realistic novels of Louis <u>Couperus</u> and the proletariat drama of Herman <u>Heijermans</u>, Gezelle's nephew Frank Lateur wrote a number of naturalist masterpieces in his west Flemish dialect. Thereafter, however, a general linguistic distinction between the literary works of the north and south is increasingly hard to find.

## 20th century

On the other hand, the Flemish poet Paul van Ostaijen (1896-1928) introduced an expressionist lyricism in marked contrast to the predominantly introspective Romanticism of the northern poets. This Romanticism is best represented in its closing phases by the philosopher and humorist J A der Mouw (1863-1919, writing under the pseudonym Adwaita); the critic and scholar P N van Eyck (1887-1954); Jakobus Bloem (1887-1966); A Roland-Holst; and J Slauerhoff (1898-1936), who also wrote lyrical novellas. The vitalism in the poetry of Hendrik Marsman and the anti-aesthetic intellectualism of the literary journal *Het Forum/The Forum* (1932-35) under Menno ter Braak (1902-40), Du Perron (1899-1940), and Simon Vestdijk closed the period of 'art for art's sake' which had been so productive since 1880, in prose as well as poetry.

The greatest of the Romantic novelists of that period is undoubtedly Arthur van Schendel whose earlier writing shows a sensitivity similar to Aart van der Leeuw's (1876-1931). An entirely new, anti-literary, style was first used in 1918, in the humorous short stories of Nescio (the pseudonym of J H F Gronloh, 1882-1961), whose irony was matched in the southern Netherlands by Willem Elsschot (1882-1960) and whose literary style was some 30 years ahead of its time. Irony is also the mark of the realistic, even 'cubist' author Ferdinand Bordewijk (1884-1965). Realism and a vital, determined reaction against the Catholic Romanticism of his contemporaries, inspired the novels of the southerner Gerard Walschap (1898- ), while his compatriot Marnix Gijsen expressed detachment from his Catholic upbringing in ruthlessly objective and ironical character novels. In the Protestant poetry of the north after *Het Forum*, there was a less obvious trend towards humanism in the antimaterialist lyricism of Martinus <u>Nijhoff</u> and the primitive mysticism of Gerrit Achterberg (1905-1962).

The years of World War II were marked by the courage of those involved in publishing and distributing the large quantity of clandestine literature, rather than by the particular quality of this 'resistance' writing. The German occupation had a more obvious effect in the Netherlands than in Belgium. While G K van het Reve (1923-), Harry Mulisch (1927-), and Willem Frederik Hermans (1921-) were writing novels of wartime chaos and personal alienation or loss of identity, the Belgian novelists Louis-Paul Boon, J Daisne (the pseudonym of H Thiery, 1912-), I Michiels (1920-), and H Claus were more concerned with structural experiments and an objective approach to psychological and moral problems. If the initiative in prose writing appears to have passed to the south, the experimental poetry of the generation of 1950 in the north (for example that of Lucebert, the pseudonym of L J Swaanswijk, 1924-), has opened up new prospects there. See also <u>Flemish literature</u>.

# Dutt, Ramesh Chandra (1848-1909)

#### also known as Rames Candra Datta

Indian writer and civil servant. He wrote in English on the economic history of Bengal 1757-1900. Dutt published many novels in Bengali, including the first historical novels in the language, and made the first complete translation of the sacred Hindu text the Rig-Veda from old Sanskrit into Bengali.

# Dutton, Geoffrey (1922-1998)

Australian poet and critic. He was involved with the journal *Angry Penguins*, which published his poems 'Night Flight' and 'Sunrise' in 1944. He also helped found and edit the journals *Australian Letters* (1957-68) and *Australian Book Review* (1961-64), and was influential as a broadcaster and critic. Altogether he published forty items, including nine collections of poetry, eight novels, and critical studies, biographies, travel books, and works on art and culture.

Dutton translated the works of the Soviet poet Yevgeny <u>Yevtushenko</u>, wrote biographies, travel books, books on art, stories for children, and edited the critical essays in *The Literature of Australia* (1964). His poetry includes *Antipodes in Shoes* 1958, *Flowers and Fury* (1962), and *Findings and Keepings* (1970). His autobiography, *Out in the Open*, was published in 1994.

## Duun, Olav (1876-1939)

Norwegian novelist. His main work is the novel cycle *Juvikfolke/The People of Juvik* (1918-23), which traces a country family through several generations, from a feudal pagan way of life to a more humane Christianity. Other important novels are the *Medmenneske* trilogy (1929-33) and *Menneske og maktene/Floodtide of Fate* (1938).

## Duvernois, Henri (1875-1937)

French writer. He wrote numerous novels and short stories, depicting, with an irony softened by affection, the imperfect lives of ordinary people. His works include *Crapotte* (1908), *Les Marchandes d'oubli* (1909), *Edgar* (1919), *Gisèle* (1920), *La Lune de fiel* (1921), and *Beauté* (1929).

Dwight, Timothy (1752-1817)

US poet and clergyman. His poem *America* (1772) was followed by *The Conquest of Canaan* (1785), the first American epic; *The Triumph of Infidelity* (1788), an anonymous satire in heroic couplets; and *Greenfield Hill* (1794), a poem in the 18th-century tradition. He was a prominent member of the literary group the Connecticut Wits, also known as the Hartford Wits.

#### Dyce, Alexander (1798-1869)

Scottish critic and scholar. He is known for his annotated editions of the early dramatists and poets, including John Webster 1830, Thomas Middleton 1840, Francis Beaumont and John Fletcher 1843-46, and Christopher Marlowe 1850. His scholarly edition of Shakespeare appeared 1857. Dyce also edited the poems of, among others, Shakespeare and Alexander Pope, and the critical and theological works of Richard Bentley.

#### Dyer, Edward (1543-1607)

English poet and courtier. Edmund <u>Spenser</u> speaks highly of Dyer as a poet but only one of his songs is now generally remembered, 'My mind to me a kingdom is'.

#### Dyer, John (1699-1758)

Welsh poet, painter, and cleric. He was the author of three poems: *Grongar Hill* (1727), *The Ruins of Rome* (1740), and *The Fleece* (1757). The first of these contains fine descriptions of the scenery of South Wales.

#### Earle, John (c. 1601-1665)

English cleric and essayist. As a writer, he is chiefly remembered for his entertaining *Microcosmographie, or A Piece of the World Discovered in Essays and Characters* 1628.

#### Eastman, P(hilip) D(ey) (1909-1986)

US author, illustrator, and film producer. He created the *Gerald McBoing Boing* series for United Productions (UPA) and wrote children's books, notably *Are You My Mother*? (1960), and collaborated with Theodor Geisel (Dr <u>Seuss</u>) on *The Cat in the Hat Dictionary* (1964).

Born in Amherst, Massachusetts, he studied at Amherst College and the National Academy of Design, New York. He worked for Warner Brothers and Disney Studios, California, as well as UPA.

#### Eberhart, Richard Ghormley (1904-2005)

US poet and teacher. He taught at Dartmouth and was a consultant in poetry at the Library of Congress. His poems are distinguished by his direct yet occasionally unexpected responses to the basic experiences of human life.

He was born in Austin, Minnesota and studied at the University of Minnesota, Dartmouth College, Cambridge (England), and Harvard. His poems appear in volumes such as *Undercliff* (1953) and *Shifts of Being* (1968). He also published *Collected Verse Plays* (1962).

# Eck (or Egg), Johann (1486-1543)

#### born Johann Maier

German Catholic theologian and polemicist. He was an early and determined critic of Martin Luther, engaging in public disputations with Luther and other reformers. His attacks, including the claim that Luther was associated with Jan Huss, forced Luther to define his position concerning the authority of the Bible, the character of Christ's Church, and the papacy and church hierarchy.

Eck helped draw up the *Confutatio* declaring Emperor Charles V's total rejection of Protestant principles that was read at the Diet of Augsburg in 1530. He was one of the three Catholic advocates in the debates at the Colloquy of Regensburg in 1541. In 1537 he published his German translation of the New Testament.

## Eckermann, Johann Peter (1792-1854)

German writer. His *Beiträge zur Poesie/Contributions on Poetry* (1825) interested the great writer <u>Goethe</u>, whose friend and assistant he became, and Eckermann is principally known for his *Gespräche mit Goethe/Conversations with Goethe* (1837), compiled from the notes Goethe had allowed him to take.

## Eco, Umberto (1932-)

Italian writer and literary critic. His works include *The Role of the Reader* (1979), the 'philosophical thriller' *The Name of the Rose* (1981; filmed 1986), *Foucault's* 

*Pendulum* (1988), *The Island of the Day Before* (1944), and *Kant and the Platypus: Essays on Language and Cognition* (1999). He has taught semiology, the study of signs and symbols, at the University of Bologna, Italy.

#### Ecole Romane

group of French poets formed 1891. The principal members were Jean <u>Moréas</u>, Charles <u>Maurras</u>, Ernest Reynaud, Maurice du Plessys, and Raymond de la Tailhède. The school represented a reaction against the obscurity and metrical freedom of <u>Symbolism</u> and sought a return to the traditions of Greek and Latin antiquity as they had been observed by the French poets of the <u>Pléiade</u> in the 16th century.

#### Edda

two collections of early Icelandic literature that together constitute our chief source for Old Norse mythology. The term strictly applies to the **Younger** or **Prose Edda**, compiled by Snorri Sturluson, a priest, in about AD 1230.

The **Elder** or **Poetic Edda** is the collection of poems discovered around 1643 by Brynjólfr Sveinsson, written by unknown Norwegian poets of the 9th to 12th centuries.

## Eddison, Eric Rucker (1882-1945)

British author of heroic fantasies, notably The Worm Ouroboros (1922).

## Edel, (Joseph) Leon (1907-1997)

US biographer. He taught at New York University (1953-73), devoting his scholarly career to Henry <u>James</u>. He wrote a five-volume biography of James 1953-85, which won him a Pulitzer Prize.

He was born in Pittsburgh. As well as the massive biography, he published collections of James's letters, particularly his correspondence with his sister Alice and his brother William James, and other writings.

## Edgeworth, Maria (1767-1849)

Irish novelist. Her first novel, *Castle Rackrent* (1800), dealt with Anglo-Irish country society and was the first regional novel in English. Other novels about Ireland include *The Absentee* (1812) and *Ormond* (1817). She also wrote four novels about English society, beginning with *Belinda* (1801). She was a fervent proponent of women's education.

#### Edgeworth, Richard Lovell (1744-1817)

Anglo-Irish writer, educationalist, and inventor. Edgeworth was born in Bath and studied at Trinity College, Dublin, and Corpus Christi College, Oxford. He educated his 22 children in the spirit of the philosopher Jean-Jacques <u>Rousseau's</u> teaching, and wrote on *Practical Education* (1798) in collaboration with his daughter Maria <u>Edgeworth</u>, the novelist. In Ireland he was centrally concerned with improvements to his estate at Edgeworthstown (now Mostrim), County Longford, as a model to other Anglo-Irish landlords.

Remarkable for his abilities in mechanical invention, he produced an early form of visual telegraphy, the velocipede, the perambulator land-measuring wheel, and various forms of carriage, including a phaeton and a wind-propelled version. He returned to Edgeworthston from England in 1782, following Ireland's legislative independence, and was a member of the last Irish parliament before the Union. He served as aide de camp to the Lord Charlemont, commander-in-chief of the Irish Volunteers in 1783. As member of parliament for Johnston he voted against the Act of Union on account of the corrupt means used to secure its passage, although he accepted it in principle.

# Edson, J(ohn) T(homas) (1928-)

English writer of Western novels. His books, numbering 136 by 1999 and with 27 million copies sold, have such titles as *The Fastest Gun in Texas* and feature a recurring hero, Rapido Clint.

#### Edwards, Amelia Ann Blandford (1831-1892)

English novelist and Egyptologist. Her novels include *My Brother's Wife* (1855), *Debenham's Vow* (1869), and *Lord Brackenbury* (1880). *A Thousand Miles up the Nile* (1877), a travel book, was widely appreciated.

#### Edwards, Edward (1812-1886)

English librarian and author. He was instrumental in founding the first major public

library in Britain, which opened in Manchester in 1852.

# Edwards, Richard (c. 1522-1566)

English poet, composer, and dramatist. He was highly regarded for his comedies, madrigals, and interludes. A pupil of the musician, physician, and Greek scholar George Etheridge of Thame, he entered Corpus Christi College, Oxford, in 1540, and transferred to Christ Church on its foundation in 1546. He was appointed Master of the Children of the Chapel Royal in London in 1561, and wrote two plays for them. He was also a playwright, producing *Palamon and Arcite* before Queen Elizabeth in Oxford in 1566, and also writing *Damon and Pithias* (1564), and a poet, compiling and contributing to a book of verse *The Paradise of Dainty Devices* (1576).

## Eeden, Frederik Willem van (1860-1932)

Dutch poet and novelist. His greatest poetical work is a tragedy for reading, *De Broeders/The Brothers* (1894), and his novel *Van de Koele Meren des Doods/The Deeps of Deliverance* (1900) anticipated the psychological novel by several decades. His diaries, *Mijn dagboek*, published in nine volumes in 1971, reveal the conflict between his sensual and spiritual desires which is a recurrent theme in his work.

## Egan, Pierce (1772-1849)

#### called 'the Elder'

English sporting writer. He is principally remembered for his *Life in London: or the Day and Night Scenes of Jerry Hawthorn, Esq, and his elegant friend, Corinthian Tom, accompanied by Bob Logic, the Oxonian, in their Rambles and Sprees through the Metropolis* (1820-21). Illustrated by George and Isaac Cruikshank, it was extremely popular and was the first English fictional work to be published in monthly parts.

Egan's other works include *Boxiana: or Sketches of Ancient and Modern Pugilism* (1818-24), *The Life of an Actor* (1825), and *Pierce Egan's Book of Sports and Mirror of Life* (1832). His son **Pierce Egan the Younger** (1814-1880) wrote a number of novels.

## Eggleston, Edward (1837-1902)

US minister and novelist. He was a local-colour writer and a realist. His first and most successful novel was *The Hoosier Schoolmaster* (1871). Like his other works, it

depicts the life and manners of the Middle West.

Other novels were *The Circuit Rider* (1874), *Roxy* (1878), *The Hoosier Schoolboy* (1883), and *The Graysons* (1888).

#### Egilsson, Sveinbjörn (1791-1852)

Icelandic scholar and poet. He compiled the first important dictionary to Skaldic poetry, *Lexicon poeticum antiquae lingvae septentrionalis* (1860), and translated Homer's *Odyssey* and *Iliad* from Greek into Icelandic.

## Ehrenburg, Ilya Grigorievich (1891-1967)

Soviet writer, born in Kiev, Ukraine. His controversial work *The Thaw* (1954) depicted artistic circles in the USSR and contributed to the growing literary freedom of the 1950s.

## Eichendorff, Joseph Freiherr von (1788-1857)

German Romantic poet and novelist. Among his finest poems are those expressing his longing for nature: Durch Feld und Buchenhallen, In einem kühlen Gründe, da geht ein Mühlenrad, and Wem Gott will rechte Gunst erweisen. His novels include Aus dem Leben eines Taugenichts (1826). His work was set to music by Robert Schumann, Felix Mendelssohn, and Hugo Wolf.

#### Ekelöf, Gunnar (1907-1968)

Swedish poet. Thoroughly original, yet steeped in tradition, Ekelöf combines personal and historical experiences in his poetry. He makes a bold experiment in human consciousness of time in *En Molna-elegi/An Elegy of Molna* (1960). His magnificent Byzantine triad is strongly influenced by Eastern mysticism: *Diwan över Fursten av Emgion/Divan on the Prince of Emgion* (1965), *Sagan om Fatumeh/The Tale of Fatumeh* (1966), and *Vägvisare till underjorden/Signposts to the Underworld* (1967).

#### Ekwensi, Cyprian (1921-)

Nigerian writer of novels, short stories, children's books, and folktales about the lbo people (who live in southeastern Nigeria). Much of his writing depicts the problems

and pitfalls of urban life in Nigeria. His most successful novel, *Jagua Nana* (1961), examines the changes in lifestyle of people, including Jagua, a prostitute, who have left their rural origins to live in the city.

His other books include *People of the City* (1954; revised edition 1969), *Lokotown and Other Stories* (1966), *Burning Grass* (1962), *Jagua Nana's Daughter* (1986, a sequel to *Jagua Nana*), and *For a Roll of Parchment* (1987). He has also written numerous folk tales and stories for children. He was awarded the Dag Hammarskjöld International Prize in Literature in 1968.

#### Electra

title of two separate tragedies by <u>Sophocles</u> and <u>Euripides</u>, produced in Greece about 410 BC and 417 BC respectively. In both plays Electra is devastated by the murder of her father Agamemnon at the hands of her mother Clytemnestra. With the help of her brother, Orestes, she takes her revenge, killing Clytemnestra and her lover, Aegisthus.

#### elegy

ancient Greek poetic verse genre, originally combining a <u>hexameter</u> (line of poetry with six metrical feet) with a shorter line in a couplet. It was used by the Greeks for <u>epigrams</u>, short narratives, and discursive poems, and adopted by the Roman poets (such as <u>Ovid</u> and <u>Propertius</u>), particularly for erotic verse.

In contemporary usage, the term refers to a nostalgic poem or a lament, often a funeral poem. English poet Thomas <u>Gray's</u>'Elegy Written in a Country Church-Yard' (1751) is one of the best-known elegies in English. An elegy is likely to be a personal and private expression of grief.

#### elegy

#### (from Greek elegeia, from elegos 'mournful poem')

in poetry, a piece of sorrowful and usually commemorative character; in music either a vocal setting of such a poem or an instrumental piece suggesting the mood awakened by it.

#### Eliot, George (1819-1880)

pen-name of Mary Ann (later Marian) Evans

English novelist. Her works include the pastoral *Adam Bede* (1859); *The <u>Mill on the</u> <u>Floss</u> (1860), with its autobiographical elements; <i>Silas Marner* (1861), containing elements of the folk tale; and *Daniel Deronda* (1876). <u>Middlemarch</u>, published serially (1871-72), is considered her greatest novel for its confident handling of numerous characters and central social and moral issues. She developed a subtle psychological presentation of character, and her work is pervaded by a penetrating and compassionate intelligence.

Born in Astley, Warwickshire, George Eliot had a strict evangelical upbringing. In 1841 she was converted to free thought. As assistant editor of the *Westminster Review* under John Chapman from 1851 to 1853, she made the acquaintance of the writers and thinkers Thomas <u>Carlyle</u>, Harriet <u>Martineau</u>, Herbert Spencer, and the philosopher and critic George Henry Lewes. Lewes was married but separated from his wife, and from 1854 he and Eliot lived together in a relationship that she regarded as a true marriage and that continued until his death. Lewes strongly believed in her talent and as a result of his encouragement the story 'Amos Barton' was accepted by *Blackwoods Magazine* in 1857. This was followed by a number of other short stories, and their success persuaded Eliot to embark on writing her full-length novels including *Adam Bede* which was highly praised and placed her among the leading contemporary novelists. Lewes died in 1878, bitterly lamented by Eliot. In 1880 she married John Cross (1840-1924), her accountant and a friend of long standing.

Eliot



(Image © Billie Love)

English novelist Mary Anne Evans wrote under the pseudonym George Eliot. Her pioneering and influential novel *Middlemarch* (1872) is a penetrating depiction of English provincial society, in which the limitations imposed upon women's lives are highlighted in the character of Dorothea Brooke.

# Eliot, T(homas) S(tearns) (1888-1965)

US-born poet, playwright, and critic, who lived in England from 1915. His first volume of poetry, *Prufrock and Other Observations* (1917), introduced new verse forms and rhythms; subsequent major poems were *The <u>Waste Land</u>* (1922), a long symbolic poem of disillusionment, and *The Hollow Men* (1925). For children he published *Old Possum's Book of Practical Cats* (1939). Eliot's plays include *Murder in the Cathedral* (1935) and *The Cocktail Party* (1950). His critical works include *The Sacred Wood* (1920), setting out his views on poetic tradition. He makes considerable demands on his readers, and is regarded as the founder of modernism in poetry. As a critic he profoundly influenced the ways in which literature was

appreciated. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1948.

Eliot was born in St Louis, Missouri, and was educated at Harvard, Massachusetts; the Sorbonne, Paris, France; and Oxford University, UK. He married and settled in London in 1917 and became a UK citizen in 1927, joining the Anglo-Catholic movement within the Church of England the same year. He was for a time a bank clerk, later lecturing and entering publishing at Faber and Faber, where he became a director. As editor of the highly influential literary magazine *Criterion* from 1922 to 1939, he was responsible for a critical re-evaluation of metaphysical poetry and Jacobean drama, and wrote perceptively about such European poets as <u>Dante</u> Alighieri, Charles Baudelaire, and Jules Laforgue.

# **Elizabethan literature**

literature produced during the reign of Elizabeth I of England (1558-1603). This period saw a remarkable growth of the arts in England, and the literature of the time is characterized by a new energy, originality, and confidence. Renaissance humanism, Protestant zeal, and geographical and scientific discovery all contributed to this upsurge of creative power. Drama was the dominant form of the age, and the plays of William <u>Shakespeare</u> and Christopher <u>Marlowe</u> were popular with all levels of society. Other writers of the period include Edmund <u>Spenser</u>, and Philip <u>Sidney</u>. See also <u>English literature</u>.

Elizabethan drama broke away from religious domination, which was the major focus of the medieval mystery play and morality play. Elizabethan drama often used poetical metre (rhythm) for its <u>dialogue</u>, especially the five-foot <u>iambic</u> pentameter (pairs of syllables: unstressed followed by stressed). Both Shakespeare and Marlowe often used controversial subjects for their drama, including the question of political power (in Marlowe's *Tamberlaine the Great* (two parts; 1587-88) and Shakespeare's *Macbeth* (1606), for example). Other, lesser playwrights wrote in a similar style to Shakespeare and Marlowe; *The Spanish Tragedy* (c. 1590) by Thomas <u>Kyd</u> is sometimes said to have been an influence upon Shakespeare's *Hamlet* (1601-02). As the Jacobean period commences, the content of the drama darkens appreciably, and the plays of dramatists such as John Webster are more overtly violent than those of the Elizabethan period, in which (although there are exceptions to this) violent action is often psychological and usually takes place offstage.

The attractions of the theatre should not obscure the quite different work being done by writers such as Edmund Spenser, who developed lengthy pastoral verse (treating rural life with nostalgia) in English (*The Faerie Queene*, 1590-96) and Sir Philip Sidney who incorporated pastoral verse and themes into his work of verse and prose fiction *Acardia* (1590) and who began a type of literary theory in his *Apologie for Poetry* (1595), in which he defined the role of the poet in society. John Lyly was another Elizabethan dramatist and author who contributed to the wide variety of literature available to an increasingly literate public (possibly half the population had minimal literacy by 1600).

# Elliot, Jane (or Jean) (1727-1805)

Scottish poet. She was the author of the most popular version of the beautiful 'Flowers of the Forest', a poetic lament for the Scottish defeat at the Battle of Flodden, composed about 1750 as the result of a bet with her brother.

### Elliott, Ebenezer (1781-1849)

English poet. His *Corn-Law Rhymes* (1831) are vigorous, simple, and full of vivid description; inspired by a fierce hatred of injustice, and by their sincerity and earnestness, they are saved from the common fate of political poetry. He also published the *Crabbe-like Village Patriarch* (1829).

### Ellis, Albert (1913-)

US psychologist and author. He practised clinical psychology and published many books on psychology and sexual behaviour. He developed Rational-Emotive Psychotherapy, which rejects Freudian theories and asserts that emotions come from conscious as well as unconscious sources.

He was born in Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania, gained his PhD from Columbia University, and taught at Rutgers University. He published many books on psychology and sexual behaviour, including *Sex Without Guilt* (1966).

# Ellis, Bret Easton (1964-)

US novelist. Writing in a cold, dispassionate style, he is best known for his highly controversial novel *American Psycho* (1991; filmed 2000), a savage and bloody satire on 1980s consumerism. Other novels include *Less Than Zero* (1985; filmed 1987), a rites-of-passage novel dealing with the alienation of affluent youth; *The Rules of Attraction* (1987; filmed 2002), about sex on a college campus; and *Glamorama* (1999), a critical look at the fashion industry.

# Ellis, Edward Sylvester (1840-1916)

US writer. Under multiple pen-names, he wrote many popular 'dime' novels about the West, such as the *Davy Crockett* series.

He was born in Geneva, Ohio. He studied at the State Normal School of New Jersey, and settled in Upper Montclair, New Jersey.

## Ellis, George (1753-1815)

British writer. He attained notoriety 1778 with the publication of *Poetical Tales, by Sir Gregory Gander*. He was one of the contributors to the *Criticism on the Rolliad*, a collection of Whig political satires, and in later years, with George Canning, founded the *Anti-Jacobin* journal. In 1790 he published *Specimens of the Early English Poets*, and 15 years later *Specimens of Early English Romances in Metre*.

# Ellis, (Henry) Havelock (1859-1939)

English psychologist and writer of many works on the psychology of sex. His major work, *Studies in the Psychology of Sex* (seven volumes, 1898-1928), was for many years published only in the USA after a UK bookseller was prosecuted in 1898 for stocking it.

# Ellison, Ralph Waldo (1914-1994)

US novelist. His *Invisible Man* (1952) portrays with humour and energy the plight of a black man whom post-war US society cannot acknowledge. It is regarded as one of the most impressive novels published in the USA in the 1950s. He also wrote essays collected in *Shadow and Act* (1964).

Ellison saw black people not as separate or marginalized but right in the centre of US national life. He identified 'being invisible' as a complex condition, applying to himself 'simply because people refuse to see me', but emphasizing that part of the problem was that the invisible man was also invisible to himself. The success of his work encouraged the development of black literature in the 1950s and 1960s.

# Ellroy, James (1948-)

US novelist. His novels document the development of post-war Los Angeles and explore the sordid side of US society. In his later works Ellroy has played with the formal structure of the novel, cutting between traditional narrative, first person observations, media-style excerpts, and official reports. This he has achieved most successfully in the popular 'LA Quartet', comprising the novels *The Black Dahlia* (1987), *The Big Nowhere* (1988), *LA Confidential* (1990), and *White Jazz* (1992). *LA Confidential* was adapted into an award-winning film in 1997.

Drawing both from an established literary tradition and the images of 1950s *film noir*, Ellroy's writing career has been one of constant evolution. His first novel was a

detective mystery, *Brown's Requiem* (1980), influenced by Raymond <u>Chandler</u>. He later abandoned the tradition of the loner private eye, preferring instead tales in which the enforcers of law and order become implicit in the corruption that pervades Los Angeles. His books have become increasingly experimental, using multiple narrators and blurring the boundaries between autobiography, fiction, and historical fact.

#### Ellwood, Thomas (1639-1713)

English author and Quaker teacher. Ellwood's works include *Forgery no Christianity* (1674), *Sacred History of the Old and New Testaments* (1705-9), the poem *Davideis* (1712), and an autobiography, published in 1714. Ellwood was born in Crowell, Oxfordshire. He was a friend of and reader for the English poet John Milton after he became blind. Ellwood first suggested to Milton the idea of his second epic, *Paradise Regained* (1671), after reading the manuscript of *Paradise Lost* (1667) in 1665.

### Eluard, Paul (1895-1952)

#### pen-name of Eugène Grindel

French poet. He expressed the suffering of poverty in his verse, and was a leader of the surrealists. He fought in World War I, which inspired his *Poèmes pour la paix/ Poems for Peace* (1918), and was a member of the Resistance in World War II. His books include *Poésie et vérité/Poetry and Truth* (1942) and *Au Rendezvous allemand/To the German Rendezvous* (1944).

# Elytis, Odysseus (1911-1996)

#### pen-name of Odysseus Alepoudhelis

Greek poet. His verse celebrates the importance of the people's attempts to shape an individual existence in freedom.

His major work *To Axion Esti/Worthy It Is* (1959) is a lyric cycle, parts of which have been set to music by Theodorakis. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1979.

# Elzevir, Louis (c. 1540-1617)

Founder of the Dutch printing house Elzevir in the 17th century. Among the firm's publications were editions of Latin, Greek, and Hebrew works, as well as French and

Italian classics.

Born at Louvain, Elzevir was obliged to leave Belgium in 1580 because of his Protestant and political views. He settled at Leiden as a bookseller and printer.

#### emblem

any visible symbol; a moral maxim expressed pictorially with an explanatory epigram. Books of emblems were popular in Renaissance Europe. The first emblem book was by Andrea Alciato (1492-1550) of Milan; first printed in Augsburg in 1531, it had some 175 editions in several languages. In England *Emblems* (1635), a religious work, was compiled by Francis Quarles (1592-1644).

# Emecheta, (Florence Onye) Buchi (1944-)

Nigerian-born British novelist. She emigrated to Britain in 1962, and has achieved critical acclaim for her works championing the rights of women.

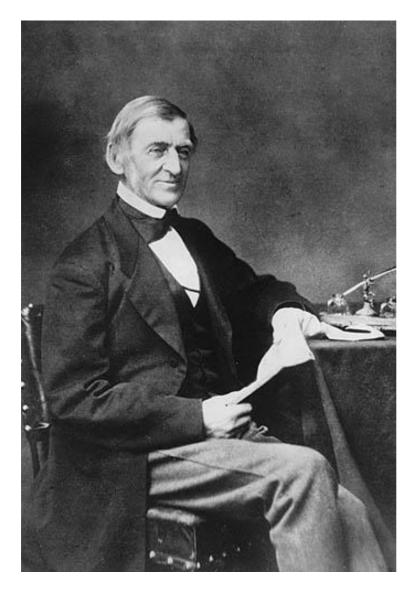
Her novels include In the Ditch (1972), Second-Class Citizen (1974), The Bride Price (1976), The Slave Girl (1977), The Joys of Motherhood (1979), Destination Biafra (1982), Naira Power (1982), Double Yoke (1982), The Rape of Shavri (1983), A Kind of Marriage (1986), and Gwendolyn (1990).

# Emerson, Ralph Waldo (1803-1882)

US philosopher, essayist, and poet. He settled in Concord, Massachusetts, which he made a centre of transcendentalism, and wrote *Nature* (1836), which states the movement's main principles emphasizing the value of self-reliance and the godlike nature of human souls. His two volumes of *Essays* (1841, 1844) made his reputation: 'Self-Reliance' and 'Compensation' in the earlier volume are among the best known.

Born in Boston, Massachusetts, and educated at Harvard, Emerson became a Unitarian minister 1829. In 1832 he resigned and travelled to Europe, meeting the British writers Thomas Carlyle, Samuel Coleridge, and William Wordsworth. On his return to Massachusetts in 1833 he settled in Concord. He worked alongside Margaret Fuller, William Channing, and Henry <u>Thoreau</u> to develop transcendentalism, particularly its theological aspects, as a protest against dogmatic rationalism in religion. In 1840 he helped to launch the literary magazine *The Dial*, which he also edited for a time. He made a second visit to England 1847 and incorporated his impressions in *English Traits* 1856. His poetry, much of which was published in *The Dial*, includes 'The Rhodora', 'Threnody', and 'Brahma'. His later works include *Representative Men* 1850 and *The Conduct of Life* 1870.

#### **Emerson**



#### (Image © Billie Love)

US philosopher, poet, and essayist Ralph Waldo Emerson, one of the central figures of New England Transcendentalism. He repudiated both materialism and conventional religion in his lyrical essay 'Nature' (1836), in which he advocated that people should live a simple life in harmony with nature.

#### Eminescu, Mihail (1850-1889)

#### pseudonym of Mihail Eminovici

Romanian poet. His work gave a new richness to the Romanian language, as in the lyrical ballad 'Luceafarul/Evening Star' 1883, and he is considered the country's greatest poet. His passion for history and folklore is also reflected in his verse.

He joined the literary circle Junimea ('youth'), contributing poems to its journal

Convorbiri literare. In 1887 he became editor of the newspaper Timpul.

# Encyclopédie

encyclopedia in 35 volumes written 1751-77 by a group of French scholars (*Encyclopédistes*) including D'Alembert and Diderot, inspired by the English encyclopedia produced by Ephraim Chambers in 1728. Religious scepticism and Enlightenment social and political views were a feature of the work.

The first 28 volumes 1751-72 were edited by Diderot. A further five volumes were produced by other editors 1776-77 and the two-volume index was completed 1780.

## Endo, Shusako Paul (1923-1996)

Japanese novelist. A convert to Catholic Christianity, he studied modern French religious writing in Lyons 1950. This encouraged his fictional explorations of cultural conflict and moral and spiritual perplexity in sympathetically treated unheroic lives, disclosing a 'mudswamp' of moral inertia in contemporary Japanese life. Among his best-known works are *Shiroi hito/White Men* 1955, the historical novel *Chimmoku/Silence* 1966, and *lesyu no shogai/Life of Jesus* 1978.

### **English literature**

<u>prose</u> and poetry <u>fiction</u> and non-fiction writing written in the English language in the UK. The development of English literature from <u>Old English literature</u> to the present day can be traced through several different literary periods identifiable by their artistic theory, methods, and concerns.

### English literature, medieval

in medieval England (12th-15th century), the ascendancy of Norman-French culture in the post-Conquest era, followed by the re-emergence of native English works - by such authors as Chaucer, Langland, and Malory, and numerous anonymous authors, marked the Middle English period of <u>English literature</u>. Towards the end of the Middle Ages, more lay people were literate, and the <u>Paston Letters</u> form one of the first records of one family's ordinary lives. These, together with a growing number of financial and legal records, sermons, chronicles, poems, and charters, form the basis of modern historical knowledge of the period.

Although the <u>Anglo-Saxon Chronicle</u> continued to be written until 1154, with the arrival of a Norman ruling class at the end of the 11th century, the ascendancy of

Norman-French in cultural life began, and it was not until the 13th century that English literature regained its strength. Prose was concerned chiefly with popular devotional use, but verse emerged typically in the metrical chronicles, such as <u>Layamon</u>'s *Brut*, and the numerous romances based on the stories of Charlemagne, the legends of King Arthur and the Holy Grail, and the classical episodes of Troy, derived from Homer's <u>Iliad</u> (*c.* 700 <sub>BC</sub>).

First of the great English poets was Geoffrey <u>Chaucer</u>, author of *The <u>Canterbury</u> <u>Tales</u> (c. 1387), whose early work reflected the formality of the predominant French influence, but later the realism of Renaissance Italy. Of purely native inspiration was the medieval alliterative poem <u>Piers Plowman</u> (1367-86) by William <u>Langland</u>, and the anonymous <i>Pearl*, *Patience*, and *Gawayne and the Grene Knight*. Chaucer remained unmatched in the period, although the poet John <u>Skelton</u> was one of Chaucer's more original successors; the first secular morality play in English, *Magnyfycence* (1516), was written by Skelton. More successful were the anonymous authors of songs and carols, and of the ballads, which often formed a complete cycle, such as those concerned with the outlaw <u>Robin Hood</u>. Many stories were carried by travelling minstrels. Drama flourished in the form of mystery plays and morality plays. Prose reached new heights in the 15th century with Thomas <u>Malory</u>'s retelling of the Arthurian legends in *Le <u>Morte d'Arthur</u> (c. 1470)*.

## Ennius, Quintus (c. 239-169 BC)

Early Roman poet who wrote tragedies based on the Greek pattern. His epic poem *Annales* (600 lines of which survive) deals with Roman history, and inspired Virgil's <u>Aeneid</u>.

### Enoch of Ascoli (c. 1400-c. 1457)

Italian humanist teacher and searcher for classical texts. He became tutor to the sons of Cosimo de'Medici. Pope Nicholas V entrusted to Enoch investigations for classical manuscripts, first in the Middle East and then in northern Europe (Denmark, Norway, and Germany). Among the prizes he brought back was the only known copy of Tacitus' minor works.

# Enright, D(enis) J(oseph) (1920-2002)

English poet, novelist, and editor. His style is characterized by a clarity of language and form; by a witty, ironic, and almost conversational tone; and by a concern with moral and social issues, notably social inequality and political oppression. His collections include *Bread Rather Than Blossoms* (1956), *Foreign Devils* (1972), and *Old Men and Comets* (1993). His first novel, *Academic Year*, appeared in 1955.

### Ensler, Eve (1953-)

US playwright. She achieved international success with her book and play *The Vagina Monologues* (1996), based on interviews with more than 200 women about their sexual experiences. After the success of the play, which won a 1997 Obie Award, Ensler initiated V-Day, an international effort to stop violence against women.

The Vagina Monologues comprises a number of first-person vignettes, from hilarious to harrowing, that illuminate women's fantasies and fears, expose abuse, and demystify female sexuality. Ensler has written several other plays, including *Necessary Targets* (2001), the story of two US women who go to Bosnia to help women overcome their painful memories of the war, and *The Good Body* (2004), which explores how women strive to achieve society's standard of beauty.

## Eötvös, József (1813-1871)

Hungarian politician and writer. He supported liberal reforms, including religious tolerance and the widening of education. His novels and essays promote these ideas. Among his works are *A karthausi/The Carthusians* 1839, *A falu jegyzöje/The Village Notary* 1845, and *Magyarország* 1514-ben/Hungary in 1514 1847. Eötvös was minister for education in the revolutionary government of 1848, but resigned and went abroad when liberal reforms were suppressed later that year.

# Ephron, Nora (1941-)

US writer and film director. Her semi-autobiographical novel *Heartburn* (1983) was adapted for film in 1986. Her films include *Silkwood* (1983; co-writer), based on the life of Karen Silkwood (1946-1974), who exposed the hazardous conditions at a plutonium plant, *When Harry Met Sally* (1989; writer), *Sleepless in Seattle* (1993; co-writer and director), *Michael* (1996; co-writer, director, and producer), *You've Got Mail* (1998; director, producer, and co-writer), *Hanging Up* (2000; co-writer), and *Lucky Numbers* (2000; director and producer).

#### epic

genre of narrative poem or cycle of poems dealing with some great deed - often the founding of a nation or the forging of national unity - and often using religious or cosmological themes. The two main epic poems in the Western tradition are *The Iliad* and *The Odyssey*, attributed to the Ancient Greek <u>Homer</u>, which were probably intended to be chanted in sections at feasts. Sometimes called 'heroic poetry', an epic poem may employ the metre (formal structure) termed heroic verse.

Greek and later criticism, which considered the Homeric epic the highest form of poetry, produced the genre of **secondary epic** - such as the *Aeneid* (29-19 BC) of the Roman <u>Virgil</u>, Italian poet Tasso's *Jerusalem Delivered* (1581), and English poet John <u>Milton's Paradise Lost</u> (1667) - which attempted to emulate Homer, often for a patron or for a political cause. The term is also applied to narrative poems of other traditions: the Anglo-Saxon <u>Beowulf</u> and the Finnish <u>Kalevala</u>; in India the Ramayana (c. 300 BC) and <u>Mahabharata</u> (c. 300 BC); and the Babylonian <u>Gilgamesh</u> (c. 3000 BC). All of these evolved in different societies to suit similar social needs and used similar literary techniques.

Because of the length of epic poems and their concern with important themes, the term 'epic' is often applied to works that are written on a large scale and are considered to be of great importance.

## Epicharmus (с. 530-с. 440 вс)

Greek comic poet, reputedly one of the founders of comedy. He was also regarded as a philosopher because of a philosophical poem, probably by somebody else, written under his name. Born on the island of Kos, as a young man he went to Megara in Sicily. After its destruction by Gelon 484 he moved to Syracuse and lived at the court of Hieron I until his death. Of his work 35 titles and a few fragments survive.

#### epigram

short, witty, and pithy saying or short poem. The poem form was common among writers of ancient Rome, including <u>Catullus</u> and <u>Martial</u>. The epigram has been used by English poets Ben Jonson, John <u>Donne</u>, and Alexander <u>Pope</u>, Irish writers Jonathan <u>Swift</u> and W B <u>Yeats</u>, and US writer Ogden <u>Nash</u>. An epigram was originally a religious inscription, such as that on a tomb.

Irish writer Oscar <u>Wilde</u> and US writer Dorothy <u>Parker</u> produced epigrams in conversation as well as in writing. Epigrams are often satirical, as in Wilde's observation: 'Speech was given us to conceal our thoughts.' While Greek epigrams were sometimes satirical, in Roman literature satire became the rule.

The epigram is often based on antithesis, as in Pope's line 'For fools rush in where angels fear to tread.'

#### epigraphy

(Greek epigráphein 'to write on')

art of writing with a sharp instrument on hard, durable materials such as stone; also the scientific study of epigraphical writings or inscriptions.

## Epimenides (lived 6th century BC)

Cretan poet and prophet, born at Phaestus. Although his life story includes a wealth of legend, he is known to have visited Athens at the invitation of Solon in about 596 BC in order to purify the city after a pestilence said to have been caused by the murder of Cylon. Epimenides is believed to be the 'prophet' alluded to by St Paul in his New Testament letter to Titus.

# Epinay, Louise Florence Pénille (1726-1783)

#### born Tardieu d'Esclavelles

French writer. Her publications include *Mes Moments heureux/My Happy Moments* 1758, *Lettres à mon fils/Letters to My Son* 1759, *Conversations d'Emilie/Emily's Conversations* 1774, and *Mémoires et correspondance/Memories and Correspondence*, her chief work, published 1818.

She knew most of the French literary figures of her day, including the philosophers Voltaire, Denis Diderot, and Jean-Jacques Rousseau.

### epistle

#### (Greek epistellein 'to send to'; Latin epistola 'letter')

letter, particularly an open literary letter or letter in the form of a poem. In the New Testament, the Epistles are 21 letters to individuals or to the members of various churches written by Christian leaders, including the 13 written by St Paul, known as the Pauline Epistles, which include the books Romans, Ephesians, and Corinthians. These epistles are intended to instruct the members of the early church during the first days of Christianity. The epistles of Roman writer <u>Horace</u> were widely imitated in later literature, particularly during the Renaissance period. The English poet Alexander <u>Pope</u> wrote many poetical *Epistles*, addressing them both to famous figures and to personal friends.

The Roman poet <u>Ovid</u> established a genre of fictional epistles from characters of myth and history to their lovers. An epistolary novel, is a story told as a series of (fictitious) letters.

#### epode

in Greek drama, part of the chorus; in poetry, a form of lyric. In drama, the strophe was sung while the chorus moved to the right, then the antistrophe while they moved to the left, followed by the epode when they were standing still again.

#### lyric epode

The lyric epode was invented by the Greek poet <u>Archilochus</u> and used by <u>Stesichorus</u>. It consisted of couplets, the first, long line being followed by a shorter one. The Roman poet <u>Horace</u> imitated Archilochus' metre in his fifth book of lyrics, which he named *Epodes*.

'Epode III', on the perils of eating garlic, begins: 'Parentis olim siquis impia manu/ Senile guttur fregerit'/'May those convicted of a parent's awful death/Be made to eat a garlic whole'.

## Equicola, Mario (c. 1470-1525)

Italian humanist and courtier. He was secretary to Isabella d'Este, and his letters and accounts of his travels with her give a valuable insight into Italian court life in the early 16th century. His treatise *De natura de amore/ On the Nature of Love* (1525) shows the influence of Renaissance Neo-Platonism derived from Ficino.

### Erasmus, Desiderius (c. 1469-1536)

Dutch scholar and leading humanist of the Renaissance era, who taught and studied all over Europe and was a prolific writer. His pioneer translation of the Greek New Testament (with parallel Latin text, 1516) exposed the Vulgate as a second-hand document. Although opposed to dogmatism and abuse of church power, he remained impartial during Martin Luther's conflict with the pope.

Erasmus was born in Rotterdam, and as a youth he was a monk in an Augustinian monastery near Gouda. After becoming a priest, he went to study in Paris in 1495. He paid the first of a number of visits to England in 1499, where he met the physician Thomas Linacre, the politician Thomas More, and the Bible interpreter John Colet, and for a time was professor of divinity and Greek at Cambridge University. He also edited the writings of St Jerome and the early Christian authorities, and published *Encomium Moriae/The Praise of Folly* (1511, a satire on church and society that quickly became an international best-seller) and *Colloquia* (1519, dialogues on contemporary subjects). In 1521 he went to Basel, Switzerland, where he edited the writings of the early Christian leaders.

#### **Erasmus**



#### (Image © Billie Love)

Desiderius Erasmus, from an engraving by Hieronimus Cook (1510-1570) of a woodcut by the German artist Albrecht Dürer (1471-1528). As the Latin panel behind Erasmus shows, he was born in Rotterdam, Holland, and died in Basel, Switzerland. Dürer created this formal portrait in 1526 (before Erasmus's death), and it was Cook who added the life dates and other inscriptions.

### Erceldoune, Thomas of (c. 1220-1297)

#### also known as Thomas Learmont; called 'Thomas the Rhymer'

Scottish poet and seer. A great number of prophetic sayings were attributed to him, from which he was given the name of **True Thomas**; he was said in 1286 to have predicted the death of Alexander III. A semi-legendary figure like the English Merlin, he was supposed to have been carried off to Elfland by the fairies, being allowed to revisit Earth for a time.

## Ercilla y Zúñiga, Alonso de (1533-1594)

Spanish soldier and poet. His epic poem *La Araucana* (1569-89) describes a campaign against the Araucanians in Chile. Although of uneven quality, it contains fine descriptions of Latin American scenery and of the battles.

#### **Erckmann-Chatrian**

literary signature of two French writers who collaborated in their work: Emile Erckmann (1822-1899) and Louis Gratien Charles Alexandre Chatrian (1826-1890). Their novels, often describing life in Alsace, include *L'IIIustre Docteur Mathéus* 1859, *Histoire d'un conscrit de 1813* 1864, *Waterloo* 1865, and *Le Blocus* 1867. They also wrote dramas, including *Le Juif polonais* 1869, *L'Ami Fritz* 1876, and *Les Rantzau* 1882.

# Erdrich, (Karen) Louise (1954-)

Chippewa writer. She gained her MA at Johns Hopkins University. Her writing has won many prizes and awards, and her books include *Love Medicine* (1984), *The Beet Queen* (1986), *Tracks* (1988), and *Crown of Columbus* (1991).

She was born in Little Falls, Montana. A child of the Bureau of Indian Affairs boarding schools, she gained her BA from Dartmouth.

### Erinna (lived 4th or 3rd century BC)

Greek poet who probably lived on the island of Telos and died at the age of 19. Three epigrams attributed to her are preserved in the Palatine Anthology. Erinna was most famous for her 'Distaff', a hexameter poem written in a mixture of Aeolic and Doric dialects; only a few of its 300 lines are extant.

### Erskine, John (1879-1951)

US educator and novelist. His academic career was mainly spent as professor of English at Columbia, where he emphasized the study of the classics. In his satirical novels, he took legends, such as Helen of Troy, and put them into modern settings.

He was born in New York City and, as a youth, he showed serious talent as a pianist, studying under Edward MacDowell, but, after gaining his PhD from Columbia

University, he became an English professor. His emphasis on the importance of studying the classic texts gave rise to the 'great books' programmes adopted by many educational institutions. He introduced Lafcadio <u>Hearn</u>'s writings to the West and he coedited the *Cambridge History of American Literature* (1917-21). He kept up his interest in music, giving occasional public concerts, and he was active in the new Juilliard School of Music, serving as its president (1928-37). On retiring from Juilliard and Columbia in 1937, he devoted himself to writing critical and historical works and his memoirs.

# Ervine, St John (Greer) (1883-1971)

Northern Irish playwright, novelist, and theatre critic. Ervine was born in Belfast, but in 1900 moved to London, where he embarked on his writing career. From 1915 to 1916 he was manager of the Abbey Theatre, Dublin, where his first plays, *Mixed Marriage* (1911) and *Jane Clegg* (1914) were produced. Ervine's dramas were realistic in their setting, with pronounced local colour. His later plays include *Anthony and Anna* (1926), *The First Mrs Fraser* (1929), and *Robert's Wife* (1937).

Ervine fell out with the Abbey Theatre company over his lack of sympathy with the republican ideals of the Easter Rising in 1916, and joined the Dublin Fusiliers to serve in World War I. Pensioned off after losing a leg in battle, he settled in Devon and went on to gain a high reputation as a drama critic. He worked for the British newspapers *The Observer* and *The Morning Post*, and, from 1932 onwards, for the BBC. Aside from his dramas, his writings include seven novels and a number of biographies, among the subjects of which were George Bernard Shaw and Oscar Wilde.

# Esdaile, Arundell James Kennedy (1880-1956)

British librarian and bibliographer. He became an assistant at the British Museum in 1903, and was secretary from 1926 until he retired in 1940. Esdaile was a scholar of varied interests, making bibliographical contributions particularly in the field of English literature. His best-known works include *National libraries of the world* (1934), *Student's manual of bibliography* (1931), and *British Museum Library* (1946). He edited the *Library Association Record* (1923-35), was elected president of the Library Association in 1939, holding the office until 1945.

# Esenin, or Yesenin, Sergey Aleksandrovich (1895-1925)

Soviet poet, born in Konstantinovo (renamed Esenino in his honour). He went to Petrograd in 1915, attached himself to the Symbolists, welcomed the Russian Revolution, revived peasant traditions and folklore, and initiated the Imaginist group of poets in 1919. A selection of his poetry was translated in *Confessions of a Hooligan* (1973). He was married briefly to US dancer Isadora Duncan 1922-23.

# Espronceda, José de (1808-1842)

Spanish poet. Originally one of the Queen's guards, he lost his commission because of his political activities, and was involved in the Republican uprisings of 1835 and 1836. His lyric poetry and lifestyle both owed much to Lord Byron.

# Esquiros, Henri-François-Alphonse (c. 1812-1876)

French poet, politician, and historian. He wrote both poems and novels of a strong socialist tendency, and was imprisoned for his *L'Evangile du peuple* 1840, a commentary on the life of Jesus.

#### essay

short piece of non-fiction writing, often dealing with a particular subject from a personal point of view. The essay became a recognized form with the publication of *Essais* (1580) by French writer <u>Montaigne</u> and *Essays* (1597) by English politician, philosopher, and writer Francis Bacon. Today the essay is a part of journalism; articles in the broadsheet newspapers are in the essay tradition.

#### history

English essayist Abraham <u>Cowley</u>, whose essays appeared in 1668, brought a greater ease and freedom to the genre than it had possessed before in England, but it was with the development of periodical (weekly and monthly) literature in the 18th century that the essay became a widely-used form. Great essayists include the English Joseph <u>Addison</u> and Irish Richard <u>Steele</u>, who wrote the English newspapers *Tatler* and *Spectator*, and later, English Samuel Johnson and Irish Oliver <u>Goldsmith</u>. In North America the politician and scientist Benjamin Franklin was noted for his essay style.

#### critical essays

The English writer Charles Lamb wrote a series of essays for the London Magazine under the pseudonym 'Elia' from 1820; to the same period belong the English Leigh <u>Hunt</u>, William <u>Hazlitt</u>, and Thomas <u>De Quincey</u> in England, French C A <u>Sainte-Beuve</u>, and US Ralph Waldo <u>Emerson</u> and Henry <u>Thoreau</u>. From the 19th century the essay was increasingly used in Europe and the USA as a vehicle for literary criticism. The English writer William Hazlitt may be regarded as the originator of the critical essay, and his successors include English Matthew <u>Arnold</u> and Edmund <u>Gosse</u>. The English writer Thomas <u>Macaulay</u>, whose essays began to appear shortly after those of Lamb,

presents a strong contrast to Lamb with his vigorous but less personal tone.

#### revival

There was a revival of the form during the closing years of the 19th and beginning of the 20th centuries, in the work of Scottish writer Robert Louis <u>Stevenson</u>, US Oliver Wendell <u>Holmes</u>, French Anatole <u>France</u> and Théophile <u>Gautier</u>, and English Max <u>Beerbohm</u>. The literary journalistic tradition of the essay was continued by US writers James Thurber, Mark Twain, H L Mencken and Edmund Wilson, and English Desmond MacCarthy, among others, and the critical essay was continued by English writers George Orwell, Cyril Connolly, and F R Leavis, and US writers T S Eliot (later a British citizen), Norman Mailer, John Updike, and others.

## Estaunié, Edouard (1862-1942)

French novelist. He became known with *L'Empreinte* 1895, suggested by his Jesuit education. Other works, mostly psychoanalytical and probing the mysteries of the soul, include *Le Ferment*, *Solitudes*, *L'Infirme aux mains de Lumière*, and *Tels qu'ils furent*.

### Estienne, Charles (1504-1564)

French scholar and publisher, a leading figure in the family firm, the Estienne Press. He was a man of extensive learning, compiler of the popular *Praedium rusticum* in 1554 (a collection of agricultural tracts). He was also the author of the first French encyclopedia (1553) and of the important anatomical textbook *De dissectione* (1548).

### Estius (1542-1613)

#### born Willem Hessels van Est

Dutch Roman Catholic scholar and polemicist. His history of the martyrs of Gorcum (killed by Protestants) appeared in 1603. He was the author of commentaries on the works of Peter Lombard and the epistles of St Paul. A Roman Catholic, he also made notes for an edition of St Augustine. His zeal against the Protestants was such that it led him to defend the murder of William the Silent, Prince of Orange, in 1584.

### **Estonian literature**

a rich oral tradition of folk poetry from the 14th to the 17th century gave rise to a strongly poetic written literature in the 19th century. Estonian legend supplied F R

Kreutzwald (1803-1882) with the basis for his synthetic epic *Kalevipoeg* (1857-61), which in turn inspired the new romantic nationalist movement in which the poets Lydia Koidula (1843-1886) and Anna Haava (1864-1957) were prominent.

Realist writing in the later 19th century, typified by the novels of Eduard Vilde (1865-1933) and the later work of Juhan Liiv (1864-1913), was superseded by the Neo-Romanticism of 'Young Estonia', led by the scholar-poet Gustav Suits (1883-1956). This was followed from 1917 by the less formalist lyricism of the 'Siuru' group, particularly Marie Under (1883-), in its turn yielding to the intellectual aestheticism of the 'Arbujal' group in the 1930s, including Betti Alver (1906-).

From 1945 until the 1960s Stalinist discipline caused Estonian writing to be dominated by exiles, often based in Stockholm, but there has since been a resurgence of writing in Estonia, presided over by the widely translated historical novelist Jaan Kross (1920-).

# Eucken, Rudolf Christoph (1846-1926)

German philosopher and writer, awarded a Nobel Prize for Literature in 1908. He developed a philosophy that he termed 'ethical activism', which dictates that an individual, who is made up of both nature and spirit, has a moral duty to overcome his natural instincts in striving for the spiritual life. In doing so, a personal effort is made to interpret the human will and intuition as well as what the body senses physically. The human spirit is therefore differentiated from the physical senses, but is no less a perception that can be interpreted. His work uses history and human experience, rather than orthodox religion, as a basis for the attainment of the spiritual.

Described as both critical and idealist, his works incorporate history, philosophy, religion, and politics. His works include *Die Lebensanschauungen der grosser Denker/The Problem of Human Life according to the Great Thinkers from Plato to thePresent Day* (1890), *Der Wahrheitsgehalt der Religion/The Truth of Religion* (1901), *Der Sinn und Wert des Lebens/The Meaning and Value of Life* (1908), and *DerSozialismus und seine Lebensgestaltung/Socialism: An Analysis* (1920). The latter dismisses the political system of socialism as one which restricts human freedom in physical, spiritual, and cultural terms. His Nobel Prize rewarded Eucken for the presentation of his philosophy in a strong and compassionate manner.

# Eugene Onegin

novel in verse by Aleksandr <u>Pushkin</u>, published 1823-31. Eugene Onegin, bored with life but sensitive, rejects the love of Tatanya, a humble country girl; she later rises in society and in turn rejects him. Onegin was the model for a number of Russian literary heroes.

# Eugenides, Jeffrey (1960-)

US writer. He is known for his vivid characters and scenes and dark themes and humour. His novels include *The Virgin Suicides* (1993, filmed 2000), an international best-seller about a family of sisters who kill themselves, and *Middlesex*, a family saga about a hermaphrodite, which won the 2003 Pulitzer Prize for Fiction.

## Eupolis (с. 445-с. 411 вс)

Greek comic dramatist. He was a contemporary and rival of <u>Aristophanes</u>, with whom he helped create the Old Comedy form. He is ranked by Horace as one of the greatest writers of his school. His plays, of which only fragments survive, include *Kolakes*, *Maricas*, *The Baptae*, *The Demoi*, and *Poleis*.

# Euripides (c. 485-c. 406 BC)

Athenian tragic dramatist. He is ranked with Aeschylus and Sophocles as one of the three great tragedians. His plays deal with the emotions and reactions of ordinary people and social issues rather than with deities and the grandiose themes of his contemporaries. He wrote about 90 plays, of which 18 and some long fragments survive. These include *Alcestis* (438 Bc), *Medea* (431 Bc), *Andromache* (about 430 Bc), *Hippolytus* (428 Bc), the satyr-drama *Cyclops* (about 424-423 Bc), *Electra* (417 Bc), *Trojan Women* (415 Bc), *Iphigenia in Tauris* (413 Bc), *Iphigenia in Aulis* (about 414-412 Bc), and *The Bacchae* (about 405 Bc) (the last two were produced shortly after his death).

Euripides' questioning of contemporary mores and shrewd psychological analyses made him unpopular, even notorious, during his lifetime, and he was cruelly mocked by the contemporary comic playwright Aristophanes, but he had more influence on the development of later drama than either Aeschylus or Sophocles. He has been called the most modern of the three dramatists, and the 'forerunner of rationalism'. Drawing on the sophists, he transformed tragedy with unheroic themes, sympathetic and disturbing portrayals of women's anger, and plots of incident and reunion.

He was essentially a realist whose art reflected the humours and passions of daily life. Plot was almost immaterial to him, and he introduced such innovations as the prologue, which takes the form of a versified programme, and the *deus ex machina*, or god who comes on at the end to wind up the plot.

# Eusden, Laurence (1688-1730)

English poet. In 1717 he wrote a poem to celebrate the marriage of the duke of

Newcastle, who in gratitude used his powers as Lord Chamberlain to appoint Eusden to the post of poet laureate 1718. This caused resentment among contemporary poets. Eusden also translated from the Latin of the poets Claudian and Statius and contributed to the *Spectator*.

#### Evans, Caradoc (1878-1945)

Welsh novelist. His books were mainly bitter satires on his own land and people, and his first collection of stories, *My People* 1915, was suppressed in Wales; it was followed by *Capel Sion* 1916, *My Neighbours* 1919, and *Pilgrims in a Foreign Land* 1942. His novels include *Nothing to Pay* 1930, *Wasps* 1934, and *Morgan Bible* 1943; he also wrote a play, *Taffy* 1925.

# Evelyn, John (1620-1706)

English diarist and author. He was a friend of the diarist Samuel Pepys, and like him remained in London during the Plague and the Great Fire of London. His fascinating diary, covering the years 1641-1706, and first published in 1818, is an important source of information about 17th-century England. He also wrote some 30 books on a wide variety of subjects, including horticulture and the cultivation of trees, history, religion, and the arts. He was one of the founders of the Royal Society.

### Everson, William Oliver (1912-1994)

US poet who wrote under the pen-name Brother Antonius. A conscientious objector during World War II, he became a Dominican lay brother, but left the order and became associated with the Beat poets, writing erotic and mystical poetry.

He was born in Sacramento, California and studied at Fresno State, California.

# Ewald, Johannes (1743-1781)

Danish poet. His lyrical poetry at its best is unsurpassed in Danish literature, and his plays often show close affinity to French classicism. These include the biblical drama Adam og Eva/Adam and Eve 1769, the tragedy Rolf Krage 1770, the lyrical Balders Död/The Death of Balder 1773, and the patriotic Fiskerne/The Fishermen 1779.

English poet. He published his first book of verse *Poems and Songs* in 1939. His second book, *The Londoners* (1964), mainly topographical poems, was followed by many volumes of light, but sometimes by contrast horrific and graphic, poems of technical merit, collected in *The Collected Ewart 1933-1980* (1980), *Collected Poems 1980-1990* (1991), and *Selected Poems 1933-1993* (1996).

### Ewing, Juliana Horatia Orr (1841-1885)

English writer. She wrote for children; among her stories are *Mrs Overtheway* 1869, *The Brownies and Other Tales* 1870, *Old Fashioned Fairy Tales* 1882, *Snapdragon and Old Father Christmas* 1888, and *Verses for Children* 1888.

#### exemplum

in Western medieval and Renaissance literature, a short narrative text that contains a moral. Examples include works by the French essayist <u>Montaigne</u>, the philosopher Pascal, and the Italian political theorist <u>Machiavelli</u>.

### **Exeter Book**

#### or Codex Exoniensis

manuscript probably dating from the first half of the 11th century, presented to Exeter cathedral (where it is still preserved) by Leofric, bishop of Exeter from 1050-71. In addition to some legal documents, it contains an anthology of Old English poetry.

It includes among other pieces *Widsith*, *Deor*, *The Wanderer*, *The Seafarer*, *The Rhyming Poem*, *The Whale*, *The Ruin*, a number of religious poems, and some 80 riddles. It is one of the most important sources for Old English poetry.

# Faber, Geoffrey Cust (1889-1961)

English publisher and author. He founded the firm of Faber & Gwyer, which now trades under the name of Faber and Faber. His books include *Oxford Apostles* (1933) and *Jowett* (1959).

He was born in Great Malvern and was educated at Rugby School and Christ Church, Oxford. Elected a fellow of All Souls, he was later called to the Bar. As president of the Publishers Association, 1939-41, he organized the campaign to free books from purchase tax. He also published a collection of poetry, *The Buried Stream* (1941). He was knighted in 1954.

#### fable

genre of story, in either verse or prose, in which animals or inanimate objects are given the mentality and speech of human beings to point out a moral. Fables are common in folklore and children's literature, and range from the short fables of the ancient Greek writer <u>Aesop</u> to the modern novel <u>Animal Farm</u> (1945) by English writer George Orwell.

Fabulists include the Roman <u>Phaedrus</u>, French poet <u>La Fontaine</u> and, in English, Geoffrey <u>Chaucer</u> and Jonathan <u>Swift</u>.

#### fabliau

form of humorous verse tale composed mainly in northeastern France during the 13th century. About 150 fabliaux survive, varying in length from 18 to over 1,300 lines. Mostly anonymous, they were often written by jongleurs who recited them wherever they could find patronage; some, however, are by well-known poets such as Rutebeuf. Spiced with sharp, frequently bawdy, but seldom satirical humour, the fabliaux depict everyday life among all classes.

### Fabre d'Eglantine, Philippe François Nazaire (1755-1794)

French dramatic poet. In spite of the hostility of his many enemies, he was successful with *Le Collatéral* and followed it up with his play *Philinte de Molière* 1790, a sequel to Molière's *Le Misanthrope*. He is also the author of the popular song 'II pleut, il pleut bergère'.

### Fadeev, Aleksandr Aleksandrovich (1901-1956)

#### pseudonym of Aleksandr Aleksandrovich Bulyga

Russian novelist. He wrote *Razgrom/The Nineteen* (1927) about Siberian Red guerrillas during the Civil War, and *Molodaya Gvardiia/The Young Guard* (1945). As general secretary of the Soviet Writers' Union 1946-55, Fadeev took a prominent part in the campaign led by Communist Party secretary Zhdanov in the name of socialist realism against unorthodox trends in literature. However, his own work sometimes attracted official sanction for not stressing the central role of the party. Fadeev espoused Stalinism; when this fell into disfavour after the dictator's death,

he committed suicide.

#### Faerie Queene, The

epic poem by Edmund <u>Spenser</u>, published in 1590-96, dedicated to Elizabeth I. Drawing on the traditions of chivalry and courtly love, the poem was planned as an epic in 12 books, following the adventures of 12 knights, each representing a different chivalric virtue, beginning with the Red Cross Knight of holiness. Only six books were completed; part of a seventh (*The Mutabilitie Cantos*) also survives.

#### Faesi, Robert (1883-1972)

Swiss poet, novelist, and playwright. His tragedy *Odysseus und Nausikaa* 1911, the drama *Opferspiel* 1925, and comedies *Die offenen Türen* 1911 and *Die Fassade* 1918, are of a quality unusual in the Swiss theatre. Faesi's novels include *Die Stadt der Vater* 1941 and *Die Stadt der Freiheit* 1944. In 1928 he received the Swiss Schiller Prize for his collection of poems, *Der brennende Busch*.

### Faguet, Emile (1841-1916)

French literary critic. He was a professor at the Sorbonne from 1890 and the founder and editor of the *Revue latine*. Among his most important works are *La Tragédie française au XVI<sup>e</sup> siècle* 1883, *Etudes littéraires* 1887-93, and *Politiques et moralistes du XIX<sup>e</sup> siècle* 1891-1900.

The articles he wrote over a period of 20 years as drama critic of the *Journal des débats* were collected in *Propos de théâtre* 1903-07, and other volumes.

### Faidit, Gaucelme (c. 1160-c. 1215)

Provençal troubadour. He was at first a jongleur, and travelled with his wife, Guilhelma Monja, to various European courts. In 1202 he accompanied Boniface III of Montserrat to the Fourth Crusade and several of his songs exhort the young and strong to take part in the holy war. Among his patrons were Richard the Lion-Heart (whose death he lamented in a beautiful *planh*), Raymond d'Agoult, and Geoffrey of Brittany. New Zealand poet and publicist. His sharply critical engagement with New Zealand life, art, and letters, stimulated by absence in England in the early 1930s, issued in a stream of pamphlets, satiric verse, and colourfully imaginative poetic works. His numerous publications include *Strange Rendezvous* 1952 and *Three Poems: Dominion, The Voyage, To a Friend in the Wilderness* 1952 and the satirical volumes *The Rakehelly Man* 1946 and *The Disadvantages of Being Dead* (published posthumously 1958).

Fairless, Michael (1869-1901)

#### pseudonym of Margaret Fairless Barber

English essayist. *The Roadmender* 1902, completed on her deathbed, was very popular in the early 20th century. The best known of her other books are *The Gathering of Brother Hilarius* 1901 and *The Grey Brethren* 1905.

## fairy tale

genre of magical story, usually originating in folklore. Typically in European fairy tales, a poor, brave, and resourceful hero or heroine goes through testing adventures to eventual good fortune.

The Germanic tales collected by the <u>Grimm brothers</u> have been retold in many variants. Charles <u>Perrault's</u> retellings include 'Cinderella' and 'The Sleeping Beauty'. The form may also be adapted for more individual moral and literary purposes, as was done by Danish writer Hans Christian <u>Andersen</u>.

# Faithfull, Emily (1835-1895)

British philanthropist and writer. She was devoted to the improvement of the status, remuneration, and working conditions of women. Her publications include *Change upon Change* (1868) and *Three Visits to America* (1884).

In 1860, she started the Victoria Press, employing women to do the printing. Between 1863 and 1881, she published the *Victoria Magazine*, and used it as a platform to plead for greater equality between the sexes.

# Falco, Gian

pseudonym of Italian author Giovanni Papini.

## Falconer, William (1732-1769)

Scottish poet. *The Shipwreck* 1762 was based on a personal experience off the coast of Greece. Despite the somewhat incongruous mixture of an artificial, elegant style with the breezy, technical language of a sailor, the vivid descriptive passages of the poem are memorable. In 1764 Falconer directed a rhymed lampoon, *The Demagogue*, against John Wilkes and Charles <u>Churchill</u>, and in 1769 published his *Marine Dictionary*.

# Falkberget, Johan (1879-1967)

Norwegian novelist. He described the life of the miners and mountain farmers in the Røros district in numerous colourful and intense stories. His most important works are the historical novel *Den fjerde nattevakt/The Fourth Night Watch* 1923 and the two novel cycles *Christianus Sextus* 1927-35 and *Nattens brød/Night's Bread* 1940-59.

## Falkland, Samuel

pseudonym of Dutch author and dramatist Herman Heijermans.

### Falkner, John Meade (1858-1932)

English novelist. Of his novels the most popular was *Moonfleet*, 1898; others are *The Lost Stradivarius* 1895 and *The Nebuly Coat* 1903. A keen walker, he also wrote handbooks to the counties of Oxford and what was then Berkshire.

### Fallada, Hans (1893-1947)

#### pseudonym of Rudolf Ditzen

German writer. His novels depict in a realistic fashion the everyday problems of the ordinary person, as in *Kleiner Mann, was nun?/Little Man, What Now?* 1932. Both this and his *Altes Herz geht auf die Reise* 1936 were made into films. Other works include *Bauern, Bonzen und Bomben* 1931, *Wir hatten mal ein Kind* 1934, and *Der ungeliebte Mann* 1940.

## Fall of Man, the

myth that explains the existence of evil as the result of some primeval wrongdoing by humanity. It occurs independently in many cultures. The biblical version, recorded in the Old Testament (Genesis 3), provided the inspiration for the epic poem *Paradise Lost* (1667) by John <u>Milton</u>.

The Fall of Man (as narrated in the Bible) occurred in the Garden of Eden when the Serpent tempted Eve to eat the fruit of the Tree of Knowledge. Disobeying God's will, she ate the fruit and gave some to Adam. This caused their expulsion from the Garden and, in Milton's words, 'brought death into the world and all our woe'.

### Fanon, Frantz Omar (1925-1961)

French political writer. His experiences in Algeria during the war for liberation in the 1950s led to the writing of *Les Damnés de la terre/The Wretched of the Earth* (1964), which calls for violent revolution by the peasants of the developing world.

## Fanshawe, Richard (1608-1666)

English diplomat and poet. He translated Giovanni Guarini's *II pastor fido* 1647 and <u>Camoëns'sOs Lusiades</u> 1655, and wrote some original verse.

### fantasy fiction

genre of unrealistic fiction. The term has been loosely applied to a range of works and attempts to define it more precisely have not been successful. However, a feature shared by most fantasy fiction is its reliance on strangeness of setting (often an imaginary or dream world) and of characters (supernatural or non-human beings).

The genre was advanced by 19th-century works, such as *The King of the Golden River* (1851) by John <u>Ruskin</u>, *The Rose and the Ring* (1855) by William Makepeace <u>Thackeray</u>, *The Water Babies* (1863) by Charles <u>Kingsley</u>, and *Alice in Wonderland* (1865) by Lewis <u>Carroll</u>, most of which were written for children but also appealed to adults. As a commercial literary genre, fantasy began to thrive after the success of J R R <u>Tolkien's *The Lord of the Rings*</u> (1954-55). Terry <u>Pratchett</u>, one of Britain's leading fantasy writers, has produced many best-sellers including *Mort* (1987), and has achieved cult status.

Fanthorpe, U(rsula) A (1929-)

English poet. Her first collection, *Side Effects* (1978), was highly praised as a strong and clear new voice in English poetry. *Standing To* (1982) was chosen as the *Financial Times* book of the year for its humour and emotional appeal. Her vision is often an amusing and restrained response to pain.

Fanthorpe was born in Kent and studied at Oxford University. She was a teacher in Cheltenham for many years before taking a job as a clerk in a hospital in Bristol. In 1980 she won a prize in a poetry competition organized by the *Observer*, the Arvon Foundation, and the South Bank Show, and in 1983 she won a Travelling Scholarship from the Society of Authors. In 1994 she became the first woman to be nominated for the post of professor of poetry at Oxford University.

#### Farazdaq, al- (c. 641-c. 728)

#### pseudonym of Tammam Ibn Ghalib Abu Firas

Arabic poet. He and his rival Jarir were the most prominent poets of the Ummayad period, and their satirical poetry was a major feature of disputes between different tribal groups at that time.

#### Fargue, Léon-Paul (1876-1947)

French poet. His works include *Poèmes* 1905 and 1912, *Pour la musique* 1912, *Banalité* 1928, *Epaisseurs* 1928, and *Sous la lampe* 1929. *Haute solitude* 1941, *Déjeuners de soleil* 1942, and *Méandres* 1946 were among his prose writings.

#### Faria e Sousa, Manuel de (1590-1649)

Portuguese writer. His life's work was a history of the Portuguese in all parts of the world. It was never completed, although several volumes appeared after his death: *Europa Portuguesa* (three volumes), *Asia Portuguesa* (three volumes), and *Africa Portuguesa*. His poems are mostly contained in *Fuente de Aganipe* 1644-46.

#### Farid ud-din 'Attar (lived 12th century AD)

Persian mystic and religious poet. He wrote 'Mantiq al-Tayr/Language of the Birds', a long, mystical, and allegorical poem. Shiite tendencies in his work led to his expulsion from Nishapur.

He is thought to have lived during last half of the 12th century and beginning of the 13th century AD, but there is no certainty as to the precise period of his life. It was

his 'Mazhar al-'Aja 'ib/Manifestation of Wonders' that caused his expulsion from Nishapur and afterwards he lived chiefly in Mecca. He also wrote the 'Pand-nama/ Book of Counsels', the 'Tadhkirat al-Awliya'/Memoirs of Saints' and many other works.

#### Farjeon, Eleanor (1881-1965)

English author. She wrote many novels, poems, and plays for children, including Nursery Rhymes of London Town 1916, Martin Pippin in the Apple Orchard 1921, Martin Pippin in the Daisy Field 1937, The Glass Slipper 1944, and The Little Bookroom 1955. She was the sister of Herbert Farjeon.

## Farjeon, Herbert (1887-1945)

English dramatist and critic. His light plays include *Friends* (1917) and *Many Happy Returns* (1928); he also wrote (in collaboration with his sister Eleanor <u>Farjeon</u>) the musical plays *The Two Bouquets* (1936) and *The Glass Slipper* (1944). He wrote and directed sketches for revues and was drama critic for several papers.

#### Farnham, Thomas Jefferson (c. 1804-c. 1848)

US traveller and writer. He travelled to Oregon in 1839 and wrote *Travels In the Great Western Prairies* (1841). He moved to San Francisco in 1846 and practised law.

He was born in Vermont.

### Farnol, John Jeffrey (1878-1952)

English novelist. His successful picaresque romance *The Broad Highway* 1910 was followed by *The Amateur Gentleman* 1913, *The Chronicles of the Imp* 1915, and *Our Admirable Betty* 1918.

### Farrar, Frederic William (1831-1903)

Indian-born English cleric and author. His career included being honorary chaplain to Queen Victoria, canon of Westminster, rector and archdeacon of St Margaret's, and dean of Canterbury. He also wrote numerous theological works.

He was born in Bombay (now Mumbai), India, and was educated at London University

and Trinity College, Cambridge. He was an assistant master at Harrow, then headmaster of Marlborough College, and became a fellow of the Royal Society. He published a number of books on classical and modern philology, but his theological writings, such as *The Witness of History to Christ* (1871), proved more popular. His other works include *The Life of Christ* (1874), *Life of St Paul* (1879), *Early Days of Christianity* (1882), *Lives of the Fathers* (1888), and *Darkness and Dawn* (1891).

## Farrell, J(ames) G(ordon) (1935-1979)

English historical novelist. His work includes *Troubles* (1970), set in Ireland just after World War I, the *The Siege of Krishnapur* (1973) (Booker Prize), describing the Indian Mutiny, and *The Singapore Grip* (1978) which describes the fall of Singapore to the Japanese. His novel *The Hill Station* (1981) was unfinished when Farrell died.

# Farrell, James T(homas) (1904-1979)

US novelist and short-story writer. His naturalistic documentary of the Depression, the *Studs Lonigan* trilogy (1932-35) comprising *Young Lonigan*, *The Young Manhood of Studs Lonigan*, and *Judgment Day*, describes the development of a young Catholic man in Chicago after World War I, and was written from his own experience. *The Face of Time* (1953) is one of his finest works.

Farrère, Claude (1876-1957)

#### pseudonym of Frédéric Charles Bargone

French writer. He published some 30 novels, often set in exotic locations, including *Les Civilisés* 1905 (set in Saigon), *L'Homme qui assassina* 1907 (with Constantinople as a background), *La Bataille* 1911 (which takes place in Japan), and many other works, including *Fumée d'opium* 1904, a volume of short stories.

# Fast, Howard Melvin (1914-2003)

US writer. Having been blacklisted for his Communist Party membership, he declared his disenchantment with the communism of Stalin in *The Naked God* (1957). He is best known for his historical novels, including *Freedom Road* (1944), *Spartacus* (1952), and *The Immigrants* (1977).

He was born in New York City.

## Fathers and Sons

novel by Ivan <u>Turgenev</u>, published in Russia 1862. Its hero, Bazarov, rejects the traditional values of his landowning family in favour of nihilistic revolutionary ideas, but his love for a noblewoman destroys his beliefs.

# Fauchet, Claude (1530-1601)

French critic and historian. He was historiographer ('official historian') of France under Henry IV. He wrote *Antiquités gauloises et françaises jusqu'à Clovis* (1579-99) and *Recueil de l'origine de la langue et poésie française* (1581), by which he may be considered to be the first French historian of literature.

# Faulk, John Henry (1913-1990)

US folklorist, and radio and television performer. A radio and television storyteller, his career was destroyed when, under McCarthyism, when he was accused of little more than being opposed to anticommunism. His successful libel suit in 1962 effectively ended blacklisting in the entertainment industry.

He was born in Austin, Texas. He wrote *Fear on Trial* (1964) about his experiences under the anticommunist witch-hunt and, in later years, he lectured on First Amendment issues.

# Faulkner, William (Cuthbert) (1897-1962)

US novelist. His works employ difficult narrative styles in their epic mapping of a quasi-imaginary region of the American South. His third novel, *The <u>Sound and the</u> <u>Fury</u> (1929), deals with the decline of a Southern family, told in four voices, beginning with an especially complex stream-of-consciousness narrative. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1949.* 

#### main works

Later works using highly complex structures include *As I Lay Dying* (1930), *Light in August* (1932), and *Absalom, Absalom!* (1936). These were followed by a less experimental trilogy - *The Hamlet* (1940), *The Town* (1957), and *The Mansion* (1959) - covering the rise of the materialistic Snopes family. Oxford, Mississippi, was his model for the town of Jefferson in Yoknapatawpha County, the setting of his major novels. He was recognized as one of America's greatest writers only after World War II.

# Fauset, Jessie R(edmon) (1882-1961)

US writer. As literary editor of the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People's magazine *Crisis* (1919-26), she was influential in promoting black Francophone and Harlem Renaissance writers. She also wrote four novels featuring strong black heroines.

She was born in Fredericksville, New Jersey, graduated Phi Beta Kappa from Cornell University and studied at the Sorbonne, Paris. After a long career as a high school teacher in Washington, DC, and New York, she joined the faculty of the Hampton Institute (1949), becoming one of the first black American women to receive recognition as an intellectual.

## Fausset, Hugh l'anson (1895-1965)

English critic. He published studies of Keats 1922, Tennyson 1923, Donne 1924, Coleridge 1926, Tolstoy 1928, Wordsworth 1933, and Walt Whitman 1942. He also wrote some poetry and edited *Minor Poets of the Eighteenth Century* 1930. *Between the Tides* 1943 and *The Last Days* 1945 are novels, while *A Modern Prelude* 1933 and *Towards Fidelity* 1952 are autobiographical.

### Faust

play by Johann Wolfgang von <u>Goethe</u>, completed in two parts in 1808 and 1832. Mephistopheles attempts to win over the soul of the world-weary Faust but ultimately fails after helping Faust in the pursuit of good.

### Faust, Frederick Shiller (1892-1944)

#### pen-name Max Brand

US writer and poet, one of the earliest mass-market writers, with over 500 novels. The 100 'Max Brand' Westerns, and his prolific detective stories, thrillers, and screenplays, earned him the sobriquet 'king of the pulp writers'. His most famous works are *Destry Rides Again* (1930) and the *Dr. Kildare* film series.

He was born in Seattle, Washington. The first 'Max Brand' Western was published in 1917, and he wrote under a further 18 pseudonyms. He also wrote serious poetry, published in such collections as *Dionysus in Hades* (1931). He lived in Italy (1926-38) and was killed in action there while working as a war correspondent.

## Fear and Loathing in Las Vegas

reportage novel in 1971 by US journalist Hunter S <u>Thompson</u>, illustrated by British artist Ralph Steadman. Subtitled 'A Savage Journey to the Heart of the American Dream', it is the outrageous narrative of Doctor Gonzo's nightmare drive through Nixon-era America, fuelled by drugs, alcohol, and the compulsive desire to keep moving.

## Fearing, Kenneth Flexner (1902-1961)

US poet and writer. A freelance writer, he was concerned with themes of social justice, as seen in his poetry, and in the novel *The Big Clock* (1946).

He was born in Oak Park, Illinois.

### 'Federalist Papers'

in US politics, a series of 85 letters published in *The Federalist* in the newly independent USA in 1788, attempting to define the relation of the states to the nation, and making the case for a federal government. The papers were signed 'Publius', the joint pseudonym of three leading political figures: Alexander Hamilton, John Jay, and James Madison.

### Federal Writers' Project

US arts project founded 1934 by the Works Progress Administration to encourage and employ writers during the Depression, generate compilations of regional records and folklore, and develop a series of guides to states and regions.

# Federman, Raymond (1928-)

US writer. His playful postmodernist texts draw on his French-Jewish boyhood, his family's death in Auschwitz, and his post-war emigration to the USA. He coined the term 'surfiction' to describe a form of writing which lays bare narrative conventions, resists interpretation, and engages with historical reality. His works include *Double or Nothing* (1971), *The Voice in the Closet* (1979), and *The Twofold Vibration* (1982).

# Fedin, Konstantin Aleksandrovich (1892-1977)

Russian novelist and literary official. His *Cities and Years* 1924 revived the traditional realistic novel in postrevolutionary Russia. Later, he embraced socialist realism. Fedin's main themes are the Russian Revolution and Civil War, the impact of the USSR on Western Europe, and the role of the intellectual in Soviet society.

In the 1920s, he was a member of Evgeni Zamyatin's literary group the Serapion Brothers. Fedin's later works include *The Brothers* 1928, *An Extraordinary Summer* 1948, and *The Bonfire* 1962-65. As secretary to the Soviet Writers' Union, he was responsible for banning publication of Alexander Solzhenitsyn's novel *Rakovy corpus/ Cancer Ward* in 1968.

# Feiffer, Jules (1929-)

US cartoonist, playwright, and scriptwriter. His satirical cartoons in the *Village Voice* featured neurotic New Yorkers negotiating contemporary social issues. He became a regular contributor to *The New Yorker*. His plays include *Little Murders* (1967), and his best-known film script is *Carnal Knowledge* (1971).

He was born in New York City. His *Village Voice* cartoons became nationally syndicated in 1959 and they won him a Pulitzer Prize in 1986.

### Feijoo y Montenegro, Benito Jerónimo (1676-1764)

Spanish essayist. A monk, he devoted his life to writing didactic essays designed to improve the religious, technological, and cultural standards of his country. His main works are the eight volumes of *Teatro crítico universal* 1726-39 and *Cartas eruditas* 1724-60.

#### Feinstein, Elaine (1930-)

#### born Elaine Coolin

English poet, novelist, and translator. Her verse, first published in *In a Green Eye* (1966), has an international flavour as well as reflecting a wide variety of forms. Her *Selected Poems* was published in 1994. Her novels, such as her first, *The Circle* (1970), often explore female identity and family relationships; several, such as *The Border* (1984), have Jewish themes.

Dutch author. Influenced by <u>Goethe</u>, Friedrich <u>Klopstock</u>, and Christoph <u>Wieland</u>, he wrote sentimental, morbid novels as well as tragedies, didactic poems, and lyrics. His best novels, *Julia* 1783 and *Ferdinand en Constantia* 1785, were both written in emulation of Goethe's *Werther*.

#### Felltham (or Feltham), Owen (c. 1602-1668)

English essayist. He was noted for the volume of essays *Resolves*, *Divine*, *Morall and Politicall* 1623. His style was modelled on that of Francis Bacon, and has more to offer than the content. Later editions of *Resolves* include a collection of poems called *Lusoria*, *or Occasional Pieces*.

## feminist criticism

set of literary theories concerned with women as readers and writers of literary texts and as characters within them. Issues addressed include whether a specifically female writing exists, the way male authors perpetuate patriarchal attitudes through their writing, and the rehabilitation of neglected female authors.

## femme fatale

(French 'fatal woman') woman who brings about the ruin of her lovers; contrasted with the *femme fragile*, the typical Pre-Raphaelite pale, unearthly woman. The *femme fatale* was common in Romantic literature; for example, the heroine of the play *Salomé* by Oscar Wilde and the character of Lulu in *Pandora's Box* by Frank Wedekind.

# Fénelon, François de Salignac de la Mothe (1651-1715)

French archbishop and writer. Louis XIV appointed him tutor to his grandson, the duke of Burgundy, in 1689. He then became archbishop of Cambrai and was involved in the quietism controversy.

He was born at the Chateau de Fenelon, Perigord. He entered the theological college of St Sulpice, Paris, took holy orders there in 1675, and in 1678 became director of the Nouvelles Catholiques, a Parisian institution for female converts from Protestantism. On the revocation of the Edict of Nantes in 1685, he accompanied a mission to the Protestants of Poitou and Saintonge. He was presented to the abbey of St Valery in 1694. During the quietism controversy he supported Madame Guyon, who, accused of sharing the more extreme views of Molinos, was twice imprisoned.

Fenelon defended her so far as the attacks against her were personal, and this led to a long and acrimonious controversy with Bossuet, with whom he had previously been on the best of terms. Bossuet issued his *Instruction sur les Etats d'Oraison*, and Fenelon took up Madame Guyon's cause, and defended some of her teachings in his *Explication des Maximes des Saints sur la Vie Interieure* (1697). The latter was published first in violation of an understanding between the two prelates, apparently without the knowledge of the author, and this led to their final estrangement. After some more delay, during which the controversy grew more embittered, the Pope, pressed by Louis XIV, condemned the *Maximes des Saints* in 1699 and Fenelon honourably accepted the decision in accordance with his own declared views on papal authority. Pope Innocent summed up the matter in the words, 'Fenelon erred by loving God too much, and Bossuet by loving his neighbour too little.'

# Fenoglio, Beppe (1922-1963)

Italian novelist. His work is set mainly during World War II and depicts the Italian resistance fighters of his native region near Alba, northern Italy; novels include *II Partigiano Johnny* (unfinished) 1968 and *I ventrito' giorni della citta' di Alba* 1952.

## Fenton, Elijah (1683-1730)

English poet. He worked with Alexander <u>Pope</u> on the translation of the *Odyssey*, the first, fourth, nineteenth, and twentieth books being translated by Fenton. He also edited the works of Milton and Edmund Waller 1725 and 1729, and wrote a tragedy, *Marianne* 1723, and many poems.

# Fenton, James (Martin) (1949-)

English poet and journalist who has achieved recognition for his mainly political and satirical poetry, winning the Whitbread Award for poetry with *Out of Danger* (1993).

His first collection was *Terminal Moraine* (1972). Other publications include A *Vacant Possession* (1978), *Children in Exile* (1984), *All the Wrong Places: Adrift in the Politics of Asia* (1990), and *Leonardo's Nephew: Essays on Art and Artists* (1998).

## Ferber, Edna (1887-1968)

US novelist and dramatist. Her novel *Show Boat* 1926 was adapted as an operetta 1927 by Jerome Kern and Oscar Hammerstein II, and her plays, in which she collaborated with George S Kaufmann, include *The Royal Family* 1927, about the

Barrymore theatrical family, Dinner at Eight 1932, and Stage Door 1936.

Her novels include *The Girls* 1921, *So Big* 1924 (Pulitzer Prize), *Cimarron* 1930, *Giant* 1952 (filmed 1956), about Texas, and *Ice Palace* 1959, about Alaska.

## Ferdausi

alternative transliteration of <u>Firdausi</u>, a Persian poet.

# Ferguson, Samuel (1810-1886)

Irish antiquary and poet and a leading figure in Protestant cultural nationalism. Ferguson was born in Belfast and educated at Trinity College, Dublin. He was appointed deputy keeper of the Irish Records in 1867 and his antiquarian works include the *Ogham Inscriptions* (1887). He was a notable president of the Royal Irish Academy. Ferguson also wrote poetry, his lyrics and ballads anticipating the Irish revival. *The Forging of the Anchor* (1883) is generally regarded as his masterpiece. His other verse includes *Lays of the Western Gael* (1865) and the epic poem *Congal* (1872).

# Fergusson, Robert (1750-1774)

Scottish poet. His realist and humorous poems were first published 1773 and greatly influenced Robert <u>Burns</u>. In 'The Daft Days', 'Hallow Fair', 'Leith Races', and 'Auld Reekie' Fergusson depicts with vividness and gusto the rough hearty life of his native city of Edinburgh. Writing both in Scots and English, he has an urbane Augustan quality.

## Ferlinghetti, Lawrence Monsanto (1919-)

#### born Lawrence Ferling

US poet and writer. In San Francisco, he taught French and started the City Lights Bookstore. Regarded as one of the founders of the <u>Beat Generation</u>, he published collections of poems such as *A Coney Island of the Mind* (1958).

He was born in New York City and studied at the University of North Carolina, Columbia University, and the Sorbonne in Paris. As well as producing poetry, he was a playwright and novelist.

## Fermor, Patrick (Michael) Leigh (1915-)

English travel writer who joined the Irish Guards in 1939 after four years' travel in central Europe and the Balkans. His books include *The Traveller's Tree* (1950), *A Time to Keep Silence* (1953), *Mani* (1958), *Roumeli* (1966), *A Time of Gifts* (1977), *Between the Woods and the Water* (1986), *Three Letters from the Andes* (1991), and *Words of Mercury* (2003).

## Fernández de Avellaneda, Alonso

Spanish novelist who in 1614 published a sequel to Miguel de <u>Cervantes</u>'s *Don Quixote*, entitled *Segundo tomo del ingenioso hidalgo don Quijote de la Mancha*. He wrote under this pseudonym, and his real name is unknown.

#### Ferragus

or Ferracute, Ferragut, Fernguf, or Veernagu

giant of medieval <u>romance</u>. Orlando slew him with a wound in the navel, his only vulnerable part.

# Ferreira, Antonio (1528-1569)

Portuguese poet. He wrote numerous striking sonnets, elegies, and odes, but is best known for his epistles. In his drama *Ines de Castro* he worked the most poignant and popular events of Portuguese chronicles into the form of Greek tragedy. He also wrote two comedies, *Bristo* and *Cioso*. He was known as 'the Portuguese Horace' for introducing a classical style into Portuguese poetry and drama.

## Ferrier, Susan (Edmonstone) (1782-1854)

Scottish novelist. Her anonymously published books are *Marriage* (1818), *The Inheritance* (1824), and *Destiny* (1831), all of which give a lively picture of Scottish manners and society.

**Fescennine verses** 

#### or versus fescennini

early form of Italian poetry, named after Fescennia in Etruria, consisting of obscene and abusive verse dialogues sung by masked dancers at harvest, weddings, and other festivals. Originally intended as fertility or good-luck charms, the Fescennine verses were also believed to avert the evil eye.

## Fet (or Foeth), Afanasi Afanasievich (1820-1892)

#### also known as Afanasi Afanasievich Shenshin

Russian lyric poet and translator. He captured in verse his personal feelings and fleeting impressions, particularly of nature and love, as in the four-volume *Vechernie ogni/Evening Lights* 1883-91. He was fiercely attacked by the anti-aesthetic, radical critics of the 1850s and 1860s. Fet's later poetry is more metaphysical in flavour. He was a lifelong friend of the writers Leo Tolstoy and Turgenev.

#### Feuchtwanger, Lion (1884-1958)

German author. He published the novels *Die hässliche Herzogin/The Ugly Duchess* 1923 and *Jud Süss/Jew Süss* 1925. The latter presents a picture of the lives of central European Jews in the 18th century. His *Erfolg* 1929 bears a close resemblance to Arnold Zweig's novel *The Case of Sergeant Grischa*, its theme being founded on the unavailing attempts of a determined woman to secure the freedom of a man wrongly condemned to prison.

#### Feuillet, Octave (1821-1890)

French novelist and playwright. His best-known work is the novel *Le Roman d'un jeune homme pauvre* 1858; other novels include *Bellah* 1850, *L'Histoire de Sibylle* 1863, and *La morte* 1886. His plays include *Le pour et le contre* 1853, *La belle au bois dormant* 1867, and *La partie des dames* 1883.

## Feydeau, Ernest Aimé (1821-1873)

French writer. *Fanny* 1858 is his best-known novel; others include *Daniel* 1859, *Sylvie* 1861, and *La Comtesse de Chalis* 1867.

# Ficino, Marsilio (1433-1499)

Italian philosopher. He created an influential synthesis of Platonism and medieval theology. He assigned to the human soul the central place in the hierarchy of the universe, and he believed that the soul ascended towards God through contemplation. His doctrine of platonic love became one of the most popular concepts of later Renaissance literature.

Ficino founded a Platonic Academy in Florence in 1462. He was ordained a priest in 1473 and retired in 1494. He translated both Plato and Plotinus, the founder of neo-Platonism, into Latin, thus becoming one of the principal channels of their diffusion through Renaissance Europe. His main work is *Theologica Platonica de immortalitate animae/Platonic Theology Concerning the Immortality of the Soul* (1482).

## fiction

in literature, any work in which the content is completely or largely invented. The term describes imaginative works of narrative <u>prose</u> (such as the novel or the short story), and is distinguished from non-fiction writing (such as history, biography, or works on practical subjects) and from poetry.

Fiction need not be only prose literature; poems can also be fictional. Genres such as the <u>historical novel</u> often combine a fictional plot with real events; biography may also be fictionalized through imagined conversations or events.

# Fiedler, Leslie Aaron (1917-)

US literary critic and educator. He analysed US fiction in terms of its embodiment of archetypes and cultural myths and he later located such myths in popular art. He joined the faculty of the State University of New York at Buffalo.

He was born in Newark, New Jersey, gained his PhD from the University of Wisconsin and taught at the University of Montana before going to Buffalo. His trilogy of works critiquing the novel began with *Love and Death in the American Novel* (1960).

# Field, Eugene (1850-1895)

US journalist and poet. He is chiefly known for his poems of childhood, among which 'Little Boy Blue' and 'Wynken, Blynken, and Nod' are favourites. They appear in the collection *A Little Book of Western Verse* 1899.

Field, Michael

joint pseudonym of Katharine Harris Bradley (1848-1914) and Edith Emma Cooper (1862-1913)

English writers. Aunt and niece, they lived together and worked very closely on many poetic tragedies and eight volumes of verse, including *Long Ago* 1889, *Sight and Song* 1892, *Poems of Adoration* 1912, and *Mystic Trees* 1913. *Works and Days* 1933 contains extracts from their journal.

# Fielding, Helen (1960-)

English writer who achieved great popular success with the best-selling comic novels *Bridget Jones's Diary* (1997; filmed 2001) and its sequel *Bridget Jones: The Edge of Reason* (1999; filmed 2004).

Born in Yorkshire, Fielding lives and works in London. Her first novel was *Cause Celeb* (1984). After working for the British Broadcasting Corporation (BBC), Fielding wrote a weekly column for the *Independent* under the name of Bridget Jones. When the diary was published as a novel it achieved huge sales in the UK and in the USA. She published *Olivia Joules and the Overactive Imagination* in 2003.

# Fielding, Henry (1707-1754)

English novelist. His greatest work, *The History of Tom Jones, a Foundling* (1749) (see <u>*Tom Jones*</u>), which he described as 'a comic epic poem in prose', was an early landmark in the development of the English novel, realizing for the first time in English the form's potential for memorable characterization, coherent plotting, and perceptive analysis. The vigour of its comic impetus, descriptions of high and low life in town and country, and its variety of characters made it immediately popular. Fielding gave a new prominence to dialogue in his work.

Fielding was born at Sharpham Park in Somerset and educated at Eton. He moved to London in 1724 where he led a dissipated life for some years before beginning his dramatic career with *Love in Several Masques* (1728). The play was not a success and Fielding swapped London for the Netherlands, where he studied at the University of Leiden. Returning to England a year later, Fielding began writing again, publishing several comedies and farces, including his burlesque (mocking imitation) play, *Tom Thumb* (1730). In 1734 Fielding married Charlotte Cradock and bought the Little Theatre in the Haymarket, where he produced *Pasquin* (1736) and *The Historical Register* (1737), but the Licensing Act of 1737 censored the latter for its powerful satire, and thus ended his career as a dramatist. He studied law at the Middle Temple and was called to the Bar in 1740. Literature, however, was his main preoccupation After his wife's death in 1744, Fielding turned again to law, but in 1745 was once more engaged in literature as editor of the *True Patriot* and afterwards of *The Jacobite's Journal*. In 1747 he defied convention by marrying Mary Daniel, who had been his first wife's maid and his children's nurse. He was appointed Justice of the Peace for Middlesex and Westminster in 1748. In failing health, he went to recuperate in Lisbon in 1754, and he died and was buried there.

#### Fielding, Sarah (1710-1768)

English novelist. She wrote several novels, including *The Adventures of David Simple in Search of a Faithful Friend* 1744, *The Governess* 1749, and *The Countess of Dellwyn* 1759, and also translated Xenophon's *Memorabilia* 1762. She was the sister of the novelist Henry <u>Fielding</u>.

## Fields, James Thomas (1817-1881)

US author and publisher. He became head of the Ticknor & Fields publishing firm and was editor of *The Atlantic Monthly* (1861-70). His own literary works include *Poems* (1849) and *Yesterdays With Authors* (1876). He was born in Portsmouth, New Hampshire.

# Fiennes, Celia (1662-1741)

English writer. She recorded vivid descriptions of her extensive journeys throughout England and Scotland, mostly between 1685 and 1703. Travelling on horseback and by coach, staying at inns or with relatives, she commented on towns, roads, inns, religious practices, and particularly on local trade and industry. Her diaries, *Through England on a Side Saddle in the time of William and Mary*, were first published in 1888.

Fiennes was born at Newton Toney, near Salisbury, into a Puritan, anti-monarchist family. Her travels were supposedly undertaken for her health, but she admitted that they were inspired by curiosity. During her 'Great Journey' of 1698 she travelled over 1,600 km/1,000 miles.

## Figaro

character of dramatic fiction. He made his first appearance in Pierre de Beaumarchais's plays *The Barber of Seville* (1775), *The Marriage of Figaro* (1784), and *The Other Tartuffe* (1792). Since Beaumarchais's time Figaro has become the type of ingenious roguery, intrigue, and cunning, who displays the utmost sang-froid in all his daring deceptions. He appears conspicuously in Mozart's opera *The Marriage de Figaro* (1786) and Rossini's *The Barber of Seville* (1816), both operas being based on the plays of the same names.

#### Figueroa, Francisco de (c. 1536-1620)

Spanish poet. His comedies and pastorals reveal Italian influence, including the use of blank verse, which he was the first to use, in Spanish poetry.

## Filicaia, Vincenzo da (1642-1707)

Italian poet. He wrote odes and sonnets and is best known for his *Canzoni in occasione dell'assedio e liberazione di Vienna* 1684 on the liberation of Vienna from the Turks.

#### Filmer, Robert (c. 1589-1653)

English political writer. An ardent Royalist, his house was pillaged by the Parliamentarians. His *Patriarcha* (1680) and other pamphlets expanded and emphasized the theory of the divine right of kings.

He matriculated at Trinity College, Cambridge, and was knighted by Charles I.

#### Filson, John (c. 1747-c. 1788)

American explorer and author. To attract settlers to Kentucky, he wrote *Discovery*, *Settlement*, *and Present State of Kentucke* (1784), and the alleged 'autobiography' of Daniel Boone first appeared in this book.

He was born in Chester County, Pennsylvania. He was killed by an American Indian while helping to lay out the settlement of Cincinnati.

#### **Finnish literature**

some fragments of Finnish literature survive from the 12th century; the first book was a primer published 1544. A complete Bible in Finnish was issued in Stockholm 1642. But the predominance of the Swedes and Swedish in Finland inhibited the growth of literature in Finnish until the 19th century, when it was launched with the publication in 1835 of Elias Lönnrot's epic folk verse compilation *Kalevala*. The earliest Finnish writer was Aleksis Kivi, whose classic comedy *Seitsemän veljestä/ Seven Brothers* was published in 1870. The turn of the century saw the emergence

of a crop of broadly realist writers, including Juhani Aho (1861-1921), Ilmari Kianto (1874-1970), and Joel Lehtonen (1881-1943) and the lyric poet Eino Leino (1878-1926). Mika Waltari (1908-79) attracted attention abroad with his *Sinuhe egyptilä inen/Sinuhe the Egyptian* 1945. Frans Emil Sillanpää (1888-1964) received a Nobel Prize in 1939. Vä inö Linna's *Tuntematon sotilas/The Unknown Soldier* is the definitive account of the Winter War of 1939. Modern writers include the poets Pentti Saarikoski (1937-83) and Paavo Haavikko (1931-), and the novelists Veijo Meri (1928-), Antti Tuuri (1944-), and Leena Krohn (1947-).

## Fiocchi, Andrea (died 1452)

Italian cleric and humanist author, born in Florence. His career was spent in the papal curia, where he wrote his one work, *De Potestatibus Romanorum* (*c.* 1424), a discussion of the religious and secular officials of ancient Rome, which he dedicated to Cardinal Branda Castiglioni. Its antiquarianism antedated that of Fiocchi's colleague Flavio Biondo. His contemporaries liked the work so much they did it the dubious honour of attributing a shortened version of it to the ancient historian Lucius Fenestella.

# Firbank, (Arthur Annesley) Ronald (1886-1926)

English novelist. His work, set in the Edwardian decadent period, has a malicious humour and witty sophistication. It includes *Caprice* (1917), *Valmouth* (1919), and the bizarre fantasy *Concerning the Eccentricities of Cardinal Pirelli* (1926).

## Firdausi (or Firdusi or Firdawsi or Ferdausi or Ferdowsi) (c. 935-1020)

#### born Abul Qasim Mansur

Persian poet. He was the author of the Persian national epic *Shahnama/Book of Kings*, a long poem of about 60,000 couplets, incorporating some lines completed by the earlier poet Daqiqi.

Firdausi's epic relates the legendary history of Persia from its beginnings to the Arab conquest in the 7th century. It was dedicated in its final form around 1010 to Sultan Mahmud of Ghazna, with whom Firdausi then fell out over the payment. The poet fled from Ghazna to the court of a rival ruler, where he proceeded to satirize Mahmud.

Florentine monk and author. He translated works both from Latin (the *Golden Ass* of Apuleius) and, in the *Discorsi degli animali/Discourses on Animals* (written in 1541, printed in 1548), from a Spanish collection of Indian animal stories. Other writings included a *Dialogo delle bellezze delle donne/Dialogue on the Beauties of Women* (printed in 1558).

#### **First Folio**

the first collected edition of Shakespeare's plays, published in 1623. It was edited by his friends, the actors Henry Condell and John Hemings, and appeared seven years after Shakespeare's death. It contains 36 plays. The only Shakespeare play not in the First Folio is *Pericles*, which was first published in 1664. One of the 36 plays is *Henry VIII*, which was probably written in collaboration with John Fletcher.

The second reprinting in 1632 is known as the Second Folio, the third in 1664 as the Third Folio, and the fourth in 1685 as the Fourth Folio. A second issue of the Third Folio contained seven additional plays, only one of which, *Pericles*, is accepted as being by Shakespeare.

The First Folio also contains a preface by the editors, the Droeshout portrait (an engraved portrait of Shakespeare that is one of the best-known images of him), and verses on Shakespeare by Ben Jonson.

# Fisher, Carrie (1956-)

US film actor and writer, most famous for her role as Princess Leia in the original *Star Wars* trilogy (1977-83). She has also turned her hand to writing: *Postcards from the Edge* (1987) was a novel loosely based on her own relationship with her actor mother Debbie Reynolds, and was made into a successful film in 1990.

Fisher was born in Los Angeles, California. She suffered from well-publicized bouts of depression and drug dependency following her early rise to fame. Later work includes a character part in Woody Allen's *Hannah and her Sisters* (1986) and supporting roles in comedies such as *When Harry Met Sally* (1989). In 1995 she began presenting her own television show *Carrie on Hollywood*, a showcase for her own caustic and witty views of the industry into which she was born.

# Fisher, Dorothy Canfield (1879-1958)

#### born Dorothea Frances Canfield

US writer. She published her early fiction and later non-fiction under her maiden and married names respectively. Among other contributions to education she popularized the Montessori teaching method in the USA in the 1910s.

Born in Lawrence, Kansas, she became a writer after earning a Columbia University PhD in Romance languages. Her translation of Giovanni Papini's *Life of Christ* became a best-seller in 1923. Her other literary work included books on educational subjects, novels, short stories, plays, and literary criticism. As well as writing, she was a founding member of the Book-of-the-Month editorial board (1926-50).

# Fisher, M(ary) F(rances) K(ennedy) (1908-1992)

US food writer. She created a new literary genre with her witty, erudite essays evoking the pleasures of food and places. Her translation of *Physiology of Taste* is considered a classic. She also wrote a novel, a screenplay, and travelogues.

She was born in Albion, Michigan. She attended several colleges, including Illinois, Whittier, and Occidental Colleges, and the University of California at Los Angeles.

## Fiske, John (1842-1901)

#### born Edmund Fisk Green

US historian and philosopher. A graduate of Harvard, he was a lecturer and librarian there. A prolific author, he was also a celebrated history lecturer, popularizing contemporary scientific, philosophic, and historical thought, especially the theory of evolution.

He was born in Hartford, Connecticut. A synthesizer rather than an originator of ideas, he attracted many distinguished scholars to historical studies. He later he turned to writing about US history, and he taught US history at Washington University in St Louis (1884-1901).

## Fitzgerald, Edward (1809-1883)

English poet and translator. His poetic version of the *Rubaiyat of Omar Khayyám* (1859) (and often revised), with its resonant and melancholy tone, is generally considered more an original creation than a true translation. It is known throughout all the English-speaking countries and has passed through innumerable editions.

His earlier works include *Euphranor*, *a Dialogue on Youth*, published anonymously in 1851, *Polonius*, *a Collection of Wise Saws and Modern Instances* (1852), and a free translation of *Six Dramas of Calderón* (1853).

# Fitzgerald, F(rancis) Scott (Key) (1896-1940)

US novelist and short-story writer. His early autobiographical novel *This Side of Paradise* (1920) made him known in the post-war society of the East Coast, and *The Great Gatsby* (1925) epitomizes the Jazz Age.

# Fitzgerald, Penelope (Mary) (1916-2000)

#### born Penelope Mary Knox

English novelist. She published her first novel, *The Golden Child* (1977), when she was 61. Since then she has applied a distinctive, economic style, an understanding of human nature, and a sense of humour to a variety of situations and settings. Particularly notable novels are *Offshore* (1979), which won the Booker Prize for fiction, *The Gate of Angels* (1990), and *The Blue Flower* (1995). A volume of short stories, *The Means of Escape*, was published posthumously in 2000.

## Flateyjarbok

#### The Book of Flatey

one of the largest and most important of Icelandic manuscripts, written about 1390, now housed in Reykjavik. It contains the texts of a number of important kings'sagas, including one about St Olaf, and family sagas, one of which tells of the Norse discovery of America. It takes its name from the island of Flatey off western Iceland where it was found in the 17th century.

## Flaubert, Gustave (1821-1880)

French writer. One of the major novelists of the 19th century, he was the author of <u>Madame Bovary</u> (1857), Salammbô (1862), L'Education sentimentale/Sentimental Education (1869), and La Tentation de Saint Antoine/The Temptation of St Anthony (1874). Flaubert also wrote the short stories Trois Contes/Three Tales (1877). His dedication to art resulted in a meticulous prose style, realistic detail, and psychological depth, which is often revealed through interior monologue.

Flaubert was born in Rouen. For a while he studied law, but preferred literature. In 1847 he travelled in Brittany and, from 1849 to 1851, in Greece and the Middle East, but for the greater part of his life he lived quietly with his mother and niece at his estate near Rouen. From 1846 until 1854 he was the lover of Louise Colet, but his unrequited love, at the age of 15, for Mme Elisa Schlesinger had more influence on his character.

*Madame Bovary*, which took many years to prepare, caused a great scandal, and the author and publisher were prosecuted on a charge of violating morals, but were acquitted. In 1858 Flaubert travelled to Carthage and began a serious archaeological and historical study of its surroundings, which he made use of in his second work, *Salammbô*, a romance of the struggle between Rome and Carthage. With the publication of his next two works, he became a distinguished member of a small literary set, which included Turgenev, Zola, Daudet, and the Goncourts, and was a personal friend of George Sand. His last work, *Bouvard et Pécuchet*, was unfinished, and was published posthumously 1881.

# Flecker, (Herman) James Elroy (1884-1915)

English poet. During a career in the consular service, he wrote several volumes of lyrical romantic verse, including *The Bridge of Fire* (1907), *Forty-two Poems* (1911), *The Golden Journey to Samarkand* (1913), and *The Old Ships* (1915).

He also wrote a novel, *The King of Alsander* (1914), and two dramas, *Hassan* (1922), performed in 1923 with incidental music by Delius, and *Don Juan* (1925). He followed the objective methods of the contemporary French poets of the Parnassian school (see *Parnassiens, Les*), shunning personal and emotional material.

# Flecknoe, Richard (died c. 1678)

English poet and dramatist. He published several volumes of epigrams and miscellaneous poems; for example, *A Farrago of Several Pieces* 1666, two plays, and *A Short Treatise of the English Stage* 1664. The poet John Dryden caricatured him in *MacFlecknoe* 1684, a satire on the dramatist Thomas Shadwell.

## Fleming, Ian Lancaster (1908-1964)

English author. His suspense novels feature the ruthless, Iaconic James Bond, British Secret Service agent 007. The first novel in the series was *Casino Royale* (1953); others include *From Russia with Love* (1957), *Goldfinger* (1959), and *The Man with the Golden Gun* (1965). Most of the novels were made into a successful series of Bond films.

During World War II he worked for British Intelligence where he had the opportunity to give full rein to his vivid imagination in disseminating false information and rumours.

Scottish child author. Known as 'Pet Marjorie', she wrote verses and a diary which is full of quaint reflections. An essay about her, 'Marjorie Fleming' 1863, by John Brown is interesting but not completely trustworthy.

#### **Flemish literature**

in Belgium, Flemish literature in its written form was the same as Dutch and was stimulated by the declaration, following the revolution of 1830-39, that French was the only official language in Belgium (it remained so until 1898). Jan Frans Willems (1793-1846) brought out a magazine that revived medieval Flemish works. Modern writers in Flemish took their tone from the romantic poetry of Karel Lodewijk Ledeganck (1805-1847) and the historical and social novels of Hendrik <u>Conscience</u>. In *Vlaemsche Dichtoefeningen/Flemish Exercises in Poetry* (1858) Guido <u>Gezelle</u> moved away from Romanticism towards Impressionism. His nephew Stijn Streuwels, the most popular prose writer of his generation, wrote novels about the country life of Flanders. New literary perspectives were heralded in the journal Van Nu en Straks/ Today and Tomorrow 1893-1903 conducted by August Vermeylen. In the earlier 20th century Cyriel Buysse (1859-1932) and Willem Elschott (1882-1960) were leading novelists. Contemporary writers include the popular novelist, dramatist, and poet Hugo Claus. See also <u>Dutch literature</u>.

## **Fleshly School**

name given by the writer Robert <u>Buchanan</u> to the Pre-Raphaelite group of poets. He applied the term particularly to Dante Gabriel <u>Rossetti</u>, in a hostile article published in the *Contemporary Review* 1871. It appeared under the pseudonym Robert Maitland, but the authorship soon became known and a violent controversy ensued. Rossetti wrote a temperate reply with the title 'The Stealthy School of Criticism' in the *Athenaeum* later the same year.

## Fletcher, Giles (1546-1611)

#### called 'the Elder'

English lawyer, diplomat, and writer. He was sent on a diplomatic mission to Russia in 1588, where, despite a hostile reception from the tsar, he secured important concessions for English merchants. His frank and colourful account of Russia in *The Russe Commonwealth* (1591) was suppressed on publication on account of the English traders' fears that it would antagonize the Russians.

## Fletcher, Giles (c. 1588-1623)

English poet. His chief work is *Christ's Victory and Triumph, in Heaven, in Earth, Over and After Death* 1610, a baroque poem in the epic style, divided into four cantos. The poem owes much to <u>Spenser</u> and in turn influenced Milton. Fletcher also contributed to the poetic tribute *Sorrow's Joy* on the death of Elizabeth I, and wrote *The Reward of the Faithful* 1623. He was a cousin of the dramatist John Fletcher.

## Fletcher, John Gould (1886-1950)

US poet. He was associated with several modern movements, including <u>Imagism</u>. Among his volumes of verse are *Irradiations Sand and Spray* 1915, *Breakers and Granite* 1921, marking a return to American themes, and *The Burning Mountain* 1946. *Selected Poems* 1938 won the Pulitzer Prize for Poetry.

His prose works include *Paul Gauguin*, *His Life and Art* 1921, *John Smith - Also Pocahontas* 1928, and *The Two Frontiers* 1930.

## Fletcher, Phineas (1582-1650)

English poet. His principal work is *The Purple Island: or the Isle of Man* 1633. Written in 12 cantos of seven-line stanzas, it is an allegory of the human body in the style of Edmund <u>Spenser</u>.

## Flexner, Stuart Berg (1928-1990)

US lexicographer. He was co-author of the *Dictionary of American Slang* (1960), and became a Random House vice-president and editor-in-chief of its reference division, editing *The Random House Dictionary of the English Language*, Second Edition (1987).

He was born in Jacksonville, Illinois. After studying and teaching briefly at Cornell University, he moved to New York City, where he worked for several publishing firms before joining Random House. He also wrote several popular works on language, including *How to Increase Your Word Power* (1968), *I Hear America Talking* (1976), and *Listening to America* (1982).

#### 'Floire et Blanchefleur'

medieval romance, probably of oriental origin. Writers in most European countries,

including Boccaccio in Italy, told the tale from the French version. The story is of two children who loved each other, were separated, and came together again happily after passing through many difficulties and dangers.

#### Florian, Jean Pierre Claris de (1755-1794)

French poet, novelist, and dramatist. He wrote many poems and comedies, among them *Le Bon Ménage*, *Le Bon Père*, *La Bonne Mère*, novels of peasant life, and also *Numa Pompilius* and *Galatée*. In 1792 he wrote his *Fables*, and translated *Don Quixote* into French.

# Florio, John (c. 1553-1625)

English author and translator. His writings include his Italian-English dictionary *A World of Words* (1598) and his translation of <u>Montaigne's</u> essays (1603), dedicated to Lucy, Countess of Bedford.

## Flowers of Evil

#### French Les Fleurs du mal

a collection of poems by Charles Baudelaire, published in France in 1857, which deal with the conflict between good and evil. The work was condemned by the censor as endangering public morals, but paved the way for Rimbaud, Verlaine, and the Symbolist school.

## Fogazzaro, Antonio (1842-1911)

Italian poet and novelist. His novels include *II mistero del poeta/The Poet's Mystery* 1888, *Piccolo mondo antico/The Patriot* 1895, generally considered his masterpiece, and *Piccolo mondo moderno/The Man of the World* 1901. He is a novelist of character rather than of plot, and his heroes are often placed in situations of grave moral conflict.

## Folengo, Teofilo (1491-1544)

Italian poet. His pseudonym was Merlin Cocaio and he wrote mainly in macaronic Latin, a mixture of normal Latin and Italian words with Latinized endings. His first publication was *II Baldus* (1517), a humorous epic; this proved a success and was

followed by Orlandino, and an account of his roamings called Caos del Triperuno.

# Folger, Emily Clara (1858-1936)

#### born Emily Clara Jordon

US Shakespeare collector. Her husband, Henry Clay Folger, collected Shakespeare folios. Together, they amassed 100,000 books and manuscripts and she became a Shakespearean scholar, authenticating and cataloguing their purchases. She oversaw the building of the Folger Library in Washington, DC.

She was born in Ironton, Ohio.

# Folger, Henry Clay (1857-1930)

US book collector and philanthropist. An industrialist who was president and then chairman of Standard Oil, he and his wife Emily Clara Folger assembled an outstanding Shakespeare collection, which is housed in the Folger Shakespeare Library in Washington, DC.

He was born in New York City.

## Folgore da San Gimignano (c. 1270-1330)

Italian poet. His humorous and satirical poems, mostly sonnets, are written in a smooth, polished style. They concern knightly customs and political questions.

## Follain, Jean (1903-1971)

French writer. His prose writings include *L'Epicerie de l'enfance* 1938, *Canisy* 1942, and *Chef-lieu* 1950; and his volumes of poetry include *La main chaude* 1933, *Chants terrestres* 1937, *Exister* 1947, *Territoires* 1953, *Des heures* 1960, and *Appareil de la terre* 1964.

# Follett, Ken (1949-)

English writer of historical epic sagas and suspense thrillers such as *Eye of the Needle* (1978), an international best-seller. His thriller *Jackdaws* was published in 2001.

Other works include *Triple* (1979), *The Key to Rebecca* (1980), *The Man from St Petersburg* (1982), *The Pillars of the Earth* (1989), *The Third Twin* (1996), and *The Hammer of Eden* (1998).

## Folquet de Marseille (died 1231)

Provençal troubadour. His output consists mainly of love songs, sober in tone and moralizing in content. The son of a wealthy merchant, he became a Cistercian monk and, in 1205, bishop of Toulouse, in which capacity he was a notorious persecutor of the Albigensian heretics.

## Fontainas, André (1865-1948)

Belgian poet and critic. He spent much of his life in France. A Symbolist writer (see <u>Symbolism</u>), his informative memoirs, *Mes souvenirs du symbolisme* 1929 and *Confessions d'un poète* 1936, are now as highly valued as his collections of verse, *Le sang des fleurs* 1889 and *Le jardin des îles claires* 1901.

## Fontane, Theodor (1819-1898)

German novelist. His best work, such as the historical novel *Vor den Sturm/Before the Storm* (1878), a critical but sympathetic account of Prussian aristocratic life, and *Effi Briest* (1898), is marked by superb characterization and a concern with the position of women.

He was born in Neuruppin, Brandenburg, and worked as a freelance journalist in Berlin. He toured England and wrote stirring poems and popular ballads - his *Gedichte* and ballads *Männer und Helden* are inspired by Old English ballads and have English themes. He also wrote topographical books before turning to realist fiction. Among his novels, describing everyday life, are *Irrungen, Wirrungen/Trials and Tribulations* 1888 and *Der Stechlin* 1899. As drama critic of the *Vossische Zeitung* he was one of the first to defend the Norwegian and German playwrights Henrik Ibsen and Gerhardt Hauptmann.

# Foote, Shelby (1916-2005)

US historian and novelist. After establishing himself as a novelist with five wellreceived books, he spent twenty years crafting his epic, three-volume *The Civil War: A Narrative* (1958, 1963, 1974), an even-handed, but moving, account of the Civil War. He was born in Greenville, Mississippi and attended the University of North Carolina. He served in the Army and the Marine Corps. His book on the American Civil War is generally considered history-as-literature at its best. He became familiar to television viewers as consultant and interviewee on the series *The Civil War* (1990).

## Forbes, Esther (1891-1967)

US writer. After studying at the University of Wisconsin, she worked as an editor for Houghton Mifflin. She wrote some straightforward adult history works, but is best known for her historical novels for young readers, such as *Johnny Tremain* (1943).

She was born in Westborough, Massachusetts.

## Forbes, Robert Bennet (1804-1889)

US merchant and author. As head of a merchant company and owner of several ships, he supported innovations in marine safety and ship design that included the first iron-hulled tugboat. He wrote pamphlets about the China trade and marine matters.

He was born in Jamaica Plain, Massachusetts and entered the China-trade business of his uncles James and Thomas H Perkins at the age of 13 and stayed with the company when it merged to become Russell & Company. He became head of the Company and ignored the British boycott of Canton during the Opium Wars. During the famine in Ireland in 1847, he personally commanded a ship that took food from Boston to Ireland and in the Civil War, he organized a short-lived 'Coast Guard'. His memoirs are titled *Peronal Reminiscences* (1876).

## Ford, Ford Madox (1873-1939)

#### adopted name of Ford Hermann Hueffer

English author. He wrote more than 80 books, the best known of which are the novels *The Good Soldier* (1915) and *Tietjen's Saga* (1924-28). As the first editor of the *English Review* from 1908 to 1910, he published works by established writers such as Thomas Hardy and Joseph Conrad, as well as the works of D H Lawrence, Wyndham Lewis, and Ezra Pound.

He was also founder-editor of *The Transatlantic Review* in Paris in 1924, which published work by James Joyce and Ernest Hemingway. He was a grandson of the painter Ford Madox Brown.

## Ford, John (c. 1586-c. 1640)

English poet and dramatist. His play '*Tis Pity She's a Whore* (performed in about 1626, printed in 1633) is a study of incestuous passion between brother and sister. His other plays include *The Lover's Melancholy* (1629), *The Broken Heart* (1633), *Love's Sacrifice* (1633), in which Bianca is one of Ford's finest psychological studies of women, and *The Chronicle History of Perkin Warbeck* (1634). Dwelling on themes of pathos and frustration, they reflect the transition from a general to an aristocratic audience for drama.

## Ford, Richard (1944-)

US novelist. A leading exponent of 'dirty realism', Ford's novels and stories often describe the bleak lives of lonely and damaged people who are constantly on the move - for Ford, a central part of the American psyche. He received the Pulitzer Prize for fiction for his novel *Independence Day* (1995).

He has written a series of novels with the character Frank Bascombe, a sports journalist. *The Sportswriter* (1986) takes place during an Easter weekend; its sequel, *Independence Day*, is set over a July 4th weekend. His works also include the collections of short stories *Rock Springs* (1987) and *Women with Men* (1997).

# Forester, C(ecil) S(cott) (1899-1966)

English novelist. He is best known for a series of historical novels set in the Napoleonic era that, beginning with *The Happy Return* (1937), cover the career - from midshipman to admiral - of Horatio Hornblower. One of the series, *A Ship of the Line* (1939), won the James Tait Black Memorial Prize.

His first novel, *Payment Deferred* (1926), was a subtle crime novel, and he also wrote *The African Queen* (1935), filmed in 1952 with Humphrey Bogart and Katharine Hepburn. His other novels include *Death to the French* (1932), *The Gun* (1933), *The General* (1936), *Brown on Resolution* (1938) (a study of patriotism), and *The Ship* (1943).

# Forrester, Alfred Henry (1804-1872)

English writer and illustrator. He worked under the pseudonym of Alfred Crowquill, contributed drawings to *Punch*, and wrote and illustrated more than 20 humorous books, burlesques, fairy tales, and verse.

# Forster, E(dward) M(organ) (1879-1970)

English novelist, short-story writer, and critic. He was concerned with the interplay of personality and the conflict between convention and instinct. His novels include *A Room with a View* (1908), *Howards End* (1910), and *A Passage to India* (1924). Other works include the collections of stories *The Celestial Omnibus* (1911) and *Collected Short Stories* (1948), and the collection of essays and reviews 'Abinger Harvest' (1936). His most lasting critical work is *Aspects of the Novel* (1927). The integrity with which Forster approached life in his novels has also enhanced the value of his miscellaneous and critical writings. Many of his works have been successfully adapted for film.

Forster was born in London, England, and educated at Tonbridge School and King's College, Cambridge, of which he became a fellow in 1927. At Cambridge he made a lifelong friendship with English writer Lowes Dickinson; along with Dickinson, F Nathaniel Wedd, his classics tutor, G M Trevelyan, and others, Forster founded the Independent Review in 1903 (Forster wrote for the magazine after his return from his travels in Italy in 1902-1903). His experiences in Italy provided the background for Where Angels Fear to Tread (1905) and A Room with a View. A Passage to India was begun shortly after the publication of The Celestial Omnibus. Aspects of the Novel was delivered first as the Clark lectures in Cambridge in 1927 and published the same year. A volume of short stories, The Eternal Moment (1928), included pieces such as 'The Story of the Siren' which were written much earlier. Other books are What I Believe (1939), Nordic Twilight (1940), and the Rede lecture on English writer Virginia Woolf, published in 1942. Besides Abinger Harvest, another collection of essays was Two Cheers for Democracy (1951); he also wrote the libretto (words) for Benjamin Britten's opera Billy Budd (1951). Forster was awarded the Benson Medal in 1937 and was made a Companion of Literature by the Royal Society of Literature in 1961.

# Forster, John (1812-1876)

English biographer and historian. His biography of Charles Dickens (1872-74) was a standard work. He also wrote lives of the leading figures of Oliver Cromwell's Commonwealth (1836-39), a fine biography of Oliver Goldsmith (1848), and the first volume of a life of Jonathan Swift (1875).

## Forster, Margaret (1938-)

English novelist and biographer. Her *Georgy Girl* (1965; filmed 1966) encapsulated the mood of 1960s London; later novels include *Have the Men Had Enough*? (1989) on the tragedy of Alzheimer's disease, and *Diary of an Ordinary Woman*. The subjects of her biographies, mostly writers, include the poet Elizabeth Barrett Browning (1988).

Forster's first novel, *Dame's Delight* 1964, set in Oxford, exposed the nostalgic aura surrounding Oxbridge. She has written lives of Prince Charles Edward Stuart (1973) and the novelists William Makepeace Thackeray (1978) and Daphne du Maurier (1993).

## Forsyth, Frederick (1938-)

English thriller writer. His books include *The Day of the Jackal* (1970), about an attempted assassination of French president Charles de Gaulle, *The Odessa File* (1972), about a reporter's attempts to find a network of ex-Nazis, and *The Dogs of War* (1974), about a greedy mining executive's staging of a coup in an African country.

His other novels include *The Devil's Alternative* (1979), *The Fourth Protocol* (1984), *The Negotiator* (1989), *The Deceiver* (1991), *The Fist of God* (1994), *Icon* (1996), and *Avenger* (2003).

## Foscolo, Ugo (1778-1827)

Italian author. An intensely patriotic Venetian, he fought with the French against the invading Austrians. Disillusionment with Napoleon inspired his popular novel *Le Ultime lettere di Jacopo Ortis/The Last Letters of Jacopo Ortis* 1802. His blankverse patriotic poem 'Dei sepolchri'/'Of the Sepulchres' 1807 made his name and was followed by the political tragedies *Aiace/Ajax* 1811 and *Ricciarda* 1812.

## Fouqué, Friedrich Heinrich Karl de la Motte (1777-1843)

German writer, novelist, and poet. He wrote numerous novels, romances, plays, and epics, the earliest and best known of his works being *Undine*, a classic of Romanticism which appeared 1811. Among other publications were *Der Zauberring* 1813 and *Die Fährten Thiodulfs des Islanders* 1815.

## Fowles, John Robert (1926-2005)

English writer. His novels, often concerned with illusion and reality and with the creative process, include *The Collector* (1963), *The Magus* (1965), *The French Lieutenant's Woman* (1969) (filmed in 1981), *Daniel Martin* (1977), *Mantissa* (1982), and *A Maggot* (1985). He also wrote two collections of essays - *The Aristos* (1965) and *Wormholes* (1998) - and *Poems* (1973).

# Fox, John (1863-1919)

US novelist. His novels were largely romanticized pictures based on life in the Cumberland mountains. They include *The Little Shepherd of Kingdom Come* 1903, *The Trail of the Lonesome Pine* 1908, and *The Heart of the Hills* 1913.

#### Frame, Janet Paterson (1924-2004)

New Zealand novelist. After being wrongly diagnosed as schizophrenic, she reflected her experiences 1945-54 in the novel *Faces in the Water* 1961 and the autobiographical *An Angel at My Table* 1984 (filmed 1990).

## France, Anatole (1844-1924)

#### pen-name of Jacques Anatole François Thibault

French writer. His works are marked by wit, urbanity, and style. His earliest novel was *Le Crime de Sylvestre Bonnard/The Crime of Sylvester Bonnard* (1881); later books include the satiric *L'IIe des pingouins/Penguin Island* (1908). He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1921.

His other books include the autobiographical series beginning with *Le Livre de mon ami/My Friend's Book* (1885), *Thaïs* (1890), *Crainquebille* (1905), and *Les Dieux ont soif/The Gods Are Athirst* (1912). He was a socialist and a supporter of the wrongfully accused officer Alfred Dreyfus.

## Francis, Dick (1920-)

#### born Richard Stanley Francis

English writer and jockey. Author of over 30 novels, he won the Golden Dagger Award of the American Crime Writers' Association in 1980, and has also written an autobiography of the rider Lester Piggott (1986). He retired as a jockey in 1957.

Francis was born in Surrey, and turned professional jockey at the age of 28. Following his retirement, the year after his horse Devon Loch collapsed on the point of winning the 1956 Grand National, he began writing as a racing correspondent with the *Daily Express*. Venetian prostitute and poet. She was a member of the literary circle around Domenico Venier, who assisted her with her *Terze Rime* (1575). After being denounced by the Inquisition in 1580, she retired from her former occupation and set up an asylum for other 'fallen women'.

She included in her Lettere familiari (1580) a riposte to Pietro Aretino's La cortigiana.

## Franey, Pierre (1921-1996)

French-born US chef and author. A chef at New York's Le Pavillon Restaurant, he collaborated with Craig Claiborne on cookbooks and food articles. He independently wrote two cookbooks based on his *New York Times* '60-Minute Gourmet' column.

He was born in Tonnerre, France and trained in France before emigrating to the USA in 1939.

## Frank, Anne(lies Marie) (1929-1945)

German diarist. She fled to the Netherlands with her family in 1933 to escape Nazi anti-Semitism (the Holocaust).

During the German occupation of Amsterdam, they and two other families remained in a sealed-off room, protected by Dutch sympathizers 1942-44, when betrayal resulted in their deportation and Anne's death in Belsen concentration camp. Her diary of her time in hiding was published in 1947.

Previously suppressed portions of her diary were published in 1989. The house in which the family took refuge is preserved as a museum. Her diary has sold 20 million copies in more than 50 languages and has been made into a play and a film publicizing the fate of millions.

# Frank, John Paul (1917-)

US lawyer and author. He taught at several law schools. In addition to his heavy load of corporate cases, he was active in fighting for the rights of the legal profession. His eleven books include *Lincoln as a Lawyer* (1961).

He was born in Appleton, Wisconsin. A legendary appellate lawyer with Lewis & Roca in Phoenix, Arizona, he was the leading winning counsel in *Miranda v. Arizona* (1966), which established that evidence could not be admitted unless the defendant had been read his or her rights prior to questioning.

## Frank, Waldo (David) (1899-1967)

US writer. A Yale graduate, he was a left-wing activist whose large literary output included politically inspired fiction and Marxist social analysis. He wrote and lectured widely on Latin America. His works include *Virgin Spain* (1926) and *America Hispana* (1931).

He was born in Long Branch, New Jersey and he lived in Truro, Massachusetts and New York City.

## Frankau, Gilbert (1884-1952)

English novelist. He made his reputation with *Peter Jackson, Cigar Merchant* 1919 and followed this with many other successful novels, including *Seeds of Enchantment* 1921, *Martin Make Believe* 1930, *Wine, Women, and Waiters* 1932, *Three Englishmen* 1935, and *World without End* 1943.

## Frankau, Pamela (1908-1967)

English novelist. Her many novels, which became increasingly serious, include *The Willow Cabin* 1949, a love story about a female actor and an older man, and *A Wreath for the Enemy* 1954, about an adolescent girl growing up on the French Riviera.

## Frankenstein

#### or The Modern Prometheus

Gothic horror story by Mary <u>Shelley</u>, published in England in 1818. It is considered to be the origin of modern science fiction, and there have been many film versions. Frankenstein, a scientist, discovers how to bring inanimate matter to life, and creates a man-monster. When Frankenstein fails to provide a mate to satisfy the creature's human emotions, it seeks revenge by killing Frankenstein's brother and bride. Frankenstein dies in an attempt to destroy his creation.

## Franklin, (Stella Marian Sarah) Miles (1879-1954)

Australian novelist. Her first novel, *My Brilliant Career* (1901), autobiographical and feminist, drew on her experiences of rural Australian life. *My Career Goes Bung*, written as a sequel, was not published until 1946.

## Franzen, Jonathan (1959-)

US writer. He became widely known for his bestselling novel *The Corrections* (2001), a literary, socially critical family drama which won the National Book Award. The novel chronicles the lives of a dysfunctional Midwestern family and explores a range of themes, including isolation, sacrifice, sexuality, and aging.

Other novels include *The Twenty-Seventh City* (1988), about an Indian woman who became a police chief in a Midwestern city, and *Strong Motion* (1992), which juxtaposes a dysfunctional family and earthquakes in Boston. He has also published several works of non-fiction, including the essay collection *How to be Alone* (2002).

## Fraser, Antonia (Pakenham) (1932-)

English author. She has published authoritative biographies, including *Mary Queen of Scots* (1969) and *The Six Wives of Henry VIII* (1992), and wider historical works such as *The Weaker Vessel: Woman's Lot in Seventeenth-Century England* (1984), and *Faith and Treason: The Story of the Gunpowder Plot* (1986). She has also written a series of popular detective novels featuring investigator Jemima Shore.

She is married to the English dramatist Harold <u>Pinter</u>, and is the daughter of British Labour politician Frank Longford.

## Fraunce, Abraham (c. 1558-c. 1633)

English poet. His works include *The Lamentations of Amintas for the Death of Phillis* (1585) and a series of translations reprinted in 1591 as *The Countess of Pembroke's lvychurch*, followed by *The Countess of Pembroke's Emanuel* (1591) and *Amintas Dale* (1592).

Fraunce also wrote *Victoria*, a Latin comedy, and two prose treatises: *The Arcadian Rhetoric* (1584) and *The Lawyer's Logic* (1588). He was among the group of writers who advocated the use in English poetry of classical metres; all his own poems are in <u>hexameters</u>.

## Frayn, Michael (1933-)

English writer. A writer of comedy and farce blended with seriousness, he has been successful as a playwright with works such as *Noises Off* (1982), *Benefactors* (1984), *Copenhagen* (1998), and *Democracy* (2003); and as a novelist with *The Tin Men* 

(1965), *Headlong* (1999), and *Spies* (2002). He has translated plays by Russian writer Anton Chekhov, and has also written scripts for film and television.

## Frazier, Charles (1950-)

US writer. His Civil War novel *Cold Mountain* (1997; filmed 2003) won the National Book Award and was on the *New York Times* best-seller list for more than a year. The novel follows the journey of a Civil War deserter on his way home to his beloved, as well as her struggle to survive, poverty-stricken, after the death of her father.

# Frederic, Harold (1856-1898)

US writer. Most of his journalistic career was spent as the *New York Times* London correspondent (1884-98) and his news accounts of Russian Jews and William II were reprinted in book form. He wrote ten historical fiction novels.

He was born in Utica, New York. His novels included *Seth's Brother's Wife* (1887) and *The Damnation of Theron Ware* (1896).

## Fredro, Aleksander (1793-1876)

Poland's greatest comic dramatist. His comedies abound in verbal humour and intrigue, and introduce a rich gallery of characters. These include *Maz i zona/ Husband and Wife* 1820, *Sluby panienskie/Maiden Vows* 1832, and his masterpiece *Zemsta/Vengeance* 1834.

Fredro's autobiography *Trzy po trzy/Topsy Turvy Talk* 1877, similar in structure and style to Laurence <u>Sterne's</u>*Tristram Shandy*, recounts his experiences in the Napoleonic army during Bonaparte's last campaign. In 1835, he ceased writing for a period, after a swingeing attack by a leading exponent of Romanticism, a frequent target of his satire.

#### Free, John (c. 1430-1465)

English humanist author. In 1456 he went to Ferrara, Italy, to study with the humanist scholar Battista <u>Guarino</u>. He then travelled to Padua where he met John Tiptoft, future constable of England, to whom he dedicated a Latin translation of a minor Greek work, Synesius'*Laus Calvitii/In Praise of Baldness* (1461). He translated another piece by Synesius and presented it to Pope Paul II in 1464.

## Freeman, Douglas Southall (1886-1953)

US editor and historian. He was a long-time editor of the *Richmond News Leader* (1915-49) and wrote two Pulitzer prize-winning works, a four-volume biography of Robert E Lee (1934-35) and a multi-volume biography of George Washington (1948-58).

He was born in Lynchburg, Virginia.

## Freeman, John (1880-1929)

English poet. His earliest books of verse were *Twenty Poems* 1909, *Fifty Poems* 1911, and *Stone Trees* 1916. His *Poems New and Old* won the Hawthornden Prize 1920. After several more books of verse his *Collected Poems* appeared 1928 and *Last Poems* after his death.

# Freeman, Mary E(leanor) (1852-1930)

#### born Mary Eleanor Wilkins

US novelist, short-story writer and dramatist. Born in Randolph, Massachusetts, she became known in particular for fiction that depicts the everyday life of rural New England, her writing noted for its realism and sensitive characterization. She wrote prolifically, and is now best remembered for her short-story collections, in particular *A New England Nun and Other Stories* 1891, and her play *Giles Corey, Yeoman* 1893, about the Salem witch trials.

#### Freeman, Richard Austin (1862-1943)

English writer. In 1907 he published his first detective story, *The Red Thumb Mark*, and his detective, Dr Thorndyke, became one of the most famous of fictitious investigators, even giving some ideas to the official police force. In *The Singing Bone* 1912 he introduced the method of first describing the crime before showing how Thorndyke unravelled it.

#### free verse

poetry without metrical form. At the beginning of the 20th century, many poets believed that the 19th century had accomplished most of what could be done with

regular metre, and rejected it, in much the same spirit as John Milton in the 17th century had rejected rhyme, preferring irregular metres that made it possible to express thought clearly and without distortion.

This was true of T S <u>Eliot</u> and the Imagists; it was also true of poets who, like the Russians Sergey Esenin and Vladimir Mayakovsky, placed emphasis on public performance. The shift to free verse began under the very different influences of US poet Walt Whitman and French poet Stéphane Mallarmé. Whitman worked in longer, end-stopped lines, preferring more prose-like cadences to regular metres. Poets including Robert Graves and W H Auden have criticized free verse on the ground that it lacks the difficulty of true accomplishment, but their own metrics would have been considered loose by earlier critics. The freeness of free verse is largely relative, and does not suggest a lack of form, as some critics have suggested. Poets working in free verse are typically interested in first mimicking and then heightening the rhythms of common speech. Many find their free verse forms during the composition process; such verse is often referred to as 'organic form'.

## Freiligrath, Ferdinand (1810-1876)

German poet. His best poems include 'Die Auswanderer', 'Prinz Eugen', 'Moosthee', 'Die Blumenrache/Revenge of the Flowers', and others, written before 1840. The charm of his poetry lay in its originality of subject and sentiment, while in some poems, such as 'Skating Negro' and 'Revenge of the Flowers', there is an element of the grotesque and eccentric.

In the 1840s his work became political and he was forced into exile after publication of *Ein Glaubensbekenntnis* 1844. Having returned to Germany, he was arrested for publishing *Die Todten an die Lebenden* 1848. He also translated several English classics into German.

## Frénaud, André (1907-1993)

French poet. His works include *Les rois mages* (1943), *Soleil irréductible* (1946), *Poèmes de Brandebourg* (1948), *Source entière* (1952), and *II n'y a pas de paradis* (1962).

## French, Marilyn (1929-)

US feminist writer. Her first novel, *The Women's Room* (1977), the story of a generation of 1950s housewives who transform themselves into independent women in the 1970s, sold 4 million copies, and was made into a television film 1980. In *The War against Women* (1992) she discussed the harm done to women for the sake of religion and cultural customs, such as female infanticide in China.

# French-Canadian literature

F-X Garneau's *Histoire du Canada* (1845-48) inspired a school of patriotic verse led by Octave Crémazie (1827-79) and continued by Louis Fréchette (1838-1908). A new movement began after 1900 with such poets as André Lozeau (1878-1924), Paul Morin (1889-1963), Robert Choquette (1862-1941), Alain Grandbois (1900-1975), Hector St Denys Garneau (1912-1943), Eloi de Grandmont (1921-1971), and re Trottier (1925-). Fiction reached a high point with Louis Hémon (1880-1914) whose *Maria Chapdelaine* inspired many genre works. Outstanding later novelists are Germaine Guèvremont (1893-1968), Gabrielle Roy (1909-1983), 'Ringuet' (Philippe Panneton) (1895-1960), Robert Elie (1915-1973), Roger Lemelin (1919-), and Yves Thériault (1915-1983). Antonine Maillet (1929-), an Acadian novelist from New Brunswick, was awarded the Prix Goncourt 1979.

# French literature

the literature of France.

#### the Middle Ages

The *Chanson de Roland* (*c.* 1080) is one of the early *chansons de geste* (epic poems about deeds of chivalry), which were superseded by the Arthurian romances (seen at their finest in the work of Chrétien de Troyes in the 12th century), and by the classical themes of Alexander, Troy, and Thebes. Other aspects of French medieval literature are represented by the anonymous *Aucassin et Nicolette* of the early 13th century; the allegorical *Roman de la Rose/Romance of the Rose*, the first part of which was written by Guillaume de Lorris (*c.* 1230) and the second by Jean de Meung (*c.* 1275); and the satiric *Roman de Renart/Story of Renard* of the late 12th century. The period also produced the historians Villehardouin, Joinville, Froissart, and Comines, and the first great French poet, François Villon.

#### 16th century: the Renaissance

One of the most celebrated poets of the Renaissance was Ronsard, leader of *La <u>Pléiade</u>* (a group of seven writers); others included <u>Marot</u> at the beginning of the 16th century and Mathurin Régnier (1573-1613) at its close. In prose the period produced the broad genius of Rabelais and the essayist Montaigne.

#### 17th century

The triumph of form came with the great classical dramatists Corneille, Racine, and Molière, the graceful brilliance of La Fontaine, and the poet and critic Boileau. Masters of prose in the same period include the philosophers Pascal and Descartes; the preacher Bossuet; the critics La Bruyère, Fénelon, and Malebranche; and La Rochefoucauld, Cardinal de Retz, Mme de Sévigné, and Le Sage.

#### 18th century

The age of the Enlightenment and an era of prose, with Montesquieu, Voltaire, and Rousseau; the scientist Buffon; the encyclopedist Diderot; the ethical writer Vauvenargues; the novelists Prévost and Marivaux; and the memoir writer Saint-Simon.

#### 19th century

Poetry came to the fore again with the Romantics Lamartine, Hugo, Vigny, Musset, Leconte de Lisle, and Gautier; novelists of the same school were George Sand, Stendhal, and Dumas *père*, while criticism is represented by Sainte-Beuve, and history by Thiers, Michelet, and Taine. The realist novelist Balzac was followed by the school of naturalism, whose representatives were Flaubert, Zola, the Goncourt brothers, Alphonse Daudet, Maupassant, and Huysmans. Dramatists include Hugo, Musset, and Dumas *fils*. Symbolism, a movement of experimentation and revolt against classical verse and materialist attitudes, with the philosopher Bergson as one of its main exponents, found its first expression in the work of Gérard de Nerval, followed by Baudelaire, Verlaine, Mallarmé, Rimbaud, Corbière, and the prose writer Villiers de l'Isle Adam; later writers in the same tradition were Henri de Régnier and Laforgue.

#### 20th century

Drama and poetry revived with Valéry, Claudel, and Paul Fort, who advocated 'pure poetry'; other writers were the novelists Gide and Proust, and the critics Thibaudet (1874-1936) and later St John Perse, also a poet. The surrealist movement, which developed from 'pure poetry' through the work of Eluard and Apollinaire, influenced writers as diverse as Giraudoux, Louis Aragon, and Cocteau. The literary reaction against the symbolists was seen in the work of Charles Péguy, Rostand, de Noailles, and Romain Rolland. Novelists in the naturalist tradition were Henri Barbusse, Jules Romains, Julian Green, François Mauriac, Francis Carco, and Georges Duhamel. Other prose writers were Maurois, Malraux, Montherlant, Anatole France, Saint-Exupéry, Alain-Fournier, Pierre Hamp, and J R Bloch, while the theatre flourished with plays by J J Bernard, Anouilh, Beckett, and Ionesco. World War II had a profound effect on French writing, and distinguished post-war writers include the existentialists Sartre and Camus, 'Vercors' (pen-name of Jean Bruller), Simone de Beauvoir, Alain Robbe-Grillet, Romain Gary, Nathalie Sarraute, and Marguerite Duras.

## Freneau, Philip Morin (1752-1832)

US poet. His *A Political Litany* 1775 was a mock prayer for deliverance from British tyranny. His other works include *The British Prison-Ship* 1781, about his experiences as a British prisoner. He was a professional journalist, the first in the USA.

English author and diplomat. He made some excellent translations of the plays of <u>Aristophanes</u>, and was one of the founders of *The Quarterly Review*.

#### Freyre, Gilberto de Mello (1900-1987)

Brazilian writer and social anthropologist. He wrote a study of the development of Brazilian civilization in *Casa-Grande e Senzala* (1933), an outstanding contribution to the sociology of Latin America. It was continued in *Sobrados e Mucambos* (1936), translated as *The Mansions and the Shanties* (1963).

He has also written Nordeste/Northeast (1937), Um Engenheiro Frances no Brazil/A French Engineer in Brazil (1940), Regiao e Tradiçao/Region and Tradition (1941), Brazil, an Interpretation (1945), Sociologia (1945), Ordem e Progresso/Order and Progress (1959), and a novel, Dona Sinhá e Filho Padre/Mother and Son (1964).

# Freytag, Gustav (1816-1895)

German novelist and dramatist. He wrote several successful plays, notably *Die Journalisten/The Journalists* 1854, one of the finest German comedies of the 19th century. His masterpiece is *Soll und Haben/Debit and Credit* 1855, a novel about the commercial world which favourably portrayed the German middle class. Other works include *Die verlorene Handschrift/The Lost Manuscript* 1864 and the series *Die Ahnen* 1872-81.

## Frietschie (or Fritchie), Barbara (1766-1862)

US heroine who, according to legend, on 6 September 1862, at the age of 95, boldly displayed the Union flag as Confederate soldiers passed by her home in Frederick, Maryland. In tribute to her bravery, she was not harmed. A replica of her house was built in 1926.

She was born Barbara Haver in Lancaster, Pennsylvania. Her father was a hatter and she married John Casper Frietschie, a glovemaker, in 1806.

## Fröding, Gustaf (1860-1911)

Swedish lyric poet. Inspired by the European Romantics, radical in politics, engaged in the revolt against Naturalism, he charted new possibilities for Swedish verse by uniting colloquial language with musical form. His themes are often melancholy and despairing, reflecting his history of mental instability. His collections include *Guitarr*  och dragharmonika/Guitar and Concertina 1891, Nya dikter/New Poems 1894, and Stänk och flikar/Splashes and Rags 1896.

#### frontier literature

writing reflecting the US experience of frontier and pioneer life, long central to US literature. The category includes James Fenimore <u>Cooper</u>'s *Leatherstocking Tales*; the frontier humour writing of Artemus Ward, Bret Harte, and Mark Twain; dime novels; Westerns; the travel records of Francis Parkman; and the pioneer romances of Willa Cather. Much modern American writing has been influenced by the frontier theme.

#### Frost, Robert Lee (1874-1963)

US poet. His accessible, colloquial (written in local, informal dialect) blank verse, often flavoured with New England speech patterns, is written with an individual voice and penetrating vision. His poems include 'Mending Wall' ('Something there is that does not love a wall'), 'The Road Not Taken', and 'Stopping by Woods on a Snowy Evening'. They are collected in *Complete Poems* (1951).

Born in San Francisco, Frost was raised in New England, where he attended Dartmouth College and Harvard University for brief periods. After Harvard, where he failed to graduate, his varied occupations included work as a teacher, cobbler, and editor, before he settled as a farmer in New Hampshire for 11 years. In 1912 he went to England where he met English writers Rupert <u>Brooke</u>, Lascelles Abercrombie, Edward <u>Thomas</u>, along with other poets. His first book of verse, *A Boy's Will*, was published the following year. In 1915 Frost returned to the USA and held various university posts; he was professor of poetry at Harvard 1936. Other works include *North of Boston* (1914), *New Hampshire* (1924; Pulitzer Prize), *Collected Poems* (1930; Pulitzer Prize), *A Further Range* (1936; Pulitzer Prize), and *A Witness Tree* (1942; Pulitzer Prize). In 1961 he read his 'The Gift Outright' at the inauguration of US president, John F Kennedy.

## Frugoni, Carlo Innocenzo (1692-1768)

Italian poet. Court poet at Parma, his lyrics and pastorals are remarkable for their facility and elegance. He also wrote and produced operas.

#### Frulovisi, Tito Livio (lived 1430s)

Italian humanist author from Ferrara. Educated in Venice by Guarino da Verona, his

first writings were Latin comedies in the style of <u>Plautus</u>. He dedicated a Ciceronian dialogue, *De Republica*, to Leonello d'Este (*c.* 1435). Travelling to England in 1436, he became 'poet and orator' to Humfrey, Duke of Gloucester, and dedicated to Henry VI of England a life of his father, *Vita Henrici Quinti* (*c.* 1438). He soon returned to the Continent and, lacking patronage, changed career: he was in later life a doctor.

# Fry, Stephen (1957-)

English comedian, actor, and novelist. A frequent performer in partnership with fellow actor and comedian Hugh Laurie, on the UK television show *Friday Night Live*, and as a cast member in the *Blackadder* series, Fry has become a cultured presence on the UK comedy scene. He won critical acclaim for his performance of Oscar Wilde in the 1997 film *Wilde*, and went on to direct his first film, *Bright Young Things*, in 2003.

Born in London, other film roles have included *The Wind in the Willows* (1996), *A Civil Action* (1998), *Gosford Park* (2001), *Le Divorce* (2003), and *Tooth* (2004). Novels include *Liar* (1993), *The Hippopotamus* (1996), *Making History* (1996), *Moab is my Washpot: An Autobiography* (1999), and *Revenge: A Novel* (2002).

# Fuentes, Carlos (1928-)

Mexican writer, lawyer, and diplomat. His first novel *La región más transparente/ Where the Air Is Clear* (1958) encompasses the history of the country from the Aztecs to the present day.

More than other Mexican novelists, he presents the frustrated social philosophy of the failed Mexican revolution. He received international attention for *La muerte de Artemio Cruz/The Death of Artemio Cruz* (1962), *Terra nostra* (1975), and *El gringo viejo/The Old Gringo* (1985). His non-fiction includes *La nueva novela hispanoamericana/The New Hispano-American Novel* (1969), his major work of literary criticism.

# Fukuzawa, Yukichi (1834-1901)

Japanese writer and educationalist. One of the first Japanese to travel to Europe and the USA in the 1860s, he was influential in introducing Western civilization to Japan, producing a series of books written in straightforward prose. He founded a newspaper and Keio University, where he tried to inculcate a spirit of independence.

# Fuller, Henry Blake (1857-1929)

US writer (under the pen-name Stanton Page). Influenced by the contrast between European and American cultures, he wrote both romantic novels, such as *The Chevalier of Pensieri-Vani* (1890), and realistic works like *The Cliff-Dwellers: A Novel* (1893), a scathing commentary on Chicago's apartment-dwelling social climbers. He also wrote satiric verses attacking President McKinley, a travelogue, *Gardens of This World* (1929), and plays. Born in Chicago, Illinois, he was educated at local Chicago schools before beginning his travels in Europe. After his father's death in 1885, he returned to Chicago, where he did much of his writing.

## Fuller, Roy (Broadbent) (1912-1991)

English poet and novelist. His early verse, including the collections *Poems* (1940) and *The Middle of a War* (1944), was concerned with social problems. With *Counterparts* (1954), his work became more personal and allusive. His novels are particularly concerned with mental turmoil and difficult relationships: they include *Image of a Society* (1956), *My Child, My Sister* (1965), and *The Carnal Island* (1970). *The Strange and the Good: Collected Memoirs* was published in 1989.

His later collections of verse include *Brutus's Orchard* (1957), *The Reign of Sparrows* (1980) and *New and Collected Poems* 1934-1984 (1985).

## Fuller, Thomas (1608-1661)

English writer. He was chaplain to the Royalist army during the Civil War and, at the Restoration, became the king's chaplain. He wrote a *History of the Holy War* (1639), *Good Thoughts in Bad Times* (1645), its sequel *Good Thoughts in Worse Times* (1647), and the biographical *Worthies of England* (1662).

# Funk, Isaac K(auffman) (1839-1912)

US lexicographer and publisher, responsible for the publication of several religious periodicals and secular reference works. His publications include the *Homiletic Review* and *Voice*, an influential temperance periodical, and the *Literary Digest*, which he founded in 1890. He planned, supervised, and served as editor-in-chief of the unabridged dictionary, *Standard Dictionary of the English Language* (1893), and of the *New Standard Dictionary of the English Language* (1913), which he had nearly completed before his death.

He was born in Clifton, Ohio, and served as a Lutheran minister from 1861 to 1872. He resigned from the ministry to travel, later returning to editorial work for the *Christian Radical*. In 1876 he started his own business in New York, supplying materials and books to ministers. He was joined in 1877 by A W Wagnalls, and the company was renamed the Funk & Wagnalls Company in 1891.

#### Furphy, Joseph (1843-1912)

Australian writer and poet. His most successful novel, *Such is Life* 1903, is an anecdotal account of life in the Australian Riverina district in the 1880s. Two other works, *Rigby's Romance* 1921 and *The Buln Buln and the Brolga* 1948, were created from sections deleted from the overlong original manuscript of *Such is Life*.

#### **Futurism**

avant-garde art movement founded in 1909 that celebrated the dynamism of the modern world. It was chiefly an Italian movement and was mainly expressed in painting, but it also embraced other arts, including literature and music, and it had extensive influence outside Italy, particularly in Russia. In Italy the movement virtually died out during World War I, but in Russia it continued to flourish into the 1920s.

Futurism was founded by the Italian writer Filippo Tommaso Marinetti when he published a manifesto attacking established cultural values in the Parisian newspaper *Le Figaro* on 20 February 1909. Marinetti came from a wealthy family, so he had the financial means to stage effective publicity. He also had a flamboyant temperament, which gained attention for Futurism everywhere he went. Like many Italians of the time, he thought that his country and his country's art had become stagnant, and he called for a new art glorifying modern technology, machines, noise, pollution, cities, energy, and violence. Futurism was a refreshing contrast to the sentimentality of Romanticism. It embraced all things modern - the exciting new world - using new techniques and technology in its work. Futurism was therefore very unusual among art movements in that it started with a name and idea, with the works of art expressing that idea coming afterwards.

Marinetti's manifesto found many supporters in Italy, including a number of painters in Milan who formed the nucleus of the Futurist group. These were Umberto Boccioni, Carlo Carrà, and Luigi Russolo. In 1910 they produced two manifestos of Futurist painting, to which Giacomo Balla and Gino Severini were also signatories. The manifestos were concerned with the idea of conveying a sense of movement, and this is one of the essential features of Futurist painting. Sometimes movement was conveyed by blurring forms or overlapping images in the manner of high-speed multiple-exposure photography. The fragmented forms of cubism and the bright, broken colours of neo-Impressionism were major influences. Usually the Futurists took their subjects from modern city life, machines, and power, and this influenced cubists and constructivists.

The Futurists had numerous exhibitions of their work (in 1912 their first group exhibition travelled to various major European cities, including Amsterdam, Berlin,

London, Paris, and Vienna), and they also spread their ideas through public meetings and other events skilfully staged by Marinetti. Although the war ended the movement as a significant force, it had already had a strong influence, for example on Vorticism in England, and during the war its provocative publicity techniques were adopted by the Dadaists. After the war Marinetti continued to promote Futurism. He was a friend of Mussolini and supported fascism, but it is not true, as is sometimes claimed, that Futurism was 'the official art of fascism'. Fascism used both traditional and avant-garde art for propaganda purposes, and Futurism was one of a number of movements plundered for imagery.

## Fuzuli (died 1566)

#### pseudonym of Mehmet Suleiman

Turkish poet, born in Azerbaijan. He wrote lyrics and ghazals in Turkish, Arabic, and Persian, and his poem 'Leili-ve-Medjnon' was used for the first Islamic opera.

## Fyleman, Rose (1877-1957)

English poet. Her light, tuneful poems for children were very popular. Typical collections are *Fairies and Chimneys* 1918, *The Rainbow Cat* 1922, *Gay Go Up* 1929, *Runabout Rhymes* 1941, and *Nursery Stories* 1949.

## Gaboriau, Emile (1835-1873)

French writer. He became known as an author of detective novels when his story L'Affaire Lerouge was published 1866 in the newspaper Le Pays. He also wrote Le crime d'Orcival, Monsieur Lecoq, Les esclaves de Paris, La vie infernaleL'argent des autres, and La corde au cou, which have become classics of <u>detective fiction</u>.

## Gaddis, William (1922-1998)

US novelist. He was a distinctive and satirical stylist of non-psychological work, often written on a vast, perplexing scale. His first novel, *The Recognitions* (1955), explores the idea of forgery in social and sexual relations and in art. It was followed by the encyclopedic *JR* (1975), written entirely in dialogue, which deals with money and power, *Carpenter's Gothic* (1985), and *Agape* (1998).

US writer. His simple fictional accounts of the struggles of Southern blacks are influenced by the oral traditions of rural Louisiana, and include *The Autobiography of Miss Jane Pittman* (1971) and *A Gathering of Old Men* (1983). He was writer in residence at the University of Southwestern Louisiana (1983). The son of a plantation worker, he was born in Oscar, Louisiana. He graduated from San Francisco State College.

## Galczynski, Konstanty Ildefons (1905-1953)

Polish poet. Anarchistic and challenging, his absurd sense of humour was supplanted in later years by more serious, reflective poetry. Among his works are *Koniec swiata/ The End of the World* 1929, *Zaczarowana dorozka/The Enchanted Carriage* 1948, and *Niobe* 1951.

## Gale, Zona (1874-1938)

US writer. Her career can be divided into several phases, beginning with early 'local colour' stories of village life, followed by the harsher, realistic documents of Midwestern life, as in her best-known work *Miss Lulu Brett* (1920), and culminating with the more abstract themes of her later work. She was a public advocate of pacifism and women's suffrage. Born in Portage, Wisconsin, she worked briefly as a journalist before turning her hand to fiction.

# Gallant, Mavis (1922-)

#### born Mavis Young

Canadian short-story writer and novelist, based in Paris. A regular contributor to the *New Yorker* magazine, she has published novels and collections of short fiction, notably *The Pegnitz Junction* (1973), dealing with German life alienated from its immediate past after 1945, *From the Fifteenth District* (1979), set in various European countries, and *Across the Bridge* (1994).

Her work, which is distinguished by adroitly shifting points of view, perhaps influenced by cinema technique, often deals with the themes of cultural isolation and displacement. Other collections of her stories include *The Other Paris* (1956), *My Heart is Broken* (1964), *The End of the World and Other Stories* (1974), *Overhead in a Balloon: Stories of Paris* (1985), *In Transit* (1988), and *Collected Stories of Mavis Gallant* (1996). She is also the author of two novels, *Green Water, Green Sky* (1969) and *A Fairly Good Time* (1970), as well as a play, *What is to be done?* (1984), and a non-fiction work, *Paris Journals: Selected Essays and Reviews* (1986).

## Gallegos Freire, Rómulo (1884-1969)

Venezuelan politician and writer. He was Venezuela's first democratically elected president in 1948 before being overthrown and exiled by a military coup the same year. He was also a professor of philosophy and literature. His novels, focusing on Venezuelan life, include *La trepadora/The Climber* (1925) and *Doña Bárbara* (1929). He returned to Venezuela in 1958.

# Gallico, Paul (William) (1897-1976)

US author. Originally a sports columnist, he began writing fiction 1936. His many books include *The Snow Goose* 1941.

# Galsworthy, John (1867-1933)

English novelist and dramatist. His work examines the social issues of the Victorian period. He wrote *The Forsyte Saga* (1906-22) and its sequel, the novels collectively entitled *A Modern Comedy* (1929). His plays include *The Silver Box* (1906). He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1932.

#### major works

Galsworthy first achieved recognition with *The Silver Box* and *The Man of Property* (1906), the first instalment of the *Forsyte Saga* series, which also includes *In Chancery* (1920) and *To Let* (1921). Soames Forsyte, the central character, is the embodiment of Victorian values and feeling for property, and the wife whom he also 'owns' - Irene - was based on Galsworthy's wife. *A Modern Comedy* contains *The White Monkey* (1924), *The Silver Spoon* (1926), and *Swan Song* (1928), and (included in later editions) the short stories *On Forsyte Change* (1930).

## Galt, John (1779-1839)

Scottish novelist. He was the author of *Annals of the Parish* (1821), in which he portrays the life of a Lowlands village, using the local dialect. An effective interpreter of Scottish rural and small-town life, in which capacity he contributed to the development of the Scottish novel, he was also an instigator of the political novel.

Born in Irvine, Ayrshire, he moved to London in 1804, then travelled extensively in Europe, and went to Canada as secretary of a land company in 1826. He founded the Canadian town of Guelph, and Galt, on the Grand River, Ontario, was named after

him. In 1829 he returned to Scotland.

## Garborg, Arne (1851-1924)

Norwegian novelist, playwright, and poet. He was a leading figure in the movement to establish a new Norwegian literary language (*Landsmål*; later called *Nynorsk*, 'New Norwegian'). His first important novel, *Bondestudenter/Peasant Students* 1883, depicts the cultural shock and abject poverty experienced by country boys on becoming students in the capital. Among his later novels are *Trette Men/Tired Men* 1891. As a dramatist he won some success with *Laereren/The Teacher* 1896. His verse cycle *Haugtussa/The Hill Innocent* 1895, written in praise of his native Jaeren, ranks among the masterpieces of Norwegian literature.

## García Calderón, Ventura (1886-1959)

Peruvian writer. The son of an exiled president, he lived a large part of his life in France and Spain. His novels and stories, written in both Spanish and French, concern the social inequalities of his native country. His best-known works are *La venganza del cóndor/The Vengeance of the Condor* 1924 and *Couleur de sang/Colour of Blood*, both of which are collections of short stories.

#### García Lorca, Federico

Spanish poet. See Lorca, Federico García.

## García Márquez, Gabriel (Gabo) (1928-)

Colombian novelist. His sweeping novel *Cien años de soledad/One Hundred Years of Solitude* (1967) (which tells the story of a family over a period of six generations) is an example of magic realism, a technique used to heighten the intensity of realistic portrayal of social and political issues by introducing grotesque or fanciful material. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1982.

He began his career as a journalist, working as a foreign correspondent in Europe, Latin America, and the USA. His other books include *EI amor en los tiempos del cólera/Love in the Time of Cholera* (1985), *EI general en su laberinto/The General in His Labyrinth* (1991), a fictional account of the last four months of Simón Bolívar's life, and Noticia de un secuestro/News of a Kidnapping (1996), a non-fiction account of the Colombian drug world. He published Vivir para contarla/Living to Tell the Tale in 2003.

## Garcilaso de la Vega (1503-1536)

Spanish poet. A soldier, he was a member of Charles V's expedition in 1535 to Tunis; he was killed in battle at Nice. He is one of Spain's finest pastoral poets and his verse, some of the greatest of the Spanish Renaissance, includes eclogues inspired by Virgil, and sonnets, songs, and elegies, often on the model of Petrarch.

He was born in Toledo. At the age of 17 he joined Charles V's guards, and from 1532 to 1534 served Pedro de Toledo, Viceroy of Naples. Together with Juan <u>Boscan</u> <u>Almogaver</u>, Garcilaso de la Vega popularized Italian 11-syllable verse. His finest poems are the eclogues, which, despite their formal and conventional exterior, show a skill and sensuality in handling Spanish that assure him a lasting reputation as one of the country's greatest poets.

## Gardiner, Alfred George (1865-1946)

English journalist and essayist. He wrote under the pseudonym 'Alpha of the Plough' and was editor of the *Daily News* 1902-19. His *Prophets, Priests and Kings* 1908 is a series of caustic character sketches of contemporary celebrities, notably politicians. It was followed by *Pillars of Society* 1913, in a similar vein, and *War Lords* 1915.

## Gardner, Erle Stanley (1889-1970)

US author of best-selling crime fiction. He created the character of the lawyerdetective Perry Mason, who was later featured in film and on television. Originally a lawyer, Gardner gave up his practice with the success of the first Perry Mason stories.

## Gardner, John (Champlin), Jr (1933-1982)

US writer and educator. He wrote a number of scholarly works, principally medieval translations and academic editions of classic texts. In addition he wrote poetry, criticism, and fiction, including *Grendel* (1971), *October Light* (1976), which won him a National Book Critics Circle Award, and *Mickelsson's Ghosts* (1982). He was born in Batavia, New York. Having gained a PhD at Iowa State University he taught at several academic institutions, including the State University of New York, Binghamton (1978-82). He died in a motorcycle accident.

cycle of four (or five) satirical novels by the French writer François <u>Rabelais</u>, published 1532-64. The novels are written in mock-heroic style and reveal the extent of Rabelais's learning in the fields of medicine, theology, and law. Often bawdy, they satirize a variety of institutions, notably universities and the church: the intensification of these attacks in the third and forth volumes led to their condemnation by the university in Paris.

The first volume written, *Gargantua*, deals with the birth and childhood of the giant Gargantua, son of Grandgousier; his education in Paris (an opportunity for a satirical attack on the university); and the foundation of the infamous abbey of Thélème, the motto of which is *Fay ce que vouldras* ('Do what you will'). The remaining volumes, the *Pantagruel* books, tell the story of Gargantua's son, a giant of enormous strength and appetite, his friendship with the cunning rogue Panurge, and his conquest of the kingdom of the Dipsodes.

## Garland, Hamlin (1860-1940)

US writer. In his realistic novels and short stories he depicted the life of the people on the prairie farms as a monotonous struggle for survival. Among his many volumes are *Main Travelled Roads* 1891 and *Prairie Folks* 1892.

A Son of the Middle Border 1917 is autobiographical; its sequel, A Daughter of the Middle Border 1921, was awarded a Pulitzer Prize.

# Garnett, David (1892-1981)

English novelist. His second novel, *Lady into Fox* 1922, made his reputation: it is a striking story of a woman who turns into a vixen, and the effect it has upon her husband. Other novels include *A Man in the Zoo* 1924 and *The Sailor's Return* 1925. He served with the RAF during World War II and drew upon his experiences in *War in the Air* 1941. His later novels are more naturalistic and less serious in tone and subject. CBE 1952.

# Garnett, Richard (1835-1906)

English man of letters and librarian. He was keeper of printed books at the British Museum 1890-99. His most important works are *The Twilight of the Gods and other Tales* 1888 and *Relics of Shelley* 1862, a small collection of unpublished verse found by Garnett. He contributed many articles to the *Encyclopaedia Britannica*.

French dramatist and poet. Following the example of Etienne Jodelle, he wrote Classically styled tragedies (in particular following the example of Seneca). These include: *Porcie* (1568), *Hippolyte* (1573), *Antigone* (1580), and *Les Juives* (1583), which was based on the Bible story of Nebuchadnezzar's persecution of the Jews. He also wrote a tragicomedy *Bradamante* (1582) based on Ludovico Ariosto's *Orlando furioso*.

## Garrett, Almeida (1799-1854)

Portuguese poet, novelist, and dramatist. As a liberal, in 1823 he was forced into 14 years of exile. His works, which he saw as a single-handed attempt to create a national literature, include the prose *Viagens na Minha Terra/Travels in My Homeland* 1843-46 and the tragedy *Frei Luis de Sousa* 1843.

# Garrod, Heathcote William (1878-1960)

English scholar. He was professor of poetry at Oxford 1923-28 and Norton professor at Harvard 1929, his lectures being published as *Poetry and Criticism of Life* 1931. He edited the *Oxford Book of Latin Verse* 1912 and the poems of Keats 1939. Other works include *The Profession of Poetry* 1929, *The Study of Poetry* 1936, and *Scholarship: its Meaning and Value* 1946. CBE 1918.

# Garshin, Vsevolod Mikhailovich (1855-1888)

Russian short-story writer. He served in the Russo-Turkish War and was invalided home 1878. His stories, fewer than 20, include allegories, fairy tales, and war stories, among them 'The Red Flower' 1883 and 'Four Days' 1877, set during the war.

# Gascoigne, George (1525-1577)

English poet and dramatist. He is the author of *Supposes* (1573), a translation of *I* suppositi by Ludovico Ariosto, and the earliest extant comedy in English prose; *Jocasta* (1573), a version of the *Phoenissae* of Euripides, the second earliest tragedy in blank verse; an original comedy *The Glasse of Government* (1575); and a verse narrative *The Complaynte of Phylomene* (1587). His satire in blank verse, *The Steele Glas*, appeared in 1576.

Gaskell, Elizabeth Cleghorn (1810-1865)

#### born Elizabeth Cleghorn Stevenson

English novelist. Her most popular book, *Cranford* (1853), is the study of a small, close-knit circle in a small town, modelled on Knutsford, Cheshire, where she was brought up. Her other books, which often deal with social concerns, include *Mary Barton* (1848), *North and South* (1855), *Sylvia's Lovers* (1863-64), and the unfinished *Wives and Daughters* (1866). She wrote a frank and sympathetic biography of her friend Charlotte <u>Brontë</u> (1857).

Gaskell was born in London, and spent much of her youth with her aunt in Knutsford. In 1832 she married William Gaskell (1805-1884), a Unitarian minister from Manchester, and from then on led a very busy life, bringing up four daughters; helping the unemployed, the poor, and prostitutes in the slums of Manchester; and entertaining numerous friends and acquaintances. The success of *Mary Barton* established her as a novelist; in this work she describes with insight and sympathy the life and feelings of working-class people. She became a friend of English writer Charles <u>Dickens</u>, and also knew Scottish writer Thomas <u>Carlyle</u> and English writer William <u>Thackeray</u>. At Dickens's invitation she wrote for *Household Words*, in which *Cranford* appeared from 1851 to 1853.

*Ruth* (1853) was her second full-length novel, and aroused controversy by having sympathetically portraying an unmarried mother as its heroine. *North and South* is similar to *Mary Barton*, with more emphasis on the owners' and management side of industrial relations. Her later works are all set in the country, and are marked by a maturity of technique. *Sylvia's Lovers* is a powerful romance set in the days of the press gang. *Cousin Phyllis* (1863-64) is a delicate prose idyll. Her last work, *Wives and Daughters*, appeared in the *Cornhill Gazette* and was left unfinished when she died suddenly.

#### Gass, William Howard (1924-)

US experimental writer and theoretician. His novels, which parody genres and use typography and layout variations to emphasize the physical reality of the book, include *Omensetter's Luck* (1966) and *Willie Master's Lonesome Wife* (1968).

Other works include the short-story collection *In the Heart of the Heart of the Country* (1968), two volumes of criticism, *Fiction and the Figures of Life* (1970) and *The World Within the Word* (1978), the novel *The Tunnel* (1994), and the essay collection *Tests of Time* (2003).

## Gates, Henry Louis (1950-)

US academic and social activist. A scholar of African-American studies, he has republished such forgotten works as *Our Nig* (1859) by Harriet E Wilson (*c*.1828-*c*.1863), the earliest known novel by a black American. He published *The Signifying* 

*Monkey: A Theory of African-American Literary Criticism* (1988; American Book Award).

#### Gaultier, Bon. (1816-1909)

#### pseudonym of Theodore Martin

Scottish writer and translator. He used the pen-name as a contributor to *Fraser's Magazine* and *Tait's Magazine* and, together with W E Aytoun, for *A Book of Ballads* 1845, a collection of verse parodies of Tennyson, Elizabeth Barrett Browning, Thomas Macaulay, and others.

#### Gautier, Théophile (1811-1872)

French Romantic poet. His later works emphasized the perfection of form and the polished beauty of language and imagery, for example *Emaux et camées/Enamels and Cameos* (1852). He was also a novelist (*Mademoiselle de Maupin* (1835)) and later turned to journalism. His belief in the supreme importance of form in art, at the cost both of sentiment and ideas, inspired the poets who were later known as *Les Parnassiens*.

## Gay, John (1685-1732)

English poet and dramatist. He wrote *Trivia* (1716), a verse picture of 18th-century London. His *The Beggar's Opera* (1728), a 'Newgate pastoral' using traditional songs and telling of the love of Polly for highwayman Captain Macheath, was an extraordinarily popular success. Its satiric political touches led to the banning of *Polly*, a sequel. Bertolt Brecht (1898-1956) based his *Threepenny Opera* (1928) on the story of *The Beggar's Opera*.

## Gazes (or Gaza), Theodore (c. 1400-1475)

Greek scholar and teacher. A leading figure in the development of Renaissance Greek studies, he wrote a Greek grammar, printed in Venice in 1495, that long remained a standard textbook. He also translated many Greek authors into Latin, including Aristotle, Theophrastus, and John Chrysostom.

Geijer, Erik Gustaf (1783-1847)

Swedish historian and poet. His *History of the Swedish People* (1832-36) is now considered more important than his poetical works. He was one of the founders of the Gothic Society in 1811 and was appointed a member of the Swedish Academy in 1824.

#### Geisel, Theodor Seuss

US author, best known by his pseudonym Dr Seuss.

#### Gelber, Jack (1932-2003)

US playwright and novelist. His first play, *The Connection* (1959), marked the revival of off-Broadway as the source of originality in US theatre. His first novel, *On Ice*, appeared in 1964.

Gelber was also well known for his association with the Living Theatre (1951-70), the experimental and innovative theatre group that produced *The Connection*.

#### Gellert, Christian Fürchtegott (1715-1769)

German poet. His works, mainly educational in aim, broke away from the formalities of earlier writers and prepared the way for <u>Goethe</u> and <u>Schiller</u>. His moralistic novel *Das Leben der schwedischen Gräfin von G.* 1746 was modelled on the work of Samuel <u>Richardson</u>. He was held in great esteem for his *Betrachtungen über die Religion* 1760 and *Moralische Vorlesungen* 1770, and his fables were internationally popular. He wrote some hymns which are still used in German Protestant hymn books.

#### Gellhorn, Martha Ellis (1908-1998)

US journalist and writer. She reported on wars in Java (1946), Vietnam (1966), the Middle East (1967), and Central America (1983-85). Her novels include *A Stricken Field* (1940), *Liano* (1948), and *The Wine of Astonishment* (1948). She also published short stories. Her writing is marked by acute observation, and contains sympathy for the weak or oppressed and moral straightforwardness.

#### Gelsted, Otto (1888-1969)

Danish poet. He was a rationalist, and in his verse nature stands for the purity and

clarity he was seeking. His later poems demonstrate a political awareness and a desire for human fellowship strengthened by the threatening atmosphere of the 1930s, the German occupation (during which he fled to Sweden), and his own development towards Marxism (*Under Uvejret* 1934 and *Emigrantdigte* 1945).

#### Genlis, Stéphanie-Félicité, comtesse de Genlis (1746-1830)

French writer. Her works are numerous and of historical value; they include *Théâtre de l'éducation* 1779-80; *Mémoires inédits sur le dix-huitième siècle et la révolution française* 1825; and a romance, *Mademoiselle de Clermont* 1802. From 1770 she was lady-in-waiting to the duchess of Chartres and governess to her children, one of whom, Louis Philippe, she lived to see become king 1830.

## Gentlemen Prefer Blondes

witty 1925 novel by US writer Anita <u>Loos</u> that tells the story of the classic female gold-digger Lorelei Lee, filmed in 1953 with Marilyn Monroe and Jane Russell. The novel's 1927 sequel was called *But Gentlemen Marry Brunettes*.

## George, Stefan (1868-1933)

German poet. His early poetry was inspired by French Symbolism, but his concept of himself as regenerating the German spirit first appears in *Des Teppich des Lebens/ The Tapestry of Life* 1899, and later in *Der siebente Ring/The Seventh Ring* 1907. *Das neue Reich/The New Empire* 1928 shows his realization that World War I had not had the right purifying effect on German culture. He rejected Nazi overtures and emigrated to Switzerland 1933.

#### **German literature**

the literature of Germany. The earliest written records date from the late 8th century and consist of glosses and translations from Latin of religious and philosophical works. However, there existed a tradition of oral literature, *Heldenlieder*, or songs describing the deeds of heroes, battle songs, pagan hymns, and laments, which provided a rich source for the developing vernacular literature.

#### Gerstenberg, Heinrich Wilhelm von (1737-1823)

German poet and critic. His chief works are Briefe über Merkwürdigkeiten der

*Literatur/Letters on Literary Landmarks* 1766-70 (essays on literature) and the tragedy *Ugolino* 1768, one of the main forerunners of the *Sturm und Drang* movement.

#### Gerusalemme liberata/Jerusalem Delivered

epic poem by the Italian poet Torquato <u>Tasso</u>, published in 1581. Its subject is the climax of the First Crusade, the siege and conquest of Jerusalem in 1099 by the army of Godfrey of Boulogne. The Christians defeat the many stratagems of the Saracens and the poem concludes as Godfrey leads the triumphant crusaders to the Holy Sepulchre. These historical events provide the framework for the adventures of the central character, Rinaldo, a Christian knight.

To the historical participants - Godfrey, Baldwin, Tancred, Raymond of Toulouse, Bohemond, Peter the Hermit, and Solyman, Sultan of Nicaea - Tasso added fictional characters: Rinaldo (introduced as the ancestor of the d'Este family), the enchantress Armida, and also several women, notably Clorinda and Erminia, who are romantically involved with Tancred.

It was translated into English in 1594 and 1600 and influenced parts of Spenser's *Faerie Queene*.

#### Gesta Romanorum

#### Deeds of the Romans

title given to a collection of short, didactic Latin stories for the use of preachers. It was made, probably about 1300 (first printed about 1473), by an English Franciscan from Latin and Greek sources, and was gradually expanded with other Eastern and European material. It proved endearingly popular, despite being by humanist standards, a 'barbarian' text; in the age of print, it was among the earliest printed books (Utrecht, *c.* 1473) and an English version was printed by Wynkyn de Worde around 1510.

## Gezelle, Guido Pierre Théodore Joseph (1830-1899)

Flemish poet. He was a leader in the restoration of literary Flemish and remains one of the greatest modern Flemish poets. His work, some of which anticipates the Impressionism of the later Romantics, is marked by a blend of religious and patriotic fervour and a rare sensitivity of perception.

Besides various translations from English and French he published many books of verse, including *Kerkhofblommen*, *Dicktoefeningen* both 1858, *Gedichten* 1863,

Tijdkrans 1893, and Rijmsnoer om en om het jaar 1897.

## Ghil, René (1862-1925)

French Symbolist poet. His poems were published in *Légendes d'âmes et de sang* 1885 and *Euvre* 1889-1912. He also published critical and theoretical works, including *Le Traité du verbe* 1886, *De la poésie scientifique* 1909, and *La tradition de la poésie scientifique* 1920.

#### Ghosts

#### Norwegian Gengangere

play by Norwegian dramatist Henrik Ibsen, first produced in Chicago, USA, 1882. Mrs Alving hides the profligacy of her late husband. The past catches up with her when her son inherits his father's syphilis and unwittingly plans to marry his half-sister.

## Gibbings, Robert (1889-1958)

Irish travel writer and artist. He illustrated his travel books with his own wood engravings. After *Blue Angels and White Whales* 1938, he wrote the successful *Sweet Thames Run Softly* 1940 and *Lovely is the Lee* 1945. The South Seas provided the material for *Over the Reefs* 1948, while he returned to more familiar territory with *Sweet Cork of Thee* 1951.

For a time he was proprietor of the Golden Cockerel Press, where he employed, among others, David Jones and Eric Gill. He then became a lecturer in typography at Reading University.

## Gibbon, Lewis Grassic (1901-1935)

#### pen-name of James Leslie Mitchell

Scottish novelist. He was the author of the trilogy *A Scots Quair*, comprising *Sunset Song*, *Cloud Howe*, and *Grey Granite* (1932-34), set in the Mearns, south of Aberdeen, where he was born and brought up. Under his real name he wrote anthropological works and novels, which included *Stained Radiance* (1930) and *Spartacus* (1933).

## Gibbons, Stella (Dorothea) (1902-1989)

English journalist and novelist. Her *Cold Comfort Farm* (1932) is a classic parody of the regional novel, in particular the works of Mary Webb. She followed this with a series of other successful novels.

## Gibran, Kahlil (1883-1931)

Lebanese-American essayist, artist, and mystic poet. Brought to Boston in 1895, he studied in Beirut and Paris before settling in New York in 1912. A Maronite Christian influenced by the Bible, William Blake, and Nietzsche, he wrote in both Arabic and English, exploring the themes of love, nature, longing for homeland, and romantic rebellion, including, controversially, the rebellion of women against arranged marriages. He is best known in the West for *The Prophet* (1923).

## Gibson, Wilfrid Wilson (1878-1962)

English poet. Most of his poems, notably the 17 dramatic pieces which make up *Daily Bread* 1910 and the work *Livelihood* 1917, present the normal toiling life of people in the modern industrial world. Two of the most striking of his individual pieces are 'Flannan Isle' and 'The Ice-Cart'. He also wrote a number of plays, including *Within Four Walls* 1950.

## Gibson, William (1948-)

US writer. His debut novel *Neuromancer* (1984) is credited with inventing the concept of virtual reality and establishing the cyberpunk genre; it won the Hugo and Nebula awards for science fiction.

Neuromancer was followed by Count Zero and Burning Chrome (both 1986), Mona Lisa Overdrive (1988), Virtual Light (1993), Idoru (1996), All Tomorrow's Parties (1999), and Pattern Recognition (2003). Other works include The Difference Engine (1990), co-written with Bruce Sterling, about Babbage's original 19th-century computer, and the screenplay for the 1995 film Johnny Mnemonic, which was based on his 1986 short story of the same name. Agrippa (1992) was a set of engravings and a disk, designed to self-destruct after being read.

# Gide, André (Paul Guillaume) (1869-1951)

French novelist. His work is largely autobiographical and concerned with the conflict between desire and conventional morality. It includes *Les Nourritures terrestres*/

Fruits of the Earth (1897), L'Immoraliste/The Immoralist (1902), La Porte étroite/ Strait is the Gate (1909), Les Caves du Vatican/The Vatican Cellars (1914), and Les Faux-monnayeurs/The Counterfeiters (1926). He was a cofounder of the influential literary periodical Nouvelle Revue française (1908), and kept an almost lifelong Journal. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1947.

#### Gifford, William (1756-1826)

English poet and critic. His *Baviad* 1794 and *Maeviad* 1795 were powerful satires directed respectively against the Della Cruscans and the ineptitudes and corruption of contemporary drama. Gifford was the first editor of the *Quarterly Review*, with which he was connected 1809-24. His partisanship secured it an ever-increasing circulation, but he attacked the works of many writers, including Keats's *Endymion* and the writings of Shelley, Lamb, and Hazlitt, among others.

# Gilbert, W(illiam) S(chwenck) (1836-1911)

English humorist and dramatist. He collaborated with composer Arthur Sullivan, providing the libretti for their series of light comic operas from 1871 performed by the D'Oyly Carte Opera Company; they include *HMS Pinafore* (1878), *The Pirates of Penzance* (1879), and *The Mikado* (1885).

Born in London, Gilbert became a lawyer in 1863, but in 1869 he published a collection of his humorous verse and drawings, *Bab Ballads*, which was followed by a second volume in 1873. He was knighted in 1907.

## Gil Blas de Santillane

influential novel by Alain-René <u>Le Sage</u> published in four volumes 1715-35. It is a <u>picaresque</u> romance set in Spain in which the easy-going, adaptable hero experiences poverty and wealth, the favour of the great, and disgrace and imprisonment, before finally retiring to enjoy country life. There was an English translation by Tobias Smollett 1749.

## Gilchrist, Ellen (1935-)

US short-story writer and novelist. She is noted for sharp and stylish social tragicomedy, set against the backdrop of the American south. Her collections include *In the Land of Dreamy Dreams* (1981), *Victory Over Japan* (1985), *Drunk with Love* (1986), and *Light Can Be Both Wave and Particle* (1990). Her novels include *The Annunciation* (1983), *The Anna Papers* (1988), *Net of Jewels* (1992), and

## Gilder, Richard Watson (1844-1909)

US poet and editor. His works include *The New Day* 1875, love sonnets, *Five Books of Songs* 1894, and *Collected Poems* 1908, and studies of Abraham Lincoln 1909 and Grover Cleveland 1910.

## Gildersleeve, Basil (Lanneau) (1831-1924)

US classicist. Thought of as the greatest American classicist of his day, his *Latin Grammar* (1867), *Pindar: The Olympian and Pythian Odes* (1885), and *Greek Syntax* (1900) were used by generations of American students. Gildersleeve was born in Charleston, South Carolina. A child prodigy who read widely in Latin by the age of six, he received his BA from the College of New Jersey (later Princeton) aged 17 and his PhD from the University of Gottingen at 22. He founded the *American Journal of Philology* (1880), was twice president of the American Philological Association (1878 and 1909), and was closely involved in the development of the Johns Hopkins graduate school, where he taught from 1856-1915.

## Gilgamesh

hero of Sumerian, Hittite, Akkadian, and Assyrian legend, and lord of the Sumerian city of Uruk. The 12 verse books of the *Epic of Gilgamesh* were recorded in a standard version on 12 cuneiform tablets by the Assyrian king Ashurbanipal's scholars in the 7th century  $_{BC}$ , and the epic itself is older than Homer's *Iliad* by at least 1,500 years.

The epic contains the adventures of Gilgamesh and Enkidu, the wild man who became his friend, and an account of a Flood similar to that of the Old Testament.

# Ginsberg, (Irwin) Allen (1926-1997)

US poet and political activist. His reputation as a visionary, overtly political poet was established by <u>Howl</u> (1956), which expressed and shaped the spirit of the <u>Beat</u> <u>Generation</u> and criticized the materialism of contemporary US society. Ginsberg, like many of his generation of poets, found his authorial voice via experimentation with drugs, alternative religion, and the hippie culture; his poetry drew, for example, on Oriental philosophies and utilized mantric breath meditations.

Ginsberg travelled widely - to Cuba, India, and Czechoslovakia in the 1960s, and

China and Nicaragua in the 1980s - spreading his Zen-socialist politics of radical but passive dissent. His other major poem, *Kaddish* (1961), dealt with the breakdown and death of his schizophrenic mother. His *Collected Poems* 1947-1980 was published in 1985.

#### Giono, Jean (1895-1970)

French novelist. His books are chiefly set in Provence. *Que ma Joie demeure/Joy of Man's Desiring* 1935 is an attack on life in towns and a plea for a return to country life.

In 1956 he published a defence of Gaston Dominici, who allegedly murdered an English family on holiday, maintaining that the old farmer exemplified the misunderstandings between town and country people.

#### Giovanni, Nikki (Yolande Cornelia, Jr) (1943-)

US poet, writer, academic, and African-American activist, who has used her literary works to speak out on family issues, as in *The Woman and the Men* (1975). Giovanni was born in Knoxville, Tennessee. She studied at Fisk University, Tennessee (1960-61 and 1964-67), the University of Pennsylvania (1967), and Columbia University (1968). Based in Cincinnati, she has taught at many institutions, including Mount St Joseph on the Ohio (1985).

## Giraldi, Giambattista Cinzio (1504-1573)

also known as Cynthius

Ferrarese author. He held various academic posts at Ferrara and elsewhere, and wrote nine tragedies, the best known of which is *Orbecche* (1541). *Gli hecatommiti* (1565) is a famous volume of tales, from which Shakespeare borrowed his plots for *Measure for Measure* and *Othello*.

#### Giraud de Borneil (1156-1200)

also known as Guiraut de Bornelh

Provençal troubadour. He was a professional poet who wrote in most of the lyric genres. His love songs, often complex in thought and expression despite his defence of a simple style, were praised by Dante for their moral seriousness.

# Giraudoux, (Hippolyte) Jean (1882-1944)

French dramatist and novelist. He wrote the plays *Amphitryon 38* (1929), *La Guerre de Troie n'aura pas lieu/Tiger at the Gates* (1935), and *La Folle de Chaillot/The Madwoman of Chaillot* (1945). His novels include *Suzanne et la Pacifique/Suzanne and the Pacific* (1921), *Eglantine* (1927), and *Les Aventures de Jérôme Bardini* (1930).

Giraudoux's plays reflect his range of interests and his technical proficiency in a variety of genres, including fairy-tale fantasies, historical and legendary plays, poetic drama, and light comedy. Although he often dealt with weighty and urgent themes, the most striking quality of his work is a graceful and witty sense of the fantastic.

# Gissing, George Robert (1857-1903)

English writer. His work deals with social issues and has a tone of gloomy pessimism. Among his books are *New Grub Street* (1891), about a writer whose marriage breaks up, and the semi-autobiographical *Private Papers of Henry Ryecroft* (1903).

His first novel, *Workers in the Dawn*, appeared in 1880. Between 1885 and 1895 he wrote 14 novels, including *Demos* (1886), his first real success; *The Odd Woman* (1893), which is about early feminists; and *The Nether World* (1889) about the London poor. He also wrote studies of the novelist Charles Dickens and other critical works.

# Giunti (Junta) Press

Italian printing house established by Luca-Antonio Giunti (1457-1538) in Venice in the 1480s. The more important branch of the firm was at Florence, where Filippo Giunti (1450-1517) printed from 1497 until his death. The business was carried on by his descendants until the early 17th century. Filippo Giunti printed the first Greek edition of Plutarch's *Lives* in 1517.

# Giusti, Giuseppe (1809-1850)

Italian poet. His poems are mainly patriotic and they express contemporary problems in a simple, popular manner. They include *La ghigliottina a vapore* 1833, *Lo stivale* 1836, *II brindisi di Girella* 1840 (dedicated to the memory of Talleyrand), *Gli umanitari, Gingillino,* and *Sant' Ambrogio* 1846.

# Gjellerup, Karl (1857-1919)

Danish author. His works are varied, including poetry, fiction, drama, and criticism, but he is best remembered for novels such as *Germanernes Laerling/The Apprentice of the Teutons* (1882), *Minna* (1891), and *Mollen* (1896). He shared the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1917 with Henrik Pontoppidan.

## Glasgow, Ellen Anderson Gholson (1873-1945)

US novelist. Her books, set mainly in her native Virginia, often deal with the survival of tough heroines in a world of adversity and include *Barren Ground* 1925, *The Sheltered Life* 1932, *Vein of Iron* 1935, and *In This Our Life* 1941 (Pulitzer Prize).

## Glaspell, Susan (1882-1948)

US dramatist and novelist. Her play *Alison's House*, whose heroine is modelled on the poet Emily <u>Dickinson</u>, was awarded a Pulitzer Prize in 1931. She also wrote *The Verge* 1921, and the novels *The Morning is Near Us* 1940 and *Judd Rankin's Daughter* 1945.

## Glatigny, Albert (1839-1873)

French poet. One of *Les <u>Parnassiens</u>*, his volumes of poems include *Les vignes folles* 1860, *Les flèches d'or* 1864, and *Gilles et Pasquins* 1872. He also wrote comedies, among which were *Vers les saules* 1864 and *L'Illustre Brizacier* 1873.

## Gleig, George Robert (1796-1888)

Scottish novelist and historian. His novel *The Subaltern* 1826 is based on incidents that occurred during the Peninsular War; other works include *The Campaign of New Orleans* 1821, *Chelsea Pensioners* 1829, and a life of the Duke of Wellington 1862.

## Gleim, Johann Wilhelm Ludwig (1719-1803)

German poet. Besides his patriotic *Preussische Kriegslieder von einem Grenadier* 1758, his works consist chiefly of odes, and wine and love songs in the style of <u>Anacreon</u>.

#### Glen, William (1789-1826)

Scottish poet. His only volume of poetry, *Poems, Chiefly Lyrical*, was published 1815. His best-known piece is the Jacobite song, 'Wae's me for Prince Charlie'.

## Glover, Denis (1912-1980)

New Zealand poet. A member of the influential Phoenix group in the 1930s, he was first noted for impudently satirical works such as *Six Easy Ways of Dodging Debt Collectors* 1936 and *The Arraignment of Paris* 1937, lampooning some women poets. His unobtrusively well-crafted poems democratically shunned pretension and evinced sympathy with ordinary lives, the world of the pilot or engineer in *The Wind and the Sand* 1945 or of the unsuccessful gold prospector in his popular sequence *Arawata Bill* 1952.

## Glück, Louise Elisabeth (1943-)

US poet. Her work is known for its sparse, elegant language, and striking imagery. Loss and isolation of women are common themes. Her collection *The Wild Iris* won the Pulitzer Prize for Poetry in 1993. She was US poet laureate 2003-04.

Among several other collections are *Triumph of Achilles* (1985), which won the National Book Critics Circle Award, and *Firstborn* (1968), which won the Academy of American Poets Prize.

#### Glyn, Elinor (1864-1943)

#### born Elinor Sutherland

English writer. Her novel of an exotic love affair, *Three Weeks* 1907, scandalized Edwardian society. She also wrote *The Career of Katherine Bush* 1917.

#### Gobán Saor

or Goibhniu

(Irish 'little Goibhniu the wright')

in Irish folklore, the ancient smith-god. A master craftsman, in folk legends he travels the countryside constructing castles, monasteries, and round towers. Many of these legends are of a humorous variety, portraying him as outwitting his stingy and pompous employers.

#### Gobineau, Joseph Arthur, Comte de (1816-1882)

French diplomat and writer who wrote *Souvenirs de voyage* and *Nouvelles Asiatiques*, books of exotic short stories and *La Renaissance*, 1877, a series of dialogues in which the masters of the Italian Renaissance discuss art, letters, statesmanship, and life's lessons. In Germany he was the subject of an ardent cult.

The work which made him popular in Germany is his pseudoscientific book extolling the Nordic races, entitled *Essai sur l'inegalite des races humaines* 1853-55. This won him the friendship of Wagner and Nietzsche and profoundly influenced both men. Through his literary descendants Gobineau was one of the founders of the pan-German school of the early-20th century, and he supplied the pseudoscientific foundation for Hitler's 'Aryan paragraph' and persecution of the Jews as a non-Aryan race.

## Godden, (Margaret) Rumer (1907-1998)

English novelist, poet, and writer of children's books. Her first popular success was the romantic novel *Black Narcissus* (1939; filmed in 1946). Like several of her finest books it is set in India, where she lived for many years. Among her works of children's fiction is *The Story of Holly and Ivy* (1958).

## Godfrey, Thomas (1736-1763)

American playwright and poet whose blank verse tragedy *The Prince of Parthia* 1765, is considered to be the first play written by an American and produced by professional actors. His poem, 'The Court of Fancy', was published in the year of his death.

## Godoy y Alcayaga, Lucila

real name of the Chilean poet Gabriela Mistral.

Godwin, Francis (1562-1633)

English writer and prelate. He was a celebrated historian, but is chiefly remembered for his fanciful story, *The Man in the Moon*, published 1638. This was the first story of space flight in the English language; it was very popular and inspired Cyrano de Bergerac's *Comical History of the States and Empires of the Moon* and Jonathan Swift's *Gulliver's Travels*.

## Godwin, William (1756-1836)

English philosopher, novelist, and father of the writer Mary Shelley. His *Enquiry Concerning Political Justice* (1793) advocated an anarchic society based on a faith in people's essential rationality. At first a Nonconformist minister, he later became an atheist. His first wife was Mary Wollstonecraft.

His novel The Adventures of Caleb Williams (1794) promoted his views.

# Goetel, Ferdynand (1890-1960)

Polish novelist and travel writer. His work includes short stories, such as 'Patnik Karapeta/The Pilgrim Karapeta' 1924; novels, such as *Kar-Chat/The Messenger of the Snow* 1923 and *Serce Iodow/Heart of Ice* 1930; and a volume of memoirs, *Czasy wojny* 1955.

# Goethe, Johann Wolfgang von (1749-1832)

German poet, novelist, dramatist, and scholar. He is generally considered the founder of modern German literature, and was the leader of the Romantic *Sturm und Drang* movement. His masterpiece is the poetic play <u>Faust</u> (1808 and 1832). His other works include the partly autobiographical *Die Leiden des Jungen Werthers/ The Sorrows of the Young Werther* (1774); the classical dramas *Iphigenie auf Tauris/ Iphigenia in Tauris* (1787), *Egmont* (1788), and *Torquato Tasso* (1790); the <u>Wilhelm</u> <u>Meister</u> novels (1795-1829); the short novel *Die Wahlverwandschaften/Elective Affinities* (1809); and scientific treatises including Farbenlehre/Treatise on Colour (1810).

Goethe was born in Frankfurt-am-Main, and studied law. Inspired by Shakespeare, to whose work he was introduced by the critic J G von <u>Herder</u>, he wrote the play *Götz von Berlichingen* (1773), heralding the *Sturm und Drang* movement. The inspiration for *Die Leiden des Jungen Werthers* came from an unhappy love affair. He took part in public life at the court of Duke Charles Augustus in Weimar 1775-86, and pursued his interests in scientific research. A year and a half spent in Italy 1786-88 was a period of great development for Goethe, when he outgrew the *Sturm und Drang* movement and worked towards the Greek ideal of calm and harmony.

The publication of *Wilhelm Meisters Lehrjahre/Wilhelm Meister's Apprenticeship* (1795-96) established Goethe's enduring fame throughout Europe. *Faust*, written in the intervals between other work, over a period of more than 50 years, reflects the evolution of Goethe's own thinking and character, from youth to age. The two parts of the work are as dissimilar as the influences under which they were written, the first being romantic, the second classical in form and spirit.

#### Goga, Octavian (1881-1938)

Romanian poet and politician, prime minister 1937-38. His early verse, collected in *Poezii/Poems* 1906 and *Ne cheama pamintul* 1909, depicts the plight of the Romanian peasant in Transylvania. He contrasts the corrupting influence of the town and the purity of village life in *Din umbra zidurilor/From the Shadow of Walls* 1913 and *Cîntece fara tara/Landless Songs* 1916.

## Gogarty, Oliver St John (1878-1957)

Irish writer. Gogarty was born in Dublin and educated at the Royal University, and Trinity College, Dublin, later becoming a successful Dublin surgeon. A wit and a poet, Gogarty wrote several books, including the autobiographical *As I was Going Down Sackville Street* (1937). He is best known for his racy books of reminiscences, including *Tumbling in the Hay* (1939) and *It Isn't This Time of Year at All!* (1954). He took an active interest in Irish politics, being a senator of the Irish Free State 1922-36.

Gogarty was a member of the literary circle which included W B Yeats, George Moore, and James Joyce, and he figures in <u>Ulysses</u> as Buck Mulligan. Among his volumes of verse are *Poems and Plays* (1920), *An Offering of Swans* (1923), *Others to Adorn* (1938), and *Elbow Room* (1939). *As I was Going Down Sackville Street* was the cause of a successful libel action against him. In 1939 Gogarty moved permanently to the USA, where he wrote and lectured. He died in New York.

# Gogol, Nicolai Vasilyevich (1809-1852)

Russian writer. His first success was a collection of stories, *Evenings on a Farm near Dikanka* (1831-32), followed by *Mirgorod* (1835). Later works include *Arabesques* (1835), the comedy play *The Inspector General* (1836), and the picaresque novel *Dead Souls* (1842), which satirizes Russian provincial society.

Gogol was born near Poltava. He tried several careers before entering the St Petersburg civil service. From 1835 he travelled in Europe, and it was in Rome that he completed the earlier part of *Dead Souls* (1842). Other works include the short stories 'The Overcoat' and 'The Nose'.

# Gold, Michael (c. 1893-1967)

#### adopted name of Itzok Isaac Granich

US writer, editor, journalist, and playwright. He founded and edited the newspaper *New Masses* (1926-*c.* 1935), and also contributed columns to the communist newspaper, the *Daily Worker* (1933-67). In defending Stalinism against the Trotskyites, he attacked fellow American leftist-liberal writers he felt had betrayed the cause. His own preference was for 'proletarian literature', a term he coined and attempted to exemplify in his best-known novel, *Jews Without Money* (1930).

The son of Jewish immigrants from Romania and Hungary, Gold was born in New York City. He left school at age 12 and worked for the Adams Express Company (1905-12). Drawn to radical-Marxist thought, he published articles and short stories in socialist publications and saw three of his one-act plays produced by the Provincetown Players in New York. He went to Mexico to escape the draft during World War I and returned to New York to work as an editor on the *Liberator* (1920)

#### Golden Ass, The

#### or Metamorphoses

<u>picaresque</u> adventure by the Roman writer Lucius Apuleius, written in Latin about AD 160, sometimes described as the world's first novel. Lucius, transformed into an ass, describes his exploits with a band of robbers, weaving into the narrative several ancient legends, including that of Cupid and Psyche.

## Golden Legend

#### Latin Legenda Aurea

medieval collection of nearly 200 saints' lives compiled *c.* 1265 by Dominican friar Jacobus de Voragine (*c.* 1230-98), who was for some years archbishop of Genoa. The collection is in 5 sections and contains 182 chapters (or 177 according to other enumerations). It remained the most popular book of <u>legend</u> into the 16th century and over 1,000 manuscript editions survive. An English translation was published 1948.

#### 'Goldilocks and the Three Bears'

children's story about a little girl who finds a cottage in the woods with no one at home. She makes use of the chairs, dishes, and beds, all in triplicate, but flees when the returning owners prove to be three bears. In the first printed version by Robert Southey (1837), the trespasser was an old woman, but successive retellings transformed her into a golden-haired child.

#### Golding, Louis (1895-1958)

English novelist. His best-known novel is *Magnolia Street* 1931; others include *Day of Atonement* 1925, *The Miracle Boy* 1927, *Five Silver Daughters* 1934, *Mr Emmanuel* 1939, *The Glory of Elsie Silver* 1945, and *To the Quayside* 1953. He also published a study of James Joyce 1933 and several volumes of verse.

# Golding, William (Gerald) (1911-1993)

English novelist. His work is often principally concerned with the fundamental corruption and evil inherent in human nature. His first book, *Lord of the Flies* (1954; filmed in 1962), concerns the degeneration into savagery of a group of English schoolboys marooned on a Pacific island after their plane crashes; it is a chilling allegory (story with a meaning beyond its literal sense) about the savagery lurking beneath the thin veneer of modern 'civilized' life. *Pincher Martin* (1956) is a study of greed and self-delusion. Later novels include *The Spire* (1964). He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1983 and knighted in 1988.

Golding was born in St Columb Minor, Cornwall, England. He was educated at Oxford University from 1932-35. While still an undergraduate, he published *Poems* (1934). After Oxford, he worked for a few years as actor, writer, and director for a number of small theatre companies, and in 1939 became a schoolteacher in Salisbury. He spent the war years 1940-5 in the Royal Navy, as an officer in charge of a rocket ship and instructor of naval cadets. He learnt ancient Greek during World War II and his study of the Greek myths, Homer, and the tragedians was an important influence on his work. He returned to his teaching post after the war, resigning in 1961 when the success of *Lord of the Flies* made it possible for him to write full time.

# Goldsmith, Oliver (1728-1774)

Irish playwright, novelist, poet, and essayist. His works include the novel *The Vicar of Wakefield* (1766), an outwardly artless and gentle story which is also a social and political satire, and in which rural honesty, kindness, and patience triumph over urban values; it became one of the most popular works of fiction in English. Other works include the poem 'The Deserted Village' (1770) and the play *She Stoops to Conquer* (1773). In 1761 Goldsmith met English writer Samuel Johnson and became a member of his circle.

Goldsmith was born in Pallasmore, County Longford. He went to Trinity College, Dublin, and Edinburgh University, where he studied medicine for two years. After travelling extensively in Europe, he returned to England, almost penniless, and became a hack writer (journalist producing work on demand). In 1759 his first important literary venture, *An Enquiry into the Present State of Polite Learning in Europe*, was published anonymously. Another early work was *The Citizen of the World* (1762), a series of letters by an imaginary Chinese traveller, and in 1764 he published *An History of England*. The poem 'The Traveller' was the first work to carry his name; this was followed by collected essays (1765).

Samuel Johnson found a publisher for *The Vicar of Wakefield* to save Goldsmith from imprisonment for debt at the instigation of his landlady. With that book Goldsmith's reputation was secured. In 1768 his comedy *The Good Natur'd Man* had considerable success. During the next few years, Goldsmith was occupied with works for publishers, including *The History of Rome* (1769) and lives of the poet Thomas Parnell (1679-1718) and Lord Bolingbroke (1770). In 1773 he produced his other drama, *She Stoops to Conquer*, with great success. His last works were *Retaliation*, *The History of Greece*, and *An History of the Earth and Animated Nature*, all published in 1774.

## Gollancz, Israel (1864-1930)

English scholar. He was lecturer in English at Cambridge from 1896-1906 and professor of English at King's College, London from 1906. Fellow and secretary of the British Academy from its foundation in 1902, he was also a director of the Early English Text Society and president of the Philological Society, and edited early English texts. Knighted 1919.

#### Goncharov, Ivan Alexandrovitch (1812-1891)

Russian novelist. His first novel, *A Common Story* (1847), was followed in 1858 by his humorous masterpiece *Oblomov*, which satirized the indolent Russian landed gentry.

#### Goncourt, de

#### Edmond (1822-1896) and Jules (1830-1870)

French writers. The brothers collaborated in producing a compendium, *L'Art du XVIIIème siècle/18th-Century Art* 1859-75, historical studies, and a *Journal* published 1887-96 that depicts French literary life of their day. Edmond de Goncourt founded the Académie Goncourt, opened in 1903, which awards an annual prize, the Prix Goncourt, to the author of the best French novel of the year.

# Góngora y Argote, Luis de (1561-1627)

Spanish poet. His early works, ballads and satires, were long considered his best and his sonnets remain among the finest in the language. His longer poems, however, caused a great furore. *La fábula de Polifemo y Galatea* (1612) and *Las Soledades/The Solitudes* (1613) are written in a tortuously complex style, which offends all the rules of normal Spanish syntax. Only since the poems' reassessment by Damaso Alonso has their true value been recognized: too advanced for their age, they recall the imagistic complexity of some major 20th-century poets.

## Goodrich, Samuel Griswold (1793-1860)

US author. He wrote under the pseudonym 'Peter Parley'. He edited *The Token* 1828-42, to which he contributed tales, poems, and essays. Most of his publications were written for children, and deal with history, geography, travel, and natural history.

## Good Soldier Svejk, The

#### Czech Osudy dobrého vójaka Svejka

humorous Czech novel by Jaroslav <u>Hašek</u>, serially published 1921-23 but unfinished when the author died. An earthy picaresque narrative with vivid dialogue, drawing on the author's experiences with the Austrian army in 1915, it depicts a shrewd, sardonic, wayward survivor with an endearing disrespect for political and military authority.

## Goodwin, William Watson (1831-1921)

US classicist. He taught at Harvard (1856-1901) and was the first director of the American School of Classical Studies in Athens (1882-83). His publications include *Syntax of Moods and Tenses of Greek Verb* (1878) and *Greek Grammar* (1892), both frequently reprinted and still used today. Goodwin was born in Concord, Massachusetts. He was educated at Harvard University, gaining his BA in 1851, and then studied for his PhD at the University of Gottingen, Germany, graduating in 1855.

## 'Goody Two-Shoes'

children's story of unknown authorship but possibly by Oliver Goldsmith, published 1765 by John Newbery (1713-1767). The heroine, Margery, is an orphan who is distraught when her brother goes to sea, but quickly recovers when she receives a

gift of new shoes. She educates herself, dispenses goodness, and is eventually reunited with her brother.

#### Googe, Barnabe (1540-1594)

English poet. He was a friend of George Turberville and imitated his style and the metres of his poems. His best-known work is *Eclogues, Epitaphs and Sonnets* (1563). The eclogues are among the earliest pastorals in English.

#### Gordimer, Nadine (1923-)

South African novelist and short-story writer. Internationally acclaimed for her fiction and regarded by many as South Africa's conscience, Gordimer was for many years one of the most prominent opponents of apartheid and censorship. Her novel *The Conservationist* (1974) won the Booker Prize, and she was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1991.

Much of Gordimer's fiction is set in Johannesburg, South Africa, and is generated by a complex set of public and private concerns, chief among which are the family, sexuality, interracial social interaction and the imperatives of political commitment in the context of apartheid. Some of her work was banned in her native country during apartheid.

#### Gordon, Richard (1921-)

#### pen-name of Gordon Ostlere

British author. He produced a series of light-hearted novels on the career of a young doctor, beginning with *Doctor in the House* (1952), many of which were filmed.

#### Gore, Catherine (1799-1861)

#### born Catherine Grace Francis Moody

English novelist. She published about 70 works 1824-62, the most successful being 'silver-fork' novels of fashionable English life. These include *Women as They Are: or, The Manners of the Day* 1830, *Cecil, or the Adventures of a Coxcomb* 1841, and *The Banker's Wife* 1843.

## Gorell, Ronald Gorell Barnes (1884-1963)

#### **3rd Baron Gorell**

English poet and novelist. He worked for *The Times* 1910-15 and edited the *Cornhill Magazine* 1933-39. His books include *Babes in the African Wood* 1911, *Days of Destiny* 1917, *Many Mansions* 1926, *Last of the English* 1939, and *He Walked in Light* 1954. CBE 1919.

#### Gorey, Edward (St John) (1925-2000)

US publisher, illustrator, writer, and designer. He established his own Fantod Press (1962) in order to publish his own distinctive work with its macabre subjects, Gothic illustrations, and black humour. As his books garnered a wider public, he was able to divide his time between New York and Cape Cod, Massachusetts In later years he became a stage designer working on such productions as *Dracula* (1977).

#### Gorgias (c. 483-c. 380 BC)

Greek orator and sophist from Sicily. He was the subject of a dialogue by Plato, who was deeply critical of his cynical view of the powers of persuasion. Gorgias was renowned for his obscure and sophisticated style. His *Praise of Helen* and *Palamedes* survive, in which he conducts elaborate and at times contrived defences of two mythical figures accused of treacherous conduct.

#### Gorky, Maxim (1868-1936)

#### pen-name of Alexei Maximovich Peshkov

Russian writer. Born in Nizhniy-Novgorod (named Gorky 1932-90 in his honour), he was exiled 1906-13 for his revolutionary principles. His works, which include the play *The Lower Depths* (1902) and the memoir *My Childhood* (1913-14), combine realism with optimistic faith in the potential of the industrial proletariat.

#### Gorsedd

in full the Gorsedd of Bards of the Isle of Britain

(Welsh 'throne')

society of Welsh bards founded 1792 by the Glamorgan bard lolo Morganwg (1747-

1826). It was devised to replace a long-defunct medieval order of the same name. lolo merged the Gorsedd ceremonial with the eisteddfod in Carmarthen 1819.

The present-day Gorsedd forms an integral and influential part of the organization of the National Eisteddfod of Wales, in that most of the National Eisteddfod Court or governing body are members of the Gorsedd. The Gorsedd is responsible for administering and conducting the rich and colourful bardic ceremonial of the Eisteddfod, which has developed into a picturesque and very popular national pageant.

#### Gorter, Herman (1864-1927)

Dutch poet. An awareness of the transience of natural beauty, supremely expressed in his long poem *Mei/May* 1889, drove him to the hypersensitive and abstract extremes of *De School der Poëzie/The School of Poetry* 1897. He later studied Spinoza and Karl Marx, and joined the Communist Party.

#### Gosse, Edmund William (1849-1928)

English writer and critic. His strict Victorian upbringing is reflected in his masterly autobiographical work *Father and Son* (published anonymously in 1907). His father was a member of the Plymouth Brethren, a Christian fundamentalist sect that rejected the evolutionary ideas of Darwin. As a literary critic and biographer, he was responsible for introducing the works of the Norwegian dramatist Henrik Ibsen to England.

## Gosson, Stephen (c. 1554-1624)

English playwright, satirist, and clergyman. Moved by a sermon preached in London during an outbreak of the plague, he abandoned the theatre and became one of its severest critics in his prose satire *The School of Abuse* (1579). It is written in euphuistic style and was dedicated to Philip <u>Sidney</u>, who did not receive it well; it is believed to have evoked his *Apology for Poetry* (1595). Gosson took orders in 1584 and died rector of St Botolph's, London.

#### Gotham, Tales of the Mad Men of

collection of jests representing the absurd doings and sayings of the people of Gotham, a parish near Trent junction in Nottinghamshire, England. The simplicity of the inhabitants has become proverbial, but was said to have been assumed originally to avert a king's anger. Gotham is sometimes used as a nickname for New York, having been first applied by US writer Washington Irving in Salmagundi 1807-08.

## gothic novel

literary genre established by Horace <u>Walpole</u>'s *The Castle of Otranto* (1764) and marked by mystery, violence, and horror; other pre-20th century practitioners were the English writers Ann <u>Radcliffe</u>, Matthew 'Monk' Lewis, Mary <u>Shelley</u>, the Irish writer Bram <u>Stoker</u>, and the US writer Edgar Allen <u>Poe</u>. The late 20th century has seen a huge revival in interest in the genre, particularly in film, and the novels of the US writer Stephen <u>King</u> are carefully crafted examples.

The gothic is best distinguished from horror by gothic's inbuilt morality. Whilst there are macabre and violent acts, no one dies unjustly in a true gothic novel. The vampire or creature unleashed is a scourge to test the righteous and bring weakness, evil, and folly to account. A plot requirement is one or two ordinary people, with whom the reader identifies, who survive and record events (for example, Jonathan Harker in Mary Shelley's *Frankenstein*, 1818). Evil is ultimately destroyed and has beneficial consequences for the gothic novel in terms of character development.

The gothic became so popular in the 19th century that it was incorporated into works of other genres. Wilkie <u>Collins</u> employed gothic conventions in his mystery novel *The Woman in White* (1860) and Arthur Conan <u>Doyle</u> did likewise with his detective fiction in *The Hound of the Baskervilles* (1902). Jane <u>Austen</u> satirized the gothic novel in *Northanger Abbey* (1818).

# Gottschall, Rudolf von (1823-1909)

German dramatist, poet, and critic. Among his dramas are the historical comedy *Pitt und Fox* 1854, the tragedy *Mazeppa* 1859, and *Katharina Howard* 1872. In two epic poems, *Die Göttin* 1853 and *Carlo Zeno* 1854, he largely abandoned the exaggerated style of his earlier writing. He wrote several novels and *Die deutsche Nationalliteratur des 19. Jahrhunderts* (seventh edition 1901-02), in which he advocated the cause of 'modern ideas' in literature.

# Gottsched, Johann Christoph (1700-1766)

German critic and writer. He tried to abolish the bombastic affectations of the second Silesian school and substitute a nobler drama based on French models. His *Kritische Dichtkunst* appeared 1730, founded on Boileau's *Art poétique*. He also wrote *Beitrage zur kritischen Historie der deutschen Sprache* 1732-44. In spite of his dogmatism, Gottsched was one of the founders of German classicism.

## Gould, Gerald (1885-1936)

English poet and journalist. He was on the staff of the *Daily Herald* and later of the *Saturday Review*. His *Collected Poems* appeared 1929. His critical works include an 'Essay on the Nature of the Lyric' 1909 and *The English Novel of Today* 1924.

#### Gould, Nathaniel (1857-1919)

English novelist. He worked as a sporting journalist in Sydney, Australia, and wrote about 130 sporting novels. Among the best known are *The Double Event* 1891, *The Miner's Cup* 1896, *A Stable Mystery* 1900, and *A Run of Luck* 1907. He also wrote *On and Off the Turf in Australia* 1896, *Sporting Sketches* 1900, and *The Roar of the Ring* 1900.

## Gourmont, Rémy de (1858-1915)

French critic and novelist. A prolific essayist, he influentially disseminated the aesthetic doctrines of French Symbolism, committed to the relativity of truth and the necessarily aesthetic basis of all literary judgement. His rather cerebral novels include *Sixtine: Roman de la vie cérébrale/Very Woman* 1890.

## Gozzano, Guido Gustavo (1883-1916)

Italian poet. He is the best known of the ironic, melancholic Crepuscular (twilight) poets and clearly shows the influence of Gabriele <u>D'Annunzio</u> and Giovanni <u>Pascoli</u>. He also wrote rhymes and stories for children. His collections are *La via del rifugio* 1907 and *I colloqui* 1911.

## Gozzi, Gasparo (1713-1786)

#### Count Gozzi

Italian poet and essayist. His works are remarkable for their purity of language and elegance of diction. His *Sermoni*, written in the style of Horace, is his finest work in verse. *II mondo morale* 1760 is an allegorical romance. His version of Lucan is remarkable, and his *Difesa di Dante* 1758 places him among the best commentators. He was the brother of Carlo Gozzi.

#### Graf, Arturo (1848-1913)

Italian poet and scholar. His collections of poetry include *Medusa* 1880, *Le Danaïdi* 1897, *Morgana* 1901, and *Poemetti drammatici* 1905. His poems are serious and philosophical, often sombre in tone. Among his prose works is a study of Foscolo, Manzoni, and Leopardi 1898.

#### Grafton, Sue (1940-)

US writer. In the 1980s she created a popular crime fiction series, known as the alphabetical series, featuring the no-nonsense private detective Kinsey Millhone. She has published a new instalment in the series at regular intervals, and by 1997 she had reached the letter M (*M is for Malice*). Her other books include *A Is for Alibi*, *G is for Gumshoe*, and *K is for Killer*. Grafton was born in Louisville, Kentucky. She graduated from the University of Louisville in 1961. Based in Santa Barbara, California, she has also worked as a screenwriter. Her fiction is characterized by a skilful balance between plot and character.

#### Graham, Ennis

pseudonym of Scottish writer Mary Molesworth.

## Graham, Harry Jocelyn Clive (1874-1936)

English humorous writer. He is best known for his *Ruthless Rhymes for Heartless Homes* 1899, pieces of mock frightfulness which started a fashion in children's verse; *More Ruthless Rhymes* appeared 1930.

#### Graham, Robert (c. 1735-c. 1797)

later Cunninghame-Graham

Scottish poet. He is chiefly remembered for his poem 'If doughty deeds my lady please'.

## Graham, Stephen (1884-1975)

English novelist and travel writer. His much-discussed novel Private in the Guards

1919 purports to reflect the degrading influence of military discipline. His other publications include A Vagabond in the Caucasus 1911, Undiscovered Russia 1912, London Nights 1925, The Gentle Art of Tramping 1927, Summing-up on Russia 1951, and Pay as You Run 1955.

#### Graham, W(illiam) S(ydney) (1918-1986)

Scottish poet. His early poetry, published in *Cage Without Grievance* (1942), was compared with that of G M Hopkins, James Joyce, and Dylan Thomas. Subsequently he worked on the development of his verse as a medium of communication, to reflect subjects such as the sea, childhood, language, and love. *Collected Poems 1942-1977* was published in 1977, *Uncollected Poems* (1990), and *Selected Poems* (1996).

## Grahame, Kenneth (1859-1932)

Scottish-born writer. The early volumes of sketches of childhood, *The Golden Age* (1895) and *Dream Days* (1898), were followed by his masterpiece *The Wind in the Willows* (1908) which became a children's classic. Begun as a bedtime story for his son, it is a charming tale of life on the river bank, with its blend of naturalistic style and fantasy, and its memorable animal characters, the practical Rat, Mole, Badger, and conceited, bombastic Toad. It was dramatized by A A Milne as *Toad of Toad Hall* (1929) and by Alan Bennett (1990).

## Grandbois, Alain (1900-1975)

French-Canadian poet. His volumes of poetry include *Les IIes de la Nuit* 1944, *Rivages de l'homme* 1948, and *L'Etoile pourpre* 1957. *Poèmes* 1963 set the seal on his reputation.

## Granger, James (1723-1776)

English biographer. He published a *Biographical History of England* 1769, which had blank pages for the insertion of engraved portraits, of which he himself collected 14,000. It started a fashion for 'grangerizing', a term applied to interleaving a book with illustrations cut from others.

Granville (or Grenville), George, Baron Lansdowne (1667-1735)

English poet and politician. He wrote verses eulogizing James II on his accession and after the revolution of 1688 he lived in retirement for some time, devoting himself to literature. His tragedy *Heroic Love* 1698 was acted with great success. This was followed by the dramatic poem *The British Enchanters* 1706.

## Grass, Günter (Wilhelm) (1927-)

German writer. The grotesque humour and socialist feeling of his novels *Die Blechtrommel/The Tin Drum* (1959) and *Der Butt/The Flounder* (1977) are also characteristic of many of his poems. Deeply committed politically, Grass's works contain a mixture of scurrility, humour, tragedy, satire, and marvellously inventive imagery. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1999.

*Die Blechtrommel*, one of the most successful post-war German novels, is narrated by a midget, Oskar, who willed himself to stop growing at the age of three, a device that enabled the Grass to hover between fantasy and realism and achieve a detachment to make the scenes and characters of German life before and during the Nazi regime stand out with extraordinary clarity and humour.

## Graves, Alfred Perceval (1846-1931)

Irish poet, born in Dublin and educated there at Trinity College. His verse includes *Songs of Killarney* (1872), *Irish Songs and Ballads* (1879), and *Father O'Flynn and Other Lyrics* (1889). One of the participants in the Irish literary revival, he edited many poetry anthologies. His autobiography *To Return to All That* (1930) was a reply to *Goodbye to All That* by his son, the poet Robert <u>Graves</u>.

# Graves, Robert (Ranke) (1895-1985)

English poet and writer. He was severely wounded on the Somme in World War I, and his frank autobiography *Goodbye to All That* (1929) contains outstanding descriptions of the war. *Collected Poems* (1975) contained those verses he wanted preserved, some of which were influenced by the American poet Laura <u>Riding</u>, with whom he lived for some years. His fiction includes two historical novels of imperial Rome, *I Claudius* and *Claudius the God* (both 1934). His most significant critical work is *The White Goddess: A Historical Grammar of Poetic Myth* (1948, revised edition 1966).

Graves was born in London, the son of Alfred Perceval <u>Graves</u>, and educated at Oxford. During World War I he served with the Royal Welsh Fusiliers, in the same regiment as the writer and poet Siegfried <u>Sassoon</u>. In 1926 he was professor of English in Cairo. Living in Mallorca, Spain for the next few years, he ran the Seizin Press in partnership with Laura Riding. After World War II he went back to the

island. He was professor of poetry at Oxford 1961-66.

# Gravity's Rainbow

novel 1973 by US writer Thomas <u>Pynchon</u>. It is an epic narrative of conspiracy, paranoia, science, and history set during World War II. Taking the trajectory of the German V2 rocket as its main image, the novel is a quest for meaning in a weird, overpopulated world of impending chaos. It is a major work of postmodernism.

# Gray, Alasdair James (1934-)

Scottish novelist and short-story writer. *Lanark* (1981), begun when he was 18, is an inventive expression of nationalist and anti-nationalist feeling, brimful of literary jokes. *1982, Janine* (1984) and *Something Leather* (1990) are in much the same vein. *Poor Things* (1992), illustrated by himself, presents aspects of Glasgow social history, while *A History Maker* (1994) looks forward to a bizarre future.

# Gray, David (1838-1861)

Scottish poet. His chief poem, *The Luggie* 1862, contains much beautiful description, closely imitating James Thomson's *The Seasons*, but his finest work was a series of 30 sonnets, *In the Shadows*, written in the prospect of early death and blighted hopes.

# Gray, Thomas (1716-1771)

English poet. His *Elegy Written in a Country Churchyard* (1751), a dignified contemplation of death, was instantly acclaimed and is one of the most quoted poems in the English language. Other poems include *Ode on a Distant Prospect of Eton College* (1747), *The Progress of Poesy*, and *The Bard* (both 1757). He is now seen as a forerunner of Romanticism.

Gray was born in London and educated at Eton and Cambridge. A close friend of English novelist Horace <u>Walpole</u> at Eton, Gray made a continental tour with him from 1739 to 1741. Returning to England after his tour with Walpole, he lived with his mother for a while in Stoke Poges, Buckinghamshire, then went back to Cambridge where, except for brief intervals, he spent the rest of his life. Gray's learning was immense, not only in the classics (his early verse was written in Latin) but also in Celtic and Old Norse, art, and natural sciences. His letters, charming in their mixture of fun, sincere friendliness, and perceptive criticism of people and books, rank with those of English essayist Charles Lamb. His first poem, *Ode on a* 

Distant Prospect of Eton College, was published anonymously in 1747 and again in 1748 with Ode on the Spring and Ode on the Death of a Favourite Cat in A Collection of Poems By Several Hands, edited by English writer Robert Dodsley. Poems by Mr Gray was published in 1768.

#### Gray, William (c. 1414-1478)

English cleric, bishop of Ely from 1454. He commissioned and bought a large number of manuscripts, some from Vespasiano da <u>Bisticci</u>. He also patronized scholars, including John <u>Free</u> and Niccolò <u>Perotti</u>. He left his library to Balliol College, Oxford.

After studying at Oxford, Gray continued his education in Europe, first in Cologne, Germany, from 1442, then in Padua, Italy, from 1445, and finally with Battista <u>Guarino</u> in Ferrara, Italy, from 1446.

## Grayson, David

Pseudonym of US writer Ray Stannard Baker.

#### Grayson, David

US writer; see Ray Stannard Baker.

## Grazzini, Anton Francesco (1503-1584)

Florentine writer. His realistic *novelle* (tales) about Florence collected in *Le cene/ The Suppers*, were not published until 1756. To contemporaries he was best known as a poet of burlesque verses and Petrarchan lyrics. He also wrote seven comedies, and was a founder member of the Accademia della Crusca.

#### Great Expectations

novel by Charles <u>Dickens</u>, published in 1861. Philip Pirrip ('Pip'), brought up by his sister and her husband, the blacksmith Joe Gargery, rejects his humble background and pursues wealth, which he believes comes from the elderly, eccentric Miss Havisham. Ultimately, through adversity, he recognizes the value of his origins.

# Great Gatsby, The

novel (1925) by US writer F Scott <u>Fitzgerald</u>. It is the tale of the dazzling, enigmatic Gatsby who becomes a millionaire in order to win back his first love but whose dream ends in death and his own murder. The novel, set in the 1920s Jazz Age, depicts the corruption of the American enchantment with wealth.

# Greek Anthology

large collection of short poems (over 3,000, including epigrams, songs, epitaphs) written by various authors between the early 5th century BC and the Middle Ages. Its nucleus is <u>Meleager's</u> anthology known as the *Garland* (2nd-1st century BC). This and subsequent collections were re-combined by Constantinus Cephalas in the 10th century; in the 14th century Maximus Planudes, a monk, gave the *Greek Anthology* its present form.

## **Greek literature**

literature of Greece, ancient and modern.

#### ancient

The Archaic period of ancient Greek literature (8th century-c. 480 BC) begins with Homer, reputed author of the epic narrative poems the *Iliad* and *Odyssey*, but there is evidence that parts of the Homeric epics embody an oral literary tradition going much further back into the past. Other heroic legends were handled a little later by the so-called cyclic poets, for example, Arctinus, but these are lost. Towards the end of the 8th century other literary forms began to appear: the didactic, instructional poetry of Hesiod, whose *Works and Days* deals with morals as they pertain to agricultural life, and the various kinds of lyric which flourished for two centuries, particularly in Ionia and the Aegean islands. Besides choral lyrics (Alcman, Stesichorus), there were elegiac (reflective and mournful) and iambic (pairs of syllables, unstressed followed by stressed) works (Archilochus, Mimnermus, Semonides of Amorgos, Solon, Theognis, Tyrtaeus); epigrams (Simonides of Ceos); table-songs (Terpander); and political lyrics (Alcaeus). This kind of poetry served also as a vehicle of moral ideas for Solon, Theognis, and Tyrtaeus, of invective for Archilochus, of ardent passion for Sappho, or of the merely elegant and affected as in Anacreon. At the very end of the Archaic period stands the first Greek historian, Hecataeus of Miletus, who wrote in prose.

During the classical period (*c.* 480-323 <sub>BC</sub>) lyric poetry reached its perfection with <u>Pindar</u> and <u>Bacchylides</u>. New literary genres appeared, especially in Athens, which for 150 years after the Persian Wars was the intellectual and artistic capital of the Greek world. Drama reached unsurpassed heights: tragedy with <u>Aeschylus</u>,

<u>Sophocles</u>, and <u>Euripides</u>, and comedy with <u>Eupolis</u>, <u>Cratinus</u>, and <u>Aristophanes</u>. In the second half of the 5th and most of the 4th centuries BC prose flowered in several forms, including history, philosophy, and speeches (Herodotus, Thucydides, Xenophon, Plato, <u>Aristotle</u>, <u>Isocrates</u>, and Demosthenes).

During the Hellenistic period (323-27 BC), after the death of Alexander the Great, Athens lost its superiority, but its philosophical schools continued to flourish with such teachers as Epicurus, Zeno of Citium, and Theophrastus, as also did comedy (Menander). The principal centres of Greek culture now were Antioch, Pergamum, Pella and, above all, the Ptolemaic court at Alexandria with its library which attracted poets and scientists alike. Alexandrian poetry revived some forms that had fallen into disuse: epic (Apollonius of Rhodes), didactic (Aratus), epigram and hymn (Callimachus). Herodas reintroduced mime, which had been first given literary form in the 5th century by Sophron. In this period also bucolic (pastoral) poetry begins with Theocritus. It was, moreover, an age of learning, notably in the field of philology (development of languages) and textual criticism, exemplified in the work of Aristophanes of Byzantium and Callimachus, and in that of mathematics and geography (Eratosthenes, Euclid). Most of the great names of the Hellenistic period belong to the 3rd century. From 150 BC the influence of Rome became progressively stronger, and the Greek narrative of its ascendancy is that of Polybius. The 1st century BC also saw the first Greek anthology of epigrams, compiled by Meleager, and the work of the Jewish writers Philo Judaeus and Josephus, and the New Testament writers.

In the Roman period (*c*. 27 <sub>BC</sub>-*c*.AD 330) the city of Rome became the capital of the civilized world, and Latin the literary language *par excellence*. However, Greek continued to be spoken throughout the Mediterranean basin, and the following writers were outstanding: Flavius <u>Arrianus</u>, Dion Cassius, and Dionysius of Halicarnassus on history; Epictetus, <u>Plutarch</u>, and Marcus Aurelius on ethics and related subjects; Strabo and Pausanias on geography; Ptolemy on astronomy; Galen on medicine; Dionysius of Halicarnassus, Apollonius Dyscolus, Demetrius (author of *On Style*), and Longinus on grammar and literary criticism; Plotinus on neo-Platonism; and the theologians Clement and Origen on Christianity. The Roman period was also an age of compilers (Aelianus, Athenaeus, Diodorus Siculus). Rhetoric was represented by Aelius Aristides and moral satire by <u>Lucian</u>, while the novel appeared with Heliodorus (*Theagenes and Charicleia*).

For the Byzantine period (AD 330-1453) see <u>Byzantine literature</u>.

#### modern

After the fall of Constantinople, the Byzantine tradition was perpetuated in the classical Greek writing of, for example, the 15th-century chronicles of Cyprus, various historical works in the 16th and 17th centuries, and educational and theological works in the 18th century. The 17th and 18th centuries saw much controversy over whether to write in the Greek vernacular (dialect commonly spoken, known as Demotic), the classical language (*Katharevousa*), or the language of the Eastern Orthodox Church. Adamantios Korais (1748-1833), the first great modern writer, produced a compromise language; he was followed by the prose and drama writer and poet Aleksandros Rhangavis ('Rangabe') (1810-1892), and many

others.

The 10th-century epic of *Digenis Akritas* is usually considered to mark the beginnings of modern Greek vernacular literature, and the Demotic was kept alive in the flourishing Cretan literature of the 16th and 17th centuries, in numerous popular songs, and in the Klephtic ballads of the 18th century. With independence in the 19th century the popular movement became prominent with the Ionian poet Dionysios Solomos (1798-1857), Andreas Kalvos (1796-1869), and others, and later with Iannis Psichari (1854-1929), short-story writer and dramatist, and the prose writer Alexandros Papadiamandis (1851-1911), who influenced many younger writers, for example Konstantinos Hatzopoulos (1868-1921), poet and essayist. After the 1920s, the novel began to emerge with Stratis Myrivilis (1892-1969) and Nikos Kazantzakis (1885-1957), author of *Zorba the Greek* (1946) and also a poet. There were also the Nobel-prize-winning poets George <u>Seferis</u> and Odysseus <u>Elytis</u>.

# Green, Julien (1900-1998)

#### born Julian Hartridge Green

French novelist, dramatist, and autobiographer, of American parentage. His first novel, *Mont-Cinère/Avarice House* (1926), was followed with a series of haunting and disturbing novels written in pure, rigorous, and slightly fastidious French, including *Léviathan/The Dark Journey* (1929) and *Moira* (1950). His plays were not commercially successful. He wrote a voluminous *Journal* and an autobiographical sequence: *Partir avant le jour* (1963), *Mille chemins ouverts* (1964), *Terre lointaine* (1966), and *Jeunesse* (1974).

# Green, Roger Lancelyn (1918-1987)

English author. His works included a critical biography of Andrew Lang (1946); *Tellers of Tales* (1965; accounts of the writers of children's books); an edition of *The Diaries of Lewis Carroll* (1954); the anthology *A Century of Humorous Verse* (1959); and a great number of books for young readers, including adventure stories, fairy fantasies, and old legends retold, such as *King Arthur* (1953), and *Robin Hood* (1956).

# Green, Samuel (1615-c. 1701)

English-born US printer. He was a bookseller in Boston and in 1649 became manager of the Cambridge press. The only colonial printer active at the time, Green is known to have been responsible for about 275 imprints, including Indian-language Bibles, several editions of the Bay Psalm Book, and official works printed for the colony. He was born in England, and emigrated to Massachusetts *c.* 1633.

#### Greenaway, Emerson (1906-1990)

US librarian, who worked at several libraries before becoming the director of the Philadelphia Free Public Library in 1951. He was born in Springfield, Massachusetts.

## Greenberg, Blu (1936-)

US author. Active with a number of Jewish educational and activist groups, her writings include *How to Run a Traditional Jewish Household* (1983). Greenberg was born in Seattle, Washington. She earned bachelor's degrees from Brooklyn College and Yeshiva University, as well as an MA in clinical psychology and an MSc in Jewish history. She won the 1981 B'nai B'rith Literary Award.

# Greenblatt, Stephen (1943-)

US literary historian. He joined the faculty of the University of California, Berkeley in 1969, and soon emerged as the most brilliant proponent of a new school of literary historians-critics that uses an interdisciplinary approach to studying texts. This approach came to be known as the 'new historicism' because of its emphasis on interpreting literary texts by placing them in often complex historical contexts. Greenblatt also saw the study of texts as yielding insights into the conflicts that concern current society. Among his most highly regarded works is *Shakespearean Negotiations* (1988). In 1983 he was also one of the founders of *Representations*, a journal that advances the 'new historicist' approach to cultural criticism. Greenblatt was born in Newton, Massachusetts. He studied for both his BA and PhD at Yale University, spending two years on a Fulbright scholarship at Cambridge University, England.

## Greene, (Henry) Graham (1904-1991)

English writer. His novels of guilt, despair, and penitence are set in a world of urban seediness or political corruption in many parts of the world. They include <u>Brighton</u> <u>Rock</u> (1938), The Power and the Glory (1940), The Heart of the Matter (1948), The Third Man (1949), The Honorary Consul (1973), and Monsignor Quixote (1982). He was one of the first English novelists both to recognize and to be influenced by the literary potential of the cinema. His work is marked by an almost cinematic technique and great visual power. Many of his novels have been filmed, and he wrote several screenplays. The Living Room (1953), The Potting Shed (1958), and The Complaisant Lover (1959) were written for the stage. In 1999 his novel The End of the Affair (1951) was made into a film, directed by Neil Jordan. Greene also wrote lighter, comic novels, including Our Man in Havana (1958) and Travels with My Aunt (1969).

Greene was born in Berkhamsted, Hertfordshire, and educated at Oxford University. He worked as a journalist on *The Times*, and in 1927 was converted to Roman Catholicism. When his first novel, *The Man Within*, was published in 1929, he gave up journalism to write full time, but attained success only with his fourth novel, the thriller *Stamboul Train* (1932). He was later literary editor of *The Spectator* 1940-41, worked in the Foreign Office 1941-44, and was a director of the publishing company Bodley Head 1958-1968.

# Greenwell, Dora (1821-1882)

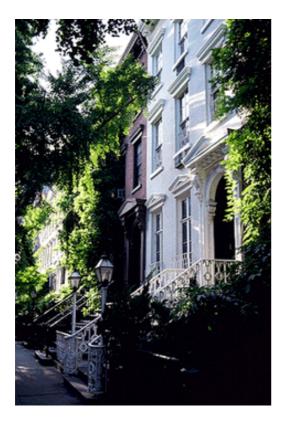
English poet. Her writings, which have been compared with Christina <u>Rossetti's</u>, are marked by intense religious feeling. Her books of verse include *Carmina Crucis* 1869 and *Camera Obscura* 1876. *The Patience of Hope* 1860, *Essays* 1866, and *Colloquia Crucis* 1871 are prose works.

## **Greenwich Village**

in New York City, USA, a section of lower Manhattan (from 14th Street south to Houston Street and from Broadway west to the Hudson River), which from the late 19th century became the bohemian and artistic quarter of the city and, despite expensive rentals, remains so.

More generally, its name suggests the spirit of avant-gardism and political radicalism in US culture; it is variously associated with left-wing causes, sexual liberation, experimental art and theatre, and new magazines and movements. This attitude caused the adjoining section of the Lower East Side, east of Broadway, now far more outrageous than 'the Village', to be called the East Village.

#### **Greenwich Village**



(Image © Corel)

Typical 'brownstone' houses in Greenwich Village, New York City. The winding streets of this area reflect its 19th century origin as farmland, with cattle trails and country lanes.

# Gregory, Augusta (1852-1932)

#### Lady Gregory; born Isabella Augusta Persse

Irish dramatist and folklorist. She was associated with W B Yeats in creating the Abbey Theatre, Dublin, in 1904. Her plays include the comedy *Spreading the News* (1904) and the tragedy *Gaol Gate* (1906).

Other plays include Rising of the Moon (1907) and Grania (1912).

# Gregory, Horace (Victor) (1898-1982)

US poet and writer. In addition to his own elegant poems, he is known for his translations of Catullus and Ovid, and his critical studies of poets, writers, and painters. Gregory was born in Milwaukee, Wisconsin. He studied at the University of Wisconsin, graduating with a BA in 1923. He subsequently became a freelance writer in London and New York (1923-34), and taught at Sarah Lawrence College (1934-60). He is married to Marya Zaturenska.

## Grenville, Kate (1950-)

Australian writer. Her novel *The Idea of Perfection* (1999), a modern small-town Australian comedy of manners, won the 2001 Orange Prize for women's fiction.

After graduating from Sydney University, Grenville worked in the film industry editing documentaries. She began writing short stories and novels when living in England and France. Her other novels include *Lilian's Story* (1985), *Dreamhouse* (1986), *Joan Makes History* (1988), and *Dark Places* (1994).

## Greville, Fulke (1554-1628)

#### 1st Baron Brooke

English poet and courtier. His biography of his friend Philip <u>Sidney</u>, the *Life of Sir Philip Sidney* (1652), enhanced the posthumous myth surrounding that figure. Greville's other works include *Caelica* (1633), a sequence of poems in different metres; and *The Tragedy of Mustapha* (1609) and *The Tragedy of Alaham* (1633), both modelled on the Roman <u>Seneca</u>. He was knighted in 1603 and was made a baron in 1621.

## Grévin, Jacques (1538-1570)

French playwright, poet, and doctor. Like his friend the poet <u>Ronsard</u>, he was an advocate of classical standards in French literature. Among his plays is the tragedy *César* (1560), which has similarities with Marc-Antoine Muret's Latin version of the story of Julius Caesar. Grévin's poetry, published in *Olimpe* (1560), is reminiscent of Ronsard's, but about this time Grévin converted to Protestantism and their friendship ended.

## Grey, (Pearl) Zane (1872-1939)

US author of Westerns. He wrote more than 80 books, including *Riders of the Purple Sage* (1912), and was primarily responsible for the creation of the Western as a literary genre.

Griboedov, Alexandr Sergeevich (1798-1829)

Russian playwright. His only great work, *Woe from Wit* (1823), is a satirical verse comedy about Russian high society that was rejected by the censors and not published until 1833. In 1828 Griboedov became minister-plenipotentiary to Persia, where he was murdered during anti-Russian riots.

#### Grieg, Nordahl (1902-1943)

Norwegian playwright, novelist, and poet. A tireless worker, his writing, like his journalism, was often sustained by social and political indignation. In Norway he is best remembered as a poet of the Resistance during World War II; from a literary point of view, his plays *Vår aere og vår makt/Our Honour and our Might* 1935 and *Nederlaget/Defeat* 1937 are more interesting.

#### Grierson, George Abraham (1851-1941)

British scholar. His monumental *Linguistic Survey of India* 1903-18 is the first complete and correlated account of the many languages of the Indian subcontinent, and describes and classifies 179 languages and 544 dialects. Grierson also made a close study of the religions, folklore, and mythology of India. He published grammars, chrestomathies, and handbooks on several Indian languages and scripts, including Kaithi, Maithili, Bihari, Hindustani, Kashmiri, and Pisacca.

#### Grieve, Christopher Murray

real name of Scottish poet Hugh McDiarmid.

#### Griffin, Gerald (1803-1840)

Irish novelist and dramatist. Griffin was born and educated in Limerick. His novels and stories capture a teeming Irish life, turbulent and sentimental by turns, in prose which is often vivid, and sometimes florid. They include *Tales of the Munster Festivals* (1827), *The Collegians* (1829), adapted as an extremely successful play (1860) by Dion Boucicault, with the title *The Colleen Bawn*, and *The Rivals* (1830).

#### Grigson, Geoffrey Edward Harvey (1905-1985)

English poet and critic. Early volumes of verse include *Under the Cliff* 1943 and *The Isles of Scilly* 1946. He founded and edited the magazine *New Verse* 1933-39, and compiled several anthologies. He also published studies of Wyndham Lewis 1951 and

Gerard Manley Hopkins 1955. His Collected Poems were published 1963.

# Grillparzer, Franz (1791-1872)

Austrian poet and dramatist. His plays include the tragedy *Die Ahnfrau/The Ancestress* (1817), the classical *Sappho* (1818), and the trilogy *Das goldene Vliess/ The Golden Fleece* (1821). His two greatest dramas are *Des Meeres und der Liebe Wellen/The Waves of Sea and Love* (1831) and *Der Traum, ein Leben/A Dream is Life* (1834).

## Grimald, Nicholas (1519-1562)

English poet and theologian. He is remembered for his contributions to *Tottel's Songes and Sonettes* (1557). He was also the first poet after the Earl of <u>Surrey</u> to use blank verse. Two Latin tragedies by Grimald are still extant: *Archipropheta sive Johannes Baptista* (1548) and *Christus redivivus* (1543). He also translated Cicero's *De Officiis* and Virgil's *Georgics*.

#### **Grimm brothers**

Jakob (Ludwig Karl) (1785-1863) and Wilhelm (1786-1859), philologists and collectors of German fairy tales such as 'Hansel and Gretel' and 'Rumpelstiltskin'. Joint compilers of an exhaustive dictionary of German, they saw the study of language and the collecting of folk tales as strands in a single enterprise.

Encouraged by a spirit of Romantic nationalism, the brothers collected stories from friends, relatives, and villagers. *Kinder und Hausmärchen/Nursery and Household Tales* were published as successive volumes 1812, 1815, and 1822. Jakob was professor of philology at Göttingen and formulator of Grimm's law. His *Deutsche Grammatick/German Grammar* 1819 was the first historical treatment of the Germanic languages.

## Grimmelshausen, Hans Jakob Christofel von (1625-1676)

German picaresque novelist. *Der Abenteuerliche Simplicissimus/The Adventurous Simplicissimus* 1669 reflects his experiences in the Thirty Years' War.

Gringore (or Gringoire), Pierre (c. 1475-c. 1538)

French poet and dramatist. His works contain satires on contemporary politics, and his comedies attacked people of all ranks. His chief works are *La chasse du cerf des cerfs* (1510), *Le jeu du prince des sots* (1512), in which he satirized Pope Julius II, *Le mystère de Saint-Louis* (c. 1524), and *Heures de Nostre-Dame* (1525). In his later years he wrote religious poetry.

#### Griselda

fictional character of folk-tale origin whose conduct typifies wifely obedience. In the story she is a virtuous and beautiful peasant girl, wooed by the Marquis of Saluzzo. She becomes his wife, and to assure himself of her character he puts her through a series of ordeals. She passes them all successfully, thus ensuring the happiness of the marriage.

## Grisham, John (1955-)

US writer. His courtroom thrillers A Time to Kill (1987), The Firm (1991), The Pelican Brief (1992), The Client (1993), The Chamber (1994), and The Rain Maker (1995) were all bestsellers. Several of his books have been made into successful films.

Grisham was born in Arkansas, the son of a migrant construction worker who moved around the southern USA. He worked as a tax lawyer in Mississippi, and sat as a Democrat in the Mississippi state legislature 1983-90. Other novels include *The Testament* (1999), *The Brethren* (2000), *The Summons* (2002), *The Brethren* (2002), *Bleachers* (2003), *The Last Juror* (2004), and *The Broker* (2005). Departures from the legal genre include the semi-autobiographical coming-of-age story *A Painted House* and the comic tale *Skipping Christmas* (both 2001).

#### Griswold, Rufus Wilmot (1815-1857)

US anthologist, editor, and literary critic. He was a strong opponent of Americanism in literature and published an anthology of *The Poets and Poetry of America* (1842). He succeeded Edgar Allan <u>Poe</u> as editor of *Graham's Magazine* (1842-43). Among the other literary collections he edited are *The Prose Works of John Milton* (1845, 1847), *The Prose Writers of America* (1847), and *The Female Poets of America* (1848).

Griswold was born in Benson, Vermont. After an obscure period of journalism and editorial work beginning in 1830, he obtained a license as a Baptist minister, though he seems never to have taken a regular pulpit. He edited various periodicals and campaigned against capital punishment and imprisonment for debt. With William Leggett, among others, he established a library in the New York City Prison. He wrote a rather harsh obituary of Poe (1849), even though Poe had named him as his

literary executor. He published a flawed edition of Poe's works (1850-56) and included a scandalous memoir. He edited the *International Monthly Magazine* (1850-52) and P T Barnum's *Illustrated News* (1852-53). He wrote a lengthy and remarkably destructive review of the Duykinck's *Cyclopedia of American Literature* in the *New York Herald* (February 1856).

#### Groto, Luigi (1541-1585)

Blind Italian poet and playwright. He wrote mainly in Italian but also in Latin, Spanish, and Venetian dialect. His works include the extravagant and metrically complex verses of his collection *Rime/Poems* (1577), and plays like the tragedy *Dalida* (1572) (a Senecan horror drama). His other works include *Hadriana* (1578), a dramatization of the Romeo and Juliet story, and the comedies *Emilia* (1579), *Tesoro* (1580), and *Alteria* (1584).

## Grove, Frederick Philip (1879-1948)

Canadian novelist and essayist. His experiences as an itinerant farm hand and schoolteacher on the prairies gave substance to his evocative sketches 'Over Prairie Trails' 1922 and his realist tragedies *Settlers of the Marsh* 1925 and *Fruits of the Earth* 1933, exploring the emotional and spiritual costs of pioneer life, material success, and family conflict in rural Manitoba.

Born in Prussia, he wrote poems, plays, and novels in German and worked as a translator before debt drove him to Canada.

#### **Grub Street**

road on the north side of the city of London. It became the squalid resort of hack writers in the 17th century, and the term was applied by metaphorical extension to all literary work thought to be scurrilous, pornographic, seditious, or ephemeral and transient.

The street itself was renamed Milton Street in 1830 and was obliterated by the Barbican development in the 1980s, but the metaphoric sense remains.

## Grundtvig, Nicolai Frederik Severin (1783-1872)

Danish poet, preacher, and educationalist. He championed civil and religious freedom, advocated the separation of church and state, and originated the ideas which led to the high school system of education. He studied and wrote about the

ancient Norse traditions and translated the works of Saxo Grammaticus and Snorri Sturluson 1818-22, as well as the Old English poem *Beowulf*. He published popular songs, historical and biblical poems, and a system of philosophy, *Mind and Liberty*.

#### Grundy, Mrs

symbol of rigid moral propriety, first introduced as a character in Thomas Morton's play *Speed the Plough* 1798.

## Guare, John (1938-)

US dramatist. His stage plays include *House of Blue Leaves* (1971; winner of both an Obie and the New York Drama Critics Circle Award for the Best American Play of 1970-71), and *Six Degrees of Separation* (1990; winner of the New York Drama Critics Circle Award, the Dramatists Guild Hull-Warriner Award, and an Olivier Best Play Award). He also wrote the screenplays for the television adaptation of *The House of Blue Leaves* (1987) and the film adaptation of *Six Degrees of Separation* (1993).

Other works by Guare include *Two Gentlemen of Verona* (1971; Tony Award for Best Musical), a pop-rock musical adaptation of Shakespeare's play, *Rich and Famous* (1974), *The Landscape of the Body* (1977), *Bosoms and Neglect* (1979), and *Four Baboons Adoring the Sun* (1992). He wrote the screenplay of Louis Malle's *Atlantic City* (1980). The 1986 revival of *House of Blue Leaves* received four Tony Awards.

## Guareschi, Giovanni (1909-1968)

Italian author. His short stories feature the friendly feud between parish priest Don Camillo and the communist village mayor.

## Guarini, Giovanni Battista (1538-1612)

Italian poet, author of a blank verse pastoral drama *II pastor fido/The Faithful Shepherd* (1589). His other works include a comedy, lyric poems, and his *Trattato della politica libertà /Treatise on Political Liberty* (unpublished until the 19th century) which, despite its title, argues for the preferability of tyranny over republicanism.

Italian humanist scholar and educator. He was the son of <u>Guarino da Verona</u> and he followed his father's footsteps in his native Ferrara, teaching Greek to scholars who came to him from as far afield as Germany and England. Of his pupils, the one who probably had the greatest impact on Renaissance Greek studies was the publisher Aldus Manutius.

## Guarino da Verona (1374-1460)

#### also known as Guarino Guarini

Humanist educator and writer from Verona and based for the second half of his career in Ferrara. A pupil of Manuel Chrysoloras, he returned with him to Constantinople and stayed there until 1408. Back in Italy, he taught in Venice, Florence, Padua, and - from 1429, at the invitation of Marchese Niccolò d'Este - at Ferrara. In the city ruled by the Este dynasty, he presided over both a flourishing school and a literary circle which also included Giovanni Aurispa.

His writings comprised mainly of translations from Greek, in particular of Plutarch essays; he also produced a voluminous correspondence and entered into controversies with other humanists like Poggio Bracciolini. In his own time, however, he was best known for his teaching - it is unclear how novel or inspirational his lessons actually were, but they certainly attracted students from across Europe and he surpassed in his celebrity even Vittorino da Feltre and Gasparino Barzizza.

## Guérin, Georges Maurice de (1810-1839)

French poet. His prose poem *Le Centaure/The Centaur* was published 1840 and his *Reliquiae*, letters and poems, 1861. His *Journal* (known as *Le Cahier vert/The Green Notebook*) was published 1862.

Although tinged with a morbid sentimentalism, his writings are remarkable for their exquisite appreciation of the pagan beauty, harmony, and pathos of nature.

## Guerrazzi (1804-1873)

Italian writer and patriot. His chief works are *La battaglia di Benevento* 1827, a historical novel; *L'assedio di Firenze* 1836, recounting the downfall of the republic of Florence; and *Isabella Orsini* 1844.

#### born Charlotte Bertie

English scholar. She translated and edited several old Welsh manuscripts of which the best known was *The Mabinogion* 1838-49. This did much to stimulate interest in Celtic literature. She also helped to revive the Welsh eisteddfod and was a noted collector of fans. She is the daughter of the 9th Earl of Lindsay.

## Guevara, Fray Antonio de (1480-1545)

Spanish writer and historian. His best-known book is *Libro áureo de Marco Aurelio/ Golden Book of Marcus Aurelius* (1528). First published anonymously and extremely popular in Spain and elsewhere (it was translated into English in 1532 by Lord Berners), it is in the form of a series of letters addressed to the Roman emperor Marcus Aurelius on the virtues of an ideal ruler.

It was later included in an enlarged, moralizing 'mirror for princes' (a book of advice for rulers) entitled *Reloj de príncipes* (1539), which was translated as *The Diall of Princes* by Thomas <u>North</u> in 1557. Guevara's rhetorical excesses and his ability to invent facts when it suited him were criticized even in his own day.

# Guidi, Alessandro (1650-1712)

Italian poet. He is essentially a lyric poet specializing in occasional poems; he also wrote numerous dramas.

## Guillaume de Lorris (lived c. 1235)

French poet. He wrote the first 4,058 lines of the allegorical poem <u>Roman de la Rose</u> which, completed about 40 years later by <u>Jean de Meung</u>, is one of the most influential and representative works of French medieval literature. The aristocratic delicacy of Lorris's treatment stands in sharp contrast to Jean de Meung's cynicism.

## Guillaume de Poitiers (1071-1127)

#### 7th Count of Poitiers, 9th Duke of Aquitaine

French poet, the earliest known troubadour. Eleven of his poems remain, some bawdy, some refined and courtly.

# Guinizelli, Guido (c. 1230-1276)

Italian poet. Only a handful of canzoni and sonnets by him are in existence, the best known being the canzone 'Al cor gentil ripara sempre amore', generally viewed as the manifesto of the *dolce stil nuovo* (sweet new style).

## Guinzburg, Alfred (Kleinert) (1899-1961)

US publisher. He cofounded Viking Press in 1925 and headed it until his death, acquiring the works of such authors as James Joyce, D H Lawrence, and August Strindberg. In 1926 he founded the Literary Guild book club. Guinzberg was born in New York City.

## Güiraldes, Ricardo (1886-1927)

Argentine novelist and poet. Contact with French avant-garde writing in Paris in 1910 influenced the controversially innovative poetry and prose of his collection *El cencerro de cristal/The Crystal Bell* 1915. Deep feeling for his native land characterizes his stories *Cuentos de muerte y de sangre/Tales of Death and Blood* 1915 and his novel *Don Segundo Sombra* 1926, a poetic idealization of Argentine *gaucho* (nomadic cattleman) life, his best-known work.

## Guiraut de Bornelh

alternative spelling of Giraud de Borneil, Provençal troubadour.

#### Guiterman, Arthur (1871-1943)

US poet. He published many volumes of popular light verse, including *The Laughing Muse* 1915, *Ballads of Old New York* 1920, and *Brave Laughter* 1943.

## Guittone d'Arezzo (c. 1230-1294)

Italian poet. In his youth he wrote mainly love poems, imitating the style of the Provençal troubadours, but he experienced a conversion about 1286 and entered a religious order. After this his poetry is chiefly religious, though his canzoni on political themes are also notable.

# Gulliver's Travels

satirical novel by the Irish writer Jonathan <u>Swift</u> published in 1726. The four countries visited by the narrator Gulliver ridicule different aspects of human nature, customs, and politics.

Gulliver's travels take him to Lilliput, whose inhabitants are only 15 cm/6 in tall; Brobdingnag, where they are gigantic; Laputa, run by mad scientists; and the land of the Houyhnhnms, horses who embody reason and virtue, while the human Yahoos have only the worst human qualities.

# Gumilev, Nikolai Stepanovich (1886-1921)

Russian poet, essayist, and translator. Together with his wife, the poet Anna <u>Akhmatova</u>, he founded in 1912 the Acmeist movement, which promoted clarity and precision, in a reaction to the allusiveness of Symbolist verse. Journeys in Africa lent his poetry its exotic themes of adventure and travel, rare in the work of Soviet writers. His greatest works date from his last years, and include *Koster/The Pyre* 1918 and *Ognennyi stolp/The Pillar of Fire* 1921.

Gumilev was active in literary life in Petrograd (now St Petersburg) after the Revolution, until he was arrested and shot for complicity in an anticommunist plot.

# Gunn, Neil Miller (1891-1974)

Scottish novelist. His first novel, *Grey Coast* (1926), at once brought him recognition and was followed by a series of others including *The Lost Glen* (1932), *Butcher's Broom* (1934), *Wild Geese Overhead* (1939), *Highland River* (1937) (Tait Black Memorial Prize), and *The Silver Darlings* (1941).

Gunn excelled in depicting the ordinary life and social and economic history of the Scottish Highlands, and in interpreting the folk wisdom and psychology of the Celts.

# Gunn, Thom(son) William (1929-2004)

English poet. One of his finest works is 'Misanthropos', in the collections *Touch* (1967), which explores the tough humanism of the last man alive after an atomic catastrophe. His other volumes of poetry include *Poems 1950-66*, *A Selection* (1969), and *Jack Straw's Castle and other Poems* (1976).

# Guralnik, David B(ernard) (1920-)

US lexicographer. He coedited *Webster's New World Dictionary* (1953) for the World Publishing Company and thereby established a major new line of college dictionaries in the American market. As editor-in-chief of the Webster's New World Dictionaries (subsequently published by Simon & Schuster), he edited the *Second College Edition* (1970). For nearly forty years he was one of the leading lexicographers in the USA. He retired at the end of 1985 but remained active as a consultant. Guralnik was born in Cleveland, Ohio.

## Gurney, Ivor (Bertie) (1890-1937)

English poet and composer. He was a poet both of the Gloucestershire countryside and of the war at the front. *Severn and Somme* was published in 1917 and *War's Embers* in 1919. Though his third volume of verse was rejected, he published songcycles of poems by A E Housman in 1923 and 1926, and settings of poems of Edward Thomas in 1926.

## Guterson, David (1956-)

US author. He is perhaps best known for *Snow Falling on Cedars* (1995; winner of the PEN/Faulkner award). Other books include *Family Matters: Why Homeschooling Makes Sense* (1993), *The Country Ahead of Us, the Country Behind* (1996), a collection of short stories, *East of the Mountains* (1999), and *Our Lady of the Forest* (2003).

Guterson received his MA from the University of Washington. He taught English at a high school in Puget Sound, where he took up journalistic writing for *Sports Illustrated* and *Harper's Magazine*. He believes that there is a moral function to literature and that writers have an obligation to present moral questions for their readers to reflect on.

## Gutzkow, Karl Ferdinand (1811-1878)

German dramatist and writer. He was imprisoned for one month for bringing Christianity into contempt in his novel *Wally, die Zweiflerin/Wally the Skeptic* 1835. His plays include the tragedy *Richard Savage* 1839, the comedy *Das Urbild des Tartüffe* 1845, and the blank-verse tragedy *Uriel Acosta* 1946.

Gutzkow was born in Berlin. He was dramatic adviser of the Court Theatre, Dresden, 1946-48. His novels include *Seraphine* 1838 and *Blasedow und seine Sohne*, a satire on contemporary education.

#### **Guy of Warwick**

hero of a Middle English romance of about 1300, versions of which existed in France in the 13th century. The story is an account of Guy's foreign wars and his love of and marriage to Felice, daughter and heiress of the Earl of Warwick. His pilgrimage to the Holy Land is also related, and his defeat of the giant Colbrand, which delivered Winchester from the invading Danes.

## Guzmán de Alfarache

a novel by the Spanish writer Mateo <u>Alemán</u>, published 1599-1604. One of the first <u>picaresque</u> novels, it became extremely popular, was widely translated, and established the fashion for the genre during the first half of the 17th century. The hero recounts his life of crime, his thefts, deceits, his desertion of his rich wife, and other escapades, until he is finally apprehended, condemned to the galleys, and repents.

# Gwynn, Stephen Lucius (1864-1950)

Irish poet and critic. Gwynn was born in Dublin and educated at St Columba's College, Rathfarnham, and Brasenose College, Oxford. Among his critical works are *The Masters of English Literature* (1904) and lives or studies of Alfred Tennyson (published 1899), Thomas Moore (1905), Walter Scott (1930), Horace Walpole (1932), Jonathan Swift (1933), and Oliver Goldsmith (1935). His *Collected Poems* appeared in 1923.

After graduating from Oxford, Gwynn taught classics for ten years and then became a freelance writer in London. He sat in Westminster as MP for Galway City 1906-18 and during World War I he received the French Legion of Honour.

## Habberton, John (1842-1921)

US writer. His most popular work was *Helen's Babies* 1876. He also wrote the play *Deacon Crankett* 1880 and the novel *Other People's Children* 1877.

# Habington, William (1605-1654)

English poet. In 1634 he published *Castara*, a volume of lyrical poems, some of which are notable for their purity. He also wrote *The Historie of Edward the Fourth* 

1640; *The Queene of Arragon* 1640, a tragicomedy; and *Observations upon Historie* 1641.

#### Hadas, Moses (1900-1966)

US classicist and translator. His best known publications include *History of Greek Literature* (1950) and *History of Latin Literature* (1952). Through his translations he introduced works in German and Greek to English readers. They include Jacob Burckhardt's *The Age of Constantine the Great* (1949), and *Three Greek Romances* (1954). Hadas was born in Atlanta, Georgia. He was educated at Emory and Columbia universities, gaining his PhD in 1930. He subsequently taught at Columbia (1925-28; 1930-66).

## Hâfiz, Shams al-Din Muhammad (c. 1326-c. 1390)

Persian lyric poet. He was born in Shiraz and taught in a Dervish college there. His *Diwan*, a collection of short odes, extols the pleasures of life and satirizes his fellow Dervishes.

## Hagedorn, Friedrich von (1708-1754)

German poet. He contributed satirical works to the *Hamburg Patriot*. An imitator of classical, French, and English forms, he wrote mainly verse tales, fables in the manner of La Fontaine, and cheerful songs which were in contrast to the mood of his time.

# Haggard, H(enry) Rider (1856-1925)

English novelist. He used his experience in the South African colonial service in his romantic adventure tales, including *King Solomon's Mines* (1885) and *She* (1887), the best of which also illuminate African traditions and mythology. He also published *Rural England* (1902).

His first book, *Cetewayo and his White Neighbours*, appeared in 1882. In 1884 he published *Dawn*, the first of his novels, and followed it with others, most of which were very successful. The most popular was *King Solomon's Mines*; others include *Jess* (1887), *Allan Quatermain* (1887), and *The World's Desire* (1890), written with Andrew Lang. He was knighted in 1912.

#### haiku

17-syllable Japanese verse genre, usually divided into three lines of five, seven, and five syllables. Japanese poet <u>Basho</u> popularized the form in the 17th century. It evolved from the 31-syllable tanka form dominant from the 8th century.

# Haines, Helen Elizabeth (1872-1961)

US editor, bibliographer, and library educator. She was appointed managing editor of the *Literary Journal* in 1896, and she also served on the executive board of the American Library Association. Because of ill health she resigned her positions in 1908 and settled in Pasadena, California, where she lectured on literature and librarianship at the University of Southern California and the University of California, Los Angeles.

Haines was born in New York City. She took a position in 1892 with R R Bowker, the bibliographic publishers, where she assisted in the production of the *Library Journal*, *Publisher's Weekly*, the *American Catalogue*, *State Publications*, and the *Annual Literary Index*. The second edition (1950) of her most important work, *Living with Books: the Art of Book Selection* (1935) attracted criticism for her advocacy of the representation of divergent points of view and her opposition to censorship.

# Hakim, Tawfiq al- (1898-1987)

Egyptian pioneer of drama in Arabic. Before the modern period, it had not existed as a literary form. Much of his work has been widely translated. Many of his plays, which include *People of the Cave* (1933) and *A Bullet in the Heart*, revolve around authentic Egyptian problems and situations, while others explored intellectual issues and were not intended for performance. His novels include *Return of the Spirit* (1933), based on the 1919 revolution in Egypt, and the autobiographical *Maze of Justice* (1937).

# Haldeman-Julius, Emanuel (1889-1951)

#### adopted name of Emanuel Julius

US publisher and author. A lifelong freethinker, socialist and iconoclast, in 1919, after his youthful years as an activist reformer, he started a Socialist newspaper in Girard, Kansas. That same year he began publishing his 'Little Blue Books', a series of cheap, paperback reprints, sales of which eventually rose to 500,000 a year. In addition to publishing such magazines as *American Freeman* and *Agnostic*, he wrote numerous books of his own, ranging from literary studies to a 'How To' series. His two-volume autobiography was published in 1949 and 1950). He was born in

Philadelphia, Pennsylvania.

#### Hale, Edward Everett (1822-1909)

US Unitarian minister and writer. His literary reputation rests chiefly on his short story 'The Man without a Country' 1865, contained in *If, Yes, and Perhaps* 1868.

His other writings include Ten Times One is Ten 1870.

#### Hale, Nancy (1908-1988)

US writer. She worked as an editor for *Vogue* (1928-32) and *Vanity Fair* (1932-33), and was the first woman reporter for the *New York Times* (1935). A lecturer at Bread Loaf Writers' Conference, Middlebury, Vermont (1957-65), she was based in Charlottesville, Virginia. She wrote a variety of plays, critical essays, novels, memoirs, including *A New England Childhood* (1958), and a biography of Mary Cassatt. She is perhaps best known for her short stories, as in the collection *The Pattern of Perfection* (1960). The daughter of artist Philip L Hale, she was born in Boston, Massachusetts. She studied art at the Boston Museum of Fine Arts (1927-28).

#### Hale, Sarah Josepha Buell (1788-1879)

US poet. She was the author of 'Mary had a Little Lamb' 1830.

## Hale, William Gardner (1849-1928)

US classicist. He was influential in founding the American School of Classical Studies at Rome (now the American Academy at Rome) and was its first director (1895). His *Art of Reading Latin* (1887) was enormously influential, but his life's work was the preparation of an edition of the Catullus manuscript (known as *R*), which he found in the Vatican library. Hale was born in Savannah, Georgia. He was educated at Harvard University, graduating with a BA in 1870, and taught at Cornell University (1880-1892) and the University of Chicago (1892-1919).

#### ha-Levi, Judah (c. 1080-1140)

#### also known as Judah ben Samuel Halevi

Spanish poet, philosopher, and physician. Over 1,100 of his poems survive, 800 of

which are secular and 300 religious. His religious verses are still used as prayers by Jewish congregations. He wrote a defence of Judaism, *Sefer ha-Kuzari/The Book of the Khazar*.

## Halévy, Ludovic (1834-1908)

French novelist and librettist. He collaborated with Hector Crémieux in the libretto for Jacques Offenbach's *Orpheus in the Underworld*, and with Henri Meilhac on librettos for Offenbach's *La Belle Hélène* and *La Vie parisienne*, as well as for Georges Bizet's *Carmen*.

# Haley, Alex(ander Murray Palmer) (1921-1992)

US journalist and writer. He first gained some national attention as the collaboratoreditor of *The Autobiography of Malcolm X* (1965). His highly acclaimed work, *Roots: The Saga of an American Family* (1976), which won a Pulitzer Prize, blended fact with fiction and was loosley based on his African-American roots; he had spent 12 years researching his ancestry and claimed to trace it to Kunte Kinte, a slave who was brought to the USA from Gambia in 1767. The book was the basis of a phenomenally successful television miniseries (1977), for which he received a special Pulitzer Prize and the Spingarn Medal. A sequel, *Queen* (1993), also appeared as a book and television miniseries.

Haley was born in Ithaca, New York. He grew up in Henning, Tennessee, studied at Elizabeth City Teachers College in North Carolina (1937-39). He became a journalist while serving in the US Coast Guard (1939-59). When he quit the service, he established himself in Los Angeles as a freelance writer, conducting several *Playboy* interviews.

# Haliburton, Thomas Chandler (1796-1865)

Canadian writer. He is best known for his magazine sketches under the pseudonym 'Sam Slick'. Collected in three series of *The Clockmaker, or Sayings and Doings of Sam Slick of Slickville* 1836-40, they attracted much attention in England for their racy wit.

# Hall, Anna Maria (1800-1881)

#### born Anna Maria Fielding

Irish novelist. Born in Dublin, Hall spent her childhood in County Wexford, before

moving to London in 1815. Her works include *Sketches of Irish Character* (1829), *The Buccaneer* (1832), and *The White Boy* (1845). She also contributed many sketches to the *Art Journal*, edited by her husband, Samuel Carter Hall (1800-1889). Together they collaborated to produce *Ireland, its Scenery and Character* (1841).

Although Hall left Ireland at an early age, it provided the background for several of her successful books.

# Hall, Donald (Andrew, Jr) (1928-)

US poet. He wrote plays, literary criticism, children's stories, books about baseball, and a memoir, *String Too Short to Be Saved* (1961). An editor of numerous poetry anthologies, he is best known as a tough, witty lyric poet, as seen in *The Museum of Clear Ideas* (1993). Hall was born in New Haven, Connecticut. He studied at the universities of Harvard, Oxford, England, and Stanford. He taught at the University of Michigan (1957-75), and then became a freelance writer in 1975, also working as a television and radio broadcaster. He was married to Jane Kenyon, with whom lived in Wilmot, New Hampshire.

## Hall, Edward (c. 1498-1547)

English lawyer and chronicler who wrote *The Union of the Noble and Illustre Families of Lancaster and York*. It chronicles the success of the Tudor dynasty supposedly bringing the War of the Roses to an end. A first edition appeared in 1542, but the second edition, published posthumously in 1548, is considered the standard version. The book was widely used by other historians, notably Raphael Holinshed, and was also used by Shakespeare as a source for his history plays.

Commonly called *Hall's Chronicle* it was continued after his death by Richard Grafton, but because of its Protestant bias, it was prohibited during the reign of Mary I.

## Hall, James (1793-1868)

US lawyer and author. He saw combat in the War of 1812, then quit the army in 1818 after a dispute with his commanding officer. Settling in Shawneetown, Illinois, he practised law, was elected state treasurer (1828), and edited the *Illinois Monthly Magazine* (1830), an early midwestern literary journal. He moved to Cincinnati, Ohio, in 1832, and, while working as a banker there, he wrote a series of books on the early frontier, including *The Romance of Western History* (1857). He also collaborated with Thomas L McKenney in writing *History of the Indian Tribes of North America* (1836-44; 1884). Hall was born in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania.

#### Hall, Willis (1929-2005)

English dramatist. He wrote numerous plays for stage, radio, television, and cinema, as well as more than a dozen children's novels. His best-known work is the play *The Long and the Short and the Tall* (1958, published 1959), which was successful on stage in both London and New York.

Hall is also well known for his long and successful collaboration with Keith <u>Waterhouse</u>. Among their many joint ventures for the stage were the adaptation of Waterhouse's novel *Billy Liar* (1960), *Celebration* (1961), *Squat Betty* (1962), *Say Who You Are* (1965), and *The Card* (1973). Their many screenplays include *Whistle Down the Wind* (1961), *A Kind of Loving* (1962), and the film adaptation of *Billy Liar* (1963).

## Hallam, Arthur Henry (1811-1833)

English poet. He wrote some fine Italian sonnets. His health broke down while travelling on the Continent with his father, Henry Hallam, and he died in Vienna. He was a close friend of Alfred <u>Tennyson</u>, who commemorated his death in the elegy *In Memoriam*. His book *Remains* was published 1834.

## Halleck, Fitz-Greene (1790-1867)

US poet. His work includes *Fanny* 1820, a satire on contemporary literature, fashions, and politics, and 'Marco Bozzaris' 1825.

## Hallgrímur Pétursson (1614-1674)

Icelandic poet and hymn-writer. His 50 *Passíusálmar/Passion Hymns* are his greatest achievement and his funeral hymn 'Alt eins og blómstrid eina'/'Just as one true flower' is sung at almost every Icelandic burial.

## Halliburton, Richard (1900-1939)

US travel writer. He followed the trails of such heroes as Ulysses and Alexander the Great, and his books include *The Royal Road to Romance* 1925, *The Flying Carpet* 1932, and *Seven League Boots* 1935.

## Halliwell-Phillipps, James Orchard (1820-1889)

English scholar. His biography of Shakespeare appeared 1848, followed by his *New Book about Shakespeare and Stratford-upon-Avon* 1850 and *Illustrations of the Life of Shakespeare* 1874. He also published a *Dictionary of Archaic and Provincial Words* 1846-47, under the name Halliwell.

## Hall-Stevenson, John (1718-1785)

English writer. His principal work is *Crazy Tales* 1762, a collection of clever verses, disfigured, as all his writings are, by coarse expression and thought. He was a friend of Laurence Sterne and wrote an imitation of his *Tristram Shandy* and a continuation of *A Sentimental Journey*.

## Hamann, Johann Georg (1730-1788)

German author. He stressed the irrational in life, and greatly influenced <u>Goethe</u> and the *Sturm und Drang* movement. The obscurity of his writings earned him the name 'Magus of the North'. He wrote *Sokratische Denkwürdigkeiten* 1760 and *Kreuzzuge eines Philologen* 1762.

#### hamasa

#### (Arabic hamasah 'bravery' from hamisa 'to be firm')

title of several anthologies of Arabic poetry and, in particular, a collection compiled by abu-Tammam (807-*c.* 845), divided into ten books. This collection is of great historical value, and is derived chiefly from the spoken word.

Another important *hamasa* is that compiled by the poet al-Buhturi (820-897), abu-Tammam's pupil, some years after the appearance of the latter's collection.

#### Hamburger, Michael (Peter Leopold) (1924-)

German-born British poet, translator, and critic. He emigrated with his family to London in 1933, and began to write poetry in English while still at school. His verse was first published in *Later Hogarth* (1945), and he turned in the 1960s from traditional forms to a freer and deeper expression of feeling, in which images of nature and of the Holocaust are frequent. Collected *Poems 1941-1994* was published in 1995.

#### Hamerling, Robert (1839-1889)

#### born Rupert Johann Hammerling

Austrian poet. In 1860 he published his first volume of lyrics, *Sinnen und Minnen*, which was followed by *Amor und Psyche* 1882 and *Blätter im Winde* 1887. *Ahasverus in Rom* 1866, and *Der König von Sion* 1869, two powerful satirical epics, are his masterpieces.

## Hamilton, Anthony (c. 1646-1720)

Irish-born French author. He wrote the *Mémoires* of his brother-in-law, the comte de Gramont, which gave an admirable picture of the court of Charles II of England and were published anonymously in 1713. He also wrote *Le Belin, Fleur d'Epine*, and other tales based on the translation of the *Arabian Nights* by Antoine Galland (1646-1715).

Hamilton was probably born in Roscrea, Tipperary; he was taken to France when a child. On the accession of James II in England he was given command of an infantry regiment in Ireland and made Roman Catholic governor of Limerick, but after the Battle of the Boyne (1690) he spent the rest of his life in France.

## Hamilton, Anthony Walter Patrick (1904-1962)

English novelist and playwright. His early novels include *Monday Morning* 1923 and the trilogy *Twenty Thousand Streets under the Sky* 1935; later novels include *Hangover Square* 1941 and *The Slaves of Solitude* 1947. Critics have noted his feeling for 'Dickensian' characters. Among his plays *Angel Street* was especially successful.

# Hamilton, Edith (1867-1963)

German-born US educator and classical scholar. She is best remembered as a collector and translator of ancient myths. Her anthologies *Mythology* (1942) and *The Great Age of Greek Literature* (1943) became standard textbooks. Other important works include *The Greek Way* (1930) and *The Roman Way* (1932).

Born in Dresden, Germany, and raised in Fort Wayne, Indiana, USA, Hamilton was headmistress of the Bryn Mawr School in Baltimore 1896-1922, later devoting her energies to the study of Greek and Roman civilization.

## Hamilton, Elizabeth (1758-1816)

Scottish writer. Her works include *Letters of a Hindoo Rajah* 1796, *Memoirs of Modern Philosophers* 1801 (a satire on the enthusiasts of the French Revolution), *Life of Agrippina* 1804, and *The Cottagers of Glenburnie* 1808, which shows her at her best in portraying domestic life in rural Scotland.

# Hamilton, Mary Agnes (1884-1966)

English novelist and biographer. Her novels include *Dead Yesterdays* 1916, *Murder in the House of Commons* 1931, and *Life Sentence* 1935. She also wrote lives of Ramsay Macdonald 1925, Margaret Bondfield 1926, and Sydney and Beatrice Webb 1933.

## Hamilton, William (c. 1665-1751)

Scottish poet. He is known for his abridged and modernized edition of Blind Harry's *Wallace* 1722, which inspired Robert Burns. He contributed to James Watson's *Choice Collection* 1706, and his 'Willie was a Wanton Wag' was included in the *Teatable Miscellany* of Allan <u>Ramsay</u>.

#### Hamlet

tragedy by William <u>Shakespeare</u>, first performed in 1601-02. Hamlet, after much hesitation, avenges the murder of his father, the king of Denmark, by the king's brother Claudius, who has married Hamlet's mother. The play ends with the death of all three.

Hamlet is haunted by his father's ghost demanding revenge, is torn between love and loathing for his mother, and becomes responsible for the deaths of his lover Ophelia, her father and brother, and his student companions Rosencrantz and Guildenstern. In the monologue beginning 'To be, or not to be' he contemplates suicide.

## Hamlyn, Paul Bertrand (1926-2001)

#### born Paul Hamberger

English publishing entrepreneur and founder of the Hamlyn and Octopus houses. Hamlyn famously published intelligence officer Peter Wright's autobiography *Spycatcher*, which the Conservative government of the day tried to ban. He was later revealed as a major contributor to Labour Party funds. *The Sunday Times* Rich List estimated his net worth at £300 million in 2000. He was made a life peer in 1998.

Hamlyn established his first publishing business from a barrow in Camden market, London, with an inheritance of £350 from his grandfather. He founded Books for Pleasure (1949), Prints for Pleasure (1960), and Records for Pleasure (1961) under the name Hamlyn, which he sold in 1964 to IPC (becoming chair of IPC books from 1965 to 1970) for £2.25 million. After a short tenure as joint managing editor of Richard Murdoch's News International, Hamlyn launched Octopus books in 1971, which he sold to Reed International for £532 million in 1987. He holds a £269 million stake in Reed, a 10% stake worth £5 million in Michelin House Investments, and owns the Bibendum restaurant with friend Terence Conran.

## Hammerton, John Alexander (1871-1949)

Scottish editor and critic. He edited various books and magazines in London as well as many works of reference published in fortnightly or weekly parts, including the *Universal Encyclopaedia*, *Universal History*, *Peoples of All Nations*, and *Countries of the World*. In both World Wars he edited a weekly magazine, *War Illustrated*.

# Hammett, (Samuel) Dashiell (1894-1961)

US crime novelist. He introduced the 'hard-boiled' detective character into fiction and attracted a host of imitators, with works including *The Maltese Falcon* (1930, filmed 1941), *The Glass Key* (1931, filmed 1942), and his most successful novel, the light-hearted *The Thin Man* (1932, filmed 1934). His Marxist politics were best expressed in *Red Harvest* (1929), which depicts the corruption of capitalism in 'Poisonville'.

Hammett was a former Pinkerton detective agent. In 1951 he was imprisoned for contempt of court for refusing to testify during the McCarthy era of anticommunist witch hunts. He lived with the dramatist Lillian Hellman for the latter half of his life.

# Hammon, Jupiter (1711-1806)

US writer and poet. His first published poem, 'An Evening Thought' (1761), preceded the work of Phyllis <u>Wheatley</u> by six years, thus earning him the distinction of being the first African-American to be published. He later moved to Hartford, Connecticut, when the British invaded Long Island (1776). His work was published by the Quakers and includes religious essays, sermons, and poetry. A collection of his work, *America's First Negro Poet: The Complete Work of Jupiter Hammon of Long Island*, was published in 1970. Hammon was born in Oyster Bay, Long Island, New York. Little is known of his life, other than he was born a slave, worked as a clerk, and was reportedly educated by missionaries from England. He is believed to have died between 1790 and 1806, although there is no official documentation to this effect.

## Hamp, Pierre (1876-1962)

#### pseudonym of Pierre Bourillon

French novelist. His novels deal with aspects of working-class life and include *Marée fraîche* 1908, *Le Rail* 1912, *Les Métiers blessés* 1919, *La Victoire mécanicienne* 1920, *Le Lin* 1924.

The general title *La Peine des hommes*, which he gave to a series of his novels, indicates his preoccupation with social questions and with the happiness of the worker.

#### Hamsun, Knut (1859-1952)

#### pseudonym of Knut Pedersen

Norwegian novelist. His first novel *Sult/Hunger* (1890) was largely autobiographical. Other works include *Pan* (1894) and *Markens grøde/The Growth of the Soil* (1917). He was the first of many European and American writers to attempt to capture 'the unconscious life of the soul'. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1920. His hatred of capitalism made him sympathize with Nazism and he was fined in 1946 for collaboration.

Hamsun attacked the established 'realistic' writers such as Henrik Ibsen and Bjørnstjerne Bjørnson, maintaining that a subjective, irrational approach revealed more of the true nature of an individual.

## Handke, Peter (1942-)

Austrian novelist and dramatist. His first play, *Publikumsbeschimpfung/Insulting the Audience* (1966), was an example of 'anti-theatre writing', in which four actors tell the audience that they will not see a play and end by insulting them. His novels include *Die Hornissen/The Hornets* (1966), *Die Angst des Tormanns beim Elfmeter/ The Goalie's Anxiety at the Penalty Kick* (1970), *Der kurze Brief zum langen Abschied/The Short Letter at the Long Parting* (1972), and *In einer dunklen Nacht ging ich aus meinem stillen Haus/On a Dark Night I Left My Silent House* (1999).

He wrote and directed the films Linkshandige Frau/The Left-handed Woman (1977)

and *Absence* (1995), and wrote the screenplay for Wim Wenders'*Stadt der Engel/City* of *Angels (Wings of Desire)* (1998).

#### Handler, Daniel (1970-)

#### pen-name Lemony Snicket

US writer. He is best known for his Gothic-style *Series of Unfortunate Events* children's books, written under the pseudonym Lemony Snicket. The first three in the series were adapted for the film *Lemony Snicket's Series of Unfortunate Events* (2004), starring Jim Carrey. His adult novels, written under his own name, include *The Basic Eight* (2000), *Watch Your Mouth* (2002), and *Adverbs* (2005).

The series, the first of which was published in 1999, follows the adventures of a trio of intrepid orphans, the Baudelaires, whose parents have died in a fire. The evil Count Olaf connives to swindle the children of their family fortune.

#### Hannay, James Owen (1865-1950)

#### pseudonym George A Birmingham

Irish novelist, born in Belfast, the son of a clergyman, and educated at Haileybury and Trinity College, Dublin. *Spanish Gold* (1908) established him as a novelist of Irish life with a racy humour all his own. Among his other novels are *The Major's Niece* (1911), *Good Conduct* (1920), *Goodly Pearls* (1926), *Fed Up* (1931), and *Good Intentions* (1945).

Hannay was ordained in 1889, and spent many years teaching and as a curate in Ireland. He served as chaplain with the British army, and obtained a living in Somerset in 1924 before moving to a London parish in 1934.

#### Hansberry, Lorraine (1930-1965)

US playwright. Her first play, *A Raisin in the Sun* 1959, marked the emergence of black writers as a major force in the US theatre of the 1960s. Her second, *The Sign in Sidney Brustein's Window*, was produced on Broadway in 1964. *Les Blancs* 1970 was finished by her husband.

#### Hansen, Martin Alfred (1909-1955)

Danish novelist and essayist. His early novels, including Jonathans Rejse/Jonathan's

Journey 1941 and Lykkelige Kristoffer/Lucky Christopher 1945, are full of creative fantasy. A feeling of guilt comes to the fore in the experimental Tornebusken/The Thorn Bush 1946, where the writer is an observer of war. In Løgneren/The Liar 1950 the protagonist is again an observer and his passivity ruins his own happiness.

#### Hansson, Ola (1860-1925)

Swedish poet, novelist, and critic. His early poetry describes the beauty of the Swedish plains, but he turned in his later work to admiration of Nietzsche. He wrote *Sensitiva amorosa* 1887, a collection of short stories about the unconscious life of the soul, and some excellent criticism: *Materialismen i skonlitteraturen* 1892 and *Tolkare och siare* 1894.

#### Hapgood, Norman (1868-1937)

US editor and author. Particularly successful as the muckraking editor of *Collier's Weekly* (1903-12), he later edited *Harper's Weekly* (1913-16), and *Hearst's International Magazine* (1923-25). He was also a drama critic and wrote several biographies. Hapgood was born in Chicago, Illinois.

## Harcourt, Alfred (1881-1954)

US publisher. In 1919 he cofounded the firm that eventually became Harcourt Brace Jovanovich. As its president until 1941, he used his acumen and taste to acquire fine authors and make the company prosper. He was born in Ulster County, New York.

#### Hardenberg, Friedrich von

real name of German Romantic poet Novalis.

#### Hardiman, James (1782-1855)

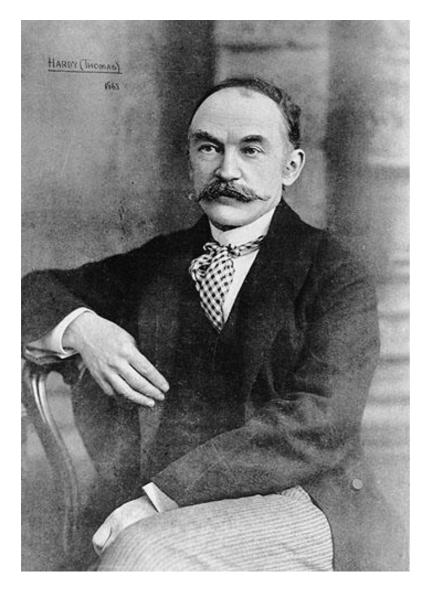
Irish scholar, born in Westport, County Mayo. Hardiman grew up in Galway and temporarily studied for the priesthood. He was appointed librarian at Queen's College, Galway, in 1848. His most significant work is *Irish Minstrelsy, or Bardic Remains of Ireland* (2 volumes, 1831), an anthology of Irish poetry which uses source material from both Irish manuscript and oral traditions. The anthology, due to its size and scope, is testament to the long and distinguished history of Irish poetry, and disputes the labels of inferiority affixed by Anglo-Irish writers and chroniclers.

# Hardy, Thomas (1840-1928)

English novelist and poet. His novels, set in rural 'Wessex' (his native West Country), portray intense human relationships played out in a harshly indifferent natural world. They include *Far From the Madding Crowd* (1874), *The Return of the Native* (1878), *The Mayor of Casterbridge* (1886), *The Woodlanders* (1887), *Tess of the d'Urbervilles* (1891), and *Jude the Obscure* (1895). His poetry includes the *Wessex Poems* (1898), the blank-verse epic of the Napoleonic Wars *The Dynasts* (1903-08), and several volumes of lyrics. Many of his books have been successfully dramatized for film and television.

Hardy was born in Dorset and trained as an architect. His first success was *Far From the Madding Crowd* and *Tess of the d'Urbervilles*, subtitled 'A Pure Woman', outraged public opinion by portraying as its heroine an unmarried woman who had a child. *Jude the Obscure* received an even more hostile reception, which reinforced Hardy's decision to confine himself to verse in his later years. In his novels Hardy dramatizes with uncompromising directness a belief in the futility of fighting against the cruelties of circumstance, the inevitability of each individual's destiny, and the passing of all beauty. His poems, many of which are now rated as highly as the best of his prose fiction, often contain a compressed version of the same theme, either by seeing ahead from a happy present to a grim future or else looking back from the bitterness of the present to a past that was full of promise.

Hardy



(Image © Billie Love)

English novelist and poet Thomas Hardy. His tragic tales, set in the fictional county of 'Wessex', received a hostile reception from the public. Attacked for his attitudes to marriage and religion, he abandoned fiction to concentrate on his poetry. He published eight volumes, including a series of elegies to his first wife Emma Gifford.

# Hardy, Thomas Duffus (1804-1878)

English scholar and archivist. He became deputy keeper at the Record Office 1861, and in 1869 acted for the Historical Manuscripts Commission. In 1848 he published *Monumenta Historica*, and he also edited many of the Rolls of early times and historical catalogues and registers.

Hardyng, John (1378-c. 1465)

English rhyming chronicler. *Hardyng's Chronicle* gives an inaccurate history of England from the earliest times down to his own day, the first edition being Lancastrian in tone, the second Yorkist.

#### Häring, Georg Wilhelm (1798-1871)

pseudonym Willibald Alexis

German novelist. He published the historical romance *Walladmor* (1823) as a translation from Walter Scott. Two more romances were published under the same pretence, *Die Geáchteten* and *Schloss Avalon* (1827). His other noted works are *Cabanis* (1832), *Der falsche Waldemar/The False Waldermar* (1842), and *Hans Jurgen und Hans Jochem* (1846-48).

## Harker, Lizzie Allen (1863-1933)

English novelist. Her delightful stories about children include *Miss Esperance and Mr Wycherley* 1908 and its sequel *Mr Wycherley's Wards* 1912, *A Romance of the Nursery* 1909, *Allegra* 1919, and *The Really Romantic Age* 1922.

## Harkness, Georgia Elma (1891-1974)

US educator and author. She taught philosophy and religion at Elmira College, New York, from 1923-37, simultaneously publishing books that developed her evangelical liberal ideas. *Holy Flame*, the first of her several volumes of devotional poetry, appeared in 1935. She later taught at Mount Holyoke and at the Pacific School of Religion in Berkeley, California. Retiring to Claremont, California, in 1961, she continued to publish a book a year until her death.

Harkness was born in Harkness, New York, and was raised on a farm. She graduated from Cornell University in 1912, and taught high school for several years before studying for her PhD at Brown University, graduating in 1923. Among her 38 books is *The Dark Night of The Soul* (1945), in which she wrote about the religious meaning of suffering.

## Harland, Henry (1861-1905)

US novelist. In 1889 he went to London, England, became a member of the Aesthetic Movement, and edited *The <u>Yellow Book</u>* 1894-97. His novels and story collections, which have a studied elegant style, include *The Cardinal's Snuff-Box* 1900.

#### Harlem Renaissance

movement in US arts and literature in the 1920s that used African-American life and culture as its subject matter. The centre of the movement was the Harlem section of New York City, where aspects of African-American culture, including jazz, flourished from the early 20th century, and attracted a new white audience.

The magazine *Crisis*, edited by W E B DuBois, was a forum for the new black consciousness. Painter and muralist Aaron Douglas, who was discovered and encouraged to portray African-American themes and culture by DuBois, became the leading visual artist. Other popular artists included William H Johnson and Palmer Hayden. Writers associated with the movement include Langston Hughes, Zora Neale Hurston, James Weldon Johnson, and Countee Cullen (1903-1946). This huge cultural renaissance also had a profound affect on music and theatre.

# Harper, Frances Ellen Watkins (1825-1911)

US social reformer, lecturer, and poet. The best-known African-American poet of the era, she also published articles against slavery and a short story, 'The Two Offers' (1859), probably the first such published work by any African-American. She lectured on a variety of social causes, stressing the need for temperance, education, and morality among her fellow African-Americans. She was active in various organizations, including the formation of the National Association for the Advancement of Colored Women (1896), and in her later years, she also took up the cause of women's rights.

Harper was born free in a slave city in Baltimore, Maryland, and was raised by an abolitionist uncle. In 1845 she published her first volume of poetry. She taught sewing in the early 1850s, and in 1854 she gave her first antislavery lecture; she would continue to give such lectures throughout the Northeast. She also gave recitations of her poems, and published her second volume, *Poems on Miscellaneous Subjects* (1854). Her extensive writings, including several volumes of poetry, a travel book, and a novel, no longer have much literary status but they were important in providing a new image of and for African-Americans.

## Harper, Michael (Steven) (1938-)

US poet and writer. He wrote poems linked to the sensibilities of African-Americans, as in *Healing Song for the Inner Ear* (1985). Harper was born in New York City; He studied at City College, California State, Los Angeles, the University of Iowa, and the University of Illinois. He taught at many institutions, notably at Brown University (1983), and lived in Providence, Rhode Island.

# Harris, Benjamin (1673-c. 1720)

English journalist and publisher. Frequently arrested for his activities as a publisher, he fled from England to America in 1685 and set up a bookstore in Boston, Massachusetts. There he published a popular almanac, the *New England Primer*, among other books, as well as *Publick Occurrences Both Foreign and Domestick* (on 25 September 1690), the first American newspaper; this was suppressed after the first issue. In 1695 he returned to England, where he remained active.

## Harris, Frank (1856-1931)

#### pen-name of James Thomas Harris

Irish journalist, later in the USA, who wrote colourful biographies of Oscar Wilde and George Bernard Shaw, and an autobiography, *My Life and Loves* 1926, originally banned in the UK and the USA for its sexual content.

## Harris, Joel Chandler (1848-1908)

US author. He wrote tales narrated by the former slave 'Uncle Remus', based on black folklore and involving the characters Brer Rabbit, Brer Fox, Brer Wolf, and Brer Bear.

## Harris, Thomas (1940-)

US suspense and crime novelist. His highly successful novels include *Black Sunday* (1975), *Red Dragon* (1981, filmed as *Manhunter* in 1986 and *Red Dragon* in 2002), *The Silence of the Lambs* (1988, filmed 1991), and *Hannibal* (1999, filmed 2001).

Born in Jackson, Tennessee, Harris worked on the Waco, Texas, newspaper *News-Tribune*, before moving to New York City to work for the Associated Press as a crime reporter. His second novel, *Red Dragon*, introduced the enigmatic character of serial killer Hannibal Lecter. *The Silence of the Lambs* continued his story and became an Academy-Award winning film.

## Harrison, Mary St Leger

real name of English novelist Lucas Malet.

# Harrison, Tony (1937-)

English poet, translator, and dramatist. He caused controversy with his poem 'V' (1987), dealing with the desecration of his parents' grave by Liverpool football supporters, and the play *The Blasphemers' Banquet* (1989), which attacked (in the name of the writers Molière, Voltaire, Byron, and Omar Khayyam) the death sentence on British writer Salman <u>Rushdie</u>. He also translated and adapted the works of French writer Molière.

Born in Leeds and educated at Leeds university, Harrison's poetry includes *Selected Poems* (expanded edition; 1987), *The Gaze of the Gorgon* (1992; Whitbread Prize for Poetry), *Black Daisies for the Bride* (1993), *The Shadow of Hiroshima and Other Film Poems* (1995; winner of the William Heinemann Prize), and *Laureate's Block* (2000). *Plays 3* was published in 1996.

## Harry the Minstrel

#### or Henry the Minstrel or Blind Harry

Scottish poet of the later 15th century. He collected popular traditions about the Scottish national hero William Wallace in *Wallace*, a poem of about 12,000 lines in heroic couplets. Written as nationalist propaganda, it is unusually modern in its psychology.

# Harte, Bret (1836-1902)

#### born Francis Brett Harte

US writer. He became a goldminer at 18 before founding the *Overland Monthly* (1868) in which he wrote short stories of the pioneer West, for example 'The Outcasts of Poker Flat' and 'The Luck of Roaring Camp', and poems such as *The Heathen Chinee*.

In 1871, with his popularity at its height, he went East and signed a contract with *The Atlantic Monthly* for \$10,000 for 12 stories a year, the most money then offered to a US writer. He entered a creative slump, however, and from 1878 to 1885 served as US consul in Germany and Scotland, where he entertained the literary circles. He then settled permanently in England.

# Hartley, L(eslie) P(oles) (1895-1972)

English novelist and short-story writer. His early works explored the sinister. His

chief works are the trilogy *The Shrimp and the Anemone* (1944), *The Sixth Heaven* (1946), and *Eustace and Hilda* (1947; Tait Black Memorial Prize), on the intertwined lives of a brother and sister. Later works include *The Go-Between* (1953; filmed 1971) and *The Hireling* (1957), which explore sexual relationships between classes.

Hartley was born in Peterborough and educated at Oxford University. During World War I he held a commission in the Norfolk Regiment. His first novel was *Simonetta Perkins* (1925), followed by a collection of stories, *The Killing Bottle* (1932). Other novels include *The Boat* (1949), *My Fellow Devils* (1951), *A Perfect Woman* (1955), *The Brickfield* (1964), and *My Sister's Keeper* (1970). *The Complete Short Stories* was published in 1973.

## Hartmann, Carl Sadakichi (c. 1867-1944)

Japanese-born US writer art critic. He wrote a number of free-verse plays, poetry, and art criticism. Hartmann was born in Nagasaki, Japan. His Japanese mother died shortly after his birth, and he was brought up by his uncle in Hamburg, Germany. He emigrated to Philadelphia, Pennsylvania in 1882, where he became Walt Whitman's assistant (1884-85). Hartmann then returned to Europe, where, among other activities, he was associated with Stéphane Mallarmé. He became a US citizen in 1894, and settled in California. Known as the 'King of Bohemia', he sired many children by various women, and died in poverty.

#### Harvey, Gabriel (c. 1545-1630)

English poet and critic. His views on literature led him to attack the dramatist Robert Greene in *Four Letters and Certain Sonnets* (1592), and to conduct an acrimonious controversy with dramatist and satirist Thomas Nashe, to which he contributed *Four Letters* (1592) and *Pierce's Supererogation* (1593). He was a lifelong friend of the poet Edmund Spenser.

#### Harwood, Gwen (1920-1995)

Australian poet and librettist. The first volume in her own name - *Poems* - appeared in 1963, though her works had been published previously under various pseudonyms. Harwood's verse is characterized by a high degree of literary polish, a sardonic wit, and sensuousness.

Her libretti are 'The Fall of the House of Usher' 1965 and 'Lenz' (1973), both to music by Larry Sitsky, and 'Commentaries on Living' (1972), to music by James Penberthy.

## Hašek, Jaroslav (1883-1923)

Czech writer. His masterpiece is an anti-authoritarian comic satire on military life under Austro-Hungarian rule, *The <u>Good Soldier Svejk</u>* (1921-23). During World War I he deserted to Russia, and eventually joined the Bolsheviks.

## Hathaway, Anne (1556-1623)

Englishwoman, daughter of a yeoman farmer, who married William <u>Shakespeare</u> in 1582. She was born at Shottery, near Stratford, where her cottage can still be seen.

## Havlícek, Karel (1821-1856)

#### pseudonym Havel Borovský

Czech journalist, politician, and satirical poet. He published two selections of incisive political essays and articles in the 1840s, and founded the first Czech daily paper, *Národní noviny*, in 1848. Havlícek's most original work was a collection of satirical poems, *Krest Svatého Vladimíra/The Conversion of St Vladimir* 1876, which attacked state bureaucracy and the Roman Catholic Church.

Along with the Czech nationalist historian František Palacký, Havlícek advocated a system of autonomous Slav states within the Austro-Hungarian empire, and feared Russian as much as Prussian expansion. His critical stance led to his arrest and trial for subversive activities in 1851; he was exiled to the Tirol for four years.

## Hawes, Stephen (c. 1475-c. 1523)

English poet. His principal works are two long moral allegories, *The Example of Virtue* (1504) and *The Pastime of Pleasure* (1509) written in the tradition of John Lydgate.

## Hawke, Ethan (1970-)

US actor and novelist. The combination of his intelligent and intense portrayals of often conflicted characters and classic leading man looks has made him hugely popular. He often played sensitive, soulful, angst-ridden leading men, for example in Ben Stiller's Generation X comedy *Reality Bites* (1994), Richard Linklater's romantic dramas *Before Sunrise* (1995) and its sequel *Before Sunset* (2004), and *Great Expectations* (1998). He has written two novels, *The Hottest State* (1997) and the bestselling *Ash Wednesday* (2002).

He first reached wide audiences with his role as a shy adolescent in the Peter Weir drama *Dead Poets Society* (1989). He received critical acclaim for the title role in a modern film adaptation of *Hamlet* (2000).

## Hawker, Robert Stephen (1803-1875)

English poet and antiquary. He was ordained 1831 and became vicar of Morwenstow on the Cornish coast 1834. Hawker's ballads were direct and simple, composed in a true spirit of antiquity. Best known is his rousing ballad based on the old Cornish refrain *And shall Trelawny die?*. Other pieces are *Tendrils by Reuben* 1821, *Records of the Western Shore* 1832, *Reeds Shaken with the Wind* 1843, and *Quest of the Sangraal* 1864.

# Hawkes, John Clendennin Burne, Jr (1925-1998)

US novelist. His writing was characterized by a Gothic, macabre violence, nightmarish landscapes, and oblique plotting. His novels included *The Cannibal* 1949, dealing with the horror of authoritarian power in Nazi Germany; *The Lime Twig* 1961, a thriller set in post-war London; and *Second Skin* 1964, a first-person recollection set on a tropical island.

His later novels became more accessible and include *Travesty* 1976, a suicide note in the form of a monologue; *The Passion Artist* 1979, narrating a widower's fantastic experiences in a European city; *Whistlejacket* 1988, which combines photography, anatomy, painting, and fox-hunting into a metaphysical thriller, and *Hawkes Scrapbook* 1991.

## Hawkesworth, John (c. 1715-1773)

English miscellaneous writer. In 1744 he succeeded Dr Johnson as compiler of the *Gentleman's Magazine*. In 1752 he started, with Johnson and others, *The Adventurer*. In 1755 he published *The Works of Jonathan Swift*, with historical notes and explanations, and prepared the account of James Cook's first voyage, forming part of his own publication, *Voyages*.

## Haworth

moorland village in West Yorkshire, England, 5 km/3 mi south of Keighley; population (2001 est) 5,000. The writers Charlotte, Emily, and Anne Brontë lived at the parsonage here from their earliest years. The old church of Haworth has been

restored, and contains the graves of Charlotte and Emily Brontë. The parsonage is now the Brontë museum.

#### Haworth Parsonage

home of the English novelists Charlotte, Emily, and Anne <u>Brontë</u>. Their father, Patrick Brontë, was vicar of Haworth, a hillside village on the edge of the Yorkshire moors, from 1820 until his death in 1861. *Wuthering Heights, Jane Eyre*, and *Agnes Grey* were written here in 1847. The house was given to the Brontë Society in 1928 and is now a Brontë museum. Haworth is now part of the town of Keighley.

## Hawthorne, Nathaniel (1804-1864)

US writer. He was the author of American literature's first great classic novel, *The Scarlet Letter* (1850). Set in 17th-century Puritan Boston, it tells the powerful allegorical story of a 'fallen woman' and her daughter who are judged guilty according to men's, not nature's, laws. He wrote three other novels, including *The House of the Seven Gables* (1851), and many short stories, a form he was instrumental in developing, including *Tanglewood Tales* (1853), classic Greek legends retold for children.

Hawthorne's fiction is marked by its haunting symbolism and its exploration of guilt, sin, and other complex moral and psychological issues. It had a profound effect on writers of his own time, notably his friend Herman Melville, and continues to influence writers.

#### Hay, Gilbert (lived 1456)

Scottish poet and translator. He made translations from French which are among the earliest examples of Scottish vernacular prose. They are the *Buke of the Law of Armys, Buke of the Order of Knichthood,* and *Buke of the Governaunce of Princes.* 

#### Hay, lan (1876-1952)

#### pseudonym of John Hay Beith

English writer. He published light and humorous novels, including *Pip* 1907, *A Safety Match* 1911, and *A Knight on Wheels* 1914, and wrote the stirring war books *The First Hundred Thousand* 1915 and *Carrying On* 1917. He also wrote plays.

## Hayden, Robert (Earl) (1913-1980)

#### adopted name of Asa Bundy Sheffey

US poet. He wrote powerful poetry, sometimes using African-American themes, as in *The Night-Blooming Cereus* (1972). Hayden was born in Detroit, Michigan. He studied at University of Michigan, and taught there from 1969.

## Hayley, William (1745-1820)

English poet and biographer. He became known with his 'Essay on History' 1780, 'Essay on Painting' 1781, 'Essay on Epic Poetry' 1782, and his poem in six cantos, *The Triumph of Temper* 1781. His most memorable work is his *Life of Cowper* 1803-04. He also wrote plays and the lives of Milton 1796 and the painter George Romney 1809.

## Hayward, Abraham (1801-1884)

English author. His best-known work is *The Art of Dining* 1852. He wrote for several magazines on many subjects, and his *Essays* were collected 1858, 1873, and 1874. In *More about Junius* 1868 he wrote against the theory that Philip Francis was Junius, and he edited the autobiography of Mrs Piozzi 1861.

# Haywood, Eliza (1693-1756)

#### born Eliza Fowler

English novelist, dramatist, editor, and actor. She made her acting debut in Dublin 1715 and published a novel, *Love in Excess* (1719-20). She acted in her own comedy, *A Wife to be Lett* (1723), and in other plays, until the Licensing Act of 1737. She wrote further romantic novels in which the young heroine is perpetually at risk, but latterly turned to fiction of a more thoughtful nature in *The History of Miss Betsy Thoughtless* (1751) and *Jemmy and Jenny Jessamy* (1753).

## Hazard, Paul (1878-1944)

French literary critic. He wrote about European literature in such works as *La Crise de la conscience européenne, 1680-1715/The European Mind* 1935 and *La Pensée européenne au XVIII<sup>e</sup> siècle de Montesquieu à Lessing/European Thought in the Eighteenth Century from Montesquieu to Lessing,* published posthumously 1946.

## Hazlitt, William (1778-1830)

English essayist and critic. His work is characterized by invective, scathing irony, an intuitive critical sense, and a gift for epigram. His essays include 'Characters of Shakespeare's Plays' (1817), 'Lectures on the English Poets' (1818-19), 'English Comic Writers' (1819), and 'Dramatic Literature of the Age of Elizabeth' (1820).

Other works are *Table Talk* (1821-22); *The Spirit of the Age* (1825), literary studies in which he argues that the personality of the writer is germane to a criticism of what they write; and *Liber Amoris* (1823), in which he revealed aspects of his love life.

## HD

US poet and writer; see Hilda Doolittle.

## Head, Bessie Emery (1937-1986)

South African writer who took Botswanan citizenship in 1979. Living in exile in Botswana from 1964, Head wrote fiction concerned with issues of personal and national identity, incorporating an unidealized sense of social and communal history. Her novels include *When Rain Clouds Gather* (1969), *Maru* (1971), and *A Question of Power* (1973). Among her collections of short stories is *The Collector of Treasures and Other Botswana Village Tales* (1977).

## Heaney, Seamus Justin (1939-)

Irish poet and critic. He has written powerful verse about the political situation in Northern Ireland and about Ireland's cultural heritage. The technical mastery and linguistic and thematic richness of Heaney's work have gained an international audience, and have exercised a powerful influence on contemporary poetry. He was professor of poetry at Oxford University 1989-94, and was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1995.

His collections of poetry include *Death of a Naturalist* (1966), *Field Work* (1979), *The Haw Lantern* (1987), *The Spirit Level* (1996; Whitbread Book of the Year), and *Opened Ground: Poems 1966-1996* (1998). Critical works include *The Redress of Poetry* (1995). His *Beowulf: A New Translation* (1999), a modern version of the Anglo-Saxon epic, won the Whitbread Book of the Year award.

# Hearn, (Patrick) Lafcadio (Tessima Carlos) (1850-1904)

Greek-born US writer and translator. He lived in Japan from 1890 and became a Japanese citizen. His many books on Japanese life and customs introduced the country to many Western readers, for example, *Glimpses of Unfamiliar Japan* (1893) and *In Ghostly Japan* (1904).

A journalist, Hearn was sent to Japan to write an article for a US magazine and never left. His sympathetic understanding of the country and its culture made him accepted and appreciated by the Japanese, and his writings are still widely read. From 1896 he taught English literature at Tokyo University.

# Heart of Darkness

short novel by Joseph <u>Conrad</u>, published in 1902. Marlow, the narrator, tells of his journey by boat into the African interior to meet a company agent, Kurtz, who has adopted local customs and uses barbaric methods to exercise power over the indigenous people.

## Heart of Midlothian, The

novel (1818) by Walter <u>Scott</u>. It centres around Effie Deans, imprisoned for alleged infanticide, and her half-sister, Jeanie Deans, who travels to London and obtains for her a pardon from Queen Caroline. The supposedly murdered child is revealed to have been kidnapped and brutalized; in ignorance, he kills the father who is searching for him. With its convincing and compassionate character studies and substantial social background it is probably the most accessible and lasting of all Scott's novels.

# Hebbel, Christian Friedrich (1813-1863)

German poet and dramatist. His chief works are the plays *Maria Magdalena* 1844, *Julia* 1851, *Agnes Bernauer* 1855, *Gyges und sein Ring* 1856, and *Die Nibelungen* 1862. His lyric poems are included in *Gedichte* 1841-48 and *Mutter und Kind* 1859.

Hebbel's childhood of poverty left a lasting impression, and most of his works are gloomy and depressingly realistic. His tragedies are very powerful and show a fine sense of dramatic situation; they deal mostly with the struggles of passionate personalities.

# Hecataeus (lived 6th-5th century BC)

Greek historian and geographer from Miletus. An intellectual successor to the early lonian philosophers, Hecataeus wrote what was probably the first historical work of a genealogical kind. He was a major influence on the historian Herodotus.

## Hecht, Anthony (Evan) (1923-)

US poet. His work is distinguished by its classical and mythological images, as in *Millions of Strange Shadows* (1977). Hecht was born in New York City. He studied at Bard College, New York, and Columbia University, gaining his Masters degree in 1950. He has taught at several institutions, notably Rochester University, New York (from 1967).

## Hecko, František (1905-1960)

Slovak novelist. His greatest work, *Cervené víno/Red Wine* 1948, is a chronicle of a family in a Slovak village. His other major work, *Drevená dedina/The Wooden Village* 1951, is a work of socialist realism.

## Hedda Gabler

play by Henrik Ibsen, first produced 1891. Trapped in small-town society, Hedda Gabler takes out her spiritual and sexual frustrations on everyone from her ineffectual academic husband to the reformed alcoholic writer Lövborg. When her mean-spirited revenge backfires, she commits suicide.

## Heidenstam, Verner von (1859-1940)

Swedish poet and prose writer. His verse, Vallfart och vandringsår/Pilgrimage and Years of Wandering (1888), Dikter/Poems (1895), and Nya Dikter/New Poems (1915), abounds in colour, exoticism, and joie de vivre. Similar qualities are to be found in the epic Hans Alienus (1892), a mixture of prose and verse. His novel Endymion (1889) is a story of the East and Karolinerna/The Carlists (1897-98) contains a collection of tales about Charles XII. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1916.

novel for children by the Swiss writer Johanna Spyri (1827-1901), published 1881 in Germany. Heidi, an orphan girl, shares a simple life with her grandfather high on a mountain, bringing happiness to those around her. Three years spent in Frankfurt as companion to a crippled girl, Clara, convince Heidi that city life is not for her and she returns to her mountain home.

#### Heijermans, Herman (1864-1924)

Dutch author and dramatist. He also used the pseudonym Samuel Falkland. His international reputation is as the author of naturalist tragedies, exposing exploitation in the fisheries with *Op hoop van zegen* 1900, in the army in *Het pantser* 1901, on the land in *Ora et labora* 1902, in the almshouses in *Bloeimaand* 1903, and in the coalmines in *Gluck auf* 1911.

#### Heike monogatari

#### (Japanese 'tales of the Heike')

Japanese chronicle, written down in the 14th century but based on oral legend describing events that took place 200 years earlier, recounting the struggle for control of the country between the rival Genji (Minamoto) and Heike (Taira) clans. The conflict ended the Heian period and resulted in the introduction of the first shogunate (military dictatorship). Many Japanese dramas are based on material from the chronicle.

## Heilbrun, Carolyn (1926-)

US writer (under the pen-name Amanda Cross) and teacher. She published scholarly works, but is best known as a writer of popular mystery novels featuring Kate Fansler, also an urban college professor, as in *A Trap for Fools* (1989). Heilbrun was born Carolyn Gold in East Orange, New Jersey. She studied at Wellesley College and Columbia University, gaining her PhD in 1959. She was a visiting lecturer and professor at many institutions, and taught English at Brooklyn College (1959-60) and Columbia (1960-93).

#### Heilprin, Michael (1823-1888)

Polish-born US scholar and encyclopedist. He was engaged in 1858 to work on the *New American Cyclopaedia*, and this thorough revision of the *American Cyclopaedia* (1872-76) owes much to his scholarship. He wrote regularly for the *Nation* and contributed notably to its reputation for accuracy. Because much of his writing was

anonymous, his own reputation, though excellent, was limited in extent. His only published book is a two-volume study of Old Testament poetry, *The Historical Poetry of the Ancient Hebrews* (1879-80).

Heilprin was born in Piotrow, Poland; Educated solely by his father, he showed an early propensity for learning. His family removed to Hungary in 1842 to escape Russian oppression and he soon mastered Magyar. His revolutionary poetry wa widely popular before the 1848 Hungarian Revolution and after the collapse of the Revolution he fled to avoid imprisonment. He emigrated to the USA in 1856 and took an interest in politics and the abolition of slavery.

## Heine, Heinrich (Christian Johann) (1797-1856)

German Romantic poet and journalist. He wrote *Reisebilder* (1826-31), blending travel writing and satire, and *Das Buch der Lieder/The Book of Songs* (1827). Disillusioned by undercurrents of anti-Semitism and antiliberal censorship, he severed his ties with Germany and from 1831 lived mainly in Paris. His *Neue Gedichte/New Poems* appeared in 1844. He excelled in both the Romantic lyric and satire. Franz Schubert and Robert Schumann set many of his lyrics to music.

His first volume of verse, *Gedichte/Poems*, appeared 1821, followed by *Lyrisches Intermezzo* (1823). In Paris he wrote penetrating political essays and turned towards satire; for example, *Deutschland* (1844), a political satire in verse. His *Atta Troll* (1847) has been described as 'the swansong of Romanticism'.

## Heinlein, Robert A(nson) (1907-1988)

US science fiction writer. Associated with the pulp magazines of the 1940s, he wrote the militaristic novel *Starship Troopers* (1959) and the utopian cult novel *Stranger in a Strange Land* (1961). His work is noted for its technical knowledge and detailed settings, and helped to increase the legitimacy of science fiction as a literary genre. In 1969 he was the announcer for the first *Apollo* lunar landing.

Heinlein was born in Butler, Missouri. He studied at the University of Missouri in 1925, graduated from Annapolis in 1929, and did graduate work in physics at the University of California, Los Angeles in 1934. He began writing science fiction in 1947, using the pen-names Anson MacDonald, Lyle Monroe, John Riverside, Caleb Saunders, and Simon York. In addition to his writing, he also worked as an engineer and owned a silver mine.

## Heliade-Radulescu, Ion (1802-1872)

Romanian writer, linguist, and translator. He helped to found Societatea literara (the Literary Society) in 1826 and three years later brought out the first journal in

Wallachia (now part of Romania) to appear in Romanian, *Curierul românesc*. As the owner of the only private printing press in Bucharest, he published works of his contemporaries as well as his own and popularized the linguistic innovations that were to shape modern literary Romanian.

#### Heliand, The

#### (Old English Haelend 'Saviour')

ninth-century Old Saxon alliterative poem on the life of Christ, based on Tatian's *Diatessaron. The Heliand* and fragments of a version of the story of Genesis are all that survive of Old Saxon poetic literature, both probably by the same learned poet, working at Fulda Abbey.

#### Heliodorus

Ancient Greek novelist, born at Emesa, Syria. His *Aethiopica* (in ten books), a romance set in Delphi and Egypt, is generally considered the best of the ancient novels; it describes in poetic prose the loves of Theagenes and Charicleia. It was popular among the Byzantines, who recognized its psychological insight and narrative skill, and was translated in the 16th century.

#### Heller, Joseph (1923-1999)

US novelist. He drew on his experiences in the US air force in World War II to write his best-selling <u>Catch-22</u> (1961), satirizing war, the conspiracy of bureaucratic control, and the absurdism of history. A film based on the book appeared in 1970.

His other works include the novels *Something Happened* (1974), *Good As Gold* (1979), and *Closing Time* (1994); and the plays *We Bombed in New Haven* (1968) and *Clevinger's Trial* (1974). A novel, *Portrait of an Artist as an Old Man*, was published posthumously in 2000.

## Helps, Arthur (1813-1875)

English essayist and historian. *Essays Written in the Intervals of Business* appeared 1841, *Friends in Council* 1847-59, and *Conversations on War and General Culture* 1871. On history he wrote *The Conquerors of the New World* 1848-52 and *The Spanish Conquest in America* 1855-61. He also wrote biographies of Bartolomé de las Casas, Columbus, Pizarro, and Cortés. Knighted 1872.

## Hemans, Felicia Dorothea (1793-1835)

#### born Felicia Dorothea Browne

English poet. Her works ran into numerous editions, much read by Victorian young ladies. They include *The Forest Sanctuary* (1825), *Records of Woman* (1828), and *Songs of the Affections* (1830). Her work is not strong, but it is occasionally graceful and pleasing; some of her pathetic and sentimental poems became very popular. A complete edition of her works was published posthumously in 1839.

## Hemingford (or Hemingburgh), Walter (died c. 1347)

English chronicler and sub-prior of St Mary's, Gisburn, Yorkshire. His *De Gestis Regum Angliae* extends from 1066 to 1346.

# Hemingway, Ernest (Miller) (1899-1961)

US writer. War, bullfighting, and fishing are used symbolically in his work to represent honour, dignity, and primitivism - prominent themes in his short stories and novels, which include *A Farewell to Arms* (1929), *For Whom the Bell Tolls* (1941), and *The Old Man and the Sea* (1952; Pulitzer Prize). His deceptively simple writing style attracted many imitators. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1954.

Hemingway was born in Oak Park, Illinois, and in his youth developed a passion for hunting and adventure. He became a journalist and was wounded while serving on a volunteer ambulance crew in Italy in World War I. In 1921 he settled in Paris, where he met the writers Gertrude <u>Stein</u> and Ezra <u>Pound</u>. His style was influenced by Stein, who also introduced him to bullfighting, a theme in his first novel, *Fiesta (The Sun Also Rises)* (1927), and the memoir *Death in the Afternoon* (1932). *A Farewell to Arms* deals with wartime experiences on the Italian front, and *For Whom the Bell Tolls* has a Spanish Civil War setting. He served as war correspondent both in that conflict and in Europe during World War II. His last years were spent mainly in Cuba. He committed suicide.

## Hemon, Louis (1880-1913)

French novelist. He is best known for *Maria Chapdelaine* 1916, based on his experiences among the settlers of French Canada. Among his other works, also published posthumously, are the tales *La belle que voilà*, *Colin-Maillard*, *Battling Malone*, *pugiliste*, and *Monsieur Ripois et la Nemesis*.

## Henley, William Ernest (1849-1903)

English poet, critic, and editor. His finest work is *London Voluntaries* 1893, a collection of unconventional but stimulating and challenging poems. He was a friend of Robert Louis Stevenson, with whom he collaborated in *Deacon Brodie* 1880 and other plays. He edited the *Scots Observer* 1889.

## Hennique, Léon (1851-1935)

French writer. A follower of the Naturalist school of writers, his novels include *La Dévouée* 1878, *Un Caractère* 1889, *L'Argent d'autrui* 1893, and *Minnie Brandon* 1899. He also wrote plays, such as *Jacques Damour* 1887 and *La mort du duc d'Enghien* 1888.

## Henri, Adrian Maurice (1932-2000)

English poet and painter. In the 1960s he became known as one of the 'Liverpool Poets' with Roger <u>McGough</u> and Brian Patten. A compilation of his work was published in the best-selling *The Mersey Sound* (1967). His collections include *Tonight at Noon* (1968), *City* (1968), and *From the Loveless Motel* (1980).

# Henry, O (1862-1910)

#### pen-name of William Sydney Porter

US short-story writer. His stories are written in a colloquial style and employ skilled construction with surprise endings. Among his collections are *Cabbages and Kings* (1904), *The Four Million* (including 'The Gift of the Magi', 1906), *The Voice of the City* (1908), and *Rolling Stones* (1913).

Born in Greensboro, North Carolina, he left home at an early age. Settling in Texas, he was convicted of embezzlement in 1899 and served several years in prison. It was then that he began to write short stories under the distinctive pen name 'O Henry'. After his release in 1902, he moved to New York City, where he contributed stories to the *New York World*.

# Henry of Huntingdon (c. 1080-1155)

English historian. He became archdeacon of Huntingdon about 1110. His Historia

Anglorum covers the period of English history from Julius Caesar until the accession of Henry II and is remarkable for his Latin translations of popular legendary songs otherwise unrecorded.

#### Henryson, Robert (c. 1430-c. 1505)

Scottish poet. His works include versions of Aesop's fables (*The Moral Fables of Esope the Phrygian*), an early pastoral, *Robene and Makyne*, and *The Testament of Cresseid*, a work once attributed to Geoffrey Chaucer, which continues Chaucer's story of *Troilus and Criseyde* by depicting the betrayal and wretched afterlife of Troilus.

## Henry the Minstrel

another name for Harry the Minstrel, Scottish poet.

#### herbal

a book describing the medicinal properties of plants, often including illustrations. The earliest herbals are described by Pliny the Elder in the 1st century BC. In the Renaissance, the earliest printed herbal dates from 1477. A whole series followed in the 16th century; including Otto Brunfels'*Herbarum Vivae Eicones* (1530-36), Jerome Bock (1539), and Leonhart Fuchs (1542).

# Herbelot de Molainville, Barthélemy d' (1625-1695)

French orientalist. In 1692 Louis XIV appointed him professor of Syriac in the Collège Royal. His epoch-making *Bibliothèque orientale* 1697 contains long articles on Islamic religion, history, geography, ethnography, and literature.

# Herbert, A(lan) P(atrick) (1890-1971)

English politician and writer. He was an Independent member of Parliament for Oxford University 1935-50, author of several novels, including *The Water Gipsies* (1930), and a contributor to the humorous magazine *Punch*.

## Herbert, Frank Patrick (1920-1986)

US science fiction writer. He was the author of the *Dune* series from 1965 (filmed by David Lynch 1984), large-scale adventure stories containing serious ideas about ecology and religion.

## Herbert, George (1593-1633)

English poet. His volume of religious poems, *The Temple*, appeared in 1633, shortly before his death. His intense though quiet poems embody his religious struggles ('The Temper', 'The Collar') or poignantly contrast mortality and eternal truth ('Vertue', 'Life') in a deceptively simple language.

Herbert was born at Montgomery Castle in Wales, and educated at Cambridge University, where he was made a fellow in 1615. In 1619 he caught the attention of James I and seemed bent on a secular career; for a time he followed the court, making many distinguished friends, but the death of the king and of his patrons ended his chances of court preferment. He joined the church in 1626, was ordained priest in 1630, and became vicar of Bemerton, Wiltshire, where he wrote his religious poems. His chief prose work, *A Priest to the Temple*, was first printed in his *Remains* (1652), and he also made a collection of proverbs, *Jacula Prudentium* (1651).

# Herbert, Thomas (1606-1682)

English author and traveller. He published *Description of the Persian Monarchy* 1634, reprinted as *Some Yeares Travels into divers parts of Asia and Afrique* 1638, and *Threnodia Carolina* (reminiscences of the captivity of Charles I), reprinted as *Memoirs of the Last Two Years of the Reign* 1702 and 1813. Baronet 1660.

# Herbert, Zbigniew (1924-1998)

Polish poet and essayist. His poetry, avant-garde, ironic, and formally accomplished, achieved classical precision and control amidst and against the observed chaos of Poland's human suffering. He published few poems in the communist-inspired epoch of socialist realism (1949-54) but his collection *Struna swiatla/Chord of Light* (1956) was soon followed by *Hermes, pies i gwiazda/Hermes, a Dog and a Star* 1957 and *Studium przedmiotu/A Study of the Object* 1961. He also wrote plays for broadcasting and essays on art, culture, and history. Amongst his greatest accomplishments are volumes *Wiersze wybrane/Selected Poems* (1977), *Raport z oblezonego miasta/Report from the Besieged City* (1987), *Pan Cogito/Mr Cogito* (1993), and *Epilog burzy/Epilogue after the Storm* (1998).

## Herbst, Josephine (Frey) (1892-1969)

US writer. In 1933 she published *Pity is Not Enough*, the first volume of her trilogy based on her own family's history from the Civil War to the Great Depression. During the 1930s, the world's economic, political, and social problems led her to writing journalism and to identifying with radical views and circles. Herbst went to Spain briefly in 1937 to report on the civil war there, and back in the USA she was on the fringes of the Communist Party. In 1942 she was fired from a government job because of her leftist associations.

Herbst was born in Sioux City, Iowa. From a poor family, she worked at odd jobs as she went from college to college, finally gaining her BA at the University of California, Berkeley (1918). She moved to New York City and fell in with the literary set there. Herbst had an affair with the dramatist Maxwell Anderson, and then went off to Berlin and Paris to write. She returned to the USA in 1924 with the writer, John Hermann, whom she married; they settled with in a farmhouse in Erwinna, Pennsylvania. The divorced 1940, and initially in the post-war years she became a near recluse in her Erwinna home. As she resumed her writing, however, she gained a new circle of admirers.

# Herd, David (1732-1810)

Scottish author. His chief work is his Ancient and Modern Scottish Songs, Heroic Ballads, etc, collected from Memory, Tradition and Ancient Authors 1776.

# Herder, Johann Gottfried von (1744-1803)

German poet, critic, and philosopher. Herder's critical writings indicated his intuitive rather than reasoning trend of thought. He collected folk songs of all nations in *Stimmen der Völker in Liedern* (1778-79), and in the *Ideen zur Philosophie der Geschichte der Menschheit/Outlines of a Philosophy of the History of Man* (1784-91) he outlined the stages of human cultural development. Herder gave considerable impetus to the *Sturm und Drang* Romantic movement in German literature.

Born in Mohrungen, eastern Prussia, he studied theology at Königsberg, where he was influenced by the philosopher Immanuel Kant. In 1770 he met Goethe and became one of the leaders of the *Sturm und Drang* movement, publishing a journal with Goethe and others to diffuse the new ideas. In 1776 he became court preacher at Weimar, where he published his collection of folksongs; a celebrated work on Hebrew poetry, *Vom Geist der ebräischen Poesie* (1782-83); and his masterpiece, *Ideen zur Philosophie der Geschichte der Menschheit*.

## Heredia, José-María de (1842-1905)

French poet. He became a member of *Les <u>Parnassiens</u>* who regarded form as being of supreme importance. His exquisitely fashioned sonnets, contained in *Les Trophées* 1893, prove his power as a word artist as well as his mastership of verse.

# Herford, Oliver (1863-1935)

US humorous writer. Among some 50 books of fanciful nonsense, he published *Pen and Inklings* 1892, *Cupid's Encyclopaedia* 1910, and *This Giddy Globe* 1919.

## Hergesheimer, Joseph (1880-1954)

US novelist. *The Three Black Pennys* 1917 and *Tubal Cain* 1918 are studies in the triumph of personality. *Java Head* 1919 and *The Bright Shawl* 1922 have oriental settings, and *The Foolscap Rose* 1934 is a historical novel.

Hergesheimer also wrote many short stories, including 'Tol'able David', which appears in the volume *Happy End* 1919.

## Herling-Grudzinski, Gustaw (1919-2000)

Polish novelist and essayist. An anti-Nazi journalist in 1939, he was deported to a Russian labour camp during the war, an experience reflected in the juxtaposed horror and beauty of his distinguished autobiographical novel *Inny swiat/A World Apart* (1953). He later fought with the Allies and eventually settled in Italy. Some of his stories, humane but detached, with medieval settings, were collected and translated as *The Island* (1967). His work was officially suppressed in Poland until 1988, but later became a compulsory text on the Polish school syllabus.

## Hermogenes (lived 2nd century)

Greek rhetorician, a native of Tarsus and child prodigy. Sections of his *Art of Speaking* which survive are 'On Legal Issues', 'On the Invention of Arguments', 'On the Various Kinds of Style', 'On the Method of Effective Speaking', and 'Rhetorical Exercises'.

Argentine poet and journalist. His epic poem *El gaucho Martin Fierro/The Gaucho Martin Fierro* 1878 tells of an outlawed cattle herder. A sequel, *La vuelta de Martin Fierro/The Return of Martin Fierro*, appeared in 1879.

In the late 1860s Hernandez founded and edited a newspaper, *Revista del Rio de la Plata*. From 1870 to 1872 he was a follower of the insurgent Lopez Jordan.

#### Hernández, Miguel (1910-1942)

Spanish poet. He showed an astonishing gift for imitating poetic movements of the 1930s, for example in *Perito en lunas* 1933, and the love sonnet of the 17th century, in *El rayo que no cesa* 1936. His conversion to communism produced vigorous prorepublican war poetry, *Viento del pueblo* 1937, and a number of socially oriented plays. He was arrested 1939 and imprisoned for his activities during the Civil War, producing some of his finest poems in wretched circumstances; these were later collected in *Romancero de ausencias*.

#### Herodianus, Aelius (lived 2nd century AD)

#### English Herodian

Greek historian. He was the author of a history of the Roman empire from the death of the emperor Marcus Aurelius to the accession of Gordian AD 238.

#### Herondas

#### or Herodas

Greek author of mimes. Eight short works survive, each about 100 lines long, revealing a realistic eye for seedy transactions and human motives. It is not clear whether they were intended for performance or for reading, but they reflect the theatrical qualities of the Greek mime, a form based on the caricature of types and bizarre situations. They were written in racy Greek and in a curious limping metre, suited to the dialogue of characters such as a schoolteacher, a temple attendant, and a shoemaker. Although Herondas's name had long been known, fragments only had survived until a papyrus manuscript discovered in El Fayum, Egypt, was published 1891.

#### Hero of Our Time, A

novel by the Russian writer Mikhail Lermontov, published 1840. It consists of five

stories about a bitter, cynical nobleman and officer, whose attitude is contrasted with that of an older, dutiful officer.

## Herr, Michael (1940-)

US writer. <u>Dispatches</u> (1977), his book of Vietnam reportage, became an international best-seller, praised for its bold and savage depiction of war. Co-author of several screenplays, including *Apocalypse Now* (1979), *Full Metal Jacket* (1987), and *The Rainmaker* (1997), he also wrote *Walter Winchell* (1990), a hybrid screenplay/novel vividly dramatizing the life of the eponymous 1940s gossip columnist.

#### Herrera, Fernando de (c. 1534-1597)

Spanish poet. Admiring the Italian poets, he was largely responsible for introducing their metrical systems into Spain. His lyrical poetry, influenced by <u>Petrarch</u>, celebrates his platonic love for the countess of Gelves. Herrera's odes, especially those on the Battle of Lepanto and Don Juan of Austria, and his elegies on King Sebastian of Portugal and the English statesman Thomas More, are marked by grandeur, melody, and profundity.

## Herrick, Robert (1591-1674)

English poet and cleric. He published *Hesperides: or the Works both Humane and Divine of Robert Herrick* (1648), a collection of verse admired for its lyric quality, including the well-known poems 'Gather ye rosebuds' and 'Cherry ripe'.

Herrick was born in London. In 1607 he was apprenticed to his uncle, a wealthy goldsmith, but in 1614 he entered Cambridge. He graduated, was ordained in 1623, and from 1629 to 1648 was vicar of Dean Prior, near Totnes, Devon, where he wrote numerous lyrics of the countryside and rural customs. He was ejected by the Puritans, but returned to Dean Prior in 1662 and died there.

#### Herrick, Robert (1868-1938)

US novelist. His novels, which explore the problems and corruptions of modern industrial civilization, include *The Common Lot* 1904, *The Master of the Inn* 1908, *A Life for a Life* 1910, *Clark's Field* 1914, and *The End of Desire* 1932.

## Herriot, James (1916-1995)

#### pen-name of James Alfred Wight

English writer. A practising veterinary surgeon in Yorkshire from 1939, he wrote of his experiences in a series of humorous books which described the life of a young vet working in a Yorkshire village in the late 1930s. His first three books were published as a compilation under the title *All Creatures Great and Small* (1972).

The success of Herriot's novels was based on their warm humour, their colourful, larger-than-life characters, and an implicit nostalgia for the pre-war way of life in which there was a strong and enduring sense of community. In 1974 a film version of *AII Creatures Great and Small* was made, and by the 1980s his books had been translated into every major language, including Japanese, and a long-running television series was being sold world-wide.

# Hersey, John (Richard) (1914-1993)

Chinese-born US journalist and writer. During World War II he saw considerable action as a correspondent and he drew on his experiences for several of his works, including the novel *A Bell for Adano* (1944), which was adapted both as a play and a film. His documentary-style *Hiroshima* (1946) was the first work to reveal to the general public the true horrors of a nuclear war.

Hersey was born in Tientsin, China. His parents were missionaries and after his early education in China he attended Yale University and Clare College, Cambridge, England. He was briefly Sinclair Lewis's personal secretary (1937), then went to work as a journalist and editor for several New York magazines. He taught at Yale University for many years (from 1950) and continued to publish his fiction and non-fiction.

## Hertz, Henrik (1798-1870)

Danish poet and dramatist. His collection of rhyming letters *Gjengangerbreve/ Letters of a Ghost* 1830 satirizes the contemporary Danish literary scene. His plays include the romantic national drama *Svend Dyrings Hus/Sven Dyring's House* 1837 and *Kong Renés Datter/King René's Daughter* 1845.

## Hervieu, Paul Ernest (1857-1915)

French dramatist and novelist. He dealt with family problems, the relations between parents and children, and the problems of divorce. Among his plays are *Les Tenailles/The Chains* 1895, *La Loi de l'homme/Man's Law* 1897, and *La Course du* 

flambeau/The Passing of the Torch 1900. His novels include Flirt 1890 and Peints par eux-mêmes 1893.

#### Herzog

novel 1964 by US writer Saul <u>Bellow</u>. It is the story of a twice-divorced Jewish college professor who suffers intense, but comically treated, emotional and intellectual crises. After failing to shoot his second wife's lover, Herzog makes relative peace with himself and abandons his faith in intellectual salvation.

## Hesiod (lived 8th century BC)

Greek poet. The earliest of the Greek didactic poets, he is often contrasted with <u>Homer</u> as the other main representative of the early epic. He is the author of *Works and Days*, a moralizing and didactic poem of rural life, and *Theogony*, an account of the origin of the world and of the gods. Both poems include the myth of Pandora.

## Hesse, Hermann (1877-1962)

German writer, a Swiss citizen from 1923. A conscientious objector in World War I and a pacifist opponent of Hitler, he published short stories, poetry, and novels, including *Peter Camenzind* (1904), *Siddhartha* (1922), and *Steppenwolf* (1927). Later works, such as *Das Glasperlenspiel/The Glass Bead Game* (1943), show the influence of Indian mysticism and Jungian psychoanalysis. Above all, Hesse was the prophet of individualism. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1946.

## Hesychius of Miletus (lived 5th century)

Greek chronicler. Although his history of the reign of Justin I and of Justinian is lost, an extremely valuable fragment of his universal history survives, giving the story of Byzantium (Constantinople) down to the reign of Constantine the Great. An epitome of his biographical dictionary remains in the *Suda*, a Byzantine literary encyclopedia.

## Hewlett, Maurice Henry (1861-1923)

English novelist and poet. His first book, *The Forest Lovers*, appeared 1898. *Richard Yea-and-Nay* 1900 and *The Queen's Quair* 1904 are historical romances about Richard I and Mary Queen of Scots. Stories with a modern setting are the trilogy *Halfway House* 1908, *Open Country* 1909, and *Rest Harrow* 1910, together with *Bendish* 1913

and *Mainwaring* 1920. Of his dozen books of verse perhaps the best is *The Song of the Plow* 1916.

#### hexameter

#### (Greek 'six measures')

verse line of six metrical feet. The hexameter was the metre of the Greek epic poet <u>Homer</u>, and became the standard verse form for all ancient epic writers. It was also used in other kinds of poetry, notably the <u>elegy</u>. A line of iambic hexameter is called an alexandrine.

#### Heyer, Georgette (1902-1974)

English novelist. She wrote her first historical novel, *The Black Moth* in 1921, to amuse a sick brother. Her best, such as *These Old Shades* (1926) and *Regency Buck* (1935), are Regency romances based on considerable research, a fictional form she can be said to have invented.

#### Heylin (or Heylyn), Peter (1600-1662)

English writer and cleric. His works number more than 50 and are chiefly theological and controversial. He belonged to the High Church party and wrote *Ecclesia Vindicata: or the Church of England Justified* 1657, *Ecclesia Restaurata, or the History of the Reformation* 1661, and *Aerius Redivivus: or the History of the Presbyterians* 1670.

#### Heym, Georg (1887-1912)

German poet. His expressionist verse is filled with powerful demonic forces bringing death and destruction, as in *Der ewige Tag* 1911 and *Umbra vitae* 1912. Cities in particular are conceived as threats, as in *Der Gott der Stadt* and *Die Dämonen der Städte*. The apocalyptic and grotesque imagery in Heym's work produces an overwhelming mood of decline and decay.

#### Heyse, Paul von (1830-1914)

German author. He excelled as a writer of short stories, enhanced by humour, their rendering of detail, and a graceful style. *Das Buch der Freundschaft* (1883) is a

collection of stories; his *Novellen* (in three volumes) were published in 1890. He also wrote some novels, plays, and a number of poems. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1910 and was the first German to receive this award.

#### Heyward, Du Bose (1885-1940)

US novelist. His first novel, *Porgy* 1925, was a notable success, and he wrote a dramatic version of the story with his wife, which won a Pulitzer Prize in 1927. It was made into an opera by George Gershwin 1935, with the title *Porgy and Bess*.

Most of his other novels are about poor blacks in the South, especially in Charleston, his birthplace.

## Heywood, John (c. 1497-c. 1580)

English poet and playwright. He is chiefly remembered as a writer of interludes, which differed from those of his predecessors in that he portrayed social types rather than qualities personified. He also excelled as a writer of epigrams.

Among his works are *The Pardoner and the Frere* (1533), *Johan Johan* (1533), *The Play of the Wether* (1533), *The Four PP* (c. 1545), *Proverbs* (1546), *Two Hundred Epigrams* (1555), and the allegorical poem *The Spider and the Flie* (1566).

## Hiawatha, The Song of

poem written by H W <u>Longfellow</u> 1855. It is an Indian legend told in the lilting metre of the Finnish national epic, the *Kalevala*. It was based on data collected by Henry R Schoolcraft (1793-1864).

## Hibberd, Jack (1940-)

#### born John Charles Hibberd

Australian writer. He is best known for his play *Dimboola* (1974), a warm-hearted send-up of a country wedding, which came to popular notice in a production directed by David Williamson and became the most performed of all Australian plays. His other works include A Stretch of the Imagination (1973) and One of Nature's Gentlemen (1976).

Hibberd was born in Warracknabeal, Victoria, and practised as a doctor from 1968 until 1973 when he began full-time theatre work. From the late 1980s he also

published fiction, including the novels *Memoirs of an Old Bastard* (1989), *The Life of Riley* (1990), and *Perdita* (1992).

#### Hichens, Robert Smythe (1864-1950)

English novelist. His first novel, *The Green Carnation* 1894, was a satire on the mannerisms of Oscar <u>Wilde</u>. *The Garden of Allah* 1904 was even more successful and was dramatized. Other publications include *The Call of the Blood* 1906, *The Way of Ambition* 1913, *The First Lady Brendon* 1931, *The Million* 1940, and *Too Much Love of Living* 1948.

#### Higgins, George Vincent (1939-1999)

US novelist. He wrote many detective and underworld novels, often set in Boston, including *The Friends of Eddie Coyle* (1972), *The Impostors* (1986), and *Trust* (1989).

#### Higgins, Jack

pseudonym of English novelist Harry Patterson.

## Higginson, Thomas Wentworth (Storrow) (1823-1911)

US Unitarian minister, soldier, and writer. At the outbreak of the American Civl War he captained a company of Massachusetts volunteers. Higginson then became the commanding colonel of the 1st South Carolina Volunteers, the first African-American regiment of the Union Army (1862-64); he would write of this experience in *Army Life in a Black Regiment* (1870). After the war he settled in Newport, Rhode Island (1865-78), and wrote for the *Atlantic Monthly* and other leading magazines of the day. He also wrote popular histories of the USA. He also corresponded with the poet Emily <u>Dickinson</u>.

Higginson was born in Cambridge, Massachusetts. After graduating from Harvard (1841), he taught, then returned to take a degree from Harvard Divinity School (1847). In his first parish in Newburyport, Massachusetts, he was more interested in social issues than in theology, usually preaching for women's suffrage and against slavery, and in 1848 he ran unsuccessfully for Congress as a Free-Soiler. Too radical for even his Unitarian congregation, he moved on to become pastor of the Free Church in Worcester, Massachusetts (1852-61), but continued to devote much of his energy to abolitionism. He engaged in the forceful release of slaves, travelled to Kansas to fight slavery, and befriended and supported John Brown. With the outbreak of the Civil War, he left the ministry. Moving back to Cambridge in 1878,

he served uneventfully in the Massachusetts legislature (1880-81) and then went back to writing magazine articles and biographies. His magazine articles inspired an unknown young woman in Amherst, Massachusetts, Emily Dickinson, to send him some of her poems in 1862. They maintained a correspondence until her death, meeting twice. Higginson encouraged her to continue writing, but advised her not to publish. After her death in 1886, he helped to prepare for publication the first (1890) and second (1891) volumes of her poetry.

# Highet, Gilbert (1906-1978)

Scottish classicist. He popularized classical literature in a number of ways, writing the books *The Classical Tradition* (1949) and *The Art of Teaching* (1950); serving as chief literary critic for *Harper's Magazine* (1952-54); judge of the Book-of-the-Month Club (1954-78); and as host of weekly radio talks, *People, Places, and Books* (1952-59). He had more than 1,000 to his name, including a translation of Werner Jaeger's *Paideia*. He was married to the novelist Helen MacInnes. Highet was born in Glasgow, Scotland. He taught at Oxford University, England (1932-37), where he took a double first (1932), before going to Columbia University (1937), where he was an exceptionally popular teacher until his retirement (1972).

# Highsmith, Patricia (1921-1995)

US crime novelist. Her first book, *Strangers on a Train* 1950, was filmed by Alfred Hitchcock. She excelled in tension and psychological exploration of character.

#### the Ripley series

Her debut was followed by *The Talented Mr Ripley* 1957, the first of a series dealing with the amoral Tom Ripley, including *Ripley Under Ground* 1971, *Ripley's Game* 1974, and *Ripley Under Water* 1991. Highsmith's work is characterized by the skilful use of suspense, a chillingly dispassionate style shot through with dark humour, and a fascination with the intense and sexually ambiguous relationship between the central characters.

## Hikmet, Nazim (1902-1963)

Turkish poet. Acclaimed since his death as a revolutionary hero, he was educated at Moscow University and was imprisoned in Turkey for his activities as a communist propagandist. His much-translated poems, which were banned in Turkey during his lifetime, include *Memleketimden insan manzaralari/Portraits of People from My Land* and *Seyh Bedreddin destani/The Epic of Shayk Bedreddin* 1936, about a religious revolutionary in 15th-century Anatolia.

## Hildegard of Bingen (1098-1179)

German abbess, writer, and composer. Her encyclopedia of natural history, *Liber simplicis medicinae* (1150-60), giving both Latin and German names for the species described as well as their medicinal uses, is the earliest surviving scientific book by a woman.

# Hill, Aaron (1685-1750)

English poet and dramatist. His contributions to drama include *Elfrid or the Fair Inconstant* produced 1710, *The Tragedy of Zara* 1736, and *Mérope* 1749. He was satirized in Alexander <u>Pope's</u>*Dunciad* and replied in *The Progress of Wit* 1730.

## Hill, George Birkbeck Norman (1835-1903)

English literary critic. He was an authority on Samuel <u>Johnson</u> and published a series of scholarly editions of Johnsonian literature, including *Boswell's Life of Johnson* 1887 and *Dr Johnson, His Friends and Critics* 1878. His edition of Dr Johnson's *Lives of the English Poets* was published 1905. He was a nephew of Rowland Hill.

# Hill, John (c. 1716-1775)

English quack doctor and writer. He became editor of the *British Magazine* 1746-50, and contributed to the newspaper *London Advertiser* and the magazine *Literary Gazette*. He also published a translation of <u>Theophrastus's</u>*History of Stones* 1746 and wrote many botanical works, including *The Vegetable System* 1759-75.

# Hill, Susan Elizabeth (1942-)

English novelist, short-story writer, and radio dramatist. Her works, which explore the nature of loss, isolation, and grief, include her first novel *The Enclosure* (1961), *A Change for the Better* (1969), *I'm the King of the Castle* (1970), and *The Bird of Night* (1972; Whitbread Award). Later works include *Air and Angels* (1991), and *Mrs de Winter* (1993), a sequel to *Rebecca* by Daphne du Maurier. She has also written books for children, including *Can It Be True* (1988; Smarties Prize), *The Glass Angels* (1991), and *King of Kings* (1993).

# Hillerman, Tony (1925-)

US writer. He is the author of numerous mystery novels drawing on American Indian culture, the most successful featuring Sergeant Jim Chee of the Navajo Tribal Police. Hillerman was born in Sacred Heart, Oklahoma. Although he was raised among the Pottawatomie and Seminole Indians and studied at an Indian boarding school, he was not an American Indian. He attended Oklahoma State University, the University of Oklahoma, and the University of New Mexico, gaining a Masters degree in 1966. He worked as a journalist in Texas, Oklahoma, and New Mexico (1948-63), lived in Albuquerque, and taught journalism at the University of New Mexico (1976-85).

## Hillyer, Robert (Silliman) (1895-1961)

US poet and teacher. While a student Harvard University, he published *Eight Harvard Poets* (1917), a volume including his own work and that of E E Cummings and John Dos Passos, among others. After graduation, he and Dos Passos served in the ambulance corps in France. Hillyer taught at Harvard (1919-20), wrote essays, novels, and many volumes of reflective poetry, notably *The Seventh Hall* (1928). He taught at Trinity College (1926-28), returned to Harvard (1928-45), became a visiting professor at various institutions. Hillyer then taught at the University of Delaware (1952-61). Traditional in his own work and conservative in his tastes, he often found himself at odds with the prevailing literary modes and movements. Hillyer was born in East Orange, New Jersey.

## Hilton, James (1900-1954)

English-born US novelist. His books include *Lost Horizon* (1933), envisaging Shangrila, a remote district of Tibet where time stands still; and *Goodbye*, *Mr Chips* (1934), a portrait of an old schoolteacher, written in four days for serialization in the *British Weekly* in 1933.

Invited to Hollywood 1936 to help with the screening of his books, he stayed on as a scriptwriter, winning an award for his contribution to *Mrs Miniver* 1942. He became a US citizen in 1948. He also wrote novels under the pseudonym Glen Trevor.

## Hilton, Walter (c. 1340-1396)

English mystic. He wrote *The Ladder of Perfection*, a treatise on asceticism and contemplation. It was widely circulated in manuscript and was one of the first books printed 1494 by Wynkyn de Worde (died *c*. 1534). It prescribes for the restoration of God's image in the soul by enduring the 'dark night' of detachment from worldly things. Hilton spent most of his life as an Augustinian canon.

## Himes, Chester (Bomar) (1909-1984)

US novelist. After serving seven years in prison for armed robbery, he published his first novel *If He Hollers Let Him Go* (1945), a powerful depiction of racist victimization set in a Californian shipyard. He later wrote in the crime thriller genre, most notably in *The Real Cool Killers* (1958), *Rage in Harlem* (1965), and *Cotton Comes to Harlem* (1965).

He also published two volumes of autobiography, *The Quality of Hurt* (1972) and *My Life of Absurdity* (1976).

# Hinden, Rita (1909-1971)

South African-born British socialist writer. She was born in Cape Town, South Africa, and her family emigrated to Palestine in 1927 (the first family from South Africa to do so). She continued her education in Liverpool and the London School of Economics. A Zionist, Hinden joined the Independent Labour Party and in 1939 (having returned briefly to Palestine), the Labour Party. In 1940, with Arthur Creech-Jones, she founded the Fabian Colonial Bureau, which proved an influential research body through which Hinden published *Plan For Africa* (1941).

She married in Palestine in 1933 and she and her husband returned to Britain the same year. In the 1950s she was active in the Socialist Union and as editor of the revisionist journal *Socialist Commentary*. An ethical socialist, whose beliefs owed much to R H Tawney, in 1964 she edited a posthumous volume of his essays, *The Radical Tradition*.

## Hindus, Maurice Gerschon (1891-1969)

US writer, born in Russia. He emigrated to the USA in 1905 but frequently revisited Russia and wrote about it in books such as *Broken Earth* 1926 and *Red Bread* 1931; in the latter he describes the collectivization of his village.

# Hinton, Nigel (1941-)

English novelist. His experience as a teacher gave him insight into the minds and interests of young teenagers, and most of his work has been aimed at this age group. His book *Buddy* (1983) is the story of a teenage boy confused by the separation of his parents. The popularity of the novel resulted in its serialisation for television and the next novel in the trilogy, *Buddy's Song* (1989), was made into a film, scripted by Hinton, who also wrote nine songs included in the sound track. *Buddy's Blues* (1997)

completed the trilogy.

Hinton was born in London, England. His first book, *Collision Course* (1974), was written originally as a story to read to a class. Other works include *The Finders* (1994; Children's Book Award), *Out of the Darkness* (1998), and *Time Bomb* (2005). Hinton has also written successfully for younger children.

## Hirtius, Aulus (c. 90-43 BC)

Roman soldier and historian. He was a friend of the orator <u>Cicero</u> and of Julius Caesar, under whom he served in Gaul. He completed Caesar's *De Bello Gallico/The Gallic War* by adding the eighth book. As consul 43 <sub>BC</sub> he sided with Octavian (the future emperor Augustus) during the Mutina campaign against Mark Antony and was killed in action.

# Historia Augusta

#### Augustan History

series of biographies of the Roman emperors from Hadrian to Numerian (AD 117-284). It appears to have been written by six different authors, Aelius Spartianus, Julius Capitolinus, Aelius Lampridius, Vulcatius Gallicanus, Trebellius Pollio, and Flavius Vopiscus, possibly in the time of Diocletian and Constantine.

# historical novel

genre of fictional prose narrative set in the past. Literature set in the historic rather than the immediate past has always abounded, but in the West, English writer Walter <u>Scott</u> began the modern tradition by setting imaginative romances of love, impersonation, and betrayal in a past based on known fact; his use of historical detail, and subsequent imitations of this technique by European writers, gave rise to the genre.

Some historical novels of the 19th century were overtly nationalistic, but most were merely novels set in the past to heighten melodrama while providing an informative framework; the genre was used by Italian writer Alessandro <u>Manzoni</u>, French Victor <u>Hugo</u>, English Charles <u>Dickens</u>, and US writer James Fenimore <u>Cooper</u>, among many others. In the 20th century the historical novel also became concerned with exploring psychological states and the question of differences in outlook and mentality in past periods. Examples of this are English writer Robert <u>Graves's</u> novels about the Roman emperor *I*, *Claudius* and *Claudius the God* (both 1934), and French writer Marguerite <u>Yourcenar'sLes Mémoires d'Hadrien/Memoirs of Hadrian</u> (1951).

## Hitchens, Christopher (1949-)

English journalist, writer, and critic. He is well known in both the USA and the UK for his controversial and acerbic commentaries, and for his changeable political views.

He is a contributor to a variety of magazines and newspapers, including Vanity Fair, The Nation, Salon, The Atlantic Monthly, The Times Literary Supplement, and The Washington Post. He has written books denouncing, among others, Roman Catholic nun Mother Teresa and former US president Bill Clinton. Though at one time regarded as a liberal, he has distanced himself from the political left in his book A Long Short War: The Postponed Liberation of Iraq (2003) in defense of the invasion of Iraq.

## Hitch-Hiker's Guide to the Galaxy, The

best-selling space-fiction novel by Douglas <u>Adams</u> published in 1979. It began as a radio serial in 1978 and was later successfully adapted for television. The first of a series of international best-sellers which achieved cult status, the novel was followed by others which developed the theme including *The Restaurant at the End of the Universe* (1980), *Life, the Universe and Everything* (1982), *So Long, and Thanks for All the Fish* (1984), and *Mostly Harmless* (1992).

# Hitti, Philip K(huri) (1886-1978)

US educator, historian, and author born in Lebanon (then part of Syria), a US citizen from 1920. He founded the Syrian Education Society in 1916 and taught Arabic literature at Princeton 1926-54. He wrote widely acclaimed books, including *History of the Arabs* 1937 and *A Short History of the Near East* 1966.

## Hlavácek, Karel (1874-1898)

Czech poet and critic. He was a leading exponent of decadence. His *In the Small Hours* 1896 is a series of masochistic dreams of a man who can see no value in the prevailing utilitarian society; these are couched in elegant, ironic language. 'Hymn of Vengeance' 1898 describes the planned revolt of an aesthete against the massed forces of bourgeois conventionality. US fiction writer for children and adults. He is best known for his children's series about a badger, beginning with *Bedtime for Frances* (1960) as well as his novel *Riddley Walker* (1980), set in a futuristic England ravaged by nuclear war. Among his later works are *Angelica's Grotto* (1999), *Amaryllis Night and Day* (2001), and *Come Dance With Me* (2005).

His other books for children include *The Mouse and His Child* (1967; filmed 1977), *The Sorely Trying Day* (1964), *Charlie the Tramp* (1967), *Emmet Otter's Jug-Band Christmas* (1971), *How Tom Beat Captain Najork and His Hired Sportsmen* (1974), *Dinner at Alberta's* (1975), *Jim Hedgehog and the Lonesome Tower* (1992), and *M.O. L.E.: Much Overworked Little Earthmover* (1993). His novels for adults include *The Lion of Boaz-Jachin and Jachin-Boaz* (1973), *Kleinzeit* (1974), *Turtle Diary* (1975; filmed 1985), *Pilgermann* (1983), *The Medusa Frequency* (1987), *The Moment Under the Moment* (1992), and *Silly Sam* (2000).

#### Hobbit, The

#### or There and Back Again

fantasy for children by J R R <u>Tolkien</u>, published in the UK in 1937. It describes the adventures of Bilbo Baggins, a 'hobbit' (small humanoid) in an ancient world, Middle-Earth, populated by dragons, dwarves, elves, and other mythical creatures, including the wizard Gandalf. *The Hobbit*, together with Tolkien's later trilogy *The Lord of the Rings* (1954-55), achieved cult status in the 1960s.

By 1991, 35 million copies had been sold worldwide, more than any other work of fiction.

## Hoby, Sir Thomas (1530-1566)

English diplomat and translator. Born in Leominster, Hoby went to Cambridge before undertaking extensive travels on the Continent. An expert linguist, he was knighted and sent as ambassador to France in 1566, but died in Paris a few months later. During an earlier stay in Paris (1552-53), Hoby translated Baldassare <u>Castiglione's</u>*II cortegiano/The Courtier*, eventually printed in 1561; it proved popular and was several times reprinted. Hoby's wife **Elizabeth Hoby** (1528-1609) was also a skilled linguist.

## Hoccleve (or Occleve), Thomas (c. 1370-c. 1450)

English poet. His best-known work is *De Regimine Principum or The Regimen of Princes* 1412, written for the Prince of Wales, later Henry V; it is an English rendering in rhyme royal of a Latin treatise by Guido delle Colonne (*c.* 1215-*c.* 1290) on the duties of a ruler. Hoccleve also wrote a curious autobiographical poem, *La Male Reglè/The Male Regimen* 1406, which tells of his moderately riotous life, and a number of religious poems.

#### Hocking, Joseph (1860-1937)

English Methodist minister and novelist. His publications include *Jabez Easterbrook* 1891, *Fields of Fair Renown* 1896, *The Scarlet Women* 1899 (which caused some stir in Free Church circles), *The Trampled Cross* 1907, *God and Mammon* 1912, *The Eternal Challenge* 1929, and *Deep Calleth Deep* 1936. He was the brother of Silas Hocking.

#### Hocking, Silas Kitto (1850-1935)

English novelist. He made his reputation as a writer 1878 with a religious and moral tale, *Her Benny*. Among his other stories are *Alec Green* 1878, *The Awakening of Anthony Weir* 1901, *Pioneers* 1905, *The Third Man* 1911, *Watches in the Dawn* 1920, and *Gerry Storm* 1934.

## Hodgson, Ralph (1871-1962)

English poet. His collections of poems include *The Last Blackbird* 1907; *Poems* 1917, containing 'The Bull' and 'The Song of Honour'; *The Skylark and Other Poems* 1958; and *Collected Poems* 1961. In 1954 he was awarded the Queen's Gold Medal for Poetry.

## Hoffer, Eric (1902-1983)

US writer whose works, starting with *The True Believer* 1951, a study of fanaticism and mass movements, won recognition for their pungent, aphoristic style and perceptivity. While writing, Hoffer worked as a migrant farmer, and then as a dockworker 1943-67. He was known as 'the longshoreman philosopher'.

## Hoffman, Alice (1952-)

US writer. Her novels, short stories, and screenplays often feature women in search of their identities and include supernatural elements. Her novels include *Practical Magic* (1995), *Here on Earth* (1997), *The River King* (2000), and *The Ice Queen* (2005).

Her other novels include *The Drowning Season* (1979), *White Horses* (1980), *At Risk* (1988), *Aquamarine* (2001), *Blue Diary* (2001), and *Blackbird House* (2004).

#### Hoffman, Charles Fenno (1806-1884)

US writer and journalist who served as editor of several prominent magazines. For several years in the 1840s he also held various US government jobs in New York City. He wrote poetry, but is best known for *Greyslaer: A Romance of the Mohawk* 1839, a novel based on a Kentucky murder.

It was reported that he became insane after a servant used his most recent manuscript to light the fires in his lodgings; in any case he was committed to the State Hospital, Harrisburg, Pennsylvania, in 1850 and spent the rest of his life institutionalized.

## Hoffmann, Amadeus (Ernst Theodor Wilhelm) (1776-1822)

German composer and writer. He composed the opera *Undine* (1816), but is chiefly remembered as an author and librettist of fairy stories, including 'Nussknacker/ Nutcracker' (1816). His stories inspired Jacques Offenbach's *Tales of Hoffmann*.

## Hoffmann, August Heinrich (1798-1874)

#### called 'Hoffmann von Fallersleben'

German poet and philologist. He published *Unpolitische Lieder* 1840-41, a work expressing democratic and liberal ideas and including 'Deutschland, Deutschland über alles', later used as a national hymn. He also wrote *Horae Belgicae* 1830-62, *Geschichte des deutschen Kirchenlieds* 1832, and *Soldatenlieder* 1869-70.

## Hofmannsthal, Hugo von (1874-1929)

Austrian poet and dramatist. He published a few successful selections of verse under the pseudonym of Loris, and then turned to writing blank verse plays which heralded neo-Romanticism in German drama. Scripts founded upon the works of earlier authors include *Elektra* 1903 (from Sophocles) and *Jedermann* 1912 (from the morality play *Everyman*); original works include *Christinas Heimreise* 1911, *Der Turm* 1925, and the comedy *Der Schwierige* 1921.

He also furnished the libretti for several operas by Richard Strauss, including Elektra

1909, *Der Rosenkavalier* 1911, *Ariadne auf Náxos* 1912, and *Die Frau ohne Schatten* 1919, and helped Max Reinhardt to establish the Salzburg Festival.

### Hogg, James (1770-1835)

Scottish novelist and poet. He was known as the 'Ettrick Shepherd', being born in Ettrick Forest, Selkirkshire. He worked as a shepherd at Yarrow 1790-99. He excelled in recounting local or legendary stories and had a true lyrical gift; poems include 'When the Kye Comes Hame', 'Flora Macdonald's Farewell', and 'Kilmeny' 1813. His novel *The Private Memories and Confessions of a Justified Sinner* 1824 is a masterly portrayal of personified evil.

### Hogg, Thomas Jefferson (1792-1862)

English biographer. He was the lifelong friend and biographer of the poet Percy Bysshe <u>Shelley</u>. Associated with Shelley in the pamphlet 'The Necessity of Atheism' 1811, he was expelled from Oxford University and later became a lawyer. In 1832 he contributed to Bulwer's *New Monthly Magazine* his *Reminiscences of Shelley*, which was much admired. Hogg was then commissioned to write a biography of the poet, but the first two volumes, published 1858, gave such offence that the work remained unfinished.

# Holberg, Ludwig (1684-1754)

#### **Baron Holberg**

Norwegian-born Danish dramatist and writer. He is considered to be the founder of modern Danish literature. His works include the comedy *Jeppe paa Bjerget/Jeppe of the Mountains* 1722.

In 1722 he produced a translation from French of Molière's *L'Avare/The Miser* for the new Danish theatre, Den Danske Skueplads, in Copenhagen. This was followed by numerous original comedies 1722-28, including *Henrik og Pernille* 1724.

### Holcroft, Thomas (1745-1809)

English dramatist and novelist. In his first novel, *Alwyn, or the Gentleman Comedian* 1780, he describes his experience as a strolling actor. He went on to publish numerous comedies and comic operas, as well as novels and translations. These include *Duplicity* 1781; his translation of Beaumarchais's *Le Mariage de Figaro* (which he produced at Covent Garden 1784, playing the title role himself); *The Road* 

*to Ruin* 1792; and his musical adaptation *A Tale of Mystery*, acted at Covent Garden 1802.

# Hölderlin, (Johann Christian) Friedrich (1770-1843)

German lyric poet. His poetry attempted to reconcile Christianity and the religious spirit of ancient Greece and to naturalize the forms of Greek verse in German. His work includes *Hyperion* (1797-99), an epistolary novel; translations of Sophocles (1804); and visionary poems such as the elegy 'Menons Klagen um Diotima/Menon's Lament for Diotima' and the brilliantly apocalyptic 'Patmos' (1806).

### ahead of his time

Although he upheld the ideals of classical Greece as a model for contemporary society, Hölderlin showed an awareness of the prevalent materialism and commercialism, which he condemned in many of his works. His translations of Sophocles'*Antigone* and *Oedipus* may have influenced his style, which is often based on Greek prosody. His poetry was not appreciated during his lifetime; Goethe and Schiller did not understand his aims, and only when he was rediscovered by Rainer Maria Rilke and Stefan George did Hölderlin become recognized as one of Germany's major poets.

# Holland, Josiah Gilbert (1819-1881)

US writer and editor who spent most of his career as an editor at the Massachusetts *Springfield Republican*, where he worked under Samuel Bowles, son of the founder-publisher. Holland concentrated on writing from 1857; his numerous books, many being collections of *Republican* columns, include *A History of Western Massachusetts* 1885 and *Timothy Titcomb's Letters to Young People* 1858, as well as volumes of poetry and a number of novels. In 1870 he was a founder and the first editor of *Scribner's Monthly* (later the *Century*).

# Holland, Philemon (1552-1637)

English translator. Working both as a doctor and a school teacher, he made his reputation with his translations from classical writers, including Pliny, Suetonius, Plutarch, and Xenophon. His translations are characterized by immense learning combined with a fine feeling for the emotional tone of the original.

Hollinghurst, Alan (1954-)

English writer. His novels explore contemporary homosexual culture and relationships using a high literary style. His novel *The Line of Beauty* (2004; 2004 Man Booker Prize for Fiction) depicts a young Oxford graduate in London searching for love during the boom years of the 1980s.

Other novels include *The Swimming-Pool Library* (1988), an account of homosexual life in the early 1980s through the eyes of a young aristocrat, *The Folding Star* (1994), a story of a private tutor who develops an obsession with his pupil, and *Spell* (1998), a comedy of manners. *The Folding Star* received the James Tait Black Memorial Prize for fiction.

### Holm, Saxe

US writer; see Helen Hunt Jackson.

# Holme, Constance (1881-1955)

English novelist. In 1919 her novel *The Splendid Faring* won the Femina Vie Heureuse prize. Most of her books are set in her native county of Westmorland; they include *The Lonely Plough* 1914, *The Things Which Belong* 1925, and *He-Who-Came* 1930.

# Holmes, John Clellon (1926-1988)

US writer whose works include novels and essays describing the <u>Beat Generation</u>, as seen in *Nothing More to Declare* 1967. He also published poetry, was a lecturer at writing workshops, and taught at the University of Arkansas from 1977.

# Holmes, Oliver Wendell (1809-1894)

US writer and physician. In 1857 he founded *Atlantic Monthly* with the poet J R Lowell, in which were published the essays and verse collected 1858 as *The Autocrat of the Breakfast-Table*, a record of the imaginary conversation of boarding-house guests.

This was followed by *The Professor at the Breakfast-Table* 1860 and other 'Breakfast-Table' collections, and the novels *Elsie Venner* 1861 and *The Guardian Angel* 1867. *The Chambered Nautilus* includes some of his best-known poems. He also published a life of Ralph Waldo Emerson 1885.

# Holmes, Sherlock

fictitious private detective, created by the Scottish writer Arthur Conan <u>Doyle</u> in *A Study in Scarlet* (1887) and recurring in novels and stories until 1927. Holmes' ability to make inferences from slight clues always astonishes the narrator, Dr Watson.

The criminal mastermind against whom Holmes repeatedly pits his wits is Professor James Moriarty. Holmes is regularly portrayed at his home, 221b Baker Street, London, where he plays the violin and has bouts of determined action interspersed by lethargy and drug-taking. His characteristic pipe and deerstalker hat were the addition of an illustrator.

### Holt, Henry (1840-1926)

US publisher and author. He formed a publishing company with Frederick Leypoldt, organized in 1873 as Henry Holt & Company. His writings include the popular novels *Calmire, Man and Nature* 1892 and *Sturmsee, Man and Man* 1905, and a highly regarded memoir *Garrulities of an Octogenarian Editor* 1923.

# Holtby, Winifred (1898-1935)

English novelist and journalist. She was an ardent advocate of women's freedom and of racial equality. Her novel *South Riding* (1936), set in her native Yorkshire, was awarded the Tait Black Memorial Prize and was subsequently filmed and televised. Her other works include an analysis of women's position in contemporary society, *Women in a Changing Civilization* (1934).

# Hölty, Ludwig Heinrich Christoph (1748-1776)

German poet. His health was delicate and his poetry expresses a certain melancholy and sadness. He wrote mainly songs, odes, and elegies, which show a fine feeling for nature and the peace of country life. His *Sämtliche Gedichte/Collected Poems* were edited in two volumes 1782.

# Holub, Miroslav (1923-1998)

Czech poet. A doctor specializing in immunology, amidst the discouragements of communist rule he courageously testified to humanistic values in terse and allusive poems. His collections include *Kam tece krev/Where the Blood Flows* 1963, *Udalosti/ Events* 1971, and *Naopal/On the Contrary* 1982. *Notes of a Clay Pigeon*, a volume of poems in English translation, appeared in 1977.

### Homer

According to ancient tradition, the author of the Greek narrative epics, the <u>Iliad</u> and the <u>Odyssey</u> (both derived from oral tradition). Little is known about the man, but modern research suggests that both poems should be assigned to the 8th century BC, with the Odyssey the later of the two.

The epics, dealing with military values, social hierarchy, and the emotions and objectives of a heroic class of warriors, supported or opposed by the gods, had an immediate and profound effect on Greek society and culture and were a strong influence on the Roman poet <u>Virgil</u> in the composition of his *Aeneid*.

### Hood, Robin

hero of English legend; see Robin Hood.

# Hood, Thomas (1799-1845)

English poet and humorist. He entered journalism and edited periodicals, including his own *Hood's Monthly Magazine* in 1844. Although remembered for his light comic verse, for example, 'Miss Kilmansegg' (1841), he also wrote serious poems such as 'The Dream of Eugene Aram' (1839), about a notorious murderer; 'Song of the Shirt' (1843), a protest against poorly paid labour; and 'Bridge of Sighs' (1843), about the suicide of a prostitute.

# Hooft, Pieter Corneliszoon (1581-1647)

Dutch poet, dramatist, and historian. He wrote lyrical verse of great depth and beauty. The breadth of his European culture is apparent in his fine pastoral play *Granida* 1605, his tragedies *Geeraerdt van Velsen* 1612 and *Baeto* 1626, his successful and witty comedy *Warenar* 1616, and his monumental (unfinished) *Nederlandsche Historien* 1555-85 1642-54.

# Hook, Theodore Edward (1788-1841)

English dramatist and novelist. The son of the composer James Hook (1746-1827), he himself composed several successful comic operas. He was the editor of *John Bull*, a journal of high Tory and aristocratic sympathies, and the *New Monthly Magazine*,

and he also published fiction, including *Maxwell* 1830, *Gilbert Gurney* 1836, and *Jack Brag* 1837.

### Hope, Anthony (1863-1933)

#### pen-name of Anthony Hope Hawkins

English novelist. His romance *The Prisoner of Zenda* (1894), and its sequel *Rupert of Hentzau* (1898), introduced the imaginary Balkan state of Ruritania. Other works include *The King's Mirror* (1899), *Second String* (1910), *Captain Dieppe* (1918), and *Little Tiger* (1925). Knighted 1918.

### Hope, Christopher (David Tully) (1944-)

South African writer. After settling in England in 1975, Hope produced a number of satirical novels that attacked the policy of apartheid in South Africa, including *A Separate Development* (1980) and *Kruger's Alp* (1984), which won the Whitbread Prize for Fiction in 1985. A return visit to South Africa during the whites-only general election of 1987 prompted Hope to write the autobiographical *White Boy Running* (1988).

Other works include the novels *Serenity House* (1992) and *Me, the Moon, and Elvis Presley* (1997); the volumes of poetry *Cape Drives* (1974) and *Englishmen* (1985); the short-story collection *Private Parts and Other Tales* (1981); the travelogue *Moscow*, *Moscow* (1990); the autobiographical *Signs of the Heart* (1999); and stories for children, radio plays, and television dramas.

### Hope, Laurence (1865-1904)

#### pseudonym of Adela Florence Nicolson; born Adela Florence Cory

English poet. She wrote a number of passionate poems with an Eastern setting, some of which, such as 'Pale Hands I loved beside the Shalimar' were extremely popular as songs. Her volumes of verse include *The Garden of Karma*, *Stars of the Desert*, and *Indian Love*.

### Hopkins, Gerard Manley (1844-1889)

English poet and Jesuit priest. His works are marked by originality of diction and rhythm and include 'The Wreck of the Deutschland' (1876), and 'The Windhover' and 'Pied Beauty' (both 1877). His collected works were published in 1918 (after the

author's death) by his friend, the poet Robert <u>Bridges</u>. His employment of 'sprung rhythm' (the combination of traditional regularity of stresses with varying numbers of syllables in each line) greatly influenced later 20th-century poetry. His poetry is profoundly religious and records his struggle to gain faith and peace, but also shows freshness of feeling and delight in nature.

Hopkins was born in Stratford, Essex, and was educated at Oxford, where he became friendly with Bridges. While still an undergraduate he was converted to Roman Catholicism, under the influence of English theologian John Newman, and after teaching for some time in Birmingham he decided to become a Jesuit. Ordained in 1877, he worked as a parish priest in London, Oxford, in a slum area of Liverpool, and in Glasgow; later he taught at Stonyhurst. In 1884 he was appointed professor of Greek literature at University College, Dublin, but he resigned in 1889.

# Horace (65-8 BC)

#### born Quintus Horatius Flaccus

Roman lyric poet and satirist. He became a leading poet under the patronage of Emperor Augustus. His works include *Satires* (35-30 Bc); the four books of *Odes* (*c.* 25-24 Bc); *Epistles*, a series of verse letters; and an influential critical work, <u>Ars</u> <u>poetica</u>. They are distinguished by their style, wit, discretion, and patriotism.

Horace was born at Venusia, southern Italy. He fought under Brutus at Philippi, lost his estate, and was reduced to poverty. In about 38 Virgil introduced him to his patron Maecenas, who gave him a farm in the Sabine hills and recommended him to the patronage of Augustus.

# Hornby, Nick (1957-)

English writer. His humorous books reflect British male cultural obsessions, for example football, as in *Fever Pitch* (1992; filmed 1997) and popular music, as in *High Fidelity* (1995).

Having graduated from Cambridge University, England, Hornby worked as a teacher and a journalist before gaining major success with *Fever Pitch*, which recounted his lifelong obsession with the English football team, Arsenal. *High Fidelity* (1995; filmed 2000), his first novel, similarly dealt with male cultural obsession - in this case pop music. *About a Boy* (1998; filmed 2002), also a best-seller, again looked at British culture by focusing on single parents. *How to Be Good* (2001) similarly explored issues of marriage and family but was a departure in that it was narrated by a woman.

# Horne, Richard Henry (1803-1884)

#### called 'Hengist'

English poet and critic. His best-known work is *A New Spirit of the Age* 1844, containing critical studies of contemporary writers. He also published two tragedies, *Cosmo de' Medici* and *The Death of Marlowe* both 1837, and an epic poem *Orion* 1843. His correspondence with Elizabeth Barrett Browning 1839-46 was published 1877.

# Hornung, E(rnest) W(illiam) (1866-1921)

English novelist. Prompted by Conan <u>Doyle</u>, he created A J Raffles, the gentleman burglar, and his assistant Bunny Manders, in *The Amateur Cracksman* (1899). Further collections of adventure stories include *Raffles* (1901), *A Thief in the Night* (1905), and *Mr Justice Raffles* (1909).

# Houghton, Richard Monckton Milnes, 1st Baron Houghton (1809-1885)

English man of letters. He was a patron of the English poet Algernon Swinburne and supporter of the poet Alfred Tennyson. He edited John Keats's *Life and Letters* in 1848, and collections of his poems in 1863 and 1876. Houghton was born in London, England. He was educated at Trinity College, Cambridge University, where he became friendly with Tennyson and William Thackeray.

# Housman, A(Ifred) E(dward) (1859-1936)

English poet and classical scholar. His *A Shropshire Lad* (1896), a series of deceptively simple, nostalgic, ballad-like poems, has been popular since World War I. This was followed by *Last Poems* (1922), *More Poems* (1936), and *Collected Poems* (1939).

As a scholar his great work was his edition of the Roman poet Manilius, which is a model of textual criticism and marks him as one of the greatest English Latinists; he also edited the works of <u>Juvenal</u> and <u>Lucan</u>.

# Housman, Laurence (1865-1959)

English poet and dramatist. He is best known for his *Little Plays of St Francis* 1922, a collection of playlets each dealing with one episode in the saint's life. Part of

another series on Queen Victoria was produced in London 1937 as *Victoria Regina* and *Happy and Glorious* followed 1945. He was the brother of A E <u>Housman</u>.

# Hovey, Richard (1864-1900)

US poet. A committed 'bohemian', he wrote much original verse, collaborated with William <u>Carman</u> in *Songs from Vagabondia* 1894, 1896, and 1901, and published a volume of lyrics, *Along the Trail* 1898.

# Howard, Elizabeth Jane (1923-)

English novelist and short-story writer. Her novels are carefully written, closely observed stories of contemporary society, about individuals who seek moral and emotional security. Her novels include *The Long View* (1956), *Odd Girl Out* (1972), *Getting It Right* (1982), and *Falling* (1999). Short-story collections include *Mr Wrong* (1975).

Other books include the novels *The Beautiful Visit* (1950; John Llewellyn Rhys Memorial Prize), *The Sea Change* (1959), and *Something in Disguise* (1969). *The Light Years* (1990) begins, and *Casting Off* (1995) concludes, a quartet of novels of the 1930s and 1950s about the Cazalet family.

# Howard, Richard (Joseph) (1929-)

US poet, critic, and translator. As a poet he became known for his historical dramatic monologues; *Untitled Subjects* 1969 won a Pulitzer Prize. His many translations introduced modern French fiction to US audiences; his verse translation of <u>Baudelaire</u>'s *Les Fleurs du mal* 1983 won an American Book Award.

# Howatch, Susan (1940-)

English writer of best-selling fiction, best-known for her six 'Starbridge' novels which focus on the Church of England in the 20th century, including *Absolute Truths* (1995).

Other works include Penmarric (1971), The Rich are Different (1977), Sins of the Fathers (1980), Glittering Images (1987), Glamorous Powers (1988), Ultimate Prizes (1989), Scandalous Risks (1991), Mystical Paths (1992), A Question of Integrity (1997), and The High Flyer (1999).

# Howe, Irving (1920-1993)

US literary critic and biographer. Howe's career is notable for blending socialist activism and literary and cultural criticism. Founder and editor of *Dissent* from 1954, his numerous essays and books concern most notably the American novel, the position of literary intellectuals in modern America, and New York's Jewish immigrants.

# Howell, James (c. 1594-1666)

Welsh author. His works include *Dodona's Grove* 1640, a political allegory; *Instructions for Foreign Travel* 1642; and the work on which his reputation rests, *Epistolae Ho-Elianae, or Familiar Letters* 1655. Addressed to imaginary correspondents and mostly written during his imprisonment for royalist sympathies, it is one of the most entertaining books of its time.

# Howells, William Dean (1837-1920)

US novelist and editor. The 'dean' of US letters in the post-Civil War era, and editor of *The Atlantic Monthly*, he championed the realist movement in fiction and encouraged many younger authors. He wrote 35 novels, 35 plays, and many books of poetry, essays, and commentary.

His novels, filled with vivid social detail, include *A Modern Instance* 1882 and *The Rise of Silas Lapham* 1885, about the social fall and moral rise of a New England paint manufacturer, a central fable of the 'Gilded Age'.

# Howitt, William (1792-1879)

English author. A prolific miscellaneous writer, his most successful work was a *Popular History of England* 1856-64. He frequently collaborated with his wife, Mary, and their work covered poetry, fiction, history, translation, and social and economic subjects; useful and pleasing in its day, little has survived.

# Howl

poem 1956 by US poet Allen <u>Ginsberg</u>. Written in long, chanting cadences, the poem protests against modern American materialism and conformism. It caused an immediate sensation on its first public reading in San Francisco 1955 and became a powerful call to the emerging <u>Beat Generation</u>.

# Hrabal, Bohumil (1914-1997)

Czech writer, born in Moravia. He began writing after 1962. His novels depict ordinary people caught up in events they do not control or comprehend, including *Ostre sledované vlaky/Closely Observed Trains* (1965; filmed 1967), *I Served the King of England* (1975; published 1986), *The Millions of Arlequin* (1981), *Snowdrop Festivities* (1981; filmed 1984), and *Too Loud a Solitude* (filmed 1994).

# Hubbard, Elbert Green (1856-1915)

US writer and printer. His chief work is *A Message to García* 1899, through which the Cuban lawyer and revolutionary Calixto García (1836-1898) became widely known in the USA. His printing business, the Roycroft Corporation, published artistic books.

# Huch, Ricarda (1864-1947)

German writer. A leader of the neo-Romantics, her finest novels include Aus der Triumphgasse 1902, dealing with Italian working-class life, and Der grosse Krieg in Deutschland 1912-14, on the Thirty Years' War. As a critic, she wrote brilliantly on German Romanticism in Die Blütezeit der Romantik 1899 and Die Ausbreitung und Verfall der Romantik 1902. She also wrote on political subjects (Michael Bakunin und die Anarchie 1923) and religion (Luthers Glaube 1915, Das Zeitalter der Glaubenspaltung 1937).

# Hudson, W(illiam) H(enry) (1841-1922)

British author, born of US parents in Argentina. He was inspired by recollections of early days in Argentina to write the romances *The Purple Land* 1885 and *Green Mansions* 1904, and his autobiographical *Far Away and Long Ago* 1918. He wrote several books on birds, and on the English countryside, for example, *Nature in Down-Land* 1900 and *A Shepherd's Life* 1910.

# Hughes, (James) Langston (1902-1967)

US poet, novelist, and playwright. A leading black writer of his time, he published several collections of poetry, including *The Weary Blues* (1926); the novel *Not Without Laughter* (1930); and plays, including *Mulatto* (1935).

Other works include a study of music for children, *The First Book of Jazz* (1955); and folklore, *The Book of Negro Folklore* (1958).

# Hughes, Richard (Arthur Warren) (1900-1976)

English writer. His study of childhood, *A High Wind in Jamaica*, was published in 1929; his story of a ship's adventures in a hurricane, *In Hazard* in 1938; and the historical novel *The Fox in the Attic* in 1961. He also wrote some poetry and plays (his *Collected Plays* appeared in 1928), and short stories.

# Hughes, Shirley (1927-)

English author and illustrator of books for children. Following her first picture book, *Lucy and Tom's Day* (1960), she has written and illustrated many books, including *Dogger* (1977; Kate Greenaway Medal) and a series of 'Alfie' books, including *Alfie's Feet* (1982), *The Big Alfie Out of Doors Story Book* (1992), and *Alfie's Birthday Surprise* (1997). Her works of poetry for children include *Out and About* (1988) and *Rhymes for Annie Rose* (1995).

She has also illustrated books by other authors including the 'My Naughty Little Sister' series by Dorothy Edwards.

# Hughes, Ted (Edward James) (1930-1998)

English poet. His work is characterized by its harsh portrayal of the crueller aspects of nature, by its reflection of the agonies of personal experience, and by the employment of myths of creation and being, as in *Crow* (1970) and *Gaudete* (1977). His free-verse renderings, *Tales from Ovid* won the 1997 Whitbread Book of the Year Award, and his collection *Birthday Letters* was awarded the 1998 Forward Prize and the 1998 Whitbread Book of the Year Award. His collections include *The Hawk in the Rain* (1957), *Lupercal* (1960), *Wodwo* (1967), *Wolfwatching* (1989), and *Winter Pollen: Occasional Prose* (1994). His novels for children include *The Iron Man* (1968). He was the poet laureate from 1984 until his death, and was awarded the Order of Merit in 1998.

Hughes was born in Mytholmroyd, West Yorkshire, and educated at Cambridge University. He worked in various jobs as a gardener, security guard, film reader, and teacher. *Birthday Letters* (1998) is a collection of poems written at various times, following the course of his seven-year marriage to the US poet Sylvia <u>Plath</u>.

English writer. He is best known as the author of <u>Tom Brown's School Days</u> (1857), a story of Rugby School under Thomas Arnold, with an underlying religious sense, which was the forerunner of the modern school story. It had a sequel, *Tom Brown at Oxford* (1861).

# Hugo, Victor (Marie) (1802-1885)

French novelist, poet, and dramatist. The verse play *Hernani* (1830) firmly established Hugo as the leader of French Romanticism. This was the first of a series of dramas produced in the 1830s and early 1840s, including *Le Roi s'amuse* (1832) and *Ruy Blas* (1838). His melodramatic novels include *Notre-Dame de Paris* (1831), and *Les <u>Misérables</u>* (1862).

Hugo's position in French literature is important: he gave French Romanticism a peculiarly decorative character and kept the Romantic spirit alive in France for some 30 years after its apparent demise. His writing is notable for its vitality, wide scope, graceful lyrical power, rhetorical magnificence, the ability to express pathos, awe, and indignation; and the variety of style and skill displayed in his handling of metre and language. Despite a lack of humour and proportion, and an all-pervading egoism, Hugo remains a literary giant.

# Hulme, Keri (1947-)

New Zealand poet and novelist. She won the Commonwealth Booker Prize with her first novel *The Bone People* (1985), which centres on an autistic child and those close to him. Acutely responsive to maritime landscape, it lyrically incorporates the more mystical aspects of Maori experience. Her other works include the novella *Lost Possessions* (1985); *The Windeater/Te Kaihau* (1986), a collection of short stories; *Homeplaces*, with photographs by Robin Morrison (1989); *Strands* (1992), a poetry collection; and the novel *Bait* (1999).

# Hulme, T(homas) E(rnest) (1883-1917)

English poet, philosopher, and critic. He was killed on active service in World War I. As a poet he condemned the vagueness of the romantic Georgian school, demanding instead hardness and precision. His *Speculations* (1924) influenced T S <u>Eliot</u> and his few poems inspired the <u>Imagist</u> movement.

# Human Comedy, The

#### French La Comédie humaine

series of novels by Honoré de <u>Balzac</u>, collectively published 1842-46, which aimed to depict every aspect of 19th-century French life. Of the 143 planned, 80 were completed. These include studies of human folly and vice, as in *Le Recherche de l'absolu/The Search for the Absolute*, and analyses of professions or ranks, as in *L'Illustre Gaudissart/The Famous Gaudissart* and *Le Curé de village/The Village Parson*.

# Hume, Alexander (c. 1560-1609)

Scottish poet. He is best known for the poem 'The Day Estivall', a charming, fresh, and serene description of a summer day.

### Hume, Fergus (1859-1932)

British writer. Educated in New Zealand, he returned to England in 1888; his *Mystery of a Hansom Cab* 1887 was one of the first detective stories.

### Humilis

pseudonym of the French poet Germain Nouveau.

# Humphrey, William (1924-)

US writer. His first novel, *Home from the Hills* 1958, was well received; it is set in the Red River country of northeast Texas, the locale of most of his fiction. *The Ordways* 1965 was his second novel; a later one was *Hostages to Fortune* 1984. In addition to short stories, critical articles, and a memoir, he published many articles on his activities as an outdoorsman and two books on fishing. He lived for awhile in Italy, then returned to the USA and taught at various colleges and universities; his longest stay was at Bard College, New York, and this led him to settle for many of his later years in Hudson, New York.

### Humphries, (George) Rolfe (1894-1969)

US poet and teacher. He studied at Stanford 1912-13 and Amherst (BA 1915), where, after a career of teaching Latin, he returned to teach English 1957-65. He wrote poetry, but is best known for his translations, notably of Virgil, Ovid and Federico

## Hunchback of Notre Dame, The

#### French Notre-Dame de Paris

historical novel by Victor <u>Hugo</u> published in France 1831. Set in 15th-century Paris, it describes the corrupt and obsessive love of the archdeacon of the cathedral of Notre Dame for a Romany dancer who is served with devotion by the hunchbacked bellringer. Colourful and violent, it has many vivid scenes, including a dramatic midnight attack on the cathedral.

### Huneker, James Gibbons (1860-1921)

US critic and musician. In 1887 he began to write for the *Musical Courier* and continued to write for a series of newspapers and periodicals until his death, broadening his subjects to include drama, art, literature, and the cultural scene in general. He also published over a dozen books, including some serious studies of musicians such as *Chopin: The Man and His Music* 1900, but mostly wide-ranging commentaries, such as *Ivory, Apes and Peacocks* 1915.

### Hungarian literature

written literature has been traced back to 1200 but it was a rich surviving oral literature that influenced Bálint Balassi (1554-1594) and the development of a secular poetic tradition in the 16th century. Habsburg Hungary welcomed the baroque, reflected in major poets such as Miklós Zrínyi (1620-1664). The Enlightenment stimulated writers such as the lyric poet Mihály Csokonai Vitéz (1773-1805) but the national epics of János Arany and the revolutionary fervour of his friend Sándor Petöfi reached a much wider public. The Hungarian novel, influenced by European realism, was developed by the arch-romantic Mór Jókai (1825-1904) and his biographer Kálmán Mikszáth (1847-1910). In the early 20th century the leftist literary magazine *Nyugat* involved distinguished writers including the Symbolist poet Endre Ady (1877-1919). Socialist writing, such as the work of Tibor Déry (1894-1977), flourished between the wars. Although the suppression of the 1956 uprising discouraged writers who had benefited from a post-Stalinist thaw, influentially courageous and troubled poets such as Ferenc Juhász (1928-) and László Nagy (1925-1978) have continued to confront the intractable problems of life, death, and Hungary.

English novelist. She was a daughter of A W Hunt, a Pre-Raphaelite painter, and grew up in the Rossetti circle. Her first novel was *The Maiden's Progress* 1894; several others followed. *The Wife of Rossetti* 1932 is biographical and *The Flurried Years* 1926, a book of memoirs, gives interesting accounts of the people she met.

# Hunt, (James Henry) Leigh (1784-1859)

English essayist and poet. He influenced and encouraged the Romantics. His verse, though easy and agreeable, is little appreciated today, and he is best remembered as an essayist. He recycled parts of his *Lord Byron and some of his Friends* (1828), in which he criticized Byron's character, as *Autobiography* (1850). The character of Harold Skimpole in Charles Dickens's *Bleak House* was allegedly based on him.

The appearance in his Liberal newspaper the *Examiner* of an unfavourable article that he had written about the Prince Regent caused him to be convicted for libel and imprisoned in 1813. He was the friend of and publisher of poems by Byron, Keats, and Shelley.

# Hunter, Evan (1926-2005)

#### adopted name of Evan Lombino

US writer. Extremely prolific, he wrote short stories, plays, and film scripts, but he is best known for his novels dealing with contemporary social issues; *The Blackboard Jungle* 1954, based on his teaching experience, was his greatest success. His 87th Precinct crime novels, written under the pen-name of Ed McBain, are also popular. He also wrote under the names Hunt Collins and Richard Marsten.

### Hurst, Fannie (1889-1968)

US novelist. She has been called 'the sob-sister of American fiction'. Her novels include *Lummox* 1923, the story of a servant girl; *Back Street* 1930; *Lonely Parade* 1942; and *Anywoman* 1950.

# Hurston, Zora Neale (1901-1960)

US writer. She was associated with the <u>Harlem Renaissance</u>. She collected traditional Afro-American folk tales in *Mules and Men* (1935) and *Tell My Horse* (1938). Among her many other works are the novel *Their Eyes Were Watching God* (1937) and her autobiography *Dust Tracks on a Road* (1942).

Although her conservative philosophy of her later years alienated many of her contemporaries, she was a key figure for following generations of black women writers, including Alice Walker, who edited a collection of her writings, *I Love Myself When I Am Laughing* (1979).

# Hu Shi (or Hu Shih) (1891-1962)

Chinese liberal scholar and reformer. He wrote extensively on Chinese philosophy, but is best known for his championing of *bai hua*, the new Chinese vernacular that would make literature accessible to the masses, and wrote poetry in *bai hua*, *Experimental poems* (1920). An opponent of communism, he served the Nationalist government as ambassador to the USA 1938-42 and United Nations 1957, and was president of the Academia Sinica of Taiwan 1958-62.

Born in Jiqi (Chi-ch'i), Anhui (Anhwei) province, he went to school in Shanghai, and went on to study English literature, political science and philosophy at the universities of Cornell 1910-14 and Columbia 1915-17, where he became a disciple of the philosopher John Dewey and developed his ideas for the revitalization of Chinese culture and literature by the use of the vernacular. He was Professor of Philosophy at Beijing (Peking) University 1917-26 and at Shanghai 1927-31, and Dean of the College of Arts and Letters at Beijing 1932-37.

# Hutchinson, Arthur Stuart Menteth (1879-1971)

English novelist. His most successful book was *If Winter Comes* 1920. It was followed by *This Freedom* 1922, *Big Business* 1932, *As Once We Were* 1938, and *It Happened Like This* 1942.

# Hutton, Will(iam) Nicholas (1950-)

English editor and writer on political and economic issues. Hutton joined *The Guardian* as economics editor in 1990, and was appointed assistant editor in 1995. He moved to *The Observer* in 1996, becoming editor-in-chief in 1998. In 2000, following his appointment as chief executive at the Industrial Society, the UK's largest training organization, he stepped down from *The Observer* and the board of Guardian Media Group, but remained a contributing editor and leading columnist. He is widely credited as the originator of UK prime minister Tony Blair's 'stakeholder' economy concept: that the individual ought to have a stake or an investment in all aspects of society.

Initially a senior producer and editor for the Radio 4 current affairs programme *The Financial World Tonight* from 1978 to 1981, Hutton was a director and producer of *The Money Programme* for BBC2 (1981-83). He was economics correspondent for

*Newsnight* and a reporter for *Panorama* between 1983 and 1988, and in 1988 became editor of the European Business Channel. After writing *The Revolution That Never Was: An Assessment of Keynesian Economics* (1986), Hutton published *The State We're In* in 1995 - a challenge to the economic status quo in the UK, and a virulent attack on the Thatcherite policies of the 1980s - which was later serialized by Channel 4. He championed the concept of stakeholder capitalism, balancing the interests of customers, shareholders and workers. In *The State to Come* (1997) Hutton attacked globalization and outlined policies to minimize the social risks of a free market (itself identified as a shift of power to employers and a sharp increase in inequality).

# Huxley, Aldous (Leonard) (1894-1963)

English writer of novels, essays, and verse. From the disillusionment and satirical eloquence of *Crome Yellow* (1921), *Antic Hay* (1923), and *Point Counter Point* (1928), Huxley developed towards the Utopianism (perfect political and social conditions) exemplified by *Island* (1962). His most popular work, the science fiction novel <u>Brave New World</u> (1932) shows human beings mass-produced in laboratories and rendered incapable of freedom by indoctrination and drugs.

Huxley was born in Godalming, Surrey, and educated at Oxford University. He was the grandson of the scientist and humanist Thomas Henry Huxley and brother of the biologist and writer of popular science books Julian Huxley. Aldous Huxley intended to become a doctor, but was hindered by problems with his sight, being blind for a time. Later his eyesight partly recovered and he graduated from Oxford with an English degree in 1915. Huxley joined the staff of the *Athenaeum* in 1919 and did miscellaneous literary work. He was in Italy 1923-30, writing novels, and he associated with English writer D H Lawrence there. In 1934 he visited Central America and in 1938 settled permanently in California. Huxley's later devotion to mysticism led to his experiments with the hallucinogenic drug mescalin, recorded in *The Doors of Perception* (1954). His other works include the philosophical novel *Eyeless in Gaza* (1936), *After Many a Summer* (1939; Tait Black Memorial Prize), the biography of French monk Père Joseph *Grey Eminence* (1941), and *The Devils of Loudun* (1952).

# Huxley, Elspeth Josceline (1907-1997)

#### born Elspeth Grant

English novelist. Born in Kenya, she wrote many fictional works and essays on her native land, its history, and its problems. Her best-known novel is *The Flame Trees of Thika* (1959), which deals with her childhood, as do *The Mottled Lizard* (1962), and *Death of an Aryan* (1986, also known as *The African Poison Murders*).

In 1993 she published a biography of Peter Scott entitled *Peter Scott: Painter and Naturalist.* 

# Huygens, Constantijn (1596-1687)

Dutch poet and diplomat. The personal and lyrical quality of his shorter poems (*Korenbloemen*), the didactic fervour in such works as *Costelick Mal* 1622, satirizing feminine vanity, and the affection for his birthplace in his autobiographical poems *Batave Tempe* 1621 and *Uytlandighe Herder* 1622 are somewhat obscured by an intellectual subtlety and virtuosity, which he abandoned in his scurrilous farce *Tryntje Cornelisdr* 1653.

# Huysmans, J(oris) K(arl) (1848-1907)

#### adopted name of Charles Marie Georges Huysmans

French novelist. His novel *A rebours/Against Nature* (1884), with its self-absorbed aestheticism, symbolized the decadent movement. The writing of *Là-bas/Down There* (1891), the life of a Satanist, prompted Huysmans to turn to Catholicism and *En route* (1895) describes his religious journey.

His novel *Marthe* (1876), the story of a courtesan, was followed by other novels, all of which feature solitary protagonists. Other works include the realistic *En ménage* (1881). *La Cathédrale/The Cathedral* (1898) is among the finest pieces of mystic literature, while *L'Oblat/The Lay Brother* (1903) and *Les Foules de Lourdes/The Crowds of Lourdes* (1906) are his chief later works.

# Hviezdoslav (1849-1921)

#### pseudonym of Pavol Orszagh

Slovak poet, dramatist, and translator. He wrote the pacifist *Krvavé sonety/Sonnets of Blood* 1919, the two-part chronicle *Ezo Vlkolinský* 1890 and *Gábor Vlkolinský* 1897-99, and his Christian verse narrative *Hájnikova zena/The Gamekeeper's Wife* 1884. He also translated many authors into Czech, including Shakespeare and Goethe. He was influenced by his contemporary Jaroslav Vrchlický.

# Hyde, Douglas (1860-1949)

pseudonym An Craoibhín Aoibhinn ('the pleasant little branch')

Irish writer, scholar, and propagandist, president of Ireland 1938-45. He became president of the Gaelic League in 1893. His translations of Irish poetry and prose

developed an English style that reflected Gaelic idiom and syntax, and had considerable influence on the younger writers of the Irish literary revival. However, he attempted to resist the politicization of the Gaelic League, and resigned as its president in 1915. He was a member of the Senate from 1925, and was chosen as president of Ireland by agreement between the parties in 1938.

Hyde was professor of Irish at University College Dublin, 1909-32. His important published works include *Love Songs of Connacht* (1893), his *Literary History of Ireland* (1899) and *The Religious Songs of Connacht* (1906). He wrote *Casadh ant Sugáin* (1901), the first modern play in Irish.

# Hyne, Charles John Cutcliffe Wright (1865-1944)

English novelist and traveller. His most popular story is *The Adventures of Captain Kettle* 1898. Other stories include *The Lost Continent* 1900, *Mr Horrocks, Purser* 1902, and various sequels to *The Adventures of Captain Kettle* which continued until 1938.

# Hypnerotomachia Polifili

### (Dream of Polyphilius)

an Italian prose romance published in 1499. Written in both Latin and Italian by the Dominican monk Francesco <u>Colonna</u>, it describes a lover's search for his mistress. Printed by Aldus Manutius, it was celebrated for the beauty of its woodcut illustrations and typography.

The anonymous woodcut illustrations reflect the influence of both Andrea Mantegna and Giovanni Bellini; several of them record contemporary Italian garden designs, and others are remarkable as architectural fantasies.

### iambic

in poetry, any verse metre in which the basic unit (the foot) consists of two syllables, the first unstressed, the second stressed. Iambic metre is close to natural speech and is one of the most widely used metres in English verse. The following example is a line from Thomas Gray's poem 'Elegy Written in a Country Churchyard' (1751). It has five iambic feet, and is thus in a form known as iambic pentameter. The cur / few tolls / the knell / of part / ing day

lambic pentameter is the basis of **blank verse**, a form frequently used in Elizabethan drama.

# Ibáñez, Vicente Blasco (1867-1928)

Spanish novelist and politician. His novels include *La barraca/The Cabin* (1898), the most successful of his regional works; *Sangre y arena/Blood and Sand* (1908), the story of a famous bullfighter; and *Los cuatro jinetes del Apocalipsis/The Four Horsemen of the Apocalypse* (1916), a product of the effects of World War I. He was actively involved in revolutionary politics.

# Ibn Bajja (died 1138)

#### Latin Avempace

Spanish-born Arab philosopher and poet. He worked as a physician in Seville, Spain. He followed al-Farabi's interpretation of late Greek philosophy. His summaries of Aristotle have survived, together with a number of small treatises upon a variety of subjects; many of them remain unpublished. Ibn Bajja was born in Zaragoza (Saragossa), Spain.

# Ibn Ezra (or Abenezra), Abraham (c. 1089-1164)

Spanish-born Jewish scholar. He lectured and published works on philosophy, grammar, medicine, mathematics, poetry, and astronomy. He is known for his commentary on the Old Testament and for his poetry. Ibn Ezra was born in Toledo, Spain.

# Ibn Gabirol, Solomon ben Judah (c. 1020-c. 1057)

#### Latin Avicebron

Poet and philosopher, born in Moorish Spain. As a poet, he ranks with the greatest medieval writers, and some of his shorter religious hymns have been incorporated into the Jewish liturgy. His main philosophical work, originally written in Arabic, is fully preserved only in the Latin translation, *Fons Vitae*.

*Fons Vitae* is neo-Platonic in thought, yet also contains elements of Aristotle and Philo Judaeus. It influenced Duns Scotus, the Franciscan order, the philosophers Baruch Spinoza and Arthur Schopenhauer, and (in a Hebrew translation) the Kabbalah.

Japanese novelist and poet. His novel *Kuroi ame/Black Rain* 1966 is a powerful and moving account of the devastating effects of nuclear war. Other works include *Tomonotsu chakai ki/Recordings of the Tea Ceremonies at Tomonotsu* 1984, an account, in the form of diary records, of events at thirteen 16th-century tea ceremonies.

# Ibycus (lived 6th century BC)

Greek lyric poet, born at Rhegium. He lived at the court of Polycrates at Samos. The extant verses attributed to him are believed to have been supplemented in modern times by the discovery at Oxyrhynchus of a papyrus containing about 50 lines of a poem in honour of Polycrates. He was said to have been killed by robbers, a crime witnessed by a flock of cranes. Later, at the Isthmian games, some cranes appeared and caused the murderers to expose their guilt.

# Icaza, Jorge (1906-1978)

Ecuadorean author and novelist His play *El Dictador*, scripted in 1933, gained widespread criticism and evoked censorship by the government. His first novel *Huasipungo* (1934) was openly critical of government apathy towards the treatment of native Indian peoples.

Between 1932-37, whilst employed within the government treasury department, Icaza was active scriptwriting. It was in the area of acting and theatre that he commenced his early writing career, later diversifying into novels.

*Huasipungo* (1934) was a huge success and, although rejected in some quarters, it was seen as a vivid and accurate portrayal of events concerning the native Indians' struggle for land.

# Ignatow, David (1914-1997)

US poet. In 1932 he became a journalist for the Works Progress Administration (WPA). He taught at the New School for Social Research 1962-64, Vassar College 1967-68, Columbia University in 1968, and City University 1968-84. He is praised as a lyrical autobiographical poet, as seen in *New and Collected Poems (1970-85)*.

IIf, Ilya Arnoldovich (1897-1937)

pseudonym of Ilya Arnoldovich Fainzilberg

Russian humorous writer. He worked in collaboration with a fellow native of Odessa, Evgeni Petrov. They began their literary partnership in 1927, producing two satirical novels, *Dvenadsat stulyev/The Twelve Chairs* 1928 and *Zolotoi telenok/The Golden Calf* 1931, featuring the charming swindler Ostap Bender, and satirizing aspects of Soviet life. Ilf and Petrov also wrote *Odnoetazhnaya Amerika/One-Storied America* 1936, about their visit to the USA.

Ilf and Petrov's satires incurred Stalin's displeasure, but were (and still are) immensely popular in Russia.

# lliad

Greek epic poem, product of an oral tradition; it was possibly written down by 700 BC and is attributed to <u>Homer</u>. The title is derived from Ilion, the Greek name for Troy. Its subject is the wrath of the Greek hero Achilles at the loss of his concubine Briseis, and at the death of his friend Patroclus, during the Greek siege of Troy. The poems ends with the death of the Trojan hero Hector at the hands of Achilles.

# Illyés, Gyula (1902-1983)

Hungarian writer, poet, and translator. He was a leading figure of the Populist writers' movement in the 1930s. *Puszták népe/People of the Puszta* 1936 is a partly autobiographical evocation of the hardships of peasant life on the Great Hungarian Plain. His *Selected Poems* was published in 1971.

Illyés was the editor of several periodicals, including *Nyugat*, *Válasz/Response*, and *Magyar Csillag/Hungarian Star*. He was highly critical of the Stalinist regime during the 1956 uprising. He published a volume of memoirs, *Beatrice apródjai/Beatrice's Pageboys*, in 1979.

### Imagism

movement in Anglo-American poetry that flourished from 1912 to 1914 and affected much US and British poetry and critical thinking thereafter. A central figure was Ezra <u>Pound</u>, who asserted the principles of free verse, complex imagery, and poetic impersonality.

Pound encouraged Hilda Doolittle to sign her verse H D Imagiste and in 1914 edited the *Des Imagistes* anthology. Poets subsequently influenced by this movement include T S Eliot, William Carlos Williams, Wallace Stevens, and Marianne Moore. Imagism established modernism in English-language verse.

# Imber, Naphtali Herz (1856-1909)

Itinerant Hebrew poet. A Zionist and champion of the restoration of Hebrew as a modern spoken language, he wrote *Hatikva/The Hope* (1878), which became the Zionist anthem in 1897 and the Israeli national anthem in 1948. He wrote in Hebrew and Yiddish.

Born in Austria-Hungary, Imber travelled to Palestine and worked as secretary to the wife of British general Oliphant, then went to England and the USA.

# Immermann, Karl Leberecht (1796-1840)

German dramatist, poet, and novelist. He wrote the historical tragedies *Das Trauerspiel in Tirol* 1827 and *Kaiser Friedrich II* 1828, and the mystic poem *Merlin* 1831. Of his novels, *Die Epigonen* 1836 and *Münchhausen* 1838 are the best known. *Der Oberhof*, included in the latter, started the vogue of the peasant story in Germany.

# Importance of Being Earnest, The

romantic stage comedy by Oscar <u>Wilde</u>, first performed in 1895. The courtships of two couples are comically complicated by confusions of identity and by the overpowering Lady Bracknell.

# improvisation

creating a play, a poem, or any other imaginative work, without preparation. The term is used in GCSE English for the unprepared piece of drama most students undertake as part of their assessment in the Speaking and Listening section of their examination. The word has already been twisted from its original meaning in this context, and the term 'prepared improvisation' is being used to show that some preparation time has been allowed.

# Imru'-al-Qays (died c. 550)

Arab poet. He is regarded as the greatest poet of pre-Islamic times and one of the founders of Arabic poetry. He is the author of one of the seven Mu'allaqat collections of odes.

# Inchbald, Elizabeth (1753-1821)

#### born Elizabeth Simpson

English writer and actor. She used her experience as a dramatist in writing two serious novels in which high-spirited heroines struggle against society's restraints on women: *A Simple Story* 1791, which is also the first Catholic novel in English, and *Nature and Art* 1796. Her plays include the topical *The Mogul Tale: or, The Descent of the Balloon* 1788 and *Lover's Vows* 1798 (freely translated from *Das Kind der Liebe* 1790 by the German popular dramatist August von Kotzebue (1761-1819)), which features in Jane Austen's novel *Mansfield Park*.

# In Cold Blood

non-fiction novel (1965) by US writer Truman <u>Capote</u>. Subtitled 'A True Account of a Multiple Murder and its Consequences', it was based on interviews and tells of the murder of a Kansas farming family in 1959 by two psychopaths and their subsequent trial and execution. The book was hailed for its vivid treatment of social issues and launched the genre of creative reportage, promoted as the New Journalism.

# Indian literature

literature of the Indian subcontinent, written in Sanskrit, in the Dravidian languages such as Tamil, in the vernacular languages derived from Sanskrit, such as Urdu and Hindi, and, largely in the 20th century, English.

### Sanskrit

The oldest surviving examples of Indian literature are the sacred Hindu texts from the Vedic period of about 1500-200 BC. These include the *Vedas* and the later *Upanishads* 800-200 BC, which are philosophical reflections upon the *Vedas*. Of the same period are the *Sutras* 500-200 BC, collections of aphorisms and doctrinal summaries, including the *Kamasutra* on erotic love. During the epic period (400 BC-AD 400) two major epics were written down: the *Mahabharata* (which contains the *Bhagavad-Gita*) and the shorter *Ramayana*, both about 300 BC. By the classical period (from AD 400), lyric poetry, romances, and drama had developed, the leading poet and dramatist of the period being <u>Kalidasa</u>. The *Panchatantra*, a collection of Hindu myths, were written down in the 4th century AD.

### Dravidian

The Dravidian languages of the south, which are unrelated to Sanskrit, had their own strong and ancient literary traditions, though gradually they were influenced by the literatures of the north. The two major works of Tamil are the verse anthologies the

Pattuppattu and the Ettutogaiad, both 1st century AD.

#### vernacular

By AD 1000 extensive vernacular literatures had developed - largely through popularizations of Sanskrit classics - in those languages derived from Sanskrit, such as Urdu, Hindi, and Gujarati. From the 17th century, Urdu poetry flourished at the Mogul court, where it was strongly influenced by classical Persian literature. The poets Asadullah Ghalib (1797-1869) and Muhammad Iqbal wrote in Urdu and Persian. Bengali literature in particular was encouraged by the wide use of printing presses in the 19th century. Bengali writers include Bankim Chandra Chatterji, Romesh Chunder Dutt (1848-1909), and Rabindranath Tagore who was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature 1913. The spiritual and political leader Mahatma Gandhi wrote in Gujarati.

# Indritz, Phineas (1916-1997)

US attorney and women's rights activist. Described as 'an unsung hero of the movement for social justice and equal treatment under law', Indritz authored the Pregnancy Disability Act of 1978 and additional Maryland legislation prohibiting discrimination against women. He worked with Catherine East, Mary Eastwood, and others to motivate the founding of the National Organization of Women (NOW) and authored much of the civil-rights legislation that later became law.

Born in Silver Spring, Maryland, Indritz became a respected attorney in Washington, DC, and gave generously of his time and talents in writing appellate court briefs in women's rights cases. He was presented with a pro bono award in 1993 from the NAACP Legal Defense and Education Fund.

### Ingelow, Jean (1820-1897)

English novelist and poet. The volume *Poems* 1863 contains 'The High Tide on the Coast of Lincolnshire, 1571' and 'A Story of Doom' 1867. Among her novels are *Mopsa the Fairy* 1869, *Off the Skelligs* 1872, *Fated to be Free* 1875, and *Don John* 1881.

# Ingraham, Prentiss (1843-1904)

US writer. He became a writer of popular historical 'dime novels' for the Beadle series; he also wrote plays, short stories, and poetry. He was best known for writing a highly romantic biography of his friend, William Cody, that created his reputation as 'Buffalo Bill'.

# Inoue, Yasushi (1907-1991)

Japanese writer (fiction, travel essays, art history). His interest in China and central Asia is evident in many stories and historical novels. The novels feature isolated protagonists at dramatic moments of Asian history. Examples are *Tempyo no iraka/ The Roof Tile of Tempyo* 1957, translation 1976, *Koshi*, based on the life of Confucius, and *Shirobama*, describing a childhood in old Japan.

# interlude

#### or Tudor interlude

in 16th-century England, a short dramatic work, often comical, performed in the intervals of a banquet or court pageant, or between the parts of mystery plays. The characters were usually traditional personifications, such as Mercy, Youth, or Gluttony. Interludes appeared in the transitional period (*c.* 1500-*c.* 1575) between the medieval religious drama (mystery, morality, and miracle plays) and Elizabethan drama.

John <u>Heywood</u> was the first English playwright to treat the interlude as an independent dramatic form and to use characters who were social types (for example, friars or pedlars) rather than moral qualities. An example is his farcical interlude *The Pardoner and the Friar* (1533).

# Invisible Man

novel (1952) by US writer Ralph <u>Ellison</u> about an unnamed hero who discovers that because of his blackness he lacks all social identity in post-war US society.

# lon (c. 490-c. 421 BC)

Greek poet of Chios, who also lived at Athens. His first tragedy was produced between 452 and 449 BC and he subsequently gained prizes for both his tragic works and dithyrambs (choral hymns). He is the reputed author of a philsophical treatise on the mystic number three, and is credited with various epigrams, paeans (hymns of thanksgiving), elegies, encomia (eulogies), and comedies. He also wrote five historical or biographical works, including an account of the antiquities of Chios.

Iqbal, Muhammad (1876-1938)

Islamic poet and thinker. His literary works, in Urdu and Persian, were mostly verse in the classical style, suitable for public recitation. He sought through his writings to arouse Muslims to take their place in the modern world. He was knighted in 1922.

His most celebrated work, the Persian *Asra-e khudi/Secrets of the Self* 1915, put forward a theory of the self that was opposite to the traditional abnegation found in Islam. He was an influence on the movement that led to the creation of Pakistan.

### Ireland, William Henry (1777-1835)

English literary forger. He invented documents concerning Shakespeare and imitated his handwriting and signature. The forgeries were so well executed that they deceived the experts. Encouraged by his success Ireland wrote two plays, *Vortigern and Rowena* and *Henry II*, which he ascribed to Shakespeare. The critic Edmund Malone exposed the fraud, which Ireland acknowledged in his *Authentic Account* 1796 and *Confessions* 1805.

# Iriarte, Tomas de (1750-1791)

Spanish poet. He published his first original comedy, *Hacer que hacemos*, 1770. A dull didactic poem, *La música* 1779, inspired by Haydn, was much admired, but he is best known for his *Fábulas literarias* 1782, a discussion of literature by animals.

### Irish literature

early Irish literature, in Gaelic, consists of the sagas, which are mainly in prose, and a considerable body of verse. The chief cycles are that of Ulster, which deals with the mythological Conchobar and his followers, and the Ossianic, which has influenced European literature through <u>Macpherson</u>'s version.

### literature in Gaelic

Early Irish poetry has a unique lyric quality and consists mainly of religious verse and nature poetry, for example, St Patrick's hymn and Ultán's hymn to St Brigit. Much pseudohistorical verse is also extant, ascribed to such poets as Mael Mura (9th century), Mac Liac (10th century), and Flann Mainistrech (11th century). Religious literature in prose includes sermons, saints' lives (for example, those in the *Book of Lismore* and in the writings of Michael O'Clery), and visions. History is represented by annals and by isolated texts like the *Cogad Gaedel re Gallaib*, an account of the Viking invasions by an eyewitness. The 'official' or 'court' verse of the 13th to 17th centuries was produced by a succession of professional poets, notably Tadhg Dall O' Huiginn (died *c.* 1617), Donnchadh Mór O'Dálaigh (d. 1244), and Geoffrey Keating (d. 1646), who wrote in both verse and prose. The bardic schools ceased to exist by the

end of the 17th century. Metre became accentual rather than syllabic. The greatest exponents of the new school were Egan O'Rahilly (early 18th century) and the religious poet Tadhg Gaelach O'Súilleabháin.

### literature in English

The late 19th century onwards saw a resurgence of Irish literature written in English. Oscar Wilde, G B Shaw, and James Joyce represent those who chose to live outside Ireland. More culturally nationalistic were the writers, including W B Yeats, who supported the Gaelic League (aiming to revivify the Irish language) and founded the Abbey Theatre Company in Dublin: this provided a milieu for the realism and fantasy of J M Synge and the intensity and compassion of Sean O'Casey. Since World War II, Ireland has produced two Nobel prizewinners - the dramatist Samuel Beckett and the poet Seamus Heaney - as well as novelists of the calibre of Brian Moore and Edna O'Brien (1936-).

# Irish revival

#### or literary revival or Celtic revival

movement that sought to create, promote, and sustain Irish art, starting in the late 19th century. An extraordinary period of artistic and cultural activity, it had its roots in the earlier Celtic revival of the late 18th century, which developed a keen interest in Irish history, antiquities, music, and poetry of 'ancient Ireland'. The later revival, by contrast, aimed to restore Irish culture forms in literature and music, though naturally the literature produced was distinctly modern in theme and treatment. In this way, the ideals and practices of the Irish revival continues to influence contemporary artists. Although the term is most often used to refer to the literary movement, the exploration and affirmation of Irish identity was evident in other areas, such as architecture, the visual arts, and sports; the movement also paralleled a growth in nationalist politics.

Aspects of the Irish revival were wide and varied. Key elements included the publication of W B <u>Yeats's</u>*Fairy and Folk Tales of the Irish Peasantry* (1888); the foundation of the Gaelic League (1893) with the express purpose of maintaining Irish as a living, spoken language; the development of the Gaelic Athletic Association, established in 1884 to promote national sports; and the establishment of the Abbey Theatre (1897) by W B Yeats, Edward Martyn, George Moore, and Lady Gregory. The ethos of the revival, in the creation of an idea and an image of Ireland that was idealistically rural, mythically powerful, and decidedly not British, was in turn criticized and even mocked by writers such as James <u>Joyce</u> and Samuel Beckett. Nevertheless the movement influenced even its critics.

# Iron, Ralph

pseudonym of the South African writer Olive Schreiner when she published her novel

The Story of an African Farm (1883).

# Irving, John Winslow (1942-)

US novelist. His novels, usually set in the northeastern USA, incorporate themes of family, sexuality, alienation, and religion. His novels include *The World According to Garp* (1978, filmed 1982), a vivid comic tale about a novelist killed by a disappointed reader; *The Cider House Rules* (1985, filmed 1999), an epic tale of a Maine orphanage; and *A Prayer for Owen Meany* (1988), about the accidental killing by a young boy of his best friend's mother. Irving won an Academy Award for his film adaptation of *Cider House Rules*.

Irving was born in Exeter, New Hampshire. His other novels include Setting Free the Bears (1968), The Water-Method Man (1972), The 158-pound Marriage (1974), The Hotel New Hampshire (1981, filmed 1984); A Son of the Circus (1994), A Widow for One Year (1998; filmed as The Door in the Floor in 2004), The Fourth Hand (2001), and Until I Find You (2005).

# Irving, Washington (1783-1859)

US essayist and short-story writer. He published a mock-heroic *History of New York* (1809), supposedly written by the Dutchman 'Diedrich Knickerbocker'. In 1815 he went to England where he published *The Sketch Book of Geoffrey Crayon, Gent* (1820), which contained such stories as 'Rip Van Winkle' and 'The Legend of Sleepy Hollow'.

His other works include *The Alhambra* (1832), sketches about Spanish subjects, and *Tour of the Prairies* (1835), about the American West. His essays and tales remain popular.

### Isaacs, Jorge (1837-1895)

Colombian writer. Son of an English Jew, he settled in Bogotá 1864 and began to publish poetry and fiction. Despite a career in public life, he is chiefly remembered for the famous romantic novel *María* 1867, an idyllic picture of life in his native Cauca Valley.

### Isaacs, Susan (1943-)

US novelist and screenwriter. The plots of her popular mysteries and adventure stories put women (usually suburban housewives) in the leading roles. Her novels

*Compromising Positions* (1978) and *Shining Through* (1988) were bestsellers and were made into films for which she wrote the screenplays.

### Isaeus (c. 420-350 BC)

One of the ten Attic Orators, born probably at Chalcis in Euboea. Having studied under Lysias he became 'logographos', a writer of forensic speeches for delivery by others, and in 366 he helped Demosthenes in the latter's prosecution of his guardians. Eleven speeches of Isaeus have survived intact, together with a large fragment of another. All of them deal directly or indirectly with questions of inheritance; Isaeus is the principal authority on this area of Athenian law.

# Isham, Samuel (1855-1914)

US painter and author. Although a painter, he is best remembered for the publication of *A History of American Painting* 1905. He was born in New York City.

# Isherwood, Christopher (William Bradshaw) (1904-1986)

English-born US novelist. He lived in Germany from 1929-33 just before Hitler's rise to power, a period that inspired *Mr Norris Changes Trains* (1935) and *Goodbye to Berlin* (1939), creating the character of Sally Bowles, the basis of the musical *Cabaret* (1968). Returning to England, he collaborated with W H <u>Auden</u> in three verse plays.

# Ishiguro, Kazuo (1954-)

Japanese-born British novelist. His novel *An Artist of the Floating World* won the 1986 Whitbread Prize, and *The Remains of the Day*, about an English butler coming to realize the extent of his self-sacrifice and self-deception, won the 1989 Booker Prize and was made into a successful film in 1993. His works, which are characterized by a sensitive style and subtle structure, also include *The Unconsoled* (1995), and *When We Were Orphans* (2000), which was shortlisted for the 2000 Booker Prize.

Ishiguro moved with his family to England in 1960 and worked briefly as a social worker. He attended the creative writing course established by the late Malcolm <u>Bradbury</u> and Angus <u>Wilson</u> at the University of East Anglia 1979-80. His first novel, *A Pale View of Hills* (1982), takes place mainly in his native Nagasaki, dealing obliquely with the aftermath of the atom bomb. *An Artist of the Floating World* is set entirely in Japan but thematically linked to *The Remains of the Day*. All three

have in common a melancholy reassessment of the past.

# Iskander, Fazil Abdulovich (1929-)

Georgian satirical writer. He attracted attention with *Sozvezdie kozlotura/The Goatibex Constellation* (1966), an effective satire on the bureaucratic control of agriculture. *Sandro iz Chegema/Uncle Sandro of Chegem* (1973) sardonically explores Stalinist politics and the cultural contrast between the traditions of his native region of Abkhazia and Soviet importations.

### Isla, José Francisco de (1703-1781)

Spanish satirist and Jesuit priest. He lampooned the ignorance of the Spanish priesthood in his novel *Historia del famoso predicador Fray Gerundio de Campazas*. The book was prohibited 1758 because of the storm of protests raised by its victims, but he published a second part 1770, unknown to his superiors. He also translated A-R Le Sage's *Gil Blas* into Spanish.

## Isocrates (436-338 BC)

Greek rhetorician and one of the ten <u>Attic orators</u>. His fame principally rests on a political pamphlet, the 'Panegyric', in which he advocates Greek unity and supremacy. He was a professional speechwriter and teacher of rhetoric, but because of his weak voice and extreme shyness, he never spoke in the courts or addressed a public meeting. Other published works include the manifesto 'Against the Sophists'.

# **Italian literature**

the literature of Italy originated in the 13th century with the Sicilian school, which imitated Provençal poetry.

#### medieval

The works of St Francis of Assisi and Jacopone da Todi reflect the religious faith of that time. Guido Guinicelli (1230-*c.* 1275) and Guido Cavalcanti developed the spiritual conception of love and influenced Dante Alighieri, whose *Divina commedia/Divine Comedy* (1307-21) is generally recognized as the greatest work of Italian literature. Petrarch was a humanist and a poet, celebrated for his sonnets, while Boccaccio is principally known for his tales.

#### Renaissance

The Divina commedia marked the beginning of the Renaissance. Boiardo dealt with the Carolingian epics in his Orlando innamorato/Roland in Love (1487), which was completed and transformed by Lodovico Ariosto as Orlando furioso/The Frenzy of Roland (1516). Their contemporaries Niccolò Machiavelli and Francesco Guicciardini (1483-1540) are historians of note. Torquato Tasso wrote his epic Gerusalemme liberata/Jerusalem Delivered (1574) in the spirit of the Counter-Reformation.

# 17th century

This period was characterized by the exaggeration of the poets Giovanni Battista Marini (1569-1625) and Gabriello Chiabrera (1552-1638). In 1690 the 'Academy of Arcadia' was formed, including among its members Innocenzo Frugoni (1692-1768) and Metastasio. Other writers include Salvator Rosa, the satirist. **18th century** Giuseppe Parini (1729-1799) ridiculed the abuses of his day, while Vittorio Alfieri attacked tyranny in his dramas. Carlo Goldoni wrote comedies.

### 19th century

Ugo Foscolo is chiefly remembered for his patriotic verse. Giacomo Leopardi is not only the greatest lyrical poet since Dante but also a master of Italian prose. The Romantic Alessandro Manzoni is best known as a novelist, and influenced among others the novelist Antonio Fogazzaro. A later outstanding literary figure, Giosuè Carducci, was followed by the verbose Gabriele d'Annunzio, writing of sensuality and violence, and Benedetto Croce, historian and philosopher, who between them dominated Italian literature at the turn of the century.

#### 20th century

Writers include the realist novelists Giovanni Verga and Grazia Deledda, winner of the Nobel Prize in 1926, the dramatist Luigi Pirandello, and the novelists Ignazio Silone and Italo Svevo. Poets of the period include Dino Campana and Giuseppe Ungaretti; and among the modern school are Nobel prizewinners Eugenio Montale and Salvatore Quasimodo. Novelists of the post-Fascist period include Alberto Moravia, Carlo Levi, Cesare Pavese, Vasco Pratolini, Elsa Morante, Natalia Ginsburg, Giuseppe Tomasi, Prince of Lampedusa, and the writers Italo Calvino, Leonardo Sciascia, and Primo Levi.

# Iwaszkiewicz, Jaroslaw (1894-1980)

Polish writer. His work includes verse: *Lato* 1932 and *Mapa pogody* 1977, his greatest achievement; tales and short stories: *Mlyn nad Utrata/The Mill on the Utrata* 1936, *Tatarak* 1960; novels: *Czerwone tarcze/Red Shields* 1935, *Slawa i chwala/Glory and Vainglory* 1952-62; and plays: *Lato w Nohant/Summer at Nohant* 1936, about the composer Frédéric Chopin and the novelist George Sand. He was also the author of numerous essays on cultural topics.

Iwaszkiewicz was co-founder of the Skamander group of lyrical poets and was twice

president of the Union of Polish Writers.

### Jackson, (George) Holbrook (1874-1948)

English literary historian. He was joint editor with A R Orage of the political and literary journal *New Age* 1907, editor of *T. P.'s Magazine* 1911-12 and *T. P.'s Weekly* 1911-14, and owner and editor of a literary journal, *Today*, 1917-23. He wrote studies of Edward FitzGerald 1899 and Bernard Shaw 1907, and a biography of William Morris 1908. His book *The Eighteen Nineties* 1913 is a standard work on the period.

# Jackson, Charles (Reginald) (1903-1968)

US novelist. He wrote the acclaimed *The Lost Weekend* 1944, a powerful and atmospheric psychological study of alcoholism set in Manhattan, which was made into an Academy Award-winning film 1945. His other novels include *The Fall of Valor* 1946, dealing with homosexuality, and *The Outer Edges* 1948, concerning the effects of a newspaper story.

### Jackson, Helen Hunt (1830-1885)

US writer. Her works include two books championing the cause of American Indians, *A Century of Dishonor* 1881 and *Ramona* 1884. Another of her novels, *Mercy Philbrick's Choice* 1876, is said to be based on the character of the poet Emily <u>Dickinson</u>.

### Jackson, Shirley (1919-1965)

US writer whose work includes novels, short stories, and radio and television scripts. She became known for her haunting fiction after the publication of her disturbing short story *The Lottery* 1948. She wrote humorous domestic works as well as horror novels, such as *The Haunting of Hill House* 1959.

### Jacob, Joseph (1854-1916)

Australian-born US folklorist and collector of fairy tales. He published collections of vividly re-told fairy stories such as *English Fairy Tales* 1890, *Celtic Fairy Tales* 1892 and 1894, and *Indian Fairy Tales* 1892.

# Jacob, Max (1876-1944)

French poet and prose writer. Among his books of poetry are *Sacrifice impérial* 1929 and *Rivages* 1931, while his prose poems include *Cornet à dés* 1917 and *Visions infernales* 1924. He also wrote novels, including *Le Roi de Béotie* 1921 and *Le Terrain Bouchaballe* 1922; a play, and religious works, including *Méditations: visions des souffrances et de la mort de Jesus* 1928.

# Jacob, Naomi Ellington (1889-1964)

English novelist. Her books include *Jacob Ussher* 1926, *Straws in Amber* 1938, *White Wool* 1944, *Passage Perilous* 1948, and *Morning Will Come* 1953. She also wrote a series of autobiographical books, including *Me: A Chronicle About Other People* 1933, *Me Again* 1937, *Me Looking Back* 1950, and *The Long Shadows* 1964.

# Jacob, Violet (1863-1946)

Scottish poet and novelist. Her first works were novels, but she is better known as a poet in the Angus dialect, with *Songs of Angus* 1916, 1918, *Bonnie Joann* 1922, and *Northern Lights* 1927. Her *Scottish Poems* were collected 1944.

The Lairds of Dun 1931 is a study in the landed history of her own district.

# Jacobs, Harriet Ann (1813-1897)

US author. She was born into slavery but escaped and, under the pen-name Linda Brent, she wrote the story of her experiences in *Incidents in the Life of a Slave Girl*, *Written by Herself* 1861. The book was long forgotten until 'rediscovered' in the 1980s.

# Jacobs, W(illiam) W(ymark) (1863-1943)

English author. He used his childhood knowledge of London's docklands in amusing short stories such as 'Many Cargoes' 1896 and *Sea Urchins* 1898. He also excelled in the macabre, for example in the story 'The Monkey's Paw' 1902; this and some other stories were dramatized.

# Jacobson, Dan(iel) (1929-)

South African-born British writer who established his literary reputation with two allegorical novellas, *The Trap* (1955) and *A Dance in the Sun* (1956). Both works explored the complex relationship between white employers and black employees in a segregated South Africa. It was a theme Jacobson explored further in novels such as *The Price of Diamonds* (1957), and the autobiographical *The Beginners* (1966). However, in later novels, including *The Wonder-Worker* (1973) and *The God-Fearer* (1992), Jacobson shifted his emphasis away from South Africa.

Other works include the novels *The Rape of Tamar* (1970) and *All for Love* (2005); the short-story collections *Beggar My Neighbour* (1964) and *Inklings: Selected Stories* (1973); the autobiographical works *Time and Again: Autobiographies* (1985) and *Heshel's Kingdom* (1998); the commentary *The Electronic Elephant: A Southern African Journey* (1994); and *Adult Pleasures: Essays on Writers and Readers* (1988).

# Jacopone da Todi (c. 1230-1306)

Italian religious poet. He was a Franciscan and author of approximately 90 *laudi* (popular devotional poems in Latin and the Umbrian dialect). He is also accredited with authoring the *Stabat Mater*. In 1298 he was imprisoned for opposing Pope Boniface VIII, and was not released until the pope's death in 1303. Jacapone was born in Todi in the Duchy of Spoleto, Italy.

# Jahnn, Hans Henny (1894-1959)

German playwright and novelist. His plays and novels blend primitive, instinctive eroticism with a belief in archaic, mythological forms of love and death. *Pastor Ephraim Magnus* 1919 deals with the tension experienced by the artist in conflict with the lusts of the flesh. *Medea* 1925 also conveys the leaden weight of sensual guilt and illicit drives. His greatest prose work is the unfinished trilogy *Fluss ohne Ufer* 1949, with its powerful examination of human (homosexual) relationships.

Most of Jahnn's works have met with the threat of censorship because of their radical themes, his audiences and readers being offended by the uncompromising manner in which his characters are involved with brutal and elemental natural forces.

# Jalal-al-Din Rumi (1207-1273)

Persian poet and Sufi religious mystic. He founded the Mevlevi dervish order of mendicants, in memory of Shams al-Din Tabrizi, from whom he received esoteric teaching. This order is characterized by a mystic dance symbolizing the movement

of the spheres and of the soul. Jalal-al-Din Rumi's great poem the *mathnavi-i Ma'navi* is commonly known in Iran as 'the Koran in the Pahlavi [Persian] language'.

The Divani-Shams-i Tabriz is a collection of Jalal's lyrical ghazals.

### James, Alice (1848-1892)

US writer who is known for her personal reflections in *Journal* 1844, later published as *The Diary of Alice James* 1964. A neurasthenic, she moved to England in 1884 after the death of her parents. She lived much of her life as an invalid.

### James, Henry (1843-1916)

US novelist, who lived in Europe from 1875 and became a naturalized British subject in 1915. His novels deal with the social, moral, and aesthetic issues arising from the complex relationship between European and American culture. They include *The Portrait of a Lady* (1881), *The Bostonians* (1886), *What Maisie Knew* (1887), *The Ambassadors* (1903), and *The Golden Bowl* (1904). He also wrote more than a hundred shorter works of fiction, notably the novella *The Aspern Papers* (1888) and the supernatural/psychological riddle *The Turn of the Screw* (1898).

James was born in New York City and studied law at Harvard. In 1864 he began contributing reviews, sketches, and short stories to various periodicals. His first novel *Watch and Ward* (1871) appeared in serial form, and his first volume of short stories was published in 1875. He moved to Paris that year, then to London in 1876, where he stayed for over 20 years. In 1898 he moved to Lamb House, Rye, Sussex, and remained in England for the rest of his life. Initially a master of psychological realism, noted for the complex subtlety of his prose style, James became increasingly experimental, writing some of the essential works of early modernism.

# James, M(ontague) R(hodes) (1862-1936)

English writer, theologian, linguist, and medievalist. He is best known for his frightening ghost tales, including *Ghost Stories of an Antiquary* (1904) and other supernatural tales. His collected stories were published in 1931.

# James, P(hyllis) D(orothy) (1920-)

**Baroness James of Holland Park** 

English detective novelist. She created the characters Superintendent Adam

Dalgliesh and private investigator Cordelia Gray. She was a tax official, hospital administrator, and civil servant in the Home Office, involved with police matters, before turning to writing full time. Her books include *Death of an Expert Witness* (1977), *The Skull Beneath the Skin* (1982), *A Taste for Death* (1986), *Original Sin* (1994), *Certain Justice* (1997), *Death in Holy Orders* (2001), *The Murder Room* (2003), and her memoirs, *Time to be in Earnest: A Fragment of Autobiography* (1999). She was created a baroness in 1991.

#### Jameson, (Margaret) Storm (1897-1986)

English novelist. Among her finest books are *The Lovely Ship* (1927), *The Voyage Home* (1930), and *A Richer Dust* (1931), which form a trilogy telling of a shipbuilding family like her own; others are *The Black Laurel* (1948), *The Hidden River* (1955), *Last Score* (1961), and *The White Crow* (1968). *Full Circle* (1928) is a one-act play and *No Time Like the Present* (1933) is an autobiography.

#### Jami (1414-1492)

#### born Nur al-din 'Abd-al-rahman ibn Ahmad

Persian poet, scholar, and mystic. He wrote lyrical poems and odes, seven romantic or didactic *mathnavi* (long poems), such as 'Yusuf u Zulaikha' and 'Salaman u Absal', and many other works, including lives of the saints and *Baharistan*, a collection of anecdotes and ethical reflections. Jami is considered the last great classical poet of the Persian 'golden age'.

#### Jammes, Francis (1868-1938)

French poet and novelist. In his earlier style are the poems *De l'angélus de l'aube à l'angélus du soir* 1898 and *Le Deuil des primevères* 1901, and in his later Catholic style *Les Géorgiques chrétiennes* 1911. Among his prose stories are *Clara d'Ellebeuse* 1899, *Le poète rustique* 1920, and *Les Robinsons basques* 1925.

#### Jane Eyre

novel (1847) by Charlotte <u>Brontë</u>. The orphan Jane becomes governess to the ward of Mr Rochester. Employer and governess fight a mutual fascination until Jane agrees to marriage. The revelation that Mr Rochester already has a wife, the mad Bertha, who is imprisoned in his attic, causes Jane's flight. She returns to marry Rochester after Bertha has killed herself by setting the house on fire. In this ever popular book, romantic themes derive distinction from Brontë's powerful intellect and imagination.

## Janin, Jules-Gabriel (1804-1874)

French critic and novelist. He made his reputation by dramatic criticisms in the *Journal des débats*. His *L'Ane mort et la femme guillotinée* 1829 was a clever parody of Victor <u>Hugo</u>. This was followed by *Barnave* 1831, which gives a striking picture of the first French Revolution. A collection of his articles appeared as *Histoire de la littérature dramatique en France* 1853-58.

### Japanese literature

prose, poetry, and drama of Japan. Characteristic of the classical literature is the intermingling of prose and poetry, the forms of the latter being determined by the number of syllables. *The Tale of Genji* (*c.* 1005) by <u>Murasaki</u> Shikibu has been called the world's first novel. Modern novelists include Yukio Mishima and Jun-ichiro Tanizaki.

#### the court era

Oral poetry and ritual formulas were handed down from earlier times, but the first surviving written works include two chronicles of myth and history: *Kojiki/Record of Ancient Matters* late 7th century and *Nihon shoki* (720), both of which include some poetry. The 8th-century *Man'yoshu/Collection of a Myriad Leaves* was the first of a series of influential poetry anthologies commissioned by the imperial court. The principal form represented in it is the tanka, a five-line stanza of 5, 7, 5, 7, 7 syllables, and the principal poets include Kakinomoto Hitomaro (died 708/15). The 8th-9th centuries saw the change away from the phonetic use of Chinese characters and the first literature written in the indigenous syllabary. In the late 10th and early 11th centuries, not only Murasaki but also several other ladies attached to the court produced great works of psychological fiction, diaries, and the *Makura no soshi/Pillow Book* of Sei Shonagon, a collection of reflections whose influence carries into the present day.

#### the war-torn era

Saigyo (1118-1190) and Fujiwara Teika (1162-1241) are regarded as two of Japan's greatest poets. During the 14th century the No drama developed from ceremonial religious dances, combined with monologues and dialogues. Zeami in the early 15th century wrote many classic plays as well as manuals and theories of No. *Tsurezuregusa/Essays in Idleness* (1330-31) by Kenko (*c.* 1283-1352) is a short prose work still read today. The epic *Heike monogatari* was written in the 14th century. Sogi (1421-1502) was an outstanding exponent of *renga*, linked verse on the tanka pattern, subject to complex rules and often written collaboratively by two or three people. Beginning as a pastime, it became an art form in the 12th century. The origins of haiku lie in *renga*.

#### the Tokugawa era

The 17th century brought such scholars of Chinese studies as Arai Hakuseki (1657-1725), who became adviser to the shogun and wrote an autobiography. This period also saw the rise of kabuki, the popular drama of Edo Japan, of which Chikamatsu Monzaemon (1653-1724) is the chief exponent (he also wrote extensively for the bunraku puppet theatre); of <u>haiku</u> (the stanza of three lines of 5, 7, and 5 syllables), whose foremost practitioner was <u>Basho</u>; and of the modern novel, as represented by Ihara Saikaku (1642-1693), whose main themes were sex and money, set among the urban middle class. Ueda Akinari (1734-1809) drew on Chinese classics for the stories in *Ugetsu monogatari/Tales of Moonlight and Rain* (1768). Among those reacting against Chinese influence was the scholar and poet Motoori Norinaga (1730-1801).

#### the modern era

The late 19th and early 20th centuries saw the replacement of the obsolete Tokugawa style as a literary medium with the modern colloquial language; the influence of Western and Russian literature (usually encountered through English translations) produced writers such as the realist Tsubouchi Shoyo (1859-1935), author of an important study of the novel 1885-86, followed by the naturalist and 'idealistic' novelists, whose romantic preoccupation with self-expression gave rise to the still popular 'I-novels' of, for example, Osamu Dazai. A reaction against the autobiographical school came from Natsume Soseki, Nagai Kafu (1879-1959), and Tanizaki. Shimazaki Toson (1872-1943) introduced Western-style poetic trends, including Symbolism, but the traditional forms of haiku and tanka are still widely used. Western-style modern drama, inspired by the Scandinavians Henrik Ibsen and August Strindberg, has been growing since the turn of the century, and the avantgarde flourished in the 1960s with such playwrights as Shuji Terayama (1935-1983), but the strength of Japanese theatre generally lies in the performances rather than the scripts. After World War II, the experience of cultural dislocation and problems of identity were addressed by a new generation of often leftist writers such as Kobo Abe, using narrative and dramatic techniques developed from Western modernism. Two Japanese novelists have won the Nobel Prize for Literature: Yasunari Kawabata (1968) and Kenzaburo Oe (1994). Writers popular in the 1990s include Haruki Murakami (1949-), author of such surrealist adventures as Hitsuji o meguru boken/A Wild Sheep Chase (1989), and Banana Yoshimoto (1964-), whose short, sensitive novels include Kitchin/Kitchen (1991).

# Jarrell, Randall (1914-1965)

US poet and literary critic. His war poems attracted national attention in the 1940s; *The Woman at the Washington Zoo* 1960 won a National Book Award. *Poetry and the Age* 1953, a reevaluation of modern US poets, established Jarrell as a critic with unfailing judgment and a witty style, while his one novel *Pictures from an Institution* 1954, is regarded as a minor classic of the academic-novel genre.

#### Jashar

or Sepher Ha-Yashar

(Hebrew 'Book of the Upright')

lost poetical work of national songs twice quoted in the Old Testament (in Joshua 10:13, which tells of Joshua commanding the Sun and Moon to stand still, and in 2 Samuel 1:18, David's lament over Saul and Jonathan).

#### Jazz Age

the hectic and exciting 1920s in the USA, when 'hot jazz' became fashionable as part of the general rage for spontaneity and social freedom. The phrase is attributed to the novelist F Scott Fitzgerald.

#### Jean de Meung (c. 1240-c. 1305)

#### pseudonym of Jean Clopinel

French poet. He is best known for his remarkable 18,000-line continuation, written about 1277, of the <u>Roman de la Rose</u> begun by <u>Guillaume de Lorris</u>. With Jean de Meung the allegory becomes a vehicle for giving forthright critical views on topics such as government, monasticism, and women, allowing him to display his wide scholarship. Other works include translations from Vegetius and Boethius.

#### Jeffers, (John) Robinson (1887-1962)

US poet. He wrote free verse and demonstrated an antagonism to human society. His collected volumes include *Tamar and Other Poems* 1924, *The Double Axe* 1948, and *Hungerfield and Other Poems* 1954.

#### Jeffrey, Francis, Lord Jeffrey (1773-1850)

Scottish lawyer and literary critic. He was a founder of the *Edinburgh Review* in 1802 and editor from 1803-29. In 1830 he was made Lord Advocate, and in 1834 a Scottish law lord. Among his critical works are *Samuel Richardson* (1852) and *Jonathan Swift* (1853). He was hostile to the Romantic poets, and wrote of Wordsworth's *Excursion*: 'This will never do.'

# Jeffrey, William (1896-1946)

Scottish poet. At first a Romantic, his work has a mystical vein reminiscent of William <u>Blake</u>. Later he associated himself with the modern Scottish renaissance. The best-known of his works include *Prometheus Returns* 1921, *The Lamb of Lomond* 1926, *Mountain Songs* 1928, *The Golden Stag* 1932, and *Sea Glimmer* 1947.

## Jelinek, Elfriede (1946-)

Austrian writer. Her novels, poetry, and plays explore the dark side of popular culture, coloured by violence and oppression. One of her main themes is the subjugation of women by modern stereotypes. Her novels include *Die Liebhaberinnen/Women as Lovers* (1975), *Die Ausgesperrten/Wonderful, Wonderful Times* (1980), and the autobiographical *Die Klavierspielerin/The Piano Teacher* (1983; filmed 2001). She won the 2004 Nobel Prize for Literature.

Her social criticisms are linguistically sophisticated, switching between poetry and prose, narrative and drama. Her plays often involve voices conveying conflicting viewpoints speaking all at once.

# Jennings, Elizabeth Joan (1926-)

English poet. Her poems are concerned with personal subjects, written in a plain, traditional style. Particularly well known are those which describe her experiences of a nervous breakdown, while others reflect her religious beliefs. Her books include *A Way of Looking* (1955; Somerset Maugham award), *Song for a Birth or a Death* (1961), *Recoveries* (1961), and *Collected Poems* (1967). Her translation of Michelangelo's *Sonnets* was published in 1961, and she contributed to the *New Statesman* and the *New Yorker* publications.

Jennings was born in Oxford and educated at St Anne's College, Oxford. She worked as a library assistant and publisher's reader, but later devoted herself entirely to writing.

### Jensen, Johannes Vilhelm (1873-1950)

Danish novelist, poet, and essayist. His most important works are the short stories of rural life collected in *Himmerlands historier* (1898-1910); the historical novel interwoven with poetry and legend *Kongens fald/The Fall of the King* (1900-01); the essays and tales in *Myter* (1907-44) (14 of which were translated as *The Waving Rye* 

(1959)); and a series of six novels, *Den lange rejse/The Long Journey* (1908-22), a Darwinian description of human development since prehistory. Jensen's poetry was collected and published after his death in *Digte/Poems* (1952). he was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1944.

#### Jerrold, Douglas (1893-1964)

English author and editor. He was editor of the *English Review* 1930-36 and the *New English Review* from 1945. His books include two novels, *The Truth About Quex* 1927 and *Storm Over Europe* 1930, and a number of historical works, including *The War on Land*, *1914-18* 1928, *An Introduction to the History of England* 1949, and *England: Past, Present, and Future* 1950.

## Jerrold, Douglas William (1803-1857)

English author and dramatist. His nautical play *Black-eyed Susan* 1829 was followed by many others, including *Time Works Wonders* 1845. When *Punch* was founded he joined the staff and wrote *Mrs Caudle's Curtain Lectures* 1846 for the magazine. His other works include *The Story of a Feather* 1844, *The Chronicles of Clovernook* 1846, and *A Man Made of Money* 1849. From 1852 until his death he edited *Lloyd's Weekly Newspaper*.

### Jesse, F(riniwyd) Tennyson (1889-1958)

English novelist. Her books include *The Milky Way* 1913, *The White Riband* 1921, *Moonraker* 1927 (about a female pirate), *Tom Fool* 1926 (a Cornish historical novel), and *A Pin to See the Peepshow* 1934. She also published several collections of short stories and co-wrote a number of plays.

### jest book

compilation of witty sayings and practical jokes. These might be ascribed to a particular person or collected from various sources. Jest books were popular in England from the 16th century, and some were sold as <u>chapbooks</u>.

Among English jest books are *Tarlton's Jests: a Hundred Mery Talys* (about 1525; first extant edition 1611); *Wit and Drollery* (1661), by 'the most refined wits of the Age'; *Joe Miller's Jests, or the Wit's Vade-Mecum* (1739), compiled by John Mottley (1692-1750).

### Jewett, Sarah Orne (1849-1909)

US novelist and short-story writer. She published *Deephaven* in 1877, and followed this with over a dozen novels and collections of short stories, including *A Country Doctor* 1884, *A White Heron* 1886, and *The Country of the Pointed Firs* 1895, depicting the provincial life of New England.

#### Jewish-American writing

US writing in English shaped by the Jewish experience. It was produced by the children of Eastern European immigrants who came to the USA at the end of the 19th century, and by the 1940s second- and third-generation Jewish-American writers had become central to US literary and intellectual life. Nobel prize-winning authors include Saul Bellow in 1976 and Isaac Bashevis Singer in 1978.

# Jewsbury, Geraldine (Ensor) (1812-1880)

English novelist. Her first novel, Zoë (1845), was a sensation for its subject of a Catholic priest's love for a beautiful woman. Other novels with feminist themes include *The Half Sisters* (1848), and *Marian Withers* (1851), which has a regional setting. She was a reviewer for the *Athenaeum* from 1849-80.

# Jhabvala, Ruth Prawer (1927-)

German-born novelist, short-story writer, and screenplay writer. She was educated in England and has spent much of her adult life in India, the setting of some of her most widely acclaimed novels, including *Heat and Dust* (1975), which won the Booker Prize. Among her best-known screenplays are the films *A Room with a View* (1985), an adaptation of the novel by E M Forster, and Jefferson in Paris (1995).

Her novels written in Delhi were typically gently satirical accounts of middle-class Indians trying to come to terms with the clash between traditional Indian values and rapid Westernization. These include her first novel, *To Whom She Will* (1955), and *The Nature of Passion* (1956). A second, and for many critics more successful, theme was that of Westerners attempting to come to terms with Indian culture, as in *Esmond in India* (1958) and *Heat and Dust*. During this period she frequently wrote stories for the *New Yorker* and published several collections, including *Like Birds*, *Like Fishes* (1963) and *How I Became a Holy Mother* (1976). In the 1960s Jhabvala began a long collaboration with the filmmakers Ismail Merchant and James Ivory, writing screenplays for films such as *Shakespeare Wallah* (1965), *Heat and Dust* (1983; based on her own novel), *The Bostonians* (1984; based on the novel by Henry James), and *Howard's End* (1992; based on the novel by E M Forster).

#### Jiménez, Juan Ramón (1881-1958)

Spanish lyric poet. Born in Andalusia, he left Spain during the civil war to live in exile in Puerto Rico. His essentially mystical and highly sophisticated work includes *Sonetos espirituales* (1915), *Diario de un poeta recién casado* (1916), and *Dios deseado y deseante*. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1956.

### **Jindyworobaks**

#### (Aboriginal 'takeover')

Australian literary group 1938-53. Founded by Reginald Ingamells (1931-1955), it encouraged an individual Australian character in the country's literature.

#### Jocelin

#### or Joscelin of Furness

English history writer. He wrote *The Life and Miracles of Saint Walthe of of Melrose, A Life of David, King of Scotland, A Life of Saint Kentigern, and A Latin Narrative of the Life and Miracles of St Patrick.* He was a Cistercian monk at Furness Abbey, Lancashire.

#### Jodelle, Etienne (1532-1573)

French poet and playwright. He was a member of *La <u>Pléiade</u>* and followed the group's classic agenda in his *Cléopatre captive* (1553), the first tragedy in French to imitate Seneca. He also wrote another tragedy about a female suicide, *Didon* (based on Virgil), and a comedy, *Eugène*. These were printed with his poems, *Euvres et meslanges poetiques* (1574).

#### Jóhann Sigurjónsson (1880-1919)

Icelandic dramatist and poet. His plays, written in Danish and Icelandic, include *Fjalla-Eyvindur/Eyvind of the Mountains* 1912, concerning an outlaw, and *Galdra-Loftur/Loftur the Sorcerer* 1915, in which Loftur makes a dangerous pact with the devil. He also wrote lyric poetry.

# Johns, W(illiam) E(arl) (1893-1968)

#### called 'Captain'

English author. From 1932 he wrote popular novels about World War I flying ace 'Biggles', now sometimes criticized for chauvinism, racism, and sexism. Johns was a flying officer in the RAF (there is no rank of captain) until his retirement in 1930.

### Johnson, B(ryan) S(tanley William) (1933-1973)

English writer. He is best known for his novels, which are experimental in style and construction; they include *Travelling People* 1963, *Albert Angelo* 1964, *Trawl* 1966, *House Mother Normal* 1971, and *Christie Malry's own Double Entry* 1972. He also wrote and directed for the cinema and television and wrote several stage plays.

## Johnson, Eyvind Olof Verner (1900-1976)

Swedish novelist. His tetralogy *Romanen om Olof/The Story of Olof* (1934-37) is a partly autobiographical account of adolescence. He wrote a number of historical novels, in which he demonstrated brilliant technical skills and a passionate belief in humanism and democracy. These include a realistic retelling of the Odyssey in *Strändernas svall/Return to Ithaca* (1946); an investigation of a heresy trial in 17th-century France in *Drömmar om rosor och eld/Dreams About Roses and Fire* (1949); and a chronicle of Charlemagne's Europe, *Hans nådes tid/The Days of His Grace* (1960). He shared the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1974 with Harry Martinson.

### Johnson, James Weldon (1871-1938)

US writer, lawyer, diplomat, and social critic. He was a strong supporter of President Theodore Roosevelt and served him and President Taft as US consul in Venezuela and Nicaragua 1906-12. He was editor of *New York Age* 1912-22 and was active in the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP). As a poet and anthropologist, he became one of the chief figures of the Harlem Renaissance of the 1920s. His major work, *Autobiography of an Ex-Colored Man*, was published anonymously in 1912 and republished under his own name in 1927. *The Book of the American Negro Poetry* (1922) edited by Johnson, was the first anthology of African-American poetry. His autobiography *Along This Way* was published in 1933.

Born in Jacksonville, Florida, and educated at Atlanta University, Johnson became the first black American admitted to the Florida bar in 1897.

### Johnson, Linton Kwesi (1952-)

Jamaican-born British poet who emigrated to Britain in 1963. His dub poetry, characterized by an aggressive urban style, has a wide following.

Recordings include *Dread Beat An' Blood* (1978), *Forces of Victory* (1979), *Bass Culture* (1980), *Making History* (1983), and *More Time* (1998). His written works include *Dread beat An' Blood* (1975), *Inglan is a Bitch* (1980), and *Tings An' Times* (1991).

## Johnson, Lionel Pigot (1867-1902)

English poet. His two volumes of poetry, *Poems* 1895 and *Ireland, with Other Poems* 1897, drew much of their inspiration from ancient Celtic legend. His best-known piece is 'On the Statue of King Charles at Charing Cross'.

### Johnson, Louis (1924-1988)

New Zealand poet. His work rejects the traditional pastoral themes of New Zealand poetry in favour of suburban life; for example, in *New Worlds for Old* 1957 and *Bread and a Pension* 1964. He was also the founding editor of *Numbers* 1954-60 (with James K Baxter), and of the *New Zealand Poetry Yearbook* 1955-64. His work *Land Like a Lizard* 1970 concerns New Guinea.

### Johnson, Pamela Hansford, Lady Snow (1912-1981)

English novelist. Her works include *This Bed Thy Centre* 1935, which was judged shocking, *Too Dear for My Possessing* 1940, *The Unspeakable Skipton* 1959, based on Frederick <u>Rolfe</u>, and *The Honours Board* 1970.

### Johnson, Robert Underwood (1853-1937)

US poet and editor. Among his volumes of mainly occasional verse are *The Winter Hour* 1891, *Poems of Fifty Years* 1931, and *Aftermath* 1933.

From 1873 he was connected with the *Century Magazine*, of which he became editor in 1909. He was US ambassador in Rome, Italy, 1920-1921.

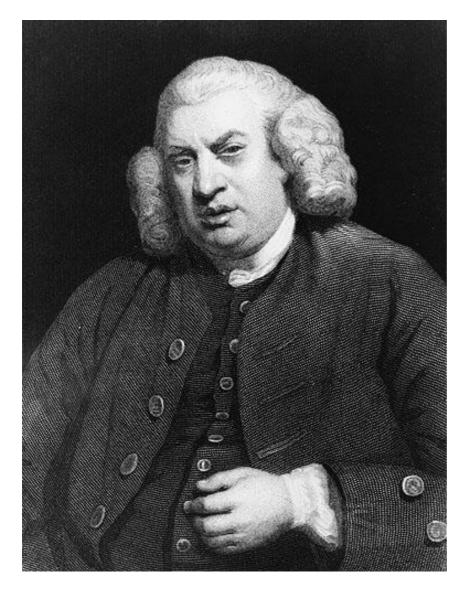
## Johnson, Samuel (1709-1784)

#### also known as Dr Johnson

English lexicographer (writer of dictionaries), author, and critic. He was also a brilliant conversationalist and dominant figure in 18th-century London literary society. His *Dictionary* (1755) provided the pedigree for subsequent lexicography and remained authoritative for over a century. In 1764 he founded, at the suggestion of the English painter Joshua Reynolds, a club, known from 1779 as the Literary Club, whose members at various times included also the Irish political philosopher Edmund Burke, the Irish dramatist Oliver <u>Goldsmith</u>, the English actor David Garrick, and Scottish writer James <u>Boswell</u>, Johnson's biographer.

Born in Lichfield, Staffordshire, the son of a bookseller, Johnson was educated at Pembroke College, Oxford. After attempting to become a schoolteacher, he moved to London and initially made a living writing 'hack' journalism (writing on demand). He started his Dictionary without proper funds. His prose style is balanced, judicious, and sometimes ponderous, and as a critic he displayed great creative insight. Johnson's first meeting with Boswell was in 1763. A visit with Boswell to Scotland and the Hebrides in 1773 was recorded in A Journey to the Western Isles of Scotland (1775). Other works include a satire imitating Juvenal, The Vanity of Human Wishes (1749), the philosophical romance Rasselas (1759), an edition of Shakespeare (1765), and the classic *Lives of the English Poets* (1779-81). His edition of Shakespeare is the forerunner of modern scholarly editions and his 'Preface to Shakespeare' remains a classic critical essay of permanent value. He viewed art as an important vehicle for the expression of truth and this serious attitude sometimes led to heavy-handed moral instruction, but his well-known wit and humanity are documented in Boswell's classic The Life of Samuel Johnson LL.D (1791). Published after his death, Prayers and Meditations (1785) shows Johnson to have been a deeply religious man. It revealed the secret doubts and fears of a man known to the world as defiant and overbearing in argument. He had a tender concern for humanity and a constant generosity towards the poor and unhappy. It also shows his courage in his lifelong battle against ill health.

#### Johnson



#### (Image © Billie Love)

Usually known as **Dr Johnson**, Samuel Johnson is perhaps, next to Shakespeare, the most quoted of English writers. A formidable conversationalist, he was one of the most famous literary figures in 18th-century London, of which he once said 'When a man is tired of London, he is tired of life.'

### Johnston, (William) Denis (1901-1984)

Irish dramatist and writer, born in Dublin. His works include the highly successful *The Old Lady Says 'No'* (1929), and *The Moon on the Yellow River* (1931).

Johnston trained in law at Cambridge, England and Harvard, USA, and in 1925 joined both the English and Irish Bars. His first play, the impressionist piece *Shadowdance*, was rejected by Lady Gregory, director of the Abbey Theatre, Dublin. However, retitled *The Old Lady Says 'No'*, it was a major hit at the city's Gate Theatre in 1929. During World War II he worked as a reporter and producer for the British Broadcasting Corporation (BBC). Over the next three decades, Johnston wrote several other dramas. He was also the author of two autobiographical works, *Nine Rivers from Jordan* (1953), which recounts his experiences as a war correspondent, and *The Brazen Head* (1977), and a book about Jonathan Swift, *In Search of Swift* (1959). His daughter is the novelist Jennifer Johnston (1930-).

#### Johnston, Arthur (1587-1641)

Scottish writer of Latin verse. His Latin version of the Psalms 1637 is less popular and probably less good than that of George Buchanan, but his contributions to the *Deliciae Poetarum Scotorum* 1637, his satire entitled *Consilium Collegii Medici Parisiensis* 1619, and his elegy on James VI 1625, prove him a good Latin scholar and no mean poet.

## Johnston, Jennifer Prudence (1930-)

Irish writer, notable for her intimate portraits of struggling relationships between families, friends, lovers, and communities. Some of her best-known works are *The Captains and the Kings* (1972); *Shadows on Our Skin* (1977), shortlisted for the Booker Prize; *The Old Jest* (1979), winner of the Whitbread Award for fiction; and *Fool's Sanctuary* (1987). Later novels include *Two Moons* (1998) and *This is not a Novel* (2002).

Her style is lucid but always attuned to subtleties of human emotion and political reality; one of the strengths of her fiction is her ability to create sympathetic but complex characters.

# Jónas Hallgrímsson (1807-1845)

Icelandic poet and naturalist. He was deeply influenced by German Romanticism and travelled widely in Iceland, describing his observations in lyrical nature poetry. He also made translations into Icelandic and wrote short stories.

In 1835 he helped to found the periodical *Fjölnir*, in which much of his poetry was first published.

### Jones, David (1895-1974)

English artist and writer. His lettering, together with his paintings and wood engravings, are inimitable and immediately recognizable. In 1937 he published the war novel *In Parenthesis*, a recreation of Albion in the trenches, derived from personal experience and his cockney and Welsh background. He also produced

volumes of poetry at intervals, including *The Anathemata* 1952 and *The Sleeping Lord* 1974.

#### Jones, Ebenezer (1820-1860)

English poet. His three remarkable poems, 'Winter Hymn to the Snow', 'When the World is Burning', and 'To Death', were written when he was dying.

#### Jones, James (1921-1977)

US writer. His first novel, *From Here to Eternity* 1951, won over both readers and critics by its sheer narrative force (and was also made into a popular film in 1953). But his subsequent work, with the exception of *The Thin Red Line* 1962, was not that well received in literary circles.

#### Jones, LeRoi

US poet; see Imamu Amiri Baraka.

### Jones, Louis C(lark) (1908-)

US folklorist. A specialist in New York state folklore, 18th-century social history, and American folk art, he directed the State University of New York's Cooperstown graduate programmes 1964-82.

#### Jones, Steve (1944-)

Welsh writer, lecturer, and evolutionary biologist. Professor of Genetics in the Department of Biology at University College, London, England, Jones gave the Reith Lectures in 1991, presented a BBC television series on human genetics and evolution (1996), and was the winner of the Royal Society Faraday Medal for the public understanding of science (1997).

He has been called the 'British Carl Sagan' and his book, re-examining Darwin's theories, *Darwin's Ghost* (2001), is an example of his ability to make the latest scientific research popular and readable, combining it with humour and anecdote.

### Jones, Thomas Gwynn (1871-1949)

Welsh poet. He won the National Eisteddfod chair at Bangor in 1902 with 'Ymadawiad Arthur' ('The Passing of Arthur'), a poem which, for its application of a modern creative mind to traditional strict metre, heralded a new era in Welsh literature, and won again in 1909 with 'Gwlad y Bryniau' ('The Land of the Hills'); from then his place in Welsh literature was assured. He also wrote some volumes of essays, several plays, and a book in English on Welsh folklore.

Among his other works are a critical edition of the poems of Tudur Aled (1926), translations of *Faust* and *Macbeth*, an anthology of Irish poems translated into Welsh. A selection of his poems was published in 1926, and of poems and essays in six volumes (1932-37. His final collection, *Y Dwymyn* (The Fever) was published in 1944.

### Jong, Erica Mann (1942-)

US novelist and poet. She won a reputation as a feminist poet with her first collection *Fruits & Vegetables* (1971). Her novel *Fear of Flying* (1973) depicted a liberated woman's sexual adventures and became an instant best-seller. It was followed by two sequels *How To Save Your Own Life* (1977) and *Parachutes and Kisses* (1984).

Other works include her non-fictional *Witches* (1981), a portrait of Henry Miller in *The Devil at Large* (1993), and the novel *Sappho's Leap* (2003).

#### Jordan, June (1936-)

US poet and writer. She was influenced by mainstream poetry as well as by the Black arts movement of the 1970s. She also wrote books for children. She taught at many institutions, notably at State University of New York, Long Island in 1981.

#### Jordan, Thomas (c. 1612-1685)

English poet and pamphleteer. He published his first volume of poems, *Poeticall Varieties*, 1637. In 1671 he was appointed laureate to the corporation of London, and every year composed a panegyric on the Lord Mayor; he also arranged the pageants, celebrating them in verse. His play, *Money is an Ass*, appeared 1668.

**Joscelin of Furness** 

alternative spelling of <u>Jocelin</u>, medieval English writer.

## Joseph of Exeter (died c. 1210)

English Latin poet. His great work, *De Bello Troiano*, shows the influence of <u>Lucan</u> and was used by Chaucer in *Troilus and Criseyde*. Joseph accompanied Archbishop Baldwin of Canterbury on the Third Crusade and later wrote an epic, now lost, on the deeds of Richard I.

## Joubert, Joseph (1754-1824)

French moralist and critic. In 1778 he was adopted by literary circles in Paris and became a friend of <u>Chateaubriand</u> who published his work for the first time (*Recueil des pensées* 1838). Other posthumous works include *Pensées, essais et maximes* 1838 and the *Lettres à ses amis* 1842. His book *Carnets* was published 1955.

## Jovellanos, Gaspar Melchor de (1744-1811)

Spanish writer and politician. His *Diary* (published 1953-55) gives a detailed account of conditions in rural Spain. He wrote numerous essays on cultural, economic, and other national problems.

# Joyce, James (Augustine Aloysius) (1882-1941)

Irish writer. His originality lies in evolving a literary form to express the complexity of the human mind, and he revolutionized the form of the English novel with his linguistic technique which had a far-reaching influence on many modern authors. His works include the short story collection *Dubliners* (1914), *A Portrait of the Artist as a Young Man* (1916), *Ulysses* (1922), and *Finnegans Wake* (1939). *Ulysses*, which records the events of a single day in Dublin, experiments with language and parody, imitating and sometimes mocking different styles of writing. It combines direct narrative with the unspoken and unconscious reactions of the characters, which is sometimes known as the <u>stream of consciousness</u> technique. Banned at first for obscenity in the USA and the UK, it made a great impact and is generally regarded as Joyce's masterpiece. He is known as a major figure in the artistic movement of modernism.

Joyce was born in Dublin, one of a large and poor family, and educated at University College, Dublin. He showed strong literary tendencies very early in life and after graduating wrote a few stories but was unable to make a living. He travelled to Italy, where he taught English, accompanied by Nora Barnacle (1883-1951; his wife

from 1931). In 1909 he returned to Dublin. Until this point, Joyce's only published work was a book of lyrics called *Chamber Music* (1907); his other verse appeared in *Pomes Penyeach* (1927). *Dubliners* was published after a nine-year delay caused by wrangling with publishers over their demands for excisions, while the partly autobiographical *A Portrait of the Artist as a Young Man* was serialized by Ezra <u>Pound</u> in *The Egoist* (1914-15). At this time Joyce was under 'free arrest' in Austria, but was later allowed to go to neutral Switzerland where he lived in Zürich until the end of World War I. There he formed a company of Irish players who performed his drama *Exiles* (1918), modelled on Ibsen's work. In Zürich, Joyce's eyesight began to fail, and a few years after the war he moved to Paris, where *Ulysses* was published in 1922. *Finnegans Wake*, a story about a Dublin publican and his family, continued Joyce's experiments with language. Having worked in poverty for much of his life, and after enduring numerous eye operations, Joyce returned to Zürich in 1940, but died soon afterwards.

### József, Attila (1905-1937)

Hungarian poet. He is regarded as one of the most important modern Hungarian lyric poets. He wrote about his working-class background, as in 'Külvárosi éj/Night in the Slums' 1932, and combined the political ideas of Karl Marx and the psychoanalytic ideas of Sigmund Freud. József committed suicide in 1937.

### Judson, Edward Zane Carroll (1823-1886)

#### pen-name Ned Buntline

US author. Specializing in short adventure stories, he developed a stereotyped frontier hero in the pages of his own periodicals *Ned Buntline's Magazine* and *Buntline's Own*. In his dime novels in the 1870s, he immortalized Buffalo Bill Cody.

Born in Stamford, New York, Judson served in the US Navy, and became an editor and writer in Cincinnati, eventually moving to New York. A violent racist, Judson was one of the founders of the antiforeign 'Know-Nothing' party in the 1850s.

#### Jünger, Ernst (1895-1998)

German novelist and essayist. Although he drew upon his military experience during World War I (*Feuer und Blut* 1925), he believed in the constant exercise of human virtues as the only means of preserving a civilization threatened by the forces of inhumanity and barbarism. Among his works are *Das abenteuerliche Herz*; 'Figuren und Capriccios' 1929, a contemplative essay; *Der Arbeiter* 1932, describing the contemporary worker; and *Garten und Strassen* 1942, a diary of the time he spent in France during World War II.

## Jungle Book, The

collection of short stories for children by Rudyard <u>Kipling</u>, published in two volumes in 1894 and 1895. Set in India, the stories feature a boy, Mowgli, reared by wolves and the animals he encounters in the jungle. The stories inspired the formation by Baden Powell of the Wolf Cub division of the Boy Scout movement.

## Junot, Laure Sainte-Martin-Permon (1784-1838)

#### duchesse D'Abrantès

French writer. Her considerable wit and intelligence attracted to her salon most of the influential political figures of the Napoleonic era. She is remembered for her *Mémoires sur Napoléon, le Consulat, l'Empire et la Restauration* 1831-36, which cover the period from the Revolution to the reign of Louis Philippe, and her *Histoire des salons de Paris* 1837-38.

# Junqueiro, Abilio Manuel Guerra (1850-1923)

Portuguese poet. His best-known works are *Os simples* 1896, full of vigorous, radical sentiments about the state of the nation, and a declamatory patriotic piece, *A patria* 1890, written against British pretensions in Portuguese Africa.

### Just So Stories

collection of stories for small children by Rudyard <u>Kipling</u>, published in 1902. Many of the stories offer amusing explanations of how certain animals acquired their characteristic appearance, such as 'How the Leopard got his Spots' and 'How the Camel got his Hump'. They originated in stories that the author told his children.

#### Just William

children's book published in 1922, the first of a series by English author Richmal <u>Crompton</u>, featuring the character William. A radio adaptation read by Martin Jarvis in the 1980s gave the books a new lease of life.

## Juvenal (c. AD 60-140)

#### born Decimus Junius Juvenalis

Roman satirical poet. His 16 surviving *Satires* give an explicit and sometimes brutal picture of the corrupt Roman society of his time. Very little is known of his life, but his native place, if not his birthplace, was Aquinum (now Aquino, southern Italy). Juvenal is twice mentioned by <u>Martial</u>, and he may be the author of a well-known dedication (probably to an altar to Ceres) by one Juvenal who held military rank and some civil offices at Aquinum. This reference to military service agrees with the story of Sidonius Apollinaris (5th century) that Juvenal quarrelled with Paris, a famous ballet dancer in the reign of Domitian, and was sent to the Egyptian frontier as an officer of a local garrison.

### Kafka, Franz (1883-1924)

Austrian novelist. He wrote in German. His three unfinished allegorical novels *Der Prozess/The Trial* (1925), *Das Schloss/The Castle* (1926), and *Amerika/America* (1927) were posthumously published despite his instructions that they should be destroyed. His short stories include 'Die Verwandlung/The Metamorphosis' (1915), in which a man turns into a huge insect. His vision of lonely individuals trapped in bureaucratic or legal labyrinths can be seen as a powerful metaphor for modern experience.

Kafka's work has considerably influenced other modern writers, including Samuel Beckett and Albert <u>Camus</u>.

### Kafkaesque

evoking the nightmarish atmosphere depicted in the fiction of the novelist Franz <u>Kafka</u>. In *Der Prozess/The Trial* (1925) and *Der Schloss/The Castle* (1926), the protagonist experiences a mounting sense of powerlessness and anxiety in the face of a menacing and omniscient bureaucracy.

### Kahn, Gustave (1859-1936)

French poet, novelist, and critic. He was one of the first to formulate the theory of *vers libre* (free verse), and in his *Palais nomades* 1887 showed complete disregard for the traditional rules of poetic art. He had an important influence on such poets as Mallarmé and Claudel. His novels include *Le cirque solaire* 1899, *Les fleurs de la passion* 1900, and *L'adultère sentimental* 1902.

### **Kailyard School**

name applied in derision to the sentimental school of Scots novelists of which J M Barrie, Ian Maclaren (1850-1907), and S R Crockett were the leading members. The term was taken from the opening line of a Jacobite song, 'There grows a bonnie brier bush in our kailyard', from which Ian Maclaren had borrowed the title of his popular novel *Beside the Bonnie Brier Bush* (1894).

# Kaiser, Georg (1878-1945)

German playwright. He was the principal exponent of German expressionism. His large output includes *Die Bürger von Calais/The Burghers of Calais* (1914) and *Gas* (1918-20).

### Kalevala

#### ('land of Kaleva')

Finnish national epic poem compiled from legends and ballads by Elias Lönnrot 1835-49; its hero is Väinämöinen, god of music and poetry. It inspired the poet Longfellow, who borrowed its metre and some of its incidents for his *Hiawatha*, and the composer Sibelius.

### Kalidasa (lived 5th century AD)

Indian epic poet and dramatist. His works, in Sanskrit, include the classic drama *Sakuntala*, the love story of King Dushyanta and the nymph Sakuntala.

### Kalidasa (lived 5th century AD)

Sanskrit poet and dramatist who is thought to have lived at Ujjain in central India in around AD 400. Kalidasa created his courtly dramas from a blend of sacred myth and historical fantasy. His play *The Recognition of Sakuntala* and poem 'The Cloud Messenger' were much admired by Goethe and others in the 18th century, and helped stimulate a lively interest in Sanskrit literature in the West.

Kallman, Chester (Simon) (1921-1975)

US poet and librettist. He was praised for his volumes of poetry such as *Absent and Present* (1963), but is best known for writing, in collaboration with W H Auden, the libretto for Stravinsky's opera *The Rake's Progress* (1951).

### Kane, Sheikh Hamidou (1928-)

Senegalese novelist, writing in French. His first novel, *L'Aventure ambigué/ Ambiguous Adventure* (1961), is an autobiographical account of a young African alienated from the simple faith of his childhood and initiated into an alien Islamic mysticism, before being immersed in materialist French culture.

## Kapital, Das

three-volume work presenting the theories of Karl Marx on economic production, published 1867-95. It focuses on the exploitation of the worker and appeals for a classless society where the production process and its rewards are shared equally.

#### Kapital, Das

2) the Demperture a management of the destance of the
12 file highle for monoporall upplie in hope -
- Destation as they are
4 - 4 Construction W-g. polyter March
and and the second and a second and and the second
- We have a state of the state
hadren house which have as a first the the the the the the the the the th
- When you a between a state of the the state of the stat
+1 = +++ 14+2 + (0+++ 10 + 11 + 1 + 1 + 1 + 1 + 1 + 1 + 1
The low me that the state is a state the second the state of the state of the second state of the state of th
A scontration of the second way and the second of the seco

#### (Image © Philip Sauvain Picture Collection)

A facsimile reproduction from the original manuscript of *Das Kapital* by influential German philosopher and economist Karl Marx. This monumental work is the central dogma of Marxist economics.

# Karadzic, Vuk Stefanovic (1787-1864)

Serbian linguist and translator. He collected folk songs and popular stories, compiled a Serbian grammar 1815 and dictionary 1818 and 1852, and translated the New Testament 1847.

## Karásek ze Lvovic, Jiri (1871-1951)

Czech writer. He was the most prolific Czech exponent of decadence. He treated the themes of Roman Catholicism in *The Gothic Soul* 1900, mythmaking in *The Legend of the Melancholy Prince* 1897, and occultism in *The Scarab* 1908. His criticism of contemporary literature includes *Impressionists and Ironists* 1903.

## Karavelov, Lyuben (1837-1879)

Bulgarian writer, publicist, and nationalist. In 1857, he went to Moscow, where he developed radical views. On his return, he became a leading member of the Bulgarian liberation movement. His sketches of village life based on his native Koprivshtitsa pioneered the Bulgarian short story; for example, 'Bulgari ot staro vreme/Bulgarians of Yore'.

# Karlfeldt, Erik Axel (1864-1931)

Swedish poet. After the death of Gustav <u>Fröding</u> he came to be regarded as the leading Swedish poet. He developed an individual, often purposely archaic style and, with its feeling for nature, his poetry reflects peasant life. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1918, which he refused, but it was awarded posthumously in 1931.

# Karr, (Jean-Baptiste-)Alphonse (1808-1890)

French novelist, critic, and journalist. His first novel was *Sous les tilleuls* 1832. He became editor of *Le Figaro* 1839 and the same year he started *Les Guêpes*, a keenly satirical monthly journal. His best-known works are the novel *Geneviève* 1838 and *Un voyage autour de mon jardin* 1845.

German writer. He was the author of allegorical novels which adopt an approach similar to that of <u>Kafka</u>. *Die Stadt hinter dem Strom* 1947 attempts a parallel treatment of the worlds of the flesh and the spirit. *Der Webstuhl* 1949 is an anti-Nazi satire and *Das grosse Netz* 1952 an Orwellian prophecy about the future of mechanized and materialistic society. He also wrote several plays, including one on the life of van Gogh, and some poetry.

### Kasprowicz, Jan (1860-1926)

Polish poet. His naturalistic early verse contrasts with his later, reflective work, which combines symbolism, ballad motifs, myth, and metaphysical elements. He wrote a cycle of poems, *Ginacemu swiatu/To a Dying World* (1902), in which he experimented with free-verse forms. Later poems of everyday life include *Ksiega ubogich/The Book of the Poor* (1916) and *Mój swiat/My World* (1926).

Kasprowicz translated a large body of English verse into Polish in his anthology *Poeci* angielscy of 1907.

### Kataev, Valentin Petrovich (1897-1986)

Russian writer. His work divides into three distinct periods. In his first phase, Kataev wrote mainly parody and humour; for example, the <u>picaresque</u> novel *Raztratchiki/ The Embezzlers* 1926 and a play about housing shortages, *Kvadratura kruga/ Squaring the Circle* 1928. After 1930, his work conformed to the principles of socialist realism. From 1964 onwards, he wrote in a new idiom of associative recollections, as in *Trava zabveniia/The Grass of Oblivion* 1967.

### Kaufman, George S(imon) (1889-1961)

US dramatist. He is the author (often in collaboration with others) of many Broadway hits, including *Of Thee I Sing* 1931, a Pulitzer prize-winning satire on US politics; *You Can't Take It with You* 1936; *The Man Who Came to Dinner* 1939; and *The Solid Gold Cadillac* 1952. Many of his plays became classic Hollywood films.

### Kavanagh, Dan

pseudonym of the English writer Julian <u>Barnes</u>, under which he has written detective novels.

## Kavanagh, Patrick (Joseph) (1905-1967)

Irish poet, born in Inniskeen, County Monaghan, who moved to Dublin in 1939. Kavanagh's poetry creates a sense of small-scale, parochial Ireland, and expresses a variety of moods, from the gentle and elegiac to the satiric and savage. The collections include *Ploughman and Other Poems* (1936); *The Great Hunger* (1942), a long, energetic poem about life in rural Ireland; *Come Dance with Kitty Stobling* (1960); and *Collected Poems* (1964).

Until 1939 Kavanagh farmed on a small scale in County Monaghan. In Dublin he worked for various newspapers and as a broadcaster, as well as briefly editing a review, *Kavanagh's Weekly*, in 1952.

### Kawabata, Yasunari (1899-1972)

Japanese novelist. He translated Lady <u>Murasaki</u>, and was the author of *Snow Country* (1947) and *A Thousand Cranes* (1952). His novels are characterized by melancholy and loneliness. He was the first Japanese to be awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature, in 1968.

## Kaye-Smith, Sheila (1887-1956)

English novelist. She achieved success with *Sussex Gorse* 1916; other novels include *Joanna Godden* 1921, *Shepherds in Sackcloth* 1930, *Ember Lane* 1940, and *The Lardners and the Laurelwoods* 1948. *Joanna Godden Married* 1926 is a collection of short stories.

### Kazantzakis, Nikos (1885-1957)

Greek writer. His works include the poem *I Odysseia/The Odyssey* (1938), which continues Homer's *Odyssey*, and the novels *Zorba the Greek* (1946), *Christ Recrucified* (1948), *The Greek Passion*, and *The Last Temptation of Christ* (both 1951). *Zorba the Greek* was filmed in 1964 and *The Last Temptation of Christ* (controversially) in 1988.

### Kazin, Alfred (1915-1998)

US critic. He wrote *On Native Grounds* 1942, an interpretation of modern US writing; edited anthologies of the poets Ralph Waldo Emerson 1959 and William Blake 1948; and produced studies of the writers F Scott Fitzgerald 1951 and Theodore Dreiser 1955. Later works of criticism are *An American Procession* 1984 and *A Writer's* 

### Keable, Robert (1887-1927)

English novelist. He was a chaplain during World War I and as a result of his war experiences, of which he wrote in *Standing By* 1919, he decided to give up the church. *Simon Called Peter* 1921, a novel which told of his loss of faith, was hugely successful.

# Keane, John B(rendan) (1928-2002)

Irish writer. His most important work, *The Field* (1965), set in County Kerry, chronicles how one man's obsession with the land leads to tragic, deadly consequences. Staged across the world, *The Field* was made into a film in 1990. Although best known as a playwright, Keane has also published collections of poetry, essays, and a best-selling novel, *Durango* (1992).

He was born in Listowel, County Kerry, and educated at a Christian Brothers school. Before turning to writing, Keane worked as a chemist's apprentice and as a manager of a public house. His first play, *Sive* (1959), won the All-Ireland drama festival in Athlone.

# Keating, Geoffrey (c. 1580-c. 1645)

also known as Seathrún Céitinn

Irish Gaelic poet and historian, and Roman Catholic priest. Born in Burges, County Tipperary, he was educated on the Continent at Bordeaux and Salamanca. His *Forás Feasa ar Éirinn/Groundwork of Knowledge about Ireland* (about 1630) refutes other commentators on Ireland, particularly the Elizabethan chroniclers of the preceding generation, and produces the first attempt at a complete compendium of history and legendary material. He also wrote poetry, in densely wrought assonantal metres.

# Keating, H(enry) R(eymond) F(itzwalter) (1926-)

English writer of best-selling classic detective fiction, known especially for his Inspector Ghote series set in India.

His works include *The Perfect Murder* (1964), *Inspector Ghote's Good Crusade* (1966), *Inspector Ghote Hunts the Peacock* (1968), *Inspector Ghote Breaks an Egg* (1970), *Inspector Ghote Goes By Train* (1971), *Bats Fly Up for Inspector Ghote* 

(1974), Murder Must Appetize (1976), The Murder of the Maharajah (1980), The Sheriff of Bombay (1983), Inspector Ghote, His Life and Crimes (1989), Cheating Death (1992, The Good Detective (1995), Jack, The Lady Killer (1999), and The Hard Detective (2000).

#### Keats, Ezra Jack (1916-1983)

US author and illustrator. He is known for writing and illustrating many books for young readers, notably *The Snowy Day* 1962, in which he used the collage medium to feature a black boy named Peter.

### Keats, John (1795-1821)

English poet. He produced work of the highest quality and promise, belonging to the artistic school of Romanticism, before dying at the age of 25. *Poems* (1817), *Endymion* (1818), the great odes (particularly 'Ode to a Nightingale' and 'Ode on a Grecian Urn' written in 1819, published in 1820), and the narratives 'Isabella; or the Pot of Basil' (1818), 'Lamia' (1819), and 'The Eve of St Agnes' (1820), show his lyrical richness and talent for drawing on both classical mythology and medieval lore.

Born in London, Keats studied at Guy's Hospital from 1815-17, but then abandoned medicine for poetry. *Endymion* was harshly reviewed by the Tory *Blackwood's Magazine* and *Quarterly Review*, largely because of Keats's friendship with the radical English writer Leigh <u>Hunt</u> (1784-1859). In 1819 he fell in love with Fanny Brawne (1802-1865). Suffering from tuberculosis, in September 1820, he sailed to Italy in an attempt to cure his worsening illness. He died in Rome, and was buried in the Protestant cemetery there.

# Keble, John (1792-1866)

Anglican priest and religious poet. His sermon on the decline of religious faith in Britain, preached in 1833, heralded the start of the Oxford Movement, a Catholic revival in the Church of England. He wrote four of the *Tracts for the Times* (theological treatises in support of the movement), and was professor of poetry at Oxford 1831-41. His book of poems, *The Christian Year* (1827), was very popular in the 19th century. Keble College, Oxford, was founded in 1870 in his memory.

# Keeley, Edmund (Leroy) (1928-)

US translator and academic. Often in collaboration with Philip Sherrard, he translated numerous modern Greek literary works. His books include *The Salonika* 

Bay Murder 1989, about the murder of CBS news reporter George Polk.

# Keene, Carolyn

US writer; see Edward L Stratemeyer.

# Keene, Donald (Lawrence) (1922-)

US literary critic, translator, and educator. He was the leading Western expert on Japanese literature. His critical and historical studies and translations introduced westerners to Japanese writing.

## Keillor, Garrison Edward (1942-)

US writer and humorist. His hometown of Anoka, Minnesota, in the American Midwest, inspired his popular, richly comic stories about Lake Wobegon, including *Lake Wobegon Days* (1985) and *Leaving Home* (1987), which often started as radio monologues about 'the town that time forgot, that the decades cannot improve'. He revisited the scene of *Lake Wobegon Days* in *Wobegon Boy* (1997) and *Lake Wobegon Summer 1956* (2001).

Later works also include *We Are Still Married* (1989), *Radio Romance* (1991), *The Book of Guys* (1993), *Me: A Political Satire* (1999), and *Love Me* (2003).

### Keller, Gottfried (1819-1890)

Swiss poet and novelist. His books include the autobiographical novel *Der grüne Heinrich/Green Henry* 1854-55. He was particularly skilful in his handling of the short story, and his sketches of Swiss provincial life, *Die Leute von Seldwyla/The People of Seldwyla* 1856-74, have become classics.

### Keller, Helen Adams (1880-1968)

US author and campaigner for the blind. She became blind and deaf after an illness when she was only 19 months old, but the teaching of Anne Sullivan, her lifelong companion, enabled her to learn the names of objects and eventually to speak. Keller graduated with honours from Radcliffe College in 1904; published several books, including *The Story of My Life* (1902); and toured the world, lecturing to raise money for the blind.

# Kelly, Hugh (1739-1777)

Irish playwright, born in Killarney, County Kerry, and apprenticed in Dublin before moving to London in 1760. His poem *Thespis, or a Critical Examination into the Merits of all the Principal Performers belonging to Drury Lane Theatre* (1767) attracted David Garrick's attention, and his comedy *False Delicacy* (1768) was produced under Garrick's direction.

Kelly also wrote the plays A Word to the Wise (1770), Clementina (1771), The School for Wives (1773), The Romance of an Hour (1774), and The Man of Reason (1776).

### Kelman, James (1946-)

Scottish novelist and short-story writer. His works are angry, compassionate, and ironic, and make effective use of the trenchant speech patterns of his native Glasgow. These include the novels *The Busconductor Hines* (1984), *A Disaffection* (1989), and *How Late It Was, How Late* (1994; Booker Prize); *The Good times* (1998) comprises 21 'narratives' in which men try to come to terms with their redundancy in life.

Other works include the short-story collections *Greyhound for Breakfast* (1987) and *The Burn* (1991); and the play *The Busker* (1985).

# Kemal, Yashar (1923-)

#### adopted name of Yashar Kemal Gokceli

Turkish novelist and journalist. He has been jailed repeatedly for his socialist convictions, shown in his progressive and politically conscious writings. His novels include *Anatolian Tales* (1967) and *The Legend of the Thousand Bulls* (1971). His work often portrays the essential decency of peasants and the difficulty of their struggle for existence.

Many of Kemal's novels are intensely political and characterized by elements of folklore and fairy tale. In his first, *Ince Memed/Memed*, *My Hawk* (1955), the hero is a kind of Turkish Robin Hood. Another peasant hero is featured in *The Wind from the Plain* (1960), *Iron Earth, Copper Sky* (1963), and *The Undying Grass* (1968).

Kempe, Margerie (c. 1373-c. 1439)

#### born Margerie Brunham

English Christian mystic. She converted to religious life after a period of mental derangement, and travelled widely as a pilgrim. Her *Boke of Margery Kempe* (about 1420) describes her life and experiences, both religious and worldly. It has been called the first autobiography in English.

### Kendall, Henry Clarence (1839-1882)

Australian poet. His debut was *Poems and Songs* 1862, and he won a prize for his poems 'Death in the Bush' and 'The Glen of Arrawatta'. Other collections include *Leaves from Australian Forests* 1869 and *Songs from the Mountains* 1880.

# Keneally, Thomas Michael (1935-)

Australian novelist and playwright. He is known for his historical fiction. He won the Booker Prize with *Schindler's Ark* (1982; filmed as *Schindler's List* 1993), a novel based on the true account of Polish Jews saved from the gas chambers in World War II by a German industrialist. Other works include *Woman of the Inner Sea* (1992) and *Bettany's Book* (2000).

Keneally was born in Sydney, Australia. He studied for the Catholic priesthood but left before ordination. He has won the Miles Franklin Award on two occasions with *Bring Larks and Heroes* (1967), set amid the brutality and corruption of a penal colony, and *Three Cheers for the Paraclete* (1968), which deals with a young priest's conflict with his superiors. Other works include *A Dutiful Daughter* (1971), *The Chant of Jimmie Blacksmith* (1972; filmed 1978), *Blood Red, Sister Rose* (1974), *Confederates* (1980), *A Family Madness* (1986), *To Asmara* (1989), *A River Town* (1995), and *The Great Shame* (1998).

# Kennedy, A(lison) L(ouise) (1965-)

Scottish writer, acclaimed for her originality and use of language. Her first published work, the short story collection *Night Geometry and the Garscadden Trains* (1990) received the Mail on Sunday/John Llewelyn Rhys prize and the Scotsman Saltire award for the best first Scottish book in 1991. In 1993 she was named as one of the 20 best of the young British novelists and she won the Somerset Maugham award for *Looking for the Possible Dance* (1994), her first novel.

Kennedy's other works include *So I am Glad* (Saltire Scottish Book of the Year) (1995), *Now That You're Back* (1995), *Original Bliss* (1997), *Everything You Need* (1999), *On Bullfighting* (winner of a 2001 Scottish Arts Council Book Award), and *Indelible Acts* (2002).

### Kennedy, John Pendleton (1795-1870)

US writer and statesman. His fiction, published under the pen-name 'Mark Littleton', includes *Swallow Barn* 1832, a study of Virginian life; and *Horseshoe Robinson* 1835.

Kennedy became a member of Congress and secretary of the navy. He was a friend of William Makepeace <u>Thackeray</u>, whom he helped in writing *The Virginians* 1857-59.

### Kennedy, Margaret (1896-1967)

English novelist. She became known for *The Constant Nymph* (1924), which was later dramatized and filmed. Among her other novels are *Red Sky at Morning* (1927), *Troy Chimneys* (1953; Tait Black Memorial Prize), *A Night in Cold Harbour* (1961), and *Not in the Calendar* (1964).

## Kennedy, William Joseph (1928-)

US novelist. He wrote the *Albany Cycle* of books about Irish immigrants pursuing the American Dream in the late 19th and early 20th centuries in upstate New York. These include *Legs* (1976), *Billy Phelan's Greatest Game* (1983), *Ironweed* (1984, Pulitzer Prize), *Quinn's Book* (1988), *Very Old Bones* (1992), and *The Flaming Corsage* (1996).

### Kennelly, Brendan (1936-)

Irish writer, best known for his poetry. Kennelly was born in Ballylongford, County Kerry, and educated at Trinity College, Dublin, and the University of Leeds. His verse extols the infinite complexity and variety of the human condition: its loves, its hatreds, its history of violence, and its desire for understanding and compassion. He has published several poetry collections, as well as long poem sequences, such as *Cromwell* (1983) and *The Book of Judas* (1991), and novels and plays. In 1973 he became professor of Modern English at Trinity College, Dublin.

### Kent, William Charles Mark (1823-1902)

English poet, biographer, and miscellaneous writer. His writings, under the pseudonym Mark Rochester, include *Aletheia* 1850, *Poems* 1870, *Mythological Dictionary* 1870, *Corona Catholica* 1880, and *The Modern Seven Wonders of the World* 1890. He also issued critiques, editions, or memoirs of Dickens 1872, Lamb

1876, Burns 1878, Lytton 1883, and others.

#### Kente, Gibson (1933-2004)

South African playwright. One of the country's best-known dramatists, he brought theatre to South Africa's black townships during the apartheid era. His musical productions, often reflecting life in the townships, typically involved untrained actors and simple sets. These include *How Long*? (1973), *I Believe* (1974), and *Sekunjalo* (1987).

In 2003 he became one of very few celebrities in South Africa to publicly announce that he had contracted HIV.

### Kenyon, (Jennifer) Jane (1947-)

US poet. As translator of *Twenty Poems of Anna Akhmatova* 1985, she gained critical approval, but she is best known for her own perceptive and finely crafted poetry, as in *Let Evening Come* 1990.

#### Ker, William Paton (1855-1923)

Scottish scholar. An authority on medieval literature, he wrote such works as *Epic and Romance* 1897, *The Dark Ages* 1904, *The Art of Poetry* 1923, and *Essays on Medieval Literature* 1923. He was professor of poetry at Oxford University from 1920.

#### Kerner, Justinius Andreas Christian (1786-1862)

German poet. His works include *Die Reiseschatten von dem Schattenspieler Luchs* 1811, *Deutscher Dichterwald* 1813, *Der letzte Blutenstrauss* 1852, and *Winterbluten* 1859. In later life he became interested in occultism and wrote the novel *Die Seherin von Prevorst* 1829.

#### Kerouac, Jack (Jean Louis) (1922-1969)

US novelist. He named and epitomized the <u>Beat Generation</u> of the 1950s. The first of his autobiographical, myth-making books, *The Town and the City* (1950), was followed by the rhapsodic <u>On the Road</u> (1957). Other works written with similar free-wheeling energy and inspired by his interests in jazz and Buddhism include *The* 

*Dharma Bums* (1958), *Doctor Sax* (1959), and *Desolation Angels* (1965). His major contribution to poetry was *Mexico City Blues* (1959).

Kerouac became a legendary symbol of youthful rebellion from the late 1950s, but before his early death from alcoholism, he had become a semi-recluse, unable to cope with his fame.

### Kertész, Imre (1929-)

Hungarian writer. A Holocaust survivor, he explores the capacity of the human spirit to endure repressive and brutal societies. His novels, largely autobiographical, include *Sorstalanság/Fateless* (1975), *A kudarc/Fiasco* (1988), and *Kaddis a meg nem születetett gyermekért/Kaddish for a Child not Born* (1990). He was awarded the 2002 Nobel Prize for Literature.

Born in Budapest, Kertész was deported to the Auschwitz concentration camp in Poland in 1944 and from there to the Buchenwald concentration camp in eastern Germany, from where he was liberated in 1945. His work is also influenced by his experience of living under a repressive communist regime in Hungary. He worked for the Hungarian newspaper *Világosság* 1948-51. Following two years of military service he worked as a translator of German literature into Hungarian. *Sorstalansá/ Fateless*, his first novel, is based on his experiences at Auschwitz and Buchenwald. He was the first Hungarian to win the Nobel Prize for Literature.

### Kesey, Ken Elton (1935-2001)

US writer. He used his experience of working in a mental hospital as the basis for his best-selling first novel <u>One Flew Over the Cuckoo's Nest</u> (1962; filmed 1975). This was followed by his Oregon-set novel *Sometimes a Great Notion* (1964). In the mid-1960s he gave up writing and became one of the leaders of the hippie movement.

He returned to writing with *Kesey's Garage Sale* (1973) and *Demon Box* (1988), collections of less energetic, sometimes folksy material. *Last Go Round* was published in 1994. Kesey's life as a hippie was described by Tom <u>Wolfe</u> in his *Electric Kool-Aid Acid Test*.

### Keyes, Frances Parkinson (1885-1970)

US novelist. Her first novel, *The Old Grey Homestead* 1919, was followed by many more historical romances, including *Queen Anne's Lace* 1930, *Senator Marlowe's Daughter* 1933, *Honor Bright* 1936, and *Dinner at Antoine's* 1948.

She married Henry Wilder Keyes, a US senator 1919-37, and published Letters from a

### Keyes, Sidney Arthur Kilworth (1922-1943)

English poet. His two published volumes of poetry, *The Iron Laurel* 1942 and *The Cruel Solstice* 1944, have a sibylline quality revealing a maturity remarkable in so young a man, a preoccupation with the themes of love and death, and a reliance on symbolism, at times obscure. His imagery is romantic, moving and often beautiful, and springs from a mind well-stocked both from literature and legend and from an original and exact observation of nature.

# Khalifa, (Mustafa ibn 'Abdallah Katib Chelebi) Hajji (c. 1609-1657)

Turkish author of works in both Arabic and Turkish. His chief work is *Kashf al-zunun/ Bibliographica Enyclopaedia* in Arabic on Arabic, Turkish, and Persian books and writers.

### Khaqani (c. 1106-c. 1185)

#### pseudonym of Afzal al-Din Badel Ebrahim

Persian poet. He is acknowledged as a master of the *qasida* (a highly stylized poetic form), though his style is regarded as extremely difficult and obscure. Khaqani also wrote satires, epigrams, a *mathnavi* poem 'The Gift of the Two Iraqs', and a ballad inspired by a period spent in prison after falling foul of his patron, the prince of Baku.

### Khlebnikov, Viktor (Velemir) Vladimirovich (1885-1922)

Russian poet. He was a central figure in Russian <u>Futurism</u>, and sought to reform poetic language by creating a vocabulary free from the associations of ordinary words, a theory known as 'transrational language'. His subject matter was often drawn from the prehistory of the Slav people, a world of mythic imagination; he also wrote about the Revolution and, in the long poem *Ladomir* 1920, about a future Utopia. He exerted enormous influence on the next generation of Russian poets.

Although often accused of obscurity, Khlebnikov was a master of technical effects, as seen in his 'etymological' poetry, such as 'Zaklinanie smekhom/Incantation by Laughter' 1910, in which all 12 lines are made up of morphological derivations of the Russian root *sme*-. He wrote several longer narrative poems, such as *Nochnoi obysk/ The Nocturnal Search* 1920, about the clash between two opposing camps during the

early days of the Revolution, and *Zangezi* 1922, a dialogue between a philosopher and the crowd, which has been described as his 'confession'.

#### Kickham, Charles Joseph (1828-1882)

Irish writer and political activist, born in Cnoceenagaw, County Tipperary. A member of the republican Fenian movement, Kickham contributed to nationalist newspapers, such as *The Celt* and *The Nation*, and advocated armed rebellion. He was arrested in 1865 and sentenced to 14 years' imprisonment for treason, but was released in the 1869 amnesty. From the mid-1870s until his death, Kickham was chairman of the Supreme Council of the Irish Republican Brotherhood.

Kickham's republican activities and support of land reform through the Tenant League, in addition to his novel *Knocknagow; or, the Homes of Tipperary* (1873), significantly influenced the Irish nationalist movement in the 19th century. His popularity and renown extends to the large Irish emigrant communities in North America and Britain.

#### Kielland, Alexander Lange (1849-1906)

Norwegian novelist. He combines social criticism (of class differences in *Garman og Worse* 1880, of the hypocrisy of official Christianity in *Skipper Worse* 1882, and of the education system in *Gift* 1883) with an elegantly ironic style. His short stories, collected in *Novelletter* 1879 and *Nye Novelletter* 1880, show the range of his talents, from the incisively satirical to the gently poetic.

#### Kierkegaard, Søren Aabye (1813-1855)

Danish philosopher and theologian, often considered to be the founder of existentialism. He argued that no system of thought could explain the unique experience of the individual. He defended Christianity, suggesting that God cannot be known through reason, but only through a 'leap of faith'. His chief works are *Enten-Eller/Either-Or* (1843) and *Begrebet Angest/Concept of Dread* (1844).

#### 'Killers, The'

short story, published in *Men Without Women* (1928), by US writer Ernest <u>Hemingway</u>. When two killers arrive in a lunchroom to murder 'the Swede', young Nick Adams runs to warn him, and is stunned to find the former prizefighter passively waiting for death. A work of intense power and economy, it deals with Hemingway's major themes of virility and death.

### Kilmer, Joyce (1886-1918)

US poet. His first collection of poems *Summer of Love* was published 1911. He later gained an international reputation with the title work of *Trees and Other Poems* 1914.

# Kincaid, Jamaica (1949-)

born Jamaica Shawn

US writer born in the West Indies. She has won recognition for her collections of short stories, such as *At the Bottom of the River* 1983, and *Annie John* 1985, a short story cycle. Her work is noted for its telling detail and poetic diction.

Kinck, Hans Ernst (1865-1926)

Norwegian novelist and playwright. His novels reflect his interest in the peasant psychology, though his use of colourful dialect often makes his style difficult to understand and to translate. His writing was influenced by repeated visits to Italy. Among Kinck's best-known works are *Flaggermus-vinger* 1896, *Sneskavlen brast* 1918-19, and the verse play *Driftekaren* 1908.

# King, Stephen (Edwin) (1947-)

US writer of best-selling horror novels with small-town or rural settings. Many of his works have been filmed, including *Carrie* (1974), *The Shining* (1977), *Christine* (1983), *Misery* (1987), and an adaptation of his short-story collection *Hearts of Atlantis* (2001). He received the National Book Foundation's 2003 Medal for Distinguished Contribution to American Letters.

Other novels include *Salem's Lot* (1975), *The Dead Zone* (1979), *Firestarter* (1980), *Cujo* (1981), *It* (1986), *The Tommyknockers* (1987), *The Dark Half* (1989), *Dolores Claiborne* (1992), and *Bag of Bones* (1998). He has also published several volumes of short stories, several screenplays, including *The Green Mile* (2000), and a number of novels under the pseudonym Richard Bachman.

King Lear

tragedy by William <u>Shakespeare</u>, first performed in 1605-06. Lear, king of Britain, favours his grasping daughters Goneril and Regan with shares of his kingdom but refuses his third, honest daughter Cordelia a share because she will not falsely flatter him. Rejected by Goneril and Regan, the old and unbalanced Lear is reunited with Cordelia but dies of grief when she is murdered.

### Kingo, Thomas Hansen (1634-1703)

Danish poet. The greatest Danish baroque poet, he was the author of many magnificent hymns and other poetry. He became bishop of Odense 1677.

# Kingsley, Charles (1819-1875)

English author. A rector, he was known as the 'Chartist clergyman' because of such social novels as *Yeast* (1848) and *Alton Locke* (1850). His historical novels include *Westward Ho!* (1855) and *Hereward the Wake* (1866). He also wrote, for children, *The <u>Water Babies</u>* (1863).

He was deeply interested in social questions, and threw himself wholeheartedly into the schemes of social relief which were supported under the name of Christian Socialism, writing many tracts and articles as 'Parson Lot'.

### Kingsley, Henry (1830-1876)

English novelist and younger brother of Charles <u>Kingsley</u>. He wrote two novels with Australian settings - *The Recollections of Geoffry Hamlyn* 1859 and *The Hillyars and the Burtons* 1865, both emigrant success stories - and used Australian material in several others. His masterpiece is *Ravenshoe* 1861.

### King-Smith, Dick (Ronald Gordon) (1922-)

English author of over 90 books for children. Having been a farmer for over twenty years, and then a teacher, it seems natural that his books should focus largely on animals. His book *The Sheep-Pig* (1983), published as *Babe the Gallant Pig* in the USA, was the winner of the 1984 Guardian Award for children's fiction. In 1995 the book was made into the film *Babe*, and was nominated for an Academy Award.

US writer. Her novels depict family and political struggles and contain rich descriptions of natural surroundings, especially in the southwestern USA. These include *Bean Trees* (1988), *Animal Dreams* (1990), and *Pigs from Heaven* (1993). Her later novels include *The Poisonwood Bible* (1999) and *The Prodigal Summer* (2000).

# Kingston, Maxine Hong (1940-)

US writer. A major voice of Chinese-American culture, her semi-fictional *The Woman Warrior: Memoirs of a Girlhood Among Ghosts* (1976) was followed by *China Men* (1980), which continued her imaginative chronicling of family history and cultural folklore. Her work documents the Oriental experience, dealing with alienation, exploitation, and the problems of both national and racial identity, in a prose of delicate precision and vivid power.

Of Chinese descent, Kingston was born in Stockton, California, and moved to Honolulu, Hawaii. Her more recent books include *Tripmaster Monkey: His Fake Book* (1989), about a fifth-generation Californian who feels alien to both his Chinese heritage and American culture; *To Be The Poet* (2002), written mostly in verse; and *The Fifth Book of Peace* (2003), a novel that skilfully combines memoir, history, culture, and fantasy.

# Kingston, William Henry Giles (1814-1880)

English writer. He became one of the most popular authors of adventure stories for children. *Peter the Whaler* 1851 was followed by about 130 more stories over the next 30 years.

Among them were *From Powder Monkey to Admiral*, which ran as a serial in the *Boy's Own Paper*, *The Three Midshipmen* 1862, *The Three Lieutenants* 1874, *The Three Commanders* 1875, and *The Three Admirals* 1877.

# Kinnell, Galway (1927-)

US poet and writer. Based in Sheffield, Vermont, he was a translator and essay writer, but is best known for his direct and precise poetry, as in *Selected Poems* (1982). Kinnell was born in Providence, Rhode Island. He studied at Princeton University and the University of Rochester, gaining his MA in 1949. He travelled widely and taught at many colleges.

Kinsella, Thomas (1928-)

Irish poet and translator. Collections like *Fifteen Dead* (1979) confront the violence and what Kinsella perceives as the moral vacuum in contemporary Ireland. Later poems are more experimental than accessible. His most celebrated translation is *The Táin* (1969), from the ancient Ulster hero-tale *Táin Bó Cuailange/The Cattle Raid of Cooley*.

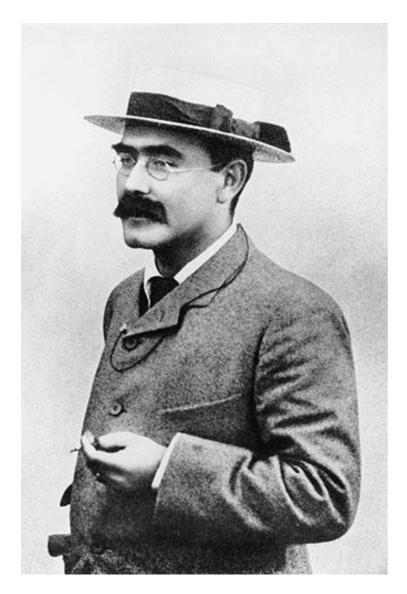
Kinsella is a prolific and highly regarded poet, whose publications range from *Poems* (1956) to *From Centre City* (1994). Early work tended to be personal and lyrical, dealing with the difficulties of love, family illness, and the almost ghostly calm of an unpopulated countryside. His translations from Irish Gaelic into English include show a keen awareness of Gaelic tradition.

# Kipling, (Joseph) Rudyard (1865-1936)

English writer, born in India. *Plain Tales from the Hills* (1888), about Anglo-Indian society, contains the earliest of his masterly short stories. His books for children, including *The Jungle Book* (1894-95), *Just So Stories* (1902), *Puck of Pook's Hill* (1906), and the <u>picaresque</u> novel *Kim* (1901), reveal his imaginative identification with the exotic. Poems such as 'If-', 'Danny Deever', and 'Gunga Din', express an empathy with common experience, which contributed to his great popularity, together with a vivid sense of 'Englishness' (sometimes belittled as a kind of chauvinistic imperialism). Kipling's work is increasingly valued for its complex characterization and subtle moral viewpoints. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1907.

Born in Bombay (now Mumbai), Kipling was educated at the United Services College at Westward Ho, Devon, England, which provided the background for *Stalky and Co* (1899). He worked as a journalist in India 1882-89 and during these years wrote the stories which appeared in *Plain Tales from the Hills, Soldiers Three* (1890), and *Wee Willie Winkie* (1890). Returning to London in 1889 he published the novel *The Light that Failed* (1890) and the poetry *Barrack-Room Ballads* (1892). He lived largely in the USA 1892-99, where he produced the two *Jungle Books* and *Captains Courageous* (1897). Settling in Sussex, southeast England, he published *Kim*, usually regarded as his greatest work of fiction; the *Just So Stories*; *Puck of Pook's Hill*; and *Rewards and Fairies* (1910). Kipling's son was killed at Loos, and the achievements of his regiment were commemorated in *The Irish Guards in the Great War* (1923). In 1926 he was awarded the gold medal of the Royal Society of Literature; he received many other honours, including associate membership of the French Académie des Sciences et Politiques, and was buried in Poets' Corner, Westminster Abbey.

#### **Kipling**



#### (Image © Billie Love)

The Indian-born writer and poet Rudyard Kipling, who was the first English recipient of the Nobel Prize for literature. His satirical stories based on colonial society in India earned him recognition in England, although he is best remembered for his children's tales, particularly the classic animal adventures in the two Jungle Books (1894-95).

#### **Kirkoswald**

village in South Ayrshire unitary authority, Scotland, 6 km/4 mi southwest of Maybole; population (2001) 1,400. The poet Robert Burns studied here briefly and two of his fictional characters, Tam o'Shanter and Souter Johnnie, are supposed to be modelled on people he met: Douglas Graham of Shanter Farm and John Davidson the shoemaker (souter). Their graves are in Kirkoswald churchyard. Souter Johnnie's cottage now belongs to the National Trust of Scotland and is open to the public.

# Kirstein, Lincoln Edward (1907-1996)

US writer and dance impresario. In 1933 he recognized George Balanchine's talents and sponsored his emigration to the USA. In order to provide vehicles for Balanchine's talents, he founded the School of American Ballet in 1934 and the American Ballet Company the following year. The American Ballet became attached to the Metropolitan Opera in 1936, when Kirstein also ran Ballet Caravan. In 1946 Kirstein and Balanchine founded the Ballet Society, and in 1948 they moved to New York's new City Centre as the directors of what became one of the USA's top-ranking companies, New York City Ballet.

Kirstein was born in Rochester, New York. Heir to a Filene (department store) fortune, he fell in love with the theatre as a child and was profoundly inspired by Anna Pavlova in 1920. After graduating from Harvard University, he reviewed dance and theatre for *Horn and Hound*, which he cofounded. Officially retired in 1989, Kirstein remained a presence in the American dance world and intellectual life. He wrote several books, including *Dance* (1935) and *Movement and Metaphor* (1970), as well as poetry, and was founder-editor of *Dance Index Magazine* (1942-48).

#### Kisfaludy, Károly (1788-1830)

Hungarian dramatist. Writing in a Romantic idiom, he was the first Hungarian dramatist to achieve popular success, and is considered the founder of modern Hungarian literature. His works include *A tatárok Magyarországban/The Tartars in Hungary* 1819 and *Iréne* 1820.

Together with his brother **Sandor Kisfaludy** (1772-1844), he founded a literary periodical, *Aurora*, and an Aurora society, which became a focus for young writers. The brothers later established the Kisfaludy Tarsasag literary society.

#### Kit-Cat Club

club founded in London in 1703 to encourage literature and art, and named after Christopher Cat (or Katt), at whose tavern it met. Ultimately it became a Whig society to promote the Hanoverian succession. Among its original 39 members were the Duke of Marlborough, Robert Walpole, Joseph Addison, Richard Steele, and William Congreve. The membership later increased to 48.

### Kittredge, George Lyman (1860-1941)

US philologist, Shakespearen scholar, and educator. He was inextricably identified with Harvard University, where he was educated and later taught (1888-1936). At Harvard, 'Kitty' inaugurated the study of English romance literature and taught

English 2 (1896-1936), his famous course on Shakespeare. He was an international authority on *Beowulf*, Chaucer, and particularly Shakespeare. His seminal *Chaucer and his Poetry* (1915) laid the foundation for US Chaucer studies. Kittredge was born in Boston, Massachusetts.

### Kivi, Alexis (1834-1872)

#### pseudonym of Alexis Stenvall

Finnish novelist, poet, and dramatist. The first great writer in Finnish, he was most prolific as a dramatist and his comedy *Nummisuutarit/The Cobblers on the Heath* 1864 remains one of the most popular plays in Finland's theatre. His most important work, today acknowledged as one of the greatest products of Finnish literature, is *Seitsemän veljestä/Seven Brothers* 1870. An allegory of the Finns' emergence as a nation, it depicts every aspect of Finnish rural life: recklessness, strong drink, bursts of remorse and religious feeling, love of nature and the chase, and riotous humour.

# Kizer, Carolyn (Ashley) (1925-)

US poet. A founding editor of *Poetry Northwest* (1959-65), she taught at many institutions. She is known for her feminist poetry, as in *Mermaids in the Basement: Poems for Women* (1984). Kizer was born in Spokane, Washington. She studied at Sarah Lawrence College, where she gained her BA in 1945, Columbia University (1945-46), and the University of Washington, Seattle (1946-47).

### Klein, Abraham Moses (1909-1972)

Canadian poet. A leader in the Canadian Jewish community for many years, his first two books of poetry explored his Jewish heritage. *The Rocking Chair* (1948) reached a wider audience and expressed a more general humanist sympathy. Until his breakdown in the 1950s, Klein was one of the most influential poets in Canada.

### Klima, Ladislav (1872-1928)

Czech novelist and philosopher. His novel *The Sorrows of Prince Sternenhoch* 1928 and the short story 'Slavná Nemesis/Glorious Nemesis' 1932 combine slapstick and philosophy in a grotesque inversion of literary, cultural, and social conventions. Many of his philosophical ideas were developed from George Berkeley, Arthur Schopenhauer, and Friedrich Nietzsche.

# Klinger, Friedrich Maximilian von (1752-1831)

German playwright and poet. His drama *Sturm und Drang* 1776 gave its name to that movement in German literature which exalted passionate feelings, the power of the individual will, and the democratic ideals of freedom and equality. Another drama of his, *Die Zwillinge* 1775, is also celebrated. In later life he wrote several philosophical novels.

# Kloos, Willem Johan (1859-1938)

Dutch poet and critic. He was one of the leaders of the new literary group called 'the men of '80', and editor 1885 of their journal *De Nieuwe Gids/The New Guide*. The force of his language and imagery greatly influenced the poetry and critical views of his contemporaries in the early years of the movement, but his arrogance finally isolated him and the leadership passed to Albert Verwey.

# Klopstock, Friedrich Gottlieb (1724-1803)

German poet. His religious epic *Der Messias/The Messiah* (1748-73) and *Oden/Odes* (1771) anticipated Romanticism. Written in hexameters, *Der Messias* is a very uneven poem, some parts of it being imbued with deep feeling and fervour, while others are flat and trivial.

# Kneale, Matthew (1960-)

English writer whose novel *English Passengers* won the 2001 Whitbread Prize and was shortlisted for the 2000 Booker Prize. His other novels include *Whore Banquets* (1987), which won the Somerset Maugham award, *Inside Rosie's Kingdom* (1989), and *Sweet Thames* (1992), which won the John Llewellyn Rhys Prize.

### Knickerbocker School

group of US writers working in New York State in the early 19th century, which included Washington Irving, James Kirke Paulding (1778-1860), and Fitz-Greene Halleck (1790-1867). The group took its name from Irving's comic *History of New York by Diedrich Knickerbocker* (1809).

US novelist, born in Yorkshire, England. Among his novels, mainly with Yorkshire backgrounds, are *The Happy Land* 1940, *This Above All* 1941, and *Lassie Come Home* 1940.

### Knight, Sarah Kemble (1666-1727)

American diarist. Her *Diary* of her travels in New York State in 1704-05, first printed in 1825, describes the life of the early settlers.

### Knowles, James Thomas (1831-1908)

English editor. He founded the Metaphysical Society 1869 and was editor of the *Contemporary Review* 1870-77.

In 1877 he founded the *Nineteenth Century*, which, with contributions from celebrities such as Gladstone, Tennyson, and others, was from the first a great success. KCVO 1903.

# Knox, Bernard MacGregor Walker (1914-)

English-born US classics scholar and author. He earned his PhD at Yale University in 1948 and taught classics there (1948-61). He then served as director of the Center for Hellenic Studies in Washington, DC (1961-85). In addition to his articles, reviews, and translations, Knox's books included *The Heroic Temper: Studies in Sophoclean Tragedy* (1980), *Word and Action: Essays on the Ancient Theatre* (1980), and *The Oldest Dead White European Males* (1993).

Knox was born in Bradford, England. He gained his BA at St John's College, Cambridge University, England, in 1936, after which he went to Spain and fought (and was wounded) with the International Brigade in the Civil War. He emigrated to the USA in 1939. While serving with the US Army in Europe during World War II (1942-45), he became a US citizen in 1943, and was awarded two Bronze Stars and the French *croix de guerre*. Among his various academic honours and awards, he was the 1963 Sather lecturer at the University of California, Berkeley, and received the 1978 George Jean Nathan Award for drama criticism.

While pursuing his academic career, Knox wrote the script for and performed in four films for educational television on Sophocles's *Oedipus the King*; these films are still used in classrooms throughout the USA. He was the assistant editor and a contributor to Volume I of the *Cambridge History of Classical Literature* (1985) and he was editor of *The Norton Book of Classical Literature* (1993).

## Knox, Vicesimus (1752-1821)

English essayist. He wrote essays and compiled the popular miscellany *Elegant Extracts* 1789.

# Koch, Kenneth (Jay) (1925-)

US poet. A leading figure of the New York school of poetry, he is known for his urban settings, as in *Poems* (1953), and for his witty metaphors, as in 'One Train May Hide Another' (1993). He was a lecturer and director of poetry workshops for the elderly and for children, described in *Wishes, Lies, and Dreams* (1970). He also wrote a novel and plays, several of which have been produced off-Broadway. Koch was born in Cincinnati, Ohio. He studied at Harvard and Columbia universities, gaining his PhD in 1959, and teaching at the latter institution from the same year.

Kochanowski, Jan (1530-1584)

Latin Johannes Cochanovius

Polish poet whose work comprises mainly lyrics and elegies, both in Latin and Polish. Influenced by contemporary French classicism, his works include *Treny* (1580), a cycle of elegies on the death of his infant daughter, Urszula, who died in 1579.

# Koch, Charles Paul de (1794-1871)

French novelist. His novels deal mostly with various aspects of Parisian life in a witty and realistic manner. Among the best are *Georgette* 1821, *André le Savoyard* 1826, *Le Barbier de Paris* 1827, *Mon voisin Raymond* 1823, *Gustave ou le mauvais sujet* 1821, and *L'Amant de la lune* 1847.

# Koestler, Arthur (1905-1983)

Hungarian-born British writer. Imprisoned by the Nazis in France 1940, he escaped to England. His novel *Darkness at Noon* (1940), regarded as his masterpiece, is a fictional account of the Stalinist purges, and draws on his experiences as a prisoner under sentence of death during the Spanish Civil War. He also wrote extensively about creativity, science, parapsychology, politics, and culture.

## Kokoschka, Oskar (1886-1980)

Austrian expressionist painter. Initially influenced by the Vienna Sezession painters, he painted vivid landscapes, and highly charged allegories and portraits, for example *The Bride of the Wind (The Tempest)* (1914; Kunstmuseum, Basel). His writings include expressionist plays and poetry.

Kokoschka studied crafts in Vienna, and taught himself painting and graphic art. His early works, such as *The Dreaming Youths* (1908), show the influence of Klimt, but this soon gave way to an angular and distorted graphic style, seen for example in the poster for his play *Murderer, the Hope of Women* (1909). Sombre and intense, the 'psychological portraits' of this period are among his most important works: *Hans Tietze and Erica Tietze-Conrat* (1909; Museum of Modern Art, New York) is a good example. Another outstanding work of the period is his self-portrait with Alma Mahler, *The Bride of the Wind (The Tempest)*.

After World War I he taught in Dresden 1919-24, where he came into closer contact with the artists of *die Brücke*. His colours became brighter and he turned increasingly to landscapes, which often share the restlessness and urgency of his portraits, as in *Neustadt*, *Dresden* (1922; Kunsthalle, Hamburg).

After travelling in Europe, the Middle East, and North Africa, he moved to Vienna in 1931 and to Prague in 1934. In 1938, when the Nazis condemned his work as Degenerate Art, he settled in England, taking British citizenship in 1947.

Though some of his later work was increasingly decorative, paintings such as *Time*, *Gentlemen Please* (1971-72), his last self-portrait, remain vivid and dramatic.

### Kollár, Jan (1793-1852)

Slovak poet who wrote in Czech. He was the chief exponent of pan-Slavism, which he saw as a cultural rather than a political philosophy. He wrote *Slávy dcera/The Daughter of Slava* 1824, a sonnet cycle which was expanded in its final edition (1852) to include over 600 sonnets both in praise of the Slavonic peoples and of his German beloved.

### Koltsov, Aleksei Vasilievich (1809-1842)

Russian poet. His poetry is mainly concerned with his peasant background and nature, and in form and style is close to folklore. Through his friendship with the critic Vissarion Belinski, he became a noted figure in St Petersburg literary circles. Belinski helped him publish a volume of verse, *Stikhotvoreniia Alekseia Koltsova/ Poetry of Aleksei Koltsov*, in 1835.

### Konstantinov, Aleko (1863-1897)

Bulgarian satirical writer. His most famous work is *Bai Ganyu* (1895), in which the eponymous hero is shown to be a cunning, greedy, and ignorant peasant behind the fanglishade of a 'Europeanized' Bulgarian. Konstantinov's humour made him many enemies, but his murder appears to have been a case of mistaken identity.

### Koontz, Dean R(ay) (1945-)

US writer of popular thrillers based on themes such as time travel, technology, and serial killers. Best-selling titles include *Lightning* (1988), *Midnight* (1989), *Cold Fire* (1991), *Dragon Tears* (1993), *Intensity* (1996), *False Memory* (1999), *The Face* (2003), and *Life Expectancy* (2004).

#### Kornaros, Vitsentzos

Cretan poet. His masterpiece, the *Erotokritos*, written in local dialect, reflects the culture of Venetian-occupied Crete. In it the French romance *Paris et Vienne* is transformed into a thoroughly Greek work, lyrically told in rich and mature language and finished metre.

### Korolenko, Vladimir Galaktionovich (1853-1921)

Russian writer, publicist, and social activist. Exiled to Siberia in 1879, he wrote a series of stories about its people and way of life; for example, 'Son Makara/Makar's Dream' 1885. Warm humour and a belief in human goodness colour all his writings. He campaigned against injustice and intolerance.

Korolenko was a supporter of Populism, which led to his exile. His encounters in Siberia with those on the margins of society formed the basis of his writing. For many years he was co-editor of the influential Populist review *Russkoe Bogatstvo/ Russian Wealth*.

Among Korolenko's longer works are the novellas *Slepoi muzikant/The Blind Musician* 1885 and the humorous *Bez yazyka/Without a Language* 1895, about a Russian peasant stranded in America.

#### Kosinski, Jerzy Nikodem (1933-1991)

Polish-born US author, in the USA from 1957. His childhood experiences as a Jew in Poland during World War II are recounted in *The Painted Bird* 1965, a popular

success. The novel that established his cult status, the comic media satire *Being There* 1971 (filmed 1979), was followed by increasingly violent works such as *The Devil Tree* 1974, *Pinball* 1982, and *The Hermit of 69th Street* 1987.

### Kosztolányi, Deszö (1885-1936)

Hungarian poet, novelist, and critic. He was associated with the literary magazine *Nyugat/The West*, founded 1908, but unlike others in that circle he was more interested in aesthetic than social questions. His sympathetic observation of human weakness is apparent in his poem cycle *A szegeny kisgyermek panaszai/The Complaints of a Poor Little Child* 1910 and his novel *Edes Anna/Wonder Maid* 1926, a tale of a servant girl.

# Kráľ, Janko (1822-1876)

Slovak poet and radical nationalist. A passionate advocate of pan-Slavism, during the revolutions of 1848 he participated in a Slovak uprising against the kingdom of Hungary, of which Slovakia was then a part. His most successful poems are folk-style ballads, such as those in the collection *Orol/The Eagle* 1845, which are characterized by their rich vocabulary and vivid imagery.

Král' belonged to the Štúr school of romantic nationalism, but his prose looks forward to naturalism and expressionism.

# Krasicki, Ignacy (1735-1801)

Polish cleric and writer, Poland's leading poet of the 18th century. He rose to early prominence in the Roman Catholic Church, and was appointed archbishop of Gniezno (Gnesen) in 1795. His most important work is the collection of fables *Bajki i przypowiesci*, 1779.

# Krasinski, Zygmunt (1812-1859)

Polish dramatist and Romantic poet. He lived and wrote in exile but his messianic vision of Polish sacrifice and resurrection in poems such as 'Przedswit/The Moment Before Dawn' 1843 inspired his countrymen.

#### pseudonym of Ján Botto

Slovak Symbolist poet (see <u>Symbolism</u>), the greatest of his generation. The subjective, melancholic tone of his two collections, *Nox et solitudo* 1909 and *Verses* 1912, reveals the influence of Czech decadence, in particular the poetry of Karel Hlávacek. However, Krasko applied an original, Impressionist technique to his poetry, and became a great influence on the subsequent generation of Slovak poets.

#### Kraszewski, Józef Ignacy (1812-1887)

Polish novelist, poet, and publicist. A prolific author with over 400 titles to his name, Kraszewski wrote on a wide range of subjects, edited newspapers and magazines, travelled extensively, and took an active part in social and political affairs. His novels include *Chata za wsia/The Hut Beyond the Village* 1854-55 and *Stara basn/The Old Legend* 1876. Kraszewski's works, especially his historical novels, are still widely read in Poland.

#### Kraus, Karl (1874-1936)

Austrian poet, essayist, and satirist. He was the founder 1899 of the important literary journal *Die Fackel/The Torch* to which, from 1912 to his death, he was the sole contributor. Kraus's hard-hitting literary and political polemics brought him fame as a cultural critic, but also bitter enemies, particularly among the press. A brilliant stylist, his witty linguistic originality resulted in a perfect blending of content and form.

### Krauss, Ruth (Ida) (1911-1993)

US writer. She is known for her innovative children's books, such as *A Hole is to Dig: A First Book of First Definitions* (1952). Krauss was born in Baltimore, Maryland. She studied at the Parsons School of Fine and Applied Art, New York, and settled in Westport, Connecticut.

### Kristeva, Julia (1941-)

Bulgarian-born French psychoanalyst and literary theorist. Drawing on Freudian psychoanalysis and structuralist linguistics, she has analysed the relationship between language, society, and the self. In *Semeiotiké* 1969 she argues that the self is not a stable, autonomous entity, but the product of language.

Consequently, those elements that are repressed in the well-ordered language of

bourgeois society (the 'dominant social discourse') become the repressed elements (the unconscious) of the self. She examines the political and cultural implications of this position in *The Revolution in Poetic Language* 1974, in which she claims that poetry is essentially an expression of the irrational, of those repressed elements that form the unconscious. Poetry (and such disruptors as laughter and pleasure) challenges the order, rationality, and repressive control of the dominant social discourse, and so shows that revolution is possible at both the personal and political level.

*Polylogue* 1977 and *Love Stories* 1983 express her growing interest in the relationship between language, the body, and the limits of personal identity with her analyses of sexuality and the 'feminine' becoming an important part of feminist debates. Among her more accessible books are *About Chinese Women* 1974, a feminist study of the Cultural Revolution, and *Les Samourais* 1991, a novel containing thinly disguised portraits of several figures who have recently dominated French intellectual life.

### Krleza, Miroslav (1893-1981)

Croatian writer. A pivotal figure in the Yugoslav struggle against Stalinism and its artistic form, socialist realism, he was the most influential Croatian writer of the 20th century. His work focuses on aspects of Croatian history and society in the 19th and early 20th centuries, and includes the story collection *Hrvatski bog Mars/The Croatian God Mars* 1922, the play trilogy *Gospoda Glembajevi/The Glembay Family* 1932, and the two novels *Zastave/Flags* 1967 and *Povratak Filipa Latinovica/The Return of Philip Latinovitz* 1932.

### Kroeger, Alice Bertha (1864-1909)

US librarian. A protégée of Melvil <u>Dewey</u>, she taught librarianship at Drexel Institute in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, and became the first director of Drexel's Library School (1892-1909). Her *Guide to the Standard Usage of Reference Books* was a widely used text. She was an active suffragist. Kroeger was born in St Louis, Missouri.

# Krutch, Joseph Wood (1893-1970)

US literary and drama critic. His works include *Edgar Allan Poe, a Study in Genius* 1926, *The Modern Temper* 1929, *Five Masters* 1930, *Samuel Johnson* 1944, and *The Desert Year* 1952.

He was professor of English at Columbia University 1925-31 and 1937-52, and drama critic of the *Nation* magazine 1924-52.

# Kryukov, Fyodor (1870-1920)

Russian writer. He was alleged by Alexander <u>Solzhenitsyn</u> to be the real author of *And Quiet Flows the Don* by Mikhail Sholokhov.

### Kukucín, Martin (1860-1928)

#### pseudonym of Matej Bencúr

Slovak realist novelist. His novella, *Ryšavá jalovica/The Red Heifer* 1886 is the story of a village weakling. The novels *House on the Hill* 1922 and *The Motherland Calls* 1926-27 both concern the problems of emigration.

#### Kumin, Maxine (1925-)

#### born Maxine Winokur

US poet and writer. A writer of fiction, children's books, essays, and poetry, she was named poetry consultant to the Library of Congress (1981-82). She is best known for poems of the Northeast, as in *Up Country: Poems of New England* (1972). Kumin was born in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. She studied at Radcliffe College, gaining her MA in 1948. She taught at Tufts University (1958-61; 1965-68), Princeton University (1977; 1979; 1981-82), and the Massachusetts Institute of Technology (1984), among other institutions.

### Kundera, Milan (1929-)

Czech-born French writer. Known for his political and erotic satires, he achieved widespread acclaim with his first novel, *Zert/The Joke* (1967), a satire on Stalinism in Czechoslovakia. Other successful novels include *Kniha smí chu a zapomnení/The Book of Laughter and Forgetting* (1979) and *Nes nesitelná lehkost byti/The Unbearable Lightness of Being* (1984; filmed 1988).

After all of his works were banned in Czechoslovakia, Kundera moved to France in 1975, obtaining French citizenship in 1981. He has also written poetry, plays, and short stories.

### Kunhardt, Dorothy (1901-1979)

US author and illustrator. She began writing in the 1930s and became famous for a new concept of touch-and-feel books for young children, notably *Pat the Bunny* (1940), a popular classic. Kunhardt was born Dorothy Meserve in New York City.

#### Kunitz, Stanley (Jasspon) (1905-2006)

US poet and editor. He is known for his finely crafted poetry, as in *Poems 1928-1978* (1979), and his editorship of reference works on US and European literature. Kunitz was born in Worcester, Massachusetts. He studied at Harvard University, gaining his MA in 1927, and taught at many institutions, notably Columbia University (from 1967).

### Kuznetsov, Anatoly Vasilyevich (1929-1979)

Russian writer. His novels *Babi Yar* 1966, describing the wartime execution of Jews at Babi Yar, near Kiev, and *The Fire* 1969, about workers in a large metallurgical factory, were seen as anti-Soviet. He lived in Britain from 1969, adopting the pseudonym A Anatoli.

### Kyd, Thomas (c. 1557-1595)

English dramatist. He was the author of a bloody revenge tragedy, *The Spanish Tragedy* (printed about 1590), which anticipated elements present in Shakespeare's <u>Hamlet</u>.

His *Pompey the Great* (1594) was translated from the French of Robert <u>Garnier</u>. He probably wrote *Solyman and Perseda* (1592), and perhaps had a part in *Arden of Feversham* (1592), the first of many domestic tragedies.

#### Labé, Louise (c. 1524-c. 1566)

#### pen-name of Louise Charly

French poet. She was a member of the poets, led by Maurice <u>Scève</u>, who flourished in her native Lyons in the 16th century. Her poetic works, published in 1555, consist of three elegies and 24 love sonnets, inspired by Petrarch, that combine realism and intense feeling.

Roman knight who, with his contemporary Publius Syrus, gave literary shape to the mime, or burlesque drama. Fragments of his work survive, and justify the opinion of <u>Horace</u> who admired him for having lent style to a normally indecent form.

### La Boétie, Etienne de (1530-1563)

French writer. He was born at Sarlat, Dordogne, and was well known through his friendship with <u>Montaigne</u>. His *Discours de la servitude volontaire, or Contr'un* (about 1549), denouncing tyrants and passionately advocating liberty, was used polemically by Huguenots after its publication in 1574.

# La Bruyère, Jean de (1645-1696)

French writer and moralist. He was born in Paris, studied law, took a post in the revenue office, and in 1684 entered the service of the French commander the Prince of Condé as tutor to his grandson. His 'Caractères/The Characters' (1688), a penetrating study of human behaviour in the form of satirical pen-portraits of his contemporaries, made him many enemies. The work is remarkable also for its highly critical account of French society in the last years of the 17th century. La Bruyère's style is notable for its rich vocabulary and infinite variety of phrase.

# Laclos, Pierre-Ambroise-François Choderlos de (1741-1803)

French author. An army officer, he wrote a single novel in letter form, *Les Liaisons dangereuses/Dangerous Liaisons* (1782), an analysis of moral corruption. A cynical and unscrupulous libertine, the Vicomte de Valmont, encouraged by the Marquise de Merteuil, seduces and destroys two innocent women. A moral twist is given at the end of the book when Valmont is killed in a duel and the Marquise de Merteuil is hideously disfigured by smallpox.

The work was adapted as a play in 1985 by Christopher Hampton (1946-) and as a film in 1988, directed by Stephen Frears (1941-).

### La Cour, Paul (1902-1956)

Danish poet. He was an outward-looking writer, whose poetry changed with the mood of the times. After living in Paris in the 1920s, he brought modernism into Danish literature and his reflections about art, *Fragmenter af en Dagbog* 1948, greatly influenced other writers.

# Lady Chatterley's Lover

novel by D H <u>Lawrence</u>, printed privately in Florence in 1928 and in an expurgated form in England in 1932; in its original form it was not published until 1959 in the USA and 1960 in Britain after the obscenity laws had been successfully challenged. The novel explores the love affair between Constance Chatterley and her husband's gamekeeper, Oliver Mellors, and was suppressed owing to its detailed descriptions of the sexual act and its uncompromising language.

In 1960 Penguin Books were prosecuted under the Obscene Publications Act of 1959, but after a celebrated trial, in which authors such as E M Forster defended the book's publication, Penguin Books were found not guilty of publishing an obscene book, so breaking the ban on the book's publication in Britain.

# La Farge, Oliver (Hazard Perry) (1901-1963)

US anthropologist and author. He graduated from Harvard University in 1924, and with a background of three field trips into Navajo country, he became an assistant in ethnology at Tulane University in 1925. He coauthored *Tribes and Temples*, an ethnology of the Guatemalan Indians, in 1927. He headed the Association of American Indian Affairs, and in the 1950s became a prominent champion of American Indian political and social causes. His novel *Laughing Boy* won a Pulitzer Prize in 1929. La Farge was born in New York City.

# Lafayette, Marie-Madeleine (1634-1693)

#### Comtesse de Lafayette

French author. Her *Mémoires* of the French court are keenly observed, and her *La Princesse de Clèves* (1678) is the first French psychological novel and *roman à clef* ('novel with a key'), in that real-life characters (including the writer François de <u>La</u> <u>Rochefoucauld</u>, who was for many years her lover) are presented under fictitious names.

### La Fontaine, Jean de (1621-1695)

French poet. He was born at Château-Thierry, Champagne, and from 1656 lived largely in Paris, the friend of the playwrights Molière and Racine, and the poet Boileau. His works include *Contes et nouvelles en vers* (1665-74), a series of witty and bawdy tales in verse, and *Fables choisies mises en vers* (1668-94), his universally known verse fables.

The subjects of the *Contes* are taken from various writers including Boccaccio, Ariosto, and Machiavelli, while the *Fables* are derived from numerous sources including Aesop, Phaedrus, Babrius, and other ancient writers, or from 16th-century authors such as Rabelais and Marot. He also wrote *Les Amours de Psyché et de Cupidon/The Loves of Cupid and Psyche* (1669).

### Laforet, Carmen Díaz (1921-2004)

Spanish novelist. Chiefly remembered for *Nada/Nothing* 1944, a gloomy picture of an adolescent's arrival in post-Civil War Barcelona (her birthplace), her other works include *La isla y los demonios/The Island and the Demons* (1952) and *La mujer nueva/The New Woman* (1955), which tells of a religious conversion.

# Laforgue, Jules (1860-1887)

French poet. He experimented with new kinds of verse forms, rhythms, and vocabulary, and pioneered <u>free verse</u>. His work, which was also influenced by the Symbolists, is often marked by a lyrical irony. It made a considerable impact on 20th-century poets, including Ezra Pound and T S Eliot. His books of verse include *Les Complaintes* (1885) and *Imitation de Notre-Dame la lune* (1886), while his best-known prose work is the collection of short stories *Moralités légendaires* (1887).

# Lafreri, Antonio (c.1512-1577)

#### or Lafréry

French-born Italian engraver and publisher. Lafreri is best known for devising 'Lafreri atlases' - atlases in which sheet maps by various cartographers are bound into a single (unique) volume according to each customer's requirements.

# Lagerkvist, Pär Fabian (1891-1974)

Swedish writer. His work includes lyric poetry, dramas, and novels. At first influenced by expressionism, notably in his poems *Ångest/Angst* (1916) and *Kaos/Chaos* (1918), he later matured towards a critical humanism, already evident in his play *Han som fick leva om sitt liv/The Man Who Lived his Life Over* (1928). He bitterly opposed the evils of Germany's Nazi regime in the play *BödeIn/The Hangman* (1935) and the historical novel *Dvärgen/The Dwarf* (1944). For his novel *Barabbas* (1950) he was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1951.

# Lagerlöf, Selma Ottiliana Lovisa (1858-1940)

Swedish novelist. Her first work was the romantic historical novel *Gösta Berling's* saga/The Story of Göst Berling (1891). The children's fantasy Nils Holgerssons underbara resa/The Wonderful Voyage of Nils Holgersson (1906-07) grew from her background as a schoolteacher. She was the first woman to be awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature, in 1909.

Her other works include Osynliga länkar/Invisible Links (1894), Antikrists mirakler/ The Miracles of Antichrist (1897), Herr Arnes penningar/Herr Arne's Hoard (1904), Jerusalem (1901-02), Bannlyst/The Outcast (1918), Löwensköldska ringen/The Ring of Löwenskölds (1925), and Dagbok/The Diary of Selma Lagerlöf (1932).

# La Guma, Alex(ander) (1925-1985)

South African novelist. A black writer who was actively involved in political opposition to apartheid, La Guma was one of South Africa's most sophisticated writers in the black protest tradition. Many of his novels, including *A Walk in the Night* (1962) and *In the Fog of the Seasons' End* (1972), sought to analyse apartheid South Africa in terms of class rather than race, and debated whether apartheid should be opposed by political agitation or armed struggle.

La Guma joined the South African Communist Party in 1948, two years before the party was outlawed by the government, and in 1954 became chairman of the antiapartheid South African Coloured People's Organization. Although acquitted in the Treason Trial of 1956-60, he was placed under house arrest from late 1962 until he left South Africa in 1966. After working as a journalist in London, England, he was chief representative of the African National Congress (ANC) in the Caribbean, based in Cuba, from 1978 until his death.

Other novels include And a Threefold Cord (1964), The Stone Country (1967) and Time of the Butcherbird (1979). La Guma also published the travel book A Soviet Journey (1978).

### Laharpe, Jean François de (1739-1803)

French writer. He wrote a number of tragedies, including *Warwick* 1763, but is now best remembered for his critical lectures *Lycée*, *ou Cours de littérature ancienne et moderne* 1799-1805.

#### (French; later English lay)

a medieval lyrical poem in pairs of stanzas in different metrical forms; also the music set to such poems.

# Laidlaw, William (1780-1845)

Scottish poet. He is best known as Walter Scott's secretary and general adviser from 1817. He also wrote several lyrics and ballads, notably 'Lucy's Flittin', and compiled part of the *Edinburgh Annual Register* under Scott's direction.

### Lamartine, Alphonse Marie Louis de (1790-1869)

French poet. He wrote romantic poems, including *Méditations poétiques/Poetical Meditations* (1820), followed by *Nouvelles méditations/New Meditations* (1823), and *Harmonies poétiques et religieuses/Poetical and Religious Harmonies* (1830). His *Histoire des Girondins/History of the Girondins* (1847) helped to inspire the revolution of 1848. Lamartine was the first to sound a more personal note in his poetry and to establish a direct bond between himself and his public.

A distinguished orator, he entered the Chamber of Deputies 1833 and served as a deputy for several years. He was a leader in the revolution and became minister of foreign affairs in the provisional government in 1848. He was defeated in the presidential election by Louis-Napoleon (Napoleon III).

### Lamb, Caroline (1785-1828)

English writer. Her gothic novel *Glenarvon*, published anonymously in 1816, reflects her passionate affair with Lord <u>Byron</u> during 1812-13, and contains a caricature portrait of the poet. On their meeting in 1812, she wrote famously in her journal that he was 'mad, bad, and dangerous to know.'

Lamb was the daughter of Frederick Ponsonby, 3rd Earl of Bessborough, and spent her early childhood in Italy. She married William Lamb (later Viscount Melbourne) in 1805. Her mental instability, noted by her father when she was a child, intensified after her affair with Byron, and her condition deteriorated following a chance encounter with his funeral procession on its way to Newstead in 1824. She separated from her husband in 1925. English essayist and critic. He collaborated with his sister Mary Lamb (1764-1847) on *Tales from Shakespeare* (1807), and his *Specimens of English Dramatic Poets Contemporary with Shakespeare, with Notes* (1808) revealed him as a penetrating critic and helped to revive interest in Elizabethan plays. As 'Elia' he contributed essays to the *London Magazine* from 1820 (collected 1823 and 1833).

Lamb's essays are still widely read and admired; they include 'A Dissertation on Roast Pig', 'Mrs Battle's Opinions on Whist', 'Dream Children', and 'The Supernatural Man'.

He was born in the Temple, London, and was educated at Christ's Hospital. As a friend of Coleridge, some of his poems were included in the second edition of *Poems on Various Subjects* (1797). He was a clerk with the East India Company at India House 1792-1825, when he retired to Enfield. His sister Mary stabbed their mother to death in a fit of insanity in 1796, and Charles cared for her between her periodic returns to an asylum.

#### Lamb, Mary Ann (1764-1847)

English writer. She was the elder sister of Charles Lamb. Mentally unstable, she stabbed and killed her mother 1796 and was placed in the custody of her brother. She wrote the 14 comedies and he the six tragedies in *Tales from Shakespeare* 1807.

#### Lamming, George William (1927-)

Barbadian novelist and poet. The autobiographical *In the Castle of my Skin* (1953) describes his upbringing in the small village where he was born. His imaginative explorations of Caribbean history and society sustain a political vision of a future resting with the common people and depending on the creative union of the minds of the artist and the politician. His *Conversations: Essays, Addresses and Interviews* was published in 1992.

### La Mothe le Vayer, François (1588-1672)

French man of letters. Born in Paris, he was preceptor to the duc d'Orleans and also later, for a time, to his elder brother, the young Louis XIV, and wrote a series of manuals for the prince, such as *La Géographie du prince* 1651 and *La Logique du prince* 1658. He also published various *discours*, *petits traités*, and (under the pseudonym Orasius Tubero) *Dialogues* which continue the Pyrrhonism of <u>Montaigne</u> and the scepticism of the freethinkers.

# L'Amour, Louis (1908-1988)

#### adopted name of Louis Dearborn LaMoore; pen-names Tex Burns and Jim Mayo

US writer. He published a book of poetry in 1939, but it was his first Western novel, *Hondo* (1953), that gained him instant success. Although he would write a non-fiction book about the frontier and numerous film and television scripts, it was his many Westerns that gained him great popularity among a wide spectrum of readers. L'Amour was born in Jamestown, North Dakota. Leaving school when young, he travelled extensively and held a number of jobs, ranging from lumberjack to elephant handler.

#### Lampedusa, Giuseppe Tomasi di (1896-1957)

Italian aristocrat. He was the author of *II gattopardo/The Leopard* (1958; translated into English 1960), a novel set in his native Sicily during the period following its annexation by Garibaldi in 1860. It chronicles the reactions of an aristocratic family to social and political upheavals.

#### Lampman, Archibald (1861-1899)

Canadian poet. His collections of landscape and native poetry are *Among the Millet and other Poems* 1888, and *Lyrics of Earth* 1895.

#### Landino, Cristoforo (1424-1492)

Italian humanist scholar. Born in Florence, Landino was one of the group of scholars who gathered round Lorenzo de' Medici in the Platonic Academy. He published commentaries on Virgil and Horace and translated Pliny's *Natural History*. His edition of Dante (1481) and lectures on Petrarch reveal the humanist interest in vernacular literature.

#### Landnamabok

#### The Book of Settlements

an account of the colonization of Iceland from Norway in the late 9th and early 10th centuries. The names of about 400 of the first settlers are given, the extent of their settlements, and the names of their dwelling places. An introduction tells of the discovery of the island.

### Landon, Letitia Elizabeth (1802-1838)

English poet. She contributed to literary journals, using the initials L E L, and published separately *The Fate of Adelaide* 1821, *The Improvisatrice* 1824, *The Troubadour* 1825, and *The Venetian Bracelet* 1828. She also wrote novels, including *Ethel Churchill* 1837.

# Landor, Walter Savage (1775-1864)

English poet and essayist. He lived much of his life abroad, dying in Florence, where he had fled to avoid a libel suit in 1858. His works include the epic poem *Gebir* (1798), the tragedy *Count Julian* (1812), and *Imaginary Conversations of Literary Men and Statesmen* (1824-29). Landor has a high place among prose writers for his restrained and finished style; his shorter poems have the same classic simplicity.

# Lang, Andrew (1844-1912)

Scottish historian and folklore scholar. His writings include historical works; anthropological studies, such as *Myth*, *Ritual and Religion* (1887) and *The Making of Religion* (1898), which involved him in controversy with the anthropologist James G Frazer; novels; and the series of children's books which he inspired and edited, beginning with *The Blue Fairy Book* (1889).

# Langgässer, Elisabeth (1899-1950)

German writer. In her existentialist novels unity of time and continuity of action are often discarded, as in *Das unauslöschliche Siegel/The Indelible Seal* 1946. Other novels are *Proserpina* 1932 and *Die märkische Argonautenfahrt/The Quest* 1950. She also wrote short stories, collected in *Das Labyrinth/The Labyrinth* 1945, and some lyric verse with a Greek mythological background.

### Langhorne, John (1735-1779)

English poet, translator, and clergyman. He wrote for the *Monthly Review* and published several volumes of popular poetry including *Genius and Valour* 1764. His most important work is the translation of <u>Plutarch'sLives</u> 1771-72, written with his brother, William Langhorne (1721-1772).

### Langland, William (c. 1332-c. 1400)

English poet. His alliterative *The Vision of William Concerning Piers the Plowman* (see *Piers Plowman*) was written in three (or possibly four) versions between about 1367 and 1386. The poem forms a series of allegorical visions, in which Piers develops from the typical poor peasant to a symbol of Jesus, and condemns the social and moral evils of 14th-century England. It is a masterpiece in combining the depiction of a spiritual pilgrimage with scenes of contemporary social life for a satirical purpose.

# Languet, Hubert (1518-1581)

French writer and diplomat. He travelled widely in Europe before entering the service of Augustus I, Elector of Saxony, in 1559, whom he represented at the French court from 1561-72. He narrowly escaped the Massacre of St Bartholomew in 1572, and later served Augustus at the imperial court from 1573-77. His extensive correspondence is a valuable source for 16th-century history.

# Lanier, Sidney (1842-1881)

US flautist and poet. His *Poems* (1877) contain interesting metrical experiments, in accordance with the theories expounded in his *Science of English Verse* (1880), on the relation of verse to music.

### Lanman, Charles (1819-1895)

US painter and writer. He studied engraving with Asher B Durand in New York City, and exhibited paintings at the National Academy. In 1859 he published the *Dictionary of the United States Congress*. Lanman was born in Monroe, Michigan. He settled in Washington, DC, in 1849.

### La Noue, François de (1531-1591)

French soldier and writer. He was widely known as 'Bras-de-Fer' ('Iron Arm') because an arm lost in battle was replaced by an iron one. He fought on the Huguenot side in the French Wars of Religion. While in prison he wrote *Discours politiques et militaires/Political and Military Discourses* (1587), a graphic account of the period that combines his memoirs as a soldier with a plea for religious toleration.

# Lansky, Aaron (1955-)

US cultural activist. As founder of the National Yiddish Book Center in South Hadley, Massachusetts (1980), he rescued some 850,000 discarded Yiddish books in an effort to preserve and revitalize Yiddish culture. Lansky was born in New Bedford, Massachusetts. He graduated from Hampshire College in 1977, and gained an MA from McGill University in 1980. A winner of many awards from Jewish organizations, he received a MacArthur Fellowship in 1989.

### Lanson, Gustave (1857-1934)

French literary critic. He became professor of French literature at the Sorbonne 1919 and was director of the Ecole Normale Supérieure 1919-27. After the death of Brunetière, he was the chief influence in guiding students of French literature. His method of criticism was essentially one of historical and biographical research.

# Larbaud, Valéry (1881-1957)

French writer. His *Poésies de A O Barnabooth* 1908, poems written in free verse, show the influence of Walt <u>Whitman</u>. Some years later he published the prose work *A O Barnabooth, ses oeuvres complètes* 1913. He also wrote a short novel, *Fermina Márquez* 1911, several volumes of short stories, and a collection of critical essays, *Ce vice impuni, la lecture* 1925.

### Larcom, Lucy (1824-1893)

US poet. Her collections of simple verse about largely domestic matters include *Roadside Poems* 1876 and *Hillside and Seaside in Poetry* 1877.

# Lardner, Ring(gold Wilmer) (1885-1933)

US short-story writer. A sports reporter, he based his characters on the people he met professionally. His collected volumes of short stories include *You Know Me, AI* (1916), *Round Up* (1929), and *Ring Lardner's Best Short Stories* (1938), all written in colloquial language.

### Larguier, Léo (1878-1950)

French writer. He published poetry, including *La Maison du poète* 1903, *Les Isolements* 1905, *Jacques* 1907, and *Les Ombres* 1935; novels, including *Sabine* 1926 and *L'An mille* 1933; a tragedy, *Les Bonaparte* 1928; a volume of reminiscences, *Avant le déluge* 1928; and books on the writers Lamartine, Hugo, Gautier, Mistral, and the painter Cézanne.

#### Larkin, Philip Arthur (1922-1985)

English poet. His perfectionist, pessimistic verse appeared in *The Less Deceived* (1955), and in the later volumes *The Whitsun Weddings* (1964) and *High Windows* (1974), which confirmed him as one of the most powerful and influential of 20th-century English poets. He edited *The Oxford Book of 20th-Century English Verse* (1973). *Collected Poems* was published in 1988. He also produced two novels, *Jill* (1946, revised 1964), and *A Girl in Winter* (1947), and a collection of his writings on music, *All What Jazz* (1970).

Born in Coventry, Larkin was educated at Oxford, and from 1955 was librarian at Hull University. His first collection of verse, *The North Ship*, appeared in 1945, but only after its appearance did he discover the poetry of English writer Thomas <u>Hardy</u>; this had a major effect on his development, giving Larkin the confidence to use material from his own life in his work. His subsequent collection, *The Less Deceived*, was well received, and it was classed with the work of the 1950s 'Movement' poets, with whom Larkin shared a certain quiet tone and absence of rhetoric. After his death, his letters and other writings, which he had instructed should be destroyed, revealed an intolerance and misanthropy (dislike for humankind) not found in his published material.

# La Rochefoucauld, François (1613-1680)

#### Duc de

French writer. His 'Réflexions, ou sentences et maximes morales/Reflections, or Moral Maxims', published anonymously in 1665, is a collection of brief, epigrammatic, and cynical observations on life and society, with the epigraph 'Our virtues are mostly our vices in disguise'. The work is remarkable for its literary excellence and its bitter realism in the dissection of basic human motives, making La Rochefoucauld a forerunner of modern 'psychological' writers.

#### Larra, Mariano José de (1809-1837)

Spanish journalist and playwright, born in Madrid. He is chiefly remembered for his political and critical articles, remarkable for their perceptive and acid insights into contemporary problems. His pessimism about Spanish society, and an unhappy love affair, led to his suicide, an event which made him the idol of Romantic writers of

# Lasker-Schuler, Else (1869-1945)

German writer and poet. She was closely connected with many leading expressionist intellectuals. Her vivid imagination and ecstatic language emerged in the dream and fantasy world of *Die Nachte Tino von Bagdads* 1907 and the poems of *Meine Wunder* 1911. She was able to transform her experiences into unique personal, poetic statements, exemplified best in a remarkable collection of poems written in Jerusalem 1943, *Mein blaues Klavier*. The inspiration of Judaism is clearly revealed in her most important collection of verse, *Hebräische Balladen* 1913.

#### Laski, Marghanita (1915-1988)

English writer and broadcaster. Her first novel was *Love on the Supertax* (1944), which was followed by, among others, *Tory Heaven* (1948), *Little Boy Lost* (1949), *The Victorian Chaise-Longue* (1953), and a play, *The Offshore Island* (1959). A prominent agnostic controversialist, she published *Ecstasy: A Study of Some Secular and Religious Experiences* (1961) and *The Secular Responsibility* (1969). Her critical works include *Jane Austen and her World* (1969). She was the daughter of Harold Laski.

### Latini, Brunetto (c. 1220-1294)

Italian man of letters and public affairs. He was attached to the Guelph party and held some of the most important offices in the republic. His most noted work is an encyclopaedia, *Li Livres dou trésor*, written in French.

He was also the author of a didactic and allegorical poem, *II tesoretto*; a moral epistle, *II favolello*; a treatise on rhetoric; and translations from Latin.

### Latin literature

literature written in the Latin language.

#### early literature

Only a few hymns and inscriptions survive from the earliest period of Latin literature before the 3rd century  $_{BC}$ . Greek influence began with the work of Livius Andronicus (*c.* 284-204  $_{BC}$ ), who translated the *Odyssey* and Greek plays into Latin. Naevius and Ennius both attempted epics on patriotic themes; the former used the native

'Saturnian' metre, but the latter introduced the Greek hexameter. Plautus and Terence successfully adapted Greek comedy to the Latin stage. Accius and Pacuvius produced tragic verse. Lucilius (190-103 BC) founded Latin verse satire, while the writings of Cato the Elder were the first important works in Latin prose.

#### Golden Age

(70 BC-AD 18) In the *De Rerum natura* of Lucretius, and the passionate lyrics of Catullus, Latin verse reached maturity. Cicero set a standard for Latin prose, in his orations, philosophical essays, and letters. To the same period of the Roman republic belong the commentaries of Caesar on his own campaigns. Other prose writers of this period include Cornelius Nepos, Sallust, and Marcus Terentius Varro.

### Augustan Age

(43 <sub>BC-AD</sub> 18) Within the Golden Age, this is usually regarded as the finest period of Latin literature. There is strong patriotic feeling in the work of the poets Virgil and Horace and the historian Livy, who belonged to the emperor Augustus' court circle. Virgil produced the one great Latin epic, the *Aeneid*, while Horace brought charm and polish to both lyric and satire. Younger poets of the period were Ovid, who wrote ironically about love and mythology, and the elegiac and erotic poets Tibullus and Propertius. Tragedy was again in vogue, and was attempted by Asinius Pollio (76 <sub>BC-AD</sub> 5), Varius Rufus (74-14 <sub>BC</sub>), and Augustus himself.

#### Silver Age

(AD 18-*c.* 130) The second major period of imperial literature begins with the writers of Nero's reign: the Stoic philosopher Seneca; Lucan, author of the epic *Pharsalia*; the satirist Persius; and the novelist Petronius. Around the end of the 1st century and at the beginning of the 2nd came the historian and annalist Tacitus and the satirical poet Juvenal; other writers of this period were the epigrammatist Martial, the scientific encyclopedist Pliny the Elder, the letter-writer Pliny the Younger, the critic Quintilian, the historian Suetonius, and the epic poet Statius.

### 2nd-5th centuries

There was only one pagan writer of importance, the romancer Apuleius, but there were some able Christian writers, such as Tertullian and Cyprian, who were followed by Arnobius (died 327) and Lactantius (died 325). In the 4th century there was a poetic revival, with Ausonius, Claudian, and the Christian poets Prudentius and St Ambrose.

The classical period ends, and the Middle Ages begin, with St Augustine's *City of God* and St Jerome's translation of the Bible.

#### Middle Ages

Throughout the Middle Ages, Latin remained the language of the church and was normally employed for theology, philosophy, histories, and other learned works. Latin verse, adapted to rhyme and non-classical metres, was used both for hymns and for the secular songs of scholars, as in the *Carmina Burana*. Medieval Latin vernacular gradually evolved into the regional and national Romance languages, including French, Italian, and Spanish. Even after the Reformation, Latin retained its prestige as the international language of scholars and was used as such by the English writers Thomas More, Francis Bacon, John Milton, and many others.

#### La Tour du Pin, Count Patrice de (1911-1975)

French poet. His works include *La Quête de joie* 1932, *Le Jeu du seul* 1946, *Une Somme de poésie* 1946, *La Contemplation errante* 1948, *Le Second Jeu* 1959, and *Petit théâtre crépusculaire* 1964.

### Lattimore, Richmond (Alexander) (1906-1984)

US classicist and poet. His many translations from Greek into English, notably *Pindar* (1947) and the *Iliad* (1951), made him the best-known and most highly regarded translator of his day. With David Greene, he edited the translation of *The Complete Greek Tragedies* (1967-68). In 1962 he won the Bollingen Translation Prize for his translation of Aristophanes's *Frogs*, and in 1984 he won the award of the American Academy of Poets. Lattimore was born in Paotingfu, China, to Protestant missionary parents. He was educated at Dartmouth College in the USA and at Christ Church College, Oxford University, England, where he was a Rhodes scholar. He then studied for his PhD at the University of Illinois, graduating in 1935. He spent virtually his entire teaching career at Bryn Mawr College (1935-84), although he also held visiting appointments elsewhere in the USA, England, and Greece.

#### Latvian literature

religious works were composed in the 16th century or earlier but an ancient heritage of oral folk song survived to be a major influence on the literature of the mid-19thcentury national awakening, such as the lyric poetry of Juris Alunans (1832-1864) and the epic *Lacplesis/Bearslayer* 1888 by Andrejs Pumpurs (1841-1902). Despite realist and Symbolist interludes, the folk tradition has been a major influence on 20th-century verse and prose, stimulated by the movement for independence from Germany and Russia. Though many poets and novelists are scattered in exile, the national literature is sustained by writers such as the dramatist Martins Ziverts (1903-) and the lyric poet Veronika Strelerte (1912-).

### Laube, Heinrich (1806-1884)

German novelist and playwright, born at Sprottau, Silesia. In spite of a career interrupted by political involvement (he was a leader of the 'Young Germany'

movement), his output of dramas and novels was considerable. Most notable are his plays *Graf Essex* 1856 and *Montrose* 1859. His novels include *Die Böhminger* 1880 and *Der Schatten Wilhelms* 1883. Laube was director of the Vienna Burgtheater 1849-67 and his history of the theatre is an important sourcebook of theatrical practice.

#### Laughlin, James (1914-1997)

US publisher. In 1936, drawing on his family's fortune, derived from the Jones and Laughlin Steel Co, he founded New Directions Press, which specialized in publishing quality literary works deemed unlikely to gain a mass audience. Dylan Thomas and Ezra Pound were among the authors to be published by the new venture. Laughlin was born in Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania.

# Laurence, (Jean) Margaret (1926-1987)

#### born Jean Margaret Wemyss

Canadian writer. Her novels include *The Stone Angel* 1964 and *A Jest of God* 1966, both set in the Canadian prairies, and *The Diviners* 1974. She also wrote short stories set in Africa, where she lived for a time.

She is particularly adept at demonstrating the interactions of character and environment and tracing the mental processes of suspicion and defensive deviousness.

### Laurenziana, Bibliotheca

library in Florence, opened in 1571. It was built to house the valuable collection of books and manuscripts founded by Cosimo de' Medici and enlarged by other members of the Medici family in the 15th and 16th centuries.

Among the library's 10,000 manuscripts are some of the most important surviving classical texts, including a 5th-century copy of works by the Roman poet Virgil, and the oldest-known complete Latin Bible, the 8th-century Codex Amiatinus.

The library building was designed by Michelangelo for Pope Clement VII (Giulio de' Medici) in 1523 in the cloisters of the church of San Lorenzo and includes such features as a carved ceiling, mosaic floor, and carved benches all made to Michelangelo's designs. The library's staircase was completed by Bartolommeo Ammanati and Giorgio Vasari in 1559.

### Lautréamont, comte de (1846-1870)

#### pseudonym of Isidore Ducasse

French poet, born in Montevideo, Uruguay. With Mallarmé, Rimbaud, and Sade, he is perhaps the most influential figure in modern French literature. His long sequence of prose poems, *Les Chants de Maldoror* 1868, was acclaimed as a forerunner of their work by the Surrealists. The *Poésies* were published 1870. Very little is known about his life, but his work inspired fine literary criticism.

#### Lave, Camara (1928-1980)

Guinean writer, one of the first sub-Saharan African writers to win an international reputation. He won wide acclaim for his first book *L'Enfant noir/An African Child* (1953) (known in the USA as *The Dark Child*), a sensitive and closely observed evocation of his childhood in a Muslim village in Guinea. Other works include the novels *Le Regard du roi /The Radiance of the King* (1954) and the autobiographical *Dramouss/A Dream of Africa* (1966).

### Lavin, Mary (1912-1996)

US-born Irish short-story writer and novelist. Her many collections, which focus on the complexities beneath the surface of small-town life in Ireland, include *A Memory and Other Stories* (1972), *The Shrine and Other Stories* (1977), *A Family Likeness* (1985), and *The House in Clewe Street* (1987). Her first collection *Tales from Bective Bridge* (1942) received the James Tait Black Memorial Prize. Other awards include the 1961 Katherine Mansfield prize, two Guggenheim awards, and the Gregory Medal, founded by W B Yeats as 'the supreme award of the Irish nation'.

Lavin was born in East Walpole, Massachusetts, into an Irish immigrant family, who returned to Ireland when she was 14. After studying English at University College, Dublin, she went to live in County Meath. Her first short story, 'Miss Holland', was published in the *Dublin Magazine*, where it was admired by the writer Lord <u>Dunsany</u>, who encouraged her and later wrote an introduction to *Tales from Bective Bridge*. Apart from two early novels - *The House in Clewe Street* (1945) and *Mary O'Grady* (1950) - she concentrated on the short story.

### Lawrence, D(avid) H(erbert) (1885-1930)

English writer. His work expresses his belief in emotion and the sexual impulse as creative and true to human nature. However, his ideal of the complete, passionate life is threatened by the advancement of the modern and technological world. His writing first received attention after the publication of the semi-autobiographical

The White Peacock (1911) and Sons and Lovers (1913). Other novels include The Rainbow (1915), Women in Love (1921), and Lady Chatterley's Lover, printed privately in Italy in 1928. Lawrence tried to forge a new kind of novel, with a structure and content so intense that it would reflect emotion and passion more genuinely than ever before. This often led to conflict with official and unofficial prudery, and his interest in sex as a life force and bond was often censured. The Rainbow was suppressed for obscenity, and Lady Chatterley's Lover could only be published in a censored form in the UK in 1932. Not until 1960, when the obscenity law was successfully challenged, was it published in the original text. Lawrence also wrote short stories (for example, 'The Woman Who Rode Away', written in Mexico from 1922-25) and poetry (Collected Poems, 1928).

The son of a Nottinghamshire miner, Lawrence studied at University College, Nottingham. He became a clerk and later a teacher. On going to London in 1908, he wrote under the pseudonym of Lawrence H Davidson. His first novel, The White *Peacock*, was published on the recommendation of English writer Ford Madox Ford. Lawrence's mother died in 1911, and this marked a crisis in his life. The demands of love made on him by his mother are the theme of his third novel, Sons and Lovers. In 1914 he married Frieda von Richthofen, ex-wife of his university professor, with whom he had run away in 1912. Frieda was the model for Ursula Brangwen in The Rainbow and its sequel, Women in Love. The Prussian Officer, Lawrence's first collection of stories, appeared in 1914, and the beautiful and penetrating series of poems Look! We Have Come Through was published in 1917. In the same year, his wife's German nationality and Lawrence's own disapproval of World War I caused them to be turned out of their home in Cornwall; from then on they were rarely in England. Lawrence's travels resulted in a series of fine travel essays, Twilight in Italy (1916), Sea and Sardinia (1921), and Mornings in Mexico (1927). The novel Women in Love was followed by Aaron's Rod (1922), Kangaroo (1923), and another volume of poetry, Birds, Beasts and Flowers (1923). Lawrence's sympathy with the traditions of the Aztec civilization encouraged him in an attempt to found an ideal community in Mexico, and in his Mexican novel The Plumed Serpent (1926) he expounds a mystical and yet physically satisfying religion. Apocalypse (1932) is a revealing commentary on the Book of Revelation, and was his last completed work. Lawrence suffered from tuberculosis, from which he eventually died near Nice, France.

#### Lawrence



(Image © Research Machines plc)

Tregerthen Cottage, at Zennor in Cornwall, where D H Lawrence and his German wife Frieda moved in March 1916, at the height of World War I. Lawrence's reputation was at a low ebb after damning reviews of *The Rainbow* (1915). In October 1917, with the war worsening and suspicion falling on all German nationals in the UK, Lawrence and his wife were ordered to leave Cornwall.

# Lawrence, George Alfred (1827-1876)

English novelist. His novel *Guy Livingstone: or Thorough* 1857 is said to have originated the 'muscular blackguard' type of hero.

# Lawrence, T(homas) E(dward) (1888-1935)

#### called 'Lawrence of Arabia'

British soldier, scholar, and translator. Appointed to the military intelligence department in Cairo, Egypt, during World War I, he took part in negotiations for an Arab revolt against the Ottoman Turks, and in 1916 attached himself to the emir Faisal. He became a guerrilla leader of genius, combining raids on Turkish communications with the organization of a joint Arab revolt, described in his book *The Seven Pillars of Wisdom* (1926).

# Laws, G(eorge) Malcolm (Jr) (1919-)

US folklorist. He specialized in US and British ballads and folk songs and 19thcentury English literature. His books include *Native American Balladry* (1950, revised 1964), *American Balladry from British Broadsides* (1957), and *The British Literary Ballad* (1972). Laws was born in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. He earned undergraduate and graduate degrees from the University of Pennsylvania, where he joined the English faculty in 1942, becoming emeritus in 1960.

# Lawson, Henry (1867-1922)

Australian short-story writer. First noted for verse about bush life and social and political protest, he is now remembered chiefly for his stories. Direct experience of travelling in the outback in a severe drought 1892 reinforced the grim realism of his vision of Australian rural life. His best work, represented by the collections *While the Billy Boils* 1896 and *Joe Wilson and his Mates* 1901, is sharply detailed, colloquial, and ironically understated.

# Lawson, John Howard (1895-1977)

US playwright. He was a socially conscious dramatist. His early work was expressionist (*Roger Bloomer* 1923), while his later plays were more directly proletarian (*Success Story* 1932, *Marching Song* 1937).

A member of the Communist Party, he was one of the more prominent victims of the House Un-American Activities Committee in the 1950s.

# Laxness, Halldór Gudjónsson (1902-1998)

Icelandic novelist. He wrote about Icelandic life in the style of the early <u>sagas</u>. His novel *Salka Valka* (1931-32) is a vivid, realistic portrayal of a small fishing community and centres on a strong female character. Other novels include *Sjálfstætt fólk/Independent People* (1935), about farm life, and *Heimsljós/The World's Light* (1937), about an Icelandic folk-poet. Although set in exact locations, the social criticism embodied in Laxness's novels has much wider implications, and his language, though strong and colloquial, is also poetic. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1955.

Layamon (lived c. 1200)

English poet. His name means 'law man' or 'judge', and according to his own account he was a priest of Areley (now Areley Kings), Worcestershire. He was the author of the *Brut*, a chronicle of about 16,000 alliterative lines on the history of Britain from the arrival of Brutus, the legendary Roman senator and general, to Cadwalader, which gives the earliest version of the Arthurian legend in English.

The *Brut* is based on the French rendering by Robert Wace of the Latin *Historia Regum Britanniae* by Geoffrey of Monmouth, with additions from Celtic legend. The first important poem written in Middle English, the *Brut* is written mainly in alliterative lines but occasionally uses rhyme and assonance; it therefore shows English verse in transition. Two composite manuscript copies survive (housed in the British Museum).

# Layton, Irving (1912-2006)

#### born Israel Lazarovitch

Canadian poet. He produced more than 50 volumes of poetry, including *A Red Carpet for the Sun* (1959), *Collected Poems* (1971), and *Fornalutx: Selected Poems 1928-1990* (1992). He had a flamboyant, versatile, and rhetorical style.

He was a leading member of the Montreal poets, a group that opposed poetic romanticism during the 1940s. He was nominated for a Nobel Prize in 1981.

#### Lazarillo de Tormes

Spanish novel published anonymously in 1554 and recognized as the masterpiece of the <u>picaresque</u> tradition. It recounts the progress of an astute urchin through the society of his day, and is notable for its incisive satire of classes and institutions. It has often been attributed to the Spanish politician Diego Hurtado de Mendoza (1503-1575).

#### Lazarillo de Tormes

in full La vida de Lazarillo de Tormes y de sus fortunas y adversidades/The Life of Lazarillo de Tormes and Concerning His Fortunes and Misfortunes

Spanish novel by an unknown writer, first published in 1554. Although the author does not describe the narrator Lazarillo as a *picaro* ('rogue'), some have considered this the first <u>picaresque</u> novel. Accurately dating the composition of the work and identifying the author have proved impossible, but the work's sophistication suggests an educated person.

The plot is episodic: Lazarillo serves a series of different, disreputable masters, and learns that social advancement is possible only by deception. The tale closes with Lazarillo as a town crier, believing himself a social success, but cuckolded by his employer and oblivious to the social opprobium attached to his employment. Although not the first Spanish work to involve low-life characters (*La Celestina*, for example, is earlier), *Lazarillo* was original in that its narrative purports to be an autobiography.

The novel was published in 1554 in Burgos, Antwerp, and Alcalá de Henares. The Alcalá edition contains probably spurious interpolations, the last of which suggests a sequel that in fact appeared in Antwerp in 1555. The book's popularity is attested by several translations, among these an English one of 1586.

#### Lazarus, Emma (1849-1887)

US poet. She was the author of the poem on the base of the Statue of Liberty that begins: 'Give me your tired, your poor/Your huddled masses yearning to breathe free.'

## Lea, Henry Charles (1825-1909)

US historian and publisher. A specialist in medieval and church subjects, he is best known for his *History of the Inquisition of the Middle Ages* (1888). Lea was born in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. He took an active role in his father's publishing house (1843-80) until he retired to devote himself to his scholarly interests. As an advocate of reforming city government and the civil service, he received many honours in the USA, but as a historian he was better known among European scholars.

### Leacock, Stephen Butler (1869-1944)

Canadian political scientist, historian, and humorist. His humour has survived his often rather conservative political writings. His butts include the urban plutocracy, especially in the parodies of *Frenzied Fictions* (1918), and popular fiction, as well as human folly generally. His other humorous works include *Literary Lapses* (1910) and the controversial because recognizable *Sunshine Sketches of a Little Town* (1912).

# Lear, Edward (1812-1888)

English artist and humorist. His *Book of Nonsense* (1846) popularized the <u>limerick</u> (a five-line humorous verse). His *Nonsense Songs, Botany and Alphabets* (1871), includes two of his best-known poems, 'The Owl and the Pussycat' and 'The Jumblies'.

He first attracted attention with his paintings of birds, and later turned to landscapes. He travelled to Italy, Greece, Egypt, and India, publishing books on his travels with his own illustrations, and spent most of his later life in Italy.

### Leary, Timothy (1920-1996)

US writer and psychologist. Leary was one of the more controversial and influential psychologists of the last 41 years and a guiding iconic figure of the counter-culture of the 1960s and 1970s. Leary helped develop the theory of transactional analysis and conducted a series of psychedelic experiments at Harvard University that helped pave the way for an era of cultural and psycho-social upheaval. His book *The Interpersonal Diagnosis of Personality* enjoys wide-ranging praise and influence.

Born in Springfield, Massachusetts, he studied at Holy Cross College, West Point, and the University of Alabama. He earned a doctorate in psychology from the University of California at Berkeley in 1950. By the mid-1950s, Leary was teaching at Berkeley and had been appointed director of psychological research at the Kaiser Foundation, in Oakland, California.

## Leatherstocking Tales, The

five novels by James Fenimore Cooper, describing the ideal US frontiersman, Natty Bumppo, also known as Leatherstocking or the Deerslayer: *The Pioneers* (1823), *The Last of the Mohicans* (1826), *The Prairie* (1827), *The Pathfinder* (1840), and *The Deerslayer* (1841).

The novels follow (though not in order of publication) Natty's life from his youth before the American Revolution to his death after the Louisiana Purchase.

### Leautaud, Paul (1872-1956)

French writer and critic. His works include an autobiographical novel, *Le Petit Ami* 1903; essays, 'Passe-temps' 1929 and 'Propos d'un jour' 1947; books on Henri de Regnier, Stendhal, and Adolphe van Beven; and an important *Journal littéraire* covering the period 1893-1956, published 1954-64. His articles as a theatre critic were collected under his pseudonym in *Théâtre de Maurice Boissard* 1927.

### Leaves of Grass

collection of poems by US poet Walt <u>Whitman</u>, published anonymously in 1855 and augmented through many editions up to 1892. With its long lines, 'barbaric yawp'

metre, and all-embracing, mythic ambition, the book exercised a major influence on US verse. See also <u>'Song of Myself'</u>.

### Leavis, F(rank) R(aymond) (1895-1978)

English literary critic. With his wife Q(ueenie) D(orothy) Leavis (1906-1981), he cofounded and edited the influential literary review *Scrutiny* (1932-53). He championed the work of D H Lawrence and James Joyce and in 1962 attacked C P Snow's theory of 'the two cultures' (the natural alienation of the arts and sciences in intellectual life). His critical works, introducing a new seriousness to the study of literature, include *New Bearings in English Poetry* (1932), which placed T S <u>Eliot</u> centrally in the modern poetic tradition, *The Great Tradition* (1948), and *The Common Pursuit* (1952).

### Le Bossu, René (1631-1680)

French writer and critic. His *Traité du poème épique/Monsieur Bossu's Treatise of the Epick Poem* 1675 argued that the subject of an epic poem should be chosen before the characters, and the action arranged independently of them.

### Le Carré, John (1931-)

#### pen-name of David John Moore Cornwell

English writer of thrillers. His low-key and realistic accounts of complex espionage, many of which were filmed, include *The Spy Who Came in from the Cold* (1963); the trilogy *Tinker Tailor Soldier Spy* (1974), *The Honourable Schoolboy* (1977), and *Smiley's People* (1980); *The Little Drummer Girl* (1983); *The Russia House* (1989); *Our Game* (1995); *The Tailor of Panama* (1996); and *The Constant Gardener* (2000). He was a member of the Foreign Service 1960-64.

#### Lecavele, Roland

real name of French writer Roland Dorgeles.

#### Leconte de Lisle, Charles Marie René (1818-1894)

French poet. He was born on the Indian Ocean Island of Réunion and settled in Paris

in 1846. He played an important part in formulating the aims of the anti-Romantic group *Les <u>Parnassiens</u>* and became their acknowledged leader. His work, characterized by classic regularity and faultlessness of form, drew inspiration from the ancient world; it includes *Poèmes antiques/Antique Poems* (1852), *Poèmes barbares/Barbaric Poems* (1862), and *Poèmes tragiques/Tragic Poems* (1884). Although he advocated impassivity, his poems express a pessimistic awareness of the transitoriness of things.

# Lee, (Nelle) Harper (1926-)

US writer. Her only novel, *To Kill a Mockingbird* (1960), became a literary sensation, won the Pulitzer Prize for fiction in 1961, and became an enduring classic. The film version, made in 1962, won three Academy Awards. Lee worked as a consultant on the screenplay adaptation of the novel.

Lee was born in Monroeville, Alabama. As a young child she was deeply affected by the court case in the nearby town of Scottsboro, in which nine young black men were falsely accused of raping two white women, and she loosely based the trial in her book on this event. She attended Huntington College (1944-45), studied law at the University of Alabama (1945-49), and attended Oxford University, England, for one year. She was an airline reservation clerk in New York City during the 1950s before returning to Monroeville. Although she published no other work of fiction, her novel continues to have a strong impact on successive generations of readers.

# Lee, Gypsy Rose (1914-1970)

#### born Rose Louise Hovick

US entertainer. An 'elegant lady' in striptease routines, she was popular in literary circles. Also a published author, she wrote two mystery novels, *The G-String Murders* (1941) and *Mother Finds a Body* (1942). Her autobiography *Gypsy: A Memoir* (1957) was adapted for stage in 1959 and film in 1962.

Born in Seattle, Washington, USA, she performed song and dance routines with her sister, actor June Havoc, from around the age of four. During her teenage years in New York, Lee learned the art of striptease.

#### Lee, Manfred B

US writer; see Ellery Queen.

### Lee, Sophia (1750-1824)

English writer and dramatist. The success of her play *The Chapter of Accidents* (1780), enabled her to open a girls' school in Bath. Other works include the verse tragedy *Almeyda*, *Queen of Grenada* (1796); a historical novel, *The Recess* (1783-85); and a lengthy ballad, *The Hermit's Tale* (1787).

Her epistolary novel *The Life of a Lover* (1804) has autobiographical elements. Her sister Harriet Lee (1757-1851) was also a dramatist.

### Le Fanu, (Joseph) Sheridan (1814-1873)

Irish writer. He wrote tales of mystery and suspense, included in *Ghost Stories and Tales of Mystery* 1851 and *In a Glass Darkly* 1872, and the dark psychological novel *Uncle Silas* 1864. He excelled in writing about the uncanny and the supernatural and with his work the tradition of the <u>gothic novel</u> took on a new psychological and literary power.

His first successful book was *The House by the Churchyard* 1863. Other works include *Wylder's Hand* 1864, *The Tenants of Malory* 1867, *The Wyvern Mystery* 1869, *The Rose and the Key* 1871, and *Willing to Die* 1873.

#### Lefkowitz, Mary Rosenthal (1935-)

US classicist. Lefkowitz's books *Women in Greece and Rome* (1977), *Heroines and Hysterics* (1981), and *Women's Life in Greece and Rome* (1982) were among the first influential works published in the field of women's history in antiquity. Lefowitz was born in New York City. She was educated at Wellesley and Radcliffe colleges, gaining her PhD in 1961. She was professor of Greek and Latin at Wellesley (from 1975).

### Le Fort, Gertrud von (1876-1971)

German novelist and poet. A belief that God's presence must be acknowledged and proclaimed infuses *Der Papst aus dem Ghetto/The Pope from the Ghetto* 1930 and *Die magdeburgische Hochzeit/Wedding in Magdeburg* 1938. A quasi-autobiographical novel in two parts, *Das Schweisstuch der Veronika/The Veil of Veronica* 1928, 1946, follows the spiritual development of a girl converted to Catholicism, while short stories such as 'Die letzte am Schafott/The Story at the Scaffold' 1931 illustrate her usual theme of the redemptive power of religion.

## Le Gallienne, Richard (1866-1947)

English poet and essayist. He was prominent among the writers of the 1890s. His romantic novel *The Quest of the Golden Girl* 1896 won critical and popular favour. Other works include *George Meredith: Some Characteristics* 1902, *The Romantic Nineties* 1925, *The Magic Seas* 1930, and *From a Paris Garret* 1936.

### legend

#### (Latin legere 'to read', legenda 'to be read')

traditional or undocumented genre of story about famous people, commonly religious in character and frequently posing problems of authenticity. Legends are typically narrative, in the form of verse or prose novella, although more complex forms, such as drama or <u>ballad</u>, are possible. It is typical for legends to avoid a strict documentary account in favour of a more poetic and religious interpretation of reality. The epic poem <u>Beowulf</u> is the most important Old English legend. The story of <u>Robin Hood</u> has been a popular legend since the 15th century.

The term was originally applied to the books of readings designed for use in Christian religious service, and was extended to the stories of saints' lives read in monasteries.

### Legouve, Gabriel Jean Baptiste Ernest-Wilfrid (1807-1903)

French dramatist and writer, born in Paris. He published a succession of novels, the chief being *Edith de Falsen* 1840. In 1849 he made his mark as a dramatist with *Adrienne Lecouvreur*, written in conjunction with Augustin Scribe. His tragedy

*Médée* 1854 achieved great success. *La Femme en France au XIX<sup>e</sup> siècle* 1864, *Messieurs les enfants* 1868, *Conférences parisiennes* 1872, *Nos filles et nos fils* 1875, and *Une Education de jeune fille* 1884 were influential moral works.

### Le Guin, Ursula K(roeber) (1929-)

US writer of science fiction and fantasy. Her novels include *The Left Hand of Darkness* (1969), which questions sex roles; the *Earthsea* series (1968-91); *The Dispossessed* (1974), which compares an anarchist and a capitalist society; and *Always Coming Home* (1985).

Lehmann, John Frederick (1907-1987)

English poet and essayist. His volumes of verse include A Garden Revisited 1931, The Noise of History 1934, Forty Poems 1942, The Sphere of Glass 1944, The Age of the Dragoon 1951, and Collected Poems 1963. Evil was Abroad 1938 is a novel, Down River 1939 a travel book, and The Open Night 1952 a collection of essays. He was the brother of novelist Rosamond Lehmann.

#### Lehmann, Wilhelm (1882-1968)

German writer, born in Venezuela. His works include essays and novels, such as *Der Bilderstürmer* 1917, *Weingott* 1921, and *Ruhm des Daseins* 1953, but he is perhaps best known for his verse, particularly his nature poems. In his *Antwort des Schweigens* 1951 he pioneered the *naturmagische* school of mystic nature poetry. *Noch nicht genug* 1950 and *Überlebender Tag* 1954 are collections of his later lyrics.

### Lehrer, Jim (1934-)

born James Charles Lehrer

US television journalist and writer. He is known for his low-key, informal broadcast style. A former *Dallas Morning News* reporter and *Dallas Times Herald* editor, he joined the Public Broadcasting Service in 1972, creating with Robert MacNeil an award-winning, hour-long alternative to network news, the *MacNeil/Lehrer Report*. He also turned to writing, publishing several novels, such as *Short List* (1992), and plays, including *Church Key Charlie Blue* (1987). Lehrer was born in Wichita, Kansas.

# Lehtonen, Joel (1881-1934)

Finnish poet and novelist. His finest work is a series of novels about events surrounding the Finnish civil war 1918 and its aftermath. In *Kuolleet omenapuut* 1918 and *Putkinotko* 1918-19, he portrayed people on opposing sides in the war in an attempt to understand its origin and brutality. Later novels, particularly *Rakastunut rampa* 1922 and *Henkien taistelu* 1933, were a tragic protest against the breakdown of values caused by rapid industrialization and urbanization in the newly independent Finland.

### Leino, Eino (1878-1926)

#### pseudonym of Eino Leopold Lonnbohm

Finnish poet. A leading exponent of the neo-Romantic idiom, his two collections of ballads and legends *Helkavirsiä/Whitsongs* 1903, 1916 remain the finest verse ever

written in the traditional *Kalevala* metre.

### Leland, Charles Godfrey (1824-1903)

US poet and folklorist. His *Hans Breitmann's Ballads* 1914 recounts the adventures of the hero in a regional dialect of German known as Pennsylvania Dutch.

## Lem, Stanislaw (1921-2006)

Polish science fiction writer, philosopher, and essayist. His works include the novels *Astronauci/The Astronauts* (1951) and *Solaris* (1961; filmed 1971), and the story cycle *Cyberiade* (1965). Lem's work, which is often satirical and examines moral questions about, for example, advancements in technology and the place of humanity in the universe, oscillates between optimistic humanism and fatalism regarding human shortcomings.

*Fantastyka i futurologia/The Fantastic and Futurology* (1970-72) is a study of science fiction as a genre and as a concept of the future. Other work includes *Pokój na ziemi/Peace on Earth* (1987) and a memoir, *Highcastle: A Remembrance* (1995).

### Lemaître, Jules (1853-1914)

French critic and writer. His critical articles were collected as *Impressions de théâtre* 1888-1920 and *Les Contemporains* 1886-1918, and he published *La Comédie après Molière et le théâtre de Daucourt* 1882, and, between 1907 and 1912, books on Rousseau, Racine, Fénelon, and Chateaubriand. He also wrote plays and short stories.

In politics Lemaître was an extreme reactionary, a supporter of Charles Maurras and L'Action Française, and many of his speeches were published, including the collected volumes *La Campagne nationaliste* 1902 and *Discours royalistes* 1911.

### Lemonnier, Camille (1844-1913)

Belgian writer, born in Brussels. He was a leading member of the Jeune Belgique group which favoured Symbolist ideals, but it was as a realist novelist that Lemonnier made his name, with such works as *Un Mâle* 1881, a portrayal of earthy peasant life. His later novels are more lyrical, and include *Au coeur frais de la forêt* 1900. He was also an art critic.

### Lenau, Nikolaus (1802-1850)

#### pseudonym of Nikolaus Niembsch von Strehlenau

Austrian poet, born in Csatad, Hungary. His poetry is pervaded by a deep seriousness, often bordering on despair. Some of his most beautiful poems are contained in the *Schilflieder* 1832. He also wrote a longer work, *Faust* 1836, which dramatizes his own conflict between faith and knowledge, and an epic, *Die Albigenser* 1842. His works have frequently been set to music.

### L'Engle, Madeleine (1918-)

US writer. Her novels were intended for young readers and she became famous for her moral fantasies, such as *A Wrinkle in Time* (1962). L'Engle was born Madeleine Camp in New York City. After graduated from Smith College in 1941, she worked in the theatre in New York (1941-47) and then taught school for many years.

#### Lennep, Jacob van (1802-1868)

Dutch poet and novelist. His emulation of Walter <u>Scott</u> at a time when the historical novel was very popular gained him a reputation which he has not subsequently maintained. His romantic novel *Ferdinand Huyck* 1840 is, however, still a children's classic.

### Lennox, Charlotte (1730-1804)

#### born Charlotte Ramsay

English novelist. Her popular novel *The Female Quixote* 1752 describes how the beautiful and intelligent Arabella creates comic misunderstandings through interpreting real life as if it were a French romance. Lennox published several other novels, including *The Life of Harriet Stuart* 1750 and *Henrietta* 1758; she also wrote plays, and produced *Shakespear Illustrated* 1753-54, the first compilation of Shakespearean sources. She died penniless, having supported her improvident husband throughout her writing life.

### Lenox, James (1800-1880)

US book collector and philanthropist. A wealthy merchant and real estate investor, he amassed an impressive collection of Bibles, 15th-century books, and art, which

he donated to the Lenox Library in New York City (incorporated in 1870, and now part of the New York Public Library). He also donated large funds and gifts of land to churches and other institutions. Lenox was born in New York City.

### León, Luis de (1527 or 1528-1591)

Spanish poet and theologian. He was imprisoned by the Inquisition (1572-77), partly for his translations of the Song of Solomon, and partly through his position in controversies associated with biblical translation in general. The case lasted five years, and he was found innocent of charges of heresy. His prose works, *De los nombres de Cristo* (1583-85) and *La perfecta casada* (1583), and his lyric poetry, such as 'Noche serena' and 'De la vida del cielo', reveal a mind that combined the best of Christian and Greek humanism.

# Leonard, Elmore (John, Jr) (1925-)

US novelist and screenwriter. A prolific writer, Leonard is the author of numerous Westerns and crime novels. His writing is marked by vivid dialogue, and his crime novels, usually set in Detroit or Florida, often reflect the peculiarities and violence of contemporary US society. His works, from the short Western stories, '3:10 to Yuma' (1957) and 'The Tall-T' (1957), to the more recent novels, *Get Shorty* (1990) and *Rum Punch* (1992), have proved popular with filmmakers, and many have been adapted for cinema or television.

During the 1990s Leonard became an influential figure in both the revitalized genre of US crime fiction and in the cinema, inspiring such filmmakers as Quentin Tarantino. His best-known novels include *Swag* (1976), *City Primeval* (1980), *La Brava* (1983), *Stick* (1983), *Out of Sight* (1996), and *Be Cool* (1999).

### Leonard, Hugh (1926-)

#### pseudonym of John Keyes Byrne

Irish playwright, born in Dublin, and raised in Dalkey, County Dublin. He took the name of his protagonist in *The Italian Road* (1954), a play rejected by the Abbey Theatre, Dublin. Although Leonard later staged several works with the Abbey, he is chiefly associated with the Dublin Theatre Festival. While his dramatic style ranges from the satiric to the bittersweet, Leonard's best-known and most successful play was the autobiographical *Da* (1973). He has also written for television, including *Parnell and the Englishwoman* (1990) and the eight-part *Insurrection* (1966), commemorating the Easter Rising of 1916.

Before joining the theatre, Leonard worked in the civil service.

## Leoniceno, Niccolò (1428-1524)

Italian humanist teacher and Greek scholar. Educated at Padua, he taught at Ferrara (where Pietro <u>Bembo</u> and Thomas Linacre were among his pupils). He translated works by the anatomist Galen and discussed that author's scientific method in 1508. His medical knowledge led to his being called upon to provide an opinion of the new disease of the 1490s: syphilis.

## Leonidas (died c. 480 BC)

Greek epigrammatist from Taranto. About 100 of his poems are included in the collection called the *Greek Anthology*.

# Leonov, Leonid Maksimovich (1899-1994)

Russian novelist and playwright. His works include the novels *The Badgers* (1925) and *The Thief* (1927), and the drama *The Orchards of Polovchansk* (1938).

# Leopardi, Giacomo, Count Leopardi (1798-1837)

Italian romantic poet. The first collection of his uniquely pessimistic poems, *I Versi/Verses*, appeared in 1824 and was followed by his philosophical *Operette morali/Minor Moral Works* (1827), in prose, and *I Canti/Lyrics* (1831).

Born at Recanati of a noble family, Leopardi wrote many of his finest poems, including his patriotic odes, before he was 21. Throughout his life he was tormented by ill health, by the consciousness of his deformity (he was hunchbacked), by loneliness and a succession of unhappy love affairs, and by his 'cosmic pessimism' and failure to find consolation in any philosophy.

# Le Queux, William Tufnell (1864-1927)

English novelist. He travelled a great deal and made a fine collection of medieval manuscripts. Of over 130 sensational stories, the best-known is *The Invasion of 1910* 1906, which foreshadowed World War I. Others are *Guilty Bonds* 1891, *The Eye of Istar* 1897, and *Fatal Fingers* 1912.

### Lermontov, Mikhail Yurevich (1814-1841)

Russian Romantic poet and novelist. In 1837 he was sent into active military service in the Caucasus for writing a revolutionary poem on the death of Pushkin, which criticized court values, and for participating in a duel. Among his works are the psychological novel *A <u>Hero of Our Time</u>* (1840) and a volume of poems *October* (1840).

# Le Sage, Alain-René (1668-1747)

French novelist and dramatist. His novels include *Le Diable boîteux/The Devil upon Two Sticks* (1707) and his picaresque masterpiece <u>*Gil Blas de Santillane*</u> (1715-35), which is much indebted to Spanish originals. He also published over 100 plays, the best of which are the Molièresque comedies *Crispin, rival de son maître/Crispin, His Master's Rival* (1707) and *Turcaret* (1709).

## Leskov, Nikolai Semenovich (1831-1895)

Russian writer. Leskov was one of the greatest masters of the Russian language, introducing many dialect and provincial forms into literary usage. Many of his works deal with religious life in provincial Russia; for example, *Soboriane/Cathedral Folk* 1872. His powerful tale of sexual passion, 'Lady Macbeth of the Mtsensk District' 1865, was made into an opera by Dmitry Shostakovich.

A political nonconformist, Leskov attacked the radicals in his novel *Nekuda/No Way Out* 1864, yet he came to be regarded with suspicion by conservatives because of his sharp exposure of bureaucracy in the Orthodox Church. Leskov was sympathetic to Protestantism and became a follower of the novelist Leo <u>Tolstoy's</u> philosophy.

### Lesmian, Boleslaw (1878-1937)

Polish poet and essayist. He was an innovative writer and a forerunner of existentialism. He published only a limited number of collections, including Sad rozstajny/Crossroads Orchard 1912, Laka/Meadow 1920, and Napój cienisty/A Shadowy Drink 1936.

Lessing, Doris May (1919-)

born Doris May Tayler

English novelist and short-story writer. Concerned with social and political themes, particularly the place of women in society, her work includes *The Grass is Singing* (1950), the five-novel series *Children of Violence* (1952-69), *The Golden Notebook* (1962), *The Good Terrorist* (1985), *The Fifth Child* (1988), *London Observed* (1992), and *Love Again* (1996).

Lessing was born in Persia (now Iran) but brought up in Rhodesia (now Zimbabwe). She dropped out of school at 13 and educated herself, reading widely. She has commented that her unhappy childhood made her a fiction writer. Unhappy in her first marriage, which she entered at 19, her second marriage was to Gottfried Lessing, the central figure of a group of communists called the Left Book Club. Eventually disillusioned by communism, she moved to London with her son in 1949 and began her career as a professional writer.

### Le Sueur, Meridel (1900-1996)

US writer. She gained a burgeoning reputation after her work was rediscovered by feminist readers, and she was honoured for her poetry, essays, short stories, a biography of her parents, and novels such as *The Girl* (1939). She was born Meridel Wharton in Murray, Iowa, and was adopted by her stepfather Alfred Le Sueur. She attended high school in Fort Scott, Kansas, and studied at the American Academy of Dramatic Art. Le Sueuer worked in Hollywood as a stuntwoman and actor, then returned to the Midwest. She worked as a journalist, Iabour reporter, and as a writing instructor at the University of Minnesota. A social and cultural activist, she was blacklisted during the McCarthy era.

### letter

written or printed message, chiefly a personal communication. Letters are valuable as reflections of social conditions and of literary and political life. Legally, ownership of a letter (as a document) passes to the recipient, but the copyright remains with the writer.

Outstanding examples include:

#### ancient

Cicero (Roman), Pliny the Younger (Roman), and St Paul;

#### medieval

Abelard and Héloïse (12th-century France), the Paston family (15th-century England);

#### 16th century

Erasmus (the Netherlands), Luther, Melanchthon (Germany), Spenser, Sidney (England);

#### 17th century

Donne, Milton, Cromwell, Dorothy Osborne, Wotton (England); Pascal, Mme de Sévigné (France);

#### 18th century

Pope, Walpole, Swift, Mary Wortley Montagu, Chesterfield, Cowper, Gray (England); Bossuet, Voltaire, Rousseau (France);

#### 19th century

Emerson, J R Lowell (USA); Byron, Lamb, Keats, Fitzgerald, Stevenson (England); George Sand, Saint-Beuve, Goncourt brothers (France); Schiller, Goethe (Germany); Gottfried Keller (Switzerland);

#### 20th century

T E Lawrence, G B Shaw, Ellen Terry, Katherine Mansfield (England); Rilke (Germany).

#### Let Us Now Praise Famous Men

book 1941 (begun in 1936) by US writer James Agee and US photographer Walker Evans. Agee's impressionistic prose and Evans' stark pictures record the dignified poverty of three Southern white cotton farmers during the Depression. It is a unique work of social documentary.

#### Lever, Charles James (1806-1872)

Irish novelist. Lever was born in Dublin and took a degree in medicine at Trinity College, Dublin. He wrote novels of Irish social, political, and army life, such as *The Confessions of Harry Lorrequer* (1839), *Charles O'Malley: The Irish Dragoon* (1841), *Our Mess: Jack Hinton, the Guardsman* (1843), and *Tom Burke of Ours* (1844). His later works, such as *Lord Kilgobbin* (1872), often have a gravity and seriousness of theme, an aspect of Lever's work that has tended to be neglected.

At the beginning of the 20th century he was regarded as a literary exploiter of Ireland, who poked fun at the Irish character to provoke comfortable English laughter, but in latter years his esteem has risen.

### Leverson, Ada (1862-1933)

#### born Ada Beddington

English novelist. Following the publication of articles and sketches, she branched out into fiction. Her six novels, of which the first was *The Twelfth Hour* (1907) and the last *The Bird of Paradise* (1914), are amusing, well-characterized studies of marriage; three of them feature the Ottleys, later issued together as *The Little Ottleys* (1962). She was a close friend of Oscar Wilde, who called her 'The Sphinx'.

### Levertin, Oscar Ivar (1862-1906)

Swedish poet and novelist. His verse is often aesthetically rather than emotionally inspired, as in *Legender och visor/Legends and Songs* 1891, but in his later years he wrote some very moving poetry, especially the song cycle *Kung Salomo och Morolf/King Solomon and Morolf* 1905. His wide knowledge is shown in his essays, as well as in his stories and novels *Rococonoveller/Rococo Stories* 1899 and *Magistrarne i Österås/The Masters of Österås* 1900.

## Levertov, Denise (1923-1997)

English-born US poet. She published her first volume of poetry *The Double Image* (1946), after which she moved to the USA. In the 1950s she was associated with the <u>Black Mountain poets</u>, and in the 1960s campaigned for civil rights. Poetry collections include *Here and Now* (1957), *Candles in Babylon* (1982), and *A Door in the Hive* 1993. Her essays on political, feminist, and creative issues appeared in *O Taste and See* (1964) and *The Poet in the World* (1973). Her 22nd collection, *Sands of the Well*, was published in 1998.

#### Levi, Peter (1931-2000)

English poet, prose writer, critic, and classical scholar. In 1977 he resigned from the priesthood and from the Society of Jesus, of which he had been a member since 1948. His first volume of verse was *The Gravel Ponds* (1960). His poetry has striking images, and draws on classical and archaeological themes, Christianity, and nature. *Collected Poems 1955-1975* was published in 1976. He has written critical biographies of Tennyson (1993), Lear (1995), Milton (1996), and Horace (1997).

Levi, Primo (1919-1987)

Italian novelist. He joined the antifascist resistance during World War II, was captured, and sent to the concentration camp at Auschwitz. He wrote of these experiences in *Se questo è un uomo/If This Is a Man* (1947). His other books, all based on his experience of the war, include *Period Tables* (1975) and *Moments of Reprieve* (1981).

### Levin, Harry (Tuchman) (1912-1994)

US scholar and literary critic. Noted for his somewhat mannered style, he wrote perceptively on Elizabethan drama, the modern novel, and French literature. He was also famous for his highly composed lectures: once, as a guest lecturer at Oxford, he timed his quoting of the line from Marlowe's *Dr Faustus* about the clock striking so that it came just as Christ Church College's 'Great Tom' struck noon. Levin was born in Minneapolis, Minnesota. He studied at Harvard University and stayed on as professor of comparative literature (1939-83).

### Levine, Philip (1928-)

US poet. He is known for his spare, reflective poetry, as in *What Work Is* (1991). Levine was born in Detroit, Michigan. He studied at Wayne State, Iowa, and Stanford universities, and taught at California State University, Fresno (from 1981). He also edited and translated volumes of poetry, and won many awards for his own work.

### Levy, Andrea (1956-)

English writer. She draws on her Jamaican roots to explore themes of race, multiculturalism, and alienation in her novels. These include *Every Light in the House Burnin'* (1994), *Never Far from Nowhere* (1996), *Fruit of the Lemon* (1999), and *Small Island* (2004), for which she won the 2004 Orange Prize.

### Lewes, George Henry (1817-1878)

English philosopher and critic. Originally an actor, he turned to literature and philosophy; his works include a *Biographical History of Philosophy* (1845-46) and *Life and Works of Goethe* (1855), which became a standard authority on the subject both in England and Germany. He married in 1840, but left his wife in 1854 to live with the writer Marian Evans (George Eliot), whom he had met in 1851.

US satirical novelist who was the first US writer to be awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature, in 1930. With the appearance of *Main Street* (1920), Lewis was recognized as a new force in US literature, a satirist of the first order who saw his country with clear eyes. His best-selling *Main Street* was followed by *Babbitt* (1922), the story of a self-satisfied US businessman. *Martin Arrowsmith* (1925) satirizes the medical profession, and *Elmer Gantry* (1927) paints a savage picture of the professional religious revivalists. *Dodsworth* (1929) was the fruit of numerous trips to Europe.

He was born in Sauk Center, Minnesota. Graduating from Yale University in 1907, he worked for a time as a newspaper reporter and then in various editorial capacities with US publishing firms. He published his first novel *Hike and the Aeroplane*, a book for boys, in 1912.

# Lewis, (Percy) Wyndham (1882-1957)

English writer and artist. He pioneered Vorticism, which, with its feeling of movement, sought to reflect the age of industry. He had a hard and aggressive style in both his writing and his painting. His literary works include the novel *The Apes of God* (1930); the essay collection *Time and Western Man* (1927); and an autobiography, *Blasting and Bombardiering* (1937). In addition to paintings of a semi-abstract kind, he made a number of portraits; among his sitters were the poets Edith Sitwell, Ezra Pound, and T S Eliot.

Through Vorticism, a variant of cubist and Futurist ideas, Lewis opposed the 'everyday visual real' and favoured machinelike forms. He edited *Blast* from 1914 to 1915, a literary and artistic magazine which proclaimed the principles of the movement. Both in his paintings and in his numerous written works - including the novels *Tarr* (1918) and *The Childermass* (1928) - he was an intellectual independent, and one of his later literary products, *The Demon of Progress in the Arts* (1954), was an attack on formalized extremism. His painting *The Surrender of Barcelona* (1936; Tate Gallery, London) applies mechanistic treatment to an imagined scene of the past.

# Lewis, Alun (1915-1944)

Welsh poet and short-story writer. His austere sense of vocation as a writer and his disciplined style of writing marked him out as a poet of great promise, as shown by his first published volume of poems, *Raiders' Dawn* 1942. This was followed by *Ha! Ha! Among the Trumpets* published posthumously 1945. Lewis's poetry is characterized by a realistic and humane approach to life, tempered with a fine idealism and formed with integrity and discipline. His sense of realism also found expression in a notable collection of short stories, *The Last Inspection* 1943.

# Lewis, C(live) S(taples) (1898-1963)

English academic and writer, born in Belfast. He became a committed Christian in 1931 and wrote the Chronicles of Narnia, a series of seven novels of Christian allegory for children set in the magic land of Narnia, beginning with *The Lion, the Witch, and the Wardrobe* (1950).

His other works include the medieval study *The Allegory of Love* (1936) and the space fiction *Out of the Silent Planet* (1938). He wrote essays in popular theology such as *The Screwtape Letters* (1942) and *Mere Christianity* (1952), and the autobiographical *Surprised by Joy* (1955).

Lewis, Cecil Day

Irish poet; see Cecil Day-Lewis.

## Lewis, Dominic Bevan Wyndham (1894-1969)

Welsh journalist and biographer. His contributions to the *Daily Express* as 'Beachcomber' 1919-24 made his reputation as a satirically witty writer. From 1924 he wrote for the *Daily Mail*, the *Sunday Referee*, and other papers, and in later years he contributed to the *News Chronicle* as 'Timothy Shy'.

As a French scholar and historian, he published studies of François Villon 1928 and Ronsard 1944, also biographies of Louis XI of France (*King Spider*, 1930) and of Charles V (*Emperor of the West*, 1932).

His essays and humorous writings were collected in a number of volumes, including A London Farrago (1922), At the Sign of the Blue Moon (1924), and On Straw and Other Conceits (1927).

### Lewis, Matthew Gregory (1775-1818)

English writer. He was known as 'Monk' Lewis from his Gothic horror romance *The Monk* 1796; subsequent editions were expurgated. He also wrote plays, including *The Castle Spectre* 1798, and poems.

### Leypoldt, Frederic (1835-1884)

German-born US publisher. He established a publishing firm with Henry Holt in 1866.

He was editor and publisher (from 1868) of the journal that became *Publishers' Weekly* and of an annual catalogue of published books (from 1870). Leypoldt was born in Stuttgart, Germany, and emigrated to the USA in 1854.

### Libanius (314-c. 393)

Greek rhetorician, born in Antioch into a wealthy pagan family. Having studied in Athens, he taught in Constantinople, Nicomedia, and Antioch. Though a keen supporter of Julian the Apostate, he remained on friendly terms with his former pupils John Chrysostom, Basil, and Gregory of Nazianzus. His writings, in spite of their defects, are a valuable source for the political and cultural history of his age. His collected works include 1600 letters and numerous rhetorical exercises.

### Libra

novel 1988 by US writer Don <u>DeLillo</u>. Using a complex structure, it tells the story of the assassination of President John F Kennedy seen through the life of Lee Harvey Oswald, and deals with the wider plots and conspiracies of the event. The novel is a bold treatment of a vital event in US modern history.

### Lie, Jonas (1833-1908)

Norwegian novelist. His first novel, *Den fremsynte/The Visionary* 1870, is a melancholy romance full of 'Nordland mystery'. In the 1880s he was influenced by the new realistic school of writing, and produced minutely observed accounts of domestic life in Norway, criticizing the narrow 'village morality' and social oppression of women in such works as *Gaa paa!/Go Ahead!* 1882, *Familjen paa Gilje/The Family at Gilje* 1883, and *Kommandørens Døtre/The Commodore's Daughters* 1886. His later works are dominated by his conviction of the power of demonic impulses over the minds of humans (*Trold/Trolls* 1891-92 and *Dyre Rein* 1896).

# Lieber, Francis (1800-1872)

German-born US political reformer, editor, and political scientist. Two of his works, *Manual of Political Ethics* (1838-39) and *On Civil Liberty and Self-Government* (1853) provided the first thorough analysis of American government since its inception. Known for his ideas on prison reform, he also drafted a *Code for the Government of the Armies of the United States* (1863), which was adopted by the Union army; essentially the first code of international law governing war, it was later used as the basis for the Hague Convention.

Lieber was born in Berlin, Germany. As a youth he fought against Napoleon in the Battle of Waterloo. Persecuted, and imprisoned, as a liberal in Prussia, he fled in 1826 and arrived in Boston, Massachusetts, in 1827. Proposing to translate a German encyclopedia, he so enlarged and revised it that he ended up editing a new 13-volume *Encyclopedia Americana* (1829-33). He taught at the University of South Carolina (1835-57) and Columbia University (1857-72).

# Life

US weekly magazine of photojournalism, which recorded US and world events pictorially from 1936-72, 1978- . It was founded by Henry Luce, owner of Time Inc., who bought the title of an older magazine. It ceased publication in 1972, although a few 'Special Report' issues occasionally appeared after that date. In 1978 the magazine was revived, issued monthly, focusing more on personalities than on current news. From May 2000, the magazine ceased to be published monthly, but only in special editions. Its publication of books continued.

# Liliencron, Detlev von (1844-1909)

German novelist and poet. His best work, published when he was almost 40, is his poetry *Adjutantenritte*, *Gedichte*, and *Nebel und Sonne*; he also wrote novels, including *Der Macen* 1889, *Kriegsnovellen* 1895, and a very popular humorous epic, *Poggfred* 1896. Liliencron is remarkable for his masterly use of language, which is one of the best examples of German Impressionism.

### limerick

five-line humorous verse, often nonsensical, which first appeared in England in about 1820 and was popularized by English writer Edward Lear. An example is: 'There was a young lady of Riga, Who rode with a smile on a tiger; They returned from the ride With the lady inside, And the smile on the face of the tiger.'

### Lindgren, Astrid (1907-2002)

Swedish children's novelist. She established her reputation with *Pippi Långstrump/ Pippi Longstocking* (1945). She wrote at least 50 more books, including *Mästerdetektiven Blomkvist/Bill Bergson Master Detective* (1946), but none has eclipsed the popularity of her first work. She was born in Vimmersby, Sweden.

## Lindsay, (Nicholas) Vachel (1879-1931)

US poet. He wandered the country, living by reciting his balladlike verse, collected in volumes including *General William Booth Enters into Heaven* 1913, *The Congo* 1914, and *Johnny Appleseed* 1928.

## Lindsay (or Lyndsay), David (1490-1555)

Scottish poet. He was attached to the Scottish court in 1508, and until 1522 was 'usher' to James V of Scotland. His works include the allegorical poem *The Dreme* (*c.* 1528); *The Testament and Complaynt of our Soverane Lordis Papyngo (parrot)*, a satire on the court, prelates, and nobles; *Answer to the Kingis Flyting*, a reprimand of the king's licentiousness; and the morality play *Ane Satyre of the Thrie Estatis* (1540), denouncing the clergy.

## Lindsay, Jack (1900-1990)

Australian writer, based in London. His enduring leftist sympathies pervade an enormous and varied literary output; he published over 100 books, including poems and classical translations, notably his *Catullus* 1929, political studies, historical novels with settings ranging from ancient Pompeii to 19th-century England, and biographies of Helen of Troy, Blake, Turner, and William Morris.

The son and, for a time, disciple of the influential artist and writer Norman Lindsay (1879-1969), he developed a more independent vision in response to Marxist and European influences in the 1930s.

# Lingard, Joan (1932-)

Northern Irish writer of children's books. Her best known work is *Across the Barricades* (1972), which views Northern Ireland through teenage eyes. She often explores themes of religious and political inheritance and has also set her stories in Scottish, Russian, and Canadian settings.

Lingard was born in Edinburgh, Scotland, but grew up in Belfast, Northern Ireland, the setting for her five books about the characters Kevin and Sadie: *The Twelfth of July* (1970), *Across the Barricades* (winner of the prestigious German Buxtehuder Bulle award in 1986), *Into Exile* (1973), *A Proper Place* (1975), and *Hostages to Fortune* (1976). Her novels *Hands Off Our School*, *The Freedom Machine*, *Rags to Riches*, and her four books about the character Maggie (*The Clearance*, *The Resettling*, *The Pilgrimage*, and *The Reunion*), written between 1981 and 1989, reflect the importance of the author's Scottish birthplace. Displacement, exile, and alienation are also frequent themes.

# Linklater, Eric (1899-1975)

Scottish novelist and biographer. Juan in America 1931 helped to establish his reputation as a humorous, zestful, and inventive writer. It was followed by Juan in China 1937, The Impregnable Women 1938, Private Angelo 1946, and other novels. He also wrote the biographies Mary Queen of Scots 1933 and Robert the Bruce 1934, and produced plays for the stage and for broadcasting. His book for children, The Wind in the Moon 1944, won the Carnegie prize.

Among his later books are a novel, *The House of Gair*, and a travel book, *A Year of Space*, both 1953, *The Ultimate Viking* 1955, *Roll of Honour* 1961, *A Man Over Forty* 1963, and *Orkney and Shetland* 1965.

## Linna, Väinö (1920-1992)

Finnish novelist. Born at Urjala, he worked as a labourer and factory-worker. He caught the attention of the public with his third novel *Tuntematon sotilas/The Unknown Soldier* 1954, a semi-autobiographical account of the 1941-44 Russo-Finnish war. He became established as Finland's leading post-war novelist with his trilogy *Tä ällä Pohjantähden alla/Here Under the North Star* 1959-62, which ranks with the writings of Frans Sillanpää and Joel Lehtonen as a portrayal of rural life in Finland.

# Linnankoski, Johannes (1869-1913)

pseudonym of Vihtori Peltonen

Finnish novelist and journalist. His reputation rests chiefly on *Laulu tulipunaisesta kukasta/The Song of the Blood-Red Flower* 1905, a didactic novel about the sexual development of a young man and his rise from lumberjack to landowner.

He also published the novel *Pakolaiset/The Refugees* 1908; several dramas, such as *lkuinen taistelu/The Eternal Struggle* 1903; and a number of short stories.

# Lion, the Witch and the Wardrobe, The

novel (1950) by C S Lewis, the first of the Chronicles of Narnia.

# Li Po (c. 705-762)

Taoist Chinese poet of the Tang dynasty (618-907). He used traditional literary forms, but his exuberance, the boldness of his imagination, and the intensity of his feeling have won him recognition as perhaps the greatest of all Chinese poets. Although he was mostly concerned with higher themes, he is also remembered for his celebratory verses on drinking.

# Lippard, George (1822-1854)

US writer. He wrote many historical romances, but is best known for his books indicting the corruption of big cities, such as *The Monks of Monk Hall* (1844), an exposé of Philadelphia in the fantasy genre (it is also known as *The Quaker City*). He was the founder of the Brotherhood of the Union (later known as the Brotherhood of America) in 1850, a religious and philosophical organization that attempted to eliminate social exploitation. Lippard was born in West Nantmeal Township, Pennsylvania. His family moved to Philadelphia in 1824. He studied for the ministry at the Classical Academy in Rhinebeck, New York. Rejecting the ministry, he became a journalist, then a freelance writer.

# Lippincott, Joshua (Ballinger) (1813-1886)

US publisher. Starting as a bookseller in Philadelphia, he founded J B Lippincott & Company in 1836; the company prospered as a diversified publisher of religious and medical works, deluxe editions, and other works. Lippincott was born in Juliustown, New Jersey.

# Lippmann, Walter (1889-1974)

US liberal political commentator. From 1921 Lippmann was the chief editorial writer for the *New York World* and from 1931 wrote the daily column 'Today and Tomorrow', which was widely syndicated through the *New York Herald Tribune*. Among his books are *A Preface to Morals* (1929), *The Good Society* (1937), and *The Public Philosophy* (1955).

Lipmann was born in New York and educated at Harvard. He was one of the founders of the *New Republic* magazine in 1914. After service in army intelligence during World War I, he became an adviser to President Wilson at the Versailles peace conference.

#### **Dutch** Joest Lips

Netherlands scholar and teacher. One of the leading Latin scholars of his age, Lipsius is noted for important editions of the classical authors Tacitus and Seneca. These works popularized a terse prose style that can be seen, for example, in the works of Francis Bacon. His own writings developed a neo-Stoicism combining Christianity with ancient Stoic philosophy.

# Lispector, Clarice (1925-1977)

Brazilian writer. She was particularly concerned with the themes of adolescence, femininity, alienation, and self-awareness. Her acclaimed first novel *Perto do Coração Selvagem/Near to the Savage Heart* 1944, published when she was 19, was followed by other novels and distinguished short stories, including *A Legião Estrangeira/The Foreign Legion* 1964.

### Lissauer, Ernst (1882-1937)

German writer. Much of his work is strongly nationalistic. His 'Hassgesang gegen England/Hymn of Hate' 1914 was hugely popular in Germany during World War I; it contains the notorious refrain 'Gott strafe England' ('May God punish England'). He also wrote plays, including *Eckermann* 1921, *Yorck* 1921, and *Das Weib des Jephta/The Wife of Jephta* 1928.

### literary criticism

assessment and interpretation of literary works. The term 'criticism' is often taken to mean exclusively adverse comment, but in fact it refers to all literary assessment, whether positive or negative. Contemporary criticism offers analyses of literary works from structuralist, semiological, feminist, Marxist, and psychoanalytical perspectives, whereas earlier criticism tended to deal with moral or political ideas, or with a literary work as a formal object independent of its creator.

The earliest systematic literary criticism was the *Poetics* of Aristotle; a later Greek critic was the author of the treatise *On the Sublime*, usually attributed to Longinus. Horace and Quintilian were influential Latin critics. The Italian Renaissance introduced humanist criticism, and the revival of classical scholarship exalted the authority of Aristotle and Horace. Like literature itself, European criticism then applied neoclassical, Romantic, and modern approaches.

# literary prizes

awards for literature, usually annual and for a specific category (poetry, non-fiction, children's, and so on). The Nobel Prize for Literature is international; other prizes are usually for books first published in a particular language or country, such as the <u>Booker Prize</u> (Commonwealth), the <u>Prix Goncourt</u> (France), the <u>Pulitzer</u> Prizes (USA), the Miles <u>Franklin</u> Award (Australia), and the Akutagawa Prize (Japan).

# literary society

body formed by those interested in literature to meet for discussion of literary topics. Literary societies of national standing in England date from Elizabethan times, when Edmund Spenser and Philip Sidney formed the Areopagus; the 18th century saw the foundation of Samuel Johnson's Literary Club.

### **UK societies**

In England the principal literary societies, with their dates of foundation, are the Folklore Society (1878), the Society of Authors (1884), the English Association (1906), the Poetry Society (1909), <u>PEN</u> international (1921), and the National Book League (1925). There are also literary societies formed for a special purpose, such as the Early English Text Society and the Classical Association, and literary societies for the study of particular authors, including Jane Austen, Francis Bacon, the Brontës, Robert Burns, Geoffrey Chaucer, Joseph Conrad, William Cowper, Charles Dickens, Samuel Johnson, John Keats, Rudyard Kipling, Charles Lamb, D H Lawrence Samuel Pepys, Walter Scott, William Shakespeare, G B Shaw, R L Stevenson, and William Wordsworth.

#### **US** societies

In the USA leading literary societies are the Boston Athenaeum (1807), the American Antiquarian Society (1812), the American Folklore Society (1888), the American Dialect Society (1889), the National Institute of Arts and Letters (1898), the Bibliophile Society (1901), the Carnegie Institute of Washington (1902), the American Academy of Art and Letters (1902), and the American Poetry Association (1925). There are also US literary societies for the study of William Caxton, Charles Dickens, Edgar Allan Poe, William Shakespeare, Mark Twain, and Walt Whitman.

### literati

term applied, sometimes disparagingly, to the learned and well-read. It was originally used by English philosopher Robert Burton in the 17th century to describe the literate class in China.

### literature

words set apart in some way from ordinary everyday communication. In the ancient oral traditions, before stories and poems were written down, literature had a mainly public function - mythic and religious. As literary works came to be preserved in writing, and, eventually, printed, their role became more private, serving as a vehicle for the exploration and expression of emotion and the human situation.

#### poetry and prose

In the development of literature, aesthetic criteria have come increasingly to the fore, although these have been challenged on ideological grounds by some recent cultural critics. The English poet and critic Coleridge defined **prose** as words in their best order, and **poetry** as the 'best' words in the best order. The distinction between poetry and prose is not always clear-cut, but in practice poetry tends to be metrically formal (making it easier to memorize), whereas prose corresponds more closely to the patterns of ordinary speech. Poetry therefore had an early advantage over prose in the days before printing, which it did not relinquish until comparatively recently.

Over the centuries poetry has taken on a wide range of forms, from the lengthy narrative such as the <u>epic</u>, to the lyric, expressing personal emotion in songlike form; from the <u>ballad</u> and the 14-line <u>sonnet</u>, to the extreme conciseness of the 17-syllable Japanese <u>haiku</u>.

Prose came into its own in the West as a vehicle for imaginative literature with the rise of the novel in the 18th century, and <u>fiction</u> has since been divided into various genres such as the historical novel, detective fiction, fantasy, and science fiction. See also the literature of particular countries, under <u>English literature</u>, <u>French</u><u>literature</u>, <u>United States literature</u>, and so on.

#### Lithuanian literature

vernacular writing dates from the 16th century but the secular literary tradition begins with the nature poetry of Kristijonas Donelaitis (1714-1780) and folk-song collections in the 18th century. Nineteenth-century romantic nationalism and oppression created a wider audience for patriotic verse and short stories. The banned journal *Aušra/Dawn* 1883-86 gave its name to a generation of patriotic writers, including the lyric and dramatic poet Jonas Maciulis (Maironis) (1862-1932). Though Soviet occupation drove many writers into exile, the novelist and dramatist Vincas Kreve (1882-1954) and the poet Vincas Mykolaitis-Putinas (1893-1967) have emerged as major national writers. in English legend, a companion of Robin Hood.

# Little Review, The

1914-29 US literary magazine founded in Chicago by Margaret Anderson. It published many experimental writers including W B Yeats, Ezra Pound, T S Eliot, and William Carlos Williams, and was banned for publishing part of James Joyce's *Ulysses. The Little Review* was variously published in New York, Paris, and elsewhere.

# Littleton, Mark

Pen-name of US writer John Kennedy.

# Little Women

novel for children by Louisa M <u>Alcott</u> published 1869, one of the most popular children's books ever written. It describes the daily life of a New England family in reduced circumstances, and the tensions and harmony between the four teenage daughters, Meg, Jo, Beth, and Amy.

# Lively, Penelope Margaret (1933-)

English writer. She has written many novels for children (*A Stitch in Time* (1976) won the Whitbread Literary Award) and, from 1977, for adults (*Moon Tiger* (1987) won the Booker Prize). Her fiction is characterized by an absorption in the influence of the past on the present.

Born in Cairo, Egypt, Lively was sent to school in England and graduated from St Anne's College, Oxford University. The childhood memoir *Oleander Jacaranda* (1994) recalls her early days in Egypt, but her fiction is often set in Oxfordshire. Her children's novels often have a supernatural element; for example, *The Ghost of Thomas Kempe* (1973; Carnegie Medal) wittily explores the clash between the 17th and 20th centuries. Her adult novels pursue the influence of surviving memory architectural, topographical, and pictorial - and include *Cleopatra's Sister* (1993), *Heat Wave* (1996), *Beyond the Blue Mountains* (1997), and *The Photograph* (2003).

Liveright, Horace (Brisbin) (1886-1933)

US publisher. In 1917, with Albert Boni, he launched the profitable Modern Library series of reprinted classics, sold in 1925 to Bennett Cerf and Donald Klopfer. Liveright also published original titles, with widely varying results; he was financially ruined by the 1929 stock market crash. Liveright was born in Osceola Mills, Pennsylvania.

#### **Living Theater**

experimental US theatre group, 1947-70, founded by Judith Malina and Julian Beck. Committed anarchists, Malina and Beck promoted avant-garde plays and radical dramatic techniques in opposition to the prevailing naturalism and Method acting. They produced works by Gertrude Stein, Paul Goodman, Brecht, and Lorca and won international recognition for such plays as *The Connection* (1959) by Jack Gelber.

In 1964 they took up 'voluntary exile' in Europe. The group production *Paradise Now* (1968), subverting all dramatic categories, was considered to have expressed the anarchic spirit of the 1960s. In 1970 the the company split into several groups and dispersed.

## Livius Andronicus, Lucius (c. 284-c. 204 BC)

Latin poet. By birth a Greek, he was brought as a prisoner to Rome and, as a freedman of M Livius Salinator, he adopted his owner's name on emancipation. Livius Andronicus was the first literary epic and dramatic author in Rome. He adapted Greek tragedies and comedies and produced a version of the Odyssey in Saturnian verse. Fragments of his work survive.

# Llewellyn, Richard (1906-1983)

#### pen-name of Richard Dafydd Vivian Llewellyn Lloyd

Welsh writer. *How Green Was My Valley* 1939, a novel about a South Wales mining community at the end of the 19th century, was made into a film 1941.

He also wrote the plays *Poison Pen* 1937 and *Noose* 1947, and several other novels set in various parts of the world, including *None but the Lonely Heart* 1943, *A Few Flowers for Shiner* 1950, and two sequels to *How Green Was My Valley*, *Up into the Singing Mountain* 1963 and *Green, Green My Valley Now* 1966.

#### Lochhead, Liz (1947-)

Scottish poet and playwright. She is well known for performing her own work. Her collections of poems include *Memo for Spring* (1972), *The Grimm Sisters* (1981), and *Dreaming Frankenstein* (1984). She has also written powerful work for the stage, including *Mary Queen of Scots Got Her Head Chopped Off* (1982); *Blood and Ice* (1988), a biography of the English writer Mary Shelley; *The Big Picture* (1988), about popular culture; and *Perfect Days* (1988), a romantic comedy.

Lochhead was born in Motherwell, Lanarkshire. She studied art at Glasgow College of Art and was a teacher for eight years. In 1978 she became a full-time poet when she was selected to be the first Scottish/Canadian writers exchange fellow.

### Locker-Lampson, Frederick (1821-1895)

English poet. *London Lyrics* 1857 was a collection of light verse; other works include the anthology *Lyra Elegantiarum* 1867, which was suppressed, and *Patchwork* 1879, a selection of prose passages. In 1886 he printed a catalogue of his famous library at Rowfant.

### Lockhart, John Gibson (1794-1854)

Scottish author and editor. He wrote many articles and novels, and was editor of the *Quarterly Review* 1825-53. He published a biography of Robert <u>Burns</u> 1828, a *History of Napoleon Bonaparte* 1829, and a *History of the Late War* 1832, including *Sketches of Buonaparte, Nelson, and Wellington for Children*. His greatest work was the *Memoirs of the Life of Sir Walter Scott* 1837-38, the profits from which he made over to Scott's creditors.

#### Lockhart, Robert Hamilton Bruce (1887-1970)

Scottish journalist and writer. His books, largely autobiographical, include *Memoirs* of a British Agent 1932, Retreat from Glory 1934, Return to Malaya 1936, My Scottish Youth 1937, Comes the Reckoning 1947, and My Europe 1952. KCMG 1943.

#### Lodge, David John (1935-)

English novelist, short-story writer, dramatist, and critic. Much of his fiction concerns the role of Catholicism in mid-20th-century England, exploring the situation both through broad comedy and parody, as in *The British Museum is Falling Down* (1967), and realistically, as in *How Far Can You Go?* (1980; Whitbread Book of the Year Award). His more recent works include *Consciousness and the Novel* (2002), a collection of essays that explore the representation of human consciousness in

fiction, and the novel *Author*, *Author*: *A Novel* (2004), which focuses on periods in the life of the writer Henry James.

His other works include *Changing Places* (1975; winner of the Hawthornden Prize) and its sequel *Small World* (1984), both satirical 'campus' novels, *Nice Work* (1988), *Paradise News* (1991), *Therapy* (1995), *Home Truths* (1999; originally written as a play published in 1998), and *Thinks* (2001); the play, *The Writing Game* (1990); and the critical works *The Novelist at the Crossroads* (1991), *After Bakhtin* (1990), and *The Practice of Writing* (1996).

### Lodge, George Cabot (1873-1909)

US poet. He is known for his sonnets, as in *The Song of the Wave, and Other Poems* (1898). The son of US politician Henry Cabot Lodge, he was born in Boston, Massachusetts. He studied at Harvard University (1891-95), in France and Berlin, Germany (1895-97), then became secretary to his father in 1897, and to a Senate Committee in Washington, DC.

### Lodge, Thomas (c. 1558-1625)

English author. His romance *Rosalynde* (1590) was the basis of Shakespeare's play *As You Like It*. He excelled as a lyric poet, and *Glaucus and Scilla* appeared in 1589; his main volume of verse, *Phillis*, a collection of amorous sonnets, was published in 1593, and *A Fig for Momus* in 1598.

He also wrote two dramas, *The Wounds of Civile War* and, in collaboration with Robert Greene (1558-1592), *A Looking-Glass for London and England*, both 1594, and he translated the works of Seneca and Josephus.

#### Loetscher, Hugo (1929-)

Swiss novelist and playwright. His style varies between traditional realism and parable form. His *Abwasser. Ein Gutachten* (1964) satirizes modern urban life from the perspective of a sewer inspector. *Die Kranzflechterin* (1964) is an uncompromising, amusing novel which looks ironically at modern Swiss and German life. *Noah* (1967) focuses on big business and artistic pretentiousness.

#### Lofting, Hugh John (1886-1947)

English writer and illustrator of children's books. His best-known work is the 'Dr Dolittle' series, in which the hero can talk to animals. Born in Maidenhead, Lofting

was originally a civil engineer. He went to the USA 1912.

### Logan, John (1748-1788)

Scottish poet. He was accused of copying the verse of Michael <u>Bruce</u>, especially the 'Ode to the Cuckoo', which appeared in a collection of Logan's poetry 1781.

### Logue, Christopher (1926-)

English poet. His early poems, whose subjects tended to be political, were varied and experimental, and often took the form of songs. His other verse includes *Weekdream Sonnets* (1955), *Songs* (1955), *New Numbers* (1969), *Twelve Cards* (1972), and verse posters. Logue also wrote several screenplays, including Ken Russell's *Savage Messiah* (1972); acted in several films; and wrote a number of plays and a novel.

### Lolita

novel (1955) by US writer Vladimir <u>Nabokov</u>. It is the narrative of Humbert Humbert, a middle-aged European academic, whose infatuation with an adolescent girl who becomes his step-daughter and his mistress leads to murder. A darkly comic work about erotic obsession and artistic desire, whose subject matter caused great controversy, it is regarded as a modern masterpiece.

# London, Jack (John Griffith Chaney) (1876-1916)

US novelist. He was a prolific author of naturalistic novels, adventure stories, and socialist reportage. His works, which are often based on his own life, typically concern the human struggle for survival against extreme natural forces, as dramatized in such novels as *The Call of the Wild* (1903), *The Sea Wolf* (1904), and *White Fang* (1906). By 1906 he was the most widely read writer in the USA and had been translated into 68 languages.

### Long Day's Journey into Night, A

play by US writer Eugene <u>O'Neill</u>, the harrowing tragedy of the theatrical Tyrone family, based on the author's own family. Written in 1941 and published posthumously in 1956, it has been repeatedly performed on stage and was made into a film. A tight-fisted actor, James Tyrone, proves helpless in the face of his wife's

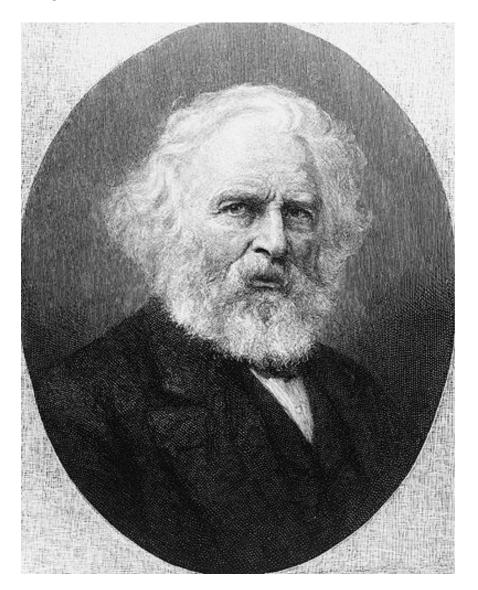
morphine addiction, while the two sons, Jamie and Edmund, a consumptive, are dragged down into depression and drink by their mother's nervous collapse.

### Longfellow, Henry Wadsworth (1807-1882)

US poet. He is remembered for his ballads ('Excelsior', 'The Village Blacksmith', 'The Wreck of the Hesperus') and the mythic narrative epics *Evangeline* (1847), *The Song of <u>Hiawatha</u>* (1855), and *The Courtship of Miles Standish* (1858).

Longfellow was born in Portland, Maine. He graduated from Bowdoin College and taught modern languages there and at Harvard University 1835-54, after which he travelled widely. The most popular US poet of the 19th century, Longfellow was also an adept translator. His other works include six sonnets on Dante, a translation of Dante's *Divine Comedy*, and *Tales of a Wayside Inn* (1863), which includes the popular poem 'Paul Revere's Ride'.

#### Longfellow



The 19th-century writer Henry Longfellow, who was one of the most celebrated US poets of his time. A gifted linguist, he became professor of modern languages and literature at Harvard University before concentrating on his writing. His *Tales of a Wayside Inn*, in the style of Chaucer's *Canterbury Tales*, included the famous *Paul Revere's Ride*.

### Longinus, Dionysius Cassius (AD 213-273)

Greek philosopher and rhetorician. He came from Emesa, Syria, and taught in Athens for many years. As adviser to Zenobia of Palmyra, he instigated her revolt against Rome and was put to death when she was captured. He was formerly thought to be the author of the famous literary critical treatise *On the Sublime*, which influenced the English poets John Dryden and Alexander Pope.

## Longley, Michael (1939-)

Northern Irish poet. Part of the group of Ulster poets who emerged during the late 1960s and early 1970s, of which Seamus <u>Heaney</u> was at the forefront, he was known for his elegant style of formal poetry. In his later poems he wrote about the political and social turmoil in Northern Ireland and the meaning of artistic identity. His collections include *No Continuing City* (1969), *An Exploded View* (1973), *The Echo Gate* (1979), *Gorse Fires* (1991; Whitbread Prize for Poetry), *The Weather in Japan* (2000), and *Snow Water* (2004).

# Longstreet, Augustus Baldwin (1790-1870)

US lawyer, author, educator, and editor. He served in the state legislature (1821) and then as a Georgia Superior Court judge (1822-25) before returning to Augusta to practice law. Ordained as a Methodist minister in 1838, he turned to a career as college president of Emory College in Georgia (1839-48), Centenary College in Louisiana (1849), the University of Mississippi (1849-56), and the University of South Carolina (1857-65). He had already declared his sympathies when he founded and edited the *Augusta State Rights Sentinel* (1834-36); he supported secession and after the Civil War he wrote articles justifying the Southern position.

Longstreet was born in Augusta, Georgia. He graduated from Yale University in 1813 and attended the Litchfield Law School in Connecticut (1813-14), before being admitted to the Georgia bar (1815) and settling in Greensboro, Georgia. He wrote a series of 18 humorous sketches for the *Southern Recorder* that were first published anonymously in 1835 as *Georgia Scenes, Characters and Incidents Etc, in the First Half Century of the Republic,* and were later republished under his name in 1840. Popular in their day, they have little literary standing but are known for foreshadowing the frontier vernacular writings of others such as George Washington Harris and Mark Twain. He also wrote short stories and a novel.

### Longus (lived 2nd or 3rd century AD)

Greek author. He was the author of the first pastoral romance *Daphnis and Chloe*. Its strength of characterization is unusual in Greek romances.

### Lonnbohm, Eino Leopold

real name of Finnish poet Eino Leino.

### Lönnrot, Elias (1802-1884)

Finnish scholar. He travelled widely in Finland and Karelia collecting poems and legends from which he compiled the <u>Kalevala</u> 1835 (second revised and enlarged edition 1849), a loosely connected epic, and the Kanteletar 1840-41, a collection of lyric poems and ballads. As a philologist his main contribution was a notable Finnish-Swedish dictionary, 1866-80. He also edited collections of proverbs, riddles, and spells.

### Look Back in Anger

play by John Osborne, first performed in 1956 at the Royal Court Theatre, and published in 1957. Set in a one-room flat in a Midlands town, its central characters are the working-class university graduate Jimmy Porter and his wife Alison. As a reaction against the English establishment and the social mores of the time, the play was a landmark which launched a new wave in British theatre and established Osborne as the leader of the <u>Angry Young Men</u>. The play was made into a successful film in 1959 starring Richard Burton.

#### Loos, Anita (1893-1981)

US writer. She was the author of the humorous fictitious diary <u>Gentlemen Prefer</u> <u>Blondes</u> (1925). She became a screenwriter in 1912 and worked on more than 60 films, including D W Griffith's *Intolerance* (1916).

# Lope de Vega, (Carpio) Felix

Spanish poet and dramatist; see <u>Vega</u>, Lope de.

### López, Iñigo López de Mendoza

another name of the Spanish poet Santillana.

## López de Ayala, Pedro (1332-1407)

Spanish poet and historian, born at Vitoria. He became chancellor of Castile in 1399 and his chief work, the *Crónicas de los reyes de Castilla*, is a chronicle of his own period. He also published translations of <u>Boccaccio</u>, Boethius, Livy, and others.

### Lorca, Federico García (1898-1936)

Spanish poet and playwright. His plays include *Bodas de sangre/Blood Wedding* (1933), *Yerma* (1934), and *La casa de Bernarda Alba/The House of Bernarda Alba* (1936). His poems include the collection *Romancero gitano/Gypsy Ballad-book* (1928) and the 'Lament' written for the bullfighter Ignacio Sánchez Mejías. Lorca was shot by the Falangists during the Spanish Civil War.

He was born in Fuente Vaqueros, near Granada. Early collections of poetry were *Libros de poemas/Books of Poems* (1921) and *Canciones/Gypsy Songs* (1927). He established himself with the *Romancero gitano*, a collection of mysterious and beautiful ballads of gypsy life and Andalusian folklore. In 1929-30 he visited New York, and his experiences there are reflected in *Poeta en Nuevo York/Poet in New York* (published posthumously in 1940). Returning to Spain, he founded a touring theatrical company and began to write plays.

# Lord, Daniel A(loysius) (1881-1955)

US Catholic author and editor. Ordained a Jesuit priest in 1923, he wrote numerous plays, pageants, and religious books and pamphlets and played a key role in reviving the devotional Sodality movement in the USA and broadening its scope. Lord was born in Chicago, Illinois.

Lorde, Audre (Geraldine) (1934-1992)

US poet and writer. Based in the Virgin Islands, she taught at many institutions, including Hunter College in New York City (from 1980). She was an African-American activist and lesbian feminist who explored the dimensions of modern life in poetry, a novel, and non-fiction, as in *The Cancer Journals* (1980). Lorde was born in New York City. She studied at the University of Mexico, Hunter College, and Columbia University.

### Lord Jim

novel 1900 by Joseph <u>Conrad</u>. Jim is a young merchant seaman who betrays his ideals by succumbing to a moment of panic, deserting his ship's passengers in a crisis. He spends the rest of his life trying to make up for this lapse, becoming an influence for peace and good order in a remote Malayan community. Conrad characteristically combines an adventure story with a compelling enquiry into the nature of moral choice.

## Lord of the Rings, The

trilogy by J R R <u>Tolkien</u>, published 1954-55. The three books, *The Fellowship of the Ring*, *The Two Towers*, and *The Return of the King*, are set in the mythological world of 'Middle Earth', peopled with strange magical creatures, hobbits, and dwarves. It became an international best-seller and achieved cult status in the 1960s. Its success contributed to the growth in popularity of <u>fantasy fiction</u>. The books were adapted for a highly successful series of films (2001, 2002, 2003) directed by New Zealand film director Peter Jackson.

### Loris

pseudonym used by Austrian poet and dramatist Hugo von Hofmannsthal.

# Lost Generation, the

disillusioned US literary generation of the 1920s, members of which went to live in Paris. The phrase is attributed to the writer Gertrude Stein in Ernest Hemingway's early novel of 1920s Paris, '*Fiesta' (The Sun Also Rises)* (1927).

Lothrop, Harriet Mulford (1844-1924)

#### pen-name Margaret Sidney

US writer. Among her many works, is the *Five Little Peppers and How They Grew* (1881) series for children. Lothrop was born Harriet Mulford Stone in New Haven, Connecticut. She attended private school in New Haven, married Daniel Lothrop, founder of the Lothrop publishing company, in 1881, and settled in the former home of Louisa May Alcott and Nathaniel Hawthorne in Concord, Massachusetts.

# Loti, Pierre (1850-1923)

#### pseudonym of (Louis Marie) Julien Viaud

French novelist. He depicted the lives of Breton sailors in such novels as *Pêcheur d'Islande/The Iceland Fisherman* 1886. His extensive experience of the East as a naval officer was transmuted into popular exotic fictions such as *Aziyadé* 1879 and *Madame Chrysanthème* 1887 and sometimes melancholy travel books and reminiscences such as *Un Jeune Officier pauvre/A Poor Young Officer* 1923.

## Loudon, Samuel (c. 1727-1813)

US printer and publisher. He arrived in New York City, probably from Ireland, *c.* 1753 and began to publish *The New York Packet* and the *American Advertiser* in 1776. Although he was a stout patriot, some of his writings were burned by the radical New York Committee of Mechanics in 1776. He printed the first constitution of New York in 1777, *Laws of the State of New York* (1786), and Noah Webster's *American Magazine* (1787-88). He also operated a bookstore and a circulating library.

# Lourie, Richard (1940-)

US translator, literary critic, and novelist. Known for his extensive critical analysis of Russian dissident author Andrei Sinyavsky, he was a prolific translator of Russian and Polish texts, including the works of Soviet writer Vladimir Voinovich and Nobel laureate Czeslaw Milosz. He was founder of Kontakt, a company specializing in Russian-American publishing, and was editor-in-chief of Governor Mario Cuomo's project to translate Abraham Lincoln's writings into Polish. Recipient of the 1971 Joseph Henry Jackson Award for fiction, he often wrote plots involving cold war topics. Lourie was born in Cambridge, Massachusetts.

## Louvet de Couvrai, Jean-Baptiste (1760-1797)

French revolutionary. He was a member of the Convention Nationale, the assembly

1792-95 that decreed the abolition of the monarchy. In his novel *Les Amours du Chevalier de Faublas/The Amours of Chevalier de Faublas* 1789-90, the hero's amorous adventures are recounted with lively force.

### Louw, Nicholaas Petrus van Wyk (1906-1970)

South African writer and scholar. His drama and poetry, written in Afrikaans, won him several literary awards. His works include the verse drama *Germanicus* 1956. He also wrote criticism.

# Lovecraft, H(oward) P(hillips) (1890-1937)

US writer of horror fiction. His stories of hostile, supernatural forces have lent names and material to many other writers in the genre. Much of his work on this theme was collected in *The Outsider and Others* (1939).

# Lovelace, Richard (1618-1657)

English poet. Imprisoned in 1642 for petitioning for the restoration of royal rule, he wrote 'To Althea, from Prison', and during a second term in jail in 1648 arranged the publication of his collection *Lucasta* (1649). His poetry is varied in style and content, some in the 'metaphysical' style of conceits, some more courtly and graceful.

## Lover, Samuel (1797-1868)

Irish novelist and songwriter, born in Dublin. Lover wrote a number of songs, 'Molly Bawn' and 'The Low-Backed Car' being particularly popular. One of the founders of the *Dublin University Magazine* in 1833, he also wrote several novels, the best known of which are *Rory O'More* (1837), originally a ballad, and *Handy Andy* (1842). His short Irish sketches were combined with his songs into one-man shows called 'Irish Evenings' and 'Paddy's Portfolio'.

### Lowell, Amy Lawrence (1874-1925)

US poet. She began her career by publishing the conventional *A Dome of Many-Colored Glass* (1912) but eventually succeeded Ezra Pound as leader of the Imagists (see Imagism). Her works, in free verse, include *Sword Blades and Poppy Seed* (1916).

# Lowell, J(ames) R(ussell) (1819-1891)

US poet. His works range from the didactic *The Vision of Sir Launfal* 1848 to such satirical poems as *The Biglow Papers* 1848. As a critic, he developed a deep awareness of the US literary tradition. He was also a diplomat and served as minister to Spain 1877-80 and England 1880-85.

His early poetry, complex and tightly structured, focused on spiritual crises. His later poetry (from the 1850s) was looser and drew freely on his personal relationships, his involvement in left-wing politics, and his periods of mental instability.

Born in Cambridge, Massachusetts, Lowell graduated 1840 from Harvard Law School. He taught at Harvard and was editor 1857-61 of *The Atlantic Monthly* and coeditor 1863-72 of *The North American Review*. Among his critical works are essays on great masters, including Shakespeare, Dante, and Coleridge. Lowell was active in the abolitionist movement, publishing more than 50 antislavery articles between 1845 and 1850. Other works include *Leaves from My Italian Journal* 1854.

# Lowell, Robert Traill Spence, Jr (1917-1977)

US poet. His brutal yet tender verse stressed the importance of individualism, especially during times of war. His works include *Lord Weary's Castle* (1946; Pulitzer Prize), *Life Studies* (1959), and *For the Union Dead* (1964). Much of his poetry is confessional.

Born in Boston, Massachusetts, during World War II Lowell was imprisoned for five months for conscientious objection. Several of his poems, notably 'Memories of West Street and Lepke' (1956), reflect on this experience. 'Skunk Hour' (1957), included in the acclaimed volume *Life Studies* (1959), is another example of his autobiographical poetry. In the 1960s he was again a war protester and civil-rights activist. Other works include *Land of Unlikeness* (1944), *The Mills of the Kaanaughs* (1951), *The Old Glory* (1965), *Near the Ocean* (1967), *Notebook* (1969), *The Dolphin* (1973, Pulitzer Prize), and *Day by Day* (1977).

# Lowe-Porter, H(elen) T(racy) (1876-1963)

US translator. She became internationally recognized for translating into English all of Thomas Mann's works from *Buddenbrooks* (1924) onward, usually in close collaboration with Mann himself. Lowe-Porter was born Helen Tracy Porter in Towanda, Pennsylvania. In 1911 she married the palaeographer E A Lowe, and they lived in Oxford, England, and after 1937 in Princeton, New Jersey.

# Lowry, (Clarence) Malcolm (Boden) (1909-1957)

English novelist. Mexico is the setting for his inventive masterpiece *Under the Volcano* 1947, on the last day in the life of an alcoholic British consul.

## Lowth, Robert (1710-1787)

English theologian and scholar. He published his *Life of William Wykeham* 1758 and *A Short Introduction to English Grammar* 1762. Lowth was one of the first to treat the Bible poetry as literature, and in 1778 wrote a new translation of Isaiah.

Lucan (AD 39-65)

#### born Marcus Annaeus Lucanus

Latin poet. Born in Córdoba, Spain, he was a nephew of the writer Seneca and favourite of Nero until the emperor became jealous of his verse. Lucan then joined a republican conspiracy and committed suicide on its failure. His epic poem *Pharsalia*, in ten books (the last incomplete), deals with the civil wars of Caesar and Pompey 49-48 BC, and was influential in the Middle Ages and Renaissance.

## Lucas, Craig (1951-)

US writer. He has written for stage and screen. His work often examines issues of love and acceptance and mixes fantasy and realism. *Longtime Companion* (1990) was one of the first major films to focus on the AIDS crisis and its affect on the US gay community. Other films include *Prelude to a Kiss* (1992), *Reckless* (1995), and *The Secret Lives of Dentists* (2002).

His plays include *Blue Window* (1984), the musical *Three Postcards* (1987), *Prelude to a Kiss* (1990; the basis for his 1992 film), *God's Heart* (1996), and *The Dying Gaul* (1998).

## Lucas, Edward Verrall (1868-1938)

English writer and editor. In 1902 he joined the staff of *Punch* and achieved success with skits written in collaboration with C L Graves. He also wrote many travel books, and was chairman of the publishing house Methuen 1924-38. His other works include a biography of Charles Lamb 1905, *Highways and Byways in Sussex* 1904, *A Wanderer in Holland* 1905, and *A Wanderer in Florence* 1912.

# Luce, (Ann) Clare Boothe (1903-1987)

US journalist, playwright, and politician. She was managing editor of *Vanity Fair* magazine 1933-34, and wrote several successful plays, including *The Women* (1936) and *Margin for Error* (1940), both of which were made into films. She served as a Republican member of Congress 1943-47 and as ambassador to Italy 1953-57.

## Lucian (c. 125-c. 190)

Greek writer. In his satirical dialogues, he pours scorn on religions and mocks human pretensions. His 65 genuine works also include rhetorical declamations, literary criticism, biography, and romance. Among the most interesting of his works are *Dialogues of the Gods, Dialogues of the Dead, Zeus Confounded,* and *Zeus Tragedian*. His *True History* inspired <u>Rabelais's Voyage of Pantagruel</u>, Swift's *Gulliver's Travels*, and Cyrano de Bergerac's *Journey to the Moon*.

## Lucilius, Gaius (c. 180-c. 102 вс)

Roman satirical poet, associated with the literary circle of Scipio Aemilianus (184-129 BC). He first established the literary form of <u>satire</u>, later perfected by Horace and Juvenal. He wrote 30 books of miscellaneous verse (saturae), of which only 1,300 lines survive, and established the hexameter as the metre for satire. His targets included corrupt society, grammatical and literary style, and philosophy.

## Lucky Jim

first novel 1954 by Kingsley <u>Amis</u>. The anti-hero Jim Dixon, a young history lecturer in a provincial university, is comically at odds with what he sees as the falsity of the life around him. Jim escapes from academia to a job offered by the rich uncle of his desirable conquest, the amenable Christine. Although much of the humour now seems puerile, the linguistic agility and vigour were evidence of an original new talent.

## Ludlum, Robert (1927-2001)

pen-names Jonathan Ryder and Michael Shepherd

US writer. With the publication of his first espionage novel, The Scarlatti

*Inheritance* (1971), he became a successful writer of suspense fiction. Other novels include *The Rhinemann Exchange* (1974), *The Bourne Identity* (1980, filmed 2002), *The Icarus Agenda* (1988), and *The Janson Directive* (2002).

Ludlum was born in New York City. He served in the Marine Corps (1944-46) and studied at Wesleyan College, graduating with a BA in 1951. He then became a Broadway and television actor (1952-60), and a theatre producer in New Jersey (1957-70) and New York City (1960-69).

### Ludwig, Otto (1813-1865)

German novelist and playwright. He achieved success with a drama, *Der Erbförster* 1850, followed by *Die Makkabäer* 1852. His extraordinary power of psychological analysis is seen in his pictures of Thuringian life, *Die Heiterkeit und ihr Widerspiel* 1854 and *Zwischen Himmel und Erde* 1856. His *Shakespearestudien*, published posthumously 1891, shows a fine discriminating taste. His *Gesammelte Schriften* were published 1891-92 and 1900.

### Luhan, Mabel Dodge (1879-1962)

US hostess, promoter of art and social causes, and author. She led literary and artistic salons in Florence, Italy, and New York, supporting the advent of modernist thought and culture, from the famous Armory Show of 1913 to Gertrude Stein's prose and Sigmund Freud's psychology. She then spent many years in New Mexico, where she became drawn to the culture of the Pueblo people. She published several books, including *Lorenzo in Taos* (1932) and *Winter in Taos* (1935). Luhan was born Mabel Ganson into a moderately wealthy family in Buffalo, New York. She studied briefly in New York City and near Washington, DC, before entering Buffalo society in 1897.

### Lu Hsün

alternative transliteration of Chinese writer Lu Xun.

## Luis de León, Fray (c. 1527-1591)

Spanish poet, writer, and translator. An Augustinian friar, he spent most of his life as a teacher at Salamanca University. In his lifetime he was recognized as one of the greatest Spanish prose writers of his age, his most important work being *De los nombres de Cristo* (1583), a meditation on the names applied to Christ. The same originality can be seen in his few poems (not published until 1631).

# Lull, Ramón

Spanish name of Raymond Lully, theologian, philosopher, and writer.

# Luna, Álvaro de (c. 1390-1453)

Spanish statesman and poet. The tutor of King John II of Castile, he became very powerful, and as constable from 1423 was the virtual ruler of Castile. The hostility of the king's second wife, Isabella of Portugal, brought about his downfall, and he was executed at Valladolid after a mock trial for witchcraft. His poems appeared in *Cancionero de Baena* in 1445.

# Luo Guan Zhong (or Luo Kuan-chung) (lived 14th century)

Chinese novelist who reworked popular tales into *The Romance of the Three Kingdoms* and *The Water Margin*.

## Luo Kuan-chung

alternative transliteration of Chinese writer Luo Guan Zhong.

# Lurie, Alison (1926-)

US novelist and critic. Her subtly written and satirical novels include *Imaginary Friends* (1967); *The War Between the Tates* (1974); *Foreign Affairs* (1984; Pulitzer Prize); *The Truth About Lorin Jones* (1988); *Don't Tell the Grown-ups* (1990), a collection of essays on children's literature and folklore; *Women and Ghosts* (1994), a collection of ghost stories; and *The Last Resort* (1998).

A number of her novels have been adapted for television, including *The War Between the Tates* (1974), which later became a television film, *Imaginary Friends* (1967), which was made into a television series in 1987, and *Foreign Affairs*, which was made into a film for television in 1993.

## Lusiad, The

The national poem of Portugal, published in 1572 by Luís Vaz de Camões. One of the

most important and successful epics of the Renaissance, the poem celebrates the exploits of the Portuguese (the Lusitanians) in discovering the sea route to India. Although in historical time the action spans the two years of Vasco da Gama's voyage of 1497-99, it includes a visionary expanse of Portuguese history both backward and forward to Camões's day.

The poem consists of ten cantos (1102 stanzas) of *ottava rima* (stanzas of eight lines rhyming abababcc). Though it attempts to emulate the grandeur of classical epics such as Virgil's <u>Aeneid</u> it is firmly based on historical events and draws on Camões's 17 years' experience in India and the Far East.

After an introduction, the invocation and a dedication to King Sebastian, the action begins at the point when the Portuguese are sailing off the coast of East Africa in the Indian Ocean. The mythological action (with Venus protecting the enterprise and Bacchus opposing it) is skilfully combined with the historical narrative, which incorporates outstanding descriptive passages and a variety of historical and fictitious episodes before its triumphant conclusion.

### Luska, Sidney

US novelist; see Henry Harland.

## Lu Xun, pen-name of Chon Shu-jêu (1881-1936)

Chinese short-story writer. His three volumes of satirically realistic stories, *Call to Arms, Wandering,* and *Old Tales Retold,* reveal the influence of the Russian writer Nicolai Gogol. He was also an important polemical essayist and literary critic.

## Luzan Claramunt de Suelves y Gurrea, Ignacio de (1702-1754)

Spanish writer. His literary reputation is based on his treatise *Poética* 1737, which influenced Spanish poetry in a classical direction.

### Luzi, Mario (1914-2005)

Italian poet. He is considered one of the most important of the Hermetic (Symbolist) poets, known for their unorthodox structure and nonlinear form. His most well known collection is *Primizie del deserto/Desert's Early Fruits* (1952).

Other works include *La Barca* (1935), *Avvento Notturno* (1940), *Un Brindisi* (1946), *Quaderno Gotico* (1947), *Onore del vero* (1957), *Nel Magma* (1963), and *Dal fondo* 

delle campagne (1965).

# Lycophron (lived 4th century BC)

Greek poet and scholar, born at Chalcis in Euboea. He was commissioned by Ptolemy Philadelphus to arrange the works of the comic poets in the museum of the Library of Alexandria, and while thus engaged he wrote a substantial work on comedy. This has been lost, as have all his tragedies except the 'Cassandra', a learned but poetically futile piece.

# Lydgate, John (c. 1370-1449)

English poet. He was a Benedictine monk and later prior. His numerous works, including poems, moral tales, legends of the saints, and histories, were often translations or adaptations. His chief works are *Troy Book*, written during 1412-21 at the request of Henry V when Prince of Wales, *The Siege of Thebes* (1420-22), and *The Fall of Princes* (1431-38). He was a friend and admirer of the poet Geoffrey Chaucer.

# Lyly, John (c. 1553-1606)

English dramatist and author. His romance *Euphues, or the Anatomy of Wit* (1578), with its elaborate stylistic devices, gave rise to the word euphuism for a mannered rhetorical style. It was followed by a second part, *Euphues and his England* (1580).

The story line of *Euphues* is little more than a basis for the characters to engage in debate on the manners and values of the age. The prose style is chiefly characterized by a continuous straining after antithesis and <u>epigram</u>.

## Lynd, Robert (1879-1949)

Northern Irish essayist and critic. His intimate, witty essays covered a wide range of topics, and were collected in several volumes, including *The Art of Letters* 1920, *The Blue Lion* 1923, and *In Defence of Pink* 1939.

Lynd was born in Belfast and studied there at Queen's University, before moving to London in 1901. From 1912 onwards, he was literary editor of the *Daily News* (later the *News Chronicle*). He was also a long-standing contributor to the *New Statesman* (1913-45), writing under the pseudonym 'Y Y'.

# Lyndsay, David

alternative spelling of David Lindsay, Scottish poet.

# Lysias (с. 459-с. 380 вс)

Greek orator, born in Syracuse, Sicily. He settled in Athens 412 BC, escaping from the city into exile under the Thirty Tyrants 404 BC, and returning when democracy was restored a year later to impeach one of the tyrants in his speech *Against Eratosthenes*. His speeches were expressed in a plain, clear style and provide evidence of the political and social upheaval following the coup. Of the 800 speeches known in antiquity, 23 survive intact.

## Lysistrata

Greek comedy by <u>Aristophanes</u>, produced 411 <sub>BC</sub>. The women of Athens and Greece, tired of war, refuse to make love to their husbands and occupy the Acropolis to force a peace between the Athenians and the Spartans.

# Lytton, (Edward) Robert Bulwer (1831-1891)

#### 1st Earl of Lytton

British colonial administrator. As viceroy of India 1876-80, he pursued a controversial 'Forward' frontier policy. Only son of the novelist Bulwer Lytton, he was himself a poet under the pseudonym **Owen Meredith**, writing *King Poppy* 1892 and other poems.

# Lytton, Edward George Earle Lytton Bulwer (1803-1873)

#### **1st Baron Lytton**

English writer. His novels successfully followed every turn of the public taste of his day and include the Byronic *Pelham* (1828), *The Last Days of Pompeii* (1834), and *Zanoni* 1842. His plays include *Richelieu* (1838). He had a keen sense of character, fair knowledge of historical lore, and a wide knowledge of life and society. His works were voraciously read by the Victorians. He was created a baronet in 1838; baron in 1866.

### Mab, Queen

Queen of the fairies and <u>Oberon's</u> wife, according to the *Nymphidia* of Michael Drayton and the *Hesperides* of Robert Herrick. Shakespeare, in *A Midsummer Night's Dream*, gives the honour to Titania.

# Macaulay, (Emilie) Rose (1881-1958)

English novelist. The serious vein of her early novels changed to light satire in *Potterism* (1920) and *Keeping up Appearances* (1928). Her later books include *The World My Wilderness* (1950) and *The Towers of Trebizond* (1956; Tait Black Memorial Prize). Her work reflects the contemporary scene with wit and a shrewd understanding. She was made a DBE in 1958.

# Macaulay, Thomas Babington (1800-1859)

### **1st Baron Macaulay**

British historian, essayist, poet, and politician, secretary of war 1839-41. His *History of England* in five volumes (1849-61) celebrates the Glorious Revolution of 1688 as the crowning achievement of the Whig party. He was made a baron in 1857.

His works include an essay on Milton (1825) published in the *Edinburgh Review*; a volume of verse, *Lays of Ancient Rome* (1842); and the *History of England* covering the years up to 1702.

## McAuley, James Phillip (1917-1976)

Australian poet and critic. He published two volumes of verse, *Under Aldebaran* 1946 and *A Vision of Ceremony* 1956, the latter influenced by his conversion to Catholicism four years previously. Together with Harold Stewart, he was responsible for a highly publicized literary hoax in the form of poems by the fictitions Ern Malley published in the magazine *Angry Penguins* in 1944.

McAuley's work exhibits technical sophistication and academic depth. The pioneer, central to white Australian mythmaking, is the hero of the epic *Captain Quiros* 1964. His *Collected Poems 1936-1970* appeared in 1971. McAuley's critical works, such as *A Primer of English Versification* 1966, reinforced his position as the foremost advocate of conservatism in Australian culture. McAuley was also the founding editor of the literary periodical *Quadrant* in 1955.

### McBain, Ed

US writer; see Evan Hunter.

### Macbeth

tragedy by William <u>Shakespeare</u>, first performed in 1605-06. Acting on a prophecy by three witches that he will be king of Scotland, Macbeth, egged on by Lady Macbeth, murders King Duncan and becomes king but is eventually killed by Macduff. The play was based on the 16th-century historian Holinshed's *Chronicles*.

### Macbeth, George Mann (1932-1992)

Scottish poet and novelist. His early poetry, such as *A Form of Words* (1954), often focused on violent or macabre events. *The Colour of Blood* (1967) and *Collected Poems 1958-1970* (1971) show mastery of both experimental and traditional styles and a playful wit. Committed to performance poetry, he produced poetry programmes for BBC radio 1955-76. There are strong erotic elements in his eight novels, which include *The Seven Witches* (1978) and *Dizzy's Woman* (1986).

## McCabe, Patrick (1955-)

Irish writer. His best-selling novel *Butcher Boy* (1992) was shortlisted for the Booker Prize, won the *Irish Times*/Aer Lingus Award for Literature (Fiction), and was made into a successful film by Neil Jordan. McCabe has an arresting style that offers vivid characters.

When he writes using first-person narration, as in *Butcher Boy*, his uncanny ability to create unique voices is startlingly original. Other works include *Carn* (1989), *The Dead School* (1995), *Mondo Desperado* (1999), and *Call Me the Breeze* (2003).

## MacCaig, Norman (1910-1996)

Scottish poet. He began as a poet in revolt against the influence of W H <u>Auden</u> in *Far Cry* (1943); in *The Inward Eye* (1946) there was a change to a poetic, metaphysic standpoint. He compensated for what seemed to be a lack of deep feeling with wit, wordplay, and lavish imagery. His many works included *Riding Lights* (1957), *Measures* (1965), *A Man in My Position* (1969), *The White Bird* (1973), *The Equal Skies* (1980), and *Voice-Over* (1988).

## McCarthy, (Charles) Cormac (1933-)

US novelist. His work is full of black humour and explosive revelation, especially the sanguinary *Blood Meridian* (1985). Despite his difficult, unpunctuated prose, he became a cult figure in some circles. *All the Pretty Horses* (1992; filmed 2000), the first volume in his USA-Mexico Border trilogy, became a bestseller.

The Crossing (1994) and Cities of the Plain (1998) are the second and third volumes of the Border trilogy.

# MacCarthy, Denis Florence (1817-1882)

Irish poet and academic, born in Dublin and educated at Maynooth and King's Inns. MacCarthy was the first professor of English at the Catholic University, Dublin. Among his works were *Ballads, Poems and Lyrics* (1850), *The Bellfounder* (1857), *Under-Glimpses* (1857), and *Poems* (1882). His *Shelley's Early Life* (1872) chronicled an Irish visit in 1812. He also translated the plays of the Spanish dramatist <u>Calderón</u> <u>de la Barca</u>, for which he received a medal from the Royal Spanish Academy.

MacCarthy's early verse appeared in the *Dublin Satirist*, and by 1843 he was a regular contributor to the cultural and political journal *The Nation*.

# MacCarthy, Desmond (1877-1952)

English writer and literary critic. He became literary editor of the *New Statesman* in 1920 and later its drama critic, and had a wide influence on intellectual and literary life. In 1928 he took over the editorship of *Life and Letters* and in later years contributed a weekly literary article to the *Sunday Times*.

# McCarthy, Mary Therese (1912-1989)

US novelist and critic. Much of her work looks probingly at US society, for example, the satirical novel *The Groves of Academe* (1952), which describes the anticommunist witch-hunts of the time, and *The Group* (1963; filmed 1966), which follows the post-college careers of eight women.

MacColla, Fionn (1906-1975)

pseudonym of Thomas Douglas MacDonald

Scottish writer. His novels and philosophical studies include *The Albannach* 1932, *And the Cock Crew* 1945, *Scottish Noel* 1958, *Ane Tryall of Heretiks* 1962, *At the Sign of the Clenched Fist* 1967, and *Too Long in this Condition* 1975.

### McCourt, Frank (Francis) (1933-)

Irish-American writer. His memoir *Angela's Ashes* (1996; filmed in 1999) became the literary sensation of the 1990s, winning the National Book Critics Circle Award (US), the *Los Angeles Times* Book Award, and the 1997 Pulitzer Prize for autobiography. The poignancy, humour, and honesty with which he wrote of his impoverished youth in Ireland before emigrating to the USA captivated readers around the world.

McCourt was born in Brooklyn, New York, and grew up in Limerick, Ireland. He has also published a second memoir, '*Tis* (1999), chronicling his life in the USA.

## McCullers, (Lula) Carson (1917-1967)

#### born Lula Carson Smith

US novelist. Most of her writing, including the novels *The Heart is a Lonely Hunter* (1940) and *Reflections in a Golden Eye* (1941), is set in her native South. Her work, like that of Flannery <u>O'Connor</u>, has been characterized as 'Southern Gothic' for its images of the grotesque, using physical abnormalities to project the spiritual and psychological distortions of Southern experience.

Her other works include her novel, *The Member of the Wedding* 1946, which was also a stage success, and the novella *The Ballad of the Sad Café* 1951.

### McCullough, David Gaub (1933-)

US writer and television presenter specializing in American history. His books *Truman* (1992) and *John Adams* (2001) both won Pulitzer Prizes for Biography. He was host of the television series *Smithsonian World* (1984-88) and *American Experience* (1988-), and narrated the television documentary series *The Civil War* (1990).

MacDiarmid, Hugh (1892-1978)

pen-name of Christopher Murray Grieve

Scottish poet. A nationalist and Marxist, he was one of the founders in 1928 of the National Party of Scotland. His works include 'A Drunk Man Looks at the Thistle' (1926) and the collections *First Hymn to Lenin* (1931) and *Second Hymn to Lenin* (1935), in which poetry is made relevant to politics. He developed a form of modern poetic Scots, based on an amalgam of Middle and Modern Scots, and was the leader of the Scottish literary renaissance of the 1920s and 1930s. *Complete Poems 1920-1976* was published in 1978 and *Selected Poems* in 1992.

### McDonagh, Martin (1971-)

English-born writer and playwright, raised in London of Irish parentage. McDonagh's treatment of Irish life in the rural west has brought him critical acclaim. His trilogies *The Leenane Trilogy* (1995-97) and *The Aran Trilogy* (1997-98) revise stereotypes of rural Ireland. Often characterized as dramatic fairy tales, McDonagh's portrayals of Irish life are at once familiar and coyly ironic. *The Beauty Queen of Leenane* (1995), for example, begins with an entirely recognizable Irish kitchen with turf fire and rocking chair, but also presents contemporary criticisms of religion and generational conflict.

He has also written a history of Irish theatre, based on the works of Seán O'Casey and J M Synge.

### MacDonagh, Thomas (1878-1916)

Irish poet and revolutionary. MacDonagh was born in Cloughjordan, County Tipperary. Volumes of his verse, which has been compared to that of Richard <u>Crashaw</u>, are *Through the Ivory Gate* (1902), *Songs of Myself* (1910), *Lyrical Poems* (1913), and *Poetical Works* (1916). He wrote a book on Thomas <u>Campion</u> as a stylist of verse and his *Literature in Ireland* (1916) attempted to define an 'Irish mode', a distinctively Irish note, in English.

MacDonagh worked as a teacher and became a lecturer of English at the University College, Dublin in 1911. He joined the Irish Volunteers in 1913, and was appointed director of training. A signatory of the Proclamation of the Irish Republican in the Easter Rising of 1916, he was court-martialled and executed for his part in the rebellion.

## Macdonald, George (1824-1905)

Scottish novelist and children's writer. *David Elginbrod* (1863) and *Robert Falconer* (1868) are characteristic novels but his children's stories, including *At the Back of the North Wind* (1871) and *The Princess and the Goblin* (1872), are now better known. He was much influenced by the German Romantics, and mystical imagination pervades all his books, most notably *Lilith* (1895). His work inspired later writers

including G K Chesterton, C S Lewis, and J R R Tolkien.

## Macdonald, Ross (1915-1983)

pen-names John Macdonald and John Ross Macdonald; born Kenneth Millar

US writer. He is credited with turning the detective novel genre into a literary form, with a series of books featuring the hardboiled detective Lew Archer. Millar won many awards for such work as *The Wycherly Woman* (1961), *The Zebra-Striped Hearse* (1962), and *The Chill* (1964).

He was born in Los Gatos, California. He studied at the University of Western Ontario, the University of Toronto, and the University of Michigan, gaining his PhD in 1951. He taught history and English at the Kitchener Collegiate Institute in Ontario, Canada (1939-41), and at the University of Michigan (1942-44; 1948-49). From 1945 he lived in Santa Barbara, California.

### MacDonald, Thomas Douglas

real name of Scottish writer Fionn MacColla.

## Macdonell, Archibald Gordon (1895-1941)

Scottish novelist. He published a humorous satire on English country life, *England*, *Their England* 1933; other satirical novels are *Lords and Masters* 1936 and *The Autobiography of a Cad* 1939. He also wrote detective stories under the name Neil Gordon, including *The New Gun Runners* 1928 and *The Shakespeare Murders* 1933.

## Macedonski, Alexandru (1854-1920)

Romanian poet. His review *Literatorul*, founded in 1880, adopted the ideas of <u>Symbolism</u> and played an important part in disseminating them in Romania. Macedonski's poetry shows him both as a Romantic and a Symbolist, in the collections *Poezii/Poems* 1882, *Excelsior* 1895, *Flori sacre/Sacred Flowers* 1912.

## McEwan, Ian (Russell) (1948-)

English novelist and short-story writer. His works often have sinister or macabre

undertones and contain elements of violence and sexuality, as in the short-story collections *First Love*, *Last Rites* (1975) and *In Between the Sheets* (1978). His novel *Amsterdam* was awarded the 1998 Booker Prize for Fiction.

His other novels include *The Comfort of Strangers* (1981), *The Child in Time* (1987), *Black Dogs* (1992; shortlisted for the Booker Prize), *Enduring Love* (1997), and *Atonement* (2001; shortlisted for the Booker Prize and the Whitbread Award). *The Daydreamer* (1994) is a novel for children. He has also published *Short Stories* (1995).

## McGahern, John (1934-)

Irish novelist. He won early acclaim for *The Barracks* (1963), a study of the mind of a dying woman. His books explore Irish settings and the effects of the political situation of the country on its people, as in *Amongst Women* (1991), about an ageing member of the IRA. His other works include *The Dark* (1965), *Nightlines* (1970), *The Leavetaking* (1974), *High Ground* (1985), and *By the Lake* (2003).

Born in Dublin, McGahern grew up in Cootehill, County Cavan, and later returned to Dublin to attend University College. Originally a primary school teacher, McGahern travelled in the UK, Spain, and the USA, eventually settling in County Leitrim. He lectured frequently in the USA, becoming professor of literature at Colgate University, New York, where he taught in 1969, 1972, 1978, and 1980.

# MacGill, Patrick (1890-1963)

#### called 'the Navvy Poet'

Irish novelist and poet. Born into a poor farming family in the Glenties, County County Donegal, MacGill was sold into servitude by his parents, but escaped to Scotland, where he found employment as a farm labourer. His first novels, *Children of the Dead End* (1914) and *The Rat-Pit* (1915), were uncompromising depictions of the brutal existence of Irish migrant workers. He served in World War I, and wrote powerful accounts of trench warfare.

His early poetry attracted the attention of patrons, and he worked at the London *Daily Express*, before being taken on as secretary by Canon John Dalton of Windsor. MacGill's army service during World War I, for which he volunteered, resulted in the novels *The Amateur Army* (1915), *The Red Horizon* (1916), and *The Great Push* (1916). He returned home after being wounded, and later emigrated to the USA in 1930.

Canadian-born US writer of light verse. She was a contributor to the *New Yorker* magazine and published many collections of social satire. Her works include *One More Manhattan* (1937) and *The Love Letters of Phyllis McGinley* (1954).

## McGough, Roger (1937-)

English poet, dramatist, songwriter, and performer. Along with Adrian <u>Henri</u> and Brian Patten he was one of the group known as the 'Liverpool Poets'. He came to prominence in the late 1960s as a singer in the pop group Scaffold, and he wrote many of their songs (including their 1968 hit 'Lily the Pink'). His poems were strongly influenced by the pop culture of the 1960s. His collections include *Gig* (1973) and *Waving at Trains* (1982). He has also written several plays, often with music, and a range of children's books.

McGough was born in Liverpool. He studied at Hull University, where he met the English poet Philip Larkin, and during the 1960s McGough worked as a teacher. By the end of the 1960s he had become a colourful member of the Liverpool pop culture that flourished at this time (the Mersey beat). The development of his verse was broadly influenced by both pop music and the poets of the US <u>Beat Generation</u>.

# MacGreevy, Thomas (1893-1967)

Irish poet and art critic. His works include *Poems* (1934) and numerous articles and studies of influential writers and artists such as T S Eliot and Jack Butler Yeats. Born in Tarbert, County Kerry, MacGreevy studied at Trinity College, Dublin, following service in World War I. He was a friend of the writers James Joyce and Samuel Beckett, whom he met while lecturing at the École Normale in Paris 1927-29. After working as a critic in London, he returned to Dublin in 1941, and was appointed director of the National Gallery in 1950.

# McGuane, Thomas (Francis III) (1939-)

US writer. He began his writing career as a flamboyant satirist, as seen in *The Bushwhacked Piano* (1971). After a serious car accident in 1972, he worked as a scriptwriter in Hollywood and directed the screen adaptation of his novel, *Ninety-two in the Shade* (1973). He wrote about his newly hedonistic lifestyle in *Panama* (1977), and married for the third time in the same year. He settled down on a ranch in McLeod, Montana, and continued to write. McGuane was born in Wyandotte, Michigan. He studied at the University of Michigan, Olivet College, Michigan State University, Yale University, and Stanford University.

## Mácha, Karel Hynek (1810-1836)

Czech romantic poet. He is chiefly remembered for his patriotic and influential lyrical epic *Máj/May* 1836.

### Machado, Antonio (1875-1939)

Spanish poet and dramatist. He was inspired by the Castilian countryside in his lyric verse, collected in *Soledades/Solitudes* (1902) - enlarged as *Soledades, galerías y otros poemas/Solitudes, Galleries and Other Poems* (1907) - and *Campos de Castilla/Countryside of Castile* (1912), which contains some of his finest work. His verse is nostalgic and full of anguish at the sense of time passing, yet also expresses hope for the future.

# Machado, Manuel (1874-1947)

Spanish writer. He arranged plays by Lope de <u>Vega</u>, produced poetic dramas in collaboration with his brother Antonio <u>Machado</u>, including *La Lola se va a los puertos/Lola Heads for the Ports* 1930, and wrote poetry depicting Andalusian life and reminiscing about Spain's past. His most notable collections of verse are *Alma* 1900, *Musas y los cantares* 1907, *Canto hondo* 1912, and *Sevilla y otros poemas* 1921.

## Machado de Assis, Joaquim Maria (1839-1908)

Brazilian writer and poet. He is generally regarded as the greatest Brazilian novelist. His sceptical, ironic wit is well displayed in his 30 volumes of novels and short stories, including *Epitaph for a Small Winner* (1880) and *Dom Casmurro* (1900).

## Machar, Josef Svatopluk (1864-1942)

Czech poet and essayist. With Masaryk, he was the instigator of the Czech realist movement. *Here Roses Should Grow* and *Magdalene*, both published in 1894, are verse stories attacking the selfishness and complacency of modern society, especially in its attitude to women.

## Machaut, Guillaume de (1300-1377)

French poet and composer. Born in Champagne, he was in the service of John of

Bohemia for 30 years and, later, of King John the Good of France. He gave the ballade and rondo forms a new individuality and ensured their lasting popularity. His *Messe de Nostre Dame* about 1360, written for Reims Cathedral, is an early masterpiece of *ars nova*, 'new (musical) art', exploiting unusual rhythmic complexities.

### Machen, Arthur (1863-1947)

#### pen-name of Arthur Llewellyn Jones

Welsh writer. His stories of horror and the occult include *The Great God Pan* 1894 and *The Terror* 1917. Partly autobiographical, *The Hill of Dreams* 1907 is an early example of the <u>stream of consciousness</u> novel. Other writings, characterized by mystic symbolism and the supernatural, include the collections of stories *The House of Souls* 1906 and *The Angel of Mons* 1915. Machen was regarded as an exponent of the <u>Decadents</u> school of writing.

## Machiavelli, Niccolò (1469-1527)

Italian politician and author. His name is synonymous with cunning and cynical statecraft. In his chief political writings, *II principe/The Prince* (1513) and *Discorsi/Discourses* (1531), he discussed ways in which rulers can advance the interests of their states (and themselves) through an often amoral and opportunistic manipulation of other people.

Machiavelli was born in Florence and was second chancellor to the republic (1498-1512). On the accession to power of the Medici family in 1512, he was arrested and imprisoned on a charge of conspiracy, but in 1513 was released to exile in the country. *The Prince*, based on his observations of Cesare Borgia, is a guide for the future prince of a unified Italian state (which did not occur until the Risorgimento in the 19th century). In *L'Arte della guerra/The Art of War* (1520), Machiavelli outlined the provision of an army for the prince, and in *Historie fiorentine/History of Florence* he analysed the historical development of Florence until 1492. Among his later works are the comedies *Clizia* (1515) and *La Mandragola/The Mandrake* (1524).

### MacInnes, Colin (1914-1976)

English novelist. His work is characterized by sharp depictions of London youth and subcultures of the 1950s, as in *City of Spades* 1957, about West Indians and Africans in Britain, and *Absolute Beginners* 1959, about teenagers. He was the son of the novelist Angela Thirkell (1890-1961).

# Mackail, Denis George (1892-1971)

English novelist and biographer. Among his best-known books are *Bill the Bachelor* 1922, *Another Part of the Wood* 1929, *Life with Topsy* 1942, *Tales for a Godchild* 1944, and *It Makes the World Go Round* 1950. He also wrote *The Story of J. M. B.* 1941, the standard life of J M Barrie, who was a close friend.

## Mackail, John William (1859-1945)

Scottish classical scholar. His works include a prose translation of the *Eclogues and Georgics, Select Epigrams from the Greek Anthology* 1890, and *Latin Literature* 1895. His lectures at Oxford were published in the volumes *The Springs of Helicon* 1909, *Lectures on Greek Poetry* 1910, and *Lectures on Poetry* 1911. *The Approach to Shakespeare* 1930 is a volume of criticism.

## McKay, Claude (1889-1948)

Jamaican-born US poet and novelist. He was a major figure in the <u>Harlem</u> <u>Renaissance</u> of the 1920s. His poetry, especially the collection *Harlem Shadows* (1922), set the tone for black writers for the whole decade, and his novel *Home to Harlem* (1928) was a best-seller.

# MacKaye, Percy (Wallace) (1875-1956)

US playwright and poet. He had a strong interest in pageants and in amateur community theatre. His pageant *The Canterbury Pilgrims* (1903) was made into an opera by Reginald De Koven in 1917. Several works produced in the 1920s drew on tales and folklore collected in Kentucky by him and his wife. In 1949 he produced *The Mystery of Hamlet: King of Denmark*, a series of four verse plays that develop the characters and plot to a point that precedes the action of Shakespeare's *Hamlet*.

MacKaye was born in New York City. He graduated from Harvard University in 1897, taught in New York City (1900-04), then settled in Cornish, New Hampshire. His plays, many of them using historical material, include *Jeanne D'Arc* (1906), *Sappho and Phaon* (1907), and *The Scarecrow* (1908), based on Nathaniel Hawthorne's story 'Feathertop'.

# Macken, Walter (1915-1967)

Irish actor, director, playwright, and historical novelist. Macken was born in Galway

and at 17 joined An Taibhdhearc, the Gaelic League Theatre, which he continued to support as an actor, director, and playwright long after he moved on to the Abbey Theatre, Dublin, where his own play *Mungo's Mansion* had a long run in 1946. *I Am Alone* (1949), a novel about an Irishman's experiences in London, England, was banned in Ireland, but a series of historical novels were long-standing successes with the Irish public. These include *Seek the Fair Land* (1959), on the Cromwellian War in Ireland, *The Silent People* (1962) on the Irish famine, and *The Scorching Wind* (1964), on the Irish Troubles 1916-22.

## MacKenna, Stephen (1872-1934)

English-born translator and journalist, celebrated in the world of classical studies for his unparalleled translation of Plotinus'*Enneads* (1917-1930). MacKenna was born in Liverpool of Irish parents, and first moved to Dublin after failing an entrance exam to London University. He served as a European news correspondent during the Russo-Japanese War (1904-05), and interviewed the Russian novelist Leo Tolstoy before returning to Ireland in 1907. He was a close friend of the dramatist J M Synge as well as the poets George Russell and James Stephens, and other leading figures of the Gaelic revival. After the Irish Civil War (1922-23), he moved to London where he worked continually on the Plotinus project.

## Mackenzie, (Kenneth) Seaforth (1913-1954)

Australian novelist and poet. His novels include *The Young Desire It* 1937, *Chosen People* 1938, *Dead Men Rising* 1951, and *The Refuge* 1954. A collection of verse, *Selected Poems*, appeared in 1961.

## Mackenzie, Compton (1883-1972)

#### adopted name of Edward Montague Compton

Scottish writer. He published his first novel, *The Passionate Elopement*, in 1911. Subsequent novels included *Carnival* (1912), a melodrama of stage life, the semiautobiographical *Sinister Street* (1913-14), the sequence *The Four Winds of Love* (1937-45), and the comedy *Whisky Galore!* (1947; filmed in 1949).

During World War I he saw action and served in the secret service; his *Greek Memories* (1932) was withdrawn after his trial under the Official Secrets Act. He published his autobiography, *My Life and Times*, in ten volumes from 1963-71.

Scottish novelist and essayist. *The Man of Feeling*, an important sentimental novel, was published anonymously 1771 and attracted much attention. It was followed by the contrasting work *The Man of the World* 1773. Like the others, *Julia de Roubigné* 1777 was written in a strain of high-wrought sentimentalism. The entertaining *Anecdotes and Egotisms* was published 1927.

## Mackintosh, Elizabeth (1896-1952)

Scottish novelist, dramatist, and biographer. As **Gordon Daviot** she wrote the plays *Richard of Bordeaux* (1933), which John Gielgud directed and starred in; *Queen of Scots* (1934), with Laurence Olivier; and the biography *Claverhouse* (1937). Her detective novels, written as **Josephine Tey**, include *The Franchise Affair* (1948), *Brat Farrar* (1949), and *The Daughter of Time* (1951).

### Maclaren, lan

pen-name of Scottish writer John Watson.

# MacLaverty, Bernard (1942-)

Irish writer. Born in Belfast, MacLaverty worked there as a medical technician before studying English and eventually settling in Glasgow. His prose is often dedicated to vexed relationships between lovers, families, and communities. Starting his career with short stories, he is best known for his novel of tragic love *Cal* (1983) and his masterful portrait of a female composer in *Grace Notes* (1997). His style is marked by a delicacy that bespeaks an intense respect for human emotions and frailties. Other works include *Lamb* (1980), *The Anatomy School* (2001), and the short story collection *Walking the Dog, and Other Stories* (1994).

## McLaverty, Michael (1904-1992)

Irish writer. McLaverty was born in Carrickmacross, County Monaghan, and lived for a short time on Rathlin Island, County Antrim, before moving to Belfast. His fiction, both short stories and novels, is directly related to his experiences as a headmaster of a Belfast Catholic boys' school. Beginning with stories that concentrate on young and marginalized characters, then moving into autobiographical fiction, and finally writing Catholic novels dealing with morality, McLaverty is known for caring but unnostalgic prose that is often praised for its straightforward style. His best-known works are the short story 'Pigeons' and the collection *The Road to the Shore* (1976).

## Maclean, Alistair (1922-1987)

Scottish adventure novelist. His first novel, *HMS Ulysses* (1955), was based on wartime experience. It was followed by *The Guns of Navarone* (1957) and several other best-selling adventure novels. Many of his books were made into films.

His work is meticulously accurate in detail as well as being full of suspense. Among his other novels are *Fear is the Key* (1961), *Ice Station Zebra* (1963), and *Where Eagles Dare* (1967).

## Maclean, Fitzroy Hew (1911-1996)

Scottish writer and diplomat whose travels in the USSR and Central Asia inspired his books *Eastern Approaches* (1949) and *A Person from England* (1958). His other works include *To the Back of Beyond* (1974), *Holy Russia* (1979), and *Bonnie Prince Charlie* (1988).

During 1943-45 he commanded a unit giving aid to partisans in Yugoslavia and advised that Allied support be switched from the Chetniks to the communist partisans under Tito. Baronet 1957.

## MacLeish, Archibald (1892-1982)

US poet. He made his name with the long narrative poem *Conquistador* (1932), which describes Cortés' march to the Aztec capital, but his later plays in verse, *Panic* (1935) and *Air Raid* (1938), deal with contemporary problems.

# MacLennan, (John) Hugh (1907-1990)

Canadian novelist and essayist. He has explored the theme of an emerging Canadian identity in realist novels such as *Barometer Rising* (1941) and *Two Solitudes* (1945), which confronts the problems of cooperation between French- and English-speaking Canadians. Later works include *The Watch that Ends the Night* (1959) and *Voices in Time* (1981), bleakly imagining Montréal after a nuclear holocaust.

## Macleod, Fiona

pseudonym of Scottish novelist William Sharp.

## McMurtry, Larry Jeff (1936-)

US writer. Many of his works were made into films, including *The Last Picture Show* (1966, filmed 1971) and *Terms of Endearment* (1975), the film of which won the 1983 Academy Award for Best Picture. His novel *Lonesome Dove* (1986), which debunks the romantic ideals typical of the western genre, was awarded the 1987 Pulitzer Prize for Fiction.

Born in Wichita Falls, Texas, McMurtry mostly wrote about the Southwest, particularly his home state.

Among his many other titles are *Horseman*, *Pass By* (1961, filmed as *Hud* in 1963), *Leaving Cheyenne* (1963, filmed as *Lovin' Molly* in 1963), *The Desert Rose* (1983), *Texasville* (1987), *Buffalo Girls* (1990), the *Berrybender Narratives* - which includes *Sin Killer* (2002), *The Wandering Hill* (2003), *By Sorrow's River* (2003), and *Folly and Glory: A Novel* (2004) - and *Loop Group* (2004). *Streets of Laredo* (1993) was a sequel to *Lonesome Dove*.

# MacNamara, Brinsley (1890-1963)

#### pseudonym of John Weldon

Irish writer and dramatist. Born in Devlin, County Westmeath, MacNamara lived most of his life in Dublin and was long associated with the Abbey Theatre as an actor and director. His first novel *The Valley of the Squinting Windows* (1918), which is representative of his critical portrayal of romantic notions of Irish rural life, caused such negative reactions that boycotts and litigation resulted. Disillusionment remained a key tone to his plays and novels, such as *The Clanking of Chains* (1920) and *Mirror in the Dusk* (1921). His later novels, such as *The Various Lives of Marcus Igoe* (1929), show an experimentation with fantasy and dream states unexpressed in his earlier work.

MacNamara began his career acting with the Abbey Theatre and toured with them to the USA in 1911, remaining as a freelance actor until 1913. His first play *The Rebellion in Ballycullion* was produced by the Abbey, and he continued to work for them throughout his life, although a brief period as director ended with his resignation over the theatre's rejection of Seán O'Casey's *The Silver Tassie* (1928).

## McNamara, Joseph D (1934-)

US police chief, detective writer, and research fellow. Known for his best-selling detective novels, he spent 35 years in active law enforcement, which included serving as police chief of Kansas City, Missouri (1973-76), and police chief of San Jose, California (1976-91). He was a criminal justice fellow at Harvard Law School (from 1969) and was named a research fellow at the Hoover Institution at Stanford

University in 1991. In addition to detective thrillers such as *Fatal Command*, he was the author of *Safe and Sane*, a crime prevention textbook, among several other non-fiction works, and numerous articles. McNamara was born in New York City.

# MacNeice, (Frederick) Louis (1907-1963)

Northern Irish poet, born in Belfast. He is noted for his low-key, socially committed but politically uncommitted verse; and his ability to reflect the spirit of his times in his own emotional experience earned him an appreciative public. He made his debut with *Blind Fireworks* (1929) and developed a polished ease of expression, reflecting his classical training, as in the autobiographical and topical *Autumn Journal* (1939). Later works include the play *The Dark Tower* (1947), written for radio (he was employed by the British Broadcasting Corporation (BBC) features department 1941-61); a verse translation of Goethe's *Faust* (1949); and the collections *Springboard* (1944) and *Solstices* (1961). *Collected Poems* (1966) was revised in 1979 and *Selected Plays* appeared in 1993. He also made a verse translation of *Agamemnon* by Ancient Greek dramatist <u>Aeschylus</u> (1936).

MacNeice was educated at Marlborough school and Merton College, Oxford, where his contemporaries included W H <u>Auden</u>, Stephen <u>Spender</u>, and Cecil <u>Day-Lewis</u>, poets with whom he was often associated during the 1930s. He lectured in classics at Birmingham University and Bedford College, University of London, before becoming lecturer in English at Cornell University in the USA. Returning to Britain for service during World War II, he joined the BBC as a feature writer and producer.

## McNeile, (Herman) Cyril

real name of English writer Sapper.

## McNickle, (William) D'Arcy (1904-1977)

US Salish-Flathead author, historian, and anthropologist. A founding member of the National Congress of American Indians in 1944, he also worked for the Bureau of Indian Affairs (1936-52), taught at the University of Saskatchewan in Canada (1965-71), and served as the founding director of the Newberry Library Center for the History of the American Indian in Chicago, Illinois. His novels, which emphasized the importance of tribalism, include *The Surrounded* (1936) and *Runner in the Sun* (1954). McNickle was born in Saint Ignatius, Montana.

McNulty, John Augustine (1895-1956)

US journalist and author. A longtime reporter, he launched a new career writing stories and articles especially for the *New Yorker*, after the success of his 1941 story 'Atheist Hit by a Truck'. McNulty was born in Lawrence, Massachusetts.

### MacOrlan (1883-1970)

#### pseudonym of Pierre Dumarchey

French writer. He published volumes of stories, such as *La Bête conquérante* 1914; poems, collected in his *Euvres poétiques* 1946; and numerous novels, including *La Cavalière Elsa* 1921, *La Vénus internationale* 1923, *Malice* 1923, *Le Quai des brumes* 1927, and *La Tradition de minuit* 1930, among various other works.

# McPhee, John (Angus) (1931-)

US writer. He worked as a television playwright for *Robert Montgomery Presents* (1955-57) and as an associate editor for *Time* magazine (1957-64). In 1964 he became a staff writer for the *New Yorker*, he also taught journalism at Princeton University (from 1975). His non-fiction books, acclaimed for their cool precision, were usually based on articles written for the *New Yorker*; they cover a wide variety of subjects - everything from oranges to ecology, from canoemakers to Alaska. In later years he pursued an interest in geology through a series of books beginning with *Basin and Range* (1981). McPhee was born in Princeton, New Jersey. He studied at Princeton, gaining his BA in 1953, and at Cambridge University, England (1953-54).

## Macpherson, (Jean) Jay (1931-)

Canadian poet. Her short poems, in a variety of traditional forms, echo nursery rhymes, riddles, and hymns. She is best known for her poem cycle *The Boatman* (1957), which explores themes of redemption and the artistic experience through the biblical story of Noah's Ark. *Welcoming Disaster: Poems 1970-1974* is a further quest sequence.

### Macpherson, James (1736-1796)

Scottish writer. He published *Fragments of Ancient Poetry Collected in the Highlands of Scotland* in 1760, followed by the epics *Fingal* in 1761 and *Temora* in 1763, which he claimed as the work of the 3rd-century bard <u>Ossian</u>. After his death they were shown largely, but not entirely, to be forgeries.

## Madách, Imre (1823-1864)

Hungarian writer. Madách had a melancholy cast of mind, reinforced by the failure of the revolution of 1848. His greatest achievement is 'Az ember tragédiája/The Tragedy of Man', 1862, an ultimately uplifting philosophical poem in dramatic form which takes as its theme the destiny of humanity.

### Madame Bovary

novel by Gustave <u>Flaubert</u>, published in France in 1857. It aroused controversy by its portrayal of a country doctor's wife driven to suicide by a series of unhappy love affairs.

## Madariaga, Salvador de (1886-1978)

Spanish author and diplomat. His works include *Shelley and Calderón and other Essays* 1920; 'Don Quixote' 1934, an introductory essay; *The World's Design* 1938; *Christopher Columbus* 1939; *Hernán Cortes* 1941; *The Fall of the Spanish-American Empire* and *The Rise of the Spanish-American Empire* both 1947; *Bolívar* 1952; *Democracy versus Liberty* 1958; and *Latin America between the Eagle and the Bear* 1962.

## Madeleva, Sister Mary (1887-1964)

#### adopted name of Mary Evaline Wolff

US poet and educator. A medieval scholar, she won distinction for her literary essays and poetry. She was born in Cumberland, Wisconsin. Joining the Sisters of the Holy Cross in 1908, she earned a doctorate in English from the University of Southern California, Los Angeles, in 1925. She was president of St Mary's College at Notre Dame, Indiana (1934-61).

## Maerlant, Jacob van (1225-1291)

Flemish poet. His translations of courtly romances reveal an artistry and technique superior to that of most renderings. Later he compiled encyclopedic manuals in verse on natural history, the Bible, and world history. They included *Der Natueren Bloeme*, the *Rijmbijbel*, and *Spieghel Historiael*, unfinished at his death. He also wrote poetry, expressing deep moral indignation at the decline in social and religious life in fine, rugged verse forms.

# Maeterlinck, Maurice Polydore Marie Bernard (1862-1949)

### **Count Maeterlinck**

Belgian poet and dramatist. His plays include *Pelléas et Mélisande* (1892) (on which Debussy based his opera), *L'Oiseau bleu/The Blue Bird* (1908), and *Le Bourgmestre de Stilmonde/ The Burgomaster of Stilemonde* (1918). This last celebrates Belgian resistance in World War I, a subject that led to his exile in the USA in 1940. His philosophical essays include 'Le Trésor des humbles/The Treasure of the Humble' (1896) and 'La vie des abeilles/The Life of the Bee' (1901). He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1911.

# Maffei, Scipione (1675-1755)

Italian tragedian and writer. His tragedy *Merope* 1713 was highly esteemed. He also wrote historical and literary works, notably *Verona illustrata* 1731-32.

## Magic Mountain, The

#### German Der Zauberberg

novel by Thomas <u>Mann</u>, published in Germany in 1924. An ironic portrayal of the lives of a group of patients in a Swiss sanatorium, it shows the beauty and futility of their sheltered existence.

### magic realism

in 20th-century literature, a fantastic situation realistically treated, as in the works of many Latin American writers such as Isabel <u>Allende</u>, Jorge Luis <u>Borges</u>, and Gabriel <u>García Márquez</u>.

The technique of magic realism was pioneered in Europe by E T A Hoffman and Hermann Hesse. The term was coined in the 1920s to describe German paintings.

## Mahabharata

(Sanskrit 'great poem of the Bharatas')

Sanskrit Hindu epic consisting of 18 books and 90,000 stanzas, originally written in about 900 BC and probably composed in its present form in about 300 BC. It forms with the <u>Ramayana</u> the two great scriptural epics of the Hindus. It contains the *Bhagavad-Gita*, or *Song of the Blessed*, an episode in the sixth book, which is regarded as one of the most sacred of Hindu works.

The poem, set on the plain of the Upper Ganges, deals with the fortunes of the warring families of the Kauravas and the Pandavas, each descended from King Bharata, and reveals the ethical values of ancient Indian society and individual responsibility in particular.

## Mahfouz, Naguib (1911-)

Egyptian novelist and playwright. His novels, which deal with the urban working class, include the semi-autobiographical *Khan al-Kasrain/The Cairo Trilogy* (1956-57). His book *Children of Gebelawi* (1959) was banned in Egypt because of its treatment of religious themes. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1988.

His other novels include AI-Lis s wa-aI-Kilab/The Thief and the Dogs (1961), AI-Shah h adh/The Beggar (1965), and Miramar/Miramar (1967). He was seriously wounded in a knife attack by Islamic militants outside his home in Cairo in October 1994.

### Mahjar poets

#### (Arabic *mahjar* 'emigration', 'place of emigration')

school of Arabic writers from Syria and Lebanon who in the early 20th century settled in North and South America. The most important group was active in New York 1912-30, led by the Lebanese authors Khalil <u>Gibran</u> and Mikhail Naimy (1889-1988).

Mahjar poetry was influential in the Arab world between world wars I and II: it emphasized the loneliness and alienation felt by émigré writers, and introduced new ranges of poetic language and imagery into modern Arabic. Two major poets of the Mahjar school were IIya Abu Madi (1890-1957) and Nasib 'Arida (1887-1946).

### Mahon, Derek (1941-)

Northern Irish poet, born in Belfast and educated at Belfast Institute and Trinity College, Dublin. Together with Seamus <u>Heaney</u> and Michael Longley (1939-), he was associated with the Northern Poets in Belfast in the 1960s. His poetry, such as *Night-Crossing* (1968) and *The Snow Party* (1975), is characterized by squalid landscapes

and desperate situations.

After a brief teaching career, Mahon turned to journalism and creative writing. His early works, such as *Twelve Poems* (1965), show the influence of Louis MacNeice and W H Auden. Later publications include *The Hunt by Night* (1982), *A Kensington Notebook* (1984), and *Antarctica* (1985). The anthology *Poems* 1962-1978 (1979) contained some revised versions of earlier works, and a new collection *Selected Poems* appeared in 1991.

# Mahony, Francis Sylvester (1804-1866)

#### called 'Father Prout'

Irish humorous writer and poet. Born in Cork, he was educated at Clongowes Wood, where he later taught while training as a Jesuit priest. Expelled for taking the boys on a drunken outing, he was ordained as a secular priest in Italy in 1832, but left the church and took up writing on his return to Ireland. His contributions to *Fraser's Magazine* were collected in *Reliques of Father Prout* (1836), and he is remembered for his poems 'The Bells of Shandon' and 'The Lady of Lee'.

# Mailer, Norman Kingsley (1923-)

US writer and journalist. One of the most prominent figures of post-war American literature, he gained wide attention with his first, best-selling book *The <u>Naked and</u> <u>the Dead</u> (1948), a naturalistic war novel. His later works, which use sexual and scatological material, show his personal engagement with history, politics, and psychology. Always a pugnacious and controversial writer, his polemics on the theory and practice of violence-as-sex brought him into direct conflict with feminist Kate Millett in a series of celebrated debates during the 1970s.* 

His essay 'White Negro' in *Advertisements for Myself* (1959), defining the 'hipster' hero, was a seminal statement of the artistic need to rebel against cultural conformity. His other books include his dark thriller of sex and power *An American Dream* (1965), the fictionalized antiwar journalism of *The Armies of the Night* (1968, Pulitzer Prize), *The Executioner's Song* (1979, Pulitzer Prize), about convicted murderer Gary Gilmore, and two massive novels, *Ancient Evenings* (1983), dealing with Egyptian life and mythologies, and *Harlot's Ghost* (1991), about the CIA. A combative public figure, Mailer co-founded the magazine *Village Voice* in the 1950s, edited *Dissent*, and in 1969 ran for mayor of New York City. *Pablo and Fernande* appeared 1994.

Main Street

classic satirical novel by Sinclair Lewis, published in 1920, which made the American small-town Main Street the exemplification of enduring if simplistic social values.

### Maiorescu, Titu (1840-1917)

Romanian critic and politician. Maiorescu was one of the first to foster literary criticism in Romania. In 1864, he convened the first meeting of the literary circle Junimea ('youth'), which attracted such writers as Mihail Eminescu and Ion Luca Caragiale. He founded its review *Convorbiri literare/Literary Discussions* in 1867. In his studies, he advocated a national verse based on popular poetry, and denounced foreign, particularly French, influences in Romanian culture.

## Maitland, Richard (1496-1586)

#### Lord Lethington

Scottish poet, lawyer, and historian. All his verses were written after his 60th year, and consist mostly of laments for the state of Scotland, the feuds of the nobles, and the discontent of the common people. Maitland's principal historical work is the *Historie and Cronicle of the Hous and Surename of Seytoun*. He also made a collection of early Scottish poetry in two manuscript volumes (Pepysian Library, Magdalene College, Cambridge). Knighted in 1551-52.

### Making of Americans, The

novel by US writer Gertrude <u>Stein</u>, published in 1925. A massive and difficult work, it chronicles three generations of a German-American family. She applied a cubist style of constant repetition and variation of the same phrases to create a new aesthetic sensibility appropriate to the emergence of America as a world power.

## Malamud, Bernard (1914-1986)

US novelist and short-story writer. He first attracted attention with *The Natural* (1952), a mythic story about a baseball hero. It established Malamud's central concern of moral redemption and transcendence, which was more typically dealt with in books set in Jewish immigrant communities. These drew on the magical elements and mores of the European Yiddish tradition and include such novels as, *The Assistant* (1957), *The Fixer* (1966), *Dubin's Lives* (1979), and *God's Grace* (1982).

Short story collections include *The Magic Barrel* 1958, *Rembrandt's Hat* 1973, and *The Stories of Bernard Malamud* 1983.

## Malet, Lucas (1852-1931)

#### pseudonym of Mary St Leger Harrison

English novelist. Her most celebrated work was *History of Sir Richard Calmady* 1901. Others include *The Wages of Sin* 1890, *Adrian Savage* 1911, *The Survivors* 1923, and *The Dogs of Want* 1924. She was the daughter of the writer Charles <u>Kingsley</u>.

# Malherbe, François de (1555-1628)

French poet and grammarian. He became court poet in about 1605 under Henry IV, received a pension from his widow Marie de' Medici, and was patronized by Louis XIII. He advocated reform of language and versification, criticizing the innovations of the <u>*Pléiade*</u> poets, and established the 12-syllable alexandrine as the standard form of French verse.

## Mallarmé, Stéphane (1842-1898)

French poet. A leader of the Symbolist school, he became known as a poet's poet for his condensed, hermetic verse and unorthodox syntax, reaching for the ideal world of the intellect. His belief that poetry should be evocative and suggestive was reflected in *L'Après-midi d'un faune/Afternoon of a Faun* (1876; illustrated by Manet), which inspired the composer Debussy. Later works are *Poésies complètes/ Complete Poems* (1887), *Vers et prose/Verse and Prose* (1893), and the prose *Divagations/Digressions* (1897).

After 1863 he composed mindfully and looked for the ideal essence of things beyond everyday reality, a movement symbolized by the heroine of the poem 'Hérodiade' 1864 and the satyr of *L'Après-midi d'un faune* (first composed 1865) and their attitudes of withdrawal and refusal. Mallarmé's important poems do not progress by images or by plot and narrative; instead they are self-contained verbal artifacts built around a central object (a room, a chair, stars), symbol, or idea. He devoted his life to the creation of a language capable of transmuting everyday realities onto a higher level. He also experimented with the visual impact of written verse, notably 'Un Coup de dés/A Cast of the Dice' 1914, in which the words are irregularly placed on the page and differing typefaces are used.

# Mallet (or Malloch), David (c. 1705-1765)

Scottish poet and miscellaneous writer. He is chiefly remembered for his ballad of 'William and Margaret' 1723. He became secretary to the Prince of Wales and at his

request wrote, with James Thomson, the masque *Alfred* 1740, in which the song 'Rule, Britannia' first appeared.

### Malloch, David

original name of Scottish poet David Mallet

# Malone, Edmund (1741-1812)

English critic and editor. He devoted himself to the study of Shakespeare. In 1778 he published an *Attempt to Ascertain the Order in which the Plays of Shakespeare were Written*, and from 1783 worked at his edition of Shakespeare, which appeared 1790. In 1800 his edition of Dryden's works was published with a biographical introduction.

Malone was among the first to express disbelief in Thomas <u>Chatterton's</u> poems supposed to have been written by T Rowley, and in 1796 he denounced the Shakespeare forgeries of Samuel Ireland.

Malory, Thomas (c. 1410-1471)

English author. He is known for the prose romance <u>Le Morte D'Arthur</u> (c. 1470), printed in 1485, which relates the exploits of King Arthur's knights of the Round Table and the quest for the Holy Grail. He was knight of the shire from 1445.

Malory is thought to have been the Warwickshire landowner of that name who was member of Parliament for Warwick in 1445 and was subsequently charged with rape, theft, and attempted murder. If that is so, he must have compiled *Le Morte D'Arthur* during his 20 years in and out of prison. Based on an unidentified 'French book', with imaginative additions from other sources, it is the fullest version of the legends of King Arthur, and a notable contribution to English prose.

## Malouf, David George Joseph (1934-)

Australian novelist, poet, and short-story writer. He draws on his Lebanese and English background for ethnic themes in his work. His poetry collections include *Neighbours in a Thicket* (1974), which won several awards, *Wild Lemons* (1980), and *First Things Last* (1980). Malouf's first novel *Johnno* (1975) deals with his boyhood in Brisbane. Subsequent novels include *An Imaginary Life* (1978), *Fly Away Peter* (1982), *The Great World* (1990), *Remembering Babylon* (1993), and *Dream Stuff* (2000).

He has also written opera librettos for *Voss* (1986), from the novel by Patrick White, and *La Mer de Glace* (1991).

### Malraux, André (Georges) (1901-1976)

French writer, art critic, and politician. An active antifascist, he gained international renown for his novel *La Condition humaine/Man's Estate* (1933), set during the nationalist/communist revolution in China in the 1920s. *L'Espoir/Days of Hope* (1937) is set in Civil War Spain, where he was a bomber pilot in the International Brigade. In his revolutionary novels he frequently depicts individuals in situations where they are forced to examine the meaning of their own life. He also made an outstanding contribution to aesthetics with *La Psychologie de l'art* (1947-49), revised as *Les Voix du silence/The Voices of Silence* (1951).

#### political career

Malraux rejected communism and supported the Gaullist resistance during World War II, becoming minister of information in de Gaulle's government 1945-46 and minister of cultural affairs 1960-69.

## Maltz, Albert (1908-1985)

US writer. He began his career as a playwright and teacher (1937-40). He moved to Hollywood in 1941, and wrote numerous screenplays, such as *This Gun for Hire* (1941). He also wrote short stories, radio plays, and novels. He was a member of the 'Hollywood Ten', a group that refused to answer Senator Joseph McCarthy's questions about membership in the Communist Party. He was imprisoned for contempt of Congress (1950-51), and, like many others in the entertainment industry of that era, was blacklisted; he was unable to find work in his field for almost 20 years and therefore concentrated on novels and short stories. Maltz was born in New York City. He studied at Columbia University, gaining his BA in 1930, and at Yale University's drama school (1930-32).

## Mameli, Goffredo (1827-1849)

Italian poet and patriot. He wrote the patriotic hymn *Fratelli d'Italia*, and died in defence of Rome.

Mamet, David (Alan) (1947-)

US dramatist, writer, and director. His plays use vivid, freewheeling language and urban settings. *American Buffalo* (1976; filmed 1996), about a gang of hopeless robbers, was his first major success. *Glengarry Glen Ross* (1983; filmed 1992), a dark depiction of US business ethics, won the Pulitzer Prize for drama in 1984. He made his film-making debut directing *House of Games* (1987). Other films include *The Spanish Prisoner* (1997) and *State and Main* (2000).

Among Mamet's other plays are *Sexual Perversity in Chicago* (1974), *Speed-the-Plow* (1988), *Oleanna* (1992), and *Cryptogram* (1994). He wrote the screenplays for *The Postman Always Rings Twice* (1981), *The Verdict* (1982), *The Untouchables* (1987), *Rising Sun* (1993), and *Wag the Dog* (1997). He wrote and directed *Things Change* (1987) and *Heist* (2001), and directed *The Winslow Boy* (1999).

### Mandelstam, Osip Emilevich (1891-1938)

Russian poet. He was a leader of the <u>Acmeist movement</u>. The son of a Jewish merchant, he was sent to a concentration camp by the communist authorities in the 1930s, and died there. His posthumously published work, with its classic brevity, established his reputation as one of the greatest 20th-century Russian poets.

His wife Nadezhda's memoirs of her life with her husband, *Hope Against Hope*, were published in the West 1970, but not until 1988 in the USSR.

## Mandeville, Bernard de (c. 1670-1733)

English philosopher and satirist, of Dutch origin. He came to England in 1691, and is best known for his *Fable of the Bees, or Private Vices, Public Benefits* (1705). It was primarily written as a political satire on the state of England in 1705.

He was born in Dordrecht, Holland, the son of a physician. He was educated at the Erasmus School, Rotterdam, and at Leyden University, from where he graduated in 1691. Although a qualified doctor he did not practice widely. Mandeville rejected the division of human actions into higher and lower and insisted that it is the selfish interests of men that lead to social progress. The *Fable of the Bees* was also published in 1714 and 1723. Among his other works are *The Planter's Charity* (1704), *Free Thoughts on Religion, the Church and National Happiness* (1720), and *An Enquiry into the Origin of Honour* (1732).

### Mandeville, John (died c. 1372)

supposed author of a 14th-century travel manual for pilgrims to the Holy Land. Originally written in French, it was probably the work of Jean d'Outremeuse of Liège. As well as references to real marvels, such as the pyramids, there are tales of headless people with eyes in their shoulders and other such fantastic inventions.

### Mangan, James Clarence (1803-1849)

Irish poet and translator. Mangan was born in Dublin, and worked as a clerk until 1828 while establishing his career as a writer. Much of his writing is concerned with Irish history and legend, and among his chief works are *Anthologia Germanica* (1845) and *Romances and Ballads of Ireland* (1850). He published English versions of Irish poems in *The Poets and Poetry of Munster* (1849), notably 'Dark Rosaleen' and 'The Nameless One'. He is one of the few Anglo-Irish poets before W B Yeats.

Mangan wrote for the *Dublin Satirist*, the *Comet*, and *The Nation* (founded 1842), and contributed to many Irish newspapers under various pseudonyms. The account of his life given in his *Autobiography* is filled with images of fearful misery, deprivation, and persecution. His poetry is fitful and neurotic; at times he reached a masterly eloquence (often in his very free 'translations' of Irish or even Arabic, two languages of which he had no knowledge). An opium addict and an alcoholic, he died from cholera.

# Manheim, Ralph (c. 1907-1992)

US translator. Regarded as the dean of US professional translators, he produced more than 100 English translations of works by Freud, Jung, Heidegger, Brecht, Grass, Hesse, Proust, and other French and German writers. His many prizes included a MacArthur Foundation 'genius' award (1983). Manheim was born in New York City. He lived in Paris, France (from 1950), and in England (from 1985).

### Manilius, Marcus (lived c. 1st century BC)

Roman poet. His 'Astronomica', incomplete and probably never published, is a work of great learning and considerable literary merit, written in the reigns of Augustus and Tiberius.

# Manley, Mary de la Riviere (1663-1724)

English writer. She published several scurrilous works but is best remembered for the Secret Memoirs and Manners of Several Persons of Quality of both Sexes from the New Atlantis (usually known as The New Atlantis) 1709-10, in which she slandered many well-known people. She also wrote several plays, two of which, The Lost Lover and The Royal Mischief, were produced 1696.

# Mann, Heinrich (1871-1950)

German novelist. He left Nazi Germany in 1937 with his brother Thomas <u>Mann</u> and went to the USA. His books include *Im Schlaraffenland/In the Land of Cockaigne* (1901) and *Professor Unrat/The Blue Angel* (1904; widely known as a film), depicting the sensual downfall of a schoolteacher. His novels show Germany in its new, vulgar prosperity from the end of the 19th century to the period just before World War I, and his best works were suppressed for a time.

## Mann, Margaret (1873-1960)

US cataloguer. She taught library science at her alma mater, Chicago's Armour Institute, and was a cataloguer at the Carnegie Library in Pittsburgh (1903-19). She organized and recatalogued the Engineering Society Library in New York City (1919-24) and taught at the Paris Library School in France (1924-26). While teaching at the University of Michigan, she authored the first basic text for librarianship, *Introduction to Cataloging and the Classification of Books* (1930). Mann was born in Cedar Rapids, Iowa.

## Mann, Thomas (1875-1955)

German novelist and critic. A largely subjective artist, he drew his themes from his own experiences and inner thoughts. He was constantly preoccupied with the idea of death in the midst of life and with the position of the artist in relation to society. His first novel was *Buddenbrooks* (1901), a saga of a merchant family which traces through four generations the gradual growth of decay as culture slowly saps virility. *Der Zauberberg/The <u>Magic Mountain</u>* (1924), a vast symbolic work on the subject of disease in sick minds and bodies, and also the sickness of Europe, probes the question of culture in relation to life. Notable among his works of short fiction is 'Der Tod in Venedig/Death in Venice' (1913). He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1929.

He was born in Lübeck, the younger brother of Heinrich Mann. He worked in an insurance office in Munich and became a reader on the staff of the periodical *Simplicissimus*, in which some of his stories were published. His opposition to the Nazi regime forced him to leave Germany and in 1940 he became a US citizen, but he returned to Europe in 1954. Among his other works are a biblical tetralogy *Joseph und seine Brüde/Joseph and his Brothers* (1933-43); *Doktor Faustus, das Leben des deutschen Tonsetzers Adrian Leverkuehn, erzählt von einem Freund/Dr Faustus: the Life of the German Composer Adrian Leverkuehn, as told by a Friend* (1947), the Faust legend brought up to date with a background of pre- and post-war Germany; *Die Bekenntnisse des Hochstaplers Felix Krull/Confessions of Felix Krull, Confidence Man* (1954), widely considered to be the greatest comic novel in German literature; and a number of short stories, including 'Tonio Kröger' (1903) which exemplifies the conflict between the ordinary person and the artist.

### Mannin, Ethel Edith (1900-1984)

English novelist and travel writer. Her first novel, *Martha* (1922), was followed by many others, including *Sounding Brass* (1925), *The Pure Flame* (1936), *The Blossoming Bough* (1943), *Late Have I Loved Thee* (1948), and *The Blue-eyed Boy* (1959). Among her travel books are *South to Samarkand* (1936), *Jungle Journey* (1950), and *Moroccan Mosiac* (1953).

### Manning, Olivia Mary (1908-1980)

English novelist. Among her books are the semi-autobiographical series set during World War II. These include *The Great Fortune* (1960), *The Spoilt City* (1962), and *Friends and Heroes* (1965), forming the 'Balkan trilogy', and a later 'Levant trilogy'.

### Manning, Robert (c. 1264-c. 1340)

#### also known as Robert of Brunneborn

English poet. He wrote *Handlyng Synne*, a translation of the *Manuel des Pechiez* of William of Wadington, and *The Chronicle of England*, a new version in octosyllabic rhyme of Robert Wace's *Brut d'Angleterre*, with a translation of the French rhyming chronicle of Peter Langtoft, *The Story of Ingeland*.

### Mannyng, Robert

alternative spelling of Robert Manning, English poet.

### Manrique, Jorge (c. 1440-1479)

Spanish Castilian poet and soldier. Only 49 poems are attributed with any certainty to Manrique. His most acclaimed work, *Coplas que fizo por la muerte de su padre/Verses Composed on the Death of His Father* (1476), is a sublime meditation on the transience of life, inevitability of death, and consolation of belief in salvation through Jesus, written on the death of his father.

Although Manrique was well known as a poet in his lifetime, his *Coplas* was first published about 1490 in the *Cancionero de Ramón Llavia*. A selection of his other poetry appeared in four successive editions of the *Cancionero General* (first edition

1511), the *Coplas* being added in Juan Cromberger's 1535 edition. Juan de Valdés praised the form and content of the *Coplas*, which was set to music in 1557 and became the subject of numerous glosses, the first of these being Alonso de Cervantes's *Glosa famosísima/Most famous gloss* (1501). Henry Longfellow translated *Coplas* into English in 1833.

### Mansfield, Katherine (1888-1923)

#### pen-name of Kathleen Beauchamp

New Zealand writer. She lived most of her life in England. Her delicate artistry emerges not only in her volumes of short stories - such as *In a German Pension* (1911), *Bliss* (1920), and *The Garden Party* (1923) - but also in her letters and journal. She developed the technique of the short story in much the same way as Irish writer James Joyce and English writer Virginia Woolf developed the novel; in particular Mansfield recognized that fiction survives if it recreates life, and she was a pioneer of the central character as narrator.

Born near Wellington, New Zealand, she was educated in London. She returned to London after a two-year visit home, where she published her earliest stories. She married the critic John Middleton Murry in 1913.

### Mantel, Hilary (1952-)

English writer. She lived in Botswana for five years from 1977, and then in Saudi Arabia for three years. Her writing covers a varied subject matter from historical fiction tales to true-to-life tales from both modern Saudi Arabia (as in *Eight Months on Ghazzah Street* (1988)) and Africa (as in *A Change of Climate* (1994)). Her later books include *Giving Up the Ghost: A Memoir* (2003), an autobiography in fiction and non-fiction, and *Learning to Talk: Short Stories* (2003).

Mantel also writes about political and social issues. *Every Day is Mother's Day* (1985) and *Vacant Possession* (1986) focus on the state of medical care in the UK in the 1970s and 1980s, and the UK prime minister Margaret Thatcher makes an anonymous cameo in *An Experiment in Love* (1995). Her novel *The Giant, O'Brien* (1998) tells the story of Charles O'Brien who leaves his home in Ireland to make his fortune as a sideshow attraction in London. Mantel was awarded the Shiva Naipaul Memorial Prize in 1987, the Winifred Holtby Award in 1990, and the Hawthornden Prize in 1996.

### Manzoni, Alessandro (1785-1873)

**Count Manzoni** 

Italian poet and novelist. He was the author of the historical romance *I promessi sposi/The* <u>Betrothed</u> (1825-27, revised 1842), set in Spanish-occupied Milan during the 17th century. He is regarded as the greatest Italian novelist although later writers have often avoided his extreme romanticism. Verdi's *Requiem* commemorates him.

He also wrote the widely admired *Inni sacri/Sacred Hymns* 1812-22 and an ode to Napoleon, *II cinque maggio/The Fifth of May* 1822. Among his other works are a treatise on the religious basis of morality, *Osservazioni sulla morale cattolica* 1819, and the tragedies *II conte di Carmagnola/The Count of Carmagnola* 1820 and *Adelchi* 1822.

## Mao Dun (or Mao Tun) (1896-1981)

#### pseudonym of Shen Yanbin (or Shen Yen-ping)

Chinese writer. He wrote a trilogy of novellas, published as *Shi* (*Eclipse*) (1930); a best-selling novel, *Ziye* (*Midnight*) (1932), about financial exploiters in the decadent Shanghai of the time; and a collection of short stories. In 1930 he helped to organize the influential League of Left-Wing Writers. After the Communists came to power in 1949 he was China's first minister of culture 1949-65, and founder editor of the literary journal *People's Literature* 1949-53.

He was born in Wuzhen, Zhejiang (Chekiang) province, educated at Beijing (Peking) University, and became a founder member of the Literary Research Society 1920, and editor of the *Short Story Monthly* 1921-23. Moving to Shanghai, he taught a course of fiction at Shanghai College, and became editor of the *Hankou (Hankow) National Daily*, but in 1926 he had to go underground because of his communist sympathies.

During the Cultural Revolution he was kept under house arrest in Beijing 1966-78.

### Map (or Mapes), Walter (c. 1140-c. 1209)

Welsh cleric and satirist. He was in the service of Henry II, frequently being employed as an itinerant justice in England, and was an envoy to Alexander III of Scotland. His *De Nugis Curialium/Courtier's Trifles* is a collection of gossip and scandal from royal and ecclesiastical courts, with a scattering of anecdotes, legends, and folklore; it also contains a treatise against marriage used by <u>Chaucer</u> in the 'Prologue to the Wife of Bath's Tale'.

Novelist born in Lithuania (then part of Russia) who wrote in Hebrew. Mapu was the author of the first novel to be written in Hebrew, *Ahavat Zion/Love of Zion* 1853, a romance set in biblical times, which proved immensely popular. His romanticized images of ancient Israel helped prepare the ground for a resurgence of Jewish nationalist feeling towards the end of the 19th century.

### Marcabru (or Marcabrun) (lived c. 1130-50)

Provençal troubadour. He was one of the earliest of the troubadours, a Gascon of humble origins (tradition has it that he was a foundling). Many of his poems are in a satirical, moralizing, and realist vein that contrasts sharply with the conventional treatment of courtly love characteristic of many later troubadours. The most famous of his four surviving songs with tunes is the semi-religious 'Pax in nomine Domini'. One of his best-known poems deals with the crusade against the Moors in Spain.

### Marcel, Gabriel (1889-1973)

French dramatist and philosopher. His philosophy, which has been described as a Christian version of existentialism, owes much to Bergson, Nietzsche, and Dostoevski.

Among his plays are *La Chapelle ardente* (1925), *Un Homme de Dieu* (1929), *Le Fanal* (1936), *Le Dard* (1936), *Rome n'est plus dans Rome* (1951), *Les Coeurs avides* (1953), and *Croissez et multipliez* (1955). His philosophical works include *Etre et avoir* (1935), *Le Mystere de L'Etre* (1951-52), and *Presence et Immortalite* (1959).

### March, Ausiàs (c. 1395-1460)

Catalan poet. His *Cants d'amor* and *Cants de mort*, show the influence of the troubadours, <u>Dante</u>, and <u>Petrarch</u>.

### Marciana, Biblioteca (Florence)

the library of the Dominican convent of San Marco in Florence. The basis of the collection was the library of some 800 volumes accumulated by the scholar Niccolò Niccoli. On his death the collection passed into the stewardship of a group of Florentines, including Cosimo de' Medici, who was patron of San Marco. The building commissioned to hold the collection was designed by Michelozzo in 1441.

Many of the texts were dispersed or destroyed by the religious reformer Savonarola and his followers. In 1508 the collection was bought by Pope Leo X and returned to Florence in 1532 by Clement VII. In 1808 the collection was amalgamated with that

of the Laurenziana.

### Marciana, Biblioteca (Venice)

the library housed in the Libreria Sansoviniana (Sansovino Library) in Piazzetta San Marco, Venice. The foundation of the collection was the gift of manuscripts made by Cardinal Bessarion to the Venetian senate in 1468. This was augmented by the bequest of Domenico Grimani. The building, begun in 1536, was designed by Jacopo Sansovino; it was completed by Scamozzi in the 1580s. The interior is decorated with paintings by Titian, Tintoretto, Veronese, and Andrea Schiavone.

### Mareuil, Arnaut de (lived 1170-1200)

Provençal troubadour. About 25 of his lyric poems remain, mostly love poems, and some others including the earliest known Provençal verse epistles.

## Marie de France (*c.* 1150-1215)

French poet. She is thought to have been the half-sister of Henry II of England, and abbess of Shaftesbury 1181-1215. Her surviving works, all in octosyllabic verse, are 12 *Lais* written before 1189 (verse tales that dealt with Celtic and Arthurian themes); *Ysopet*, a collection of 103 fables translated from English and dedicated to a certain Count William; and the *Espurgatoire Saint Patrice/St Patrick's Purgatory* written after 1189, faithfully following a Latin account of a knight's visit to St Patrick's Purgatory in Ireland.

### Marinetti, (Emilio) Filippo Tommaso (1876-1944)

Italian author. In 1909 he published *Manifesto del Futurismo*, the first manifesto of <u>Futurism</u>, exhorting the youth of Italy to break with tradition in art, poetry, and the novel and face the challenges of a new machine age. He illustrated his theories in *Mafarka le futuriste: Roman africaine/Mafarka the Futurist: African Novel* (1909). His best-known work is the *Manifesto technico della letteratura futuristica/ Technical Manifesto of Futurist Literature* (1912; translated 1971). He also wrote plays, a volume on theatrical practice (1916), and a volume of poems *Guerra sola igiene del mondo/War the Only Hygiene of the World* (1915).

Marini (or Marino), Giambattista (1569-1625)

Italian poet. He aimed to surprise by the use of startling metaphors, hyperboles, antitheses, and other literary devices. His ornate and self-conscious style, termed 'Marinism', influenced early 17th-century poetry in Italy, France, and England. His best-known work, *Adone* (1623), for the first time took love instead of war as the theme of a major epic.

### Marivaux, Pierre Carlet de Chamblain de (1688-1763)

French novelist and dramatist. His sophisticated comedies deal primarily with love and include *Le Jeu de l'amour et du hasard/The Game of Love and Chance* (1730) and *Les Fausses Confidences/False Confidences* (1737). He wrote two novels: *La Vie de Marianne/The Life of Marianne* (1731-41), the study of a young girl written with much psychological insight, which has autobiographical elements; and *Le Paysan parvenu/The Fortunate Villager* (1735-36), which gives a broader picture of French society. Both were left incomplete.

Marivaux was a master of brilliant dialogue, full of veiled avowals and subtle indications, and he gave the word *marivaudage* (oversubtle lovers' conversation) to the French language.

## Markham, Edwin (1852-1940)

#### born Charles Edward Anson Markham

US poet and editor. He became well-known when he published the social protest poem 'The Man with the Hoe' (1899), inspired by Jean-Francois Millet's painting. Another famous poem followed in 'Lincoln, the Man of the People' (1901). His *Collected Poems* appeared in 1940.

Markham was born in Oregon City, Oregon, and grew up in California. He moved to Staten Island, New York, after the success of his poetry, and spent the rest of his life writing and lecturing, but never again attaining the recognition he gained from these two poems. He studied briefly at Christian College in Santa Rosa, California, then taught in California (1875-1901).

# Markham, Gervase (or Jervis) (1568-1637)

English poet, translator, and writer. Among his works are a continuation of Philip <u>Sidney's</u>*Arcadia*, a poem on the death in a naval battle of Richard Granville, *The Discourse of Horsemanshippe* (1593), *Cavelarice, or the English Horseman* (1607), *Country Contentments* (1615), *A Way to Get Wealth* (1623), various books on agriculture, and some plays.

### Markham, Mrs (1780-1837)

#### pseudonym of Elizabeth Penrose

English writer. She was noted as a writer of historical and other books for children. The best known are *Mrs Markham's History of England* 1823 and *Mrs Markham's History of France* 1828. Other works include *Amusements of Westernheath, or Moral Stories for Children* 1824, *A Visit to the Zoological Gardens* 1829, and *Sermons for Children* 1837.

### Marlowe, Christopher (1564-1593)

English poet and dramatist. His work includes the blank-verse (written in unrhymed verse) plays *Tamburlaine the Great* in two parts (1587-88), *The Jew of Malta* (c. 1591), *Edward II* (c. 1592) and *Dr Faustus* (c. 1594), the poem *Hero and Leander* (1598), and a translation of parts of <u>Ovid's</u>*Amores*. Marlowe transformed the new medium of English blank verse into a powerful, melodic form of expression.

He was born in Canterbury and educated at Cambridge University, where he is thought to have become a government agent. His life was turbulent, with a brief imprisonment in connection with a man's death in a brawl (of which he was cleared), and a charge of atheism (following statements given under torture by the English dramatist Thomas <u>Kyd</u>). He was murdered in a Deptford tavern, allegedly in a dispute over the bill, but it may have been a political killing.

### Marmontel, Jean François (1723-1799)

French novelist and dramatist. He wrote tragedies and libretti, and contributed articles on literature to the *Encyclopédie*, which were later republished as *Eléments de littérature/Elements of Literature* (1787). In 1758 he obtained control of the journal *Le Mercure/The Mercury*, in which his *Contes moraux/Moral Studies* (1761) appeared. Other works include the historical romances *Bélisaire/Belisarius* (1767) and *Les Incas/The Incas* (1777).

### Marot, Clément (1496-1544)

French poet. He is known for his translation of the Psalms (1539-43). His best verse is found in his rondeaux, epigrams, and epistles. He restored naturalness and simplicity to French poetry, replacing artificial excess of ornament and allegory by native grace, and his achievement became a model for later writers of light verse. Among others, <u>La Fontaine</u> imitated the *style marotique*.

His other works include translations and allegories, such as his translation of the first and second books of <u>Ovid's</u>*Metamorphoses*, his *Temple de Cupido* (1515), and his allegorical satire *L'Enfer*. His paraphrases of the Psalms reveal his metrical originality, and he also helped introduce the sonnet to France.

### Marple, Miss

fictional amateur detective (a prim and gentle spinster). She appears in 13 of Agatha <u>Christie</u>'s novels, beginning with *The Murder at the Vicarage* (1930) and ending with *Sleeping Murder* (1976). In creating this character, Christie transforms the stereotype of the prim and gentle spinster. Miss Marple's avid interest in human behaviour and undervalued but acute mind produces solutions to highly intricate mysteries.

# Marquand, J(ohn) P(hillips) (1893-1960)

US writer. Author of a series of stories featuring the Japanese detective Mr Moto, he later made his reputation with gently satirical novels of Boston society, including *The Late George Apley* (1937; Pulitzer Prize) and *H M Pulham, Esq* (1941).

### Márquez, Gabriel García

Colombian novelist; see Gabriel García Márquez.

# Marquis, Don(ald Robert Perry) (1878-1937)

US author. He is chiefly known for his humorous writing, including *Old Soak* (1921), which portrays a hard-drinking comic, and 'archy and mehitabel' (1927), verse adventures typewritten by a literary cockroach.

# Marryat, Frederick (Captain) (1792-1848)

English naval officer and writer. He was the originator of the British sea story. His adventure stories, taken from personal experience, are full of life, humour, and stirring narrative; they include *Peter Simple* (1834) and *Mr Midshipman Easy* (1836). He also wrote children's books, including *The Children of the New Forest* (1847).

## Marsh, (Edith) Ngaio (1899-1982)

New Zealand detective fiction writer. Her first detective novel *A Man Lay Dead* (1934) introduced her protagonist Chief Inspector Roderick Alleyn. She was made DBE in 1966.

### Marshall, James (Edward) (1942-1992)

US writer and illustrator. He is known for his picture books, such as the *George and Martha* hippopotamus series (1972), and another series beginning with *The Stupids Step Out* (1974), produced in collaboration with Harry Allard. Marshall was born in San Antonio, Texas. He studied at the New England Conservatory of Music in Boston, Massachusetts, remaining in the city while he taught French (1968-70), and then became a freelance illustrator.

## Marshall, Paule (1929-)

US writer. She is known for her stories and novels that celebrate the lives of African-Americans and individuals living in the West Indies and Barbados, as in *Praisesong for the Widow* (1983). Marshall was born Paule Burke in New York City. She studied at Brooklyn and Hunter colleges. She worked as a librarian and as a staff writer for *Our World* magazine (1953-56). Based in New York City, she became a freelance writer in 1956 and also taught at Yale University (from 1970), lecturing on Black literature at many other institutions.

### Martel, Yann (1963-)

Canadian writer. He won the Booker Prize for Fiction in 2002 for his novel *Life of Pi*. His other books include the short story collection *The Facts Behind the Helsinki Roccamatios* (1993) and the semi-autobiographical novel *Self* (1997).

# Martí, José Julian (1853-1895)

Cuban revolutionary. Active in the Cuban independence movement from boyhood, he was deported to Spain in 1871, returning in 1878. Exiled again for continued opposition, he fled to the USA in 1880, from where he organized resistance to Spanish rule. He was killed in battle at Dos Ríos, soon after proclaiming the uprising which led to Cuban independence.

Martí was chief of the Cuban Revolutionary Party formed 1892, and united Cubans in exile. In 1959 Fidel Castro cited him as the 'intellectual author' of the revolution,

and he remains a national hero.

### Martial, (Marcus Valerius Martialis) (c.AD 41-c. 104)

Latin poet and epigrammatist. Born in Bilbilis, Spain, Martial settled in Rome in AD 64, where he lived a life of poverty and dependence. His poetry, often obscene, is keenly observant of all classes in contemporary Rome. Of his works the following survive: about 33 poems from *Liber Spectaculorum*, published in AD 80 to commemorate the opening of the Colosseum; two collections of short mottoes entitled *Xenia* and *Apophoreta*, (AD 84-85); and 12 books of *Epigrams*, published in AD 86-102.

### Martin, Allie Beth Dent (1914-1976)

US librarian. She became director of the Tulsa City-County Library in 1963 after campaigning vigorously for improved library services. The Tulsa library was transformed into a model system and Martin, along with architect Charles F Ward, formed a consultant firm, Library Design Associates, Inc, active throughout the Southwest. She was president of the Southwestern Library Association (1969-70) and was president of the American Library Association (1975-76).

After working at several librarian positions in Arkansas and gaining an MA from the Columbia University School of Library Service in 1949, she went with her husband to Tulsa, Oklahoma, and began working in the Tulsa Public Library system.

### Martin, Lowell Arthur (c. 1912-)

US librarian. After several years as an academic librarian, he became an executive at Grolier, Inc, in 1959, where he supervised the publication of a number of new encyclopedias and reference works. Martin was born in Detroit, Michigan.

### Martin, Steve (1945-)

#### born Stephen Glenn Martin

US comedian, actor, and writer. He wrote television comedy for others before perfecting his own routines for national television in 1975. After 1978 he became a successful film actor and director, drawing on a mix of slapstick and the absurd. His films include *The Jerk* (1979), *The Man with Two Brains* (1983), *Roxanne* (1987), *Dirty Rotten Scoundrels* (1988), *Parenthood* (1989), *Father of the Bride* (1991), *Grand Canyon* (1991), *L A Story* (1991), *Bowfinger* (1999), and *Bringing Down the* 

House (2003).

Martin was born in Waco, Texas. He published his first novel, *Shopgirl*, in 2001 and starred in the film adaptation in 2005.

## Martin, Theodore (1816-1909)

Scottish author. With W E Aytoun he wrote *The Bon <u>Gaultier</u> Ballads* 1845. In 1866 he was invited to write the official Life of the Prince Consort, which he produced in five volumes 1875-80. He also translated the *Odes* of <u>Horace</u>, <u>Dante'sLa vita nuova</u>, <u>Schiller</u>, and <u>Goethe'sFaust</u>. KCB 1880.

## Martin, Violet Florence (1862-1915)

#### pen-name *Martin Ross*

Irish novelist. Born in County Galway, Martin collaborated with her cousin Edith Somerville in the writing partnership <u>Somerville and Ross</u>, on tales of Anglo-Irish provincial life, such as *The Real Charlotte* (1894) and *Some Experiences of an Irish RM* (1899).

### Martin du Gard, Roger (1881-1958)

French novelist. He realistically recorded the way of life of the bourgeoisie in the eight-volume *Les Thibault/The World of the Thibaults* (1922-40), which follows the story of two families, one Catholic and the other Protestant. His style is lucid, detailed, and restrained, and he places his narrative against an objectively researched background of contemporary events. His ample construction allows a variety of incident and a careful building of character. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1937.

# Martineau, Harriet (1802-1876)

English journalist, economist, and novelist. She wrote popular works on economics; several novels, including *Deerbrook* (1839); children's stories, including *Feats on the Fiord* (1844); and articles in favour of the abolition of slavery. Her *Illustrations of Political Economy* (1832-34) consist of theoretical tracts roughly disguised as stories which reveal her passion for social reform. *Poor Laws and Paupers Illustrated* followed in 1833-34. Other works include *Society in America* (1837).

### Martinez de la Rosa, Francisco de Paula (1787-1862)

Spanish statesman. In 1812 he was elected to represent Granada in the Cortes, but was exiled by Ferdinand VII. In 1820 he was again elected, and again exiled. He then lived in France. In 1833 he was recalled to Spain and held various posts until 1861, twice being chief minister.

He was born in Granada. One of his ministries is famous for the treaty with Lord Clarendon, abolishing the slave trade. Some of his works are *Zaragoza* (1811), *La Viuda de Padilla* (1814), *Abn Humeya* (1830), *El Espiritu del Siglo/The Spirit of the Age* (1835-51).

#### Martínez Ruiz, José

real name of Azorín, Spanish author.

### Martín Fierro

influential Argentine epic poem written 1872-79 by José Hernández (1834-1886). Romantic and occasionally satirical, it describes the life of the *gaucho* or nomadic cattleman on the pampas just as his way of life was becoming extinct.

### Martinson, Harry Edmund (1904-1978)

Swedish poet and writer. He wrote vivid poetry including *Nomad* (1931), and prose sketches, *Kap Farvall/Cape Farewell* (1933). *Vägen till Klockrike/The Road to Klockrike* (1948) is a novel about a tramp at the turn of the century, but his most celebrated work is about space travel, the poetic epic *Aniara* (1956). The spaceship *Aniara* which flies irrevocably off course is a symbol of humanity in the atomic age. Martinson's later poetry consists of delicate miniatures from nature. He shared the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1974 with Eyvind Johnson.

### Marullus, Michael (c. 1453-1500)

Italian soldier and humanist poet. He was born in Ancona but claimed to be of Byzantine descent. In the 1470s, he spent his time fighting the Turks; in late 1494, he was in the French army invading Italy, but in 1500 he fought against Cesare Borgia and his French troops. Between these bouts of bloody activity, Marullus wrote *Epigrammata* and *Hymni naturales*, which imitated the Roman poets Horace, Catullus, and Lucretius (to the extent that he sounded, Erasmus complained, 'just

# Marvell, Andrew (1621-1678)

English <u>metaphysical poet</u> and satirist. In 'To His Coy Mistress' (1650-52) and 'An Horatian Ode upon Cromwell's Return from Ireland' (1650) he produced, respectively, the most searching seduction and political poems in the language. He was committed to the Parliamentary cause, and was Member of Parliament for Hull from 1659. He devoted his last years mainly to verse <u>satire</u> and prose works attacking repressive aspects of the state and government. Today his reputation rests mainly on a small number of skilful and graceful but perplexing and intriguing poems, which were published after his death as *Miscellaneous Poems* (1681).

Marvell was born in Winestead, and was educated at Hull Grammar School and Trinity College, Cambridge. At the outbreak of the Civil War his sympathies were not fixed, though he seems to have associated with the Royalists, but by the 1650s he was committed to the Parliamentary cause, acting as tutor to the daughter of Lord Fairfax, who had recently retired as a Parliamentary general. He probably wrote much of his lyric and philosophical poetry during his two years at Fairfax's Yorkshire seat, Nun Appleton House. He then became tutor to a ward of Oliver Cromwell's and, in 1657, assistant Latin secretary to the government, working under English poet John <u>Milton</u>. He became reconciled to the Restoration in 1660 and remained a loyal, if independent, critic of the political scene.

Marvell



#### (Image © Billie Love)

An oil painting of Andrew Marvell, the 17th-century English poet and satirist. Marvell was also involved in politics, serving as member of Parliament for Hull, counting John Milton as a friend, and acting as tutor to relatives of both Thomas Fairfax and Oliver Cromwell.

### Masefield, John (1878-1967)

English poet and novelist. His early years in the merchant navy inspired *Salt Water Ballads* (1902) and two further volumes of poetry, and several adventure novels; he also wrote children's books, such as *The Midnight Folk* (1927) and *The Box of Delights* (1935), as well as plays. *The Everlasting Mercy* (1911), characterized by its forcefully colloquial language, and *Reynard the Fox* (1919) are long verse narratives. He was poet laureate from 1930.

Born in Ledbury, Herefordshire, Masefield went to sea at the age of 15 and made the voyage round Cape Horn. He lived in the USA for three years and worked as a

barman in a New York saloon and in a carpet factory. Returning to England, he took a job as a bank clerk and then joined the *Manchester Guardian* before settling in London. He attracted notice by such volumes of poetry as *Salt Water Ballads*, but fame and notoriety came with the verse narrative of a drunkard's conversion *The Everlasting Mercy*, which shocked critics with its strong, often vulgar, colloquial tone. He wrote other long narrative poems, a form which he revived in England with some success, including *The Widow in the Bye Street* (1912), *The Daffodil Fields* (1913), and *Dauber* (1913), an epic poem of personality conflicts at sea. *Reynard the Fox* records a fox hunt and is notable for its Chaucerian character vignettes.

## Mason, A(Ifred) E(dward) W(oodley) (1865-1948)

English novelist. He is best known for a tale of cowardice redeemed in the Sudan, *The Four Feathers* (1902) (filmed 1939); historical novels such as *Fire Over England* (1936); and a series featuring the popular detective Inspector Hanaud of the Paris Sûreté, including *At the Villa Rose* (1910), *The Winding Stair* (1923), *The House of the Arrow* (1924), *The Prisoner of the Opal* (1929), and *The House in Lordship Lane* (1946).

### Mason, Bobbie Ann (1940-)

US writer. She is known for her portrayals of working-class people in her native Kentucky. Her novel *In Country* (1985; filmed 1989) was acclaimed for its portrayal of the impact of the Vietnam War on a rural Kentucky family.

Other works include the novels *Spence + Lila* (1988) and *Feather Crowns* (1993) and the story collections *Shiloh and Other Stories* (1982), *Love Life* (1989), and *Zigzagging Down a Wild Trail* (2001). Her memoir *Clear Springs: A Family Story* (1999) was a finalist for a Pulitzer Prize.

# Mason, Ronald Alison Kells (1905-1971)

New Zealand poet and dramatist. Classical studies influenced his characteristic stripped language, tense rhythms, and strict verse forms. These features, in combination with a sombre, sometimes macabre intensity of feeling were all apparent even in his precocious early collection *The Beggar* 1924, followed by *No New Thing* 1934. A more buoyant vision emerged in *This Dark Will Lighten* 1941.

An active trade unionist, he also wrote political journalism and 'committed' plays such as *Refugee* 1945.

### Mason, William (c. 1724-1797)

English poet. He was a profound admirer of the poet Thomas <u>Gray</u>, who praised his classical tragedy *Caractacus* 1759, but also pointed out his plagiarisms and his grammatical and other blunders. Mason edited the *Life and Letters of Gray* 1774.

#### Masses, The

US left-wing magazine that published many prominent radical writers 1911-17, including John Reed and Max Eastman. It was superseded by *The Liberator* 1918-25 and then by *New Masses*, which advanced the cause of proletarian writing during the Depression years of the 1930s.

### Massey, Gerald (1828-1907)

English poet and mystic. His first book of verse was published 1848 and was followed by several others; a selection from these was published in *My Lyrical Life* 1889. Later he wrote and lectured on spiritualism, and produced prose works on the origin of myths and mysteries. He also wrote on the sonnets of Shakespeare.

### Massingham, Harold John (1888-1952)

English journalist and nature writer. He wrote several studies of bird and animal life, folklore, and the English countryside. His works include *Some Birds of the Countryside* (1921), *Untrodden Ways* (1923), *Downland Man* (1926), *Country* (1934), *Genius of England* (1937), *The Fall of the Year* (1941), and *An Englishman's Year* (1948).

### Masters, Edgar Lee (1869-1950)

US poet. In *Spoon River Anthology* 1915, a collection of free-verse epitaphs, the people of a small town tell of their frustrated lives.

### Masters, John (1914-1983)

British novelist. Born in Calcutta (now Kolkata), he served in the Indian army 1934-47. He wrote a series of books dealing with the Savage family throughout the period of the Raj - for example, *Nightrunners of Bengal* (1951), *The Deceivers* (1952), and *Bhowani Junction* (1954).

# Mather, Cotton (1663-1728)

American theologian and writer. He was a Puritan minister in Boston, Massachusetts, and wrote over 400 works of history, science, annals, and theology, including *Magnalia Christi Americana/The Great Works of Christ in America* (1702), a vast compendium of early New England history and experience. Mather appears to have supported the Salem witch-hunts through his books, sermons, and influence as a religious leader.

### mathnavi

#### or masnavi or mathnawi

in Persian literature, a long narrative or didactic poem in which the two half-lines of each line rhyme, the rhyme changing from couplet to couplet. Among poets who used this form are Firdausi, Nizami, and Jalal-al-Din Rumi.

### Matthews, James Brander (1852-1929)

US writer. His critical works include *French Dramatists of the Nineteenth Century* 1881, *Aspects of Fiction* 1896 and 1902, *Molière, his Life and his Works* 1910, and *Playwrights on Playmaking* 1923. He also wrote a comedy, *Margery's Lovers* 1884, and several New York novels, including *Vignettes of Manhattan* 1894.

# Matthiessen, F(rancis) O(tto) (1902-1950)

US literary critic and educator. Among his many works on US authors, his American Renaissance: Art and Expression in the Age of Emerson and Whitman (1941) was a landmark in American cultural history and helped establish US literature as an academic subject. Other publications include Henry James: the Major Phase (1944) and Theodore Dreiser (1951).

Matthiessen was born in Pasadena, California. Educated at Yale, in 1923 he went to Oxford University, England, as a Rhodes Scholar. He was associate professor of history and literature at Harvard University from 1934 until 1942, when he committed suicide.

US writer. His novels, *At Play in the Fields of the Lord* (1965) and *Far Tortuga* (1975), as well as his short fiction, won critical acclaim, but he was best noted for his non-fiction work, such as *The Snow Leopard* (1978). In later years he became an eloquent spokesperson for saving the world's natural environments and wildlife.

Matthiessen was born in New York City. He studied at the Sorbonne in Paris, France (1948-49), and at Yale University, gaining his BA in 1950. He was a cofounder of the *Paris Review* (1951) and continued as an editor for the periodical. Long resident in Sagaponack, Long Island, New York, he captained a charter fishing boat (1954-56), and was a member of numerous expeditions to Akaska, Canada, Peru, Nepal, East Africa, and New Guinea.

### Maturin, Charles Robert (1782-1824)

Irish novelist and dramatist. Born into a Huguenot family in Dublin, Maturin was educated at Trinity College, Dublin, and ordained in 1803. He is best remembered for his 'horror' novels *Montario* (1807), *The Milesian Chief* (1812), and *Melmoth the Wanderer* (1820), which the French writer Honoré de Balzac considered one of the greatest novels in the English language. He also wrote several plays, including the tragedy *Bertram* (1816), which was successfully produced by Edmund Kean at Drury Lane, Londonderry, in 1816.

### Maugham, (William) Somerset (1874-1965)

English writer. His work includes the novels *Of Human Bondage* (1915), *The Moon and Sixpence* (1919), and *Cakes and Ale* (1930); the short-story collections *Ashenden* (1928) and *Rain and Other Stories* (1933); and the plays *Lady Frederick* (1907) and *Our Betters* (1917). There were new editions of *Collected Stories* in 1900 and *Selected Plays* in 1991. A penetrating observer of human behaviour, his writing is essentially anti-romantic and there is a vein of cynicism running through his work.

Maugham was born in Paris. He studied medicine at St Thomas's Hospital, London. He drew upon his medical experiences in his first novel, *Liza of Lambeth* (1897), and the success of that novel, and of *Mrs Craddock* (1902), made him decide upon a literary career. *Of Human Bondage* is once again set in the familiar world of the medical student; *The Moon and Sixpence* is partly based on the life of the artist Paul Gauguin; *Cakes and Ale* is about a famous novelist; and *The Razor's Edge* (1944) is the story of a young US war veteran. During World War I Maugham was a secret agent in Switzerland and Russia, and his *Ashenden* spy stories are based on this experience. Of his numerous other volumes of short stories, those with a Malayan or Pacific background are particularly well known.

#### 2nd Viscount Maugham

English writer. His successful novels included *The Servant* (1948; later filmed and dramatized), *November Reef* (1962), *The Green Shade* (1966), *The Second Window* (1968), and *The Link* (1969). Among his plays are *The Claimant* (1964) and *Enemy!* (1969). The nephew of Somerset <u>Maugham</u>, he wrote about the family in *Somerset and All the Maughams* (1966).

### Maupassant, (Henry René Albert) Guy de (1850-1893)

French author. He established a reputation with the short story 'Boule de suif/Ball of Fat' (1880) and wrote some 300 short stories in all. His novels include *Une Vie/A Woman's Life* (1883) and *Bel-Ami* (1885). He was encouraged as a writer by Gustave Flaubert.

### Maupin, Armistead (1944-)

US novelist and dramatist. His first six novels, from *Tales of the City* (1978) to *Sure of You* (1990), were revisions of a daily fiction serial in two newspapers in San Francisco, where they are set.

Through the characters in a run-down rooming house, Maupin gives a sharply delineated and ingeniously entertaining picture of urban life, especially gay life, that remains broadly optimistic even with the sad portrayal of AIDS in later volumes. He has also written the long-running play *Beach Blanket Babylon* (1975) and the words for the musical *Heart's Desire* (1990). Other novels include *Maybe the Moon* (1992) and *The Night Listener* (2000).

### Mauriac, François (1885-1970)

French novelist. His novels are studies, from a Roman Catholic standpoint, of the psychological and moral problems of the Catholic and provincial middle class, usually set in his native city of Bordeaux and the Landes region of southwestern France. *Le Baiser au lépreux/A Kiss for the Leper* (1922) describes the conflict of an unhappy marriage, while the irreconcilability of Christian practice and human nature is examined in *Fleuve de feu/River of Fire* (1923), *Le Désert de l'amour/The Desert of Love* (1925), and *Thérèse Desqueyroux* (1927). He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1952.

#### pen-name of Emile Herzog

French writer and biographer. During World War I he was attached to the British Army as a liaison officer, and the essays in *Les Silences du Colonel Bramble* (1918) and *Les Discours du Docteur O'Grady* (1920) offer humorously sympathetic observations on the British character. His other works include the semiautobiographical *Bernard Quesnay* (1926) and a large number of distinguished biographies intended to read as novels, such as *Ariel, ou la vie de Shelley* (1923), *La Vie de Disraëli* (1927), *Byron* (1930), *Voltaire* (1932), *Dickens* (1934), *Lélia, ou la vie de George Sand* (1952), *Olympia, ou la vie de Victor Hugo* (1953), and *Les Trois Dumas* (1957).

### Maurras, Charles Marie Photius (1868-1952)

French writer. The leading spirit of the extreme nationalist movement Action Française, he was imprisoned 1945-52 as a collaborator during the German occupation of France. His works include criticism, prose tales, and poetry, and his collected writings about World War I were published as *Les Conditions de la victoire/ The Terms of Victory* 1916-18.

### May, Thomas (1595-1650)

English writer. He wrote comedies and translated <u>Lucan's</u>*Pharsalia* 1627, which gained him the favour of Charles I, <u>Virgil's</u>*Georgics* 1628, and <u>Martial's</u>*Epigrams* 1629. His reputation as a prose writer rests on his *History of the Long Parliament* 1647, which purports to be impartial history but pleads the Parliamentary cause in the Civil War very skilfully.

### Mayakovsky, Vladimir Vladimirovich (1893-1930)

Russian Futurist poet. He combined revolutionary propaganda with efforts to revolutionize poetic technique in his poems *150,000,000* (1920) and *V I Lenin* (1924). His satiric play *The Bedbug* (1928) was taken in the West as an attack on philistinism in the USSR.

### Mayhew, Henry (1812-1887)

English journalist, author, and documentary writer. He was founder and co-editor of *Punch*. His principal book was the pioneering study *London Labour and the London Poor* (1851-62) - a collection of hundreds of pen-portraits of the poor people of London, which were serialized in the *Morning Chronicle*. Mayhew's studies brought

the extent of poverty to the attention of the middle classes, and helped to dispel the myth that the poor were responsible for their own poverty. He collaborated with his brother Augustus in *The Good Genius* (1847), *The Plague of Life* (1847), and *The Image of his Father* (1848).

### Maynard, François (1582-1646)

French poet. A favourite disciple of <u>Malherbe</u>, he was secretary to Marguerite de Valois and then magistrate in Aurillac. He was an original member of the French Academy. He generally sacrificed vigour to laborious correctness in his poems. His epigrams are his best work, but some of his odes are notable, including *La Belle Vieille* and *Alcippe*.

### Mayne Reid, Thomas

real name of Mayne Reid, Northern Irish writer.

## Mayo, Katherine (1868-1940)

US journalist and writer. Her books include *Justice to All* 1917, a critical study of the American police system; *That Damn Y* 1921, about the YMCA; *Isles of Fear* 1925, a criticism of US rule in the Philippines; and *Mother India* 1927, exposing the injustice of the Indian child-bride system.

### McInerney, Jay (1955-)

US novelist. His first novel, *Bright Lights, Big City* (1984), was a richly comic portrait of a bright young man in Manhattan society, and became a literary sensation. It was followed by *Ransom* (1985) and *The Story of My Life* (1988). His later work includes the novels *Brightness Falls* (1996), *The Last of the Savages* (1998), and *Model Behavior* (1998); and collections of short stories *New York Stories* (contributor, 1990) and *How it Ended* (2000).

### Medea

Greek tragedy by <u>Euripides</u>, produced 431 <sub>BC</sub>. It deals with the later part of the legend of Medea: her murder of Jason's bride and of her own children, after desertion by Jason.

### Mee, Arthur (1875-1943)

English editor and author. In 1906 he produced the *Harmsworth Self-Educator*, and various other works followed, notably *The Children's Encyclopedia*, which he edited 1908-33, and *The Harmsworth History of the World* 1907. He also founded and edited the *Children's Newspaper*.

### Megasthenes (c. 350-290 BC)

Greek historian and geographer. As ambassador of Seleucus I, King of Syria, to the Indian king Sandrocottus, he wrote *Indica*, of which large fragments survive. It provided a valuable source of information about India, used by later writers, including Strabo.

### Mehta, Ved Parkash (1934-)

Indian journalist. He was educated at blind schools in Bombay (now Mumbai), India, and the USA, and later at Oxford and Harvard. A staff writer for the *New Yorker* 1961-94 (he took US citizenship in 1975), he has written family and personal chronicles such as *Daddyji* (1971) and *The Ledge between the Streams* (1984), both part of his *Continents of Exile* series, as well as humane but deceptively mild-mannered essays on philosophical, theological, and historical issues collected in volumes such as *Fly and the Fly-Bottle* (1963).

### Meistersinger

#### (German 'master singer')

one of a group of German lyric poets, singers, and musicians of the 14th-16th centuries, who formed guilds for the revival of minstrelsy. Hans <u>Sachs</u> was a Meistersinger, and Wagner's opera *Die Meistersinger von Nürnberg/The Mastersingers of Nuremberg* (1868) depicts the tradition.

### Melcher, Frederic Gershom (1879-1963)

US editor and publisher. A contagiously enthusiastic book lover, he won prominence as manager of an Indiana bookstore (1913-18) that became a mecca for writers and artists. He was longtime coeditor of *Publisher's Weekly* magazine (1918-58) and also served as president of its parent company, R R Bowker (1934-59). An early promoter

of quality children's literature, he established the Newbery and Caldecott Medals for children's books. Melcher was born in Malden, Massachusetts.

### Meleager (lived 1st century BC)

Greek philosopher and epigrammatist. Born at Gadara in the Decapolis, he was educated at Tyre, but spent the remainder of his life on the island of Kos. He compiled an <u>anthology</u> of epigrams, known as the *Garland*, for which he wrote an introduction, comparing each poet to an appropriate flower. His own epigrams are mostly erotic, and successfully combine sophistication with feeling.

# Meléndez Valdés, Juan (1754-1817)

Spanish poet. He was a pastoral and lyric poet, and was influenced by the ideas of the French philosophical school. He fought for Napoleon in the Peninsular War and was exiled from Spain 1813. His poems include a number of odes and delicate musical elegies, which make him the greatest Spanish lyricist of the 18th century.

### Meli, Giovanni (1740-1815)

Italian poet. His canzonettas, odes, and epigrams are mostly in the Sicilian dialect; his pastorals are exquisite specimens of their kind. His *Favuli murali* resemble the fables of <u>La Fontaine</u>.

### Melville, Herman (1819-1891)

US writer. His novel <u>Moby-Dick</u> (1851) was inspired by his whaling experiences in the South Seas and is considered to be one of the masterpieces of American literature. *Billy Budd, Sailor*, completed just before his death and published in 1924, was the basis of an opera by Benjamin Britten (1951). Although most of his works were unappreciated during his lifetime, today he is one of the most highly regarded of US authors.

Melville's experiences as a sailor were also the basis for earlier fiction, such as the adventure narratives of *Typee* 1846 and *Omoo* 1847. He explored the dark, troubled side of American experience in novels of unusual form and great philosophical power. He was a friend of the novelist Nathaniel Hawthorne.

Spanish poet. A follower of the Italianate school of Iñigo López de Santillana, Dante's influence is also evident in the ideas, though not in the form, of his poems. Mena's chief work, *El laberinto de fortuna*, or *Las trescientas*, 1444, is a didactic allegory, visualizing and comparing past and present.

#### Ménage, Gilles (1613-1692)

French scholar and writer. He founded a salon known as the 'Mercuriales', which gained him a European reputation but also made him many enemies, including the writers Nicolas Boileau and Molière. His publications include *Les Origines de la langue française/The Origins of the French Language* 1650. *Menagiana*, a collection of his oral opinions, was published 1693.

#### Menard, Louis Nicolas (1822-1901)

French poet. He was a member of *Les <u>Parnassiens</u>*. His works include the epic poem *Promethée délivré* 1844, *Prologue d'une révolution* 1849 (based on his experiences in the 1848 revolution), *Poèmes* 1855, and *Rêveries d'un païen mystique* (prose and verse) 1876.

### Mencken, H(enry) L(ouis) (1880-1956)

US essayist and critic. He was known as 'the sage of Baltimore'. His unconventionally phrased, satiric contributions to the periodicals *The Smart Set* and *American Mercury* (both of which he edited) aroused controversy.

#### Mendele, Mokher Sefarim (1836-1917)

#### pseudonym of Shalom Jacob Abramowitsch

Russian writer, born in Belarus, who wrote in both Yiddish and Hebrew. He has been called 'the grandfather of Yiddish literature'. At first, he preferred the flexibility of Yiddish, and used it as the medium for many short stories and satirical plays, which helped establish a standard literary form of that language. He then turned to Hebrew and in 1868 published the novel *Ha-avot we-ha-vanim/Fathers and Sons*.

Mendele devised a new form of Hebrew, which incorporated many earlier styles, and in this he rewrote some of his former Yiddish works. *Kitsur massous Binyomin hashlishi/The Travels and Adventures of Benjamin the Third* 1875 is a survey of Jewish life in Russia.

### Mendès, Catulle (1841-1909)

French poet, novelist, playwright, and librettist. He was one of *Les <u>Parnassiens</u>*, and founded *La Revue fantaisiste* 1861. His poems include *Philoméla* 1864, *Poésies* 1876, 1885, and 1892, *Hesperus* 1872, and *La Grive des vignes* 1895. He also wrote plays, novels, and critical works, such as *Richard Wagner* (1886), *L'Art au théâtre* (1897-1900), and *Le Mouvement poétique français de 1867 à 1900* (1903).

## Menéndez y Pelayo, Marcelino (1856-1912)

Spanish writer and critic. His extreme Catholic orthodoxy is revealed in his popular essays and in his *Historia de los heterodoxos españoles/History of Spanish Heterodoxies* 1880-86. *Calderón y su teatro/Calderón and his Theatre* 1881 and *Historia de las ideas estéticas en España/History of Aesthetic Ideas in Spain* 1883-91, 1903-12 are monuments of literary criticism.

### Menken, Adah Isaacs (1835-1868)

US actor and poet. She was very successful in *Mazeppa* in London, England, in 1864. Among her literary friends were Charles Dickens, to whom she dedicated her *Infelicia* (1868), and Algernon Swinburne, whose poem 'Dolores' (1864) was inspired by her.

### Merat, Albert (1840-1909)

French poet. He was one of *Les <u>Parnassiens</u>*. His volumes of poetry include *Les Chimères* 1866, *Les Villes de marbre* 1874, *Au fil de l'eau* 1877, *Poèmes de Paris* 1880, and *Vers le soir* 1900.

### Merchant of Venice, The

comedy by William <u>Shakespeare</u>, first performed 1596-97. Antonio, a rich merchant, borrows money from Shylock, a Jewish moneylender, promising a pound of flesh if the sum is not repaid; when Shylock presses his claim, the heroine, Portia, disguised as a lawyer, saves Antonio's life.

### Mercier, Louis Sébastien (1740-1814)

French writer. He wrote dramas, including *Le Déserteur* 1770, *La Brouette du vinaigrier* 1775, *Le Campagnard* 1779, and *Le Vieillard et ses trois filles* 1792; critical works, including *Du théâtre, ou Nouvel essai sur l'art dramatique* 1773 and *De la littérature et des littérateurs* 1778; a *Néologie ou vocabulaire des mots nouveaux* 1801; and books on Paris.

# Meredith, George (1828-1909)

English novelist and poet. His realistic psychological novel *The Ordeal of Richard Feverel* (1859) engendered both scandal and critical praise. His best-known novel, *The Egoist* (1879), is superbly plotted and dissects the hero's self-centredness with merciless glee. The sonnet sequence *Modern Love* (1862) reflects the failure of his own marriage to the daughter of Thomas Love <u>Peacock</u>. Other novels include *Evan Harrington* (1861), *Diana of the Crossways* (1885), and *The Amazing Marriage* (1895). His verse also includes *Poems and Lyrics of the Joy of Earth* (1883).

Although Meredith's writings have never been generally popular, his genius was immediately recognized by discerning critics. His style is characterized by great fastidiousness in the choice of words, phrases, and condensation of thought; few other writers have attempted to charge sentences, and even words, so heavily with meaning.

### Meredith, Scott (1923-1993)

US literary agent. He tried his hand at writing short stories before founding the Scott Meredith Literary Agency with his brother in 1946. P G Wodehouse was his first prominent client; he later represented many best-selling authors including Norman Mailer. He introduced the concept of auctioning a book to the highest bidding publisher. His *Writing to Sell*, a how-to guide for aspiring authors, was still in print at the time of his death. Meredith was born in New York City.

### Meres, Francis (1565-1647)

English clergyman and critic. In 1598 he published *Palladis Tamia, Wit's Treasury*, a review of English writers from Chaucer to his own day, containing valuable references to Shakespeare's early works.

Merezhkovski, Dmitri Sergeevich (1865-1941)

Russian writer and religious philosopher. His chief influence was as a popularizer of French <u>Symbolism</u> in the 1890s, promoter of a 'new religious consciousness' after 1900, and prophet of a religious revolution after 1905. His poetry includes *Simvoly/ Symbols* 1892; he also wrote drama, essays, novels, and translations.

In 1893 Merezhkovski published the influential essay 'On the Reasons for the Decline and on the New Trends in Contemporary Russian Literature', criticizing populist realist literature and advocating Symbolism and a literature of the transcendant. He also helped to introduce the philosophy of Friedrich Nietzsche to Russia. His novels include Julian the Apostate 1896 and Leonardo da Vinci 1901.

## Mérimée, Prosper (1803-1870)

French author. Among his works are the short novels *Mateo Falcone* (1829), *Colomba* (1841), *Carmen* (1846) (the basis for Bizet's opera), and the *Lettres à une inconnue/ Letters to an Unknown Girl* (1873). Romantically set in foreign countries, his stories nevertheless have a realistic background of local colour and atmosphere.

Born in Paris, the son of a painter, Merimée studied law and entered the public service. He became inspector general of historic monuments and under Napoleon III was employed on unofficial diplomatic missions. His literary career began with six dramatic pieces which he attributed to an imaginary Spanish actor, Clara Gazul (*Le Théâtre de Clara Gazul/The Theatre of Clara Gazul* 1825), and continued with a further hoax in the form of a collection of supposed IIIyrian folksongs, signed 'La Guzla'. After these highly Romantic works, he turned to writing the short novels which were to bring him lasting fame.

### Mermaid Tavern

public house formerly in Cheapside, London. It was destroyed by the Fire of London in 1666. The Mermaid Club was founded there in about 1603, reputedly by Walter Raleigh, the adventurer and writer. The club's members may have included literary figures such as Ben Jonson, Francis Beaumont, John Fletcher, John Donne, Thomas Carew, and William Shakespeare.

The Mermaid Theatre, opened in 1957, revived the name.

### Merrie England

book published in 1893 by socialist journalist Robert Blatchford (1851-1943), calling nostalgically for an end to industrialism and a return to the rural way of life in England.

### Merrill, James (Ingram) (1926-)

US poet and writer. He wrote plays and novels, but is best known for his elegant, elliptical poetry as in *The Changing Light at Sandover* (1982), which also revealed his involvement with the occult. The son of the wealthy stockbroker Charles Merrill, he born in New York City. He studied at Amherst College, gaining his BA in 1947. He lived overseas for many years, but maintained a home in Stonington, Connecticut.

### Merrill, Stuart (1863-1915)

US-born French poet. He became well known as a master of the intricacies of French Symbolist poetry (see <u>Symbolism</u>). In 1897 he published *Poèmes 1887-1897*, followed by *Les Quatre Saisons* 1900, *Une Voix dans la foule* 1909, and *Prose et vers* 1925.

Merriman, Brian (1747-1805)

#### also known as Bryan Mac Giolla Meidre

Irish Gaelic poet. Born in Ennistymon, County Clare, Merriman became a schoolmaster and small farmer in Feakle, and later settled in Limerick as a mathematics teacher. His reputation rests on a single work, the 1,000-line mockheroic epic *Cúirt an Mheáin Oíche/The Midnight Court* which he wrote in around 1786. An attack on Irish Catholic puritanism, the poem was the subject of fierce controversy between religious traditionalists and liberal intellectuals in post-independence Ireland.

Merriman's work was banned after Irish independence, but only in English translation (the Irish language was deemed incapable of being a corrupting influence). An English translation of Merriman's work by Frank O'Connor appeared in the *Penguin Book of Irish Verse* (1970). The Merriman Summer School has been held annually in Clare in August since 1967.

### Merriman, Henry Seton (1862-1903)

#### pseudonym of Hugh Stowell Scott

English novelist. Among his best-known works are *In Kedar's Tents* 1897, *Roden's Corner* 1898, *The Isle of Unrest* 1900, *The Velvet Glove* 1901, *The Vultures* 1902, *Barlasch of the Guard* 1903, and *The Last Hope* 1904.

# Merritt, LeRoy Charles (1912-1970)

#### adopted name of LeRoy Charles Schimmelpfennig

US library educator. Appointed librarian and associate professor of librarianship at Longwood College in Virginia (1942-46), he was also in charge of library materials at the US Army Special Services Headquarters in Paris, France (1944-45). He moved to the University of California School of Librarianship at Berkeley (1946-66) and then became the first dean of the Library School of the University of Oregon (1966-70). Many of his publications are in the area of book selection, library administration, and intellectual freedom. He was editor of the American Library Association *Newsletter on Intellectual Freedom* (1962-70). Merritt was born in Milwaukee, Wisconsin.

### Merton, Thomas (James) (1915-1968)

French-born US Catholic monk and writer. He converted from agnosticism to Catholicism and in 1941 entered a Trappist monastery at Gethsemani, Kentucky, taking the name Louis. His autobiography, *The Seven Storey Mountain* (1948), became a best-seller and made him a Catholic folk hero. He continued to write poetry and religious works, and after his ordination in 1949, served as master of students, then master of novices. Also drawn to solitude, he won permission to live as a hermit on his monastery's grounds (from 1965).

Merton was born in Prades, France. Following his mother's premature death, he was raised in France, England, and the USA. He earned bachelor's and master's degrees in English from Columbia University. In later life he was increasingly preoccupied with social concerns and he became a major figure in the 1960s antiwar movement. In 1968 he was allowed to pursue a growing interest in Oriental mysticism by visiting the Far East; while attending a religious conference in Thailand he was apparently electrocuted by a faulty fan in his hotel room.

### Merwin, W(illiam) S(tanley) (1927-)

US poet. He is known for his plays, prose parables, and translations as well as for his surrealistic poetry, as in *Opening the Hand* (1983).

Merwin was born in New York City. He studied at Princeton University, gaining his BA in 1947. He then tutored Robert Graves's son in Majorca, Spain, in 1950, and was subsequently based in England, France, and Hawaii. In 1998 he was awarded the Ruth Lilly Poetry Prize.

#### born Grace Repentigny

US novelist. She wrote many short stories but made headlines with *Peyton Place* (1956), an exposé of life in a small New England town, which was made into a film in 1957 and a long-running television series.

### metaphysical poets

group of early 17th-century English poets whose work is characterized by ingenious, highly intricate wordplay and unlikely or paradoxical imagery. They used rhetoric and literary devices, such as paradox, hyperbole (exaggeration), and elaborately developed <u>conceits</u> (far-fetched comparisons), in such a way as to engage the reader by their humour, strangeness, or sheer outrageousness. English poets John <u>Donne</u> and Andrew <u>Marvell</u> write comic, erotic, and serious poetry in this genre, while English poet George <u>Herbert</u> concentrated on religious themes.

As originally used, the term 'metaphysical' implied a criticism of these poets; Samuel <u>Johnson</u>, for example, complained that their poetry was laden with too much farfetched learning. Their reputation declined after the <u>Restoration</u> but underwent a dramatic revival in the 20th century, prompted by T S <u>Eliot's</u> essay 'The Metaphysical Poets' (1921).

### Metastasio (1698-1782)

#### pen-name of Pietro Armando Dominico Trapassi

Italian poet and librettist. In 1730 he became court poet to Charles VI in Vienna. Acknowledged as the leading librettist of his day, he created 18th-century Italian opera seria (serious opera). His chief dramatic works are *Didone abbandonata*, *Catone in Utica*, *Olimpiade*, and *La clemenza di Tito*. Among the composers who used his work were Scarlatti, Handel, J C Bach, Mozart, and Gluck. He also wrote some beautiful canzonette.

### Metcalf, Keyes (Dewitt) (1889-1983)

US librarian and educator. As director of the Harvard University Library (1936-54), he expanded the holdings and services of Widener Library and added two important smaller libraries, Houghton and Lamont. Metcalf was born in Elyria, Ohio.

English poet. She published two books of verse, *The Farmer's Bride* 1915 and *The Rambling Sailor* 1929. Thomas Hardy thought her the best woman poet of her time, and she has been compared with Emily <u>Dickinson</u>.

### Meyer, Conrad Ferdinand (1825-1898)

Swiss poet and novelist, born in Zürich. He was bilingual, and only decided to write in German after the war of 1870. His first work was the verse collection *Zwanzig Balladen von einem Schweizer* 1864, followed in 1871 by *Romanzen und Bilder*. His prose shows the same desire for absolute perfection; the two best-known novels, *Jürg Jenatsch* 1876 and *Der Heilige* 1880, are full of life and action, blended with the cool observation of the realist.

# Meynell, Alice Christiana Gertrude (1847-1922)

### born Alice Christiana Gertrude Thompson

English poet and essayist. She published *Preludes* (1875) and several other slim volumes of poetry, concluding with *Last Poems* (1923). Her writing is similar to that of Christina <u>Rossetti</u> in its delicate craftsmanship. Her essays were collected in *The Rhythm of Life* (1893), *The Colour of Life* (1896), and *The Spirit of Place* (1898). She married the author and journalist Wilfrid Meynell (1852-1948).

# Meynell, Wilfrid (1852-1948)

English poet, essayist, and journalist. He edited periodicals and wrote stories, verse, and articles, sometimes under his own name and sometimes as 'John Oldcastle', 'Francis Phillimore', or anonymously. He discovered the poet Francis Thompson, who for 19 years was an adopted son in the Meynell household. He was married to Alice <u>Meynell</u>.

His works include *The Man Disraeli* 1903, *Verses and Reverses* 1912, *Aunt Sarah and the War* 1914, *Rhymes With Reasons* 1918, and *Come and See* 1919.

# Michaux, Henri (1899-1984)

Belgian poet. His adventurous life is reflected in his novels and, in the surrealist manner, in his poems and prose poems, *Espace du dedans* 1944, *Ailleurs* 1948, and *La Vie dans les plis* 1950.

## Michener, James A(lbert) (1907-1997)

US writer. He made a vast fortune from writing epic novels and gave away much of this money. His Pulitzer prize-winning *Tales of the South Pacific* (1947) was adapted as the musical *South Pacific*.

He began his career as a teacher and writer on social studies. In 1944 he went to the South Pacific as a naval historian, where he gathered much of the background detail for his first work, *Tales of the South Pacific* (1947). This collection became the template for Michener's working method thereafter: his approach being to fictionalize a detailed and well-researched groundbase of historical and geographical material gathered on a grand scale and over a period of several years. Other novels include *The Bridges of Toko-ri* (1953), *Sayonara* (1954), *Hawaii* (1959), *The Source* (1965), and *The Covenant* (1980).

### Mickiewicz, Adam Bernard (1798-1855)

Polish revolutionary poet. His *Pan Tadeusz* (1832-34) is Poland's national epic. He died in Constantinople while raising a Polish corps to fight against Russia in the Crimean War.

### Middlemarch: A Study of Provincial Life

novel by George <u>Eliot</u>, first published in 1871-72. Set in the fictitious provincial town of Middlemarch, the novel has several interwoven plots played out against a background of social and political upheaval.

### Middleton, Richard Barham (1882-1911)

English poet and prose writer. His *Poems and Songs* (two series), *The Ghost Ship*, a collection of stories, and *The Day before Yesterday*, a book of essays containing delightful child studies after the manner of Kenneth <u>Grahame</u>, were all published posthumously 1912.

His *Letters to Henry Savage* appeared 1929 and *The Pantomime Man*, a book of prose pieces, 1933.

comedy by William <u>Shakespeare</u>, first performed in 1595-96. Hermia, Lysander, Demetrius, and Helena in their various romantic endeavours are subjected to the playful manipulations of the fairies Puck and Oberon in a wood near Athens. Titania, queen of the fairies, is similarly bewitched and falls in love with Bottom, a stupid weaver, whose head has been replaced with that of an ass.

### Migne, Jacques Paul (1800-1875)

French curate and religious publisher. Migne published a gigantic series of essential texts of the Catholic Faith, including *Patrologia latin* 1844-55 in 218 volumes, and *Patrologia graeca* 1857-66 in 166 volumes. In all, he published over 1,000 volumes. At the peak of his activity, he employed some 600 staff, and used innovative methods to achieve high sales, including special subscription offers. It took 49 editors to compile the index to his Patrologies.

### Mikes, George (1912-1987)

Hungarian-born English writer. The best known of his many humorous books are the shrewdly comic descriptions of national types and foibles, such as *How to be an Alien* (1946), *How to Scrape Skies* (1948), *Über Alles* (1953), *Switzerland for Beginners* (1962), and *Land of the Rising Yen* (1970).

Other books are *Shakespeare and Myself* (1952), *How to be Inimitable* (1960), *How to be Affluent* (1966), and *The Spy who Died of Boredom* (1973).

### Mikes, Kelemen (1690-1761)

Retainer of Francis Rákóczi II of Transylvania (1676-1735), whom he followed into exile after Rákóczi's leadership of a Hungarian revolt against Austria. His *Letters from Turkey* is the finest Hungarian prose work of the period.

### Mikhailovski, Nikolai Konstantinovich (1842-1904)

Russian populist and literary critic, a leading theorist of agrarian socialism. His writings include the political article 'Chto takoe progress?/What is progress?' 1873.

### Mikszáth, Kálmán (1847-1910)

Hungarian writer. A prolific novelist, short-story writer, and journalist, Mikszáth

satirized the contemporary society of the Hungarian countryside with irony and humour. He was one of the first to use dialect in the novel. Among his works are *Különös házassag/A Strange Marriage* 1900, *Szent Péter esernyöje/St Peter's Umbrella* 1895, and *A beszélö köntös/The Magic Caftan* 1899.

### Milam, Carl Hastings (1884-1963)

US librarian. He was director of the Birmingham Public Library in Alabama (1913-19), where he opened the first branch for service to African-Americans. During World War I, he was assistant director and then general director of the American Library Association's Library War Service (1917-20). In 1920 he became secretary of the American Library Association and his 28-year tenure in this post gave rise to his nickname, 'Mr ALA'. In 1948 he became director of the newly formed United Nations Library, where he served until retiring in 1950. Milam was born in Harper County, Kansas.

### Millar, Kenneth

US writer; see Ross Macdonald.

# Millay, Edna St Vincent (1892-1950)

US poet and playwright known for her romantic, rhythmic poetry. She won the Pulitzer Prize for her poetry collection *The Harp Weaver* in 1923, making her the first woman to receive the Pulitzer Prize for poetry.

Millay became a bestselling poet and well known literary figure in avant garde circles and sometimes provoked controversy with her poetry about female sexuality and feminism. Her other volumes of poetry include *Renascence and Other Poems* (1917), *A Few Figs from Thistles* (1920), *The Buck in the Snow* (1928), *Fatal Interview* (1931), and *Wine from these Grapes* (1934). She has also published three plays in verse, including *The Lamp and the Bell* (1921). The phrase 'my candle burns at both ends' derives from her poem 'First Fig'.

### Miller, Henry Valentine (1891-1980)

US writer. From 1930 to 1940 he lived a bohemian life in Paris, where he wrote his fictionalized, sexually explicit, autobiographical trilogy *Tropic of Cancer* (1934), *Black Spring* (1936), and *Tropic of Capricorn* (1938). They were banned in the USA and England until the 1960s.

Born in New York City, Miller settled in Big Sur, California, in 1944 and wrote the autobiographical *The Rosy Crucifixion* trilogy, consisting of *Sexus* 1949, *Plexus* 1949, and *Nexus* 1957 (published as a whole in the USA 1965). Inspired by surrealism, Miller was a writer of exuberant and comic prose fuelled by anarchist passion, and was later adopted as a guru by the followers of the <u>Beat Generation</u>. His other works include *The Colossus of Maroussi* 1941, *The Air-Conditioned Nightmare* 1945, a vitriolic and apocalyptic vision of American culture, and *The Time of the Assassins* 1956, a portrait of the French poet Rimbaud.

### Miller, Hugh (1802-1856)

Scottish writer and geologist. He published *Poems* 1829 and *Scenes and Legends of the North of Scotland* 1835 and wrote a series of strikingly original geological essays, collected in *The Old Red Sandstone* 1841. In this, and in *Rambles of a Geologist*, he was the first to present geological information in a popular form.

## Miller, Joaquin (1839-1913)

#### pseudonym of Cincinnatus Hiner Miller

US poet. He wrote *Songs of the Sierras* 1871, *The Danites in the Sierras* 1880 (a play about Mormonism), *History of Montana* 1886, and *The Building of the City Beautiful* 1897, a philosophical work.

# Miller, Perry (Gilbert Eddy) (1905-1963)

US literary historian and educator. He pioneered the serious historical study of colonial literature and theology in his most influential work, *The New England Mind: The Seventeenth Century* (1939), reinterpreting the Puritans through the lens of intellectual history. His studies of Jonathan Edwards (1949), and Roger Williams (1953), among other published works, established Miller as a preeminent US intellectual historian. Miller was born in Chicago, Illinois. He was educated at the University of Chicago and taught American history at Harvard University (1931-63), with time out to serve in World War II.

## Miller, William (1810-1872)

Scottish poet. He is remembered for his poem 'Wee Willie Winkie' which, with others of his *Scottish Nursery Songs* 1863, led him to be called the laureate of the nursery.

## Millin, Sarah Gertrude (1889-1968)

#### born Sarah Gertrude Liebson

South African writer, born in Lithuania. A prolific author who published 17 novels, one collection of short stories, and 13 works of nonfiction, Millin is regarded as the arch-racist of South African literature in English. She is best known for the novel *God's Step-Children* (1924), which displays her characteristic obsession with interracial relations, biological determinism, and racial segregation.

### Mill on the Floss, The

novel (1860) by George <u>Eliot</u>. The central character is Maggie Tulliver, clever and lively daughter of the miller of Dorlcote Mill on the River Floss. Her entanglement with the deformed Philip Wakem, son of her father's enemy, and Stephen Guest, her cousin's betrothed, leads to the tragic conclusion in which Maggie and her brother Tom are drowned by the flooding river.

# Milne, A(lan) A(lexander) (1882-1956)

English writer. He is best known as the author of <u>Winnie-the-Pooh</u> (1926) and The House at Pooh Corner (1928), based on the teddy bear and other toys of his son Christopher Robin, with illustrations by E H Shepard. He also wrote children's verse, including When We Were Very Young (1924) and Now We Are Six (1927). He was an accomplished dramatist whose plays included Wurzel-Flummery (1917), Mr Pim Passes By (1920), The Dover Road (1922), and Toad of Toad Hall (1929), an adaptation of Kenneth <u>Grahame's The Wind in the Willows</u>.

## Milosz, Czeslaw (1911-2004)

Polish-born US writer. He became a diplomat before defecting and becoming a US citizen. His poetry in English translation, classical in style, includes *Selected Poems* (1973) and *Bells in Winter* (1978). He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1980.

His collection of essays *The Captive Mind* (1953) concerns the impact of communism on Polish intellectuals. Among his novels are *The Seizure of Power* (1955), *The Issa Valley* (1981), and *The Land of Ulro* (1984).

English poet and prose writer. His epic <u>Paradise Lost</u> (1667) is one of the landmarks of English literature. Early poems, including *Comus* (a masque performed in 1634) and *Lycidas* (an elegy, 1638), showed Milton's outstanding lyric gift. He also wrote many pamphlets and prose works, including *Areopagitica* (1644), which opposed press censorship.

Born in Cheapside, London, and educated at St Paul's School and Christ's College, Cambridge, Milton was a scholarly poet, ambitious to match the classical epics, and with strong theological views. He published prose works on republicanism and church government. His middle years were devoted to the Puritan cause and writing pamphlets, including The Doctrine and Discipline of Divorce (1643), which may have been based on his own experience of marital unhappiness. In 1643 Milton married Mary Powell, the 17-year-old daughter of an Oxfordshire cavalier. After an attempt to seek a divorce, she returned to Milton and three daughters were born of the marriage; they later became his somewhat unwilling scribes. In 1649 Milton's reputation as a Latinist led to his appointment as Latin secretary to the Council of State. During his time as secretary to the lord protector, Oliver Cromwell and the Council of State, Milton's assistants, as his sight failed, included English poet Andrew Marvell. In 1652 his wife died and four years later he married Katherine Woodcock; both she and their baby daughter died in childbirth in 1658. At the Restoration he was deprived of his office, and had to go into hiding; but on the intercession of Marvell, and perhaps English poet and dramatist William <u>Davenant</u>, his name was included in the amnesty. In 1663 he married his third wife, Elizabeth Minshull, aged 25, who appears to have given him domestic happiness in his last years. Paradise Lost and the less successful sequel Paradise Regained (1671) were written when he was blind and in some political danger (after the restoration of Charles II), as was the dramatic poem Samson Agonistes (1671). In addition to his blindness, Milton suffered from gout; his strength gradually declined. He died in 1674 and was buried in the chancel of St Giles, Cripplegate, London.

## Mimnermus (lived 7th century BC)

Greek elegiac poet, a native of Colophon in Ionia. He was the first to use elegiac verse (see <u>elegy</u>) as a vehicle of mourning and erotic feeling. The surviving fragments of his work deal with love, old age, and war. The collection *Nanno*, the name of a beloved flute-player, contains reflections on the short-lived joys of youth.

# Minarik, Else Holmelund (1920-)

Danish-born writer who emigrated to the USA in 1924. Also a reporter and teacher, Minarik became known for her children's books, primarily the *Little Bear* (1957) series, illustrated by Maurice <u>Sendak</u>.

## Minot, Laurence (c. 1300-1352)

English poet. He wrote 11 songs celebrating the triumphs of Edward III which are written in the Northumbrian dialect, with a sprinkling of Midland forms. They were first published 1795 under the title *Poems on Interesting Events in the Reign of King Edward III*.

## Mirbeau, Octave Henri Marie (1850-1917)

French writer. Among his better-known novels, naturalistic in style, are *Le Calvaire* 1887, *Le Jardin des supplices* 1899, *Le Journal d'une femme de chambre* 1900, *Les Vingt-et-un jours d'un neurasthénique* 1901, and *Dingo* 1913. Of his plays, *Les Mauvais bergers* 1897 depicts the struggle between capital and labour, and *Les Affairs sont les affaires* 1903 is a vigorous social play.

# Miró, Gabriel (1879-1930)

Spanish novelist. He produced numerous novels, including *Las cerezas del cementerio/The Cherries of the Graveyard* 1910, *El abuelo del rey/The King's Grandfather* 1917, and *El humo dormido/The Sleeping Smoke* 1919, all manifesting an immense sensitivity to natural beauty. His two later novels about 'Oleza' (the town of Orihuela), *Nuestro Padre San Daniel/Our Father Saint Daniel* 1921 and *El obispo leproso/The Leprous Bishop* 1925, have slowly gained recognition as among the finest and most complex works in modern Spanish literature.

#### Miron, Gaston (1928-1996)

Canadian poet. His mature work was both emotional and political, advocating separatism for Québec, his native province. The volume *L'Homme rapaille* (1970) contains both poems and essays celebrating the sadness and alienation of the Québécois - part of it, with other poems, was translated as *The Agonized Life* (1980).

The Marxist-separatist journal *Parti Pris* (1963-68), as well as his public readings, brought Miron to a diverse political and literary audience.

## Mirrlees, Hope (1887-1978)

British writer whose fantasy novel *Lud-in-the-Mist* 1926 contrasts the supernatural with the real world.

## Mirror for Magistrates

English book published in 1559 consisting of 19 tragic stories written in verse written by various authors. The stories are told by figures from English history - such as Richard III and Edward VI - who describe their rise to power and subsequent downfall. The book became very popular (enlarged editions appeared in 1563, 1578, and 1610) and influenced Shakespeare's history plays.

### Misanthrope, The

#### French Le Misanthrope

comedy by Molière, first produced in France in 1666. The play contrasts the noble ideals of Alceste with the worldliness of his lover Célimène.

#### Misérables, Les

novel by Victor <u>Hugo</u>, published in France in 1862. On release from prison, Jean Valjean attempts to hide his past by assuming a series of false identities. He cares for a young girl, Cosette, who believes Valjean to be her father. When she marries he reveals the truth but dies a broken man.

The novel was adapted as a musical by Alain Boublil and Claude-Michel Schönberg in Paris in 1980 and went on to enjoy huge international success.

#### Mishima, Yukio (1925-1970)

#### pen-name of Hiraoka Kimitake

Japanese novelist. His work often deals with sexual desire and perversion, as in *Confessions of a Mask* (1949) and *The Temple of the Golden Pavilion* (1956). He committed hara-kiri (ritual suicide) as a protest against what he saw as the corruption of the nation and the loss of the samurai warrior tradition.

#### Mistral, Frédéric (1830-1914)

Provencal poet. In 1854, with Joseph Roumanille, Théodore <u>Aubanel</u>, and four other poets, he founded the Félibrige, an association for the cultivation of Provençal language and literature. Among the most noteworthy of Mistral's works are *Miréio* (1859) and *Calendau* (1867), epic poems on Provençal themes; *Lis Isclo d'Or/Islands* 

of Gold (1875) and Lis Oulivado (1912), volumes of lyric poems; Lou Pouemo dou Rose/The Song of the Rhone (1897) and Lou Trésor dou Félibrige (1878-86), a dictionary of Provençal and related dialects. He shared the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1904 with José Echegaray.

## Mistral, Gabriela (1889-1957)

#### pen-name of Lucila Godoy de Alcayaga

Chilean poet. She wrote *Sonnets of Death* (1915) and was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1945.

She was consul of Chile in Spain, and represented her country at the League of Nations and the United Nations.

# Mitchel, John (1815-1875)

Irish journalist and political activist. Born in Dungiven, County Londonderry, and educated at Trinity College, Dublin, Mitchel wrote extreme nationalist articles for *The Nation* before working on the *United Irishman* with James Clarence <u>Mangan</u> and James Fintan Lalor. In 1848 he was convicted of treason-felony and transported, eventually reaching Van Diemen's Land (now Tasmania). His *Jail Journal, or Five Years in British Prisons* (1854) is a central 19th-century text of anti-British imperialism and Irish nationalism. He escaped in 1853 and settled in the USA, returning to Ireland in 1875, where he died at Newry just days after being elected to Westminster as member of Parliament for County Tipperary.

Mitchel's published works also include *The History of Ireland From the Treaty of Limerick to the Present Time* (1868) and an 1859 edition of Mangan's poetry.

## Mitchell, Adrian (1932-)

English writer. His witty and political work includes the verse collections *Poems* (1964), *The Apeman Cometh* (1975), *For Beauty Douglas: Collected Poems* 1953-1979 (1982), and *Greatest Hits* (1991). His work also includes several novels and a number of plays, including *Tiger* (1971) and *Man Friday* (1972; filmed 1975).

Mitchell was born in London and studied at Oxford University. He first came to notice with *Poems* (1955), a collection of politically committed, left-wing lyrics which recall the work of German writer Bertolt Brecht and English poet W H Auden. Among his novels is *The Bodyguard* (1970), a funny yet chilling science fiction story set in Britain in the 1980s. He has also written several television scripts.

# Mitchell, James Leslie

real name of Scottish novelist Lewis Grassic Gibbon.

## Mitchell, Margaret (1900-1949)

US novelist. She was born in Atlanta, Georgia, which is the setting for her one book, the best-seller *Gone With the Wind* (1936; Pulitzer Prize), a story of the US Civil War. It was filmed in 1939 and starred Vivien Leigh and Clark Gable.

## Mitchell, Silas Weir (1829-1914)

US physician, writer, and poet. A pioneer in advocating the 'rest cure' and other psychological approaches to nervous conditions, and he made the Philadelphia Orthopedic Hospital into a major center for treating nervous disorders.

Born in Philadelphia, he received his MD from Jefferson Medical College, continued his medical studies in France, and then returned to Philadelphia to practice. During the Civil War, he served as a surgeon for the Union army and collaborated on an important work, *Gunshot Wounds and Other Injuries of Nerves* (1864). In the ensuing decades he specialized in neurology and wrote some 120 articles in that field, but he also did work in toxicology, physiology, and pharmacology. Meanwhile, he had been writing fiction and poetry since the end of the Civil War; his first published story, *The Case of George DedIow* (1866), was notable for conveying the mental state of a soldier about to enter combat. His collected works would eventually add up to 16 volumes, including once widely read novels such as *Roland Blake* (1886) and *Hugh Wayne, Free Quaker* (1897), greatly admired for their psychological insights.

## Mitchison, Naomi Mary Margaret (1897-1999)

#### born Naomi Haldane

Scottish writer. She wrote more than 70 books, including *The Conquered* (1923), *The Corn King and the Spring Queen* (1931), and *The Blood of the Martyrs* (1939), novels evoking ancient Greece and Rome. A socialist activist, she also campaigned for birth control.

The settings of other novels range from prehistoric Scotland and the Holy Roman Empire to Africa (she was made a tribal adviser in Botswana in 1963) and even distant galaxies (*Memoirs of a Spacewoman*, 1962). She has also written short stories, plays, poetry, and five volumes of autobiography, culminating in *As It Was* (1988).

## **Mitford sisters**

The six daughters of British aristocrat 2nd Lord Redesdale, including: Nancy (1904-1973), author of the semi-autobiographical *The Pursuit of Love* (1945) and *Love in a Cold Climate* (1949), and editor and part author of the satirical essays collected in *Noblesse Oblige* (1956) elucidating 'U' (upper-class) and 'non-U' behaviour; **Diana** (1910-2003), who married British fascist Oswald Mosley; **Unity** (1914-1948), who became an admirer of Hitler; and Jessica (1917-), author of the autobiographical *Hons and Rebels* (1960) and *The American Way of Death* (1963).

# Miyamoto, Musashi (c. 1584-1645)

Japanese samurai. His manual on military strategy and sword fighting, *Gorinsho/The Book of Five Rings* (1645), became popular in English translation in 1974 in the USA as a guide to business success.

In Japan, Miyamoto Musashi is popular as the hero of a long historical novel that glamorizes his martial-arts exploits and has been the basis for a series of films and comic books. The historical Miyamoto was a painter as well as a fencer, and spent his life travelling Japan in search of Zen enlightenment.

## Mo, Timothy (1950-)

British novelist. His works are mainly set in Hong Kong (where he was born) and the East Indies, though *Sour Sweet* (1982; filmed 1988) describes a Triad-threatened Chinese family of restaurateurs in London, and is full of realistic detail and brisk humour.

An Insular Possession (1986) is a comprehensive historical novel about the Opium Wars; *The Redundancy of Courage* (1991) deals with guerrillas in East Timor; and *Brownout on Breadfruit Boulevard* (1995) and *Renegade or Halo2* (1999), both of which he published himself, are set in the Philippines.

# Moberg, (Carl Artur) Vilhelm (1898-1973)

Swedish novelist. Born at Algutsboda, Småland, his works describe the peasants of his native province: *Raskens/The Rasks* 1927 on farming in the time-honoured way in the second half of the 19th century; the *Knut Toring/The Earth is Ours* trilogy 1935-39 on coping with contemporary problems on the land; and *Rid i natt!/Ride This Night!* 1941 on their fight for freedom in the 16th century. His best-known work is a

tetralogy about emigration, *Utvandrarromanen* 1949-59 (*Utvandrarna/The Emigrants* 1949; *Invandrarna/Unto a Good Land* 1952; and *Nybyggarna/The Settlers* 1956 and *Sista brevet till Sverige/Last Letter to Sweden*, which were translated together as *The Last Letter Home* 1961), in which he follows a group of peasants emigrating 1850 from Småland to Minnesota, USA, up to the point of their final absorption into American life.

## Moby-Dick

#### or The Whale

novel by US writer Herman <u>Melville</u>, published in 1851. Its story of the conflict between the monomaniac Captain Ahab and the great white whale explores the mystery and the destructiveness of both man and nature's power.

# Mockel, Albert Henri Louis (1866-1945)

Belgian poet and critic. One of the first Symbolist poets to use <u>free verse</u>, his volumes of poetry include *Chantefable un peu naïve/A Rather Naive Chantefable* 1891 and *Clartés/Lights* 1901. He edited a major international Symbolist review, *L'Elan littéraire* (later called *La Wollonie*), 1885-92. His studies of Emile Verhaeren 1895 and of Stéphane <u>Mallarmé</u> 1899 helped establish these poets as modern masters.

#### mod

traditional Scottish annual arts festival, similar to the Welsh eisteddfod. Mods are held in the autumn and prizes are awarded for Gaelic compositions, both literary and musical, recitation, singing, and playing.

Most of the competitions reflect the tastes of Gaelic exiles living in the industrial lowlands and have little connection with traditional forms. However, attempts have been made to correct this imbalance. The Provincial and National Mods are organized by An Comunn Gaidhealach (the Highland Association); they serve an important function as a visible rallying point for Gaelic.

# Moe, Jørgen Ingebretsen (1813-1882)

Norwegian poet and folklorist. His first published work was *Sange*, *folkeviser og stev i norske almuedialekter/Poems*, *Folk Songs and Rhymes in Norwegian Dialects* 1840. Later, in collaboration with Peter <u>Asbjörnsen</u>, he published *Norske folkeeventyr/* 

*Norwegian Folk Tales* 1841-44. In his poetry he portrays, sensitively but without romanticizing, the nature around him.

#### Molesworth, Mary Louisa (1839-1921)

#### born Mary Louisa Stewart

Scottish writer. She wrote over 100 books, several of which were adult novels under the pseudonym 'Ennis Graham', but she is best known for her children's books. Her fairy stories include *The Cuckoo Clock* 1877, and among her stories about real children is *Carrots, Just a Little Boy* 1876.

#### Molinier, Guilhem

Provençal writer. He was one of the founders in 1353 of the Toulouse literary academy, the Consistori del Gay Saber, of which he became chancellor. On behalf of the academy he composed a lengthy grammatical and poetical treatise, *Las Leys d'Amor*, for the guidance of those entering the academy's poetical competitions.

#### Molnár, Ferenc (1878-1952)

Hungarian novelist and playwright. His most successful play, *Liliom* 1909, is a study of a circus barker (a person who calls out to attract the attention of members of the public), adapted as the musical *Carousel*. Others include *The Devil* 1907 and *The Good Fairy* 1930. His novels include *Paul Street Boys* 1907, a sensitive study of childhood.

#### Molza, Francesco Maria (1489-1544)

Italian poet. His Ninfa Tiberina (1538) has a place in the history of pastoral poetry.

#### Momaday, N(avarre) Scott (1934-)

US writer of Kiowa descent. He won the Pulitzer Prize for his novel *House Made of Dawn* (1968) about a young American Indian alienated from both white and his ancestral society. In his second novel, *Ancient Child* (1989), the protagonist is Set (Kiowa for bear), an adopted Kiowa-Anglo. Momaday was professor of English at Stanford University 1972-81.

Momaday's collections of poetry include *Angle of Geese and Other Poems* (1974), *The Gourd Dancer* (1976), *In the Presence of the Sun* (1992), and the poetry section of *In the Bear's House* (1999). They all reflect Kiowa and Navajo influences in particular and the general importance of the native oral literatures, celebrated in his collection of essays *The Man Made of Words* (1997). His autobiographical books, *The Way to Rainy Mountain* (1969) and *The Names: A Memoir* (1976), emphasize the importance of the Kiowa landscape and his father's tribal heritage.

### Mombert, Alfred (1872-1942)

German poet and critic. He wrote many lyrics, mostly in a Symbolistic vein. Early conventional verses were collected in *Tag und Nacht/Day and Night* 1894; those which followed became more experimental, as *Der Glühende/The Glowing Man* 1896, *Die Blüte des Chaos/The Blossom of Chaos* 1905, *Der Held der Erde/The Hero of the Earth* 1919, and *Atair* 1925. In 1919 he wrote an allegory on the Great War in terms of mythology, a favourite vehicle which he had used previously in a trilogy of what he called 'symphonic dramas' 1907-11, having as their central figure 'Aeon', who symbolizes humankind. *Sfaira der Alte/Sfaira the Elder* 1936 was the last work he wrote before falling foul of the Nazis. The concentration camp to which they sent him hastened his death, but during the few months he lived after his release he wrote a second part to *Sfaira* embodying his experiences. It was published after his death. The best selection of his works is his own, *Der himmlische Zecher* 1951.

## Monk, Maria (c. 1817-1850)

US writer. She published *The Awful Disclosures of Maria Monk* 1836, alleging that she had escaped from a Montréal nunnery. The book contained tales of misconduct in Catholic convents. Her story was later proved to be false.

#### Monkhouse, Allan (1858-1936)

English journalist, dramatist, and novelist. He became a drama critic and leader writer for the *Manchester Guardian*, later contributing to it the weekly article 'A Bookman's Notes'. He wrote a number of plays, notably *Reaping the Whirlwind* (1908) and *The Conquering Hero* (1924), a pacifist study. His novels, which included *My Daughter Helen* (1922) and *Farewell*, *Manchester* (1931), reflect the conflict between belief in business and sentimental socialism.

## Monkhouse, William Cosmo (1840-1901)

English poet and art critic. His poems include Corn and Poppies 1890, Dead March,

and *The Christ upon the Hill* 1895. As an art critic he is remembered for his *Life of Turner* 1879, *The Italian Pre-Raphaelites* 1887, and a number of studies of contemporary artists.

#### monologue

one person speaking, though the term is generally understood to mean a virtuoso, highly skilful solo performance. Literary monologues are often set pieces in which a character reveals his or her personality, sometimes unintentionally (as in the <u>dramatic monologue</u>); in drama the soliloquy performs a similar function.

A monologue can occur in a <u>dialogue</u>; for example, in a conversation where one person suddenly launches into a lengthy anecdote.

### Monro, Harold Edward (1879-1932)

English poet. He founded the influential *Poetry Review* 1912 and the Poetry Bookshop in Bloomsbury 1913. He also founded *The Monthly Chapbook*, of which he was editor 1919-25. Volumes of his verse include *Poems* 1906, *Before Dawn* 1911, *Children of Love* 1914, *Trees* 1916, *Strange Meetings* 1917, *Real Property* 1922, *The Earth for Sale* 1928, and *Elm Angel* 1930. *Some Contemporary Poets* 1920 is a critical study.

#### Monroe, Harriet (1860-1936)

US poet and critic. She published several volumes of verse, but was better known as the founder and editor of *Poetry* 1912, the first US magazine devoted exclusively to verse.

# Monroe, Margaret Ellen (1914-)

US librarian. As a public librarian and professor of library science at Rutgers University, she became a recognized authority on adult library services. She was born in New York, New York.

## Monsarrat, Nicholas John Turney (1910-1979)

English novelist. He served with the navy in the Battle of the Atlantic, the subject of his most successful novel *The Cruel Sea* 1951. Other novels with strong plots include

The Story of Esther Costello 1953, The Tribe that Lost its Head 1956, and The Kapillan of Malta 1973.

#### Montagu, Elizabeth (1720-1800)

#### born Elizabeth Robinson

English writer. In 1742 she married Edward Montagu, grandson of the 1st Earl of Sandwich. She was one of the best-known and most popular of the bluestocking coterie, and entertained largely at Sandleford and at Montagu House, London. Among her writings was an 'Essay on the Writings and Genius of Shakespeare' 1769, a spirited reply to <u>Voltaire</u>. She was a voluminous correspondent and her *Letters* were published 1809-13.

### Montagu, Lady Mary Wortley (1689-1762)

#### born Mary Wortley Pierrepont

English society hostess. She was well known in literary circles, associating with writers such as the English poet Alexander Pope, with whom she later quarrelled. Her witty and erudite letters were renowned. She introduced the practice of inoculation against smallpox into Britain from Turkey in 1721.

#### Montague, C(harles) E(dward) (1867-1928)

English novelist and journalist. He was for many years chief leader writer on the *Manchester Guardian*. He was an important drama critic, and *Dramatic Values* (1911) contains some of his comments on the subject. His other works include A *Hind Let Loose* (1910), *Disenchantment* (1922), *The Morning's War* (1923), *Fiery Particles* (1923), *Rough Justice* (1926), and *Right off the Map* (1927).

#### Montague, John (1929-)

Irish poet. Born in Brooklyn, New York, he spent his childhood on the family farm in County Tyrone, and studied in Dublin. His collections of verse include *Tides* (1970); *The Rough Field* (1972), about Northern Ireland; *A Slow Dance* (1975); *Selected Poems* (1982); and *New Selected Poems* (1990). His Catholic background, unusual for a poet of Northern Ireland, is reflected in his political verse and poems about his family. He has also edited several verse anthologies.

# Montaigne, Michel Eyquem de (1533-1592)

French writer. He is regarded as the creator of the essay form. In 1580 he published the first two volumes of his *Essais*; the third volume appeared in 1588, and the definitive edition was issued posthumously in 1595. In his writings Montaigne considers all aspects of life from an urbanely sceptical viewpoint. He is critical of human pride and suspicious of philosophy and religion, seeking his own independent path to self-knowledge. Francis Bacon was among the thinkers who have been challenged and stimulated by his work, and through the translation by John Florio in 1603, he influenced Shakespeare and other English writers.

He was born at the Château de Montaigne near Bordeaux, studied law, and in 1554 became a counsellor of the Bordeaux *parlement*. Little is known of his earlier life, except that he regularly visited Paris and the court of Francis II. In 1569 he published his translation of the *Theologia Naturalis* of Raymond Sebond (a 15th-century professor of Toulouse), and in the same year edited the works of his friend Etienne de La Boétie. In 1571 he retired to his estates, relinquishing his magistracy, and began to write his *Essais* (1572). The ironical *Apologie de Raymond Sebond* (*c.* 1576) reveals the full extent of his sceptical philosophy, refusing to trust the reasoning and rationality of other philosophies. He toured Germany, Switzerland, and Italy (1580-81), returning upon his election as mayor of Bordeaux, a post he held until 1585.

## Montale, Eugenio (1896-1981)

Italian poet and writer. His pessimistic poetry expresses a personal, psychological drama, a sense of anguish at the immutability of destiny. For Montale, life is a vain search for salvation, yet in this search the poet never relents. His work includes *Ossi di seppia/Cuttlefish Bones* (1925), *Le Occasioni/Occasions* (1939), and (showing a greater warmth and approachability) *La bufera e altro/The Storm and Other Poems* (1956). He was also an important critic and translator. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1975.

## Montemayor, Jorge de (1519-1561)

Spanish poet and novelist, born at Montemor-o-Velho, Portugal. He wrote the pastoral romance *Diana* in 1558, the first pastoral novel in Spain.

## Montesquiou-Fezensac, Robert (1855-1921)

#### comte de Montesquiou-Fezensac

French writer. His volumes of poetry include Les Chauves-souris 1893, Le Chef des

odeurs suaves 1893, Les Hortensias bleus 1896, Les Perles rouges 1899, and Les Paons 1900. He will probably be best remembered as J K <u>Huysmans's</u> model for the sinister character of Des Esseintes in *A rebours*. Montesquiou's essays include 'Roseaux pensants' 1897 and 'Autels privilégiés' 1898.

## Montfaucon, Bernard de (1655-1741)

French scholar. His edition of *Athanasius* 1698 established his reputation as a profound scholar. He published an account of his journey to Italy and three-year researches there, consulting manuscripts in Italian libraries, in his *Diarium italicum* 1702. His greatest and best-known work is *L'Antiquité expliquée et représentée en figures* 1719, to which a five-volume supplement was added 1724.

## Montgomerie, Alexander (c. 1556-c. 1610)

Scottish poet. His chief poem is *The Cherrie and the Slae* (1597), written in a 14-line stanza, of which Montgomerie may have been the inventor. Montgomerie also introduced the sonnet to Scotland. Other works are *The Flyting betwixt Montgomery and Polwart* (1621) and *The Mindes Melodie* (1605), a version of 15 of the Psalms, with other pieces.

## Montgomery, James (1771-1854)

Scottish poet and hymn-writer. In 1806 he produced his *Wanderer of Switzerland* and in 1810 published another volume of verse, *The West Indies*, appealing for the abolition of the slave trade. These were followed by *The World Before the Flood* 1812, *Greenland* 1819, a poem about the Moravian missions to Greenland, *Songs of Zion* 1822, and *The Pelican Island* 1826, written in imitation of <u>Shelley</u>; this is generally considered his best work.

## Montgomery, Lucy Maude (1874-1942)

Canadian novelist. Her first novel, *Anne of Green Gables* 1908, was intended for children but delighted readers of all ages and became an international best-seller. OBE 1937.

Sequels included *Anne of Avonlea* 1909, *Rilla of Ingleside* 1921, describing the effects of World War I, and *Anne of Ingleside* 1939.

## Montgomery, Robert (1807-1855)

English poet. He published *The Omnipresence of the Deity* 1828 and *Satan* 1830, which was scathingly reviewed in an article by Thomas <u>Macaulay</u>. This classic castigation appeared in the *Edinburgh Review* April 1830. Montgomery combined a facility in florid versification with muddled metaphor, but lacked a genuinely poetic gift.

# Montherlant, Henri Marie Joseph Millon de (1896-1972)

French author and dramatist. His novels, which are marked by an obsession with the physical, include Aux Fontaines du désir/To the Fountains of Desire 1927 and Pitié pour les femmes/Pity for Women 1936. His most critically acclaimed work is Le Chaos et la nuit/Chaos and Night 1963. His plays include La Reine morte/Queen after Death 1942, Le Maître de Santiago/Master of Santiago 1947, and Port-Royal 1954.

# Monti, Vincenzo (1754-1828)

Italian poet. Most of his poems deal with current political events. *La Bassvilliana* 1793, on the murder of Hugo Basseville, the French ambassador in Rome, was written in imitation of Dante. His other chief works were *II bardo della Selva Nera* 1806, a eulogy of Napoleon, and a translation of Homer's *Iliad* 1807.

## Moody, William Vaughn (1869-1910)

US poet and playwright. Among his works are *The Masque of Judgement* 1900, a verse drama; *Poems* 1901; *History of English Literature* 1907; and *The Great Divide* 1909, a prose drama contrasting the Puritan traditions of the East with the postulated freedom of the West.

# Moorcock, Michael John (1939-)

English writer. Associated with the 1960s new wave in science fiction, he was editor of the magazine *New Worlds* (1964-69). He wrote the Jerry Cornelius novels, collected as *The Cornelius Chronicles* (1977), and *Gloriana* (1978). Among later novels are *The Revenge of the Rose* (1989), *Blood* (1994), and *King of the City* (2000).

## Moore, Anne Carroll (1871-1961)

US librarian. A renowned children's book critic, she led the movement to judge children's books on their literary merit rather than on their moral message.

Born in Limerick, Maine, she studied at the Pratt Library Institute in Brooklyn, New York, and directed their pioneer children's programme. From 1906-41 she headed children's services at the New York Public Library.

### Moore, Bessie B(oehm) (1902-1995)

US librarian. She was a public school administrator who served as the executive director of the Arkansas Council in Economic Education (1962-79). She was born in Owensboro, Kentucky.

### Moore, Brian (1921-1999)

Irish-born novelist. Born into a Catholic family in Belfast, he emigrated to Canada in 1948 and then to the USA in 1959. His books include *Judith Hearne* (1955), reissued in the USA as *The Lonely Passion of Judith Hearne* in 1956; *The Temptation of Eileen Hughes* (1981); *Black Robe* (1985); and *The Colour of Blood* (1987), shortlisted for the Booker Prize. After 1987 his style became far more economical and accessible; novels from that period include the Booker-shortlisted *Lies of Silence* (1990), *No Other Life* (1993), *The Statement*, and *The Magician's Wife*. Catholicism, obsession, and the contrast between dreams and reality are recurrent and powerful themes, depicted with stylistic economy and realism.

Other works include *The Luck of Ginger Coffey* (1960) and *The Emperor of Ice-Cream* (1966). Moore's earliest novels were published under the pen name Michael Bryan.

## Moore, George Augustus (1852-1933)

Irish novelist. In his early work he introduced an element of the realism associated with the French novelist Emile Zola, revitalizing the Victorian novel. His debut *A Modern Lover* 1883 was sexually frank for its time and was banned in some quarters. His *Esther Waters* 1894 is a masterpiece of realism, recounting the life of a domestic servant.

Scottish novelist. Thomas <u>Carlyle</u> made use of Moore's *Journal of a Residence in France* 1793, while <u>Byron</u> modelled his Childe Harold on Zeluco, a selfish libertine, whose name appears as the title of Moore's most popular novel 1789.

# Moore, Marianne (Craig) (1887-1972)

US modernist poet. She is known for her mildly eccentric public persona, a devotion to baseball, and her impeccably intelligent poetry, celebrated for its wit and observation of detail. Moore edited the literary magazine *The Dial* 1925-29, and published several volumes of verse, including *Observations* (1924), *What are Years* (1941), *A Marianne Moore Reader* (1961), and *The Complete Poems* (1967). Other works included essays and translations.

Born in Kirkwood, Missouri, Moore studied at Bryn Mawr (BA 1909) and Carlisle Commercial College, Pennsylvania in 1910, and worked at the US Indian School, Pennsylvania 1911-15. She settled in New York, New York, (1919), living first in Greenwich Village and then in Brooklyn, and worked as a librarian, editor, and lecturer.

# Moore, Michael (1954-)

US documentary filmmaker and author. He is known for his angry but humorous commentaries on social and economic problems in the USA, with blatant and often controversial attacks on the opportunism of major corporations and right-wing politicians. His films include *Roger and Me* (1989), *Bowling for Columbine* (2002), and *Fahrenheit 9/11* (2004).

*Roger and Me* (1989) profiles the closure of the General Motors plant in Moore's native Flint, Michigan, and his attempts to interview Roger Smith, the company's chief executive officer. The Academy Award-winning *Bowling for Columbine* (2002) is about US gun culture in the wake of a school shooting spree in Littleton, Colorado; and *Fahrenheit 9/11* (2004) is a savagely humorous indictment of US president George W Bush, his administration, and his policies - particularly in relation to the War on Terrorism and the Iraq War. *Fahrenheit 9/11* won the Palme d'Or at the 2004 Cannes Film Festival, and went on to become the highest-grossing documentary in history.

Moore has also written successful satirical books, including the best-sellers *Stupid White Men* (2002) and *Dude, Where's My Country*? (2003).

# Moore, Thomas (1779-1852)

Irish poet. Among his works are the verse romance Lalla Rookh (1817) and Irish

*Melodies* (1807-34), for which the music was arranged by John Stevenson (1761-1833); the songs include 'The Minstrel Boy' and "Tis the Last Rose of Summer'. Moore also showed himself to be a master of satire in *Intercepted Letters; or Twopenny Post-bag* (1813; written under the name of Thomas Brown the Younger), in which he lampooned the Prince Regent and his associates. He wrote a biography of the poet Byron.

### Moore, Thomas Sturge (1870-1944)

English poet and art critic. His chief volumes of verse are *The Vinedresser* 1899, *The Centaur's Booty* 1903, *Danae* 1903, *Marianne* 1911, *The Sea is Kind* 1914, *Medea* 1920, and *Psyche in Hades* 1930. *Aphrodite against Artemis* 1901 and *Absalom* 1903 are plays. *Some Soldier Poets* 1919 is an anthology. He also wrote several books on artists.

## Moorhouse, Geoffrey (1931-)

English travel writer. His books include *The Fearful Void* (1974), *The Best-Loved Game* (1979) (on cricket), *To The Frontier* (1984), and *Sydney* (2000). His later novel, *Sun Dancing: A Medieval Vision* (1997; shortlisted for the Booker Prize), combines passionate scholarship with a historically vivid portrait of Ireland a thousand years ago.

#### **Moor Park**

house on the River Wey in Surrey, England, 3 km/2 mi from Farnham. It was the residence of William Temple, a diplomat, and here Jonathan Swift first met 'Stella' (Hester Johnson), and wrote *The Tale of a Tub* and *The Battle of the Books*.

#### Moraes, Dom (1938-2004)

English poet. His first book of verse, *A Beginning* (1957), won the Hawthornden prize. *Gone Away* (1960) is a travel book and *My Son's Father* (1968) an autobiography. His collected poems were published in 1966.

Moravia, Alberto (1907-1991)

pen-name of Alberto Pincherle

Italian novelist. His first successful novel was *Gli indifferenti/The Time of Indifference* (1929), but its criticism of Mussolini's regime led to the government censoring his work until after World War II. Later books include *Agostino* (1944), *La romana/Woman of Rome* (1947), *Racconti Romani/Roman Tales* (1954), *La ciociara/ Two Women* (1957), *La noia/The Empty Canvas* (1961; a study of an artist's obsession with his model), *L'attenzione/The Lie* (1965), and *La vita interiore/Time of Desecration* (1978).

Moravia was an unrelenting realist in his unflattering representation of human nature, which he portrayed as being ruled by the twin desires for money and sex. He was particularly successful when describing the ideological vacuum and corruption of the upper and middle classes, in a style which is as elegant and clear as it is detached from the subject matter.

### More, Hannah (1745-1833)

English author. In 1774 she went to London and made the acquaintance of Dr Johnson, Edmund Burke, and the leaders of the bluestocking coterie. She wrote two plays for David Garrick, *Percy* 1777, an artificial and introspective work which finds an outlet for emotional intensity in tragic action, and *The Fatal Secret* 1779. After Garrick's death, however, she decided that play-going was immoral and led a retired life mainly among clergymen and philanthropists. She started Sunday schools in Cheddar and organized a movement that led to the formation of the Religious Tract Society 1799. She wrote *Coelebs in Search of a Wife* 1809 and a tract, *The Shepherd of Salisbury Plain*, among many other religious works. She left her fortune to charities and religious institutions.

## More, Paul Elmer (1864-1937)

US scholar, writer, and editor. His publications include *Platonism* 1917, *Hellenistic Philosophie* 1923, *The Demon of the Absolute* 1928, and *The Sceptical Approach to Religion* 1934.

## Moréas, Jean (1856-1910)

#### pseudonym of Ioannis Papadiamandopoulos

Greek-born French poet and novelist. His acquaintance with Paul <u>Verlaine</u> inclined him in earlier work such as *Le Pèlerin passionné/The Passionate Pilgrim* 1891 to the Symbolist school. Subsequently, believing Symbolism to have no enduring literary quality, he became the founder and leader of the neoclassical *Ecole Romane*, whose ambition was to rival *La <u>Pléiade</u>*, and turned to the old medieval-romantic style. His best work reverts to the classical precision of <u>Malherbe</u> and Corneille, and includes *Iphigénie à Aulis/Iphegenia in Aulis* 1903, a tragedy, and *Les Stances/The Stanzas* 1899-1927.

#### Moreau, Hégésippe (1810-1838)

French poet. His death in a workhouse heightened interest in *Le Myosotis* 1838, a posthumously published collection of poems. Some of his finest pieces are his 'Ode à la faim' and the elegy 'La Voulzie'. His prose work *Contes à ma soeur* was published 1851.

#### Morellet, L'Abbé André (1727-1819)

French writer. He wrote many of the articles on theology and metaphysics in the <u>Encyclopédie</u> from 1751 onwards. Some of his writings were collected in <u>Mélanges</u> de littérature et de philosophie au XVIII<sup>e</sup> siècle 1818, and the posthumous <u>Mémoires</u> sur le XVIII<sup>e</sup> siècle et la Révolution 1821.

Among his other works are *Petit écrit sur une matière intéressante: la tolérance* 1756 and a *Manuel des inquisiteurs* 1762, based on the *Directorium Inquisitorum* of a 14th-century Aragonese inquisitor, a work that horrified him.

#### Morgan, Charles Langbridge (1894-1958)

English novelist and playwright. His first novel, *The Gunroom* 1919, was based on his early naval experiences. *Portrait in a Mirror* 1929 (Femina Vie Heureuse prize) gained him popularity in France; it was followed by *The Fountain* 1932 (Hawthornden prize) and *The Voyage* 1940 (Tait Black Memorial Prize).

Other novels are *The Judge's Story* 1947, *Breeze of Morning* 1951, and *Challenge to Venus* 1957. His plays include *The Flashing Stream* 1938, *The River Line* 1952, and *The Burning Glass* 1954.

#### Morgan, Sydney (c. 1783-1859)

#### Lady Morgan; born Sydney Owenson

Irish writer. Born at sea, she was educated at the Huguenot school in Clontarf, County Dublin, and accompanied her actor-manager father Robert Owenson on his tours through Ireland. Her volume of poems set to Irish tunes, *Twelve Original Hibernian Melodies* (1805), were a forerunner of Thomas <u>Moore's Irish Melodies</u>. She then wrote the novels *St Clair* (1804), *The Novice of St Dominick* (1805), and *The*  *Wild Irish Girl* (1806), the book which established her reputation. Mature works include *O'Donnell* (1814) and *The O'Briens and the O'Flaherties* (1827), which strongly supported Catholic emancipation, and describes the variety of life in Connacht, which she knew well, having spent time there as a young girl.

Passages from my Autobiography appeared in 1859.

## Morgenstern, Christian (1871-1914)

German poet. His poetry was deeply influenced by his tubercular condition, which gave him the certainty of an early death. He gained great popularity by his grotesque nonsense poems *Galgenlieder/The Gallows Songs* 1905 and *Palmström* 1910, which show his mastery of words and sounds. In his later years he wrote mainly serious poetry; his religious verse *Einkehr/Introspection* 1910 and *Wir fanden einen Pfad/We Found a Path* 1914, as well as the love lyrics *Ich und Du/Thou and I* 1911, are among the most beautiful and most moving poems in German literature.

## Móricz, Zsigmond (1879-1942)

Hungarian writer of realist novels, short stories, and plays. By describing the harsh existence of the peasantry and the decadence of the landed gentry, he put paid to the romanticized image of rural life that until then had been common in Hungarian literature. His works include the trilogy *Erdély/Transylvania* (1922-35), *Légy jó mindhalálig/Be Faithful unto Death* (1921), and *Rokonok/Relatives* (1930). He was also an influential editor.

## Mörike, Eduard (1804-1875)

German poet and novelist. His *Gedichte* are, for the most part, simple but exquisite lyrics, graceful in style and original in conception. He is at his best in love or nature poems, based on his inner experiences. He also wrote short stories, the best known being *Idylle vom Bodensee* 1846 and *Mozart auf der Reise nach Prag* 1856, as well as an autobiographical novel *Maler Nolten* 1832.

His works inspired Othmar Schoeck (songs); Heinrich Sutermeister (*Jorinde*); Max Trapp (*Letzte König von Orplid*). Two songs were set by Brahms, three by Schumann, and 57 (including four early) by Wolf.

Mori Ogai (1862-1922)

pen-name of Mori Rintaro

Japanese novelist, poet, and translator. From an aristocratic samurai family, he initiated the Japanese vogue for autobiographical revelation with works such as his story of unhappy love *Maihime/The Dancing Girl* (1890) and the popular novel *Gan* (1911-13). His later work is more impersonal, consisting of historical depictions of the samurai code.

# Morley, Christopher Darlington (1890-1957)

US novelist, poet, and essayist. His novels include the fantasies *Where the Blue Begins* 1922 and *Thunder on the Left* 1925, and *Kitty Foyle* 1939, about a modern young woman. He published many volumes of verse, including *The Middle Kingdom* 1944, and books of essays.

### Morris, Jan (1926-)

English travel writer and journalist. Her books display a zestful, witty, and knowledgeable style and offer deftly handled historical perspectives. They include *Coast to Coast* (1956), *Venice* (1960), *Oxford* (1965), *Farewell the Trumpets* (1978), and *Among the Cities* (1985). *Fisher's Face* (1995) is a biography of Admiral of the Fleet Lord Fisher. Born James Morris, her adoption of female gender is described in *Conundrum* (1974), and *Pleasures of a Tangled Life* (1989) is a further autobiographical study.

As a young journalist with the British Everest expedition in 1953, James Morris was the first to send news that the mountain had been conquered. Her book *Trieste and the Meaning of Nowhere* (2001) describes the impression made on her the first time she saw Trieste as a member of the 9th Lancers.

## Morris, Lewis (1833-1907)

Welsh poet. His works include *Songs of Two Worlds* 1871-75, *The Epic of Hades* 1876-77, *Gwen, a Drama in Monologue* 1879, *Songs Unsung* 1883, *Songs of Britain* 1887 (containing odes on the queen's jubilee and the foundation of the Imperial Institute), *IdyIIs and Lyrics* 1896, and *The New Rambler: From Desk to Platform* 1905.

#### Morris, William (1834-1896)

English designer, socialist, and writer. A founder of the Arts and Crafts Movement, he condemned 19th-century mechanization and sought a revival of traditional crafts, such as furnituremaking, book illustration, fabric design, and so on. He linked this to

a renewal of society based on Socialist principles.

Morris was born in London and educated at Oxford, where he formed a lasting friendship with the Pre-Raphaelite artist Edward Burne-Jones and was influenced by the art critic John Ruskin and the painter and poet Dante Gabriel <u>Rossetti</u>. He abandoned his first profession, architecture, to study painting, but had a considerable influence on such architects as William Lethaby and Philip Webb. In 1861 he cofounded Morris, Marshall, Faulkner and Company ('the Firm') which designed and produced stained glass, furniture, fabric, carpets, and decorative wallpapers; many of the designs, inspired by medieval, classical, and oriental sources, are still produced today.

Morris's first book of verse was *The Defence of Guenevere* (1858). He published several verse romances, notably *The Life and Death of Jason* (1867) and *The Earthly Paradise* (1868-70). A visit to Iceland in 1871 inspired the epic poem *Sigurd the Volsung* (1876) and general interest in the sagas. His Kelmscott Press, set up in 1890 to print beautifully designed books, influenced printing and book design.

A leading Socialist, his prose romances *A Dream of John Ball* (1888) and utopian *News from Nowhere* (1891) reflected his socialist ideology. He joined the Social Democratic Federation in 1883, but left in 1884 because he found it too moderate, and set up the Socialist League. To this period belong the critical and sociological studies *Signs of Change* (1888) and *Hopes and Fears for Art* (1892). He also lectured on socialism.

Morris



#### (Image © Billie Love)

The English socialist William Morris, a leading figure of the Arts and Crafts movement, pictured in 1870. His political and artistic convictions were closely linked, and he claimed that art as 'man's expression of his joy in labour' was stifled by the squalid industrialism of Victorian England, although only the rich could afford to buy his expensive designs.

## Morris, Wright (Marion) (1910-1998)

US writer and photographer. Praised by the critics but ignored by the general public, his novels, short stories, and critical essays gained him the reputation of a 'writer's writer.' He is also noted for his photographs, which, like his best fiction, have a spare, understated tone. His best known works are *The Field of Vision* (1956), and *Plains Song: For Female Voices* (1980).

Born in Central City, Nebraska, he studied at Crane College (1929) and Pomona College (1930-33). He was a lecturer at numerous institutions and a professor at

California State University (1962-75).

## Morrison, Arthur (1863-1945)

English novelist and writer on art. His realistic novels on poverty in the city, *Tales of Mean Streets* 1894 and *A Child of the Jago* 1896, are comparable to George <u>Gissing's</u> work of the same period. Other novels include *The Dorrington Deed-box* 1897, *The Hole in the Wall* 1902, *Green Eye of Goona* 1904, *Green Ginger* 1909, *Fiddle o' Dreams* 1933, and a series of detective stories centred on the fictional character Martin Hewitt, investigator. He also wrote *The Painters of Japan* 1911 and other books on oriental art.

### Morrison, Toni (1931-)

#### born Chloe Anthony Wofford

US novelist. Her fiction records African-American life in the South. *Beloved*, based on a true story of infanticide in Kentucky, won the 1988 Pulitzer Prize and was filmed in 1998. Her other novels include *Song of Solomon* (1978), *Tar Baby* (1981), *Jazz* (1992), *Paradise* (1998), and *Love* (2003). She was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1993, the first African-American woman to receive it.

Morrison was born in Ohio, to parents who moved north to escape racism but were proud of their southern heritage and traditions. While attending Howard University in Washington, DC, and touring with a university theatre company, she became deeply involved in the civil rights movement. After receiving a master's degree from Cornell University, she taught at several universities before joining the faculty of Princeton in 1989.

#### Morsztyn, Jan Andrzej (1620-1693)

Polish baroque poet and diplomat. He wrote two collections of poems: *Kanikula/Dog Days* 1647 and *Lutnia/The Lyre* 1661. His range includes scurrilous epigrams, love songs, and religious verse. He also translated from French Pierre Corneille's tragedy *Le Cid*.

#### Morte D'Arthur, Le

series of episodes from the legendary life of King Arthur by Thomas <u>Malory</u>, completed in 1470, regarded as the first great prose work in English literature. Only the last of the eight books composing the series is titled *Le Morte D'Arthur*.

Based on an unidentified 'French book', with imaginative additions from other sources, it admirably bridges the transition from the medieval to the modern world, varying in style from a courtly refinement to a more blunt emotional directness.

## Mortimer, John Clifford (1923-)

English barrister and writer. His works include the plays *The Dock Brief* (1958) and *A Voyage Round My Father* (1970), and numerous stories about the fictional barrister Horace Rumpole who first appeared in the volume *Rumpole of the Bailey* (1978) and then in several television series. Other novels include *Paradise Postponed* (1985), *Summer's Lease* (1988), and *Dunster* (1992).

His autobiographical works include *Clinging to the Wreckage* (1982) and *Murderers and Other Friends* (1994). He was knighted in 1998.

# Moschus (lived 2nd century BC)

Greek bucolic (pastoral) poet, born at Syracuse. Some of his pieces have survived, notably a short epic 'Europa' and an epigram on 'Love, the Runaway'.

## Moses of Khoren (lived 5th century?)

also known as Movses Khorenatzi

Armenian writer, famous for his *History of Armenia*. The first classic of Armenian literature, it traces the country's history from mythical origins. It is the only early history to describe pre-Christian Armenia, drawing both on Greek historical sources and also on Armenian ballads and folk tales. Though the author claims to be writing in the 5th century AD, literary analysis suggests the text may have been written as late as the 8th century.

# Motherwell, William (1797-1835)

Scottish poet and journalist. He used his knowledge of the early history of Scottish ballad literature in *Minstrelsy, Ancient and Modern* 1827, a collection of Scottish ballads with a historical introduction, and in a similar introduction to A Henderson's *Scottish Proverbs* 1832. He collected and published his *Poems, Narrative and Lyrical* 1832.

## Motion, Andrew (1952-)

English poet, biographer, and novelist, poet laureate 1999-. His volumes of poetry include *The Price of Everything* (1994). He published the authorized biography of the poet Philip Larkin in 1993.

# Motley, Willard (Francis) (1912-1965)

US writer. While living in Chicago's slums, he wrote *Knock on Any Door* (1947), a naturalistic account of the degradation of a young boy. His subsequent novels were not as well-received, but his final novel, *Let Noon Be Fair*, published posthumously (1966), won critical praise. Although a black American, Motley said, 'My race is the human race.' He died of gangrene in Mexico City, Mexico, where he lived.

Born in Chicago and schooled in Chicago, he held a variety of jobs before becoming a writer, including ranch hand, cook, and interviewer for the Chicago Housing Authority.

# Mottram, R(alph) H(ale) (1883-1971)

English novelist. His war experiences in Belgium inspired *The Spanish Farm* 1924 (Hawthornden prize), one of the most impressive books about World War I. *Sixty-four*, *Ninety-four* 1925 and *The Crime at Vanderlynden's* 1926 combine with *The Spanish Farm* to form a trilogy. Other books include *The English Miss* 1928, *The World turns Slowly Round* 1942, *The Gentleman of Leisure* 1947, *Time's Increase* 1961, and *Happy Birds* 1963.

## Moultrie, John (1799-1874)

English poet and clergyman. His collected *Poems* were published 1876. His most memorable poems are 'My Brother's Grave' and 'Godiva', both printed 1820. Other verse includes *The Dream of Life* 1843, *The Black Fence* 1850, *St Mary* 1850, and *Altars, Hearths and Graves* 1854.

## Mourning Becomes Electra

trilogy of plays by Eugene <u>O'Neill</u> in 1931 that retells the Orestes legend, dramatized by Aeschylus (see <u>Oresteia</u>), setting it in the world of 19th-century New England. The three are considered among the greatest of modern US plays.

# Mourning Dove (born Humishima or Christine Quintasket) (1888-1936)

Okanogan/Colville writer and activist. A migrant worker in Washington most of her adult life, she wrote one of the few early novels by an American Indian woman, *Cogewea, the Half-Blood* (1927), as well as *Coyote Stories* (1933). She also cofounded the Colville Indian Council (1930) and in 1935 became the first woman elected to the Colville Tribal Council. She was born in Bonner's Ferry, Idaho.

#### Mousetrap, The

murder mystery play by Agatha <u>Christie</u>, which has run continuously in London since it was first performed at the Ambassador's Theatre in 1952, making it the world's longest-running play. Since 1974 the play has been performed at St Martin's Theatre.

# Mphahlele, Es'kia (Ezekiel) (1919-)

South African literary critic, journalist, and novelist. He is best known for his autobiography *Down Second Avenue* (1959) and for his influential critical work *The African Image* (1962; revised edition 1974), which is indicative of his lifelong search for a black aesthetic. He has also published several collections of short stories and the novels *The Wanderers* (1971), which reflects his experience of exile (1957-77) from South Africa; *Chirundu* (1979); and *Themes of Alienation and African Humanism* (1999).

Africa My Music (1984) is a sequel to his autobiography.

#### Mrs Dalloway

novel (1925) by Virginia <u>Woolf</u>. Clarissa Dalloway, a middle-aged 'society woman', drifts through a summer's day in London, preparing for the party she is to give that evening. A visit from a former suitor deepens her reflections, which combine many elements of past and present. At various points, her life, and those of her friends and family, interweave unknowingly with that of Septimus Warren Smith, a shell-shocked young man who is going mad.

## Mu'allaqat (or Moallakat)

collection of 6th-century Arabic odes compiled in the 8th century. They are written

in the *qasida* form, and are a record of the spirit of the age in pre-Islamic Arabia. The subject matter includes feuds between tribes, heroic deeds, and scenes of desert life. They were regarded as classical models for later Arabic poetry.

#### Muckrakers, the

movement of US writers and journalists about 1880-1914 who aimed to expose political, commercial, and corporate corruption, and record frankly the age of industrialism, urban poverty, and conspicuous consumption. Novelists included Frank <u>Norris</u>, Theodore <u>Dreiser</u>, Jack <u>London</u>, and Upton <u>Sinclair</u>. The muckrakers were closely associated with Progressivism.

Major figures of the earlier period include Rebecca Harding Davis, Henry George (*Progress and Poverty* 1879), and Henry Demarest Lloyd (1847-1903). Later, with the growth of journals like *McClure's Magazine*, the movement included Lincoln Steffens (1866-1936) (*The Shame of the Cities* 1904), Ida M Tarbell, and Thorstein Veblen (*The Theory of the Leisure Class* 1904).

## Mudge, Isadore Gilbert (1875-1957)

US librarian and bibliographer. Mudge is credited with virtually creating modern US academic and reference library services. She edited four editions of the *Guide to Reference Works* (1917, 1923, 1929, 1936), reviewed reference works for the *Library Journal*, and wrote numerous articles, book reviews, and scholarly bibliographies.

Mudge was born in Brooklyn, New York. After graduating from Cornell, she took a degree in library science at the leading school, the New York State Library School in Albany, New York (1900). She was a librarian at the University of Illinois: Urbana and Bryn Mawr, and after a trip to Europe in 1907-08, she held part-time posts until she became the head reference librarian at Columbia University (1911-41). Over the years she also taught at the library schools of Simmons College (1910-11), the New York Public Library, and Columbia University (1926-42).

#### Muir, Edwin (1887-1959)

Scottish poet. He drew mystical inspiration from his Orkney childhood. *First Poems* (1925) was published after an extended period of travel and residence in Europe, which also resulted in translations from German of Franz Kafka and Lion Feuchtwanger, in collaboration with his wife, the novelist Willa Anderson (1890-1970). Dreams, myths, and menaces coexist in his poetry and his *Autobiography* (1954) explores similar themes.

Muir was born in Deerness, Orkney, the son of a crofter. When he was 14 the family had to move to Glasgow, where the drab industrial surroundings had a great effect

on him. In 1919 he married Willa and travelled to Prague with her. They returned to Scotland at the outbreak of World War II. This early part of his life is described in *The Story and the Fable* (1940), revised as *An Autobiography* (1954). After the war he returned to Prague, then went to Rome, and later worked in the USA as professor of poetry at Harvard University.

## Muldoon, Paul (1951-)

Northern Irish-born US poet. His poetry collection *Moy Sand and Gravel* (2002) won the 2003 Pulitzer Prize for Poetry.

# Mulford, Clarence Edward (1883-1956)

US writer. He published around 30 books, all about cowboys and life in the American West, of which he made a careful study. His lame, intrepid two-gun hero Hopalong Cassidy was enormously popular and frequently appeared in films and on television.

### Multatuli

pseudonym of Dutch writer Eduard Dekker.

### multidimensional

in the visual arts, describing works that make use of all dimensions of space. Examples of multidimensional art include Installation art and kinetic art. The term multidimensional also refers to the use of theatre space in the performing arts, and is used even more commonly in literature when describing literary characters or a type of writing style.

# Mumford, L(awrence) Quincy (1903-1982)

US librarian. The first professionally trained Librarian of Congress (1954-74), he oversaw completion of the Library's James Madison Memorial Building and greatly expanded its foreign procurement processes. He was born in Pitt County, North Carolina.

# Münchhausen, Karl Friedrich Hieronymus, Freiherr (Baron) von Münchhausen (1720-1797)

German soldier. He served with the Russian army against the Turks, and after his retirement in 1760 told exaggerated stories of his adventures. This idiosyncrasy was utilized by the German writer Rudolph Erich Raspe (1737-1794) in his extravagantly fictitious *Baron Munchausen's Narrative of his Marvellous Travels and Campaigns in Russia* (1785), which he wrote in English while living in London. The book was subsequently enlarged by the insertion of stories culled from various sources.

The emotional disorder known as Münchhausen's syndrome is named after him.

## Munday (or Mundy), Anthony (1553-1633)

English dramatist and miscellaneous writer. In 1605 he was appointed chief pageant writer for the City of London, and is best remembered for these entertainments. There are 18 plays ascribed to Munday, among them *The Downfall of Robert Earl of Huntingdon* (1601), followed by *The Death of Robert of Huntingdon*, in which he collaborated with Henry Chettle, and *John a Kent and John a Cumber*, performed about 1594.

He also wrote anti-Catholic pamphlets, translated romances, contributed several lyrics, some under the name of 'Shepherd Tony', to the collection of Elizabethan poetry *England's Helicon* (1600), and published an enlarged edition of Stow's *Survey of London* (1618).

## Munro, Alice (1931-)

#### born Alice Laidlaw

Canadian short-story writer. Her first collection of short stories, *Dance of the Happy Shades* (1964), won wide critical acclaim. This and later collections - such as *Something I've Been Meaning to Tell You* (1974) and *The Progress of Love* (1986) - established her internationally as one of the finest short-story writers of her age. The novel *The Beggar Maid* (in fact a collection of closely related stories) appeared in 1979. In 2001 she won the Rea Award for lifetime achievement, a prize honouring the art of the short story.

Munro was born in Wingham, Ontario, in Canada, and her stories are often set in small-town Ontario. Understated and closely observed, they typically depict the events of everyday life, usually seen through a woman's eyes, with a keen awareness of the pain of failure and the vulnerability of relationships - what she has called the 'pain of human contact'. Though she is not explicitly a feminist writer, she has depicted with skill, sensitivity, and honesty the lives of women coming to terms with their many roles in a largely male world.

# Munro, H(ector) H(ugh)

British author who wrote under the pen-name Saki.

#### Munro, Neil (1864-1930)

Scottish novelist, poet, and journalist. He wrote *The Lost Pibroch* 1896, a collection of Celtic tales, followed by a number of historical novels, including *John Splendid* 1898, *Gilian the Dreamer* 1899, *Doom Castle* 1901, and *Children of the Tempest* 1903. Of his humorous dialect stories, the 'Para Handy' series, beginning with *The Vital Spark* 1906, were the most famous.

Others are *Erchie* 1904, *The Daft Days* 1907, *Fancy Farm* 1910, *Ayrshire Idylls* 1912, and *Jaunty Jock* 1918. Books of verse are *Bagpipe Ballads* 1917 and *The Poetry of Neil Munro* 1931. *The Clyde: River and Firth* 1907 is descriptive.

### Munthe, Axel Martin Fredrik (1857-1949)

Swedish author and doctor. *The Story of San Michele* 1929, one of the most remarkable best-selling books of memoirs, was originally written in English and translated into 44 languages. In *The Story of San Michele*, written during periods of insomnia, he told how he adopted the term 'colitis' as a reassuring name for the imaginary ailments of his fashionable patients of the Faubourg Saint-Germain.

#### Murakami, Haruki (1949-)

Japanese novelist and translator. He is one of Japan's best-selling writers, influenced by 20th-century US writers and popular culture. His dreamy, gently surrealist novels include *A Wild Sheep Chase* (1982), *Norwegian Wood* (1987), and *Sputnik Sweetheart* (2000).

#### Murasaki, Shikibu (c. 978-c. 1015)

Japanese writer. She was a lady at the court. Her masterpiece of fiction, *The Tale of Genji* (c. 1010), is one of the classic works of Japanese literature, and may be the world's first novel.

She was a member of the Fujiwara clan, but her own name is not known; scholars

have given her the name Murasaki after a character in the book. It deals with upperclass life in Heian Japan, centring on the affairs of Prince Genji. A portion of her diary and a number of poems also survive.

## Muratori, Lodovico Antonio (1672-1750)

Italian scholar, antiquary, and historian. His three chief works are *Rerum italicarum scriptores* 1723-51, dealing with the sources of medieval Italian history; *Antiquitates italicae medii aevi* 1738-43, describing the constitution, customs, and thought of the Middle Ages; and *Annali d'Italia* 1744-49, first published in a complete edition 1753-56, a critical history of Italy from the birth of Christ to 1750.

### 'Murders in the Rue Morgue, The'

tale by the US writer Edgar Allan <u>Poe</u> published in 1841, acknowledged as the first detective story. Poe's detective, Auguste Dupin, points to the clues leading to the solution of the macabre mystery in what Poe called a 'tale of ratiocination'.

# Murdoch, (Jean) Iris (1919-1999)

English novelist, born in Dublin. Her novels combine philosophical speculation with often outrageous situations and tangled human relationships. They include *The Sandcastle* (1957), *The Bell* (1958), *The Sea, The Sea* (1978; Booker Prize), *Nuns and Soldiers* (1980), *The Message to the Planet* (1989), *The Green Knight* (1993), and *Jackson's Dilemma* (1995).

She was educated at Badminton School and Somerville College, Oxford. During World War II she worked at the Treasury, then at refugee camps in Europe. From 1948 until 1963 she was a fellow and tutor in philosophy at St Anne's College, Oxford. Her first work was a philosophical study, *Sartre, Romantic Rationalist* (1953), and she published further works of philosophy, including *Metaphysics as a Guide to Morals* (1992) and *Existentialists and Mystics* (1997) which is a collection of essays on philosophy and literature. DBE 1987.

## Murger, (Louis) Henri (1822-1861)

French writer. In 1848 he published *Scènes de la vie de bohème/Scenes of Bohemian Life* which formed the basis of Puccini's opera *La Bohème*. Other works are *Scènes de la vie de jeunesse/Scenes of Youthful Life* (1851), *Le Pays latin/Latin Country* (1852), *Adeline Protat* (1853), *Madame Olympe* (1860), and other prose tales, and a collection of poems *Les Nuits d'hiver/Winter Nights* (1861).

## Murner, Thomas (1475-1537)

German satirist. A Franciscan friar, he developed a reputation for biting satire, with works like his *Die Narrenbeschweerung/Fools' Exorcism* (1512). Though he was critical of corruption within the Catholic Church, he was passionately opposed to the Lutheran Reformation and attacked it in several vitriolic satires.

## Murphy, Arthur (1727-1805)

Irish playwright, lawyer, and writer, born in Clomquin, County Roscommon. Murphy turned to the stage to pay off his debts, writing and producing his first successful farce, *The Upholsterer*, in 1758. His later writings include a translation of Tacitus (1793), and two poorly received biographical works, 'Essay on Johnson' (1792), and *Life of David Garrick* (1801).

Murphy was educated at St Omer, France, and worked as a clerk in Cork and then London 1747-51. In 1757 he entered Lincoln's Inn, and in 1762 became a barrister. Throughout his legal career he maintained his theatrical and literary interests, publishing the weekly *Gray's Inn Journal* (1752-74), through which he made the acquaintance of Samuel Johnson, and writing farces and adaptations for the stage.

# Murphy, Dervla Mary (1931-)

Irish travel writer. Her books include *Tibetan Foothold* (1966), *In Ethiopia with a Mule* (1968), *Eight Feet in the Andes* (1983), *South from the Limpopo* (1997), *A Woman's World: True Stories of Life on the Road* (co-author, 2003), and *Through the Embers of Chaos: Balkan Journeys* (2004). Travelling with minimal resources in the UK as well as in Asia, Africa, and South America, her responses to both people and landscapes are reported with warmth and originality.

Other books include Full Tilt (1965), Cameroon with Egbert (1989), The Ukimwi Road (1993), and One Foot in Laos (1999).

## Murphy, Richard (1927-)

Irish writer and eclectic poet, whose work reflects a well-travelled life. Born at Milford House, County Mayo, he lived in Ceylon (now Sri Lanka) as a child, where his father worked in the colonial service, and was educated at Magdalen College, Oxford, and the Sorbonne, Paris. He ran a school in Crete 1953-54 before settling on Inishbofin Island, off Galway. Murphy often uses journeys and rites of passage as topics for his writing. His several collections of poetry include *Sailing to an Island* 

(1963), which concentrates on life at sea; *High Island* (1974); *The Price of Stone* (1985); and *The Mirror Wall* (1989), which incorporates Sri Lankan artistic influences. He won the Æ Memorial Award in 1951 and the Guinness Poetry Award in 1962.

# Murray, (George) Gilbert (Aimé) (1866-1957)

Australian-born British scholar. Author of *History of Ancient Greek Literature* (1897), he became known for verse translations of the Greek dramatists, notably of Euripides, which rendered the plays more accessible to readers.

# Murray, Charles (1864-1941)

Scottish poet. Volumes of his verse, in Aberdeenshire dialect, include *Hamewith* 1900, *A Sough o' War* 1917, and *In the Country Places* 1920; they reveal a robust nostalgia which made Murray locally popular.

# Murray, Les(lie) A(llan) (1938-)

Australian poet. His adventurous, verbally inventive, and deeply serious poetry has appeared in collections such as *The Vernacular Republic: Poems 1961-1981* (1982), *Translations from the Natural World* (1993), and *Poems the Size of Photographs* (2002). His writing extols the virtues and values of rural life. His collection *Subhuman Redneck Poems* (1996) won the T S Eliot Prize for Poetry in 1997, and he won the Queens Gold Medal for Poetry in 1999.

Born in a rural area on the coast of New South Wales, he was lured to the city as a student at Sydney University and worked as an academic translator in Canberra. Other poetry collections are *The People's Otherworld* (1983), *The Australian Seasons* (1985), and *Learning Human* and *Conscious and Verbal* (both 1999). His other works include *A Working Forest*, selected essays (1996); *Freddy Neptune*, a verse novel (1998); and *The Quality of Sprawl*, selected essays about Australia (1999).

#### Musashi, Miyamoto

Japanese samurai; see Miyamoto Musashi.

```
Muschg, Adolf (1934-)
```

Swiss author. His first novel, *Im Sommer des Hasen/Summer of the Hare* (1965), was a work of unusual power about the Far East. Muschg's polished style is always evident in his work even if the narrative is sometimes unusually dense, as in *Gegenzauber/Counterspell* (1967). In *Fremdkörper/Foreign Bodies* (1968), an unusual and alarming work, Muschg examined the relationship of biological mechanisms to spiritual and social spheres.

# Musil, Robert (1880-1942)

Austrian novelist. He was the author of the unfinished *Der Mann ohne Eigenschaften/ The Man without Qualities* (three volumes; 1930-43). Its hero shares the author's background of philosophical study and scientific and military training, and is preoccupied with the problems of the self viewed from a mystic but agnostic viewpoint. Musil's analytic exploration of the motivation and the subconscious mind of his characters is reminiscent of James Joyce, though in no way derivative.

# Musmanno, Michael Angelo (1897-1968)

US judge and author. A successful and controversial lawyer in Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania, he tried to reverse the death sentence in the Sacco-Vanzetti case (1927), was a member of the team appointed to ascertain whether Adolf Hitler had died in Berlin, was a judge at the Nuremberg War Trials (1946), and was a witness for the prosecution in the trial of Adolf Eichmann (1961). He was judge of the court of common pleas in Allegheny County, Pennsylvania (1934-40), and a member of the Pennsylvania Supreme Court (1951-68). A staunch anticommunist, he cowrote the Communist Control Act of 1954. He also wrote *Ten Days to Die* (1956) and *Columbus Was First* (1966).

Musmanno was born in Stowe Township, Pennsylvania. He served in both World War I (infantryman) and World War II (lieutenant commander to rear admiral). He also earned a total of seven academic degrees.

# Mussato, Albertino (1261-1329)

Italian man of letters. He was born in Padua, and played a very active part in public affairs both as a diplomat and soldier. In 1315 he was awarded by his fellow citizens the crown of ivy and myrtle for his work as a historian and tragic poet. Writing in Latin and modelling himself on classical writers, he anticipated the attitudes of humanism.

Musset, (Louis Charles) Alfred de (1810-1857)

French poet and playwright. He achieved success with the volume of poems *Contes d'Espagne et d'Italie/Stories of Spain and Italy* (1829). His autobiographical poem *Confessions d'un enfant du siècle/Confessions of a Child of the Century* (1835) recounts his broken relationship with the writer George <u>Sand</u>. Typical of his work are the verse in *Les Nuits/Nights* (1835-37) and the short plays *Comédies et proverbes/Comedies and Proverbs* (1840). His play *Lorenzaccio* (1833), the most intriguing of the Romantic dramas, is a minor masterpiece.

# Mutanabbi, al-, Abu al-Tayyib (915-965)

Syrian poet. He developed the *qasida* form to its highest degree of rhetorical ornamentation, and also had a great influence on the early development of Persian poetry. He is regarded as one of the greatest poets of the Arabic world.

# Myers, F(rederic) W(illiam) H(enry) (1843-1901)

English psychic researcher, classical scholar, and poet. He coined the word 'telepathy' and was a founder in 1882 and one of the first presidents, in 1900, of the Society for Psychical Research. His main works include *Essays Classical and Modern* (1883), *Phantasms of the Living* (1886), *Science and a Future Life* (1893), and the posthumous *Human Personality and its Survival of Bodily Death* (1903). His bestknown poem is 'St Paul' (1867), and his *Collected Poems* were published in 1921.

# Myers, L(eopold) H(amilton) (1881-1944)

English novelist. His first novel, *The Orissers* 1922, was a critical success, and established him as a writer of major importance. His chief work was a tetralogy set in India in the late 16th century, revealing his interests in psychology and Eastern philosophy and religion: *The Near and the Far* 1929, *Prince Jali* 1931, *The Root and the Flower* 1935, and *The Pool of Vishnu* 1940.

*The Root and the Flower*, perhaps his finest work, has been compared to that of D H <u>Lawrence</u>, although Myers lacked Lawrence's skill in combining philosophy with narrative. His last novel, *The Pool of Vishnu*, is marked by a tone of bitter despair, foreshadowing his suicide.

# Nabokov, Vladimir Vladimirovich (1899-1977)

US writer. He left his native Russia in 1917 and began writing in English in the 1940s. His most widely known book is *Lolita* (1955), the story of the middle-aged Humbert Humbert's infatuation with a precocious girl of 12. His other books, remarkable for

their word play and ingenious plots, include *Laughter in the Dark* (1938), *The Real Life of Sebastian Knight* (1945), *Pnin* (1957), and his memoirs *Speak, Memory* (1947).

Born in St Petersburg, Nabokov settled in the USA in 1940, and became a US citizen in 1945. He was professor of Russian literature at Cornell University 1948-59, producing a translation and commentary on Pushkin's *Eugene Onegin* (1963). He was also a lepidopterist (a collector of butterflies and moths), a theme used in his book *Pale Fire* (1962).

# Naevius, Gnaeus (c. 270-c. 201 вс)

Roman poet and dramatist. He developed Roman low-life comedy and invented historical drama. He produced his first play 235 BC, and was imprisoned 206 for having attacked Scipio Africanus Major and the Metelli on the stage, but obtained his release by recanting. He was soon afterwards compelled to explate a second offence by exile, and retired to Utica where he died.

Born probably at Capua, Campunia, Naevius was also the author of an epic in Saturnian verse on the First Punic War; it influenced <u>Ennius</u> and was admired by <u>Cicero</u>. Only fragments of his work survive.

# Naidu, Sarojini (1879-1949)

#### born Sarojini Chattopadhyay; called 'the Nightingale of India'

Indian feminist and poet. She published three volumes of lyric verse *The Golden Threshold* (1905), *The Bird of Time* (1912), and *The Broken Wing* (1915). She organized flood-relief in Hyderabad in 1908 and lectured and campaigned on feminist issues, such as the abolition of purdah. Associated with Mahatma Gandhi, she was the first Indian woman to be president of the India National Congress in 1925. In 1947 she was appointed governor of United Provinces (Uttar Pradesh).

Born in Hyderabad, she was educated at Madras (now Chennai), London, and Cambridge. She was imprisoned several times for civil disobedience, and took part in the negotiations leading to independence.

# Naipaul, V(idiadhar) S(urajprasad) (1932-)

Trinidadian novelist and travel writer living in Britain. His novels, usually set in former colonies, explore the relationship between indigenous culture and Western influence. These include *A House for Mr Biswas* (1961), *The Mimic Men* (1967), *In a Free State* (1971; for which he won the Booker Prize), *A Bend in the River* (1979), *Finding the Centre* (1984), *A Way in the World* (1994), and *Half a Life* (2001). He

was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 2001.

He also published several works of non-fiction, including three studies of India. In 1999 he published *Letters Between a Father and Son* - letters between him and his family in India while he was in Oxford. He was knighted in 2001. His brother Srinivasa ('Shiva') Naipaul (1945-1985) was also a novelist (*Fireflies*, 1970) and journalist.

### Naked and the Dead, The

first novel by the US writer Norman <u>Mailer</u>, published in 1948. Set on a Pacific island during combat in World War II, it depicts war not only as a battle with the enemy but also as a psychic and political condition.

### Naked Lunch

novel 1959 by US writer William <u>Burroughs</u> based on notes written during his heroin addiction in Tangier. The book is a fragmented, black-humour phantasmagoria of disturbing power, which examines all forms of need and control including politics, sex, and the act of writing itself. It is a key work of the <u>Beat Generation</u> and has had a major influence on modern literature.

### Name of the Rose, The

#### Italian II nome della rosa

historical thriller by Umberto <u>Eco</u>, published in 1981 (English translation 1983). Set in a 14th-century abbey, it can be read as a complex murder mystery involving the disappearance of a priceless book or as an erudite and sophisticated philosophical fable about language and reality. A film was made from the book in 1986, starring Sean Connery.

# Narayan, R(asipuram) K(rishnaswamy) (1906-2001)

Indian novelist. His immensely popular novels, notably *Swami and Friends* (1935), his first, and *The Man-Eater of Malgudi* (1962), successfully combine realism with mythic and grotesque elements. They are comedies of sadness, of the family and middle-class life, set in 'Malgudi', intensely local yet representative of India and indeed of humanity. A later work is *The Grandmother's Tale* (1992).

He was brought up in Mysore, India. His uncle is credited with beginning his interest

in literature and he spent long hours in his school library reading classical Indian tales and Vedic poetry. Apart from this he was unsuccessful in both schooling and in his early attempts at writing. Eventually his talent was recognised by English writer Graham <u>Greene</u>. Narayan's vivid autobiographical sketches *My Days* were published in 1974.

### Narnia, Chronicles of

series of seven books for children by C S <u>Lewis</u>. The first in the series, *The Lion, the Witch and the Wardrobe*, was published in 1950; in it children enter through a wardrobe into an imaginary country, Narnia. There the Christian story is re-enacted in a mythical context, the lion Aslan representing Christ. Further journeys into Narnia feature in the sequels *Prince Caspian* (1951), *The Voyage of the Dawn Treader* (1952), *The Silver Chair* (1953), *The Horse and his Boy* (1954), *The Magician's Nephew* (1955), and *The Last Battle* (1956).

# Nash, (Frederic) Ogden (1902-1971)

US poet and wit. He published numerous volumes of humorous, quietly satirical light verse, characterized by unorthodox rhymes and puns. They include *I'm a Stranger Here Myself* (1938), *Versus* (1949), and *Bed Riddance* (1970). Most of his poems first appeared in the *New Yorker* magazine, where he held an editorial post and did much to establish the magazine's tone.

# Naughton, Bill (1910-1992)

#### born William John Francis Naughton

Irish-born author and playwright. His best-known collections of short stories include *Late Night on Watling Street* (1959) and *The Goalkeeper's Revenge* (1961), both collections firmly set in the Lancashire industrial landscape and written with the realism that marked his style. His best-known work for the stage and screen is the play *Alfie* (1963), which was filmed in 1966.

Born in County Mayo, Ireland, Naughton moved with his family to Bolton, England, in 1914. After leaving school, he had a series of menial jobs and began writing short stories for magazines and newspapers. In 1939 he moved to London, working as a civil defence driver, and also writing plays and short stories, many of which were broadcast on BBC radio and television. His radio play *A June Evening* was broadcast on television in 1960; its realistic working-class setting distinguished it and came to typify Naughton's style.

# Navagiero, Andrea (1483-1529)

Italian scholar, historian, poet, and diplomat. A central figure in Venetian public life, he edited Latin texts for the Aldine press, worked as librarian to St Mark's Basilica, and was a member of the Neakademia. He was the Venetian ambassador to France and also Spain, where he met the poet Boscán.

# Ndebele, Njabulo (Simakahle) (1948-)

South African writer and critic who, despite a relatively modest literary output, has had a significant impact on South African writing. In the 1980s he published a series of highly influential essays criticizing the black South African literature of the 1970s and 1980s for its preoccupation with urban political protest. His poetry has been published in various literary journals, and his one volume of fiction, *Fools and Other Stories*, appeared in 1983.

Ndebele's poems have appeared in a selection of black South African poetry entitled *To Whom It May Concern* (1973). His essays were collected in the volume *Rediscovery of the Ordinary: Essays on South African Literature and Culture* (1991). He has held posts in several universities, including the University of Lesotho 1975-90, where he was professor of English and deputy vice chancellor.

# **Neapolitan Academy**

name given to the tradition of humanist coteries at Naples. An example of an informal academy, its first manifestation in the 1440s centred on the scholars at the court of Alfonso V the Manganimous, in particular Antonio <u>Beccadelli</u>. A little later it also became known as the Accademia Pontaniana after its new leading member, <u>Pontano</u>.

# Nebrija (or Nebrissa or Nebrixa), Elio Antonio Martínez de Cala de (1444-1522)

Spanish scholar and writer. One of the greatest Spanish humanist of the Renaissance, Nebrija published the first sound Latin grammar to be used in Spain, a Spanish-Latin dictionary, and the first scientific grammar of any European vernacular, *Gramática sobre la lengua castellana* (1492). He taught at the university of Salamanca.

Nedim (1681-1730)

Turkish poet. One of the greatest lyric poets of the Ottoman Empire, Nedim wrote graceful *ghazal*s and *qasida*s, excelling especially in the composition of songs.

### Negri, Ada (1870-1945)

Italian poet. Her first book of verses, *Fatalità/Destiny*, was published 1892 and her success was rapid. Her early poetry was that of an authentic daughter of the people, and was filled with a sense of revolt. The later work lost some of its spontaneity and became more classical in form although her themes were still humanitarian and feminist.

# Nekrasov, Nikolai Alekseevich (1821-1878)

Russian poet and publisher. He espoused the cause of the freeing of the serfs and identified himself with the peasants in such poems as 'Who Can Live Happy in Russia?' 1876.

### Nelligan, Emile (1879-1941)

French-Canadian poet. He wrote all his poetry between the ages of 16 and 20, and spent the last 42 years of his life in lunatic asylums, where he continued writing, but only fragments and revisions of existing work. The elegant rhetoric, passion, and melancholy of his verse, and the tragic story of his life, made him a poetic hero.

Influenced by the French poets Charles <u>Baudelaire</u> and Paul <u>Verlaine</u>, he was Québec's first 'modern' poet.

### Nemcová, Bozena (1820-1862)

Czech novelist and collector of folk tales. Her chief work is *Babicka/The Grandmother* 1855, an idealized chronicle of rural life in the Bohemian countryside, as is *A Mountain Village* 1856. *The Four Seasons* 1856 is a half-Christian, half-pagan dream, written in a style that is ahead of its time.

### Nemerov, Howard Stanley (1920-1991)

US poet, critic, and novelist. He published a poetry collection *Guide to the Ruins* (1950), a short-story collection *A Commodity of Dreams* (1959), and *Collected Poems* 

(1977), which won both the National Book Award and a Pulitzer Prize in 1978. Later poetry includes *Trying Conclusions* (1991).

Other poetry collections include *The Image of the Law* (1947), *Mirrors and Windows* (1958), and *The Winter Lightning: Selected Poems* (1968). His novels, which have also been commended, include *The Melodramatists* (1949), *Federigo: Or, the Power of Love* (1954), and *The Homecoming Game* (1957). He served as poetry consultant to the Library of Congress in 1963 and 1964, as a chancellor of the Academy of American Poets beginning in 1976, and as poet laureate of the United States 1988-90.

### Nepos, Cornelius (c. 99-c. 24 BC)

Roman biographer. He was a friend of the orator <u>Cicero</u> and the publisher Atticus. His *De Viris Illustribus/On Famous Men* is the earliest surviving example of Latin biographical writing.

Of this large work, one book, *De Excellentibus Ducibus Exterarum Gentium/On the Excellent Generals of Foreign Peoples*, is extant. We also have his life of Atticus and a fragment of his life of Cato the censor.

### Neruda, Jan (1834-1891)

Czech short-story writer, poet, and journalist. He was the leader of the May group of poetic realists, and his six volumes of poetry are regarded as the foundation of modern Czech poetry. Neruda's prose includes *The Navvies* 1868-71 and the work generally considered his masterpiece, *Prague Tales* 1878, a collection of stories about the inhabitants of the Malá Straná quarter of Prague. He wrote for the leading Prague daily newspaper, *Narodni listy*.

### Neruda, Pablo (1904-1973)

#### pen-name of Neftalí Ricardo Reyes y Basoalto

Chilean poet and diplomat. His work includes lyrics and the epic poem of the American continent *Canto General* (1950). He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1971. He served as consul and ambassador to many countries during the period 1927-44.

Nerval, Gérard de (1808-1855)

pen-name of Gérard Labrunie

French writer and poet. He was a precursor of French symbolism and surrealism. His writings include the travelogue *Le Voyage en Orient* (1851); short stories, including the collection *Les Filles du feu* (1854); poetry, including *Les Chimères* (1854), a sequence of 12 sonnets; a novel *Aurélia* (1855), containing episodes of visionary psychosis; and several plays, in collaboration with others.

### Nesbit, E(dith) (1858-1924)

English author of children's books. She wrote *The Story of the Treasure Seekers* (1899) and *The Railway Children* (1906). Her stories often have a humorous magical element, as in *Five Children and It* (1902) and *The Phoenix and the Carpet* (1904). *The Treasure Seekers* is the first of several books about the realistically squabbling Bastable children; it was followed by *The Would-be Goods* (1901) and *The New Treasure Seekers* (1904). Nesbit was a Fabian socialist and supported her family by writing.

# Nestroy, Johann Nepomuk (1801-1862)

Austrian playwright and comic actor. Combining excellent characterization and pungent social comment in ambiguous word play, Nestroy's parodies are witty and sad commentaries. His plays include *Der böse Lumpazivagabundus oder Das liederliche Kleeblatt* 1833; *Müller, Kohlenbrenner und Sesseltrager* 1834; *Zu ebener Erde und erster Stock oder Die Launen des Glucks* 1835, his first unequivocally tragic farce; and the more philosophical *Die beiden Nachtwandler oder Das Notwendige und das Überflüssige* 1836, with its cynical, self-revelatory tone and use of the sleepwalker symbol to express the individual's progress through life.

# **Nether Stowey**

village in Somerset, England, 14 km/9 mi from Bridgwater, in the Quantock Hills; population (2001) 1,300. Coleridge lived here 1796-98, and wrote many of his best-known poems during that period; Wordsworth moved here in 1797. Together, at Nether Stowey, the two poets conceived the *Lyrical Ballads*.

# Neuberger, Richard Lewis (1912-1960)

US journalist, author, and senator. He worked as a journalist for the *Portland Oregonian* and as Pacific Northwest correspondent for the *New York Times* and wrote several books and many articles about the Pacific Northwest. He served in the state legislature before his election to the US Senate (Democrat, Oregon; 1955-60). Neuberger was born in Portland, Oregon.

### **New Apocalypse**

in English literature, a movement that developed from surrealism in the 1940s and included G S Fraser, Henry Treece, J F Hendry, Nicholas Moore, and Tom Scott. Influenced by the work of Dylan Thomas, it favoured biblical symbolism and downgraded intellect and classical decorum.

### **Newbery Medal**

#### in full John Newbery Medal

annual award for an outstanding US book for children, given by the American Library Association since 1922.

The award is named after John Newbery (1713-1767), an English printer who published many books for children.

### Newbolt, Henry John (1862-1938)

English poet and naval historian. The rousing poem 'Drake's Drum' was published 1896, and was later set to music by the Irish composer Charles Villiers Stanford. *Admirals All* 1897, *The Island Race* 1898, and other collections reflect the patriotic fervour of the times. *The Year of Trafalgar* 1905 gave him a reputation as a naval historian and he was invited to complete the work of Sir Julian Corbett as the official naval historian of World War I. His own unofficial Naval History of the War 1920 is written with more freedom. He was knighted 1915.

# Newby, (George) Eric (1919-)

English travel writer and sailor. He is best known for his chronicle of climbing Mir Samir mountain in Afghanistan, A Short Walk in the Hindu Kush (1958). His other books include The Big Red Train Ride (1978), Slowly Down the Ganges (1966), A Traveller's Life (1985), A Small Place in Italy and On the Shores of the Mediterranean (both 1998), Love and War in the Apennines (1999), and the autobiographical Something Wholesale (2002).

He was travel editor for the *Observer* newspaper 1964-73, and was awarded a CBE in 1994.

### **New Criticism**

in literature, a US movement dominant in the 1930s and 1940s, stressing the autonomy of the text without biographical and other external interpolation, but instead requiring close readings of its linguistic structure. The major figures of New Criticism include Allen Tate, John Crowe <u>Ransom</u>, and Robert Penn Warren. The term was coined by J E Spingarn in 1910.

Newdigate, Roger (1719-1806)

#### 5th Baronet Newdigate

English collector of antiquaries, vases, and books. He is now principally remembered as the founder (1805) of the Newdigate prize for English verse at Oxford University. Among the winners of the prize are John Ruskin, Matthew Arnold, Laurence Binyon, and John Buchan.

# Newell, Robert Henry (1836-1901)

US humorist. He wrote *The Orpheus C Kerr Papers* (a pun on 'office seeker') 1862-71, satirizing humbug and pretentiousness, and *The Cloven Foot* 1870, one of many attempts to complete Charles Dickens's unfinished *Edwin Drood*.

# Newhall, Nancy (1908-1974)

#### born Nancy Parker

US writer and photographer. She was curator of photography at the Museum of Modern Art (1942-45), and wrote books with Ansel Adams and Edward Weston. She was born in Swampscott, Massachusetts, and was married to Beaumont Newhall.

### New Zealand literature

prose and poetry of New Zealand. The short stories of Katherine Mansfield in the early 20th century became internationally known, and in 1985 Keri Hulme won the UK-based Booker Prize for her novel *The Bone People*.

#### 19th century

Among interesting pioneer records of the mid- to late 19th century are those of

Edward Jerningham Wakefield and F E Maning; and *A First Year in Canterbury Settlement* by Samuel <u>Butler</u>. Earliest of the popular poets was Thomas Bracken, author of the New Zealand national song, followed by native-born Jessie Mackay and W Pember Reeves, though the latter is better known as the author of the prose account of New Zealand *The Long White Cloud*; and Ursula Bethell (1874-1945).

### 20th century

Mansfield's stories were written in Europe, but she drew on her New Zealand background. *Tutira, the Story of a New Zealand Sheep Station* (1926), by W H Guthrie Smith (1861-1940), struck a specifically New Zealand note. The 1930s saw the debut of an exponent of detective fiction, Dame Ngaio Marsh. Poetry of a new quality was written by R A K Mason (1905-1971) in the 1920s, and in the 1930s by a group of which A R D Fairburn (1904-1957), with a witty conversational turn, and Allen Curnow, poet, critic, and anthologist, are the most striking. In fiction, the 1930s were remarkable for the short stories of Frank Sargeson and Roderick Finlayson (1904-1992), and the talent of John Mulgan (1911-1945), who is remembered both for his novel *Man Alone* and for his posthumous factual account of World War II, in which he died, *Report on Experience* (1947). Kendrick Smithyman (1922- ) struck a metaphysical note in poetry, James K Baxter (1926-1972) published fluent lyrics, and Janet Frame has a brooding depth of meaning in such novels as *The Rainbirds* (1968) and *Intensive Care* (1970).

# Nexö, Martin Andersen (1869-1954)

Danish novelist. He is known for his two great novel cycles *Pelle erobreren/Pelle the Conqueror* 1906-10 (four volumes), a picture of working people at the turn of the century, and *Ditte menneskebarn* 1917-21 (five volumes, translated as *Ditte: Girl Alive!* 1920, *Ditte: Daughter of Man* 1922, and *Ditte: Towards the Stars* 1923), the life story of a proletarian girl.

# Nezval, Vitezslav (1900-1958)

Czech poet, novelist, and dramatist. His writings display a consciously childish perception of the world, and contain elements of surrealism, <u>Symbolism</u>, and Dada. He wrote *The Remarkable Magician* 1927, a long poem in praise of poetic imagination, and *Edison* 1928, hailing the age of jazz and radio.

Nezval applied surrealist poetic principles to prose, as in *Mr Marat* 1932 and the play *Loretka* 1941.

#### born James Thiong'o Ngugi

Kenyan writer. His work includes essays, plays, short stories, and novels. Imprisoned after the performance of the play *Ngaahika Ndeenda/I Will Marry When I Want* (1977), he lived in exile from 1982. His novels, written in English and Kikuyu, include *Weep Not, Child* (1964), *The River Between* (1965), *Petals of Blood* (1977), *Caitaani Mutharaba-ini/Devil on the Cross* (1982), and *Matigari* (1989). They deal with colonial and post-independence oppression.

Ngugi's education was a mix of Christian and traditional teaching. He changed his name when he rejected Christianity because of its colonial associations. His family was involved in the Mau Mau campaign against the colonists. After graduating from Makerere University College in Kampala, Uganda, he eventually became a professor at Nairobi University. In 1982 he moved to London.

# Nibelungenlied

#### Song of the Nibelung

anonymous 12th-century German epic poem, derived from older sources. The composer Richard Wagner made use of the legends in his *Ring* cycle.

Siegfried, possessor of the Nibelung treasure, marries Kriemhild (sister of Gunther of Worms) and wins Brunhild as a bride for Gunther. However, Gunther's vassal Hagen murders Siegfried, and Kriemhild achieves revenge by marrying Etzel (Attila) of the Huns, at whose court both Hagen and Gunther are killed.

# Niccolini, Giovanni Battista (1782-1861)

Italian poet and dramatist. His first poem was *La Pietà* 1804, influenced by Vincenzo Monti. His first dramatic work was the tragedy *Polissena* 1810, followed by *Ino e Temisto*, *Edipo*, and *Medea*. The first of his political dramas, *Nabucco*, appeared 1815; *Antonio Foscarini* 1827 is another invective against absolute power. *Arnaldo da Brescia* 1843 is generally considered his masterpiece.

# Nichols, Grace (1950-)

Guyanese poet. She won acclaim for her first collection *I* is a long memoried woman (1983), which was awarded the Commonwealth Poetry Prize; it was followed by *The Fat Black Woman's Poems* (1984). Her novel *Whole of a Morning Sky* (1986) gives a vivid account of a girl growing up in Guyana during the 1960s. Her books for younger readers include the poetry collections *Leslyn in London* (1984), *The Discovery* (1986), *Come Into My Tropical Garden* (1988), and *The Poet Cat* (2000); and the short-story collection *Baby Fish and Other Stories* (1983).

# Nicolai, Christoph Friedrich (1733-1811)

German author and bookseller. With his friend Gotthold Lessing he established the journal *Briefe, die neueste Literatur betreffend* 1759-65. His works include *Beschreibung einer Reise durch Deutschland und die Schweiz* 1783-97, *Anekdoten von Friedrich II* 1788-92, and a rationalistic novel, *Sebaldus Nothanker* 1773-76. For 27 years he edited the anti-Romantic *Allgemeine deutsche Bibliothek*.

# Nicoll, John Ramsay Allardyce (1894-1976)

English literary historian. A leading authority on the development of drama, he wrote various histories revised as *A History of English Drama 1660-1900* 1952-59, as well as *The Development of the Theatre* 1948, *World Drama* 1949, and *The Elizabethans* 1956. He also published biographies of William Blake 1922, John Dryden 1923, and Shakespeare 1953, and edited the *Annual Shakespeare Survey* from its inception 1948.

# Nicolson, Adela Florence

real name of English poet Laurence Hope.

# Nicolson, Harold George (1886-1968)

English author and diplomat. His works include biographies - *Lord Carnock* (1930), *Curzon: The Last Phase* (1934), and *King George V* (1952) - and studies such as *Monarchy* (1962), as well as the 'Diaries and Letters' (1930-62) for which he is best known. He married Vita <u>Sackville-West</u> in 1913. He was knighted in 1953.

Their relationship was described by their son, Nigel Nicholson, in *Portrait of a Marriage* (1973).

# Nicolson, Marjorie Hope (1894-1981)

US literary critic. She revealed the effect of philosophy and scientific discoveries on 17th-century poetry in such scholarly works as *Newton Demands the Muse* (1947). She taught at Smith College (1926-41) and Columbia University (1941-62). Nicolson was born in Yonkers, New York.

# Ní Dhomhnaill, Nuala (1952-)

Irish poet and playwright, born in Lancashire, but raised in an Irish-speaking area of County Kerry. Her writing fuses Gaelic folklore and language with a vibrant female voice that creates poetry at once timely and ancient. Ní Dhomhnaill studied both English and Irish, and lived in Holland and Turkey before settling in the Kerry Gaeltacht (Irish-speaking area). Her collections of poetry, such as *An Dealg Droighin* (1981) and *Feis* (1991), have led to English verse translations and international critical recognition. Later works include *The Astrakhan Cloak* (1992) and *Cead Aighnis* (1997).

# Niemcewicz, Julian Ursyn (1757-1841)

Polish politician and writer. He was active at the Great Diet of 1788-92 and was Tadeusz Kosciuszko's adjutant in 1794. Released from Russian captivity, he went to the USA 1796-1802. He was a senator in the Duchy of Warsaw and the new Kingdom of Poland. Of his works the *Historical Ballads* (1816) are the most popular.

His diaries and memoirs *Under the Vine and Fig Tree* (1965) are a colourful and fascinating record of his times.

# Nietzsche, Friedrich Wilhelm (1844-1900)

German philosopher who rejected the accepted absolute moral values and the 'slave morality' of Christianity. He argued that 'God is dead' and therefore people were free to create their own values. His ideal was the *Übermensch*, or 'Superman', who would impose his will on the weak and worthless. Nietzsche claimed that knowledge is never objective but always serves some interest or unconscious purpose.

His insights into the relation between thought and language were a major influence on philosophy. Although he has been claimed as a precursor by Nazism, many of his views are incompatible with totalitarian ideology. He is a profoundly ambivalent thinker whose philosophy can be appropriated for many purposes.

He published Morgenröte/The Dawn (1880-81), Die fröhliche Wissenschaft/The Gay Science (1881-82), Also sprach Zarathustra/Thus Spoke Zarathustra (1883-85), Jenseits von Gut und Böse/Between Good and Evil (1885-86), Zur Genealogie der Moral/Towards a Genealogy of Morals (1887), and Ecce Homo (1888).

Dutch poet. His highly evocative symbolism and simple language powerfully convey the dualism caused by his reverence for humanity despite his repudiation of its materialism. His two longer poems, *Awater* 1934 and *Het uur U/Zero Hour* 1942, the titles of which carry overtones of *Everyman* and the Last Judgement, suggest the individual's quest for spiritual values in an urban world.

### Nims, John Frederick (1913-1999)

US poet. The editor of *Poetry* magazine (1978-84), he also served as a poetry judge for the National Book Awards (1969), the American Book Awards (1970; 1971), and the Bollingen Prize (1987). He was praised for his translations of the Greek tragedies, and for his intelligent, witty poetry, as in *Of Flesh and Bone* (1967) and *Selected Poems* (1982).

Nims was born in Muskegon, Michigan. He studied at the University of Notre Dame (BA 1937; MA 1939) and University of Chicago (PhD 1945). He taught at numerous institutions, including Notre Dame (1939-45; 1946-62), the University of Illinois: Urbana (1961-64), and at the Chicago branch (1965-73; 1977-85).

# Nin, Anaïs (1903-1977)

French-born US novelist and diarist. Her extensive and impressionistic diaries, published 1966-76, reflect her interest in dreams, which along with psychoanalysis are recurring themes of her gently erotic novels (such as *House of Incest* (1936) and *A Spy in the House of Love* (1954)). Her correspondence with the US writer Henry Miller was published in 1985.

Born in Paris of a Catalan father and a Danish mother, she worked as a model and dancer, but later took up the study of psychoanalysis. She emigrated to the USA 1940, becoming a prominent member of Greenwich Village literary society in New York. She also worked in Paris and Los Angeles.

A biography by Deirdre Bair was published in 1996.

# Nineteen Eighty-Four

futuristic novel by George <u>Orwell</u>, published in 1949, which tells of an individual's battle against, and eventual surrender to, a totalitarian state where Big Brother rules. It is a dystopia (the opposite of a utopia) and many of the words and concepts in it have passed into common usage (for example, newspeak, doublethink, thought police).

# 19th-century English literature

<u>prose</u>, poetry, and drama written in English in the UK in the 1800s. The century was a period of great literary and social change, and it is useful to consider the literature of the period in relation to the social and political issues of the time, which include the Industrial Revolution, and the expansion of the British Empire. With the accession of Queen Victoria to the throne in 1837, the literary period until her death in 1901 is also known as the **Victorian** era. See also <u>English literature</u>.

#### influences

The Victorian intellectual world was fascinated by both the Roman and Medieval periods. The first because those involved in expanding the British Empire saw themselves as the new Romans and the second because they wanted furniture and art to be free of the influence of the Renaissance.

# Nizami (1141-1202)

#### also known as Abu Muhammad Ilyas ibn Yusuf Sheikh Nizam eddin

Persian poet. He enjoyed great popularity in both his native country and Turkey. Nizami's principal works are five *mathnavi* poems. The first, the 'Treasury of Mysteries', is a didactic poem; the next three, 'Khusraw and Shirin', 'Layla and Majnun', and 'Seven Beauties', are romantic. His final work, the 'Romance of Alexander', is a philosophical portrait of the great military commander.

### Nizan, Paul (1905-1940)

French writer. His works include essays, 'Aden, Arabie' 1931 and 'Les Chiens de garde' 1932, and novels, *Antoine Bloye* 1933, *La Conspiration* 1938, and *Le Cheval de Troie* 1935. He was killed in action during World War II.

### Njal's Saga

longest and greatest of the Icelandic family <u>sagas</u>. Written about 1280, it relates events purported to have taken place in Iceland between about 940 and 1020. The saga has two main climaxes: the killing of the hero Gunnarr at his farm at Hlidarendi and the burning of Njall and his family at Bergthorshvall.

Archaeological investigations have confirmed the latter event but while parts of the saga are undoubtedly based on historical fact, its author has also drawn lavishly from many sources, both native and foreign, for literary motifs.

# Nkosi, Lewis (1936-)

South African writer and broadcaster. Nkosi, exiled from South Africa in 1961, is particularly noted for his short stories, his plays *The Rhythms of Violence* (1964) and *The Black Psychiatrist* (2001), and his influential collection of essays *Home and Exile* (1965). His novels include *Mating Birds* (1986) and *Underground People* (2002; originally published in Dutch in 1994).

# Noailles, Anna (1876-1933)

#### comtesse de Noailles

French poet. Her poems are musical, personal, and often exotic and mystical. In 1901 she published *Le Coeur innombrable/The Innumerable Heart*, her first book of verse, which was an instant success. Other well-known volumes are *L'Ombre des jours/The Shadow of Days* 1902, *Les Eblouissements/Bedazzlements* 1907, *Les Forces éternelles/The Eternal Forces* 1920, and *L'Honneur de souffrir/The Honour of Suffering* 1927.

#### noble savage, the

Enlightenment idea of the virtuous innocence of 'savage' (aboriginal or non-Westernized) peoples, often embodied in the American Indian, and celebrated by the writers J J Rousseau, <u>Chateaubriand</u> (in the novel *Atala* (1801)), and James Fenimore <u>Cooper</u>.

# Nobre, Antonio (1867-1903)

Portuguese poet. He published only one work in his short life, a nostalgic and rather sentimental volume of verse written in Paris and called *So/Alone* 1892.

# Nodier, Charles (1780-1844)

French author. The early members of the French Romantic school, Victor <u>Hugo</u>, Alfred de <u>Musset</u>, and Charles <u>Sainte-Beuve</u>, all acknowledged his influence. He wrote fantastic short stories, among which are *Smarra* 1821, *Trilby* 1822, *Histoire du roi de Bohème et de ses sept châteaux* 1830, *La Fée aux miettes* 1832, and *Inès de las Sierras* 1837.

### Nom

Chinese-style characters used in writing the Vietnamese language. Nom characters were used from the 13th century for Vietnamese literature, but were replaced in the 19th century by a romanized script known as Quoc Ngu. The greatest Nom writer was the poet Nguyen Du.

### Nonnus (lived 5th century)

Greek epic poet, a native of Panopolis, Egypt. His most noted work is the *Dionysiaca*, a history of Bacchus in 48 books. A paraphrase of St John's Gospel, written in Greek hexameters, is also extant.

# Norris, Charles Gilman (1881-1945)

US novelist. His novels deal with such themes as hereditary influences, eugenics, modern education, business morality, and the place of women in business. They include *Salt* 1917, *Brass* 1921, *Bread* 1923, *Seed* 1930, and *Flint* 1944.

He was the brother of Frank Norris.

# Norris, Frank (Benjamin Franklin) (1870-1902)

US novelist. A naturalist writer, he wrote *McTeague* (1899), about a brutish San Francisco dentist and the love of gold (filmed as *Greed* in 1923). He completed only two parts of his projected trilogy, the *Epic of Wheat*: *The Octopus* (1901), dealing with the struggles between wheat farmers, and *The Pit* (1903), describing the Chicago wheat exchange.

### Norris, Kathleen (1880-1966)

#### born Kathleen Thompson

US novelist. Her sentimental novels include *Mother* 1911, *High Holiday* 1949, and *Miss Harriet Townshend* 1955.

She married novelist Charles Norris in 1909.

# North, Christopher

pseudonym of the Scottish writer John Wilson.

# North, Thomas (c. 1535-c. 1601)

English translator. His translations include <u>Plutarch'sLives</u>, which appeared in 1579 as *Lives of the Noble Grecians and Romans*. <u>Shakespeare</u> drew heavily on this translation for his Roman plays (*Julius Caesar*, *Antony and Cleopatra*, and *Coriolanus*).

North's first translation was of the Spanish adaptation of Marcus Aurelius: *Reloy de principes* by Antonio de Guevara. North's version, *The Diall of Princes* (1557), is partially based on a French translation.

North's translation of Plutarch was not taken directly from the Greek, but from a 1559 version by the French translator Jacques <u>Amyot</u>. North's version is neither scholarly nor accurate: both Amyot and North embellished Plutarch's rather dry prose style. Nevertheless it was very popular; a second edition (1603) augmented the text with translations of other classical biographies.

Norton, Caroline (1808-1877)

#### born Caroline Elizabeth Sarah Sheridan

British writer and social reformer. She was one of several minor poets whose works of the 1830s and early 1840s prefigure the more famous 'social-problem novels' of the 1840s. Her chief volumes of verse are *The Sorrows of Rosalie* 1829, *The Undying One* 1830, and *The Lady of La Garaye* 1861. She also wrote the long poems *A Voice from the Factories* 1836, attacking child labour, and *The Child of the Islands* 1845, expressing her views on the social conditions of the poor. Her pamphlets on infant custody 1839, and on divorce and married women's property rights 1854-55, influenced public opinion and played an important part in bringing about reform. She was the granddaughter of the dramatist Richard Brinsley Sheridan.

# Norton, Charles Eliot (1827-1908)

US scholar and writer. He is chiefly remembered for his translation and studies of Dante's *Divina Commedia* 1891-92, his *History of Ancient Art* 1891, and his *Letters* 1913.

He also published *Historical Studies of Church Building in the Middle Ages* 1876 and edited *Thomas Carlyle's Reminiscences* 1887 and *The Poems of John Donne* 1895.

### Norton, Mary (1903-1992)

English writer of books of children. *The Magic Bedknob* (1943) and *Bonfires and Broomsticks* (1947) were later adapted for film and reissued as *Bedknobs and Broomsticks* in 1970. She established her reputation and won the Carnegie Medal with *The Borrowers* (1952), the first of a series of five books which describe a family of tiny people who live beneath the floorboards of a large house.

# Norwid, Cyprian Kamil (1821-1883)

Polish poet, dramatist, and prose writer. He wrote a poetic treatise on art, *Promethidion* 1851, and the play *Zwolon* 1851. His experimental poetic cycle *Vademecum* 1866 failed to find a publisher until 1947. Misunderstood in his lifetime, he lived in poverty. Since the beginning of the 20th century, Norwid's largely philosophical poetry has undergone a re-evaluation, and is now held in high esteem.

# Nossack, Hans Erich (1901-1977)

German writer. His sober 'reports', set in a mixture of the real and mythically surreal world, analyse the morally debilitating features of a contemporary German society with which he is totally disillusioned. His works include *Nekyia: Bericht eines Überlebenden/Nekyia: A Survivor's Report* 1947, *Interview mit dem Tode/Interview with Death* 1948 (retitled *Dorothea* 1950), *Spätestens im November/Not until November* 1955, *Spirale: Romanen einer Schlaflosen Nacht/Spiral: Novel of a Sleepless Night* 1956, *Der jüngere Bruder/The Younger Brother* 1958, and *Nach dem letzten Aufstand: Ein Bericht/After the Last Revolution: A Report* 1961. His standpoint is given quintessentially in *Ein glücklicher Mensch/A Fortunate Person* 1975.

# Nouveau, Germain (1851-1920)

French poet who used the pseudonym Humilis. A Catholic writer, his collections include *Poèmes d'Humilis* (1911) and the posthumous *Poésies d'Humilis et vers inédits* (1926).

#### (French 'new novel')

experimental literary form produced in the 1950s by French novelists including Alain Robbe-Grillet and Nathalie Sarraute. In various ways, these writers seek to eliminate character, plot, and authorial subjectivity in order to present the world as a pure, solid 'thing in itself'.

Robbe-Grillet's *Le Voyeur* 1955 and Sarraute's *Le Planetarium* 1959 are critically successful examples. Michel Butor, Claude Ollier, and Marguerite Duras also contributed to this form, which is sometimes labelled the 'anti-novel' because of its subversion of traditional methods.

# Novalis (1772-1801)

#### pen-name of Friedrich Leopold von Hardenberg

Pioneer German Romantic poet. He wrote *Hymnen an die Nacht/Hymns to the Night* (1800), prompted by the death of his fiancée Sophie von Kühn. Feeling himself ecstatically united with his dead beloved, he tried to free his spirit from material things, and many of his poems contain a note of mysticism. He left two unfinished romances, *Die Lehrlinge zu Sais/The Novices of Sais* and *Heinrich von Ofterdingen*.

#### novel

extended fictional <u>prose</u> narrative, usually between 30,000 and 100,000 words in length, that deals imaginatively with human experience through the psychological development of the central characters and their relationship with a broader world. The modern novel took its name and inspiration from the Italian *novella*, the short tale of varied character which became popular in the late 13th century. As the main form of narrative fiction in the 20th century, the novel is frequently classified according to genres and subgenres such as the <u>historical novel</u>, <u>detective fiction</u>, <u>fantasy</u>, and science fiction.

#### origins

The European novel is said to have originated in Greece in the 2nd century BC. Ancient Greek examples include the *Daphnis and Chloë* of <u>Longus</u>; almost the only surviving Latin work that could be called a novel is the *Golden Ass* of <u>Apuleius</u> (late 2nd century), based on a Greek model. There is a similar, but (until the 19th century) independent, tradition of prose narrative including psychological development in the Far East, notably in Japan, with, for example, the 11th-century *Tale of Genji* by Murasaki Shikibu.

#### development

A major period of the novel's development came during the late Italian Renaissance, when the stimulus of foreign travel, increased wealth, and changing social patterns produced a greater interest in the events of everyday life, as opposed to religious teaching, legends of the past, or fictional fantasy. The works of the Italian writers <u>Boccaccio</u> and Matteo <u>Bandello</u> were translated into English in such collections as William <u>Painter's</u>*Palace of Pleasure* (1566-67). These inspired the Elizabethan English novelists, including John Lyly, Philip Sidney, Thomas Nashe, and Thomas Lodge.

Although the 17th century was dominated by the French <u>romances</u> of Gauthier de Costes de la Calprenède (1614-1663) and Madelaine de <u>Scudéry</u>, in Spain, <u>Cervantes'Don Quixote</u> (1604) contributed to the development of the novel through its translation into other European languages, and <u>Grimmelshausen</u>, whose *Simplicissimus* series (1669-72) was one of the earliest examples of the German novel, provided a satirical social commentary on the Thirty Years War. The English novel continued its development through the works of William Congreve and Aphra <u>Behn</u>. With the growth of literacy and cheaper book production, the novel rapidly developed from the 18th century to become, in the 20th century, the major literary form.

# Noyes, Alfred (1880-1958)

English poet. He wrote poems about the sea, including the popular sea epic *Drake* (1906-08), and the anthology favourites 'The Barrel-Organ' (1904), with its refrain 'Go down to Kew in lilac-time ...', and 'The Highwayman' (1907). His final volume of *Collected Poems* was published in 1963.

Noyes was born in Wolverhampton and educated at Exeter College, Oxford. Encouraged by English writer George <u>Meredith</u>, he devoted himself to poetry and succeeded in making a livelihood. His first volume was *The Loom of Years* (1902). In 1913 he delivered the Lowell lectures in the USA on 'The Sea in English Poetry', and was professor of modern English literature at Princeton 1914-23. Later he returned to England and settled on the Isle of Wight, and in 1930 became a Roman Catholic.

#### nursery rhyme

short traditional poem or song for children. Usually limited to a couplet or quatrain with strongly marked rhythm and rhymes, nursery rhymes have often been handed down by oral tradition.

Some of the oldest nursery rhymes are connected with a traditional tune and were sung as accompaniment to ancient ring games, such as 'Here we go round the mulberry bush', which was part of the May Day festivities. Others contain fragments of incantations and other rites; still others have a factual basis and commemorated popular figures, such as Jack Sprat and Jack Horner.

# Oates, Joyce Carol (1938-)

US writer. Her novels are often aggressive, realistic descriptions of the forces of darkness and violence in modern culture. A prolific writer, she uses a wide range of genres and settings, including the comedy *Unholy Loves* (1979), the Gothic horror of *A Bloodsmoor Romance* (1982), and the thriller *Kindred Passions* (1987). Her other novels include *A Garden of Earthly Delights* (1967), *Them* (1969; winner of the National Book Award), *Zombie* (1996), *The Tattooed Girl* (2003), and *The Falls* (2004).

Her other novels include *Because It Is Bitter*, and *Because It Is My Heart* (1990), *Black Water* (1992), *My Heart Laid Bare* (1998), *Broke Heart Blues* (1999), *Blonde* (2000), *Beasts* (2001), and *I'll Take You There* (2002). A prolific writer, she has published over 35 novels and novellas, including a series of experimental suspense novels under the pseudonym Rosamond Smith. Oates has also published over 20 volumes of short stories, seven volumes of poetry, four volumes of plays, and nonfiction works on a wide range of literary subjects.

### Oberon

in folklore, king of the elves or fairies and, according to the 13th-century French romance *Huon of Bordeaux*, an illegitimate son of Julius Caesar. Shakespeare used the character in *A <u>Midsummer Night's Dream</u>*. Oberon's name was taken as the title of a masque by Ben Jonson in 1616, an epic by Christoph Wieland in 1780, and an opera by Weber in 1826.

# Obey, André (1892-1975)

French author, playwright, and actor-manager. His plays include *Viol de Lucrèce* 1931, *Noé* 1931, *La Bataille de la Marne* 1932, and (with Denys Amiel) *La Souriante Madame Beudet* 1922. His novels include *L'Enfant inquiet*, *Le Gardien de la ville*, and *Le Joueur de triangle*. In 1946 he was appointed administrator of the Comédie Française.

# **Objectivism**

loose association of US poets such as Ezra <u>Pound</u>, Louis <u>Zukofsky</u>, William Carlos Williams, Charles Reznikoff (1894-1976), and George Oppen (1908-1984), whose major works were all lifelong open-ended enterprises, constantly updated. Poetry was seen by them as a process by which the poetic form begins with a particular object and then moves on by improvisation through verbal associations inspired by

the original object.

# O'Brian, Patrick (1914-2000)

#### born Richard Patrick Russ

English novelist and historian. He is best known for his Napoleonic seafaring Aubrey-Maturin series, comprising 20 historical novels about Royal Navy Captain Jack Aubrey and his close friend, physician, and secret agent Stephen Maturin. O'Brian tried to convince people that he was Irish, though he was born in Buckinghamshire, England, of German origin.

He is the author of 13 other books, including the novels *Testimonies* (1995), *The Golden Ocean* (1998), and *The Unknown Shore* (1998), as well as short story collections and biographies of Pablo Picasso and Sir Joseph Banks. He translated books from French, among them the novels and memoirs of Simone de Beauvoir. He spent his last 50 years living in the village of Collioure in southern France.

# O'Brien, (Josephine) Edna (1932-)

Irish writer. Her first novel, *The Country Girls* (1960), together with *The Lonely Girl* (later called *The Girl With Green Eyes*) (1962) and *Girls in their Married Bliss* (1964), formed a trilogy about two girls who flee restrictive rural Ireland for excitement in Dublin and London, ending in bleak disillusionment. Loneliness, guilt, and loss tend to dominate her work, though she has a lyrical prose style and there are moments of joyful self-fulfilment.

Her lack of inhibition has led to comparison with the French writer <u>Colette</u>, and much of her work was banned by the Irish censors. Her other novels include *August is a Wicked Month* (1965), *Casualties of Peace* (1966), *A Pagan Place* (1970, dramatized 1972), *Night* (1972), *Johnny I Hardly Knew You* (1977), *Time and Tide* (1992), and *House of Splendid Isolation* (1994). She published four volumes of short stories (1968-86), plays (including *A Scandalous Woman* (1974) and *Virginia* (1981) about Virginia Woolf), and *Mother Ireland* (1976), a nostalgic tribute.

# O'Brien, Fitz-James (1828-1862)

Irish-born writer. Born in Cork, O'Brien emigrated to New York in 1852, seeking money and adventure. He is best known for his macabre horror stories, such as 'The Diamond Lens', first published in the *Atlantic Monthly* in 1858.

In New York O'Brien worked as a journalist and freelance writer, and wrote poetry, short stories, and plays. After volunteering for service in the Union army in the

American Civil War (1851-56), he was wounded and died of tetanus.

# O'Brien, Flann (1911-1966)

#### pen-name of Brian O'Nolan

Irish humorist, novelist, and essayist. Born in Strabane, County Tyrone, he was educated in Dublin, where he later worked as a civil servant. He wrote in Irish Gaelic and English, and his exuberant style is a blend of seriousness, surrealism, and farce. For 30 years he was a brilliant columnist on the *Irish Times* under the pen name Myles na Gopaleen. His first novel, the ambitious, exploratory *At Swim-Two-Birds* (1939), was influenced by James Joyce and is also indebted to Gaelic comic tradition. *The Third Policeman* (1967), written in 1940, is an experimental work with fantastic and satirical elements.

An Béal Bocht/The Poor Mouth (1941) was the only novel he produced in Gaelic. Other works include The Hard Life (1961) and The Dalkey Archive (1964). A selection of his newspaper columns appeared posthumously in The Best of Myles (1968).

### O'Brien, Kate (1897-1974)

Irish novelist and playwright. Born in Limerick, O'Brien was educated at University College, Dublin, and worked as a journalist in London. Her first novel, *Without My Cloak* (1931), won Hawthornden and Tait Black Memorial prizes. *The Ante-Room* (1934) and *The Last of Summer* (1943), set in County Clare, contain shrewd pictures of the Irish temperament. Other novels are *Mary Lavelle* (1936), *Pray for the Wanderer* (1938), and *That Lady* (1946). Among her plays are *The Bridge* (1927) and *The Schoolroom Window* (1937). *Farewell Spain* (1937) is a travel book. Her later works include *The Flower of May* (1953), *My Ireland* (1962), and *Presentation Parlour* (1963).

### Ó Bruadair, Dáibhi (c. 1625-1698)

#### also known as David O'Bruadair or David Broder

Irish Gaelic poet. Ó Bruadair was born in east County Cork, and received formal training as a bard. A Jacobite (supporter of the deposed Catholic James II), he violently castigated the English and those Irish who betrayed their native traditions, and his verse records and focuses upon the turbulence of the 17th century in Ireland. Conscious both of the dignity of his calling, and of the crumbling of the ancient order he represented, his poems are in the old, strict metres (*dán díreach*) but he also makes use of the newer, looser type of metre, the *amhrán*, which was beginning to emerge with the fall of the Irish order.

# Ó Cadhain, Máirtín (1906-1970)

#### also known as Martin Kane

Irish Gaelic short-story writer and novelist. Ó Cadhain was born in Spiddal, Connemara, the Gaeltacht (Gaelic-speaking area) of Galway. His work reflects his staunch support of revolutionary republicanism, and is also stylistically highly inventive. His collection of short stories *An Braon Broghach/The Hare Lip* (1948) established him as a stern critic of accepted social conventions. His novel *Cré Na Cille/The Clay of the Churchyard* (1949), a bitter commentary by the dead of the Irish Civil War (1922-23) on the treachery of politicians, is now regarded as a major work of modern Irish literature. He exerted a strong influence on subsequent generations of writers

Ó Cadhain worked for a time as a schoolteacher, but was interned during World War II for his active involvement in the IRA. In 1969 he was appointed professor of Irish at Trinity College, Dublin. His collection *The Hare Lip* was reprinted in Seamus <u>Deane's The Field Day Anthology of Irish Writing</u> (1991).

# Ó Conaire, (Seán-)Pádraic (1882-1928)

#### also known as Patrick Conroy

Irish Gaelic writer. Ó Conaire was born in Galway and educated in Gaelic-speaking Rosmuc. He began to write stories while working as a civil servant in London, but devoted himself to writing full-time in 1913 after winning literary prizes. His work, which was part of the 'Gaelic revival' in literature, embraced novels, short stories, essays, travel accounts, and children's books. His short-story collections *Nóra Mharcuis Bhig agus Sgéalta Eile* (1909) and *An Chéad Chloch* (1914), along with a novel *Deoraíocht/Exile* (1910), are his most acclaimed works.

Ó Conaire spent some time at sea before entering the civil service, where he remained for many years. His writing was marked by its deceptive simplicity and subtle construction, and touched on themes of psychological complexity that alarmed the more puritanical exponents of the Gaelic revival. His later years were spent writing and teaching Irish, chiefly in Galway.

# O'Connor, (Mary) Flannery (1925-1964)

US novelist and short-story writer. Her works have a great sense of evil and sin, and often explore the religious sensibility of the Deep South, as in her novels *Wise Blood* (1952) and *The Violent Bear It Away* (1960). Her work exemplifies the post-war revival of the <u>gothic novel</u> in southern US fiction.

Her collections of short stories include *A Good Man Is Hard to Find* (1955), and *Everything That Rises Must Converge* (1965). Other works are a collection of her letters, *The Habit of Being* (1979), and *Flannery O'Connor: Collected Works* (1988).

### O'Connor, Frank (1903-1966)

#### pseudonym of Michael O'Donovan

Irish writer. His short stories are rooted in the provincial life of his native county, but he brings to his work a wide human sympathy and careful elegance. Collections include *Bones of Contention* (1936), *Crab Apple Jelly* (1944), *Traveller's Samples* (1950), *Collection Two* (1964), and *Collection Three* (1969), published after the author's death. He also wrote two novels, several plays, poetry - both original and in translation - and a history of Irish literature. His study of the short story, *The Lonely Voice* (1963), is recognized as a basic work in the field.

Born in Cork, O'Connor worked as a librarian in Cork and Dublin, where he was a director of the Abbey Theatre 1935-39.

# O'Curry, Eugene (1796-1862)

#### also known as Eoghan Ó Comhraí

Irish scholar. Born in Dunaha, County Clare, he moved to Dublin in the early 1830s. His *Lectures on the Manuscript Material of Ancient Irish History* (1861) is one of the standard accounts of Irish medieval literature. His *On the Manners and Customs of the Ancient Irish* appeared in 1873.

O'Connor was employed in the topographical and historical section of the Irish Ordnance Survey under George Petrie in 1835, and met a number of eminent Anglo-Irish scholars associated with Trinity College, Dublin, and the Royal Irish Academy. In 1854 he was appointed the first professor of Irish history and archaeology at the Catholic University of Ireland. O'Curry was a curious mixture, in that he inherited something of the tradition of the Irish scholar and was also, to some extent, a Victorian antiquary.

# Ó Dálaigh, Muireadhach Albanach (1180-1250)

Irish poet, probably born in County Meath; one of the first of the learned bardic Ó Dálaigh family to rise to prominence. He was a student of bardic poetry and may have been educated in monastic schools. His intensely mournful poem on the death of his wife 'M'anam do sgar riomsa a-raoir', which opens with the line 'I was robbed of my soul last night', is one of the most celebrated in Irish literature. After murdering a tax collector with an axe, Ó Dálaigh abandoned his home in County Sligo and fled to Scotland.

#### ode

lyric poem with complex rules of structure. Odes originated in ancient Greece, where they were chanted to a musical accompaniment. Classical writers of odes include Sappho, Pindar, Horace, and Catullus. English poets who adopted the form include Edmund <u>Spenser</u>, John <u>Milton</u>, John <u>Dryden</u>, and John <u>Keats</u>.

# O'Donnell, Peadar (1893-1986)

Irish republican activist and writer, born in Meenmore, County Donegal. Ireland's most prominent socialist republican, he campaigned for numerous radical causes throughout his life. O'Donnell was the son of a small farmer. He fought in the Anglo-Irish War (1919-21) and became a leading figure in the Irish Civil War (1922-23), when he fought for the Irish Republican Army (IRA) against the Anglo-Irish Treaty (1921). He later joined the International Brigade in the Spanish Civil War (1936-39). His most celebrated works, which depict the harsh lives of the underprivileged, are *Islanders* (1927) and *The Big Windows* (1955).

O'Donnell began his working life as a teacher, then a trade union organizer, before becoming engaged in revolutionary politics. During the Irish Civil War (1922-23), he was captured by forces of the provisional government, but escaped after a 41-day hunger strike. A vigorous publicist and editor of *An Phoblacht*, the official IRA newspaper, he gave (and then withdrew) qualified support for Éamon de Valera during the election of 1932. He left the IRA in 1934 to establish Republican Congress, an unsuccessful fusion of socialism and republicanism.

### Odoyevsky, Vladimir (1804-1869)

Russian writer whose works include tales of the supernatural, science fiction, satires, children's stories, and music criticism.

# O'Duffy, Eimar (Ultan) (1893-1935)

Irish satirical playwright and novelist. Born in Dublin, he was educated at Stonyhurst (Jesuit) College, Lancashire, and University College, Dublin. Influenced by the Irish poet Thomas <u>MacDonagh</u>, he embraced Irish cultural and political nationalism, joining the Irish Volunteers. However, during the 1916 Easter Rising he obeyed

Volunteer leader John (Eoin) MacNeill's countermand of the insurrection. His subsequent work took a more sceptical view of revolutionary nationalism. The play *Bricriu's Feast* (1919) satirized neo-Gaelicism, and his first novel, *The Wasted Island* (1919), examined critically the origins of the rising.

O'Duffy's first play, *The Walls of Athens*, was published and produced by Edward Martyn's Irish Theatre; he also staged O'Duffy's *The Phoenix on the Roof* (1915).

### **Odyssey**

Greek epic poem; the product of an oral tradition, it was probably written before 700 BC and is attributed to <u>Homer</u>. It describes the voyage home of Odysseus after the fall of Troy, and the vengeance he takes with his son Telemachus on the suitors of his wife Penelope on his return. During his ten-year wanderings, he encounters the Cyclops, the enchantress Circe, Scylla and Charybdis, and the Sirens.

# Oe, Kenzaburo (1935-)

Japanese novelist. Involved in leftist politics in Japan, he has explored the situation of culturally disinherited post-war youth. His works include *Kojinteki-na taiken/A Personal Matter* (1964), describing from direct experience the development of an abnormal baby, seen by some as a metaphor for the contemporary Japanese situation. His earlier novel *Shiiku/The Catch* (1958) was awarded the Akutagawa Prize. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1994.

# Oedipus the King and Oedipus at Colonus

two tragedies by the Greek dramatist <u>Sophocles</u>, based on episodes in the legend of Oedipus, king of Thebes. In *Oedipus the King* 429, Oedipus discovers that he has killed his father and married his own mother, and blinds himself in horror. In *Oedipus at Colonus* 401, the dethroned, blind king wanders as an outcast until led to a final resting place near Athens by his daughter Antigone.

# Oehlenschläger, Adam Gottlob (1779-1850)

Danish poet and playwright. His volume of *Digte/Poems* 1803, containing the symbolic *Guldhornene/The Golden Horns*, established him as the leading Romantic poet of Denmark and marked the beginning of a new era in Danish literature. In 1805 he published two volumes of *Poetiske Skrifter/Poetic Works*, which included the fairytale play *Aladdin*. His tragedies include *Hakon Jarl/Earl Hakon* 1807, *Baldur hin gode/Baldur the Good* 1808, *Palnatoke* 1809, and *Axel og Valborg/Axel and Valborg* 

1810. Other works include the Nordic verse cycles *Helge* 1814 and *Nordens guder/Gods of the North* 1819. However, it is for his lyric poetry that he is mostly remembered today.

# Ó Faoláin, Seán (1900-1991)

#### born John Whelan

Irish novelist, short-story writer, critic, and biographer. Born in Cork city, he was educated at the National University of Ireland and Harvard University. His first collection was *Midsummer Night Madness and Other Stories* (1932), after which he wrote *A Nest of Simple Folk* (1933), his first novel. He also wrote biographies of Daniel O'Connell in 1938; Éamon de Valera, beside whom he had fought in the IRA, in 1939; and Cardinal Newman in 1952. He founded the influential Irish literary journal *The Bell* in 1940, editing it until 1946. His *Collected Short Stories* was published 1980-82.

*The Bell* was influential not only because it published many significant writers such as Brendan Behan, Patrick Kavanagh, and Frank O'Connor, but also because the commentaries by Ó Faoláin and others challenged predominant notions of Irish identity as well as contemporary censorship policy.

# O'Flaherty, Liam (1896-1984)

Irish author. He is best known for his short stories published in volumes such as *Spring Sowing* (1924), *The Tent* (1926), and *Two Lovely Beasts* (1948). His novels, set in Dublin, are less poetic and more violent than his stories; they include *Thy Neighbour's Wife* (1923), *The Informer* (1925), winner of the Tait Black Memorial Prize, *Skerrett* (1932), and *Famine* (1937). *The Short Stories* (new edition) was published in 1986. O'Flaherty's writings have a strength acquired from his sense of primeval humanity beneath the layers of civilization.

# **Ogier le Danois**

#### or Ogier the Dane; Italian Uggero; Latin Ogerius

hero of an ancient French epic tradition. He figures in <u>Ariosto's</u>Orlando furioso and other romantic tales and poems.

O'Grady, Standish James (1846-1928)

Irish historian and novelist. He was born in Castletown Bere and educated at Trinity College, Dublin. O'Grady is best known for his *History of Ireland: Heroic Period* (1878), which kindled interest in the legendary material used by later writers of the Irish literary revival. Among his historical romances are *Finn and his Companions* (1892), *The Bog of Stars* (1893), *In the Wake of King James* (1896), *The Flight of the Eagle* (1897), and *In the Gates of the North* (1901).

O'Grady also edited Thomas Stafford's *Pacata Hibernia* (1896), and was owner-editor of the *Kilkenny Moderator* and the *All-Ireland Review*.

### O'Hara, Frank (1926-1966)

US poet and art critic. He was the leading member of the New York School of poets (others include John Ashbery, Kenneth Koch, and James Schuyler, whose work was based on an immediate and autobiographical relationship to city life. His work includes *Lunch Poems* (1964).

A curator at the Museum of Modern Art, he was associated, both personally and artistically, with the abstract expressionist painters. O'Hara also wrote essays and criticism collected in *Standing Still in New York* and *Art Chronicles* both 1975.

# O'Hara, John Henry (1905-1970)

US novelist. His *Appointment in Samarra* 1934 was a work of tough social realism and dealt with the world of the country-club set. This was followed by *BUtterfield* 8 1935, which was based on a murder case and sharply observed the sordid reality and bourgeois anxiety of the Depression years.

# O Henry

see <u>Henry</u>, O, US author.

# Ó hEódhasa (or Ó hEóghusa), Eochaidh (c. 1570-1617)

Irish writer, a major bardic poet in traditional Gaelic society, and head of the learned and poetic Ó hEódhasa family of Ballyhose on Castlehume Lough, Lower Lough Erne, County Fermanagh. He was *ollamh* (highest ranking poet under the *áes dána*, a Gaelic guild system) to three Maguire (Mág Uidhir) chieftains of Fermanagh. His poetry of praise, loyalty, and adoration of Hugh Maguire (died 1600) most typifies the often complex relationship between high-born patron and poet, and indicates the privileged position of the bard in Gaelic society.

### Ohnet, Georges (1848-1918)

French author. Among his novels are *Serge Panine* 1881, *Le Maître de forges* 1882, *La Grande marnière* 1885, *Dette de haine* 1891, *La Femme en gris* 1895, and *Le Crépuscule* 1902.

### Oisin

Celtic name for the legendary hero Ossian.

# Okri, Ben (1959-)

Nigerian novelist, short-story writer, broadcaster, and journalist. He uses <u>magic</u> realism to reflect Nigeria's political turmoil. His novel *The Famished Road* won the Booker Prize in 1991. Short-story collections include *Incidents at the Shrine* (1987) and *Stars of the New Curfew* (1988). His first book of poems, *An African Elegy* (1992), is based on contemporary Africa. More recent work includes *Astonishing the Gods* (1995) and a collection of essays, *A Way of Being* (1997).

Okri was born in Lagos and moved to England at 18, publishing his first book *Flowers and Shadows* in 1980. He wrote his second, *The Landscapes Within* (1982), while still a student at university in Essex, England. He worked for the BBC World Service as a broadcaster 1984-85 and was poetry editor of *West Africa* magazine 1980-87.

# Ó Laoghaire, An tAthair Peadar (1839-1920)

#### also known as Father Peter O'Leary

Irish writer, born and raised on a farm in the then Irish-speaking parish of Clondrohid, County Cork. Ó Laoghaire was a prolific and bilingual writer of Irish fiction, in particular after the establishment of the Gaelic League in 1893. Besides his translations into Irish of Aesop and Lucian, among others, he also published an autobiography, *Mo Sgéal Féin*, contributed to periodicals, and wrote *Séadna* (1904), a serialized collection of folk tales intended as a reader for students of the Irish language.

Oldcastle, John

pseudonym of English writer Wilfred Meynell.

# **Old English literature**

<u>prose</u> and poetry in the various dialects of Old English written between AD 449 and 1066. Poetry (alliterative, without rhyme) was composed and delivered orally; much has therefore been lost. What remains owes its survival to monastic scribes who favoured verse with a Christian motivation or flavour. Prose in Old English was a later achievement, essentially beginning in the reign of Alfred the Great (*c.* 849-901).

#### poetry

The greatest surviving epic poem is <u>Beowulf</u> (c. 700), which recounts the hero's battles with mythical foes such as the man-eating Grendel and his mother. This is a rare theme; the most constant theme is of a heroic struggle against impossible odds, and is found in poems such as 'The Battle of Maldon' and 'Finnisburgh'. The heroic struggle is often against fate (as in 'The Wanderer' and 'The Seafarer'). Despite the basic and violent lifestyle of the period, many poems display great sensitivity. 'Wulf and Eadwacer' takes a female viewpoint. 'The Ruin' is a fragmentary elegy reflecting on the ruins of a Roman city (probably Bath). One of the earliest attributed short poems consists of six lines by <u>Caedmon</u>, who was reputedly inspired to sing about the Creation by a vision. The longer poem 'The Dream of the Rood' (*c.* 698) demonstrates the Christian cult of the Cross, as does 'Elene' by Cynewulf.

#### prose

The beginnings of Old English prose dates from Alfred the Great and his translations of the works of Gregory the Great, Boethius, and Bede (which include Bede's *History of the English Peoples*, first published in Latin in 731, and translated by Alfred 871-899). Historical prose began with the *Anglo-Saxon Chronicle*, which at first was simply brief notes of yearly events but later evolved into a dignified and even poetic narrative. The existing version of the *Chronicle* dates from Alfred's reign and was compiled from earlier records (now lost) purporting to go back to the time of Adam. Dating from the 10th and 11th centuries are sermons by <u>Aelfric</u>, a Dorset monk who also translated the Old Testament. Aelfric's prose is obviously more sophisticated than that of Alfred. Other existing sermons are those by the prelate <u>Wulfstan</u> (died 1023). Some spells and riddles have also survived.

# Oldfather, William Abbott (1880-1945)

Classicist. His work was strongly influenced by the classicists at the University of Munich, where he took his PhD (1908). He founded and expanded the classics library at the University of Illinois, where he taught from 1909-45, and he helped turn the university into a major institution. Active in his profession, he was Sather Lecturer

(1934), president of the American Philological Association (1937-38), published widely on many aspects of antiquity both in German and in English, and trained many scholars in the field. His work on the topography of Locris remains a classic of its kind. Oldfather was born in Urumiah, Persia (now Rezaieh, Iran) to American Presbyterian missionaries.

### Old Man of the Sea

in the <u>Arabian Nights</u>, a man who compels strangers to carry him until they drop, encountered by <u>Sinbad the Sailor</u> on his fifth voyage. Sinbad escapes by getting him drunk. In Greek mythology, the Old Man of the Sea describes Proteus, an attendant of the sea god Poseidon.

### Olesha, Yuri Karlovich (1899-1960)

Russian writer. He is best known for his first novel, *Zavist'/Envy* 1927. In this, as in his other works, he is concerned with the clash between the individual and the collective order. In the 1930s he turned to writing journalism and film scenarios, but could not accept the prevailing orthodoxy of socialist realism, and disappeared from literary life until after the death of Stalin in 1953.

### Oliphant, Laurence (1829-1888)

English travel writer and mystic. His many books include *Journey to Khatmandu* (1852), *Minnesota and the Far West* (1855), *Patriots and Filibusters* (1860), and the witty and ironic picture of contemporary society *Piccadilly: a Fragment of a Contemporary Biography* (1870). *Scientific Religion* (1888) embodies the mystical views which he adopted later in life.

# Oliphant, Margaret (1828-1897)

#### born Margaret Wilson

Scottish writer. The author of 98 novels, 25 nonfictional works, 50 short stories, and 300 articles, she was one of the first women writers to live entirely by writing, which she did while bringing up her children and other dependants unaided, following her husband's death. Her major novels are the series *The Chronicles of Carlingford* (1863-66) (including *The Perpetual Curate*, 1864, and *Miss Marjoribanks*, 1866) and *Effie Ogilvie* (1886).

She wrote her first fiction at 17, while nursing her sick mother, and had her first

novel published at 21 (Passages in the Life of Mrs Margaret Maitland 1849).

# Olson, Charles John (1910-1970)

US poet and theoretician. He was a leader of the <u>Black Mountain</u> school of experimental poets and originator of the theory of 'composition by field'. His *Maximus Poems*, published in full in 1983, an open-ended, erudite, and encyclopedic fusion of autobiography and history set in Gloucester, Massachusetts, were a striking attempt to extend the American epic poem beyond Ezra Pound's *Cantos* or William Carlos Williams'*Patterson*.

# Omar Khayyám (c. 1050-c. 1123)

Persian astronomer, mathematician, and poet. In the West, he is chiefly known as a poet through Edward <u>Fitzgerald</u>'s version of 'The Rubaiyat of Omar Khayyám' (1859).

Khayyám was born in Nishapur. He founded a school of astronomical research and assisted in reforming the calendar. The result of his observations was the *Jalali* era, begun 1079. He wrote a study of algebra, which was known in Europe as well as in the East.

# Ondaatje, (Philip) Michael (1943-)

Ceylon-born Canadian writer. He won the 1992 Booker Prize for his novel *The English Patient* (filmed 1996) about four people in a villa in Italy at the end of World War II. In 2000 he published *Anil's Ghost*, which won Canada's Giller Prize.

# O'Neddy, Philothée (1811-1875)

#### pseudonym of Théophile Dondey

French poet. He was one of the early Romantics. His works include the collection of poems *Feu et flammes* 1833 and a prose and verse romance *Histoire d'un anneau* 1842. *Poésies posthumes* was published 1877 and *Oeuvres en prose* 1878.

### One Flew Over the Cuckoo's Nest

novel 1962 by US writer Ken Kesey. Set in a mental asylum ruled by the sadistic Big

Nurse, the story describes the attempted overthrow of her regime by McMurphy, a rebellious new patient. The conflicts ends with McMurphy's lobotomy and his mercy killing by the narrator, a mute American Indian who escapes into the free world. The novel serves as a broad allegory of the political and social state of post-war America.

### O'Neill, Eugene Gladstone (1888-1953)

US playwright. He is widely regarded as the greatest US dramatist. His plays, although tragic, are characterized by a down-to-earth quality and are often experimental in form, influenced by German expressionism, Strindberg, and Freud. They were a radical departure from the romantic and melodramatic American theatre entertainments. They include *Beyond the Horizon* (1920) and *Anna Christie* (1921), both of which won a Pulitzer Prize, as well as *The Emperor Jones* (1920), *The Hairy Ape* (1922), *Desire Under the Elms* (1924), *The Iceman Cometh* (1946), and the posthumously produced autobiographical drama A <u>Long Day's Journey into Night</u> (1956; written 1941), also a Pulitzer prizewinner. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1936.

# Onetti, Juan Carlos (1909-1994)

Uruguyan novelist whose bleak, realist work features protagonists at odds with their shabby, urban surroundings. His novels include *El pozo/The Pit* 1939 and *La vida breve/A Brief Life* 1950.

He was awarded the Spanish Cervantes Award 1980, and the Jose Enrique Rodo Prize (Uruguay) 1991.

### Onions, George Oliver (1873-1961)

English novelist. He achieved success with the trilogy *In Accordance with the Evidence* 1912, *The Debit Account* 1913, and *The Story of Louie* 1913. Among his other novels are *The Open Secret* 1930, *Poor Man's Tapestry* 1946 (Tait Black Memorial Prize), *Arras of Youth* 1949, and *Bells Rung Backwards* 1953. His highly effective ghost stories were collected in *Widdershins* 1911, *Ghosts in Daylight* 1924, and *The Painted Face* 1929.

### O'Nolan, Brian

real name of Irish writer Flann O'Brien.

# On the Road

novel 1957 by US writer Jack <u>Kerouac</u>. A lyrical, freewheeling, picaresque account of his real-life adventures with Neal Cassady (1920-1968); written with the jazz rhythms of 'spontaneous bop prosody', it became the bible of the <u>Beat Generation</u>.

# Opie

#### Peter Mason (1918-1982) and Iona Margaret Balfour (1923-)

husband-and-wife team of folklorists who specialized in the myths and literature of childhood. Their books include the Oxford Dictionary of Nursery Rhymes (1951) and The Lore and Language of Schoolchildren (1959).

# Opitz, Martin (1597-1639)

German poet. His poems (*Teutsche Poemata*, *Weltliche Poemata*, *Geistliche Poemata*) tend to be didactic, cold, and formal. In his *Buch von der deutschen Poeterey* 1624 he stresses the importance of clarity and adherence to rules.

### Oppen, George (1908-1984)

US poet. A founder of the objectivist poetry style, Oppen also established small printing presses in Paris (1930-33) and New York (1934-36).

Oppen was born in New Rochelle, New York, and educated in public schools in California. A communist, he was investigated by the US government, so he moved to Mexico City (1950). He later settled in San Francisco (1958) and continued to write poetry until he was stricken by Alzheimer's disease.

# Oppenheim, Edward Phillips (1866-1946)

English novelist. He was a prolific author and a pioneer of the 'thriller' genre. Among his books are *Mysterious Mr Sabin* 1898, *Mr Grex of Monte Carlo* 1915, *The Kingdom of the Blind* 1917, *The Great Impersonation* 1920, and *Envoy Extraordinary* 1937.

# Oppenheim, James (1882-1932)

US poet and writer. He wrote sentimental stories and novels to support his family before becoming a poet, as seen in *Songs for the New Age* (1914). He was also the editor of a literary magazine, *The Seven Arts* (1916-17), and, after it failed, he became involved in the psychoanalytic theories of Carl Jung.

Oppenheim was born in St Paul, Minnesota. His family moved to New York, New York, when he was a child, and he was educated in the public schools. He took extension courses at Columbia University, then became a secretary and a teacher. He died of tuberculosis after many years of poverty and illness.

# O'Rahilly, Egan (1670-1728)

#### also known as Aodhagán Ó Rathaille

Irish Gaelic poet. The last of the great Gaelic poets, his verse laments the overthrow of Catholic Gaelic Ireland.

### oral literature

stories that are or have been transmitted in spoken form, such as public recitation, rather than through writing or printing.

Most pre-literate societies have had a tradition of oral literature, including short folk tales, legends, myths, proverbs, and riddles, as well as longer narrative works; and most of the ancient epics - such as the Greek *Odyssey* and the Mesopotamian *Gilgamesh* - seem to have been composed and added to over many centuries before they were committed to writing.

Some ancient stories from oral traditions were not written down as literary works until the 19th century, such as the Finnish *Kalevala* (1835-49); many fairy tales, such as those collected in Germany by the Grimm brothers, also come into this category. Much of this sort of **folk literature** may have been consciously embellished and altered, as happened in 19th-century Europe for nationalistic purposes.

Oral literatures have continued to influence the development of national written literatures in the 20th century, particularly in Africa, central Asia, and Australia. Russian investigations and studies of oral literature in the Balkans, originally undertaken to illuminate the oral basis of Homeric narrative, have prompted collections and scientific studies in many other parts of the world.

# **Orange Prize**

British literary prize of £30,000. The controversial award, established in January 1996, is open to women of any nationality.

In its first year, it was won by English author Helen Dunmore for *A Spell of Winter*. Other winners include Canadian writer Anne Michaels in 1997, Canadian writer Carol Shields in 1998, US writer Suzanne Berne in 1999, English writer Linda Grant in 2000, Australian writer Kate Grenville in 2001, and US writer Anne Patchett in 2002.

# Ó Rathaille, Aodhagán (1670-1728)

#### also known as *Little Hugh O'Rahilly*

Irish Gaelic poet. Ó Rathaille was born in Kerry, on lands ruled in the middle ages by the MacCarthy Earls of Clancarty. He idolized the memory of the MacCarthys, and regarded himself as a descendant of their court bards. His poetry embodies the great Jacobite lament for the demise of Catholic Gaelic Ireland. A characteristic feature of his elegant, elegiac poems is the *aisling*, or patriotic dream-vision.

Although they were largely orally transmitted, his Gaelic poems survived in part and were edited bilingually for the Irish Texts Society in 1900, a revised edition being produced in 1911.

# Orczy, Emma Magdalena Rosalia Marie Josepha Barbara (1865-1947)

#### **Baroness Orczy**

Hungarian-born English novelist. She wrote the historical adventure *The Scarlet Pimpernel* 1905. The foppish Sir Percy Blakeney, bold rescuer of victims of the French Revolution, appeared in many sequels, such as *The Elusive Pimpernel* 1908. She wrote other novels of a similarly romantic character, chiefly set in the same historical period.

# Ó Reachtabhra, Antoine

Irish versifier and wandering minstrel; see Antoine Raiftearaí.

# O'Reilly, John Boyle (1844-1890)

Irish-born writer and republican. Born at Dowth Castle, County Louth, he was apprenticed as a journalist, and worked in Ireland and England. O'Reilly is best

known for his collections of poetry, such as *Songs, Legends and Ballads* (1878). In 1866 he was arrested and tried for his Fenian activities; he was sentenced to life imprisonment and later transported to Australia in 1868. He escaped to the USA in 1869, settled in Boston, and resumed his career as a journalist. In 1876 he became co-owner and editor of the *Pilot*, an influential Irish-American newspaper. He was also a popular lecturer.

### Oresteia

trilogy of tragic Greek plays by <u>Aeschylus</u> - <u>Agamemnon</u>, <u>Libation-Bearers</u>, and <u>Eumenides</u> - which won first prize at the festival of Dionysus in Athens in 458 BC. Their subject is the murder of Agamemnon by his wife Clytemnestra and the consequent vengeance of their son Orestes and daughter Electra.

# Oriani, Alfredo (1852-1909)

Italian novelist and essayist. A precursor of the fascists, he preached that Italy needed real unity and that there was too much regionalism, ideas which were set forth in *La lotta politica in Italia/The Political Struggle in Italy* 1892 and *La rivolta ideale/The Ideal Revolt* 1907. His realistic novels, based on his observation of the villagers around him, include *Gelosia/Jealousy* 1894, *La disfatta/Defeat* 1896, and *Olocausto/Holocaust* 1902.

# Ó Riórdáin, Seán (1916-1977)

Irish poet, born in Ballvourney, in the Gaeltacht (Irish-speaking area) of west Cork. Considered one of the best modern Irish-language poets, Ó Riórdáin believed that writing is a form of prayer and a process of self-discovery. He had a strong influence on younger poets who wrote in Irish such as Nuala <u>Ní Dhomhnaill</u>. Collections of his poetry, which include *Eireaball Spideoige* (1952) and *Brosna* (1964), reflect a struggle with the nature of identity, language, and faith.

Diagnosed with tuberculosis in 1938, Ó Riórdáin often commented on the ironic relationship between his illness and his creative vitality.

# O'Riordan, Conal Holmes O'Connell (1874-1948)

#### pseudonym F Norreys Connell

Irish novelist and playwright. Born in Dublin, he was educated at Clongowes Wood College, and moved to London at the age of 16 to pursue a career as an actor and

dramatist. His first book was *In the Green Park* (1894); later novels include the 'Adam' trilogy, beginning with *Adam of Dublin* (1920); and the 'Soldier' series, including *Soldier Born* (1927), *Soldier of Waterloo* (1928), and *Soldier's End* (1938). O'Riordan succeeded J M Synge as director of the Abbey Theatre, Dublin 1909-15. His plays include *Rope Enough* (1913), *His Majesty's Pleasure* (1925), and *The King's Wooing* (1929).

# Orlando Furioso

poem written in 1516 by Ludovico Ariosto, first published in 1516 (revised 1522, 1532) as a sequel to Matteo Maria <u>Boiardo's</u>*Orlando innamorato* (1487). The poem describes the unrequited love of Orlando for Angelica, set against the war between Saracens (Arabs) and Christians during the reign of the first Holy Roman Emperor, Charlemagne. The work was a success in Ariosto's own lifetime; it was later translated into French, Spanish, English (by Sir John Harington), and Polish.

# Orti Oricellari

an informal academy of Italian writers, artists and scholars who met in Florence in the early years of the 16th century. The group was a continuation of the Florentine Academy, and met in the Orti Oricellari gardens (also known as the Rucellai Gardens) to hold debates.

The political thinker <u>Machiavelli</u> was among the leading members, and he later used several other members as characters in his dialogue *Dell'arte della guerra/On the Art of War* (1521).

# Ortiz, Simon (Joseph) (1941-)

Poet and writer. An Acoma Pueblo Indian, he was educated through the Bureau of Indian Affairs, attended Fort Lewis College (1961-62), the University of New Mexico (1966-68), and the University of Iowa (1968-69). He served in the army (1963-66) during the Vietnam War. He worked in public relations (1969-70), as a newspaper editor (1970-73), and as a teacher at numerous institutions. He lived in Acoma Pueblo, New Mexico, and is known for his fiction and poetry such as *A Good Journey* (1977) and *From Sand Creek: Rising in This Heart Which Is Our America* (1981). He was born in Albuquerque, New Mexico.

Orwell, George (1903-1950)

pen-name of Eric Arthur Blair

English writer. His books include the satirical fable <u>Animal Farm</u> (1945), an attack on the Soviet Union and its leader, Stalin, which includes such slogans as 'All animals are equal, but some are more equal than others'; and the prophetic <u>Nineteen Eighty-Four</u> (1949), targeting Cold War politics, which portrays the catastrophic excesses of state control over the individual. He also wrote numerous essays. Orwell was distrustful of all political parties and ideologies, and a deep sense of social conscience and antipathy towards political dictatorship characterizes his work.

Orwell was born in Motihari, Bengal, India, and educated in England at Eton. He served in Burma (now Myanmar) with the Indian Imperial Police 1922-27, an experience reflected in the novel Burmese Days (1934). In horrified retreat from imperialism, he moved towards socialism and even anarchism. A period of poverty, during which he was successively tutor, teacher, dishwasher, tramp, and bookshop assistant, is described in Down and Out in Paris and London (1933), and also provided him with material for *The Road to Wigan Pier* (1937) and *Keep the* Aspidistra Flying (1936). In 1936 he fought on the Republican side in the Spanish Civil War and was wounded; these experience are related in Homage to Catalonia (1938). Orwell reacted strongly against his exposure to the brutally practical politics of the communists in Spain. He was forced to flee the country, and the experience made him an active opponent both of communism and fascism. Coming up for Air appeared in 1939. During World War II, Orwell worked for the BBC, writing and monitoring propaganda. He was also a gifted critic and journalist. His essays, articles, many letters, and several diaries and notebooks are reprinted in The Collected Essays (1968). They include Inside the Whale (1940), Shooting an Elephant and Other Essays (1950), and England, Your England (1953).

# Orzeszkowa, Eliza (born Pawlowska) (1841-1910)

Polish novelist and social activist, born in Lithuania. Her work is concerned with social problems and especially with the role of women in society, as in *Marta* 1873. *Eli Makower* 1874 and *Meir Ezofowicz* 1878 both concern the position of Polish Jews. *Cham/The Boor* 1889 is set in Lithuania, and is considered Orzeszkowa's finest novel.

# Osbourne, Lloyd (1868-1947)

US novelist. He was the stepson of the Scottish novelist Robert Louis <u>Stevenson</u>, with whom he collaborated in writing *The Wrong Box* 1889, *The Wrecker* 1892, and *The Ebb-tide* 1894. He published *An Intimate Portrait of R L S* 1924, and wrote many novels.

# O'Shaughnessy, Arthur William Edgar (1844-1881)

English poet. His An Epic of Women, and Other Poems 1870 was greatly praised, but

he was less successful with *Lays of France* 1872 and *Music and Moonlight* 1874, written in the Pre-Raphaelite manner. His *Songs of a Worker* were published posthumously 1881.

### Ossian

Irish Oisin

Legendary Gaelic hero and bard, claimed by both Ireland and Scotland. He is sometimes represented as the son of Finn Mac Cumhaill, in about AD 250, and as having lived to tell the tales of Finn and the Ulster heroes to St Patrick, in about 400. The publication in 1760 of James <u>Macpherson's</u> poems, attributed to Ossian, made Ossian's name familiar throughout Europe.

# Ó Súilleabháin, Eoghan Ruadh (1748-1784)

called 'Red Owen O'Sullivan' or 'Eoghan an Bhéil Bhinn' (Eoghanof the Sweet Mouth)

Irish Gaelic poet. He was born in Meentogues, near Killarney, County Kerry. His work followed Irish patriotic poetic traditions, epitomizing the last phase of native Irish vernacular poetry, and has been compared to that of his Scottish contemporary Robert Burns. W B Yeats's character 'Red Hanrahan' is based on him, as is 'Owen MacCarthy' in Thomas Flanagan's *The Year of the French* (1979).

During his life he taught in the banned Catholic ('hedge') schools, worked as an itinerant labourer, sailed under Admiral George Rodney in the West Indies, and served in the British army.

#### O'Sullivan, Seumas (1879-1958)

#### pseudonym of James Sullivan Starkey

Irish poet, born in Dublin, and the founder-editor of the *Dublin Magazine* 1923-58. A mystical poet, and a follower of 'AE' (George <u>Russell</u>), his volumes of verse include *The Twilight People* (1905), *Verses Sacred and Profane* (1908), *Collected Poems* (1912 and 1940), *Requiem* (1917), *Personal Talk* (1936), *Dublin Poems* (1946), and *Translations and Transcriptions* (1950).

Collections of O'Sullivan's essays are *Impressions* (1912), *Mud and Purple* (1917), *Common Adventures* (1926), and *The Rose and Bottle* (1946).

# **Othello**

tragedy by William <u>Shakespeare</u>, first performed in 1604-05. Othello, a Moorish commander in the Venetian army, is persuaded by lago that his wife Desdemona is having an affair with his friend Cassio. Othello murders Desdemona; on discovering her innocence, he kills himself.

# Ouida (1839-1908)

#### pen-name of Marie Louise de la Ramée

English romantic novelist. Her work includes *Under Two Flags* 1867, *A Village Commune* 1881, and *Princess Napraxine* 1884.

# Oursler, (Charles) Fulton (1893-1952)

US author and editor. He wrote plays, novels (especially mysteries under the pseudonym Anthony Abbot), and popular religious books, most notably *The Greatest Story Ever Told* (1949).

Oursler was born in Baltimore, Maryland. He was also senior editor of *Reader's Digest* from 1944 on.

# Outsider, The

#### French L'Etranger

novel by Albert <u>Camus</u>, published 1942, a key work of existentialism. A man is sentenced to death, ostensibly for murder, but as much for his failure to conform to the values of a hypocritical society.

# Overbury, Thomas (1581-1613)

English poet and courtier. His poem *A Wife now the Widow of Sir T Overbury* was published 1614, with 21 Theophrastan-type 'characters' attached to it (see <u>Theophrastus</u>). They are epigrammatic and witty in a 'conceited' style. Later editions contained additions, possibly by John Webster, Thomas Dekker, and John <u>Donne</u>.

### Øverland, Arnulf (1889-1968)

Norwegian lyric poet. His profound love of truth and justice is expressed in masterly poetic form. Using his poetry as a weapon, he struck out against social injustice in such poems as *Brød og vin/Bread and Wine* 1919. In *Ord i alvor til det norske folk/ Words in Earnest to the Norwegian People* 1940 he made a creed of socialism, scorning Christianity, and in *Den røde front/The Red Front* 1937 he challenged Nazism. When the Germans invaded 1940, Øverland gave voice to the Norwegian Resistance with his powerful poems, later collected under the title *Vi overlever alt/ We Will Survive* 1945. He was sent to Sachsenhausen concentration camp, but was liberated 1945. *Tilbake til livet/Back to Life* appeared 1946.

### Ovid (43 BC-AD 17)

#### born Publius Ovidius Naso

Latin poet. His poetry deals mainly with the themes of love (*Amores* (20 BC), *Ars amatoria/The Art of Love* (1 BC)), mythology (*Metamorphoses* (AD 2)), and exile (*Tristia* (AD 9-12)). Born at Sulmo, Ovid studied rhetoric in Rome in preparation for a legal career, but soon turned to literature. In AD 9 he was banished by Augustus to Tomis, on the Black Sea, where he died. Sophisticated, ironical, and self-pitying, his work was highly influential during the Middle Ages and Renaissance.

### Owen, John (c. 1560-1622)

Welsh epigrammatist. His Latin epigrams, which have a high degree of sense and wit, gained him much praise, and were translated into English, French, German, and Spanish.

# Owen, Wilfred Edward Salter (1893-1918)

English poet. His verse, owing much to the encouragement of English poet Siegfried <u>Sassoon</u>, is among the most moving of World War I poetry; it shatters the illusion of the glory of war, revealing its hollowness and the cruel destruction of beauty. Only four poems were published during his lifetime; he was killed in action a week before the Armistice. After Owen's death, Sassoon collected and edited his *Poems* (1920). Among the best known are 'Dulce et Decorum Est' and 'Anthem for Doomed Youth', published in 1921. English composer Benjamin Britten used several of the poems in his *War Requiem* (1962). In technique Owen's work is distinguished by the extensive use of assonance in place of rhyme, anticipating the later school of the poets W H <u>Auden</u> and Stephen <u>Spender</u>.

Owen was born in Plas Wilmot, Oswestry, Shropshire, and educated at Birkenhead

Institute and London University. He went to France in 1913 as a tutor, returning to England to enlist in the Artists' Rifles in 1915; two years later he was invalided home and sent to Craiglockhart War Hospital, Edinburgh, where Sassoon was his fellow patient. Sent back to France as a company commander, he won the Military Cross, but was killed in the crossing of the Sambre Canal.

### 'Owl and the Nightingale, The'

early Middle English poem, written about 1200, which takes the form of an argument between an owl, who may represent wisdom and respectability, and a nightingale, who may symbolize gaiety and courtly love. Its authorship is uncertain.

### 'Owl and the Pussycat'

nonsense poem by Edward <u>Lear</u>, published in *Nonsense Songs*, *Stories*, *Botany and Alphabets* (1871). It describes how an owl and a pussycat set off in their 'beautiful pea-green boat', sail 'for a year and a day', and are married in the 'land where the Bong-tree grows'.

# Oxenham, John (1852-1941)

#### pseudonym of William Arthur Dunkerley

English novelist and religious poet. *God's Prisoner* 1898 was followed by other romantic novels and *Bees in Amber* 1913, a book of verse. In 1914 his 'Hymn for the Men at the Front' became widely known.

# Oxford, Edward de Vere, 17th Earl of Oxford (1550-1604)

English courtier and poet, credited with around 15 surviving lyric poems. He went to Cambridge University at the age of eight and succeeded to the earldom and hereditary office of Lord Great Chamberlain at the age of 12.

# Oyono, Ferdinand Léopold (1929-)

Cameroon novelist and politician. Written in French, his work describes Cameroon during the colonial era, for example *Une Vie de boy/Houseboy* (1956) and *Le Vieux Nègre et la médaille/The Old Man and the Medal* (1956).

After serving in the United Nations 1975-83 and as ambassador to the UK 1984-85, he became Cameroon's minister of culture in 1998.

# Oz, Amos (1939-)

#### adopted name of Amos Klausner

Israeli writer. His poetic novels and short stories document events in Israeli and kibbutz life; for example, the novel *My Michael* (1972), set in Jerusalem in the 1950s. He is a spokesperson for liberal Israelis who oppose Jewish extremism towards the Palestinians, and has been a leading figure in the 'Peace Now' movement since 1977. Other novels include *Black Box* (1987), *The Third State* (1991), *Panther in the Basement* (1995), and *The Same Sea* (2001).

Oz was born in Jerusalem, the son of Russian immigrants from Poland who arrived in 1933, and was educated at the Hebrew University, Jerusalem, and in the UK at Oxford University. He moved to a kibbutz in 1954. His first novel, *Elsewhere*, *Perhaps* (1966), depicted life on a kibbutz near the Syrian border.

# Ozanam, Antoine Frédéric (1813-1853)

French scholar. While studying law in Paris he joined with <u>Chateaubriand</u> and Montalembert in championing the Catholic revival. From 1840 he was professor of foreign literature at the Sorbonne. His chief writings are *Dante et la philosophie catholique au XIIIième siècle* 1839 and *Etudes germaniques* 1847-49.

# Ozick, Cynthia (1928-)

#### born Cynthia Hallote

US writer. She is known for her mystical and supernatural fiction that often draws on Judaic law and history, as in *The Pagan Rabbi, and Other Stories* (1971), and *Levitation: Five Fictions* (1982).

Ozick was born in New York, New York. She studied at New York University (BA 1949), and Ohio State University (MA 1950). She worked as an advertising copywriter in Boston (1952-53), taught at New York University (1964-65), and was artist-in-residence at City College (1981-82). She lived in New Rochelle, New York, and wrote novels, short stories, essays, literary criticism, and translations.

US poet. A poet who won many awards, his work, such as *Waking to My Name: New and Selected Poems* (1980), is considered by some critics to be indebted to the work of Robert Frost.

Pack was born in New York, New York. He studied at Dartmouth (BA 1951) and Columbia University (MA 1953). He taught at Barnard (1957-64) and Middlebury College (Vermont) (1964). Associated with the Bread Loaf Writers Conference, Middlebury, Vermont (1973-93).

### Pacuvius, Marcus (220-c. 130 BC)

Latin tragic poet and nephew of <u>Ennius</u>, born at Brundisium. After spending much of his life at Rome, where he earned a reputation as painter as well as poet, he returned to his birthplace, where he died. Pacuvius's tragedies owed much to their greater Greek counterparts, but they had the merit of being adaptations rather than mere translations. Fragments amounting to about 400 lines are extant.

# Page, Thomas Nelson (1853-1922)

US writer and diplomat. He wrote about Virginian plantation owners and their slaves and servants in his story 'Marse Chan' (1884) and in *In Ole Virginia* (1887) and other books. He was US ambassador to Italy 1913-19.

# Paglia, Camille (1947-)

US writer and academic. An opponent of women's studies, she believes that the great accomplishments of Western civilization have been achieved by men as a result of the male determination to conquer nature. This is set out in *Sexual Personae: Art and Decadence from Nefertiti to Emily Dickinson* (1990). She became professor of humanities in the University of Arts, Philadelphia, in 1984.

She was born in Endicott, New York. Self-assertive, combatively verbose, and combining paeans to rock stars with an erudite surface dazzle, Paglia quickly became popular with the media. She celebrates the glamour of women and their difference from men in such books as *Sex*, *Art*, *and American Culture* (1992) and *Vamps and Tramps* (1995).

# Painter, William (c. 1525-1590)

English translator. He is remembered for his two-volume Palace of Pleasure (1566-

67), an anthology of more than 100 stories taken from a wide range of writers, including Livy, Plutarch, Giraldi (Cinthio), Boccaccio, Bandello, and Marguerite of Navarre. The stories were adapted by many English writers and dramatists, notably Shakespeare, who uses material from this book in *Romeo and Juliet*, *Timon of Athens*, *All's Well That Ends Well*, and *The Rape of Lucrece*.

Probably born in London, he was educated at Cambridge and became a schoolmaster in Kent.

# Palahniuk, Chuck (1961-)

US writer. He achieved a cult following with his dark novel *Fight Club* (1996; filmed 1999), about a loner who becomes involved with a magnetic but dangerous character. His original, violent, and disturbing novels also include *Invisible Monsters* (1999), *Survivor* (1999), *Choke* (2001), *Lullaby* (2002), and *Diary* (2003).

His novels focus on isolation, fear, and deviance in a hostile, violent environment, often incorporating dark humor and irony. Other works include the travel guide/ memoir *Fugitives and Refugees: A Walk in Portland, Oregon* (2003) and the nonfiction collection *Stranger than Fiction: True Stories* (2004).

Palamas, Kostes (1859-1943)

Greek poet. He enriched the Greek vernacular by his use of it as a literary language, particularly in his poetry; collections include *Songs of My Fatherland* 1886, *Life Immovable* 1904, *The Twelve Lays of the Gypsy* 1907, and *The Flute of the King* 1910, which expresses his vivid awareness of Greek history.

### Palazzeschi, Aldo (1885-1974)

#### pseudonym of Aldo Giurlani

Italian poet and novelist. His reaction against contemporary society caused him to join the Futurist movement (see <u>Futurism</u>) for which he wrote the manifesto *II controdolore*. His early poetry, such as 'La fontana malata' and 'E lasciatemi divertire', reveals irony and humour, while his novels have been acclaimed for their naturalistic detail and the lyricism of his prose.

Palazzeschi's works include *I cavalli bianchi* 1905, *Prose riflessi* 1908, *L'incendiario* 1910, *Le sorelle Materassi* 1934, *I fratelli Cuccoli* 1948, and *Roma* 1953.

# Palés Matos, Luis (1898-1959)

Puerto Rican poet. He was one of the creators of Afro-Antillian poetry, which introduced African rhythms and words into the Puerto Rican poetic idom. Works such as 'Tuntún de Pasa y Grifería' and 'Ultimos Poemas' led many to think him Puerto Rico's most important 20th-century poet. He was born in Guayama, Puerto Rico, and he supported himself by working as a civil servant.

# Paley, Grace (1922-)

US short-story writer, critic, and political activist. Her stories express Jewish and feminist domestic experience with highly ironic humour, as in *The Little Disturbances of Man* (1960), *Enormous Changes at the Last Minute* (1974), and *Later the Same Day* (1985). Her *Collected Stories* appeared in 1994.

# Palgrave, Francis Turner (1824-1897)

English poet and anthologist. He was the author of several volumes of poetry and essays, but is best remembered for his anthology *The Golden Treasury of Songs and Lyrics* 1861. In its compilation Palgrave used his wide knowledge of literature and fine, if somewhat conservative, judgement; the anthology is still regarded as one of the best works of its kind.

# Palin, Michael Edward (1943-)

English actor and writer. First acclaimed as a member of the satirical television series *Monty Python's Flying Circus* (1969-74), he achieved solo success in a variety of television ventures, including *Ripping Yarns* (1976-80) and the travel series *Around the World in 80 Days* (1989), *Pole to Pole* (1992), *Hemingway Adventure* (1999), *Sahara* (2002), and *Himalaya* (2004). He also appeared in films such as *A Private Function* (1984) and *A Fish Called Wanda* (1988).

As a member of the Python team, he appeared in the films *Monty Python and the Holy Grail* (1975) and *Monty Python's Life of Brian* (1977-79). Other film appearances include *American Friends* (1991) and *Fierce Creatures* (1996), and a rare dramatic role in the television series *G.B.H.* (1991). He has also written a number of children's novels, including *Small Harry and the Toothache Pills* (1981) and *The Cyril Stories* (1986).

Palissot de Montenoy, Charles (1730-1814)

French writer. He wrote comedies, including *Le Cercle ou les originaux* 1755, *Les Philosophes* 1760, and *Les Courtisanes* 1775, as well as a satirical poem *La Dunciade* 1764, *Petites lettres sur de grands philosophes* 1757, and *Mémoires pour servir à l'histoire de notre littérature* 1773.

### Palma, Ricardo (1833-1919)

Peruvian writer. Curator of the Peruvian National Library and founder of the Peruvian Academy 1887, he wrote poems and romantic plays but is best known for his *Tradiciones peruanas/Peruvian Traditions* 1872-1910, a series of impudently fanciful sketches of the pageantry and intrigue of colonial Peru drawing on folk tale, legend, and gossip as well as historical material.

# Paludan, Jacob (1896-1975)

Danish novelist and essayist. His novels of contemporary society take as their central theme the destruction of values brought about by World War I, and the subsequent feelings of loss and nostalgia which those who remembered had to combat. They include *Markerne modnes/The Ripening Fields* 1927 and his main work *Jørgen Stein* 1932-33.

# Paludan-Müller, Frederik (1809-1876)

Danish poet. His successful *Dandserinden/The Dancer* 1833 shows traces of <u>Byron's</u> influence. The 'lyrical drama'*Amor og Psyche/Amor and Psyche* was published 1834. His greatest work, *Adam Homo* 1841-48, has become a Danish classic. This satirical look at his own society was followed by several graceful idylls, including *Tithon* 1844, *Abels død/The Death of Abel* 1845, and the beautiful poem *Adonis* 1874.

# pamphlet

small unbound booklet or leaflet, used to spread information and opinion. In 16th century in Europe, the pamphlet became the principal means of stimulating public debate on a wide range of political, religious, and cultural issues. It remained an effective method of widespread communication until the advent of mass media.

The first great age of pamphleteering began with the Protestant Reformation, when the new invention of the printing press helped such religious reformers as Martin Luther disseminate their ideas in leaflets that were written in a plain, vernacular language for wide appeal. Such tracts were often couched in polemical terms. Pamphleteering had its heyday in the 17th and 18th centuries, being employed in the English Civil War and in the American and French Revolutions as a tool of political agitation, and, more peacefully, to spread the ideas of the Enlightenment.

In modern times, pamphlets are used to advertise products and services, or to dispense advice; for example on matters of health and safety.

# Panduro, Leif (1923-1977)

Danish novelist and playwright. His grotesquely humorous and satirical novels explore the meeting between the individual and modern society. Often the world is viewed from the inside of a lunatic asylum, where the individual describes what he sees as an insane society (*Rend mig i traditionerne/Kick Me in the Traditions* 1958); or the study of an unstable personality is disguised as a detective novel with a surprise ending, as in *Den gale mand/The Mad Man* 1965.

Other works dealing with the theme of the normal/abnormal are Daniels and en verden/The Other World of Daniel 1970, Amatørerne/The Amateurs 1972, and Den ubetænksomme elsker/The Thoughtless Lover 1973. His last work was Høfeber/Hayfever 1975.

# Panormita, II

Italian poet; see Antonio Beccadelli.

# Panter-Downes, Mollie Patricia (1906-1997)

English novelist. She was 16 when she wrote her first novel, *A Shoreless Sea* (1924). Among her other novels are *The Chase* (1925), *Storm Bird* (1929), *My Husband Simon* (1931), *Nothing in Common but Sex* (1932), and *One Fine Day* (1947). During World War II and well into the 1980s she wrote a weekly 'Letter from England' for the *New Yorker*. Her *London War Notes* was published in 1972.

# Papini, Giovanni (1881-1956)

Italian author. He used the pseudonym Gian Falco. He wrote numerous essays and criticism; volumes of poetry, including *Cento pagine di poesia* 1915, *Opera prima* 1917, and *Pane e vino* 1926; and novels, including *Parole e sangue* 1912. *Un uomo finito* 1912 is autobiography.

After joining the Futurist movement (see <u>Futurism</u>), he founded, with the artist and writer Ardegno Soffici (1878-1964) and others, the review *Lacerba* 1913. Formerly a

sceptic, especially famous through his *Stroncature* 1916, he accepted the Catholic faith while writing *Storia di Cristo* 1921. Later works include *Storia della letteratura italiana* 1937.

### Paradise Lost

epic poem in 12 books, by John <u>Milton</u>, first published in 1667. The poem describes the Fall of Man and the battle between God and Satan, as enacted through the story of Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden. A sequel, *Paradise Regained*, was published in 1671 and relates the temptation of Christ in the wilderness.

# Paral, Vladimir (1932-)

Czech novelist. His novels concentrate on the depiction of everyday normality in minute detail; the few events they contain are charged with an atmosphere of inescapability. His novels and stories often treat the theme of sexual frustration, and include *Veltrh splnených prani/The Fair of Dreams Fulfilled* (1964), the story of a young chemist driven to rape, and *The Young Man and Moby Dick* (1974).

Other novels translated into English include *Catapult* (1967), *Lovers and Murderers* (1969), and *The Four Sonyas* (1971).

### Parandowski, Jan (1895-1978)

Polish novelist, essayist, and translator. His novels include *Niebo w plomieniach/ Heaven in Flames* 1936 - the story of a young man undergoing a religious crisis - and *Dysk olimpijski/The Olympic Discus* 1933. His principal interest was in classical Greece and Rome, but he also wrote fictionalized biographies of the medieval Italian poet Petrarch and the 19th-century dramatist Oscar Wilde.

# Pardo Bazán, Emilia (1852-1921)

Spanish writer. She was the author of more than 20 novels, 600 short stories, and many articles. *Los Pazos de Ulloa/The House of Ulloa* 1886 and its sequel *La madre naturaleza/Mother Nature* 1887, set in her native Galicia, describe the decline of the provincial aristocracy. She also wrote on French and Russian literature and was professor of romantic literature at Madrid from 1916.

US crime writer. Her series of mystery novels featuring a tough-minded feminist private detective, V I Warshawski, includes *Deadlock* (1984) and *Bloodshot* (1988).

Her other works include *Killing Orders* (1985), *Guardian Angel* (1991), *Tunnel Vision* (1994), *Ghost Country* (1998), *Hard Time* (1999), *Total Recall* (2001), and *Blacklist* (2003).

# Pargeter, Edith

English novelist who used the pen-name Ellis Peters.

# Parini, Giuseppe (1729-1799)

Italian poet. He is best known for *II giorno/The Day*, which appeared in four books; *II mattino/Morning* 1763, *II mezzogiorno/Midday* 1765, *II vespro/Evening*, and *La notte/Night*, the last two published posthumously 1801. His other important works include *Le odi/Odes* 1757.

Parini was born at Bosisio. A poet of good sense and strict morals, he was a typical product of the Age of Reason. He was a skilful satirist, particularly concerned with morality; his works are full of immense detail, gathered during periods he spent in aristocratic households, and were conscientiously and constantly revised. The essential aspect of the antihero of *II mattino* is that he is useless, while Parini's personal sentiments are found in *La Caduta*. In the Arcadian movement, Parini was known as Ripulano Eupilino, and he also became a member of the Milanese Academy of the Trasformati.

# Parini, Jay (Lee) (1948-)

US poet and writer. He is known for his critical essays, novels, such as *The Last Station* (1990), based on the life of Russian novelist Leo Tolstoy, and his poetry collections, as in *Town Life* (1988).

He was born in Pittston, Pennsylvania. He studied at Lafayette (BA 1970) and the University of St Andrews, Scotland, (BPhil. 1972; PhD 1975). He was a faculty member at Dartmouth (1975-82) before teaching at Middlebury (1982) and the Bread Loaf Writers' Conference (1982).

#### born Dorothy Rothschild

US writer and wit. She was a leading member of the literary circle known as the Algonquin Round Table. She reviewed for the magazines *Vanity Fair* and the *New Yorker*, and wrote wittily ironic verses, collected in several volumes including *Enough Rope* (1927), and *Not So Deep as a Well* (1936). Her short stories include the collections 'Laments for Living' (1930), and 'Here Lies' (1939). She also wrote screenplays in Hollywood, having moved there from New York City along with other members of her circle.

# Parkman, Francis (1823-1893)

US historian and traveller who chronicled the European exploration and conquest of North America in such books as *The California and Oregon Trail* 1849 and *La Salle and the Discovery of the Great West* 1878.

### Parley, Peter

Pseudonym of US writer Samuel Goodrich.

# Parley, Peter

US publisher and writer; see Samuel Goodrich.

### Parnassiens, Les

school of French poets which flourished 1866-76, including <u>Leconte de Lisle</u>, <u>Heredia</u>, <u>Sully-Prudhomme</u>, François-Edouard <u>Coppée</u>, Léon <u>Dierx</u>, Louis <u>Menard</u>, and Albert <u>Merat</u>. It was named after *Le Parnasse contemporain*, a periodical devoted to poetry, and advocated 'art for art's sake' in opposition to the ideas of the Romantics.

The Parnassians were much influenced by the scientific and philosophical climate of their times, in particular by scientific positivism. Their aim was to create poetry that was impersonal and intellectual in tone, not subjective and sentimental, and impeccable in form.

Irish poet, born in Dublin, and educated there at Trinity College. Parnell wrote various isolated poems, showing a fine descriptive touch, the most important being 'The Hermit', 'The Night Piece', and 'The Hymn to Contentment'. He was a friend of Jonathan <u>Swift</u>, and the English poet Alexander <u>Pope</u>, whom he helped with his translation of the *Iliad*.

Parnell was ordained in 1700, and appointed vicar of Finglas and archdeacon of Clogher. He visited London 1712-18 where he contributed verse to the *Spectator* and *The Guardian*.

### Parr, Samuel (1747-1825)

English schoolmaster and author. He was a great Latinist, but left no work to account for the high reputation which he enjoyed in his lifetime. His chief power lay in his conversation for which he was compared with Samuel Johnson, being nicknamed 'the Whig Johnson', but he fell far short of his model. His writings, including correspondence, were published 1828.

# Parra, de las, Teresa (1889-1936)

Venezuelan novelist. *Ifigenia* 1922 contrasts a world of dull provincial respectability with the Paris where de las Parra was educated; the heroine sacrifices herself and renounces her true love for a rich but dull husband. *Las memorias de Mamá Blanca* 1929 recalls her idyllic childhood.

# Parrington, V(ernon) L(ouis) (1871-1929)

US literary historian. Parrington revolutionized the study of American literature by regarding literary works in the context of intellectual history, most influentially in his 3-volume *Main Currents in American Thought* (1927-30). He was born in Aurora, Illinois.

# Parrish, Anne (1888-1957)

US novelist. She wrote *The Perennial Bachelor* 1925, and other deft novels of character, including *All Kneeling* 1928 and *Loads of Love* 1932. *Pray for a Tomorrow* 1941 reflects the crisis in Europe; *A Clouded Star* 1948 is about the slave-running exploits of Harriet Tubman.

# Parry, Milman (1902-1935)

US philologist. He pioneered in establishing that the *lliad* and *Odyssey* were the works of a preliterate oral poetic tradition involving the use of repeated epithets. With the scholar Alfred Bates Lord he worked on the living oral tradition in Yugoslavia (1933-35), collecting more than 12,000 texts.

Parry was born in Oakland, California. Educated in both the USA and France, He taught at Harvard from 1930 until his sudden death (possibly by suicide) in 1935. In 1971, his son Adam Parry, also a promising classicist who died young, published *The Making of Homeric Verse: The Collected Papers of Milman Parry*.

# Parry-Williams, Thomas Herbert (1887-1975)

Welsh poet, essayist, and scholar. In 1923 he published his authoritative study of the English element in Welsh, and ten volumes of his prose and verse appeared 1928-66, together with many works of scholarship. The terse realism in his poems of the 1920s signalled an end to the lingering romanticism of the period and showed Parry-Williams as the main precursor of modern Welsh poetry. A final, personal selection of his verse appeared 1972.

# Partisan Review

US intellectual and literary magazine, founded 1934 to express Marxist principles. In the later 1930s it departed from the orthodox line, and committed itself to modernist literature. During the 1950s the magazine published many of the major writers and critics of the time, including Saul <u>Bellow</u>, Mary <u>McCarthy</u>, and Lionel <u>Trilling</u>, but came to symbolize a conservative academic orthodoxy.

# Pascoli, Giovanni (1855-1912)

Italian poet and scholar. His first collection of verse, *Myricae* 1891, contained mostly poems of simple country life. It was followed by *Primi poemetti* 1897 and *Canti di Castelvecchio* 1903. *Poemi conviviali* 1904 are more classical in inspiration, and deal with eternal themes, while *Poemi italici* 1911 are patriotic poems, evoking events of Italy's past.

He also wrote excellent poetry in Latin, and translated Shelley, Tennyson, and Wordsworth. Pascoli departs from tradition in his use of profuse images, his deliberate symbolism, his unusual rhythms, and his wide vocabulary. His influence on younger poets was immense.

# Pasek, Jan Chryzostom (c. 1636-c. 1701)

Polish diarist and soldier. His *Pamietniki/Memoirs*, written 1656-88, describe his battles, journeys, domestic life, politics, and farming. First published in 1836, the book became a popular Polish classic.

# Pasolini, Pier Paolo (1922-1975)

Italian film director, poet, and novelist. From his Marxist viewpoint, he illustrated the decadence and inequality of society, set in a world ravaged by violence and sexuality. Among his films are *II vangelo secondo Mateo/The Gospel According to St Matthew* (1964), *The Decameron* (1970), *I racconti de Canterbury/The Canterbury Tales* (1972), and *Salò/Salo - The 120 Days of Sodom* (1975).

Pasolini's early work is coloured by his experience of life in the poor districts of Rome, where he lived from 1950. His writings include the novels *Ragazzi di vita/The Ragazzi* (1955) and *Una vita violenta/A Violent Life* (1959), filmed as *Accattone* (1961).

# Pasquier, Etienne (1529-1615)

French advocate and writer. Pasquier was born in Paris, France. During his earlier days he published in encyclopedic form *Recherches de la France/Research on France* (1560-67), as well as his dissertations on love, *Monophile* (1555). In 1588 he became deputy in the States-General. In 1603 he resigned his office as advocate to the king, and devoted the rest of his life to literature.

# Pasquin

#### or Pasquino

legendary cobbler of Rome, celebrated for his gibes. The name Pasquin was also given to the mutilated statue of a gladiator, found under a pavement near the Palazzo Orsini in 1501. It became customary to attach to this statue satirical verses, or 'pasquinades', directed against prominent people. The satires were mostly epigrammatic replies to topical questions attached to a nearby statue of Marforio.

# Passage to India

novel (1924) by E M Forster. In his last and possibly best novel Forster depicts Indian

and English characters under the British Raj who attempt to connect and fail. The Muslim doctor Aziz and the English teacher Fielding have a friendship which is soured by an incident involving a false accusation by a confused young Englishwoman. Aziz also feels a deep bond with Mrs Moore, whose death leaves a sense of unfinished mystery. This is the keynote of the book, with its acute insights into the cultural muddles and cross-purposes of the British Raj era.

# Pasternak, Boris Leonidovich (1890-1960)

Russian poet and novelist. His novel <u>*Dr Zhivago*</u> (1957) was banned in the USSR as a 'hostile act', and was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1957 (which Pasternak declined). The ban on *Dr Zhivago* has since been lifted and Pasternak's reputation as a writer has been revived since his death.

Born in Moscow, he remained in Russia when his father, the artist Leonid Pasternak (1862-1945), emigrated. His volumes of lyric poems include *A Twin Cloud* (1914) and *On Early Trains* (1943), and he translated Shakespeare's tragedies into Russian.

# **Paston Letters**

correspondence of a Norfolk family, together with state papers and other documents, covering the period 1422-1509. They form an invaluable source of information on 15th-century life and manners, and on conditions during the Wars of the Roses, as well as giving vivid portraits of some members of the Paston family.

# Pater, Walter Horatio (1839-1894)

English scholar, essayist, and art critic. He published *Studies in the History of the Renaissance* (1873), which expressed the idea of 'art for art's sake' that influenced the Aesthetic Movement.

His other works include the novel *Marius the Epicurean* (1885), in which the solitary hero, living under the Roman imperium of Marcus Aurelius, meditates on beauty, Paganism, and Christianity; *Imaginary Portraits* (1887); *Appreciations with an Essay on Style* (1889); and *Plato and Platonism* (1893). *Greek Studies* and *Miscellaneous Studies* appeared posthumously in 1895.

# Paterson, Banjo (Andrew Barton) (1864-1941)

Australian journalist and folk poet. Early acquaintance with drovers, squatters, and even bushrangers in New South Wales gave him material for his collection *The Man* 

*from Snowy River and Other Verses* 1895. He elaborated a horsily Arcadian myth of Australian life and published novels and travel sketches, but is best known for the song 'Waltzing Matilda' which he wrote about 1895 and performed to the Scots melody 'Craigielee'.

# Pather Panchali

#### Song of the Road

Bengali novel by Bibhuti Bhushan Banerji (1894-1950), published in 1929. It was his first major success. Episodic in structure, it offers an authentic portrayal of everyday life seen through the eyes of a small boy and his sister. It was the basis of an award-winning film by Satyajit Ray in 1955.

# Paton, Alan Stewart (1903-1988)

South African writer. Paton is best known for his international best-seller *Cry, the Beloved Country* (1948). A story of reconciliation between the fathers of a black murderer and his white victim, the novel is both an indictment of racial inequality in South Africa and a poetic plea for reform. Paton published two other novels, *Too Late the Phalarope* (1953), an exploration of Afrikanerdom and the taboo of miscegenation, and *Ah*, *But Your Land is Beautiful* (1981). His other publications include a collection of short stories, *Debbie Go Home* (1961); political and social studies; and two volumes of autobiography, *Towards the Mountain* (1980) and *Journey Continued* (1988).

Paton was born in Pietermaritzburg. He became a schoolmaster and in 1935 the principal of Diepkloof Reformatory near Johannesburg, which he ran along enlightened lines. In 1953 he became a founding member of the anti-apartheid Liberal Party, of which he was leader until 1968 when government legislation forced its collapse.

# Patten, Brian (1946-)

English poet and playwright. One of the 'Liverpool Poets' with Roger <u>McGough</u> and Adrian <u>Henri</u>, he collaborated on the extremely successful anthology *Penguin Modern Poets No. 10* (1967, 1974, 1983), named the *Mersey Sound*. Considered the closest of the three to earlier English tradition, his collections include *Walking Out: The Early Poems of Brian Patten* (1970) and *Notes to the Hurrying Man* (1969).

Never academically pompous, his *The Eminent Professors and the Nature of Poetry* as Enacted Out By Members of the Poetry Seminar One Rainy Evening (1972) gently mocks literary pretension. Later volumes include *The Unreliable Nightingale* (1973),

Love Poems (1981), Storm Damage (1988), Grinning Jack (1990), and Armada (1996). He has also written for the theatre and poetry for children, including Gargling with Jelly (1985) and Juggling with Gerbils (2000).

# Patten, Gilbert (1866-1945)

#### born George William Patten

US writer. From 1896 to 1913 he wrote his Frank Merriwell series for *Tip Top Weekly* under the pen-name of Burt L Standish. Frank Merriwell became a popular paradigm of youth, virtue, wealth, education, good looks, and athletic ability, a mythological American juvenile hero who had little in common with his creator or readers.

Patten was born in Corinna, Maine. He ran away when he was 16, worked in a machine shop, and attended Corinna Union Academy. He began selling dime novels, moved to New York, New York (1891), and wrote Westerns. He lived in New York and Camden, Maine, until he moved to California in 1941.

# Patterson, Harry (1929-)

English novelist. A prolific and internationally popular author, he has written many thrillers under his own name, including *Dillinger* (1983), as well as under the pseudonym Jack Higgins, including *The Eagle Has Landed* (1975).

# Pattie, James Ohio (1804-c. 1850)

US trapper and author. He published a semifictional *Personal Narrative* (1831) regarding his travels to Mexico and California. He joined the gold rush in 1849 and disappeared while camping in the Sierra Nevadas. He was born in Bracken County, Kentucky.

### Pattison, Mark (1813-1884)

English scholar. In 1875 he published a life of the French scholar and humanist Isaac Casaubon (1559-1614). Critics of George <u>Eliot's</u>*Middlemarch* have speculated on the parallels between her character Casaubon and Pattison. His *Sermons and Collected Essays* appeared 1889 and his introspective *Memoirs*, edited by his wife, were published 1885.

# Paul, Elliot Harold (1891-1958)

US author. His works include the novel *Indelible* 1922, about two young musicians, and the travel book *The Narrow Street/The Last Time I Saw Paris* 1940.

# Paulding, James Kirke (1778-1860)

US author. He published the *Diverting History of John Bull and Brother Jonathan* 1812 and a more serious work, *The United States and England* 1815, which led to his appointment as a member of the Board of Naval Commissioners. He also wrote works in defence of the Southern states and slavery.

He was a friend of the writer Washington <u>Irving</u>, and wrote part of *Salmagundi* with him 1807-08. Other works include *The Dutchman's Fireside* 1831 and *Life of Washington* 1835. He was secretary of the navy 1838-41.

# Paulhan, Jean (1884-1968)

French essayist and critic. He was editor of the *Nouvelle Revue française* 1925-40. His writings include *La Guérison sévère* 1925, *Le Guerrier appliqué* 1930, *Les Fleurs de Tarbes* 1941, *Clef de la poésie* 1944, *Entretien sur des faits divers* 1945, *De la paille et du grain* 1948, *Les Causes célèbres* 1949, and *L'Aveuglette* 1953.

# Paustovski, Konstantin Georgievich (1892-1968)

Russian writer of short stories, plays, and memoirs. His long autobiographical work *Povest' o zhizni/Story of a Life* was published 1945-63. Paustovski played a leading role in the cultural thaw following Stalin's death in 1953. He was respected for his integrity, and encouraged many younger writers.

# Pavese, Cesare (1908-1950)

Italian poet, translator, and novelist. Imprisoned for antifascist journalism, he published his poems *Lavorare stanca/Hard Labour* 1936 on his release. His sensitive translations and critical writings introduced Italian readers to modern English and American writers, notably Joyce and Melville (his translation of *Moby-Dick* is considered a masterpiece). These writers influenced his fascination with myth, symbol, and archetype. Pavese is at his best in his treatment of the myth of youth and innocence, and his novel *La luna e i falò/The Moon and the Bonfires* 1950 was translated into many languages. Other novels include *II compagno/The Comrade* 1947 and *La bella estate/The Beautiful Summer* 1949. He committed suicide.

# Payn, James (1830-1898)

English novelist. His first novel was *The Foster Brothers* 1859; it was followed by many others, including *Lost Sir Massingberd* 1864, *Walter's Word* 1875, *By Proxy* 1878, *The Canon's Ward* 1884, and *The Talk of the Town* 1885. Most of Payn's stories are sensational or have an element of mystery, and, though the chain of coincidence is often strained, the plots are usually ingenious and well worked out.

# Paz, Octavio (1914-1998)

Mexican poet, essayist, and political thinker. His works reflect many influences, including Marxism, surrealism, and Aztec mythology. *El laberinto de la soledad/The Labyrinth of Solitude* (1950), the book which brought him to world attention, explores Mexico's heritage. His long poem *Piedra del sol/Sun Stone* (1957) uses contrasting images, centring on the Aztec Calendar Stone (representing the Aztec universe), to symbolize the loneliness of individuals and their search for union with others. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1990.

In 1962 Paz was appointed Mexican ambassador to India, but resigned in 1968 in protest against the Mexican government's killing of 200 student demonstrators on the eve of the Olympic Games. In 1971 he founded the monthly magazine *Plural* (later called *Vuelta*), which he used to analyse socialism and liberalism, urging Mexico to become independent of communist and US influences. His publications include *Collected Poems: 1957-87* (1988) and *One Earth, Four or Five Worlds/Tiempo Nublado* (1984).

# Peacock, Thomas Love (1785-1866)

English satirical novelist and poet. His unique whimsical novels are full of paradox, prejudice, curious learning, and witty dialogue, interspersed with occasional poems, and he satirizes contemporary ideas, outlooks, and attitudes in a prevailing comic tone. They include *Headlong Hall* (1816), *Melincourt* (1817), and *Nightmare Abbey* (1818), which has very little plot, consisting almost entirely of conversation expressing points of view on contemporary controversies and society.

He published two romances, *Maid Marian* (1822) and *Misfortunes of Elphin* (1829), but returned to the form of *Headlong Hall* with his last and best novels, *Crotchet Castle* (1831) and *Gryll Grange* (1860). These mature works are written with greater assurance and are less concerned with purely contemporary affairs.

English writer and illustrator. His novels include the grotesque fantasy trilogy *Titus Groan* (1946), *Gormenghast* (1950), and *Titus Alone* (1959), together creating an allegory of the decline of modern civilization. He illustrated most of his own work and produced drawings for an edition of *Treasure Island* (1949), and other works. Among his collections of verse are *The Glassblowers* (1950) and the posthumous *A Book of Nonsense* (1972). He also wrote a play, *The Wit to Woo* (1957).

# Pearse, Patrick Henry (1879-1916)

Irish writer, educationalist and revolutionary. He was prominent in the Gaelic revival, and a leader of the Easter Rising in 1916. Proclaimed president of the provisional government, he was court-martialled and shot after its suppression.

Pearse was a founding member of the Irish Volunteers, and was inducted into the Irish Republican Brotherhood (the Irish wing of the Fenian movement) in 1913. He came to believe that a 'blood sacrifice' was needed to awaken the slumbering Irish nation. In a famous graveside oration in 1915, he declared that 'Ireland unfree shall never be at peace'.

He was commander-in-chief of the Volunteers during the Easter Rising in 1916, and read the declaration of the Irish Republic. The rebellion that he led emerged in short order as a defining moment in modern Irish history, its authors as founding martyrs of modern Ireland, and the words of the declaration as the sacred text of modern Irish republicanism.

### Pearse



Patrick (Pádraig) Henry Pearse (1879-1916) spent many summers in this simple cottage near Screeb in County Galway. His life's work was to ensure that the Irish had control over their own education, and that the language of Ireland should be respected and preserved.

### Pearson, Hesketh (1887-1964)

English writer. *Doctor Darwin* 1930 was the first of his biographies notable for their zest, humour, and power in delineating character and describing incident. These include works on Gilbert and Sullivan 1935, Arthur Conan Doyle 1943, Oscar Wilde 1946, Charles Dickens 1949, Benjamin Disraeli 1951, Walter Scott 1955, Dr Johnson and James Boswell 1958, and Charles II 1960.

# Peele, George (c. 1558-c. 1596)

English dramatist and poet. His surviving plays are a pastoral, *The Arraignment of Paris* (1584), *Edward I* (1593), *The Battle of Alcazar* (1594), a fantastic comedy, *The Old Wives' Tale* (1595), and the tragedy, *David and Bethsabe* (1599). He wrote many miscellaneous verses, the best perhaps being the 'gratulatory poem'*The Honour of the Garter* (1593).

# Péguy, Charles Pierre (1873-1914)

French Catholic socialist writer. He established a socialist publishing house in Paris. From 1900 he published on political topics *Les Cahiers de la quinzaine/Fortnightly Notebooks*. He dedicated much of his poetry to a celebration of Joan of Arc, and wrote the gigantic poetical works *Le Mystère de la charité de Jeanne d'Arc/The Mystery of the Charity of Joan of Arc* 1910 and *Le Mystère des saints innocents/The Mystery of the Holy Innocents* 1912.

# Peire d'Auvergne (lived c. 1140-80)

French troubadour, from the Clermont region. He entered the Church but broke his vows and wandered from court to court, dying penitent. Some 25 of his poems remain. He was one of the first troubadours to write on religious subjects and was also perhaps the originator of the hermetic style known as *trobar clus*.

# Pekar, Harvey (1939-)

US writer. He is known for his graphic novels, illustrated by leading comic-book artists such as Robert Crumb and Joe Zabel. His autobiographical *American Splendor* series, first published in 1976, was a day-in-the-life series that injected stark realism into comics. It received the American Book Award in 1987 and was filmed in 2003.

The film *American Splendor*, based on Pekar's demoralized outlook and combining the reality of his everyday life with comic-book fantasy, won the Grand Jury Prize at the Sundance International Film Festival in 2003.

# Peletier, Jacques (1517-1582)

#### also known as Peletier du Mans

French poet. He was a member of the <u>Pléiade</u> group of poets. His literary works include a translation of <u>Horace's</u>Ars poetica (1545), an Art poétique of his own (1555), and poems, *Euvres poétiques* (1547). He was also well known as a mathematician.

# Pellico, Silvio (1789-1854)

Italian writer. He established himself with the tragedy *Francesca da Rimini* 1818. Later tragedies include *Eufemio di Messina*, *Ester d'Engaddi*, *Iginia d'Asti*, and *Corradino*. For his connections with the secret society of the Carbonari, he endured ten years' imprisonment, an account of which he published in *Le mie prigioni* 1832.

### Pemberton, Max (1863-1950)

English novelist. His best-known books are *The Iron Pirate* 1893 and its sequel *Captain Black* 1911. Others include *The Sea Wolves* 1894, *The Impregnable City* 1895, *Kronstadt* 1898, *Pro Patria* 1901, *My Sword for Lafayette* 1906, and *The Great White Army* 1915. He founded the London School of Journalism 1920. Knighted 1928.

### Pembroke, Mary, Countess of Pembroke (1561-1621)

English poet. The sister of Philip <u>Sidney</u>, she married Henry Herbert, Earl of Pembroke in 1577. It was at her suggestion that Sidney wrote his *Arcadia*, and she completed his translation of the Psalms after his death. She was the patron of

Samuel <u>Daniel</u>, Ben Jonson, and other poets, and herself wrote several works. She also translated Philippe de Mornay's *A Discourse of Life and Death* (1592).

### Pembroke, William Herbert, 3rd Earl of Pembroke (1580-1630)

English courtier and patron of letters. He was briefly imprisoned by Elizabeth I for his misbehaviour with Mary Fitton, English courtier and maid of honour to the queen. A patron of Ben Jonson, Philip Massinger, William Browne, and Inigo Jones, among others, he was also interested in the Virginia, North-West Passage, Bermuda, and East India companies. Pembroke was lord chamberlain of the royal household (1615-26), lord steward (1626-30), and chancellor of Oxford University from 1617, Pembroke College being named after him. To him and his brother, the First Folio of Shakespeare's works was dedicated. Pembroke was born in Wilton, England. He was educated at Oxford University.

### PEN

abbreviation for **Poets**, **Playwrights**, **Editors**, **Essayists**, **Novelists**, a literary association established in 1921 by C A ('Sappho') Dawson Scott, to promote international understanding among writers.

#### pensée

#### (French 'thought')

insight or saying; a mainly literary term. A *pensée* need not be as pointed as an <u>epigram</u> nor as moralizing as a maxim. The *Pensées* 1670 of French thinker Blaise Pascal are his notes for an unwritten defence of Christianity.

# Pepys, Samuel (1633-1703)

English naval administrator and diarist. His *Diary* (1660-69) is a unique record of the daily life of the period, the historical events of the <u>Restoration</u>, the manners and scandals of the court, naval administration, and Pepys's own interests, weaknesses, and intimate feelings. Written in shorthand, it was not deciphered until 1825. Highlights include his accounts of the Great Plague of London in 1665, the Fire of London in 1666, and the sailing up the Thames of the Dutch fleet in 1667.

Pepys was born in London, the son of John Pepys, a tailor. References in his *Diary* show that he was educated at St Paul's School, London, and Magdalene College, Cambridge. Pepys entered the Navy Office in 1660 and was secretary to the

Admiralty 1672-79. He was imprisoned in 1679 in the Tower of London on suspicion of being connected with the Popish Plot. He was reinstated as secretary to the Admiralty in 1684, but was finally deprived of his post after the 1688 Revolution. He published *Memoires of the Navy* in 1690. Pepys abandoned writing his diary because he believed, mistakenly, that his eyesight was about to fail - in fact, it continued to serve him for 30 or more years of active life.

The original manuscript of the *Diary*, preserved in Cambridge together with other papers, is in six volumes, containing more than 3,000 pages. It is closely written in cipher (a form of shorthand), which Pepys probably used in case his journal should fall into unfriendly hands during his life or be rashly published after his death.

# Percy, Thomas (1729-1811)

English scholar; bishop of Dromore, Ireland, from 1782. He was given a manuscript collection of songs, ballads, and romances, which became the basis of the *Reliques of Ancient English Poetry* (1765). The Percy collection renewed interest in <u>ballads</u> and was influential in the Romantic revival.

He also published a translation (from Portuguese) of the first Chinese novel in English, *Hau Kiou Choaun* (1761), as well as translations from Icelandic and a new version of the Song of Solomon (1764).

# Percy, Walker (1916-1990)

US writer. Starting with his first and best-known work, *The Moviegoer* (1961), he published several novels characterized by his conservative disillusionment with contemporary US life and values. A philosophic-intellectual man, he collected his essays on language in *The Message in the Bottle* (1975).

He was born in Birmingham, Alabama. After the suicide of his father (1929) and death of his mother (1931), he and his brothers and sisters were adopted by their father's cousin, William Percy, who lived in Greenville, Mississippi. Walker studied at the University of North Carolina (A 1937), and Columbia University (MD 1941). He worked as a pathologist in New York City, contracted tuberculosis, and spent three years in a sanatorium. He returned to Columbia to teach pathology (1944), suffered a relapse, and left medicine and New York City. He married (1946), converted to Catholicism (1947), and settled in Covington, Louisiana, to write.

# Perec, Georges (1936-1982)

French novelist. One of the most innovative French writers of his generation, he wrote novels noted for their verbal ingenuity. The novel *La Disparition/The Void* 1969, for example, is written without using the letter 'e'. His most highly regarded

work is La Vie, mode d'emploi/Life: A User's Manual 1978.

Rejecting the moral earnestness of the 'committed' writers of the post-war years such as Sartre and Camus, Perec sought to write playful and inventive novels. Determined 'never to write the same way twice', he wrote in a bewildering variety of styles and forms, his works often employing parody, pastiche, and sophisticated word games. Together with the noted writers Italo Calvino and Raymond Queneau, he was a leading member of a group dedicated to evolving new forms of fiction, OuLiPo (Ouvroir de Littérature Potentielle/Workshop of Potential Literature).

### Pereda, José Maria de (1833-1906)

Spanish novelist. His novels are pictures of the follies of his contemporaries, more particularly descriptions of people and places of his native Santander. They include *Escenas montañesas/Mountain Scenes* (two series, 1864, 1871); *Sotileza* 1855, a story of the sailors and fishermen of Santander; and *Peñas arriba/Up in the Mountains* 1894, about a small mountain village. His *Don Gonzalo González de la Gonzalera* 1879 is a politico-social satire.

# Perelman, S(idney) J(oseph) (1904-1979)

US humorist. His work was often published in the *New Yorker* magazine, and he wrote film scripts for the Marx Brothers. He shared an Academy Award for the script of *Around the World in 80 Days* 1956.

# Peretz, Isaac Leib (1852-1915)

also known as Yitzok Leibush Perets

Polish writer who wrote in Yiddish. His early works were written in Hebrew, but he later turned to Yiddish as an appropriate medium for his accounts of the Jewish people of Eastern Europe. He urged his people to be outward-looking, while retaining a constant awareness of the importance of their long history and culture. This point is emphasized clearly in his play *Di goldene keyt/The Golden Chain*. Peretz was called the founder of modern Jewish literature because he raised Yiddish to a new standard, influencing many younger writers, including Sholem Asch.

# Pérez de Ayala, Ramón (1881-1962)

Spanish diplomat and writer. He wrote autobiographical novels including *Tinieblas* en las cumbres/Darkness on the Heights 1907, A.M.D.G. 1910, La pata de la raposa/

The Fox's Paw 1912, and Troteras y danzaderas/Mummers and Dancers 1913. In 1921 he published a very popular and humorous novel called *Belarmino y Apolonio/* Belarmino and Apolonio about two cobblers, one with an artistic, and the other with a philosophic, ideal. Other works are the volume of poems La paz del sendero/The Peace of the Path 1904 and its sequel volume El sendero innumerable/The Innumerable Path 1916, the collection of short stories El ombligo del mundo/The World's Navel 1925, and the novels Tigre Juan/Tiger Juan 1926 and El curandero de su honra/The Healer of his Honour 1926.

Born at Oviedo, Asturias, he was essentially an intellectual, his writings characterized by subtle observation, a sceptical humour, and a sincere interest in human problems. He was ambassador to Great Britain 1931-36.

### Pérez de Guzmán, Fernán (c. 1378-c. 1460)

Castilian poet and chronicler. Among his works are *Crónica del rey Juan II*; *Generaciones y semblanzas*, a terse account of the illustrious men of his time; and *Loores de los claros varones de España*, a rhymed chronicle. His poetical works consist mainly of hymns and moral pieces. He was the nephew of Pedro <u>López de</u> <u>Ayala</u>.

# Pérez Galdós, Benito (1843-1920)

Spanish novelist. His works include the 46 historical novels in the cycle *Episodios nacionales* and the 21-novel cycle *Novelas españolas contemporáneas*, which includes *Doña Perfecta* 1876 and the epic *Fortunata y Jacinta/Fortunata and Jacinta* 1886-87, his masterpiece. In scale he has been compared to the French writer Honoré de Balzac and the English novelist Charles Dickens.

#### style and themes

Fortunata y Jacinta is a magnificent study of class relations in Madrid as reflected in the marriage and affairs of a bourgeois youth. Pérez Galdós's novels are most memorable for their dialogue; he had a Dickensian gift for capturing mannerisms of speech and dialect, and his novels teem with vivid and unforgettable characters. In the best of his novels, his sense of humour and obvious affection for his characters counterbalance his resigned pessimism about human nature.

# Perotti, Niccolò (1429-1480)

Italian cleric and humanist writer, born in Fano. He acted as one of Pope Nicholas V's translators, rendering, for example, the first books of the Greek historian Polybius into Latin 1452-54. Papal secretary from 1455, he was made archbishop of

Siponto in 1458. Although his later career was as a papal governor, he continued his scholarly pursuits, editing the works of the Roman writers Pliny and Martial.

Perotti was born in Fano, studied with the educationalists Vittorino da Feltre and <u>Guarino</u>, and then entered the household of, first, William <u>Gray</u>, and then Cardinal Bessarion (whose life he described in 1472). Like most humanists, Perotti was not averse to scholarly controversy: he openly criticized Domizio Calderini for his work on Martial. Perotti's own Martial commentary was presented in the *Cornucopia*, which was printed only after his death. His posthumous fame perhaps rested not only on this work but equally - maybe even more so - on his grammatical writings, which gained Europe-wide popularity: in 1480s Oxford, for example, it was a source for John Anwykyll's textbook.

### Perrault, Charles (1628-1703)

French writer who published a collection of fairy tales, *Contes de ma mère l'oye/ Mother Goose's Fairy Tales* (1697). These are based on traditional stories and include 'The Sleeping Beauty', 'Little Red Riding Hood', 'Blue Beard', 'Puss in Boots', and 'Cinderella'.

# Perry, Grace (1927-1987)

Australian poet and editor. In 1963 she founded and edited *Poetry Australia* and in 1964 South Head Press, which exclusively published poetry. Her own poetry collections include *Red Scarf* (1963), *Frozen Section* (1967), *Black Swans at Berrima* (1972), and *Journal of a Surgeon's Wife* (1975).

# Perry, Lilla Cabot (1848-1933)

US painter and poet. Based in Boston, she helped introduce Impressionism to the USA, as seen in *The Trio*, *Tokyo* (1898-1901), and published four volumes of poetry (1886-1923).

She was born in Boston, Massachusetts. A member of prominent Boston families, the Lowells and Cabots, she studied in Boston (*c.* 1885-88) and Paris (1888), summered in France, next door to Monet in Giverny (1889-99), and lived in Japan (1893-1901).

Perse, Saint-John (1887-1975)

pen-name of (Marie René Auguste) Alexis Saint-Léger

French poet and diplomat, a US citizen from 1940. His first book of verse, *Eloges/ Eloges and Other Poems* (1911), reflects the ambience of the West Indies, where he was born and raised. His later works include *Anabase/Anabasis* (1924), an epic poem translated by T S Eliot in 1930, *Pluies/Rains* (1943), *Exil/Exile and Other Poems* (1944), *Vents/Winds* (1946), *Amers/Seamarks* (1957), *Oiseaux/Birds* (1962), and *Honneur/Honour* (1964). He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1960.

Entering the foreign service 1914, he was secretary general 1933-40. He then emigrated permanently to the USA, and was deprived of French citizenship by the Vichy government.

#### Persian literature

prose and poetry of Iran, in Persian or Arabic, with ancient roots. The 11th-century poet Omar Khayyám, who is well known outside Iran, is considered less important there. Censorship has been a problem at various times.

#### ancient

Before the Arab conquest, Persian literature is represented by the sacred books of Zoroastrianism known as the *Avesta* and later translated into Pahlavi, in which language there also appeared various secular writings. After the conquest the use of Arabic became widespread.

#### classical

The Persian language was revived during the 9th century, and the following centuries saw a succession of brilliant poets, including the epic writer Firdawsi, the didactic S'adi (1184-1291), the mystic Rumi (1207-1273), the lyrical Hâfiz, and Jami, who combined the gifts of his predecessors and is considered the last of the classical poets. In the 16th and 17th centuries many Persian writers worked in India, still using classical forms and themes.

#### modern

The introduction of the printing press in the 19th century made possible a new newspaper culture, although hampered by censorship and limited readership, through which much literary work was published. Histories and translations soon followed, in a prose increasingly open to Western influences. Persian poetry, strongly traditional, blending classical courtly idiom with popular ballad and lampoon, was widely diffused among an only partly literate audience which discouraged the development of new forms despite the cautious innovations of Nima-yi Yushij (1895-1959). The alienation and isolation of the poet who has broken with tradition was poignantly expressed by the poet and film-maker Furugh Farrukhzad (1935-1967). Since the 1930s, realist fiction has become established. After the lranian revolution of 1979 some important works, such as Shusha Guppy's autobiographical *The Blindfold Horse* 1988, were written and published abroad.

#### Persius, Flaccus Aulus (AD 34-62)

Latin poet, born at Volaterrae. Together with <u>Lucan</u> he was a pupil and friend of the Stoic Cornutus. His extant work consists of six short satires.

## Pessoa, Fernando Antonio Nogueira (1888-1935)

Portuguese poet. His verse is considered to be the finest written in Portuguese in the 20th century. From 1914 he wrote under three assumed names, which he called 'heteronyms' - Alvaro de Campos, Ricardo Reis, and Alberto Caeiro. These names correspond to three completely different personalities, whose poetry also differs widely. Campos is a non-intellectual, neurotic and 'decadent'; Reis is a depressive character obsessed by mortality; and Caeiro is a simple man given up to the beauty of the world of the senses. Each must be understood as a poet in his own right. Pessoa also continued to write under his own name and 'own' personality.

#### Peter Pan

#### or The Boy Who Wouldn't Grow Up

play for children by James Barrie, first performed in 1904. Peter Pan, an orphan with magical powers, arrives in the night nursery of the Darling children, Wendy, John, and Michael. He teaches them to fly and introduces them to the Never Never Land inhabited by fantastic characters, including the fairy Tinkerbell, the Lost Boys, and the pirate Captain Hook. The play was followed by a story, *Peter Pan in Kensington Gardens* (1906), and a book of the play (1911).

#### Peter Rabbit

#### in full The Tale of Peter Rabbit

first of the children's stories written and illustrated by English author Beatrix <u>Potter</u>, published in 1900.

## Peters, Ellis (1913-1995)

pen-name of Edith Pargeter

English novelist and translator. Early novels of contemporary issues included She

*Goes to War* (1942). Subsequently she alternated thrillers with historical novels until 1978, when, as Ellis Peters, she published the first Brother Cadfael novel, *A Morbid Taste for Bones*, set in Shropshire and the Welsh borders. There followed 19 further medieval detective stories about him, in which the crime is only one element of tales of rich characterization with underlying philosophical and theological truths.

## Petöfi, Sándor (1823-1849)

Hungarian nationalist poet. He published his first volume of poems in 1844. He expressed his revolutionary ideas in the semi-autobiographical poem 'The Apostle', and died fighting the Austrians in the battle of Segesvár.

# Petrarch (1304-1374)

#### born Francesco Petrarca

Italian poet, humanist, and leader of the revival of classical learning. His *II canzoniere/Songbook* (also known as *Rime Sparse/Scattered Lyrics*) contains madrigals, songs, and <u>sonnets</u> in praise of his idealized love, 'Laura', whom he first saw in 1327 (she was a married woman and refused to become his mistress). These were Petrarch's greatest contributions to Italian literature; they shaped the lyric poetry of the Renaissance and greatly influenced French and English love poetry. Although he did not invent the sonnet form, he was its finest early practitioner and the 'Petrarchan sonnet' was admired as an ideal model by later poets.

Petrarch was anxious to restore the glories of Rome and Roman pre-eminence in world affairs; he urged the rulers of his day to imitate the heroes of Roman history and wanted the papal court to return from Avignon to Rome. A passionate believer in the power of ancient literature to restore antique virtue, culture, and social order to a degraded age, he inspired the new feeling in Italy and Europe towards study of the classics and more than anyone else directed young scholars towards ancient learning. He was a friend of the poet <u>Boccaccio</u>, and supported the political reformer Cola di Rienzi's attempt to establish an ancient Roman-style republic in 1347.

His Italian poetry includes the *Trionfi/Triumphs* (allegorical processions, of 'triumphs' of Love, Chastity, Death, Fame, Time, and Eternity). Among his works written in Latin are the epic poem *Africa*, *De viris illustribus/On Illustrious Men*, *Bucolicum carmen/Bucolic Songs*, *De remediis utriusque fortunae/Remedies Against Good and Evil*, and the treatises *De otio religiosorum/On the Virtue of Religious Life* and *De vita solitaria/On the Solitary Life*. The *Secretum meum/My Secret* is a spiritual biography in the form of a dialogue between the poet and St Augustine. Romanian prose writer and journalist. His novels present all classes of society and give valuable insights into Romanian urban life in the early years of the 20th century. They include *întunecare/Gathering Clouds* 1927, which shows the disillusionment that followed World War I, and *Calea Victoriei/Victory Road* 1929, a tale of political and social corruption.

Petrescu was a founder of the review Gandirea/Thought in 1921.

# Petronius, Gaius (lived 1st century)

#### also known as Petronius Arbiter

Roman author of the licentious romance *Satyricon*. He was a companion of the emperor Nero and supervisor of his pleasures.

# Petrov, Evgeni (1903-1942)

#### pseudonym of Evgeni Petrovich Kataev

Russian humorous writer. He was born in Odessa, Ukraine, where he worked in collaboration with Ilya IIf from 1927.

## **Peyton Place**

exposé of life in a small New England town by US novelist Grace Metalious, which spawned a film (1957), several sequels, and a long-running television soap series. The book was based partly on events in the agricultural and resort town of Gilmanton, New Hampshire, where Metalious lived for a time.

# Pforzheimer, Carl H(oward) (1879-1957)

US investment banker, book collector, and philanthropist. After graduating from New York City College (1896), he opened his own investment firm in 1901; by 1915 he was so successful that he moved to Purchase, New York, where he took an active role in Westchester County affairs. Meanwhile, his great passion was English literature and he collected an immense quantity of manuscripts, first editions, journals, letters, and memorabilia. With his wife he established the Carl and Lily Pforzheimer Foundation in the 1930s, which in turn established the Carl H Pforzheimer Library in New York City; for many years it was in a separate building and open only to select scholars. In 1986, a major segment of his collection - all works of English literature from 1425 to 1700, including the first work printed in English - was put up for sale; it was acquired for \$15 million (through the generosity of H Ross Perot) by the Harry Ransom Humanities Center at the University of Texas: Austin. In 1987, the segment focusing on the English Romantics - particularly Shelley and his circle - was donated to the New York Public Library so that it, too, would be accessible to a broader public. He was born in New York, New York.

#### Phaedrus (c. 15 BC-c.AD 50)

Roman fable writer. Born in Macedonia, he came to Rome as a slave in the household of Emperor Augustus, where he learnt Latin and was later freed. The allusions in his 97 fables (modelled on those of Aesop) caused him to be brought to trial by a minister of Emperor Tiberius. His work was popular in the Middle Ages.

# Philips, Ambrose (c. 1675-1749)

English poet. He became involved in a quarrel with Alexander <u>Pope</u> over the merits of each other's pastoral poems, with Pope and others contriving to bring him into ridicule, and his poetry came to be called 'namby-pamby'.

## Phillimore, Francis

pseudonym of English writer Wilfred Meynell.

# Phillips, Caryl (1958-)

West Indian-born novelist and playwright who moved to England in 1959. His work, which explores the conflicts of race and heritage and the themes of loss and persecution, includes the plays *Strange Fruit* (1981), *Where There is Darkness* (1982), and *The Shelter* (1984); and the novels *The Final Passage* (1985), *A State of Independence* (1986), *Higher Ground* (1989), *Cambridge* (1991), *The Nature of Blood* (1997), and *A Distant Shore* (2003).

Phillips has also written screenplays and radio plays, including *Crossing the River* (1985), and he is chief editor of the Faber and Faber Caribbean Writers' series.

## Phillips, David Graham (1867-1911)

US journalist and novelist. As a journalist on the New York World (1893-1902), he

wrote editorials for publisher Joseph Pulitzer and went on special assignments, such as covering the Greco-Turkish War (1897). After the success of his first novel, *The Great God Success* (1901), he became a freelance writer, publishing more than 20 others. His novels often depicted corruption in government or industry; some, such as *Susan Lenox: Her Rise and Fall* (published posthumously in 1917), dealt with such issues as the place of women in society. He also wrote articles, especially for the *Saturday Evening Post* - most notably a series attacking corruption in the US Senate; a disparaging reference to this series by President Theodore Roosevelt led to the first use of the term 'muckraking.' In 1911 Phillips was shot to death by a deranged man angered by one of his novels. Phillips's fiction, though popular at the time, later fell into oblivion. He was born in Madison, Indiana, and graduated from the College of New Jersey (later Princeton).

## Phillips, Jayne Anne (1952-)

US writer. Her first novel *Machine Dreams* (1984) dealt vividly with the impact of the Vietnam War on small-town America. Other works include the short-story collection *Fast Lanes* (1987) and the novels *Shelter* (1994) and *MotherKind* (2000).

# Phillips, John (1631-1706)

English poet and author. His chief works, which are remarkable for licentious and coarse wit, pungent satire, and a generally controversial scurrility, are *A Satyr against Hypocrites* 1655; *Montelion, or the Prophetic Almanack* 1660; *Maronides, or Virgil Travesty* 1673, which like some of his other works is in the style of Samuel <u>Butler'sHudibras; The August Britannicus</u> 1697; and *The Vision of Mons* 1706. He was the nephew of John <u>Milton</u>.

Edward Phillips (1630-*c.* 1696), his brother, wrote *Theatrum poetarum* 1675, a collection of ancient and contemporary poets, with criticisms.

# Phillips, Stephen (1864-1915)

English poet and playwright. He came to prominence with the striking poem *Christ in Hades* 1897. With his *Poems* 1898 he established a reputation which lasted for ten years but was not sustained. He revived poetic drama with *Paolo and Francesca* 1900; later verse plays include *Herod* 1901, *Ulysses* 1902, and *Nero* 1906, all acclaimed at the time. He edited the *Poetry Review* 1913-15.

Phillpotts, Eden (1862-1960)

English novelist and playwright. His numerous novels include *Lying Prophets* 1896, *My Devon Year* 1903, *The American Prisoner* 1904, *The Secret Woman* 1905, *Portreeve* 1906, *Redcliff* 1924, and *From the Angle of 88* 1954. His novels are mostly about Devonian life and characters, and their local atmosphere has been compared with Thomas Hardy's Wessex tales. His most successful play was *The Farmer's Wife* 1916, which ran for many years.

## Philostratus (170-245)

Greek sophist and rhetorician. After teaching at Athens he went to Rome, where he was requested by the empress Julia Domna to write the *Life of Apollonius of Tyana*. Other works certainly by Phliostratus are *Lives of the Sophists* and the first collection of *Imagines* (descriptions of pictures).

# Phrynichus (lived late 6th-early 5th century BC)

Athenian tragic poet, probably a disciple of Thespis, who produced his first play in 511 BC. He was the first to use female masks, that is, to introduce female characters. <u>Aristophanes</u> attacks him in *The Frogs* for the use of low buffoonery. Eleven titles, including those of the comedies 'Muses' and 'Solitary', and 100 fragments, have survived.

Herodotus relates that when his *Capture of Miletus* was exhibited, the audience was moved to tears, that the author was fined 1,000 drachmae, and that a law was passed forbidding the play ever to be shown again.

#### picaresque

#### (Spanish pícaro 'rogue')

genre of novel that takes a rogue or villain for its central character, telling his or her story in episodic form. The genre originated in Spain and was popular in the 18th century in Britain. Daniel Defoe's *Moll Flanders* (1722), Tobias Smollett's *Roderick Random* (1748), Henry Fielding's *Tom Jones* (1749), and Mark Twain's *Huckleberry Finn* (1885) are typical picaresque novels. The device of using an outsider gave the author the opportunity to give fresh moral insights into society.

The episodic plot is unified by the character of the hero or heroine, usually part fool and part innocent victim, though often attractive and dynamic. They get into many scrapes from which the reader always hopes they will extricate themselves.

## Picture of Dorian Gray, The

novel (1891) by Oscar <u>Wilde</u>. An artist paints a portrait of Dorian Gray, a young man described as flawless in beauty and character. The picture has the uncanny quality of registering the signs of age and accelerating moral decline of its subject while Gray himself apparently stays forever young and angelic. Although melodramatic in plot and lush in descriptive style, the story contains much of Wilde's paradoxical wit in its dialogue.

# Pierce, William L (1933-2002)

US author and revolutionary. Viewed as an intellectual leader of the US far right, he authored *The Turner Diaries* (1978), which is regarded as the novel that influenced the Oklahoma City bomber, Timothy McVeigh. An ultra-rightwing novel, it recounts the experiences of Earl Turner, a leader of an underground guerrilla force (the Organization) that engages in a campaign of terrorism against a 'Jewish-controlled' US government.

Born in Atlanta, Pierce was employed at Oregon State University as an assistant professor of physics 1962-65. After joining a number of other far-right groups, he founded the National Alliance in 1974, an Arlington-based group devoted to promoting the progress of the white race.

## 'Pierce the Plowman's Crede'

medieval English alliterative poem written in about 1394, based on William Langland's poem 'Piers Plowman' (c. 1367-86). It is notable for its attack upon the conduct of the clergy, and its vivid description of a medieval villein, ploughing the land in winter 'beslombred in fen' (covered in mud), accompanied by his starving children and wife 'wrapped in a wynwe schete to weren hire fro weders, barfote on the bare ijs, that the blode folwede' (wrapped in a sacking sheet to protect her from the weather, barefoot on the bare ice, that the blood followed).

# Piercy, Esther June (1905-1967)

US librarian. At the Enoch Pratt Free Library in Baltimore she planned a complete recataloging and reclassifying system, which became a model for schools and small public libraries.

She was born in Los Angeles, California. A graduate of the University of Illinois Library School, she spent ten years in the cataloging department at the University of New Mexico (1934-44).

## Piercy, Marge (1937-)

US poet and novelist. Her fiction takes a passionate look at the fringes of US social life and the world of the liberated woman. Her novels include *Small Changes* (1972), the utopian *Woman on the Edge of Time* (1979), *Fly Away Home* (1984), a war novel *Gone to Soldiers* (1987), and *Summer People* (1989).

# Pierre, D B C (1961-)

#### pen-name of Peter Finlay

Australian-born British writer. His debut novel *Vernon God Little* (2003), a satirical look at US culture in which a 15-year-old boy is accused of a massacre at his Texan high school, won the 2003 Booker Prize and the 2003 Whitbread Prize for best first novel.

## **Piers Plowman**

#### in full The Vision of William Concerning Piers the Plowman

medieval English alliterative poem, written in about 1367-86 by William Langland. It tells of a wanderer who falls asleep in the Malvern Hills and dreams of the means to Christian salvation. Piers Plowman represents Christ and other characters include the personified seven deadly sins. As an allegory it has flashes of poetic quality rather than a consistent and coherent poetic effect. The longest of several versions is over 7,200 lines.

The work is structured in two parts, divided into books or *passus*. In Part I, the poet dreams of events in contemporary secular society in which personified abstractions such as Lady Holy Church, Lady Meed, Conscience, Reason, and the Seven Deadly Sins take part, alongside the idealized figure of Piers the ploughman himself. Part II shows the dreamer searching for Do-well, Do-bet, and Do-best, the good, better, and best ways of life, on the basis of his earlier experience.

## Pilcher, Rosamunde (1924-)

English novelist and short-story writer, who won wide recognition with her bestselling romantic novel *The Shell Seekers* (1987).

Her first novel writing as Rosamunde Pilcher was A Secret To Tell in 1955. Other works include Sleeping Tiger (1967), Another View (1969), The Empty House (1973),

Wild Mountain Thyme (1978), Voices in Summer (1984), The Blue Bedroom and Other Stories (1985), September (1990), Coming Home (1995), and Winter Solstice (2000).

#### **Pilgrim's Progress**

allegory by John Bunyan, published in 1678-84, that describes the journey through life to the Celestial City of a man called Christian. On his way through the Slough of Despond, the House Beautiful, Vanity Fair, Doubting Castle, and other landmarks, he meets a number of allegorical figures.

#### Pillow Book, The

#### Japanese Makura no soshi

vivid and influential Japanese memoirs and miscellany by Sei Shonagon (966/7-1013?), compiled 991-1000 while she was at court in the service of the empress Sadako.

## Pindar (c. 518-c. 438 BC)

Greek lyric poet. He is noted for his surviving choral songs, or <u>odes</u>, written in honour of victors in the Greek athletic games at Delphi, Olympia, Nemea, and the Isthmus of Corinth. Only fragments of his other works survive; these include hymns, processional songs, and dirges.

#### Pindar, Peter

pseudonym of the English satirist John Wolcot.

## Pindemonte, Ippolito (1753-1828)

Italian poet. His main works are the *Poesie campestri* 1788, filled with charming descriptions of British scenery; *Arminio* 1804, a tragedy; *Epistole in versi* 1805, dealing with contemporary events; *Elogi di letterati* 1826, composed in fine prose; and a translation of the *Odyssey*. They are all more or less tinged with melancholy, and graceful and classic in manner.

#### Pinocchio

fantasy for children by Carlo <u>Collodi</u>, published in Italy in 1883 and in an English translation in 1892. It tells the story of a wooden puppet that comes to life and assumes the characteristics of a human boy. Pinocchio's nose grows longer every time he tells a lie. A Walt Disney cartoon film, based on Collodi's story, was released in 1940 and brought the character to a wider audience.

## Pinter, Harold (1930-)

English dramatist and poet. He specializes in the tragicomedy of the breakdown of communication, broadly in the tradition of the Theatre of the Absurd, for example *The Birthday Party* (1958; filmed 1968) and *The Caretaker* (1960). He was awarded the 2005 Nobel Prize for Literature.

Other plays include *The Homecoming* (1965), *Old Times* (1971), *Betrayal* (1978), *Moonlight* (1993), and *Celebration* (2000). His anthology *Various Voices: Prose*, *Poetry*, *Politics*, *1948-1998* was published in 1998.

## Pirandello, Luigi (1867-1936)

Italian dramatist, novelist, and short-story writer. His plays, which often deal with the themes of illusion and reality, and the tragicomic absurdity of life, include *Sei* personaggi in cerca d'autore/Six Characters in Search of an Author (1921), and Enrico IV/Henry IV (1922). Among his novels are L'esclusa/The Outcast (1901), II fu Mattia Pascal/The Late Mattia Pascal (1904), and I vecchi e i giovani/The Old and the Young (1909). He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1934.

#### themes

Pirandello earned a European reputation as a dramatist, both for the technical brilliance and originality of his method and for his metaphysical choice of subject. The themes and innovative techniques of his plays anticipated the work of Bertolt Brecht, Eugene O'Neill, Jean Anouilh, and Jean Genet. His recurrent preoccupation was the impossibility of any absolute objective reality, and the relative nature of personality.

# Pirckheimer, Willibald (1470-1530)

German book-collector and humanist. His own writings included translations from Greek into Latin, and from both classical languages into German. He also wrote *Bellum Helveticum/The Swiss War* (not published until 1610), a vivid account of his

experiences in a military campaign in 1499. A renowned figure in German humanist circles, he was a correspondent of Erasmus (they did not, however, meet) and also knew Philip Melanchthon: in the early 1520s, he tended towards support of the Lutherans but later, like Erasmus, wrote against them (*De Vera Christi Carne/On Christ's True Body*, 1527).

#### Pirke Aboth

#### Ethics of the Fathers

treatise on Hebrew law, forming part of the Mishnah. The *Pirke Aboth* is a collection of sayings of ancient rabbis dealing with ethical and religious matters.

## Piron, Alexis (1689-1773)

French poet and dramatist. His play *La Métromanie* 1738 is one of the most accomplished of the 18th century.

## Pitcairne, Archibald (1652-1713)

Scottish satirical poet and physician. He had strong Jacobite sympathies and ridiculed the prevalent Puritanism. The satire on Presbyterianism *Babel* 1692 is attributed to him; another work is the comedy *The Assembly; or Scotch Reformation* 1722, 1752.

#### Pitter, Ruth (1897-1992)

English poet. Her verse covers a wide range from the religious to the humorous and eccentric, and includes *A Trophy of Arms* 1936, *The Ermine* 1953, *Poems* 1922-66 1968, and *End of Drought* 1975.

#### Pius, Miroslav (1942-)

Slovak poet. His first collection, *Pyromania* (1966), is a sensitive depiction of a young man's insecurity in love. *Journey to the End of Death* (1970) is contemplative verse with a strong erotic and Christian content.

# Plaatje, Sol(omon) T(shekisho) (1876-1932)

South African novelist, journalist, and political campaigner. Plaatje is best known for *Mhudi: An Epic of South African Native Life a Hundred Years Ago* (1930; written *c.* 1920-21), the first novel in English by a black South African. In 1912 he was a founding member of the South African Native National Congress (SANNC; later the African National Congress (ANC)). He also produced works on the Setswana language, including a Setswana-English dictionary, and translations of Shakespeare into Setswana.

Plaatje moved to Mafeking (now Mafikeng), South Africa, as a court interpreter shortly before the Boer War. During the Siege of Mafeking (1899-1900) he kept a journal, which was published posthumously as *The Boer War Diary of Sol T. Plaatje* (1973). His book *Native Life in South Africa* (1916) was a scathing indictment of the Land Act of 1913, which limited African land ownership.

# Plaidy, Jean (c. 1910-1993)

#### pen-name of Eleanor Hibbert

English historical novelist. A prolific writer, she produced popular historical novels under three different pseudonyms: Jean Plaidy, Victoria Holt, and Philippa Carr.

# Plath, Sylvia (1932-1963)

US poet and novelist. Her powerful, highly personal poems, often expressing a sense of desolation, are distinguished by their intensity and sharp imagery. Her *Collected Poems* (1981) was awarded a Pulitzer Prize. Her autobiographical novel *The Bell Jar* (1961) deals with the events surrounding a young woman's emotional breakdown.

Plath was born in Boston, Massachusetts, attended Smith College, and was awarded a Fulbright scholarship to study at Cambridge University, England. Here she met the English poet Ted <u>Hughes</u>, whom she married in 1956; they separated in 1962. She committed suicide while living in London. Collections of her poems include *The Colossus* (1960) and *Ariel* (1965), published after her death.

## Plautus, Titus Maccius (c. 250-c. 184 BC)

Roman comic dramatist. Born in Umbria, he settled in Rome and began writing plays about 224 BC. Twenty-one comedies survive in his name; 35 other titles are known. Many of his plays are based on Greek originals by playwrights such as Menander, to which Plautus added his own brand of native wit and sharp character-drawing. He had a perfect command of language and metre, and enjoyed unrivalled popularity in

his day; since the Renaissance he has been acknowledged as one of the greatest of ancient playwrights.

John <u>Dryden</u>, Joseph <u>Addison</u>, Gotthold Lessing, and others imitated him; his *Aulularia* inspired Molière's *L'Avare/The Miser*, and Shakespeare's *Comedy of Errors* is based on the *Menaechmi*.

#### Pléiade, La

group of seven poets in 16th-century France, led by Pierre <u>Ronsard</u>, who aimed to break away from the medieval poetic tradition by seeking inspiration in classical Greek and Latin works, and to make the French language a suitable medium for all literary purposes. The other poets, according to Ronsard, were Joaquim <u>du Bellay</u>, Jean Antoine de <u>Baïf</u>, Rémi <u>Belleau</u>, Etienne <u>Jodelle</u>, Pontus de Tyard (1521-1605), and Jacques <u>Peletier</u>, but the name of the humanist scholar Jean <u>Dorat</u> is sometimes substituted for that of Peletier. The views of the group were first set out in du Bellay's *Défense et illustration de la langue française* (1549), and the name is derived from the seven stars of the Pleiades group.

# Plimpton, George Arthur (1855-1936)

US publisher and book collector. As chairman of Ginn and Company starting in 1914, he expanded the publishing company worldwide; as an avocation, he assembled a remarkable collection of manuscripts and books illuminating the history of education. He was born in Walpole, Massachusetts.

# Pliny the Elder (c.AD 23-79)

#### born Gaius Plinius Secundus

Roman scientific encyclopedist and historian. Many of his works have been lost, but in *Historia naturalis/Natural History*, probably completed AD 77, Pliny surveys all the known sciences of his day, notably astronomy, meteorology, geography, mineralogy, zoology, and botany.

Pliny states that he has covered 20,000 subjects of importance drawn from 100 selected writers, to whose observations he has added many of his own. Botany, agriculture, and horticulture appear to interest him most. To Pliny the world consisted of four elements: earth, air, fire, and water. The light substances were prevented from rising by the weight of the heavy ones, and vice versa. This is the earliest theory of gravity.

## Pliny the Younger (c.AD 61-113)

#### born Gaius Plinius Caecilius Secundus

Roman administrator. He was the nephew of Pliny the Elder. His correspondence is of great interest; among his surviving letters are those describing the eruption of Vesuvius, his uncle's death, and his correspondence with the emperor Trajan.

# Plisnier, Charles (1896-1952)

Belgian novelist. Under the influence of Blaise <u>Cendrars</u> and the surrealists he started writing lyric poetry, although he made his reputation with novels and short stories such as *Faux passeports/Memoirs of a Secret Revolutionary* 1937 (Prix Goncourt), *La Matriochka* 1943, and *Mères/Mothers* 1946-50.

# Plomer, William (Charles Franklyn) (1903-1973)

English novelist and poet, born in South Africa. His first novel, the manic *Turbott Wolfe*, which was written when he was 19 and published in 1926, caused such a sensation for its satirizing of South African racism and its advocating of miscegenation that Plomer left South Africa. He spent three years in Japan, an experience reflected in his novel *Sado* (1931). Settling in London in 1929, he became chief reader for publisher Jonathan Cape and devoted much of his time to writing poetry, especially modern ballads, character sketches, and reflective poems about Africa; he published ten volumes of verse, and his *Collected Poems* appeared in 1973 in an enlarged edition. He also wrote librettos for Benjamin Britten and produced two volumes of autobiography, *Double Lives* (1943) and *At Home* (1958).

He was awarded the Queen's Gold Medal for Poetry, and made a CBE, in 1968.

## Plutarch (c.AD 46-c. 120)

Greek biographer and essayist. He is best remembered for his *Lives*, a collection of short biographies of famous figures from Greek and Roman history arranged in contrasting pairs (for example, Alexander the Great and Julius Caesar are paired). He also wrote *Moralia*, a collection of essays on moral and social themes.

Plutarch had a profound influence on Renaissance thought and literature. This is most noticeable in two literary fields: biography, through his *Lives*; and the essay, through his *Moralia*. The *Lives* (which contains 50 short biographies: 23 pairs and 4 single biographies) appealed to the Renaissance emphasis on the individual. The *Moralia* (which contains over 60 short works covering a wide range of subjects)

appealed to the prevailing interest in ethics - their fascination lay in the fact that they deal with the practical issues of everyday life (such as how to tell a true friend from a false one) rather than with abstract philosophical principles.

The translations of the *Lives* into French by Jacques <u>Amyot</u> and into English by Thomas <u>North</u> were enormously influential in their respective countries, and both <u>Montaigne</u> and Francis Bacon were deeply indebted to the *Moralia* in their development of the essay form.

## Po Chü-i

alternative transliteration of Bo Zhu Yi, Chinese poet.

## Poe, Edgar Allan (1809-1849)

US writer and poet. His short stories are renowned for their horrific atmosphere, as in 'The Fall of the House of Usher' (1839) and 'The Masque of the Red Death' (1842), and for their acute reasoning (ratiocination), as in 'The Gold Bug' (1843) and 'The Murders in the Rue Morgue' (1841, in which the investigators Legrand and Dupin anticipate the character of Sherlock Holmes by Scottish writer Arthur Conan <u>Doyle</u>). His poems include 'The <u>Raven</u>' (1845). His novel *The Narrative of Arthur Gordon Pym of Nantucket* (1838) has attracted critical attention.

Poe, born in Boston, was orphaned in 1811 and joined the army in 1827 but was court-martialled in 1830 for deliberate neglect of duty. He failed to earn a living by writing, became an alcoholic, and in 1847 lost his wife (commemorated in his poem 'Annabel Lee'). His verse, of haunting lyric beauty (for example, 'Ulalume' and 'The Bells'), influenced the French Symbolists. The cause of his death has been debated. Poe had a history of opiate and alcohol abuse, though his family maintained that he had recently abstained from both. In 1996 a US doctor suggested that he may have died of rabies.

#### poet laureate

poet of the British royal household or of the USA, so called because of the laurel wreath awarded to eminent poets in the Greco-Roman world. Early UK poets with unofficial status were John <u>Skelton</u>, Samuel <u>Daniel</u>, Ben Jonson, and William <u>Davenant</u>. John <u>Dryden</u> was the first to receive the title by letters-patent in 1668 and from then on the post became a regular institution. Andrew <u>Motion</u> was appointed UK poet laureate in 1999. His was the first appointment to the post to be made for ten years, rather than for life.

## Poetry: A Magazine of Verse

influential US literary magazine. One of the first 'little magazines' of the early 20th century, and still published today, it was founded in Chicago in 1912 by Harriet Monroe (1860-1936) with the poet Ezra Pound as foreign editor. It introduced many major modern poets, including T S Eliot, Wallace Stevens, William Carlos Williams, Marianne Moore, and Carl Sandburg, and it printed the manifesto of Imagism.

## Poggio Bracciolini, Giovanni Francesco (1380-1459)

Italian scholar and humanist. He devoted himself to studying and unearthing classical manuscripts. Among his discoveries were orations of Cicero, plays by Plautus, Lucretius'*De rerum natura*, manuscripts by Quintilian, and fragments of Valerius Flaccus, Silius Italicus, and others. He himself wrote moral essays, a *Historia florentina 1350-1455/History of Florence 1350-1455* 1476, in imitation of Livy, and *Liber facetiarum*, a collection of humorous and often indecent stories directed chiefly against monks.

# Pohl, Frederik (1919-)

US writer and editor. He published a steady stream of short stories and novels, often coauthoring works with other science fiction writers under joint pen-names. A pioneer in 'sociological sci-fi', which tends to postulate alternative societies, he also helped introduce more sophisticated literary techniques into what had long been regarded as 'pulp' fiction. One of his classic works is *Gateway* (1977).

Pohl was born in New York. He attended the public schools in New York City and then went to work as a writer and editor for popular magazines (1939-43, 1946-49), with time out to serve with the US Army Air Force (1943-45). He had set himself up as a literary agent in 1946 and by 1953 his own works were successful enough to allow him to become a freelance writer. He returned to editing science fiction, first at *Galaxy Magazine* (1961-69), then at Ace Books (1971-72), and finally at Bantam Books (1973-79). As the winner of many awards, both for his fiction and as an editor, he lectured widely in the USA and abroad and appeared on many radio and television programmes to discuss science fiction.

# Poirier, Richard (1925-)

US literary critic, educator, and writer. A professor at Rutgers (1963) and author of studies of Henry James, Norman Mailer and Robert Frost, he cofounded the Library of America (1979), an ongoing and comprehensive published collection of American literary and historical works. He was born in Gloucester, Massachusetts.

## Poirot, Hercule

fictional Belgian detective who appears in Agatha <u>Christie</u>'s first crime novel *The Mysterious Affair at Styles* (1920) and in 32 subsequent mysteries.

Known for his inflated ego, vanity, and charm, Poirot exercises his 'little grey cells' to solve the most convoluted criminal plots, for example those of *The Murder of Roger Ackroyd* (1926) and *Murder on the Orient Express* (1934).

## **Polish literature**

a vernacular literature that began to emerge in the 14th century and enjoyed a golden age in the 16th and 17th centuries under Renaissance influences, particularly apparent in the poetry of Jan Kochanowski (1530-1584). The tradition revived in the later 18th century, the era of the Enlightenment poet and pioneer novelist Ignacy Krasicki (1735-1801), and a Polish national theatre was opened in 1765.

The domination of Poland by Austria, Russia, and Prussia towards the end of the 18th century and during the 19th century, and particularly the failure of the 1830 Polish insurrection, stimulated romantically tragic nationalism in major writers such as Adam <u>Mickiewicz</u>, Juliusz Slowacki (1809-1849), and Zygmunt <u>Krasinski</u>. This theme also affected historical novelists such as Henryk <u>Sienkiewicz</u>. At the end of the 19th century there was a reaction against Naturalism and other orthodoxies in the 'Young Poland' movement (1890-1918), in theatre and fiction as well as poetry.

In the 20th century, political independence in the interwar years fostered writers as bewilderingly varied as the exuberant 'Skamander' group of poets and the fantastic, pessimistic philosopher and dramatist Stanislaw Witkiewicz (1885-1939). Poland's tragic wartime and post-war experiences have given rise to poetry and prose registering social trauma and survival. Important writers include the veteran poet and scholar Czeslaw <u>Milosz</u> (Nobel prizewinner), Zbigniew <u>Herbert</u>, Witold Gombrowicz, the poet Tadeusz Rózewicz, and the satirical dramatist Slawomir Mrozek.

# Politian (1454-1494)

#### Italian Angelo Poliziano; pen-name of Angelo Ambrogini

Italian poet, playwright, and exponent of humanist ideals. He was tutor to Lorenzo de Medici's children, and professor at the University of Florence from 1480. He was one of the greatest masters of Latin style of the Renaissance, the best example of this being provided by his *Sylvae*, while two sets of *Miscellanea* deal with problems of classical scholarship. His humanism is reflected in his Italian writings, notably the

*Stanze per la giostra* in celebration of a joust in which Lorenzo's brother Giuliano had participated in 1475 and *Orfeo* 1480, a dramatic piece.

#### political art

in the visual arts, work that contains political subject matter, takes a stand on an issue, addresses a public concern, or awakens viewer sensitivity. Artists throughout history have been called painters of political works, although the term may be loosely applied. A work may be called 'political' solely because its subject or form causes a stir or a sensation, or it may be considered political because its subject matter pertains directly to a current event, either functioning as propaganda for a particular incident or point of view, or expressing the artist's concern about an issue.

For example, the work of a modern artist such as Tracey Emin (whose art focuses on a disturbing sexual history) may be coined 'political' because her subject matter is considered taboo, antiestablishment, or exhibitionist, while an artist such as Francisco Goya produced 'political art' to express and publicize his anger at contemporary political incidents, such as his passionately charged *The Third of May*, *1808* (1814; Museo del Prado, Madrid), depicting French violence against the citizens of Madrid during the Napoleonic Wars. Both artists are considered political, differing only in their intent and subject.

## Poliziano, Angelo

Italian pen-name of writer and humanist Angelo Ambrogini, known as Politian.

# Pollard, Alfred William (1859-1944)

British bibliographer. He worked in the Department of Printed Books at the British Museum (1883-1924), and was a keeper from 1919-24. He was director of the Early English Text Society and was author and editor of a number of literary works. In 1926 he became secretary of the Bibliographical Society.

Pollard was born in London, England. He was educated at King's College School and St John's College, Oxford University. He was made a Companion of the Bath in 1922. He compiled A Short Title Catalogue of Books Printed in England, Scotland and Ireland and of English Books Printed Abroad, 1475-1640 (1939).

#### Ponge, Francis (1899-1998)

French poet. His works include Le Parti pris des choses/The Voice of Things (1942),

the prose-poems Proèmes (1948), Le Peintre à l'étude (1948), La Seine/The Seine (1950), La Rage de l'expression (1952), Le Grand Recueil/The Grand Collection (1961), Le Savon/Soap (1966), and Le Nouveau Recueil/The New Collection (1967).

#### Pontan, Jirí (c. 1550-1614)

#### Latin Pontanus

Hungarian writer and Jesuit priest. He combined the religious fervour of his order with a cosmopolitan intellectual outlook, which was characteristic of the court circle of Rudolph II, of which he was a member. He wrote poetry, orations, and scientific works, and amassed a large library.

#### Pontano, Giovanni (1429-1503)

Italian humanist and poet. His Latin poetry includes *Amorum libri duo* and *De amore coniugali*. He also wrote *De Bello Napoletano* describing his master Alfonso V's fight to secure the kingdom of Naples.

## Pontoppidan, Henrik (1857-1943)

Danish novelist. In his first great novel cycle, *Det forjaettede land/The Promised Land* (1891-95), the partly autobiographical life story of a minister who marries a peasant woman, he draws an intimate and sympathetic picture of country people, though his work is coloured by personal bitterness. His main work, *Lykke-Per/Lucky Per* (1898-1904), describing Danish town life around 1900, is equally ironical and disillusioned, as is a third cycle, *De dødes rige/The Realm of the Dead* (1912-16). He shared the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1917 with Karl Gjellerup.

## Poole, William Frederick (1821-1894)

US librarian and historian. As a student at Yale, where he graduated in 1849, he maintained and expanded a project indexing useful materials in books and magazines. This index was published in 1848 and was the forerunner to *Poole's Index to Periodical Literature*. He was librarian of the Boston Athen | Qum (1856-69) and he then helped to establish the library of the US Naval Academy and the Cincinnati Public Library. In 1874 he became the first librarian of the Chicago Public Library and in 1887 he helped organize Chicago's Newberry Library, where he remained until his death. He is also known for his contributions to the profession of library administration. He was born in Salem, Massachusetts.

## Popa, Vasko (1922-1991)

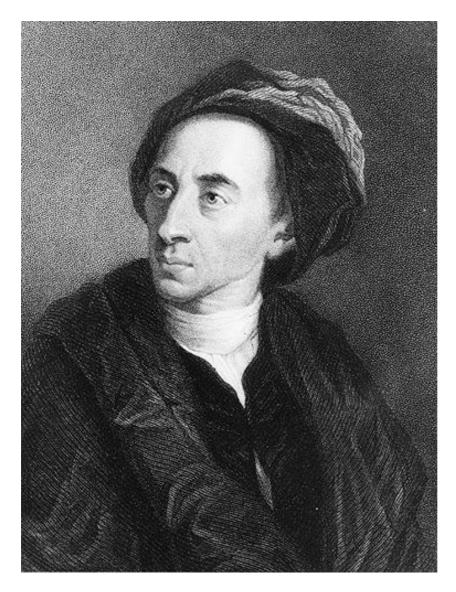
Serbian modernist poet. He was one of the first writers to challenge the literary establishment in the early 1950s in the controversy between modernists and realists. His works include *Kora/Crust* 1953, *Nepocin-polje/Field of Sleeplessness* 1956, *Sporedno nebo/Secondary Sky* 1969, and *Uspravna zemlja/Earth Erect* 1972.

# Pope, Alexander (1688-1744)

English poet and satirist. He established his poetic reputation with the precocious *Pastorals* (1709) and *An Essay on Criticism* (1711), which were followed by a parody of the heroic <u>epic</u> form, *The Rape of the Lock* (1712-14), as well as *The Temple of Fame* (1715), and 'Eloisa to Abelard' (1717). Pope's highly neoclassical translations from the Greek, of <u>Homer's *Iliad* and *Odyssey* (1715-26) were very successful but his edition of Shakespeare (1725) attracted scholarly ridicule, which led Pope to write a satire on scholarly dullness, *The Dunciad* (1728). His finest mature works are his *Imitations of the Satires of Horace* (1733-38) and his personal letters.</u>

Pope was born in London and received a somewhat inconsistent education at various Roman Catholic schools, but after the age of 12, when he had a severe illness which left him crippled, he was practically self-educated. Though never a profound or accurate scholar, he had a good knowledge of Latin and a working acquaintance with Greek. By 1704 he had written a good deal of verse, which attracted the attention of English dramatist William Wycherley, who introduced him to other men of letters. In 1709 his *Pastorals*, written, according to his own account, at the age of 16, were published in English publisher Jacob Tonson's *Miscellany*, and two years later the *Essay on Criticism*, a neat and concise statement of the principles of neoclassicism, appeared and was praised by English writer Joseph Addison. *The Rape of the Lock* then placed his reputation on a sure foundation. His industry was untiring, and his literary output almost continuous until his death.

Pope



#### (Image © Billie Love)

The English poet Alexander Pope, who established his reputation with the masterly use of the heroic couplet. He was a founder member of the Scriblerus Club, which first met to discuss literature and write critical reviews. It later published a volume of the memoirs of the fictional and pedantic writer Martinus Scriblerus, a satire to celebrate 'false tastes' in modern writing.

## Porgy and Bess

classic US folk opera written in 1935 by George and Ira Gershwin, based on the novel *Porgy* (1925) by DuBose Heyward, a story of the black residents of Catfish Row in Charleston, South Carolina.

English classical scholar. He was professor of Greek at Cambridge from 1792. He edited four plays of the Greek dramatist <u>Euripides</u> (*Hecuba*, *Orestes*, *Phoenissae*, and *Medea*), but his most widely read work was his *Letters to Archdeacon Travis* on the disputed passage, 1 John 5:7, which is highly regarded for its acute reasoning.

#### Porta, Carlo (1775-1821)

Italian poet. He wrote in the Milanese dialect and through this medium effectively expressed ordinary people's attitude to life. His poems include *I disgrazzi di Giovannin Bongee/The Misadventures of Giovannino Bongeri* 1812 and *La nomina del capellan/The Selection of the Chaplain* 1819.

#### Porter, Eleanor (1868-1920)

#### born Eleanor Hodgman

US novelist. She wrote *Pollyanna* 1913, the story of a girl who plays the 'glad game' of finding something to be glad about whatever happens. The sequel, *Pollyanna Grows Up*, appeared in 1915.

## Porter, Gene Stratton (1863-1924)

US writer. She wrote nature articles and the novels *Freckles* 1904 and *A Girl of the Limberlost* 1909.

## Porter, Jane (1776-1850)

English novelist. Born in Durham, she was taken to Edinburgh as a child, where she was regaled with old-world tales by Walter <u>Scott</u>, who was a frequent visitor at her home. After moving to London she wrote *Thaddeus of Warsaw* 1803, a historical novel, and followed it with *The Scottish Chiefs* 1810, the story of William Wallace.

#### Porter, Katherine Anne Maria Veronica Callista Russell (1890-1980)

US writer. She published three volumes of short stories *Flowing Judas* (1930), *Pale Horse, Pale Rider* (1939), and *The Leaning Tower* (1944); a collection of essays, *The Days Before* (1952); and the allegorical novel *Ship of Fools* (1962; filmed 1965). Her *Collected Short Stories* (1965) won a Pulitzer Prize.

## Porter, Peter (1929-)

Australian poet, in England from 1951. His early works satirize fashionable London in the 1960s; later, his poetry became more contemplative. His collections include *Once Bitten, Twice Bitten* (1961), *The Cost of Seriousness* (1978), *Collected Poems* (1983), *The Automatic Oracle* (1987), which won the Whitbread Poetry Award, and *Max is Missisng* (2001), which won the 2002 Forward Poetry Prize.

Porter has also produced translations of the Roman poet <u>Martial</u>. Other collections include *Poems Ancient and Modern* (1964), *The Last of England* (1970), *English Subtitles* (1981), and *Afterburner* (2004). He was awarded the 2002 Queen's Gold Medal for Poetry.

# Porter, William Sydney

real name of the US author O Henry.

## Portuguese literature

under Provençal influence, medieval Portuguese literature produced popular ballads and troubadour songs.

The Renaissance provided a stimulus for the outstanding work of the dramatist Gil Vicente and of the lyric and epic poet <u>Camoëns</u>. In the 17th and 18th centuries there was a decline towards mere formality, but the *Letters of a Portuguese Nun*, attributed to Marianna Alcoforado (1640-1723), were a poignant exception and found echoes in the modern revolutionary period. The outstanding writer of the 20th century was the poet Fernando <u>Pessoa</u>. There is a lively tradition of writing in Brazil, and Angola has developed its own school of Portuguese-African poetry.

# Potok, Chaim (1929-2002)

#### born Herman Harold Potok

US rabbi and writer. He wrote about the clash between religious and secular life and was credited with introducing US readers to Orthodox Jewish culture. His first and best-known novel was *The Chosen* (1967; filmed 1982).

The eldest son of Jewish immigrants from Poland, Potok grew up in an Orthodox Jewish family in New York City. He graduated from Yeshiva University in 1950 and

the Jewish Theological Seminary of America in 1954. His other novels include *The Promise* (1969), *My Name is Asher Lev* (1972), *In the Beginning* (1975), *The Book of Lights* (1981), *Davita's Harp* (1985), *The Gift of Asher Lev* (1990), *I Am the Clay* (1992), *The Tree of Here* (1993), and *The Sky of Now* (1995).

## Potter, (Helen) Beatrix (1866-1943)

English writer and illustrator of children's books. Her first book was *The Tale of Peter Rabbit* (1900), followed by *The Tailor of Gloucester* (1902), based on her observation of family pets and wildlife. Other books in the series include *The Tale of Mrs Tiggy-Winkle* (1904), *The Tale of Jeremy Fisher* (1906), and a sequel to Peter Rabbit, *The Tale of the Flopsy Bunnies* (1909). Her tales are told with a childlike wonder, devoid of sentimentality, and accompanied by delicate illustrations.

Potter was also an accomplished mycologist. She was the first person to report the symbiotic relationship between lichen and fungi, and to catalogue the fungi of the British Isles. She was excluded from professional scientific societies because of her sex.

# Potter, Dennis Christopher George (1935-1994)

English dramatist and journalist. His most important works were television plays, extending the boundaries of the art form. Plays include *Pennies from Heaven* (1978; feature film 1981), *Brimstone and Treacle* (1976; transmitted 1987, feature film 1982), and *The Singing Detective* (1986).

Potter's television dramas exhibit a serious concern for social issues, and are characterized by a marked avoidance of euphemism or delicacy. Highly inventive in form, they explore the medium's technical possibilities, employing devices such as overlap, fantasy sequences, and flashback. His posthumous plays were *Cold Lazarus* and *Karaoke* (both 1995).

## Potter, Harry

fictional hero of a series of children's novels. English writer J K <u>Rowling</u> combined the formulaic unhappy English schoolboy, complete with round spectacles, with supernatural elements of magic and wizardry to create a sympathetic character of unprecedented popularity.

Harry must contend with all the trials of attending boarding school and coming of age, including fierce teachers and school bullies, but must also face terrifying monsters and supernatural forces. Rowling cleverly incorporates wizardry into everyday school life; the school sport, for example, is Quidditch, which involves riding on flying brooms to score points.

Harry Potter books include Harry Potter and the Philosopher's Stone (US title: Harry Potter and the Sorcerer's Stone) (1997), Harry Potter and the Chamber of Secrets (1998), Harry Potter and the Prisoner of Azkaban (1999), Harry Potter and the Goblet of Fire (2000), Harry Potter and the Order of the Phoenix (2003), and Harry Potter and the Half-Blood Prince (2005). The first four books in the series have been adapted into popular films, starring Daniel Radcliffe as Harry Potter.

## Potter, Stephen (Meredith) (1900-1969)

English writer. He wrote humorous studies in how to outwit and outshine others, including *The Theory and Practice of Gamesmanship, or the Art of Winning Games Without Actually Cheating* 1947, *Some Notes in Lifemanship* 1950, and *One-Upmanship* 1952.

# Pound, Ezra Loomis (1885-1972)

US poet and cultural critic. He is regarded as one of the most important figures of 20th-century literature, and his work revolutionized modern poetry. His *Personae* and *Exultations* (1909) established and promoted the principles of <u>Imagism</u>, and influenced numerous poets, including T S <u>Eliot</u>. His largest work was his series of <u>Cantos</u> (1925-69), a highly complex, eclectic collage that sought to create a unifying, modern cultural tradition.

Born in Idaho, Pound was educated at Pennsylvania University and settled in Europe from 1907. He lived in London 1909-21 and then moved to Paris 1921-25, where he became a friend of the writers Gertrude Stein and Ernest Hemingway. He then settled in Rapallo, Italy. His anti-Semitism and sympathy with the fascist dictator Mussolini led him to broadcast from Italy in World War II, and he was arrested by US troops in 1945. Found unfit to stand trial, he was confined in a mental hospital until 1958.

# Powell, Anthony Dymoke (1905-2000)

English novelist and critic. He wrote the series of 12 volumes *A Dance to the Music of Time* (1951-75) that begins shortly after World War I and chronicles a period of 50 years in the lives of Nicholas Jenkins and his circle of upper- and middle-class friends and acquaintances. It is written in an elegant style which sets off the blend of the comic, the melancholic, and the tragic in the situations he describes.

English writer, broadcaster, and film critic. She wrote for the *Sunday Times* and served as a governor of the British Film Institute from 1948 to 1952. She was appointed CBE in 1974.

Powell was educated at Somerville College, Oxford University, and worked for the *Sunday Times* from 1928 to 1931, and again from 1939, continuing to write weekly reviews until 1976. Her books include *Descent from Parnassus* (1934), *An Affair of the Heart* (1957), and *The Villa Ariadne* (1973). Her collected film reviews, *The Golden Screen*, was published in 1989.

## Powell, Lawrence Clark (1906-2001)

US librarian, author, and critic. A recognized expert on the works of poet (and fellow Occidental College graduate) Robinson Jeffers, he wrote hundreds of articles and reviews and more than a dozen books, including *The Alchemy of Books* (1954) and *Books in My Baggage* (1960).

Powell was born in Washington, DC. He was raised in California where his father, a noted agronomist, managed Sunkist Growers. After spending most of his career as a library administrator at the University of California: Los Angeles, he moved to the University of Arizona (1971) to teach English and write about the American Southwest.

## Power, Effie Louise (1873-1969)

US children's librarian and author. In 1926 in Cleveland, she introduced the 'Book Caravan', a forerunner of the bookmobile. She lectured on children and libraries throughout the country; she became a storyteller and instructor in storytelling; and during the 1930s she published several collections of stories for children.

She was born in Conneautville, Pennsylvania. Beginning her career as an assistant in the Cleveland (Ohio) Public Library, she opened the first children's room in this library in 1898. She also served in the children's department of the Carnegie Library in Pittsburgh (1909-11, 1914-20) and in St Louis Public Library (1911-14), returning to the Cleveland Library as director of work with children (1920-37).

# Powers, J(ames) F(arl) (1917-)

US writer. His major interest in fiction became the realistic, often wryly ironic depiction of priests' lives and conflicts, as in his prize-winning novel *Morte d'Urban* (1962) and in *Wheat that Springeth Green* (1988).

He was born in Jacksonville, Illinois. A socially concerned Catholic, he was jailed

during World War II for resisting induction on pacifist grounds; he was also stirred by injustices against blacks. He lived at intervals in Ireland but mostly in Minnesota, where he taught at St John's College.

## Powys, John Cowper (1872-1963)

English novelist. His mystic and erotic books include *Wolf Solent* (1929) and *A Glastonbury Romance* (1933); *Owen Glendower* (1940) is the most successful of his historical novels. He was one of six brothers, including **Theodore Francis Powys** (1875-1953) who is best known for the novel *Mr Weston's Good Wine* (1927), and **Llewelyn Powys** who wrote essays, novels, and autobiographical works.

John Cowper Powys was born in Shirley, Derbyshire, and was educated at Sherborne and Cambridge. He was a university extension lecturer for over 40 years, spending 30 of them in the USA. Though he began his literary career as a poet, publishing several collections of verse including *Wolfsbane Rhymes* (1916) and *Samphire* (1922), he is chiefly known for his long novels. His writing has been called realistic, but his vast, panoramic novels are difficult to characterize: he has much in common with D H <u>Lawrence</u> and L H <u>Myers</u> in his emphasis on the importance of passion in modern life.

He also published many volumes of literary criticism and social philosophy. Among his books of essays are *The Meaning of Culture* (1929), *In Defence of Sensuality* (1930), *The Pleasures of Literature* (1938), and *The Art of Growing Old* (1944). He wrote studies of Dostoevsky (1947) and Rabelais (1948).

# Powys, Llewelyn (1884-1939)

English essayist and novelist. He was the brother of John Cowper <u>Powys</u> and Theodore Powys. His works include many sketches and stories from the his years in Africa, including *Ebony and Ivory* 1923 and *Black Laughter* 1924. Volumes of essays are *Impassioned Clay* 1931 and *Dorset Essays* 1936. *Apples be Ripe* 1930 is a novel. His autobiography *Skin for Skin* was published 1925.

## Powys, Theodore Francis (1875-1953)

English novelist. He uses Dorset village life as a setting to describe the struggle between good and evil in allegorical terms. *Mr Weston's Good Wine* 1927 is considered his finest work. He was the brother of John Cowper Powys and Llewelyn Powys.

## Praed, Winthrop Mackworth (1802-1839)

English poet. Though he wrote a considerable amount of serious poetry, he is remembered chiefly as the supreme master of society verse, elegant and witty trifles depicting men and women of the fashionable world. Well-known examples are 'Good-night to the Season', 'Our Ball', and 'The Vicar'.

## Praise of Folly, The

#### (Latin Encomium Moriae)

a prose satire written in Latin by <u>Erasmus</u> and published in 1511. In a fashion of which Lucian would have been proud, Erasmus damns by praising many forms of human folly, not even sparing contemporary theologians. This last point made his work controversial, with Martin Dorp the first to attack it in 1515, exciting responses from both Erasmus and his English friend, Thomas More. The work was an extraordinary best-seller: 42 Latin editions appeared in Erasmus's lifetime and it was soon translated into French (1520), German (1520), and English (1549).

#### praise poem

genre of traditional African literature which has influenced modern African poetry. Oral poets, particularly among southern African peoples such as the Xhosa, Tswana, Zulu, Sotho, and Shona, would recite poems in praise of chiefs, or prominent figures such as the Zulu hero Shaka, at formal gatherings. Such poems were often valued more for content than for execution. Many collections of transcripts have now been published, particularly since the 1960s.

# Pramoedya Ananta Toer (1925-)

Indonesian novelist. His books, written in everyday Javanese and in a rich prose, depict rural Javanese life and culture under Dutch rule and during the Revolution. In 1962 he joined communist-sponsored cultural groups and during the suppression of communist supporters in 1965 was imprisoned until 1980. During this time he wrote four historical novels, two of which (*Bumi manusia/This Earth of Mankind* and *Anak semus bangsa/Child of All Nations*) were banned in Indonesia. Later works include the multivolume *Buru Quartet* (1980-88), about the rise of post-colonial Indonesian nationalism.

In 1945 he joined the nationalists fighting against Dutch colonial rule, broadcast on Voice of Free Indonesia, and produced an Indonesian-language magazine before being arrested by the Dutch in July 1947. He was jailed for two years during which time he wrote his first novel, *Perburuan/The Fugitive*. After independence he wrote

a number of novels and short stories with political themes.

#### Pratt, Edwin John (1882-1964)

Canadian poet. His traditional narrative verse deals with grand themes and mighty conflicts. *Collected Poems* appeared in 1944, followed by several other volumes. *The Complete Poems* in two volumes was published in 1989.

#### Preda, Marin (1922-1980)

Romanian novelist and short-story writer. His novel *Morometii/The Morometes* 1954 deals with the problems caused by collectivization. *Risipitorii/The Squanderers* 1962 and *Intrusul* 1968 look at the relationship between the individual and the state. *Delirul* 1975 caused a storm with its daring description of events in Romania during the fascist Antonescu regime 1940-44.

## Prelutsky, Jack (1940-)

US writer. His imaginative books have caused controversy at times due to their subject matter, but young readers continue to enjoy such works as *Nightmares: Poems to Trouble Your Sleep* (1976), and *The Baby Uggs Are Hatching* (1982).

He was born in New York, New York. He attended Hunter College and studied voice at various music schools. He worked as a taxi driver, actor, singer, sculptor, labourer, and carpenter, among other jobs, before becoming a popular poet and storyteller for young readers. He lived in Olympia, Washington.

#### Prévert, Jacques (1900-1977)

French poet and film screenwriter. His free verse, with a strong vein of humour and fantasy, was first collected in *Paroles/Words* 1946. Later volumes of verse are *Histoires* 1946, *Spectacle* 1951, and *La Pluie et le beau temps/Good Weather and Bad* 1955. He provided screenplays for the films *Le Quai des brumes, Le Jour se lève, Les Enfants du paradis, Les Portes de la nuit, and La Bergère et le ramoneur.* 

#### Prévost, Jean (1901-1944)

French writer. His work analyses the life of the senses with clarity and vision. His publications include La Pensée de Paul Valéry 1926, Dix-huitième année/18th Year

1929, Epicuriens français/The French Epicureans 1931, Le Sel sur la plaie/Salt in the Wound 1934, La Chasse du matin/The Morning Hunt 1937 (a novel), Usonie 1939, and La Création chez Stendhal 1942. He was killed in the Resistance movement during World War II and Philibert Delorme 1948, Les Caractères 1948, and Baudelaire 1953 were published posthumously.

#### Prévost d'Exiles, Antoine François (1697-1763)

French novelist. Known as Abbé Prévost, he combined a military career with his life as a monk. His *Manon Lescaut* 1731, the story of a destructive passion related with rare objectivity and psychological insight, inspired operas by Massenet and Puccini. It was published as part of the *Mémoires d'un homme de qualité/Memoirs of a Man of Quality*. Other works are *Le Philosophe anglais ou Histoire de M Cleveland, fils naturel de Cromwell/The Life and Adventures of Mr Cleveland* 1731-38 and *Le Doyen de Killerine/The Dean of Coleraine* 1735-40.

He also engaged in journalism (*Le Pour et le contre/Arguments For and Against* 1733-40). As the translator of Samuel <u>Richardson's</u>*Pamela* and *Clarissa*, Prévost exercised a considerable influence on the literature of his day.

## Pride and Prejudice

novel by Jane <u>Austen</u>, published in 1813. Mr and Mrs Bennet, whose property is due to pass to a male cousin, William Collins, are anxious to secure good marriage settlements for their five daughters. Central to the story is the romance between the witty Elizabeth Bennet and the proud Mr Darcy.

# Priestley, J(ohn) B(oynton) (1894-1984)

English novelist and dramatist. His best-known plays are the mysterious and puzzling *An Inspector Calls* (1945) and *The Linden Tree* (1948), a study of post-war social issues. Priestley had a gift for family comedy, which is seen in *When We Are Married* (1938). He was also known for his wartime BBC broadcasts and literary criticism, such as *Literature and Western Man* (1960). He was a stern critic of the social effects of 20th-century modernization, and in his work he fondly reflects his youth in Edwardian Yorkshire.

Priestley was born in Bradford and educated at Cambridge University. He served with the Devonshire Regiment during World War I and afterwards worked in London as a reviewer and critic. After publishing two novels, *Adam in Moonshine* (1927) and *Benighted* (1927), he scored a noteworthy success with *The Good Companions* (1929), about travelling theatre. He followed it with a realist novel about London life, *Angel Pavement* (1930). His career as a dramatist began with *Dangerous Corner* (1932), one of several plays in which time is a preoccupation.

## Pringle, Thomas (1789-1834)

Scottish poet. He helped found the *Edinburgh Monthly Magazine* 1817 (later *Blackwood's Magazine*) and edited it for some months with J Cleghorn. Emigrating to South Africa 1820, he formed the Glen-Lynden settlement and edited the *South African Journal*. On his return to Britain 1826 he wrote about his experiences in *African Sketches* 1834, which also contained the poems 'The Emigrants' and 'Afar in the Desert'. His earlier poems, *Ephemerides*, appeared 1828.

## Prior, Matthew (1664-1721)

British poet and diplomat. He was associated under the Whigs with the negotiation of the treaty of Ryswick (1697) ending the war with France and under the Tories with that of Utrecht (1714) ('Matt's Peace') ending the War of the Spanish Succession, but on the Whigs' return to power he was imprisoned by the government leader Walpole from 1715-17. His gift as a writer was for light occasional verses, epigrams, and tales, in a graceful yet colloquial manner.

#### style

There is sincerity and wit in many of his short poems, such as 'The Lady's Lookingglass', 'On my Birthday', 'For my own Monument', 'The Question to Lisetta', 'The Secretary', and 'Jinny the Just'. These are mostly pieces of ironical or sensual badinage, depending for effect on wit and the exact suitability of form.

## Prishvin, Mikhail Mikhailovich (1873-1954)

Russian writer. His works, such as *In the Land of the Unfrightened Birds* 1906, *Jen Shing/The Root of Life* 1932, and the autobiographical novel *The Chain of Kashchei* 1930, combine descriptions of nature and love with a didactic message about the ethical purpose of creativity.

# Pritchett, V(ictor) S(awdon) (1900-1997)

English short-story writer, novelist, and critic. His style was often witty and satirical. Many of his short stories were set in London and southeast England, among them *The Spanish Virgin* (1930), *Blind Love* (1969), and *The Camberwell Beauty* (1974). His critical works included *The Living Novel* (1946) and biographies of the Russian writers <u>Turgenev</u> (1977) and <u>Chekhov</u> (1988).

His first volume of stories, *The Spanish Virgin* was published in 1930. Although he had published his first novel as early as 1929, Pritchett discovered his métier in the short story, as a chronicler, in the tradition of Chekhov (with whom he has often been likened), of the ordinary and uneventful in a style that is both witty and perceptive of human behaviour.

His *The Complete Stories* was published in 1990 and *The Complete Essays* in 1991. He was knighted in 1975.

#### **Prix Goncourt**

French literary prize for fiction, given by the Académie Goncourt (founded by Edmond de <u>Goncourt</u> in 1903).

#### problem plays, Shakespeare's

the three Shakespeare plays that are thought to present a view of social and personal relationships that is morally ambivalent, even cynical. They are: *All's Well That Ends Well, Measure for Measure,* and *Troilus and Cressida*.

The term was coined by the 19th-century English literary scholar F S Boas, who also included *Hamlet*, though this is now generally excluded from the category.

#### Procopius (c. 495-565)

Greek historian. As secretary to Justinian's general, Belisarius, he wrote a history of the campaigns of the Eastern Roman Empire against the Goths and the Vandals. He also wrote extensively on architecture, and was the author of *The Secret History*, a relatively scandalous account of the leading figures of the age.

#### Procter, Adelaide Ann (1825-1864)

English poet. She contributed verses to *The Book of Beauty* 1843, and subsequently to *Household Words* and the *Cornhill Magazine*. She collected and published her poems as *Legends and Lyrics* 1858-61. She was the daughter of Bryan Waller <u>Procter</u>.

Procter, Bryan Waller (1787-1874)

English poet. He contributed to the *Literary Gazette* from 1815. Under the pseudonym of Barry Cornwall, he produced a tragedy, *Mirandola*, at Covent Garden 1821, and published several volumes of verse, including *English Songs, and other Smaller Poems* 1832. It is for his songs that he is best remembered.

## Propertius, Sextus (c. 47-15 BC)

Roman elegiac poet. A member of the literary circle of Maecenas, he is best known for his highly personal love poems addressed to his mistress 'Cynthia'.

#### prose

spoken or written language without regular metre; in literature, prose corresponds more closely to the patterns of everyday speech than poetry, and often uses standard grammar and syntax and traditional rhetoric to achieve its ends.

In Western literature prose was traditionally used for what is today called nonfiction - that is, history, <u>biography</u>, essays, and so on - while <u>verse</u> was used for imaginative literature. Prose came into its own as a vehicle for fiction with the rise of the <u>novel</u> in the 18th century. In modern literature, the distinction between poetry and prose is not always clear.

## Proulx, E(dna) Annie (1935-)

US writer. Her novels and short stories often feature desolate landscapes and centre upon odd and unconventional characters. *The Shipping News* (1993) won the Pulitzer Prize for Fiction and the National Book Award and was filmed in 2001. Her other works include *Heart Songs and Other Stories* (1988), *Postcards* (1992), *Accordion Crimes* (1996), *Short Range* (short stories) (1999), and *That Old Ace in the Hole* (2002).

# Proust, Marcel (1871-1922)

French novelist and critic. His immense autobiographical work *A la Recherche du temps perdu/Remembrance of Things Past* (1913-27), consisting of a series of novels, is the expression of his childhood memories coaxed from his subconscious; it is also a precise reflection of life in France at the end of the 19th century.

Born in Auteuil, Paris, Proust was a delicate, asthmatic child; until he was 35 he moved in the fashionable circles of Parisian society, but after the death of his parents 1904-05 he went into seclusion in a cork-lined room in his Paris apartment,

and devoted the rest of his life to writing his masterpiece. Posthumous publications include the novel *Jean Santeuil* (1957), which seems to have been an early sketch for *A la recherche*, and *Contre Sainte-Beuve/By Way of Sainte-Beuve* (1954).

#### Prout, Father

pseudonym of Francis Mahony, Irish writer.

## **Provençal literature**

Provençal literature originated in the 10th century and flowered in the 12th century with the work of the troubadours, poet-musicians of the 12th-13th centuries. After the decline of the troubadours in the 13th century, Provençal virtually disappeared as a literary medium from the 14th until the 19th century, when Jacques Jasmin (1798-1864) and others paved the way for the Félibrige group of poets, of whom the greatest are Joseph Roumanille, Frédéric <u>Mistral</u>, and Félix Gras (1844-1901).

## **Prudentius**

Latin Christian poet, born in the north of Spain. His *Psychomachia/Battle for the Soul* was widely read as an inspiration for artistic illustration and allegory in the Middle Ages.

## Prus, Boleslaw (1845-1912)

#### pseudonym of Aleksander Glowacki

Polish novelist and journalist. His novels, characterized by their detailed observation, include *Placówka/The Outpost* 1886, *Lalka/The Doll* 1890, a wide-ranging social and human chronicle set against the backcloth of contemporary Warsaw, and *Faraon/The Pharoah and the Priest* 1897, a historical novel set in ancient Egypt.

Among other novels by Prus are *Emancypantki/The Emancipated Woman* 1894 and *Dzieci/Children* 1909, his last short novel. His social comments and humorous articles, published weekly for nearly 40 years in the Warsaw press, are collected in *Kroniki*.

Polish writer. A member of the cosmopolitan group of writers, painters, and intellectuals who inhabited Berlin in the 1890s, he wrote in German and Polish. His works include plays, such as *Snieg/Snow* 1903 and *Msciciel/The Avenger* 1927; novels, such as *Homo sapiens* 1895-96; prose poems; and essays. He is regarded as one of the first Polish modernists.

Przybyszewski was a precursor of psychoanalytical trends in literature; his works customarily concern extreme emotional states. His circle of acquaintances included the Swedish writer August Strindberg and the Norwegian painter Edvard Munch, on whose work he wrote an essay in 1894.

## Psalmanazar, George (c. 1679-1763)

French literary impostor. His real name is unknown, his pseudonym being taken from Shalmaneser, an Assyrian prince mentioned in the Old Testament. Professing to be a native of Formosa, he was accepted in English society and concocted *A Historical and Geographical Description of Formosa* 1704. After his fraud was exposed he became a conscientious hack writer.

# Psellus, Michael Constantine (c. 1018-c. 1079)

Byzantine academician, philosopher, administrator, historian, and poet. A voluminous writer on almost all academic subjects from physics to jurisprudence, Psellus was strongly influenced by neo-Platonism and the earlier Christian writers. His many letters offer a remarkable insight into the society of his time. See also Byzantine literature.

## Psichari, Jean (1854-1929)

#### Latin Jannis Psycharis

Ukrainian-born Greek author. He wrote in the popular (demotic) language, successfully claiming for it the status of a national literary language in place of archaic Greek. His *To taxidhi mou/My Journey* 1888 on this subject was used as a handbook by Greek poets. Other works include the semi-autobiographical *T'oneiro tou Gianniris/The Dream of Gianniris* 1897 and *Le Voyage du centurion/The Centurion's Voyage* 1914. Though his work is often sentimental, he contributed much to the development of Greek fiction.

Psycharis, Jannis

alternative name of Ukrainian-born Greek author Jean Psichari.

# Puig, Manuel (1932-1990)

Argentine novelist whose works owe much to the Hollywood cinema of the 1940s and 1950s. His book *EI beso de la mujer araña/Kiss of the Spider Woman* 1976 was filmed 1985 and adapted as a musical 1992. Later novels such as *La traición de Rita Hayworth/Betrayed by Rita Hayworth* (1968) and *Cae la Noche Tropical/Tropical Night Falling* 1988 ironically demonstrate the extent to which modern life is shaped by the 'trashier' aspects of popular culture.

## Pulitzer, Joseph (1847-1911)

Hungarian-born US newspaper publisher. He acquired *The World* in 1883 in New York City and, as a publisher, his format set the style for the modern newspaper. After his death, funds provided in his will established in 1912 the school of journalism at Columbia University and the annual Pulitzer Prizes in journalism, literature, and music (from 1917).

# Pullman, Philip (1946-)

English writer of fiction for children and teenagers including *Northern Lights* (1995; in the USA published as *The Golden Compass* in 1996), the first book in the 'His Dark Materials' trilogy, which won the Carnegie Medal and the Children's Book of the Year in the British Book Awards, both in 1996. The final book in the trilogy, *The Amber Spyglass* (2000), won the 2001 Whitbread Book of the Year Award, the first children's book to win the prize.

Other work includes *The Ruby in the Smoke* (1985), *The Shadow in the North* (1986), *The Tiger in the Well* (1991), *The White Mercedes* (1992), *The Tin Princess* (1994), *The Firework-Maker's Daughter* (1995), *Clockwork* (1995), and *The Subtle Knife* (1997; the second book in the 'His Dark Materials' trilogy).

## Purdy, James Amos (1923-)

US novelist. His first novel, *Malcolm* (1959), concerns the quest of a teenage boy for his lost father and is set in a world of bizarre depravity. It was followed by *The Nephew* (1960) and *Cabot Wright Begins* (1964). His novels, like his poetry and plays, deal with extreme emotional states and dramatic transformations. They typically treat homosexual subjects with stylistic elegance and a flair for strange or grotesque images.

# Pushkin, Aleksandr Sergeyevich (1799-1837)

Russian poet and writer. His works include the novel in verse <u>Eugene Onegin</u> (1823-31) and the tragic drama *Boris Godunov* (1825). Pushkin's range was wide, and his willingness to experiment freed later Russian writers from many of the archaic conventions of the literature of his time.

Pushkin was born in Moscow. He was exiled in 1820 for his political verse and in 1824 was in trouble for his atheistic opinions. He wrote ballads such as *The Gypsies* (1827), and the prose pieces *The Captain's Daughter* (1836) and *The Queen of Spades* (1834). He was mortally wounded in a duel with his brother-in-law.

## Putnam, George Haven (1844-1930)

English-born US publisher and writer. In 1896 he organized the International Copyright League to lobby for copyright legislation. His own writings included several volumes on the US Civil War and a popular children's book *The Little Gingerbread Man* 1910.

# Puzo, Mario (1920-1999)

US writer who is best known as the author of *The Godfather* (1969). He also wrote the subsequent screen adaptation of his novel in 1972. Based on Long Island, New York, he wrote several other novels and screenplays.

# Pye, Henry James (1745-1813)

English poet. He was appointed poet laureate 1790. A dutiful and dull writer of official odes, he became a byword for flatness. He also wrote a more effective *Comment on the Commentators of Shakespeare* 1807.

## Pym, Barbara Mary Crampton (1913-1980)

English novelist. Her closely observed novels of village life include *Some Tame Gazelle* (1950), *The Sweet Dove Died* (1978), and *A Few Green Leaves* (1980).

# Pynchon, Thomas (1937-)

US novelist. With great stylistic verve, he created a bizarre, labyrinthine world in his books, the first of which was V (1963), a parodic detective story in pursuit of the endlessly elusive Lady V. It was followed by the shorter comic quest novel, *The Crying of Lot 49* (1966), before his gargantuan tour-de-force <u>Gravity's Rainbow</u> (1973; National Book Award), which represents a major achievement in 20th-century literature, with its fantastic imagery and esoteric language drawn from mathematics and science.

#### qasida

verse form used by Arabic, Persian, Turkish, and Urdu poets, which differs from the *ghazal* mainly in subject matter and length. It may be a form of praise or satire, or express a philosophical, religious, or moral viewpoint. The *qasida* is longer than the *ghazal* and normally does not include the poet's name in the final line.

This form was already highly developed in pre-Islamic Arabic poetry, and has continued to be used even in the 20th century.

Quarles, Francis (1592-1644)

English poet. His *Emblemes* 1635 is a collection of poems illustrating a series of symbolic engravings. *Hieroglyphikes of the Life of Man* 1638 was a similar work.

Other works include *Hadassa* 1621, *Sion's Elegies* 1624, *Sion's Sonets* 1625, and *Enchiridion* 1640-41, aphorisms.

### Quasimodo, Salvatore (1901-1968)

Italian poet. His early collections, such as *Acque e terre/Waters and Land* (1930), established his reputation as an exponent of 'hermetic' poetry, spare, complex, and private. Later collections, including *Nuove poesie/New Poetry* (1942) and *II falso e vero verde/The False and True Green* (1956), reflect a growing preoccupation with the political and social problems of his time. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1959.

## Queen, Ellery

joint pseudonym of Frederic Dannay (1905-1982) and Manfred Lee (1905-1971)

US writers of detective stories. They collaborated on numerous books featuring the fictitious detective Ellery Queen, including *The Four of Hearts* 1938, *The Greek Coffin Mystery* 1932, and *The Player on the Other Side* 1963.

### Queiros, José Maria Eça de (1845-1900)

Portuguese novelist. His *O Crime do Padre Amaro/The Sin of Father Amero* 1876, a story of the sexual exploits of a priest, was condemned by the Catholic Church. *O Primo Bazilio/Dragon's Teeth* 1878, a tale of adultery, and *Os Maias/The Maias* 1888 are detailed analyses of middle-class life, sharply satirical in their treatment of contemporary morals.

His other novels turn away from contemporary social themes. *O Mandarim* 1879 is a fantasy, *A Reliquia* 1887 a satirical and humorous work, and *A Cidade e as Serras* 1901 describes the beauties of rural life.

# Queneau, Raymond (1903-1976)

French surrealist poet and humorous novelist. His published works, which frequently make use of everyday slang, as well as mathematical and geometrical forms, include the novels *Odile* (1937); *La Dimanche de la vie/The Sunday of Life* (1952); and *Zazie dans le Metro/Zazie in the Metro* (1959), a portrayal of a precocious young Parisian woman. *Zazie dans le Metro* was made into a successful film by Louis Malle in 1960.

## Quevedo y Villegas, Francisco Gómez de (1580-1645)

Spanish novelist and satirist. His picaresque novel *La vida del buscón/The Life of a Scoundrel* (1626) follows the tradition of the roguish hero who has a series of adventures. *Sueños/Visions* (1627) is a brilliant series of satirical portraits of contemporary society.

# Quintus, Smyrnaeus (lived 3rd-4th century)

Greek poet, a native of Smyrna. He was known also as Quintus Calaber because his epic, *Paralipomena Homeri* or *Posthomerica* (continuing the Trojan War from Hector's death to the return of the Greeks), was discovered at Otranto in Calabria in the 15th century.

Uruguayan writer of short stories. For his well-crafted fiction, Quiroga drew on his own attempts to live as a pioneer in the jungle province of Misiones, north Argentina, where he alternately taught and undertook overambitious business ventures. In his stories - collected in, for example, *Cuentos de amor, de locura y de muerte/Stories of Love, Madness, and Death* 1917 and *Cuentos de la selva/Stories of the Jungle* 1918 - the moral fibre of the central characters is constantly tested by hostile natural forces.

# Quixote, Don

novel by the Spanish writer Cervantes; see Don Quixote de la Mancha.

## Raabe, Wilhelm (1831-1910)

German novelist. His pessimism is revealed in *Abu Telfan* 1868 and *Der Schudderump* 1870. His later works, among which were humorous novels and historical tales, include *Horacker* 1876, generally considered to be his masterpiece, and *Hastenbeck* 1899, a novel of the Seven Years' War.

# Rabassa, Gregory (1922-)

US translator. His National Book Award for his first translation, Julio <u>Cortázar</u>'s *Hopscotch* 1966, was the first of many honours for dozens of translations bringing contemporary Latin American literature to US readers.

## Rabelais, François (c. 1495-1553)

French satirist, monk, and physician. His name has become synonymous with bawdy humour. He was educated in the humanist tradition and was the author of satirical allegories, including a cycle known as <u>Gargantua and Pantagruel</u> which included *La Vie estimable du grand Gargantua, père de Pantagruel/The Inestimable Life of the Great Gargantua, Father of Pantagruel*, the first to be written, but published in 1534, two years after *Les Horribles et Épouvantables Faits et prouesses du très renommé Pantagruel/The Horrible and Dreadful Deeds and Prowess of the Very Renowned Pantagruel* (1532).

Racan, Honoré de Bueil, Marquis de (1589-1670)

French writer. A disciple of the poet and grammarian <u>Malherbe</u>, he was a true poet within somewhat narrow limits, and an admirer of nature. He wrote *Stances sur la retraite* 1618 and *Bergeries* 1625, a pastoral comedy. In his later years he paraphrased the Psalms in a great variety of metrical forms.

### Racine, Louis (1692-1763)

French writer, son of the dramatist Jean Racine. He wrote a number of long poems and literary studies, including *Réflexions sur la poésie* 1742, *Remarques sur les tragédies de Jean Racine* 1752, and a comparison of some of his father's tragedies on Greek themes with the corresponding ones of Euripides.

In 1747 he published his *Mémoires sur la vie de Jean Racine* and in 1755 a prose translation of Milton's *Paradise Lost*.

# Radcliffe, Ann (1764-1823)

#### born Anna Ward

English novelist. An exponent of the <u>gothic novel</u> or 'romance of terror', she wrote, for example, *The Mysteries of Udolpho* (1794). She excelled in depicting scenes of mystery and terror, and was one of the first novelists to include vivid descriptions of landscape and weather.

Her other novels include A Sicilian Romance (1790), The Romance of the Forest 1791, and The Italian (1797). Her work was very popular in her day.

### Radiguet, Raymond (1903-1923)

French novelist. His works include *Le Diable au corps/The Devil in the Flesh* 1923 and *Le Bal du comte d'Orgel/The Count's Ball* 1924. His style shows classical restraint and lucidity.

## Raiftearaí (or Ó Reachtabhra), Antoine (c. 1780-1835)

#### also known as Anthony Raftery

Irish versifier and wandering minstrel. Born in Killedan (Cill Liadáin), near Kiltimagh, County Mayo, he was blinded in childhood as a result of smallpox infection. A character surrounded by folkloric rumour and gossip, his songs and poetry were revitalized by Isabella Augusta <u>Gregory</u> and W B <u>Yeats</u> during the Gaelic literary revival. His best-known works are 'Mise Raiftearaí/I am Raftery', a self-lament; and 'Bua Uí Chonaill', a poem about Daniel O'Connell's 1828 election victory, which typifies Raiftearaí's strongly Catholic stance.

### Raimbaut de Vaqueiras (lived late 12th century)

French troubadour from Orange, in Provence. See Raimbaut d'Orange.

## Raimbaut d'Orange (died 1173)

also known as Raimbaut de Vaqueiras

French count of Orange, Provence, and an eminent troubadour. Some 40 of his poems remain (including about 30 love songs). He was an outstanding practitioner of the hermetic style known as *trobar clus*.

# Raine, Craig Anthony (1944-)

English poet. His first collection, *The Onion, Memory* (1978), established a characteristic method of attempting to 'see' familiar things in new and unusual ways, which he developed in even greater depth in the 'alien' viewpoint adopted in *A Martian Sends A Postcard Home* (1979). Recent works include *History: The Home Movie* (1994).

His collections include *A Journey to Greece* (1979); *Rich* (1984), including a prose memoir of his childhood 'A Silver Plate'; and a collection of essays, *Haydn and the Valve Trumpet* (1990). *1953* (1990) was a version of Racine's drama *Andromaque*.

## Raleigh, Walter Alexander (1861-1922)

English scholar. He became the first professor of English literature at Oxford University 1904. His books include *The English Novel* 1894, *Robert Louis Stevenson* 1895, *Style* 1897, *Milton* 1900, *Wordsworth* 1903, *Shakespeare* 1907, and *Six Essays on Johnson* 1910.

## Ramayana

Sanskrit Hindu epic of about 300 BC, in which Rama (an incarnation of the god

Vishnu), his half-brother Lakshmana, and his friend Hanuman (the monkey chieftain) strive to recover Rama's wife, Sita, abducted by the demon Ravana, king of Lanka (Sri Lanka).

The *Ramayana* is a Hindu scripture. The story of Rama's exile, the battle with Ravana, king of Lanka, and return to their rightful kingdom, is also a story of the importance of loyalty, love, and virtue; the value of proper relationships; and victory of good over evil. It is told and celebrated in different ways at the festivals of Dussehra and Diwali.

### Ramsay, Allan (1685-1758)

Scottish anthologist and poet. He was chiefly responsible for the renaissance of Scottish literature in the 18th century. *The Ever Green* (1724) was an anthology of mainly edited versions of pre-1600 Scottish poetry, including the work of William <u>Dunbar</u> and Robert <u>Henryson</u>. The several volumes of *The Tea-Table Miscellany* (1724-37) comprised songs and ballads.

### Ramuz, Charles Ferdinand (1878-1947)

Swiss writer. Among his novels are the semi-autobiographical Vie de Samuel Belet/ The Life of Samuel Belet 1913, La Grande Peur dans la montagne/The Great Fear on the Mountain 1926, Derborence/When the Mountain Fell 1935, and Le Garçon savoyard/The Boy of Savoy 1937.

## Rand, Ayn (1905-1982)

#### adopted name of Alice Rosenbaum

Russian-born US novelist. Her novel *The Fountainhead* 1943, describing an idealistic architect who destroys his project rather than see it altered, displays her persuasive blend of vehement anticommunism and fervent philosophy of individual enterprise. Her allegorical novel *Atlas Shrugged* 1957 was also a best-seller. Her beliefs won her a cult following.

## Randall, James Ryder (1839-1908)

US writer. During the American Civil War he began composing the words for popular songs, among them 'Maryland, My Maryland' 1861, which became one of the inspirational songs of the Confederates and is now the state song of Maryland.

# Randolph, Thomas (1605-1635)

English dramatist and poet. His earliest printed play is *Aristippus or the Jovial Philosopher* 1630. Others are *The Jealous Lovers* 1632, *The Muse's Looking-glass*, the pastoral comedy *Amyntas*, both 1638, and *Hey for Honesty* 1651, from Aristophanes. A volume of pastoral and erotic *Poems* was published 1638.

# Ranganathan, Shivala Ramanrita (1892-1972)

Indian librarian. Originally a university teacher of mathematics, in 1924 Ranganathan was appointed librarian of Madras University, a post he held until 1944. In 1924 he went to University College, London, to study librarianship. He was taught classification by W C Berwick Sayers, and was inspired to produce a scheme of his own, based on a revolutionary method of analysis into simple, or 'isolate' terms, rather than on the enumeration of compound terms, as had previously been the standard procedure. He called his scheme the Colon Classification, taking the name of the first symbol he used to designate these simple concepts or facets.

Ranganathan's approach to the organization of knowledge in libraries profoundly influenced thought on classification practice in Great Britain. Ranganathan's scheme is little used, even in India, but the thought behind it and the careful analysis on which it is based, together with the attention paid by its maker to vocabulary and definition, provided the foundation for the more sophisticated indexing techniques developed in the 1960s and 1970s.

Although best known for his work on classification, Ranganathan wrote on all aspects of librarianship and was greatly concerned for the development of the library service and professional education in India. He was university librarian and professor of library science at Benares Hindu University (1945-47) and professor of library science at the University of Delhi (1947-55). This last appointment made him director of the first Indian school of librarianship to offer higher degrees. Ranganathan was president of the Indian Library Association from 1944-53. In 1957 he was elected an honorary member of the Federation Internationale de Documentation (FID) and was made a vice-president for life of the Library Association of Great Britain.

# Rankin, Ian (1960-)

Scottish writer of best-selling crime thrillers featuring Detective Inspector Rebus, including the award-winning *Black and Blue* (1997).

Other novels include Knots and Crosses (1987), Hide and Seek (1991), Tooth and Nail (1992), Mortal Causes (1994), Strip Jack (1992), Let it Bleed (1996), The Hanging Garden (1998), Death is Not the End (1998), Dead Souls (1999), and Set in Darkness

(2000).

### Ransom, John Crowe (1888-1974)

US poet and critic. He published his romantic but antirhetorical verse in, for example, *Poems About God* (1919), *Chills and Fever* (1924), and *Selected Verse* (1947).

# Rao, Raja (1909-)

Indian writer. He wrote about Indian independence from the perspective of a village in southern India in *Kanthapura* (1938) and later, in *The Serpent and the Rope* (1960), about a young cosmopolitan intellectual seeking enlightenment.

Rao was born at Hassan, Karnataka. He studied at Montpellier and the Sorbonne in France. Collections of stories include *The Cow of the Barricades* (1947) and *The Policeman and the Rose* (1978).

### Raoul de Houdenc (c. 1180-c. 1234)

French poet. He was one of the principal followers of <u>Chrétien de Troyes</u>. His main work is a long Arthurian romance, *Méraugis de Portlesguez*. He also wrote two allegorical poems, *Le Songe d'enfer/The Dream of HeII* and *Le Roman des ailes de la courtoisie/The Tale of the Wings of Courtesy*, among other works.

## Raphael, Frederic (1931-)

US-born British writer. His novels and short-story collections include *Richard's Things* (1976), *The Glittering Prizes* (1976), *Coast to Coast* (1999; television screenplay 2003), *A Double Life* (2000), and *This Man, This Woman* (2002). He co-wrote with Stanley Kubrick the screenplay *Eyes Wide Shut* (1999) and followed with the biography *Eyes Wide Open: A Memoir of Stanley Kubrick* (1999).

He wrote the original screenplay for John Schlesinger's *Darling* (1965), for which he won an Academy Award and a BAFTA in 1965, and for Stanley Donen's *Two for the Road* (1967). Raphael has also adapted works of authors including Thomas Hardy, Iris Murdoch, Henry James, and Arthur Schnitzler for the screen.

#### 'Rapunzel'

folk tale collected by the <u>Grimm brothers</u>. Rapunzel is named after a plant that her pregnant mother had eaten from the garden of a witch. In return for the plant, the witch demands that the baby be handed over to her. She brings up the girl and imprisons her in a tower which can only be entered by climbing up her long hair. The witch tries to destroy a rescuing prince but Rapunzel heals him with her tears.

# Raspe, Rudolf Erich (1737-1794)

German scientist, antiquarian, and writer. He was versatile and widely read. He published works on volcanic geology and on Gottfried Leibniz as a mathematician, and wrote an introduction to Thomas Percy's *Reliques of Ancient English Poetry* and a study of Ossian that became one of the pioneer works of the Gothic revival in Germany. His *Baron Munchhausen's Narrative of his Marvellous Travels and Campaigns in Russia* appeared in England in 1785. Raspe was born in Hanover, Germany, and was educated at Gottingen University.

# Ratushinskaya, Irina (1954-)

Russian dissident poet. She was sentenced in 1983 to seven years in a labour camp plus five years in internal exile for criticism of the Soviet regime, but was released in 1986. Her strongly Christian work includes the poetry collections *Beyond the Limit* (1982), *Grey is the Colour of Hope* (1988), and *Dance with a Shadow* (1992).

## 'Raven, The'

US poem, written 1845 by Edgar Allan <u>Poe</u>, about a bereaved poet haunted by a raven that sonorously warns 'Nevermore'.

## Rawlings, Marjorie Kinnan (1896-1953)

US novelist. *The Yearling* 1938, a tale of a boy and his pet fawn, became a minor classic and was awarded a Pulitzer Prize; other novels about the Florida backwoods and its inhabitants are *South Moon Under* 1933, *Golden Apples* 1935, and *When the Whippoorwill* 1940.

## Rawlinson, George (1812-1902)

English historian and classical scholar. His most outstanding work is a translation

1858-60, with his brother Henry Creswicke Rawlinson and Gardner Wilkinson, of the Greek historian Herodotus. He was professor of ancient history at Oxford 1861-98.

Other works include *The Five Great Monarchies of the Ancient Eastern World* 1862-67, *History of Ancient Egypt* 1881, histories of the Phoenicians and Parthians 1885, and a biography of his brother 1898.

## Raymond, Walter (1852-1931)

English writer. His life on Exmoor, southwestern England, is described in *The Book of Simple Delights* 1906, which shows his powers as a rural essayist and portraitist. Other works include *The Book of Crafts and Character* 1907 and *English Country Life* 1910.

### Read, Herbert (Edward) (1893-1968)

English critic and poet. His reputation as an art critic was established in the 1930s and 1940s, when he was a keen supporter of such artists as Henry Moore, Barbara Hepworth, and Ben Nicholson. His many books and essays, which helped to make modern art accessible to a wider public, include *The Meaning of Art* (1931) and the influential *Education through Art* (1943). He was knighted in 1953.

### Read, Opie Percival (1852-1939)

US writer. His humorous novels expressed a whimsical philosophy and were very popular. They include *A Kentucky Colonel* 1889, *A Tennessee Judge* 1893, and *The Jucklins* 1895.

#### reader-response theory

literary theory which sees the reader as an active participant in establishing the meaning of a text.

#### **Reader's Digest**

magazine founded in 1922 in the USA to publish condensed articles and books, usually uplifting and conservative, along with in-house features. It has editions in many languages and until the mid-1980s was the largest-circulation magazine in the world.

# Reaney, James (1926-)

Canadian poet and playwright. His deceptively simple poetry and experimental plays draw upon the child's world of metaphor. Works of poetry include *The Red Heart* (1949), *A Suit of Nettles* (1958), and *The Killdeer and other Plays* and *Twelve Letters to a Small Town*, both 1962. His play *The Donnellys: a Trilogy*, published 1983, is a historical sequence based on the massacre of an Irish family in Ontario in 1880.

For children, he wrote the novel *The Boy with an R in his Hand* (1965) and the play *Names and Nicknames* (1969).

## Rebreanu, Liviu (1885-1944)

Romanian novelist. His works include *lon* 1920 and *Padurea spînzuratilor/Forest of the Hanged* 1922, based on the fate of the author's brother, who was executed in 1917 for attempted desertion from the Austro-Hungarian to the Romanian army. *Rascoala/The Uprising* 1932 relates a rebellion of 1907 with the peasantry as the collective hero.

### reception theory

literary analysis that concentrates on the way a work is received by its contemporary readership and throughout its ensuing history.

Its leading exponent, Hans Robert Jauss, argues that the meaning of a text changes as its readership's horizon of expectation and knowledge changes.

## Rechy, John (Francisco) (1934-)

US writer whose novels primarily dealt with the search for love and identity by homosexual and bisexual characters, as in *City of Night* 1963 and *Bodies and Souls* 1983.

Red and the Black, The

French Le Rouge et le Noir

novel by <u>Stendhal</u>, published 1830. Julien Sorel, a carpenter's son, pursues social advancement by dishonourable means. Marriage to a marquis' daughter, a title, and an army commission are within his grasp when revelation of his murky past by a former lover destroys him.

### Red Badge of Courage, The

novel 1895 by US writer Stephen <u>Crane</u>. It tells the story of the youth Henry Fleming in the American Civil War, his cowardice, courage, and final sense of personal victory.

# Redding, J(ay) Saunders (1906-1977)

US educator, literary critic, and author. In various critical works, he set forth his views, often at odds with both the white and black establishments. He wrote over one thousand reviews of books by writers of all colours and his many books include *To Make a Poet Black* 1939, *They Came in Chains* 1950, and *The Lonesome Road* 1958.

In *Stranger and Alone* 1950, he exposed conditions in the USA's all-black colleges, charging that the students were trained to be submissive and thus were being educated for failure. Although he became known as 'the dean of Afro-American studies', he himself preferred the word 'Negro' and distrusted 'Black Studies': he wanted to free African-Americans from all special categories and achieve a truly pluralistic and assimilationist society.

## Redol, Antonio Alves (1911-1983)

Portuguese novelist. Writing in a social realist style, he portrays the struggle of peasants for land, together with the rise and decay of the port-wine business and its effect on the poor. One of his finest novels is *Olhos de água* 1954, a story based on the impact of industrialism on a small village.

### 'Red Riding Hood'

European folk tale about a little girl who takes cakes to her sick grandmother's remote cottage. A wolf eats the grandmother and impersonates her, intending to eat Red Riding Hood as well. In Charles Perrault's version of 1697, the story concludes with the wolf devouring the child, but the <u>Grimm brothers'</u> Little Red Cap is rescued. The primitive themes in this tale have been well explored by psychoanalytic theory, as in US child psychologist Bruno Bettelheim's *The Uses of* 

Enchantment (1976).

# Reed, Ishmael (Scott) (1938-)

US novelist. His novels parody and satirize notions of historical fact, exploiting traditions taken from jazz and voodoo. They include *The Free-Lance Pallbearers* (1967), *Mumbo Jumbo* (1972), *Reckless Eyeballing* (1986), and *Japanese by Spring* (1993). His poetry includes the collection *Chattanooga* (1973).

# Reed, Talbot Baines (1852-1893)

English writer. He wrote school stories for the *Boy's Own Paper*, typical examples being *The Fifth Form at St Dominic's* 1881 and *The Willoughby Captains* 1883.

## Reeve, Clara (1729-1807)

English novelist. She translated the English satirist John <u>Barclay</u>'s *Argenis* (1772) from its Latin original, and wrote *The Champion of Virtue, a Gothic Story* (1777, renamed *The Old English Baron* in 1778), which was avowedly an imitation of Horace <u>Walpole</u>'s *The Castle of Otranto*. She also wrote a critical account of *The Progress of Romance* (1785).

Her other novels include *The Two Mentors* (1783), *The Exiles* (1788), *Memoirs of Sir Roger de Clarendon* (1793), and *Destination* (1799). She was born in Ipswich, Suffolk, and her father was the rector of Freston.

## Reeve, Henry (1813-1895)

English writer and editor. He was on the staff of *The Times* 1840-55, where he had considerable influence on the newspaper's attitudes towards foreign affairs, and edited the *Edinburgh Review* 1855-95. His *Royal and Republican France* 1872 is a collection of essays.

### Reeves, James (1909-1978)

English poet. His work has been linked with his friend Robert Graves, but he was more influenced by T S Eliot, Ezra Pound, and the Imagists. His verse reveals deeply felt emotions - guilt, anger, and pain - beneath the tranquil surface of everyday life. *Collected Poems*, *1929-74* was published 1974.

### Reeves, William Pember (1857-1932)

New Zealand politician and writer. He was New Zealand minister of education 1891-96, and director of the London School of Economics 1908-19. He wrote poetry and the classic history of New Zealand, *Long White Cloud* 1898.

### Regio, José (1901-1969)

#### pseudonym of José Maria dos Reis Pereira

Portuguese writer. His themes are the meaning of existence, human interpretation of God's designs, and lost childhood. Among his works are the volumes of poetry *Poemas de Deus e do Diabo* 1925, *As Encruzilhadas de Deus* 1926, and *Biografia* 1929; *Teatro* 1941-47 (plays); and *A Velha Casa* 1945-47.

## Régnier, Henri François Joseph de (1864-1936)

French poet and novelist. His first volume of verse, *Les Lendemains* 1885, revealed him as a Symbolist, but he adopted more traditional forms in *Les Médailles d'argile* 1900 and *Vestigia flammae* 1921. His novels include *La Double Maîtresse* 1900, *Les Vacances d'un jeune homme sage*, and *Le Mariage de minuit*, both 1903.

### Régnier, Mathurin (1573-1613)

French poet. His works 1608-12, chiefly satires, attempt (as the <u>Pléiade</u> poets had done with other genres) to raise this type of work to classical perfection. The satires are characterized by the combination of comic realism and social criticism.

## Reid, Forrest (1875-1947)

Irish writer. Born in Belfast, Reid is best known for his deft recreations of boyhood in the trilogy of novels about Tom Barber: *Uncle Stephen* (1931), *The Retreat* (1936), and *Young Tom* (1944), the latter winning the James Tait Black Memorial Prize. All Reid's novels focus on the coming of age of a young male protagonist and are often strongly autobiographical.

Reid studied at the Royal Belfast Academical Institute, and was encouraged to write by English novelist E M Forster. He also wrote critical analyses of the poets W B

Yeats and Walter de la Mare.

## Reid, Mayne (1818-1883)

#### pseudonym of Thomas Mayne Reid

Irish novelist, born in Ballyroney, County Down, Northern Ireland. Reid went to the USA in 1838, where he had a varied career and took an active part in the Mexican War; he settled in England in about 1850. He wrote a succession of adventure stories, including *The Rifle Rangers* (1850), *The Scalp Hunters* (1851), *The White Chief* (1859), and *The Headless Horseman* (1866).

### Reis, Ricardo

assumed name, or 'heteronym', of Portuguese poet Fernando Pessoa.

# Rej, Mikolaj (1505-1569)

Polish writer. His work is transitional between the medieval tradition and the Reformation; for example, a verse debate (1543) 'between the squire, the bailiff, and the parson'. Rej was self-educated and was an eager moralist. His poetry collection *Zwierciadlo/The Looking Glass* (1568) is both a personal reflection and a mirror of the age, and includes his best-known work, 'Zywot czlowieka poczciwego/ The Life of an Honest Man'.

### Remarque, Erich Maria (1898-1970)

German novelist. He was a soldier in World War I. His *All Quiet on the Western Front* (1929), one of the first anti-war novels, led to his being deprived of German nationality. He lived in Switzerland 1929-39, and then in the USA.

## Renaissance English literature

literature in Britain in the period beginning in around 1500 and lasting until the mid-1600s. Influenced by the artistic and cultural Renaissance, the transformation of both English language and literature in this period can be seen to move away from the medieval Middle English literature period and into the more recognizably modern <u>Elizabethan literature</u>. The period is characterized by the influence of the classics (in literature, language, and philosophy), as well as an optimistic forwardthinking approach to the potential of humans (known as Renaissance humanism. See also English literature.

#### influences

In simple terms, the Renaissance in England was caused by the spread of Renaissance learning and ideology from Italy, where it developed earlier (*c*.1400-1500). The Renaissance embraced not only literature, but also art and architecture. In literary terms, the study of the classical poets led not only to their translation into English but the adaptation of their <u>verse</u> forms and systems of poetical metre, as well as the embracing of their themes and genres. An illustration of the linguistic explosion caused by the Renaissance is the addition of more than 10,000 new words to the language in a short space of time, mainly from Latin. The Renaissance also led to a rebirth of classical humanism, which encouraged knowledge of the arts, languages, and a generally broad and active education. This led to a great spirit of confidence and the urge to explore the potential that language, literature, and philosophy could offer and the heights that humans could reach.

A brief survey of significant historical and social events in the period, suggests that the flowering of English literature was part of a larger whole. The development of the printing press led to a communications revolution and increased literacy. There were 20,000 different publications in England between 1500 and 1640. There was a new curiosity, marked by discoveries in science, astronomy, and geography. Italian navigators Christopher Columbus and Sebastian Cabot explored into the 'New World' in the 1490s. It was also a time of religious change; the English Reformation (under King Henry VIII) broke the English church away from Roman Catholicism in 1533, and the spread of Protestantism in Europe were both influential factors on literature and everyday life.

# Renan, (Joseph) Ernest (1823-1892)

French theologian and historian. His *La Vie de Jésus/The Life of Jesus*, published 1863, controversially denied the supernatural element of Christ's life and mission. It was the first work in a series on the history of the origins of Christianity.

### Renart, Jean

French writer. He composed the verse romances *L'Escoufle*, *Guillaume de Dole*, and *Le Lai de l'ombre*, notable for their delicate irony and rough-hewn style.

## Rendell, Ruth Barbara (1930-)

English novelist and short-story writer. She is the author of a popular detective

series featuring Chief Inspector Wexford, of which *Harm Done* (1999) was the 17th. Her psychological crime novels explore the minds of people who commit murder, often through obsession or social inadequacy, as in *A Demon in my View* (1976), *Heartstones* (1987), *The Keys to the Street* (1996), *A Sight for Sore Eyes* (1998), and *Adam and Eve and Pinch Me* (2001). Many of her works have been adapted for television.

Lake of Darkness (1980) won the Arts Council National Book Award (Genre Fiction) for that year. She also writes under the pseudonym Barbara Vine, and books published under that name include *A Fatal Inversion* (1987; winner of the Crime Writers' Association Macallan Gold Dagger for Fiction), *Asta's Book* (1993), *The Brimstone Wedding* (1995), and *Grasshopper* (2000). *The Blood Doctor* (2002) is a psychological novel based on the diaries of Lord Henry of Nanther, Queen Victoria's physician. Her subsequent novel was *The Rottweiler* (2003). She also published *Piranha to Scurfy and Other Stories* in 2000, a collection of gothic ghost stories. She was made a baroness in 1997.

# Renn, Ludwig (1889-1979)

#### pseudonym of Arnold Vieth von Golssenau

German writer. He caused a sensation with his first novel, *Krieg/War* 1928, a harsh and realistic treatment of World War I. His other novels include *Nachkrieg/After War* 1930 and *Russland Fahrten/Travels in Russia* 1932.

## Republic, The

treatise by the Greek philosopher Plato in which the voice of Socrates is used to describe the ideal state, where the cultivation of truth, beauty, and goodness achieves perfection.

### Restif, Nicolas Edme (1734-1806)

#### also known as Restif de la Bretonne

French novelist. He wrote about 250 novels, which are interesting for their realistic description of 18th-century low life. They include *Le Paysan perverti/The Corrupted Ones* 1776, *Les Contemporaines/The Contemporaries* 1780-85, and *Monsieur Nicolas* 1796-97.

Restoration

in English history, the period when the monarchy, in the person of Charles II, was reestablished after the English Civil War and the fall of the Protectorate in 1660.

<u>Restoration literature</u> covers writers active at this period, most notably English poet and dramatist John <u>Dryden</u>, English religious writer John <u>Bunyan</u>, English poet John <u>Milton</u>, and English non-fiction writer Samuel <u>Pepys</u>. Restoration comedy, popular drama played in the theatres newly reopened since the time of the Protectorate, was characterized by its bawdiness and wit.

## **Restoration literature**

<u>prose</u>, poetry, and drama written in English in Britain during the <u>Restoration</u> (the period when the monarchy, in the person of Charles II, was re-established after the English Civil War and the fall of the Protectorate in 1660). See also <u>English literature</u>.

The restoration of Charles II to the throne liberated creative writing from the restrictions of the Protectorate. The best known genre of the period was the bawdy and lively Restoration comedy, the work of English dramatists such as William Wycherley who wrote *The Country Wife* (1675). However, there was a sharply contrasting religious output from writers such as the English poet John <u>Milton</u> ('Paradise Lost', 1667, 'Paradise Regained', 1671, 'Sampson Agonistes', 1671) and the imprisoned English writer of religious allegory and spiritual autobiography, John <u>Bunyan</u> (*Pilgrim's Progress*, 1678-1684). There is some debate as to how far this period overlaps with the Augustan. Here, the watershed is taken as the accession of William III in 1689 after the revolution of the previous year.

# Reuter, Gabriele (1859-1941)

German novelist. Her Aus guter Familie/Of Good Family 1895 was a penetrating study of the problems of the contemporary woman. Her later novels, such as Ellen von der Weiden 1900 and Liselotte von Reckling 1903, though artistic and skilfully planned, were less successful.

## Rexroth, Kenneth (1905-1982)

US poet, writer, and painter. He is best known for his critical essays and his naturalistic erotic poetry.

Reymont, Wladyslaw Stanislaw (1867-1925)

Polish novelist. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1924 for his epic novel *Chlopi/The Peasants* (1902-09), a chronicle of peasant life written almost entirely in dialect. His other works include *Komediantka/The Comedienne* (1896) and the historical trilogy *Rok 1794/The Year 1794* (1913-18).

### Reznikoff, Charles (1894-1976)

US poet and writer who was noted for his spare poetry of the objectivist school. He often dealt with the role of Judaism in his life, as in *Poems 1937-75* 1977.

### **Rhapsodists**

#### or *rhapsodes*

originally epic poets of ancient Greece who recited their own verses in public; by the 6th century  $_{BC}$  the term was generally used of the professional reciters of other people's poems, especially those who declaimed the poems of <u>Homer</u> at various festivals, without instrumental accompaniment, merely holding a branch of bay in the hand.

### Rhétoriqueurs, Les

#### or Les Grands Rhétoriqueurs

school of French poets of the late 15th and early 16th century who used artificial and highly complicated techniques (elaborated rhymes and alliteration, for example). The principal *rhétoriqueurs* were Georges <u>Chastellain</u>, Jean Marot (died 1526), Pierre <u>Gringore</u>, and Mellin de <u>Saint-Gelais</u>.

### Rhys, Ernest Percival (1859-1946)

Anglo-Welsh editor and writer. He became associated with the publishing firm of J M Dent 1894, and later was made the first editor of the Everyman's Library series of inexpensive editions of literary classics.

### Rhys, Jean (1894-1979)

adopted name of Ella Gwendolen Rees Williams

Dominican-born English novelist. Her works include *Wide Sargasso Sea* (1966), a recreation, set in a Caribbean island, of the life of the mad wife of Rochester from Charlotte Brontë's *Jane Eyre*.

#### Ribeiro, Bernardim (1482-1552)

Portuguese writer. He studied law at Lisbon and in 1524 became secretary to King John III. He introduced the Renaissance pastoral to Portuguese literature, both through several eclogues (the first in Portuguese) and also through the popular chivalric romance *Minina e Moça* (1554), which was published posthumously and probably contains passages by another writer).

### Rice, Anne (1941-)

US writer who gained a vast cult readership for both her supernatural novels, such as the *Vampire Chronicles* 1989, a trilogy, and for her sadomasochistic erotica, as in *Beauty's Punishment* 1984. She also wrote mainstream fiction, using the pen-name of Anne Rampling.

### Rice, James (1843-1882)

English writer. He collaborated with Walter <u>Besant</u> on a series of novels, beginning with the highly successful *Ready-Money Mortiboy* 1872. He was the sole author of *A History of the British Turf* 1879.

## Rich, Adrienne (1929-)

US radical feminist poet, writer, and critic. Her poetry is both subjective and political, concerned with female consciousness, peace, and gay rights. Her works include *On Lies, Secrets and Silence* (1979), *The Fact of a Doorframe: Poems, 1950-84* (1984), and *What is Found There: Notebooks on Poetry and Politics* (1994).

## Rich, Barnabe (1542-1617)

English writer. His romances include *Rich, his Farewell to the Military Profession* (1581) (which provided the plot for Shakespeare's *Twelfth Night*), *The Strange and Wonderful Adventures of Don Simonides* (1581-84), and *Faults, Faults, and Nothing Else but Faults* (1606). He also wrote pamphlets on military subjects and memoirs.

## Richards, Frank (1876-1961)

#### pen-name of Charles Harold St John Hamilton

English writer. He wrote for the children's papers *Magnet* and *Gem* and invented Greyfriars public school and the fat boy Billy Bunter.

# Richards, I(vor) A(rmstrong) (1893-1979)

English literary critic. He collaborated with C K Ogden on two books and wrote *Principles of Literary Criticism* (1924). With Ogden, he founded the simplified form of English known as Basic English. In 1939 he went to Harvard University, USA, where he taught detailed attention to the text and had a strong influence on contemporary US literary criticism.

He was a leading authority on semantics (the meaning of words) and his emphasis on the words on the page became the cornerstone of the US <u>New Criticism</u> movement. Other critical works are *Science and Poetry* (1926) and *Practical Criticism* (1929).

## Richardson, Dorothy (Miller) (1873-1957)

English novelist. Her sequence of 12 autobiographical novels was published together as *Pilgrimage* in 1938. It began with *Pointed Roofs* (1915), in which she was one of the first English novelists to use the 'stream of consciousness' technique.

Her contemporary, the English novelist and critic Virginia <u>Woolf</u>, recognized and shared this technique as part of the current effort to express women's perceptions in spite of the resistance of man-made language, and she credited Richardson with having invented 'the sentence of the feminine gender'.

## Richardson, Henry Handel (1870-1946)

#### pen-name of Ethel Florence Lindesay Richardson

Australian novelist. She was the first Australian writer to win a reputation abroad. Her works include *The Getting of Wisdom* (1910), based on her schooldays and filmed in 1977. She left Australia when only 18.

Richardson was born in Melbourne. In 1888 she went to study piano in Leipzig, Germany, and her first novel, *Maurice Guest* (1908) is based on these years. The

trilogy *The Fortunes of Richard Mahony*, published as *Australia Felix* (1917), *The Way Home* (1925), and *Ultima Thule* (1929), traces the career of a gold-rush migrant from the early 1850s to the mid-1870s and draws heavily on the life of her father.

### Richardson, Samuel (1689-1761)

English novelist. He was one of the founders of the modern novel. *Pamela* (1740-41), written in the form of a series of letters and containing much dramatic conversation, was sensationally popular all across Europe, and was followed by *Clarissa* (1747-48) and *Sir Charles Grandison* (1753-54).

# Riche, Barnaby (c. 1540-1617)

English soldier and author. He is remembered for his *Riche his Farewell to Military Profession* 1581, a collection of eight tales. It includes 'Apollonius and Silla', which provided Shakespeare with the material for his comedy *Twelfth Night*.

Riche's 'Apollonius and Silla' was translated from a French version in the collection *Histoires Tragiques/Tragic Stories* by Belleforest, which was itself a translation of the Italian tales *Novelle/Tales* by Matteo <u>Bandello</u>.

### Richler, Mordecai (1931-2001)

Canadian journalist and novelist. His novels, written in a witty, acerbic style, include *The Apprenticeship of Duddy Kravitz* (1959, filmed 1974) and *St Urbain's Horseman* (1971). Later works include *Joshua Then and Now* (1980, filmed 1985), *Home Sweet Home* (1984), and *Solomon Gursky Was Here* (1990).

Richler was born in Montréal, Québec. He took up residence in London, England in 1954, and returned to Montréal in 1972. Richler also wrote the children's books *Jacob Two-Two Meets the Hooded Fang* (1975, filmed 1977) and *Jacob Two-Two and the Dinosaur* (1987).

### Richter, Jean Paul (Johann Paul Friedrich) (1763-1825)

German author. He created a series of comic eccentrics in works such as the romance *Titan* 1800-03 and *Die Flegeljahre/The Awkward Age* 1804-05.

#### or conundrum

verbal puzzle or question that offers clues rather than direct aids to solving it, and often involves unlikely comparisons. Riddle poems were common in Old English poetry.

In ancient literature, finding the answer to a riddle could be a matter of life and death. Oedipus, for example, became the ruler of the ancient Greek city of Thebes by solving the riddle of the Sphinx: 'What goes on four legs in the morning, two in the afternoon, and three in the evening?' The answer is a human being - crawling on all fours as a baby, and walking with a stick in old age.

# Riding, Laura (1901-1991)

#### born Laura Reichenthal

US poet. She was a member of the Fugitive Group of poets that flourished in the southern USA 1915-28. She went to England in 1926 and worked with the writer Robert Graves. Having published her *Collected Poems* (1938), she wrote no more verse, but turned to linguistics in order to analyse the expression of 'truth'.

### Rifbjerg, Klaus (1931-)

Danish novelist, poet, and dramatist. He is a versatile and productive writer, primarily a modernist. His works include the poetry collection *Konfrontation* (1960) and the novels *Den kroniske uskyld/Chronic Innocence* (1958), *Operaelskeren/The Opera Lover* (1966), and *De hellige aber/The Sacred Monkeys* (1981), a political fantasy.

### Riley, James Whitcomb (1849-1916)

US poet. His first collection of poems, *The Old Swimmin' Hole*, was published 1883. His later collections include *Rhymes of Childhood* 1890 and *Home Folks* 1900. His use of the Midwestern vernacular and familiar themes earned him the unofficial title 'The Hoosier Poet'.

Born in Greenfield, Indiana, Riley had little formal education and worked at a series of odd jobs before becoming the editor of a local newspaper. In 1877 he began to contribute light verse to the *Indianapolis Journal*.

## Rilke, Rainer Maria (1875-1926)

Austrian writer. His prose works include the semi-autobiographical *Die Aufzeichnungen des Malte Laurids Brigge/The Notebook of Malte Laurids Brigge* (1910). His verse is characterized by a form of mystic pantheism that seeks to achieve a state of ecstasy in which existence can be apprehended as a whole.

## Rimbaud, (Jean Nicolas) Arthur (1854-1891)

French Symbolist poet. His verse was chiefly written before the age of 20, notably *Les Illuminations* (published 1886). From 1871 he lived with the poet Paul <u>Verlaine</u>.

#### rímur

#### singular ríma 'rhyme'

Icelandic metrical romance, popular from the 15th century onwards. Composed in a variety of more or less complex verse forms blending native and foreign influences, the *rímur* can be combined into cycles, and they are normally based on prose tales.

In pre-Reformation *rímur*, heroic and chivalric themes dominate, together with fabulous adventures. After the Reformation, biblical and foreign materials are also versified, and some *rímur* are composed in a humorous vein, such as Jón Sigurdsson's *Tímarímur/Time-Rhymes* about 1700 or Gudmundur Gudmundsson's *Althingisrímur/Parliament Rhymes* 1902.

## Rinehart, Mary Roberts (1876-1958)

US novelist. Her detective novels include *The Circular Staircase* 1908 and *The Man in Lower Ten* 1909. *The Breaking Point* 1922 and *This Strange Adventure* 1929 are more serious novels. She also published a series of humorous novels featuring the eccentric spinster, Tish.

## 'Ringuet' (1895-1960)

#### pseudonym of Marie-Joseph-Philippe Panneton

French-Canadian novelist. In *Trente arpents/Thirty Acres* 1938, he turned away from the traditional rural idyll of closeness to the land and portrayed the real-life facts and concerns of his characters' lives.

He also wrote short stories, the short novel *Fausse monnaie* 1947, and the novel *Le poids du jour* 1949.

#### Rip Van Winkle

legendary character created by Washington <u>Irving</u> in his 1819 tale of a man who falls into a magical 20-year sleep, and wakes to find he has slumbered through the War of American Independence.

### Ritchie, Anne Isabella, Lady (1837-1919)

#### born Anne Isabella Thackeray

English novelist. Her novels include *The Village on the Cliff* 1867 and *Old Kensington* 1873. She also published memoirs of writers she had known, including *Records of Tennyson, Ruskin and Robert and Elizabeth Browning* 1892, *Lord Tennyson and his Friends* 1893, and *Chapters from Some Memoirs* 1894.

She was the daughter of the novelist William Makepeace Thackeray.

### Ritson, Joseph (1752-1803)

English literary antiquary. A student of ancient English poetry, he did much to collect and preserve it. His chief works are A Collection of English Songs 1783, Ancient Songs from Henry III to the Revolution 1790, A Collection of Scottish Songs 1794, and Ancient English Metrical Romances 1802.

#### Rittenhouse, Jessie Bell (1869-1948)

US critic, anthologist, and poet. She published *The Younger American Poets* 1904, a volume of critical essays. She was a regular reviewer for the *New York Times Review of Books* 1905-15 and helped found the Poetry Society of America in 1910.

### Rivarol, Antoine de (1753-1801)

French writer and satirist. Among his works are *De l'Universalité de la langue française/French as a Universal Language* 1784 and *Petit Dictionnaire des grands hommes de la Révolution/Small Dictionary of Great Men of the Revolution* 1790,

but his wit and sarcasm are said to have been at their most brilliant in spontaneous conversation.

### Rivière, Jacques (1886-1925)

French writer and critic. He wrote for the influential *Nouvelle Revue française/New French Review* and became its editor 1919. He was preoccupied with spiritual values, and his publications include *L'Allemand: souvenirs et réflexions d'un prisonnier de guerre/The German: Thoughts of a Prisoner of War* 1918, *Aimée* 1922, and *A la trace de Dieu/On the Trail of God* 1925.

### Rizal Mercado y Alonzo Realonda, José (1861-1896)

Filipino physician, patriot, and novelist. In 1886 he published *Noli Me Tangere*, a novel exposing the evils of the rule of the Spanish monks in his country. He was driven from the Philippines in 1887 and in 1891 published a sequel to his novel, *El Filibusterismo*. In 1892, returning to Manila, he founded the Liga Filipina, a non-violent society for reform, but was arrested and banished to Mindanao, where he established a school and a hospital. In 1896 he was again arrested, for alleged complicity in the Katipunan rebellion of 1896-97, and shot.

Mercado y Rizal was born in Calamba, Laguna province, Luzon, Philippines. He attended the Jesuit school in Manila, Madrid University, and visited several European universities, becoming an accomplished linguist. After leaving the Philippines to go into exile he practised medicine in Hong Kong.

## Roa Bastos, Augusto (1917-2005)

Paraguayan writer. He wrote short stories and novels, mainly about social injustice and violence, using <u>magic realism</u>. *Hijo de hombre/Son of Man* (1960) deals with Paraguay's history and the Chaco War (1932-35) between Bolivia and Paraguay, in which he fought.

## Robbe-Grillet, Alain (1922-)

French writer. He was the leading theorist of *le nouveau roman* ('the new novel'), for example his own *Les Gommes/The Erasers* (1953), *La Jalousie/Jealousy* (1957), and *Dans le Labyrinthe/In the Labyrinth* (1959), which concentrates on the detailed description of physical objects. He also wrote the script for the film *L'Année dernière à Marienbad/Last Year at Marienbad* (1961).

# Robbins, Harold (1916-1997)

#### adopted name of Francis Kane

US writer. He produced a series of best sellers, mostly violent and sexually charged adventure novels such as *The Carpetbaggers* (1961). In later years he lived in Cannes, France. His other novels include *The Adventurers* (1966), *The Betsy* (1971), *The Stallion* (1996), and *Tycoon* (1997).

### Robert of Brunneborn

alternative name of English poet Robert Manning.

# Robert of Gloucester (lived 1260-1300)

English chronicler. He was probably a monk of Gloucester Abbey. He wrote a verse *Chronicle of England* from the earliest times down to the reign of Henry III.

## Roberts, Charles George Douglas (1860-1943)

Canadian poet, short-story writer, and novelist. He is known as 'the father of Canadian literature'. His early *Orion, and Other Poems* (1880) influentially demonstrated that Canadian poets could creatively assimilate Tennysonian Romanticism, but later volumes such as *The Vagrant of Time* (1927) developed a more modern idiom. His 24 volumes of short fiction, starting with *Earth's Enigmas* (1896), included some of the first and most realistic animal stories as well as tales of outdoor adventure. Knighted in 1935.

He also wrote historical romances such as *Barbara Ladd* 1902, set during the American Revolution.

### Roberts, Kenneth Lewis (1885-1957)

US novelist. He wrote carefully researched novels of early American history, including *Rabble in Arms* 1933, *Northwest Passage* 1937, and *Lydia Bailey* 1946.

English novelist and travel writer. His experiences of working in Australia and travelling widely are reflected in his books, which include *Land Travel and Sea-faring* 1891, *A Tramp's Notebook* 1904, and *On the Earthquake Line* 1924. Novels include *A Son of Empire* 1900 and *Hearts of Women* 1919.

### Robertson, William (1721-1793)

Scottish historian. His reputation was established with his *History of Scotland during the Reigns of Queen Mary and of James VI* 1759, and he was appointed Historiographer Royal for Scotland 1764. His *History of the Reign of the Emperor Charles V* 1769 was followed by a *History of America* 1777.

Although much of his work is now outdated, Robertson was the first British historian to attempt a wide general view of history.

### **Robin Hood**

in English legend, an outlaw and champion of the poor against the rich, said to have lived in Sherwood Forest, Nottinghamshire, during the reign of Richard I (1189-99). He feuded with the sheriff of Nottingham, accompanied by Maid Marian and a band of followers known as his 'merry men'. He appears in many popular ballads from the 13th century, but his first datable appearance is in William Langland's *Piers Plowman* in the late 14th century. He became popular in the 15th century.

## Robinson, (Esmé Stuart) Lennox (1886-1958)

Irish dramatist, editor, and writer. He was manager of the Abbey Theatre, Dublin 1909-14 and 1919-23, after which he also became a director of the theatre. He wrote many plays, the best of them comedies of Irish rural life. He edited Lady Gregory's *Journals* (1946), and in 1951 published *Ireland's Abbey Theatre*, *1899-1950*.

## Robinson, Edwin Arlington (1869-1935)

US poet. His verse, dealing mainly with psychological themes in a narrative style, is collected in volumes such as *The Children of the Night* (1897), which established his reputation. He was awarded three Pulitzer Prizes for poetry: *Collected Poems* (1922), *The Man Who Died Twice* (1925), and *Tristram* (1928).

## Robinson, Henry Crabb (1775-1867)

English writer. His diaries, journals, and letters are a valuable source of information on his literary friends Charles <u>Lamb</u>, Samuel Taylor <u>Coleridge</u>, William <u>Wordsworth</u>, and Robert <u>Southey</u>.

## Robinson, Roland (1912-1992)

Irish-born Australian poet and writer. His poetry collections include *Beyond the Grass-Tree Spears* 1944 and *Grendel* 1967. He wrote about the folklore of the Aborigines of the Northern Territory in *Legend and Dreaming* 1952, and a collection of short stories, *Black-feller, White-feller*, appeared in 1958.

### Robinson Crusoe

#### in full The Life and Strange and Surprising Adventures of Robinson Crusoe

novel by Daniel <u>Defoe</u>, published in 1719. It tells the story of a man shipwrecked alone on a desert island. His attempts to ensure his physical and mental survival are thoroughly documented before he meets another castaway, 'Man Friday', who he treats as his pupil and servant. Defoe freely embroiders the real-life ordeal of Alexander Selkirk which inspired the book. *Robinson Crusoe* is generally regarded as the first major English novel.

### Roche, Mazo de la

Canadian novelist; see <u>de la Roche</u>, Mazo.

## Roche, Regina Maria (1764-1845)

#### born Regina Dalton

Irish writer. Born in County Waterford where she remained throughout her life, Roche wrote romantic novels that bordered on the Gothic. Her most successful work was the four-volume *Children of the Abbey* (1796). While several of her novels are set on the Continent or in Britain, her later fiction concentrates on Irish settings and issues such as absentee landlordism and Irish nationalism. Other works include *The Munster Cottage Boy* (1820) and *The Castle Chapel* (1825).

# Rochester, John Wilmot, 2nd Earl of Rochester (1647-1680)

English poet and courtier. He fought gallantly at sea against the Dutch, but chiefly led a debauched life at the court of Charles II. He wrote graceful (but often obscene) lyrics, and his *A Satire against Mankind* (1675) rivals Swift. He was a patron of the English poet John Dryden. He was made an earl in 1658.

## Rode, Helge (1870-1937)

Danish poet and writer. His poetry has a religious quality and reveals him as a champion of modern mysticism. He was an opponent of materialism and of Charles Darwin's theory of natural selection. Among his published works are the collections of poems *Hvide Blomster/White Flowers* 1892 and *Ariel* 1914.

# Rodenbach, Georges (1855-1898)

Belgian writer. The two great influences on his work were the ideals of Symbolism and his affection for the cities and countryside of Flanders. Characteristic collections of verse are *Le Règne du silence/The Reign of Silence* 1891 and *Les Vies encloses/Enclosed Lives* 1893. *Bruges-la-morte* 1892 reveals that he could also successfully evoke atmosphere in a novel.

# Rodgers, W(illiam) R(obert) (1909-1969)

Irish writer, born in Belfast and educated at Queen's University, Belfast. Rodgers was a Presbyterian minister at Loughgall, County Armagh, 1935-45. His early poetry was uneven, but his second collection, *Europa and the Bull* (1952), contained original and energetic rewritings of both Christian stories and classical mythology.

Rodgers worked for the BBC in London 1947-65, where his literary portraits of W B Yeats, J M Synge, and James Joyce, among others, were very popular and later published. In 1966 he became writer in residence at Pitzer College, California, but died soon after in Los Angeles.

## Roelants, Maurice (1895-1966)

Flemish novelist and poet. He was one of the few outstanding Flemish writers of the period between the two world wars. His psychological novels, for example *Komen en gaan* 1927 and *De Jazz-speler* 1928, are rated more highly than the melancholic poetry collected in *Het verzaken* 1930.

### Roethke, Theodore Huebner (1908-1963)

US poet. His lyrical, visionary, and exclusively personal poetry drew on theological and mystical sources. It derived much of its detail and imagery from the greenhouses and plants in his father's large nursery business in Michigan. Collections include *Open House* (1941), *The Lost Son* (1948), *The Waking* (1953; Pulitzer Prize), and the posthumous *Collected Poems* (1968).

## Rogers, Samuel (1763-1855)

English poet and wit. He was highly esteemed as a poet in his lifetime but his verse is little read today. He is remembered chiefly as a conversationalist; his breakfast parties were famous.

## Rohmer, Sax (1883-1959)

#### pen-name of Arthur Sarsfield Ward

English crime writer. He specialized in exotic thrillers featuring the sinister Chinese character Fu Manchu, such as *The Devil Doctor* 1916.

## Rojas, Fernando de (c. 1473/6-1541)

Castilian Spanish author. His continuation of an earlier, anonymous prose fiction was published, probably in 1499, as the *Comedia de Calisto y Melibea/Comedy of Calisto and Melibea*. He then produced an expanded and retitled version, the *Tragicomedia de Calisto y Melibea/Tragicomedy of Calisto and Melibea* (about 1502). Both works were enormously popular; the *Tragicomedia*, which superseded the *Comedia*, became known as *La Celestina*.

## Roland (died c. 778)

French hero. His real and legendary deeds of valour and chivalry inspired many medieval and later romances, including the 11th-century *Chanson de Roland* and Ariosto's *Orlando furioso*. A knight of Charlemagne, Roland was killed in 778 with his friend Oliver and the 12 peers of France at Roncesvalles (in the Pyrenees) by Basques. He headed the rearguard during Charlemagne's retreat from his invasion of Spain.

## Roland, Chanson de

see Chanson de Roland.

# Roland Holst-van der Schalk, Henriette (1869-1952)

Dutch poet. Her most important publications were *De Vrouw in het Woud* 1913, *Verzonken Grenzen* 1918, *Tusschen twee Werelden* 1923, and *Verworvenheden* 1927.

She was a zealous socialist and later became a member of the Dutch Communist Party. Afterwards she grew disillusioned and her poetry became predominantly mystic and religious.

# Rolfe, Frederick (William) (1860-1913)

English writer. He claimed to be Baron Corvo. A Roman Catholic convert, frustrated in his desire to enter the priesthood, he wrote the novel *Hadrian VII* 1904, in which the protagonist rises from being a poor writer to become pope.

## Rolleston, Thomas William (1857-1920)

Irish writer, born in Glasshouse Shinrone, County Offaly, and educated at Trinity College, Dublin, and in Germany. He played a leading part in the Irish literary revival as joint editor, with Stopford <u>Brooke</u>, of *A Treasury of Irish Poetry* (1900), and published *Imagination and Art in Gaelic Literature* (1900) and *Myths and Legends of the Celtic Race* (1911).

Other works include the volume of verse *Sea Spray* (1909) and a life of the German writer Gotthold Lessing in 1889.

# Rölvaag, O(le) E(dvart) (1876-1931)

Norwegian-born US writer. He wrote his work in Norwegian, but helped with the English translations. He is best known for his semiautobiographical novels of Norwegian immigrant pioneers in the USA, such as *Giants of the Earth* (1927), the first of a triology on this theme.

## Romains, Jules (1885-1972)

#### pen-name of Louis Henri Jean Farigoule

French novelist, playwright, and poet. His plays include the farce *Knock, ou le triomphe de la médecine/Dr Knock* (1923) and *Donogoo* (1930), and his novels include *Mort de quelqu'un/Death of a Nobody* (1911), *Les Copains/The Boys in the Back Room* (1913), and *Les Hommes de bonne volonté/Men of Good Will* (27 volumes) (1932-47).

#### romance

in literature, tales of love and chivalric adventure, in verse or prose, that became popular in France about 1200 and spread throughout Europe.

### Roman de la Rose

#### Romance of the Rose

French allegorical poem of courtly love written in the 13th century, begun by Guillaume de Lorris (lived eary 13th century) and completed in a more expansively erudite and satirical vein by Jean de Meung (died *c.* 1305).

### Roman plays, the

the three Shakespeare tragedies based on events in Roman history. They are: *Julius Caesar*, *Antony and Cleopatra*, and *Coriolanus*. Though it has a Roman setting, the tragedy *Titus Andronicus* is not usually classified of as one of the Roman plays as it is not based on Roman history.

#### **Romansch literature**

literature written in the Romansch language of eastern Switzerland. Apart from one 12th-century fragment, it dates from the time of the Reformation, in the 16th century. There are a number of religious texts, mainly Protestant but some Roman Catholic, from the 16th and 17th centuries. Secular literature begins with the Romantic movement in the 19th century. In recent times literature of every sort has been written in the language.

### Romeo and Juliet

romantic tragedy by William <u>Shakespeare</u>, first performed 1594-95. The play is concerned with the doomed love of teenagers Romeo and Juliet, victims of the bitter enmity between their respective families in Verona.

#### Ronsard, Pierre de (1524-1585)

French poet. He was the leader of the <u>Pléiade</u> group of poets. Under the patronage of Charles IX, he published original verse in a lightly sensitive style, including odes and love sonnets, such as Odes (1550), Les Amours/Lovers (1552-53), and the 'Marie' cycle, Continuation des amours/Lovers Continued (1555-56). He also produced a theoretical treatise Art poétique (1565).

### Roper, William (1496-1578)

English writer. He wrote a biography of Thomas More, whose daughter, Margaret, he married in 1525. His biography, written in 1535, was published in Paris in 1626. It is remarkable for its simplicity and pathos, and also for its literary style.

Roscoe, William (1753-1831)

English writer. His principal works are *The Life of Lorenzo de' Medici* 1795 and *The Life and Pontificate of Leo the Tenth* 1805. He also wrote the children's classic *The Butterfly's Ball and the Grasshopper's Feast* 1807.

### Roscommon, Wentworth Dillon (1633-1685)

#### 4th Earl of Roscommon

Irish poet and translator. He was born in Dublin, and educated in France at the University of Caen. His works include a poetical *Essay on Translated Verse* (1684), which argued the case for freeing poetry from the constraints of rhyme, and a translation of the Roman writer Horace's *Ars Poetica*.

Rosegger, Peter (1843-1918)

also known as Petri Kettenfeier

Austrian novelist, poet, and dramatist. His novels describing peasant life, for example *Die Schriften des Waldschulmeisters/The Forest Schoolmaster* 1875 and *Waldheimat/The Forest Farm* 1877, are among his finest work. His output was enormous, and his collected works were published in 40 volumes 1914-16.

# Rosenberg, Isaac (1890-1918)

English poet. His poems of World War I reflect the horror of life on the front line, as in 'Louse Hunting', and fleeting philosophical moments, as in 'Break of Day in the Trenches'.

Rosenberg was born in Bristol and trained as an artist at the Slade School in London but, though medically unfit, interrupted his career to enlist in the British army 1915 in order to earn money for his family. Like that of his contemporary Wilfred <u>Owen</u>, Rosenberg's war poetry now ranks with the finest of World War I, although it was largely unpublished during his lifetime. After serving for 20 months at the front, he was killed on the Somme. His *Collected Works* appeared in 1937.

# Rosenthal, Jack Morris (1931-2004)

English dramatist. His warmly humorous television plays, dramatizing real-life stories, wartime nostalgia, and domestic issues, include *The Evacuees* (1975), *Barmitzvah Boy* (1976), *London's Burning* (1986), *Moving Story* (1994), and *Eskimo Day* (1996). He also wrote the film scripts *Lucky Star* (1980) and *Yentl* (1983) in collaboration with Barbra Streisand, and the stage plays *Smash!* (1981) and *Our Gracie* (1983).

Rosenthal was born in Manchester, and educated at Sheffield University. He joined the promotions department of Granada television in 1956, and began his professional writing with over 150 episodes of *Coronation Street* (1961-69). He was a contributor to the influential satirical programme *That Was The Week That Was* (1963), and created the series *The Lovers!* (1970). Other television plays include *Spend*, *Spend*, *Spend* (1977) and *Wide-Eyed and Legless* (1993).

## Rose, Roman de la

see *Roman de la Rose*.

Rosmini, Carlo de (1758-1827)

Italian biographer. He wrote on the life of the teacher Vittorino da Feltre (1801), among others. He also published *Storia di Milano/History of Milan* (1820). Rosmini was born in Rovereto, Italy.

# Ross, Martin

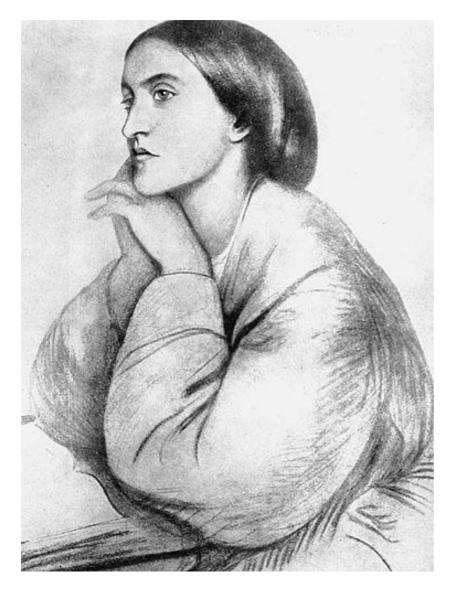
pen-name of Violet Florence Martin, Irish novelist.

# Rossetti, Christina Georgina (1830-1894)

English poet and a devout High Anglican. Her best-known work is *Goblin Market and Other Poems* (1862); among others are *The Prince's Progress* (1866), *Annus Domini* (1874), and *A Pageant* (1881). She was the sister of Dante Gabriel <u>Rossetti</u> and William Michael <u>Rossetti</u>. Her verse expresses unfulfilled spiritual yearning and frustrated love. She was a skilful technician and made use of irregular rhyme and line length.

Christina was the daughter of an Italian patriot, educated at home, and sharing in the youthful writings of her brothers. Her first recorded poem was completed at the age of 12. In 1847 a volume of her verses was privately printed, and in 1850, using the pseudonym Ellen Alleyne, she contributed to the famous but short-lived periodical *The Germ* (which was linked to the artistic theory of the group of painters the Pre-Raphaelite Brotherhood). The sadness that pervades her writing may be due to an unhappy love affair in her youth, and to the ill health she constantly suffered.

### Rossetti



#### (Image © Billie Love)

The poet Christina Rossetti, sister of the famous Pre-Raphaelite artist, Dante Gabrielle Rossetti. Christina's own reputation has soared in recent years. Despite the reclusive piety of her biography, Rossetti's 1862 poem, 'Goblin market', with its daringly explicit and sensual imagery, is regarded by many as a masterpiece of modern sexual radicalism.

# Rossetti, Dante Gabriel (1828-1882)

English painter and poet. He was a founding member of the Pre-Raphaelite Brotherhood (PRB) in 1848. As well as romantic medieval scenes, he produced many idealized portraits of women, including the *Beata Beatrix* (1864). His verse includes 'The Blessed Damozel' (1850). His sister was the poet Christina <u>Rossetti</u>.

He formed the PRB with the painters John Everett Millais and Holman Hunt but produced only two deliberately Pre-Raphaelite pictures, *The Girlhood of Mary Virgin* (1849) and *Ecce Ancilla Domini* (1850), both in the Tate Gallery, London. Afterwards

he refused to exhibit, and developed a broader style and a personal subject matter, related to his poetry. He was a friend of the critic John <u>Ruskin</u>, who helped establish his reputation as a painter, and of William Morris and his wife Jane, who became Rossetti's lover and the subject of much of his work. From 1857 to 1858 he worked on the Arthurian frescoes for the Oxford Union with Edward Burne-Jones and William Morris, and initiated a second phase of Pre-Raphaelitism associated with the Arts and Crafts Movement.

His *Poems* (1870) were recovered from the grave of his wife Elizabeth Siddal (1834-1862), also a painter, whom he had married in 1860, and were attacked as being of 'the fleshly school of poetry'.



### Rossetti

(Image © Billie Love)

A photograph of the English artist Dante Gabriel Rossetti with his mother and sisters, taken by Lewis Carroll in their garden at Cheyne Walk, 1863. All the children of the family became famous in the arts: Christina (far left) was a poet, Maria was a writer, Dante Gabriel was a painter and poet, and William (not pictured) was a literary critic. Of the four, Dante Gabriel and Christina are the best known.

# Rossetti, Gabriele (1783-1854)

Italian poet. In 1824, banished from his country because of his liberal ideas, he

settled in London and became professor of Italian at King's College 1831. Besides patriotic odes and other poems, he wrote three critical studies of Dante. He was the father of Dante Gabriel, Christina, and William Rossetti.

## Rossetti, William Michael (1829-1919)

English writer and art critic. The brother of Christina and Dante Gabriel Rossetti, he wrote memoirs of them 1904 and 1895 respectively, and *Some Reminiscences* 1906. He made a translation in blank verse of Dante's *Inferno* 1865, and wrote *Lives of Some Famous Poets* 1878 and *Life of Keats* 1887.

# Roth, Henry (1906-1995)

US novelist. His first novel, *Call It Sleep* (1934), was rediscovered in the 1960s, when it was hailed as a classic of US literature. In the late 1970s he began work on a novel sequence under the general title of *Mercy of a Rude Stream*. The first volume, *A Star Shines over Mt Morris Park*, appeared in 1994.

# Roth, Joseph (1894-1939)

Austrian novelist and critic. He depicted the decay of the Austrian Empire before 1914 in such novels as *Savoy Hotel* 1924, *Radetsky Marsch/The Radetsky March* 1932, and (after he moved to Paris 1933) *Die hundert Tage/The Hundred Days* 1936. He worked as a journalist during the 1920s in several European capitals. His novels defy easy classification; he stayed aloof from literary groups of his time.

# Roth, Philip (Milton) (1933-)

US novelist. His witty, sharply satirical, and increasingly fantastic novels depict the moral and sexual anxieties of 20th-century Jewish-American life, most notably in *Goodbye Columbus* (1959) and *Portnoy's Complaint* (1969). He was awarded the Pulitzer Prize for his novel *American Pastoral* (1997), the National Medal of Arts in 1998, and the National Book Awards' 2002 medal for Distinguished Contribution to American Letters.

Roth's series of semi-autobiographical novels about a writer, Nathan Zuckerman, consist of *The Ghost Writer* (1979), *Zuckerman Unbound* (1981), *The Anatomy Lesson* (1984), and *The Counterlife* (1993). The novel *Operation Shylock: A Confession* (1993) is a fantasy about his fictional double; and his memoir *Patrimony* (1991) concerns his father's death. Other novels include *The Human Stain* (2000) and *The Dying Animal* (2001).

## Rottingdean

coastal village near Brighton, East Sussex, England; population (2001) 12,500. Rudyard Kipling, the writer, lived here for a time, as did the painter Edward Burne-Jones. Rottingdean has a museum displaying toys and Kipling memorabilia.

# Roumanille, Joseph (1818-1891)

Provençal writer. His poems first appeared in *Li Margarideto/The Easter Daisies* 1847 and were later collected in *Les oubreto* 1860. In 1854, with his pupil Frédéric <u>Mistral</u>, he founded the society of writers known as the Soci dou Félibrige to promote the use of the Provençal language. See also <u>Provençal literature</u>.

# Rousseau, Jean Baptiste (1671-1741)

French poet. He gained a reputation early on for his lyric poetry and satiric epigrams; the latter caused him to be banished from France and he spent the last 30 years of his life in exile.

# Rousseau, Jean-Jacques (1712-1778)

French social philosopher and writer. His book *Du Contrat social/Social Contract* (1762), emphasizing the rights of the people over those of the government, was a significant influence on the French Revolution. In the novel *Emile* (1762), he outlined a new theory of education.

Rousseau was born in Geneva, Switzerland. *Discourses on the Origins of Inequality* (1754) made his name: he denounced civilized society and postulated the paradox of the superiority of the 'noble savage'. In *Social Contract* he argued that government is justified only if sovereignty stays with the people. He thereby rejected representative democracy in favour of direct democracy, modelled on the Greek polis and the Swiss canton, and stated that a government could be legitimately overthrown if it failed to express the general will of the people. *Emile* was written as an example of how to elicit the unspoiled nature and abilities of children, based on natural development and the power of example.

Rousseau's ideas were condemned by philosophers, the clergy, and the public, and he lived in exile in England for a year, being helped by Scottish philosopher David Hume until they fell out. He was a contributor to the <u>Encyclopédie</u> and also wrote operas. *Confessions*, published posthumously in 1782, was a frank account of his occasionally immoral life and was a founding work of autobiography.

# Rowlandson, Mary (c. 1636-1711)

### born Mary White

English-born American colonist. She wrote A Narrative of the Captivity and Restoration of Mrs Mary Rowlandson 1682, a graphic account of her 11 weeks as a captive of the Wampanoag tribe of American Indians in Massachusetts in 1676. She was captured during King Philip's War (1675-76), a bitter struggle between local tribes and English settlers. Her account was one of the most widely read books of the early colonial period in America, being printed over 30 times.

# Rowling, J(oanne) K(athleen) (1965-)

English children's novelist. Her series of novels about Harry Potter, a schoolboy wizard, achieved great critical and commercial success and were made into successful films. The series comprises *Harry Potter and the Philosopher's Stone* (US edition: *Harry Potter and the Sorcerer's Stone*; 1997), *Harry Potter and the Chamber of Secrets* (1998), *Harry Potter and the Prisoner of Azkaban* (1999), *Harry Potter and the Goblet of Fire* (2000), *Harry Potter and the Order of the Phoenix* (2003), and *Harry Potter and the Half-Blood Prince* (2005). Rowling made publishing history when her books hit the top of the (adult) best-seller lists in both the UK and the USA in 2000.

# Rowse, A(Ifred) L(eslie) (1903-1997)

English historian. He published a biography of Shakespeare in 1963, and in *Shakespeare's Sonnets: The Problems Solved* (1973) controversially identified the 'Dark Lady' of Shakespeare's sonnets as Emilia Lanier, half-Italian daughter of a court musician, with whom the Bard is alleged to have had an affair in 1593-95.

His other works include the scholarly *Tudor Cornwall: Portrait of a Society* (1941, 1969) and *Shakespeare the Man* (1973). He was also a minor poet of Celtic themes and traditional forms of verse: he published *A Life: Collected Poems* in 1981.

## Rowson, Susanna (c. 1762-1824)

### born Susanna Haswell

English-born writer, actor, and educator. Rowson spent her life moving between England and the USA. Her novel *Charlotte, A Tale of Truth* was published in the USA

as *Charlotte Temple* in 1794, and it became the first US best-seller. Rowson founded a girls' boarding school near Boston, Massachusetts in 1917.

# Roy, Arundhati (1961-)

Indian writer. Her first novel, *The God of Small Things*, won the Booker Prize in 1997.

Roy was born in Bengal, the child of a Christian mother from Kerala and a Hindu father from Bengal, and grew up in Kerala. She studied architecture at the Delhi School of Architecture, and wrote film scripts including *In Which Annie Gives it Those Ones* (1988) and *Electric Moon* (1992).

Roy was the first Indian woman to win the Booker Prize. Her book has also attracted controversy because of its portrayal of a love affair between a Christian woman and an outcast Hindu man.

## rubáiyát

verse form consisting of four half-lines complete in themselves, with the rhyme scheme aaba. This form has traditionally been used by Persian, Arabic, and Turkish poets. Edward <u>Fitzgerald's</u> translations of the rubáiyát of <u>Omar Khayyám</u> made it familiar to English readers.

# Rucellai, Giovanni (1475-1525)

Italian poet of a patrician Florentine family. He wrote two tragedies in the style of the Greek dramatist Euripides, *Rosamunda* (1515) and *Oreste* (1525), and also a didactic poem on bees, *Le Api* (1539) (edited by his brother Palla), based on the fourth book of the Roman poet Virgil's *Georgics*.

# Rückert, Friedrich (1788-1866)

German poet and orientalist. He wrote lyrical poems, such as *Liebesfrühling* 1844, and patriotic songs, of which *Geharnischte Sonette* appeared in *Deutsche Gedichte* 1814.

Rudel, Jaufre

#### or Geoffroi

French troubadour from Blaye, Gironde, known as the 'prince of Blaye'. Only six of his poems remain, including the verse to his 'distant love' (*amor de lonh*) - there is a tradition that he fell in love with the countess of Tripoli, whom he had never seen, and that, having fallen ill during a crusade, he was landed at Tripoli and died in her arms.

# Rudel, Jaufré (or Geoffroi) (lived 12th century)

### called 'the Prince of Blaye'

French troubadour. Only six of his poems remain, including 'Amor de Ionh/Distant Love'. Rudel was born in Blaye, Gironde, France.

# Rudge, William Edwin (1876-1931)

US printer, publisher, and typographer. After inheriting his father's printing plant, Rudge devoted himself to producing fine, beautifully illustrated works. He worked with designers such as Frederic Goudy and W A Dwiggins. He assembled an excellent library of graphic arts books and specimens of fine printed works.

# Rudolf of Ems (lived 1200-1254)

Austrian epic poet. His works include *Der gute Gerhard* (written about 1220), *Barlaam und Josaphat* (about 1223), *Alexander*, and *Weltchronik*, a history of the world dedicated to the German king Conrad IV. Rudolf's poetry was written for moral instruction; it was popular and often copied.

# Ruiz, Juan (c. 1283-c. 1351)

Spanish poet, known from his clerical office as the Archpriest of Hita. His *El Libro de buen amor/The Book of Good Love* (written 1330-43) consists of narrative poems of varying length, interspersed with lyrical songs, fables, and stories. The poems, written in an autobiographical style, describe both successful and failed love affairs.

# Rukeyser, Muriel (1913-1980)

US poet and writer. Rukeyser taught at Sarah Lawrence and was a social activist and

feminist poet. She also wrote screenplays, and was a dramatist, translator, and a writer of children's books.

### Runeberg, Johan Ludvig (1804-1877)

Finnish poet who wrote in Swedish. His finest works include *Elgskyttarne/The Elk Shooters* 1832 and the epic *Fänrik Ståls Sägner/The Tales of Ensign Stål* 1848-60, about the Swedo-Russian War 1808-09. The latter opens with 'Vårt Land/Our Land', which was adopted as Finland's national anthem.

Other works include the idylls *Hanna* 1836 and *Julqvällen/Christmas Eve* 1841, and the romances *Nadeschda* 1841 and *Kung Fjalar/King Fialar* 1844. Runeberg's poetic realism had great influence both in Finland and Sweden.

## Runyon, (Alfred) Damon (1884-1946)

US journalist. Primarily a sports reporter, his short stories in 'Guys and Dolls' (1932) deal wryly with the seamier side of New York City life in his own invented jargon.

# Rushdie, (Ahmed) Salman (1947-)

British writer. He was born in India of a Muslim family. His book *Midnight's Children* (1981) deals with India from the date of independence and won the Booker Prize. His novel *The Satanic Verses* (1988) (the title refers to verses deleted from the Koran) offended many Muslims with alleged blasphemy. In 1989 the Ayatollah Khomeini of Iran placed a religious *fatwa* on Rushdie, calling for him and his publishers to be killed.

Rushdie was born in Bombay (now Mumbai) and later lived in Pakistan before moving to the UK. His earlier novels in the magic-realist style include *Shame* (1983), set in an imaginary parallel of Pakistan. The furore caused by the publication of *The Satanic Verses* led to the withdrawal of British diplomats from Iran. In India and elsewhere, people were killed in demonstrations against the book and Rushdie was forced to go into hiding.

Other works include *Haroun and the Sea of Stories* (1990; for children), *Imaginary Homelands* (1991; essays and criticism), *East and West* (1994; short stories), and further novels, *The Moor's Last Sigh* (1995), *The Ground Beneath Her Feet* (1999), and *Fury* (2001).

English art and social critic. Much of his finest art criticism appeared in two widely influential works, *Modern Painters* (1843-60) and *The Seven Lamps of Architecture* (1849). He was a keen advocate of painters considered unorthodox at the time, such as J M W Turner and members of the Pre-Raphaelite Brotherhood. His later writings were concerned with social and economic problems.

Ruskin was one of the major figures of 19th-century British intellectual life. Like his contemporaries Thomas <u>Carlyle</u> and Matthew <u>Arnold</u>, he was an outspoken critic of Victorian society, and, like them, called for a renewal of British moral, intellectual, and artistic life. His early works were concerned with architecture and painting: his support both for the Pre-Raphaelite Brotherhood and the Gothic Revival had a profound effect on Victorian art, architecture, and crafts.

From these aesthetic concerns he increasingly drew social and moral views, and from the 1860s he devoted himself to political and economic problems, condemning *laissez-faire* economics, and extolling both the dignity of labour and the moral and aesthetic value of 'craftsmanship'. His beliefs took a practical turn, and he played a leading role in providing education and decent housing for working people.

## Russ, Joanna (1937-)

US feminist writer of science fiction and other genres. Her work challenges gender roles and includes the novel *The Female Man* (1975), *Extra(Ordinary) People* (1984), *Magic Mommas, Trembling Sisters, Puritans and Perverts*, a collection of essays (1985), and the short-story collections *The Zanzibar Cat* (1983) and *The Adventures of Alyx* (1976). Her non-fiction study *How to Suppress Women's Writing* was published in 1983.

She has won both of science fiction's most prestigious awards, the Nebula (for the short story 'When It Changed') in 1972, and the Hugo (for the novella, *Souls*, which is an excerpt from *Extra(Ordinary) People*) in 1983.

# Russell, Charles Edward (1860-1941)

US journalist and writer. Among his published works are *Thomas Chatterton*, *The Marvellous Boy* (1908), *The American Orchestra and Theodore Thomas* (1927, Pulitzer Prize for Biography), and *Haym Salomon and the Revolution* (1930).

# Russell, George William (1867-1935)

### pen-name Æ

Irish poet and essayist. Born at Lurgan, County Armagh, Russell was educated at

Rathmines School and trained as a painter. An ardent nationalist, he helped found the Irish national stage at the Abbey Theatre, Dublin. His poetry includes *Gods of War* (1915) and reflects his interest in mysticism and theosophy. Together with W B <u>Yeats</u>, Russell is regarded as a leading figure in the Irish literary revival of the late 19th and early 20th centuries.

Russell became leader of the circle that published the journal *The Irish Theosophist*, in which his first poems appeared. These were later published as *Homeward: Songs by the Way* (1894) and *The Earth Breath* (1897). These early poems were characterized by great lyrical beauty, and were heavily influenced by his study of Eastern mysticism. Other works include the essay 'Ideals of the New Rural Society' (1911); the poem 'Salutation' (1917), concerning the Easter Rising of 1916; and the poetry collection *Enchantment and Other Poems* (1930).

## Russell, William Clark (1844-1911)

US-born British novelist. He joined the merchant navy and made several voyages to India and Australia, which supplied material for his books. His reputation was established with *The Wreck of the 'Grosvenor'* 1877, and he wrote over 50 other sea stories.

## **Russian literature**

literary works produced in Russia and later in the USSR. Religious works and oral tradition in Slavonic survive from the 11th-17th centuries. The golden age of the 19th century produced the poetry of Aleksandr <u>Pushkin</u> and novels by such literary giants as Fyodor <u>Dostoevsky</u> and Leo <u>Tolstoy</u>, and in drama the innovative genius of Anton <u>Chekhov</u>. During the Soviet era many writers, among them Alexander <u>Solzhenitsyn</u>, were imprisoned or exiled.

### early literature

The earliest known works are sermons and chronicles and the unique prose poem 'Tale of the Armament of Igor', belonging to the period in the 11th and 12th centuries when the centre of literary culture was Kiev. By the close of the 14th century, leadership had passed to Moscow, which was isolated from developments in the West until the 18th century; in this period are the political letters of Ivan the Terrible; the religious writings of the priest Avvakum (1620-1681), who was the first to use vernacular Slavonic (rather than the elaborate Church Slavonic language) in literature; and traditional oral folk poems dealing with legendary and historical heroes, which were collected in the 18th and 19th centuries.

### modern literature

Modern Russian literature begins with Mikhail Lomonosov (1711-1765), who fused

elements of Church Slavonic with colloquial Russian to create an effective written medium. Among the earlier writers, working directly under French influence, were the fabulist (writer of fables) Ivan Krylov (1768-1844) and the historian Nikolai Karamzin (1765-1826).

In the 19th century poetry reached its greatest heights with Pushkin and the tempestuously Byronic Mikhail Lermontov. Typifying the intellectual unrest of the mid-19th century are the works of the prose writer Alexander Herzen (1812-1870), known for his memoirs. Fiction was dominated first by Nikolai Gogol (1809-1852), then by Ivan Turgenev (1818-1883), Ivan Goncharov (1812-1891), Dostoevsky, and Tolstoy. In their wake came Nikolai Leskov (1831-1895), the morbid Vsevolod Garshin (1855-1888), and Vladimir Korolenko (1853-1921.) Maxim Gorky rose above the pervasive pessimism of the 1880s and found followers in Alexander Kuprin (1870-1938) and Ivan Bunin; in contrast are the depressingly negative Leonid Andreyev and Mikhail Artsybashev. To the more mystic school of thought belong the novelist Dmitri Merezhkovsky (1865-1941) and the poet and philosopher Vladimir Soloviev, who moulded the thought of the Symbolist poet Alexander Blok.

### literature of the Soviet era

Many writers left the country at the time of the Revolution, but in the 1920s two groups emerged: the militantly socialist LEF (Left Front of the Arts) led by the Futurist Vladimir Mayakovsky, and the fellow travellers of Lenin's New Economic Policy, including Boris Pilnyak (1894-1938), Boris Pasternak, Alexei Tolstoy, and Ilya Ehrenburg. Literary standards reached a low ebb during the first five-year plan (1928-32), when facts were compulsorily falsified in the effort to fortify socialism, but the novelist Mikhail Sholokhov and the poets Osip Mandelstam, Anna Akhmatova, and Nikolai Tikhonov were notable in this period.

More freedom was allowed by the subsequent realism movement, seen for example in the works of Simonov and the poet Alexander Tvardovsky. During World War II censorship was again severe and some leading Georgian writers disappeared in purges. In the thaw after Stalin's death, Vladimir Dudintsev (1918-98) published his *Not by Bread Alone* (1956), and the journal *Novy Mir/New World* encouraged bolder new writing, but this did not last. Landmark events were the controversy over the award of a Nobel Prize to Pasternak, certain public statements by the poet Yevgeny Yevtushenko, and the imprisonment in 1966 of the novelists Andrei Sinyavsky (1926-97) and Yuli Daniel (1926- ) for smuggling their works abroad for publication. Other writers fled the country, such as Anatoly Kuznetsov, whose novel *The Fire* (1969) obliquely criticized the regime, and Solzhenitsyn, who found a different kind of disillusionment in the West. To evade censorship writers have also resorted to allegory, as in for example Vasili Aksyonov's *The Steel Bird* (1979), which grotesquely satirizes dictatorship. Among those apart from all politics was the nonsense-verse writer Kornei Chukovsky.

With the collapse of the Soviet Union, previously overshadowed or suspect national literatures in regions such as central Asia began to revive.

US writer. His novels depict the economic and emotional struggles of working-class people in failing towns in the northeastern USA, chronicling daily life using realism and humour. These include *Mohawk* (1986), *The Risk Pool* (1988), *Nobody's Fool* (1993; filmed 1994), *Straight Man* (1997), and *Empire Falls* (2001), which won the 2002 Pulitzer Prize for fiction.

# Rustaveli, Shota (c. 1172-c. 1216)

Georgian poet. He was the author of the Georgian national epic *Vekhis-tqaosani/The Man* [or Knight] in the Panther's Skin, which draws on ancient Greek and Eastern philosophy in the celebration of heroism, courtly love, and comradeship.

## Rutebeuf

### or Rustebeuf

French poet. He wrote lyric and satirical verse, saints' lives, fabliaux (comic verses), and a miracle play. His lyric poetry is often self-pitying and occasionally profound, and his satire is largely directed against the mendicant orders and the hypocrisy and failings of clerics in general.

## Rutherford, Mark

pseudonym of English novelist William Hale White.

# Rutilius Namatianus, Claudius (lived 5th century)

Latin poet. 'De Reditu' describes his return to his native Gaul after a long stay in Rome (including the sacking of the city by Alaric). It is superior to the general productions of his age in purity of language and poetical colouring.

# Rydberg, (Abraham) Viktor (1828-1895)

Swedish writer. He wrote historical and ideological novels, such as *Den siste atenaren/The Last of the Athenians* 1859, which attacked the narrow orthodoxy of the church; and his treatise *Bibelns lära om Kristus/The Bible's Teaching about Christ* 1862 was among the first works of modern biblical criticism in Sweden. His

poetry is profound and idealistic.

# Saavedra Fajardo, Diego de (1584-1648)

Spanish writer and diplomat. His political essays include 'Las empresas políticas' 1640 and 'Juicio de artes y sciencias' 1655, published later as a criticism of contemporary literature, *La república literaria* 1670. He also produced the historical work *La corona gótica* 1646.

# Saba, Umberto. (1883-1957)

pseudonym of Umberto Poli

Italian poet. The basic theme of his verse is his love for life, despite experiences of sorrow and loneliness. In *II Canzoniere* 1900-1947 and *Mediterranee* 1950, Saba conveys his feelings with touching simplicity.

# Sabatini, Rafael (1875-1950)

Italian-born British writer. His popular historical novels include *Sea Hawk* 1915, *Scaramouche* 1921, and *Captain Blood* 1922.

# Sábato, Ernesto (1911-)

Argentine novelist and social critic. Trained as a physicist, he was removed from his university post 1945 for opposition to the Perón government. He depicted an existential antihero in his successful novel *El túnel/The Outsider* (1948). Both in essays such as 'Hombres y engranajes/Men and Gears' (1951) and novels such as *Abaddón el exterminador/Abaddón the Exterminator* (1974) he has explored the excesses of scientific rationalism in an overmechanized modern society.

# Sa-Carneiro, Mario de (1890-1916)

Portuguese writer. He developed a sincere and original style that conveys the agonizing despair of his lost ideals and a tragic sense of social inadequacy. Among his works are the novel *A Confissão de Lucio* privately printed 1914 and the poetry collections *Céu em Fogo* 1915 and *Indicios de Ouro* 1937.

# Sacchetti, Franco (c. 1330-c. 1399)

Italian writer. His short-story collection *Trecento Novelle*, first published 1724, was written in imitation of <u>Boccaccio'sDecameron</u>.

# Sacher-Masoch, Leopold von (1836-1895)

Austrian novelist. His books dealt with the sexual pleasure of having pain inflicted on oneself, hence masochism.

Sachs, Hans (1494-1576)

German poet and composer. Working as a master shoemaker in Nürnberg, he composed 4,275 *Meisterlieder/Mastersongs* and figures prominently in Wagner's opera *Die Meistersinger von Nürnberg*.

Sachs, Nelly (1891-1970)

German-born Jewish poet. She shared the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1966 with the Israeli writer, Shmuel Yosef <u>Agnon</u>. Her poetry and plays are filled with Kabbalistic and Hasidic symbolism, and deal mainly with the Nazi persecution of the Jews. *O The Chimneys: Selected Poems*, was published in 1967. Sachs was born in Berlin, Germany. She fled to Sweden in 1940.

Sackville, Thomas (1536-1608)

### Lord Buckhurst, 1st Earl of Dorset

English poet and politician. He collaborated with Thomas Norton on *Ferrex and Porrex* (1561), afterwards called *Gorboduc*. Written in blank verse, this was one of the earliest English tragedies. He also contributed to the influential <u>Mirror for</u> <u>Magistrates</u>, intended as a continuation of John <u>Lydgate's</u>*Fall of Princes*. An influential figure in Elizabeth I's last years, he held offices of Privy Councillor, Lord Steward, and Lord Treasurer.

Sackville-West, Vita (Victoria Mary) (1892-1962)

English writer. Her novels include *The Edwardians* (1930) and *All Passion Spent* (1931); she also wrote the long pastoral poem *The Land* (1926). The fine gardens around her home at Sissinghurst, Kent, were created by her and her husband Harold <u>Nicolson</u>.

Virginia Woolf was a close friend and based the novel Orlando (1928) on her.

## Sade, Donatien Alphonse François, comte de (1740-1814)

#### also known as the Marquis de Sade

French writer. He was imprisoned for sexual offences and finally committed to an asylum. He wrote plays and novels dealing explicitly with a variety of sexual practices, including sadism, deriving pleasure or sexual excitement from inflicting pain on others.

## Sá de Miranda, Francisco (c. 1481-1558)

Portuguese poet and dramatist. Over half of his poetry was written in Castilian. Between 1521 and 1527 he was in Italy. On his return, he introduced Portuguese poets to the Italian hendecasyllabic (11-syllable) line, and to certain Italian poetic forms, in particular the sonnet and the eclogue (a short pastoral poem). He also breathed new life into traditional Portuguese metres by introducing new themes and imagery (as in his five Portuguese Sátiras/Satires). Sá de Miranda wrote two plays, *Comedia dos estrangeiros/The Comedy of the Foreigners* 1559 and *Vilhalpandos/The Boastful Soldiers* 1560. All his works were first printed posthumously.

## S'adi (or Saadi) (c. 1184-c. 1291)

### pen-name of Sheikh Moslih Addin

Persian poet. He was the author of Bustan/Tree-garden and Gulistan/Flower-garden.

# Sa'di (or Sa'adi) (c. 1184-1291)

#### pseudonym of Mushaffir al-Din Muslih al-Din

Persian poet. During his studies at Baghdad, he became interested in Sufism through Shihab al-Din Suhrawardi (died 1234). Sa'adi's book *Gulistan/Rose-garden* is a collection of anecdotes with ethical reflections and maxims, written mainly in prose but interspersed with verse. He also wrote the long poem *Bustan/Orchard*. His

ghazals and many other poems appear in his Kulliyyat/Collected Works.

# Sadleir, Michael (Thomas Harvey) (1888-1957)

English writer and publisher. His commentaries on Anthony Trollope, *Trollope: A Commentary* 1927 and *Trollope: A Bibliography* 1928, were largely responsible for a revival in that author's popularity. He also wrote other works on literary history, the bibliographic survey *Nineteenth Century Fiction* 1951, and novels, including *Fanny by Gaslight* 1940.

# Sadoveanu, Mihail (1880-1961)

Romanian prose writer. The novel *Baltagul/The Hatchet* 1930 is considered his masterpiece. His use of Moldavian dialect gives his work a strong regional flavour and the history and landscape of Romania feature prominently. The novel *Mitrea Cocor* 1949 is an example of socialist realism.

# Sæmundr, Sigfússon (1056-1133)

### called 'the Learned'

Icelandic scholar, chieftain, and priest. He seems to have written a Latin history of the monarchs of Norway, which is now lost but provided a basis for the poem *Nóregs konungatal/List of the Kings of Norway*, composed about 1190 in honour of his grandson Jón Loptsson. Sæmundr is referred to with respect by later historians.

### saga

prose narrative written down in the 11th-13th centuries in Norway and Iceland. The sagas range from family chronicles, such as the *Landnamabok* of Ari (1067-1148), to legendary and anonymous works such as *Njal's Saga* (*c.* 1280). The term 'saga' is generally applied to any long (often heroic) story.

Other sagas include the *Heimskringla* (*c.* 1220-35) of Icelandic writer Snorri Sturluson celebrating Norwegian kings, the *Sturlunga* of Sturla Thordsson (1214-1284), and the legendary and anonymous *Laxdaela Saga* (*c.* 1250) and *Grettla Saga*. 'Family saga' is often used of a novel whose protagonists span two or more generations.

# Sagan, Françoise (1935-2004)

### pen-name of Françoise Quoirez

French writer. Her studies of love relationships include *Bonjour Tristesse/Hello Sadness* (1954), *Un Certain Sourire/A Certain Smile* (1956), *Aimez-vous Brahms?/Do You Like Brahms?* (1959), and *Un sang d'aquarelle/Painting in Blood* (1987). In lucidly dispassionate prose she describes how amoral characters seek to escape solitude in brief liaisons.

Her plays include *Château en Suède/ Castle in Sweden* (1960), and *L'Excès contraire/ Opposite Extremes* (1987).

# Saint-Amant, Marc Antoine Girard de (1594-1661)

French poet. His works include his *Oeuvres* 1629 (enlarged edition 1638); *La Rome ridicule* 1634, described as a 'caprice'; and the epic *Moyse sauvé* 1655. There is a strong vein of humour in much of his verse.

# Saint-Denys-Garneau, Hector de (1912-1943)

French-Canadian poet. His verse, published in a single volume *Regards et jeux dans l'espace* 1937, is representative of the introverted and death-oriented Québécois artist. His *Journal*, covering the years 1935-39, was published in 1954.

# Sainte-Beuve, Charles Augustin (1804-1869)

French critic and historian. A champion of Romanticism, he wrote widely on French literature and culture; his articles appearing in the *Revue des deux mondes/Review of the Two Worlds* from 1831 as *Causeries du lundi/Monday Chats* 1851-62. His outstanding work as a historian was *Port Royal* 1840-59, a study of Jansenism which also includes descriptions of the 17th-century literary figures Corneille, Molière, and Racine.

# Saint-Evremond, Charles de Marguetel de Saint-Denis (1616-1703)

French writer. His often witty expression of the Pyrrhonian viewpoint and the Epicurean ideal of human happiness are illustrated in his essay 'Conversation du maréchal d'Hocquincourt avec le Père Canaye'. His writings include political essays, literary criticism, and the play *La Comédie des académistes* 1643.

# Saint-Exupéry, Antoine Marie Roger de (1900-1944)

French author and pilot. He wrote the autobiographical *Vol de nuit/Night Flight* (1931) and *Terre des hommes/Wind, Sand, and Stars* (1939). His children's book *Le Petit Prince/The Little Prince* (1943) is also an adult allegory.

# Saint-Gelais, Mellin de (1491-1558)

French poet. Together with Clément <u>Marot</u>, he introduced the Italian sonnet into French literature, but was soon eclipsed by Pierre Ronsard and the <u>Pléiade</u> poets. His tragedy *Sophonisbe* was performed in 1559.

# Saint-Lambert, Jean-François, Marquis de (1716-1803)

French poet and philosopher. He was one of the *Encyclopédistes*. His poem *Les Saisons/The Seasons* appeared 1769, based on the poem of the same name by the Scottish poet James Thomson.

# Saint-Pierre, Jacques Henri Bernadin de (1737-1814)

French author. He wrote the sentimental romance Paul et Virginie 1789.

# Saint-Pol-Roux (1861-1940)

### also known as Saint-Pol-Ie-Magnifique; pseudonym of Paul Roux

French symbolist poet. His chief works are the poems in *Les Reposoirs de la procession* 1893 (later enlarged and published in three volumes), and the lyrical drama *La Dame à la faulx* 1899.

# Saintsbury, George Edward Bateman (1845-1933)

English critic and literary historian. He wrote on the history of French and English literature, on the novelists Walter Scott and William Thackeray, and histories of criticism, the English novel, prosody, and prose rhythms. He became widely known for his book on wine, *Notes on a Cellar-Book* 1920.

# Saint-Simon, Louis de Rouvroy, duc de (1675-1755)

French soldier, courtier, and politician. His *Mémoires* 1691-1723 are unrivalled as a description of the French court.

# Saki (1870-1916)

### pen-name of H(ector) H(ugh) Munro

Burmese-born British writer. He produced ingeniously witty and bizarre short stories, often with surprise endings. He also wrote two novels, *The Unbearable Bassington* (1912) and *When William Came* (1913).

# Salinger, J(erome) D(avid) (1919-)

US writer. He wrote the classic novel of mid-20th-century adolescence *The <u>Catcher</u> <u>in the Rye</u> (1951). He developed his lyrical Zen themes in <i>Franny and Zooey* (1961), *Raise High the Roof Beam, Carpenters*, and *Seymour: An Introduction* (1963). Some of his best short stories, such as 'For Esmé - With Love and Squalor', are collected in *Nine Stories* (1953).

# Sallust, Gaius Sallustius Crispus (86-c. 34 BC)

Roman historian. He served under Julius Caesar in Gaul (France) and during the civil war, but retired from public life after a scandal involving his governorship of Africa. He wrote histories of the Catiline conspiracy and the Jugurthine War, as well as a Roman history of which only fragments survive.

# Salmon, André (1881-1969)

French poet, novelist, and art critic. He was one of the leading exponents of cubism in French literature. His volumes of poetry include *Les Féeries* 1907, *Prikas* 1919 (inspired by the Russian revolution), *Créances* 1926, and *Les Etoiles dans l'encrier* 1957. Among his novels are *Tendres canailles* 1913 and *Le Manuscrit troubé dans un chapeau* 1919. He also produced short stories, reminiscences, and books on art, including *L'Art vivant* 1920, *Propos d'atelier, reminiscences* 1922, and a life of Amadeo Modigliani 1957.

# Salutati, Coluccio (1331-1406)

Italian writer and humanist. He became Florentine chancellor 1375 and had considerable influence on the development of humanism in Italy through his belief in the value of literary eloquence in public affairs.

He wrote Latin treatises and letters and also sought to promote the study of Greek.

# Samain, Albert (1858-1900)

French poet. He published a collected edition of his verse under the title *Au Jardin de l'infante* 1893 (enlarged 1914), followed by *Aux Flancs du vase* 1898. He also wrote a poetic drama, *Polythème*, 1906. His verse was influenced by the Symbolist poets.

# Sambucus, Johannes (1531-1584)

### Hungarian János Zsamboky

Hungarian historian and classical scholar. He lived for some time in the Netherlands, where he became friends with Christopher Plantin, who published his popular *Emblemata* 1564. In the same year, he was called to Vienna as imperial historiographer to Maximilian II and, later, Rudolph II.

Sambucus was educated in Germany (by Philip Melanchthon), France, and Italy (graduating in medicine from Padua). His publications also included commentaries on the early Christian theologians known as the Fathers of the Church, and editions of the work of an early Hungarian humanist, Janus Pannonius.

### samizdat

### (Russian 'self-published')

in the USSR and eastern Europe before the 1989 uprisings, written material circulated underground to evade state censorship; for example, reviews of Solzhenitzyn's banned novel *August 1914* (1972).

Sana'i (died *c.* 1150)

#### also known as Abu'l Majd ibn Adam

Persian poet. He was the first great mystical *mathnavi* writer of Persia. His surviving work also comprises a collection of *qasidas* and *ghazals*. Sana'i exerted a considerable influence on later Persian poetry.

In his early life, Sana'i was attached to the court of Bahramshah, Sultan of Ghazna. His *mathnaviGarden of Truth*, containing about 11,000 couplets, is dedicated to Bahramshah.

## Sánchez, Luis Rafael (1936-)

US writer. Prolific essayist, playwright, and novelist. Sánchez has probably the highest international profile of any Puerto Rican writer in the late 20th century. His 1976 novel, *La guaracha del Macho Camacho/Macho Camacho's Beat* was a best-seller both in Spanish and English. In 1979 he was awarded a Guggenheim.

## Sanchez, Sonia (1934-)

US poet and writer. A black nationalist and political activist, she is known for her persuasive and metaphorical poetry, as in 'homegirls and handgrenades' (1984). She has also written plays, short stories, and children's books, and edited African-American anthologies.

# Sand, George (1804-1876)

### pen-name of Amandine Aurore Lucie Dupin

French author. Her prolific literary output was often autobiographical. In 1831 she left her husband after nine years of marriage and, while living in Paris as a writer, had love affairs with Alfred de Musset, Chopin, and others. Her first novel *Indiana* (1832) was a plea for women's right to independence.

# Sandburg, Carl August (1878-1967)

US poet. He worked as a farm labourer and a bricklayer, and his poetry celebrates ordinary life in the USA, as in *Chicago Poems* (1916), *The People, Yes* (1936), and *Complete Poems* (1950; Pulitzer Prize). In free verse, it is reminiscent of Walt Whitman's poetry. Sandburg also wrote a monumental biography of Abraham Lincoln, *Abraham Lincoln: The Prairie Years* (1926; two volumes) and *Abraham Lincoln: The War Years* (1939; four volumes; Pulitzer Prize). *Always the Young* 

Strangers (1953) is his autobiography.

## Sandeau, Jules (1811-1883)

French novelist and dramatist. He collaborated with George <u>Sand</u> on the novel *Rose et Blanche* 1831 and with Emile Augier on *Le Gendre de M Poirier* 1854; he also wrote many novels and plays independently, including *Mademoiselle de la Seiglière* 1848 and *Sacs et parchemins* 1851.

## Sandemose, Aksel (1899-1965)

Danish-born Norwegian novelist. His main works, *En flyktning krysser sitt spor/A Fugitive Crosses His Tracks* 1933 and *Det svundne er en drøm/The Past Is a Dream* 1944, are psychological studies of a murderer.

## Sandoz, Mari(e Susette) (1901-1966)

US writer and historian. Sandoz researched the history of the Sioux Indians, and was an editor of historical periodicals. She is noted as a biographer, novelist, and historian whose work usually drew on the life of the Great Plains. Her best-known non-fiction work is *Cheyenne Autumn* (1953).

## Sandys, John Edwin (1844-1922)

English classical scholar. He devoted himself mainly to Greek oratory and poetry. He was responsible for a number of editions and translations, but his principal work was the *History of Classical Scholarship* 1903-08.

## Sannazaro, Jacopo (1456-1530)

Italian poet and humanist. He wrote verse and prose in both Latin and Italian. His *Arcadia* (1504) was the first pastoral romance in Italian; it established the form that was later to become very popular throughout Europe.

Santillana, Iñigo López de Mendoza, Marques de (1398-1458)

Spanish poet and soldier. His song 'Vaquera de la Finojosa' is found in most Spanish anthologies. He is said to have been the first to write Spanish sonnets in the style of <u>Petrarch</u>, and about 40 of these remain. He also wrote lyrics and didactic poetry, particularly *Centiloquia* 1449, a collection of 100 proverbs in eight-line stanzas.

# Sapper (1888-1937)

### pen-name of (Herman) Cyril McNeile

English author. He wrote the adventure story *Bulldog Drummond* 1920, about a demobilized officer, and its sequels; he was a lieutenant-colonel in the Royal Engineers until 1919.

# Sappho (c. 610-c. 580 BC)

Greek lyric poet. A native of Lesbos and contemporary of the poet <u>Alcaeus</u>, she was famed for her female eroticism (hence lesbianism). The surviving fragments of her poems express a keen sense of loss, and delight in the worship of the goddess Aphrodite.

# Saramago, José (1922-)

Portuguese writer. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1998, the first writer in Portuguese to win it. He has a lyrical style, incorporating fantasy, Portuguese history, and political repression. His novels include *Memorial do convento/Baltasar and Blimunda* (1982), *A jaganda de pedra/The Stone Raft* (1989), *Historia do cerco de Lisboa/The History of the Siege of Lisbon* (1989), *Ensaio sobre a cegueira/Blindness* (1995), and *El hombre duplicado* (2002). His novels have been translated into more than 25 languages.

In 1997 he published *Todos os nomes/AII the Names*, in which he pays homage to the bureaucratic labyrinths of Kafka. Other works include *O ano da morte de Ricardo Reis/The Year of the Death of Ricardo Reis* (1984), *O evangelho segundo Jesus Cristo/The Gospel According to Jesus Christ* (1991), *El cuento de la isla desconocida/ The Tale of the Unknown Island* (1999), *Viagem a Portugal/Journey to Portugal* (1981; trans. 2001), and *La Caverna* (2001).

Sargeson, Frank (1903-1982)

pen-name of Norris Frank Davey

New Zealand writer. His work includes short stories and novels, such as *The Hangover* 1967 and *Man of England Now* 1972.

## Sarolea, Charles (1870-1953)

Belgian scholar and writer. He edited the magazine *Everyman* 1912-17 and wrote widely on the literature of his day and on contemporary political issues.

## Saro-Wiwa, Ken (1931-1995)

Nigerian writer, environmentalist, and political leader of the Ogoni, an ethnic minority occupying Nigeria's oil-rich delta region. In 1991 he founded the Movement for the Survival of the Ogoni People (MOSOP) and began a vigorous international campaign against the environmental damage caused by oil exploitation. Arrested for the murder of four prominent Ogoni activists in May 1994, Saro Wiwa and eight others were executed by the military leadership in November 1995. Nigeria was suspended from the Commonwealth and condemned by the United Nations in a General Assembly vote as a result of the executions.

After reading English at the University of Ibadan, Saro Wiwa taught at the universities of Nsukka and Lagos. In 1968, during the Nigerian civil war, he was appointed administrator of the oil port of Bonny and later became a minister in the newly created Rivers State. After he was dropped in 1973, he concentrated on his writing, his works including *On a Darkling Plain* (1987), a book about the Biafran civil war from the perspective of a minority ethnic group, and the script for a popular television comedy series. In 1994 he won the international Right Livelihood Award for his work for the Ogoni.

## Saroyan, William (1908-1981)

US author. He wrote short stories, such as *The Daring Young Man on the Flying Trapeze* (1934), idealizing the hopes and sentiments of the 'little man'. His plays, preaching a gospel of euphoric enjoyment, include *The Time of Your Life* (Pulitzer Prize; refused) (1939), about eccentricity; *My Heart's in the Highlands* (1939), about an uplifting bugle-player; *Love's Old Sweet Song* (1941), and *Talking to You* (1962).

## Sarraute, Nathalie Ilyanova (1900-1999)

born Nathalie Tchernik

Russian-born French novelist. Her books include Portrait d'un inconnu/Portrait of a

Man Unknown (1948), Les Fruits d'or/The Golden Fruits (1964), and Vous les entendez?/Do You Hear Them? (1972). An exponent of the <u>nouveau roman</u>, Sarraute bypasses plot, character, and style for the half-conscious interaction of minds.

# Sarton, (Eleanor) May (1912-1995)

Belgian-born poet and writer. Sarton is known for her poetry, short stories, novels, and memoirs, such as *Endgame: A Journal of the Seventy-Ninth Year* (1992). She emigrated to the USA as a child.

# Sartre, Jean-Paul (1905-1980)

French author and philosopher. He was a leading proponent of existentialism. He published his first novel, *La Nausée/Nausea* (1937), followed by the trilogy *Les Chemins de la liberté/Roads to Freedom* (1944-45) and many plays, including *Les Mouches/The Flies* (1943), *Huis clos/In Camera* (1944), and *Les Séquestrés d'Altona/The Condemned of Altona* (1960). *L'Etre et le néant/Being and Nothingness* (1943), his first major philosophical work, sets out a radical doctrine of human freedom. In the later work *Critique de la raison dialectique/Critique of Dialectical Reason* (1960) he tried to produce a fusion of existentialism and Marxism. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1964, which he declined.

Sartre was born in Paris, and was the long-time companion of the feminist writer Simone de <u>Beauvoir</u>. During World War II he was a prisoner for nine months, and on his return from Germany joined the Resistance. As a founder of existentialism, he edited its journal *Les Temps modernes/Modern Times*, and expressed its tenets in his novels and plays. According to Sartre, people have to create their own destiny without relying on powers higher than themselves. Awareness of this freedom takes the form of anxiety, and people therefore attempt to flee from awareness into what he terms *mauvaise foi* ('bad faith'); this is the theory he put forward in *L'Etre et le néant*. In *Les Mains sales/Crime passionel* (1948) he attacked aspects of communism while remaining generally sympathetic. In his later work Sartre became more sensitive to the social constraints on people's actions. He refused the Nobel Prize for 'personal reasons', but allegedly changed his mind later, saying he wanted it for the money.

# Sassoon, Siegfried Loraine (1886-1967)

English poet. His anti-war poems which appeared in *The Old Huntsman* (1917), *Counter-Attack* (1918), and later volumes, were begun in the trenches during World War I and express the disillusionment of his generation. His later poetry tended towards the reflective and the spiritual. His three fictionalized autobiographical studies, including *Memoirs of a Fox-Hunting Man* (1928), *Memoirs of an Infantry Officer* (1930), and *Sherston's Progress* (1936), were published together as *The* 

Complete Memoirs of George Sherston (1937).

Educated at Cambridge, Sassoon enlisted in the army in 1915, serving in France and Palestine. Decorated and then wounded in France, he published a manifesto severely criticizing the authorities, 'A Soldier's Declaration' (1917). He was diagnosed as suffering from shell-shock and returned to duty.

He wrote volumes of genuine autobiography, *The Old Century and Seven More Years* (1938), *The Weald of Youth* (1942), and *Siegfried's Journey* (1945). He also wrote a biography of the novelist George Meredith (1948) and *Collected Poems 1908-1956* (second edition) was published in 1961.

### satire

genre of literary or dramatic work that ridicules human pretensions or exposes social evils. Satire is related to parody in its intention to mock, but satire tends to be more subtle and to mock an attitude or a belief, whereas parody tends to mock a particular work (such as a poem) by imitating its style, often with purely comic intent.

The Roman poets <u>Juvenal</u> and <u>Horace</u> wrote <u>Satires</u>, and the form became popular in Europe in the 17th and 18th centuries, used by <u>Voltaire</u> in France and by Alexander <u>Pope</u> and Jonathan <u>Swift</u> in England. Both satire and parody are designed to appeal to the intellect rather than the emotions and both, to be effective, require a knowledge of the original attitude, person, or work that is being mocked (although much satire, such as *Gulliver's Travels* by Swift, can also be enjoyed simply on a literal level).

# Saturnian Verse

early Latin native verse, later ousted by Greek metres. The method of scansion is unknown. About 160 fragments have survived.

# Saunders, Hilary Aidan St George (1898-1951)

English novelist. He collaborated with John Leslie Palmer (1885-1944), a novelist and writer on the theatre, in writing thrillers under the name **Francis Beeding**. During World War II he was attached to the Air Ministry as historian.

Sause-Hall, Frédéric.

real name of French writer Blaise Cendrars.

## Savage, Richard (c. 1697-1742)

English poet and dramatist. Among his poems are 'The Bastard' 1728 and *The Wanderer* 1729, and his plays include *Love in a Veil* 1718 and *The Tragedy of Sir Thomas Overbury* 1723.

## Savile, Henry (1549-1622)

English scholar. His chief works were a collection of early English chronicles, *Rerum Anglicarum Scriptores* (1581), and an edition of St John Chrysostom (1610-13). He also worked on the King James Authorized Version of the Bible.

## Saxo Grammaticus (c. 1150-c. 1220)

Danish historian. His 16-volume *Gesta Danorum*, written in Latin about 1185-1216, is a history of Denmark down to 1185. It includes both factual and mythological material, and contains the story of Amleth, a source of Shakespeare's *Hamlet*.

Drawing on the Icelandic <u>sagas</u>, it incorporates descriptions of mythological figures, old customs, legal rulings, and ancient beliefs alongside authenticated history.

# Sayce, Archibald Henry (1845-1933)

English linguistic scholar. Among his works are *Principles of Comparative Philology* 1874, *The Science of Language* 1880, *The Ancient Empires of the East* 1884, *The Hittites* 1889, and *Babylonians and Assyrians* 1900. He was professor of Assyriology at Oxford University 1891-1919.

# Sayers, Dorothy L(eigh) (1893-1957)

English writer of detective fiction, playwright, and translator. Her books, which feature the detective Lord Peter Wimsey and the heroine Harriet Vane, include classics of the detective fiction genre such as *Strong Poison* (1930), *Murder Must Advertise* (1933), *The Nine Tailors* (1934), and *Gaudy Night* (1935).

# Sayers, Peig (1873-1958)

Irish storyteller and writer. She was born into a storytelling family in Dunquin, County Kerry, a Gaelic-speaking community, and spent most of her life on the Great Blasket Island. Sayers had great powers of recollection, which she used to record numerous folk tales in clear, straightforward language. The stories were collected in *Peig* (1936), her autobiography which she dictated to her son Micheál; and *Machtnamh Sean-Mná/An Old Woman's Reflections* (1939; translated 1962). Her stories draw upon a great store of folklore and have a balance of rhythm, thought, and phrasing which has inspired many writers. Around 360 of Sayers's tales were recorded for the Irish Folklore Commission. The preservation of traditional narratives in the Irish language has left an important body of work for later Gaelic scholars.

# Scaliger, Joseph Justus (1540-1609)

French scholar. He revolutionized the study of ancient chronology in his editions of Manilius (1579) and *Opus De Emendatione Temporum* (1583), and reconstructed the lost *Chronicle of Eusebius* (1606).

# Scarfe, Francis Harold (1911-1986)

English poet and novelist. Poetry collections include *Inscapes* 1940 and *Underworlds* 1950, and his novels include *Single Blessedness* 1951 and *The Unfinished Woman* 1954. He also wrote critical works, among them *Auden and After* 1942.

# Scarlet Pimpernel, The

historical adventure novel by Baroness Orczy published in the UK in 1905. Set in Paris during the Reign of Terror (1793-94), it describes the exploits of a group of Britons, called the League of the Scarlet Pimpernel, and their leader, Sir Percy Blakeney, who saved aristocrats from the Revolution.

# Scarron, Paul (1610-1660)

French comic poet, dramatist, and satirist. He wrote a novel about actors, *Le Roman comique/The Comical Romance* 1651-57. Other works include the burlesque poem *Typhon* 1644; several comedies, including *L'Héritier ridicule* 1648 and *Dom Japhet d'Armenie* 1654; and the much imitated *Le Virgile travesti* 1648-53, a parody of the Latin epic *Aeneid*.

# Scarry, Richard (McClure) (1919-1994)

US children's writer and illustrator. In 1946 he began to write and illustrate brightly coloured and extremely detailed popular books for young children, such as *What Do People Do All Day*? (1968). He was based in New York City until 1969 and then settled in Switzerland.

### scene

in a play, a subdivision of an act, marking a change of location or mood, or, for example, the entrance of an important character. A scene is roughly the equivalent of a chapter in a book. Traditionally changes of scene were marked by changes of props (properties); hence the term 'scenery'.

# Scève, Maurice (c. 1501-c. 1564)

French poet. His works include *Délie, objet de plus haute vertu* (1544), poems on the subject of love; *La Saulsaye* (1547), a shorter pastoral poem; and *Microcosme* (1562), a philosophical poem tracing the history of humans on Earth.

## Scheherazade

the storyteller in the Arabian Nights.

# Schendel, Arthur François Emile van (1874-1946)

Dutch novelist, born in Java. From the dreamy romanticism of his early work, he moved on to express the clash between inevitable circumstances and the romantic ideals of his characters in *Het fregatschip 'Johanna Maria'/The 'Johanna Maria'* 1930, *De Waterman/The Waterman* 1933, and *Een Hollandsch drama/The House in Haarlem* 1935.

# Schiller, Johann Christoph Friedrich von (1759-1805)

German dramatist, poet, and historian. He wrote *Sturm und Drang* ('storm and stress') verse and plays, including the dramatic trilogy *Wallenstein* (1798-99). He was an idealist, and much of his work concerns the aspiration for political freedom and

the avoidance of mediocrity.

After the success of his play *Die Räuber/The Robbers* (1781), he completed the tragedies *Die Verschwörung des Fiesko zu Genua/Fiesco, or, the Genoese Conspiracy* (his first historical drama) and *Kabale und Liebe/Intrigue and Love* (1783). In 1787 he wrote his more mature blank-verse drama *Don Carlos* and the hymn 'An die Freude/Ode to Joy', later used by Beethoven in his ninth symphony. As professor of history at Jena from 1789 he completed a history of the Thirty Years' War and developed a close friendship with <u>Goethe</u>, after early antagonism. His essays on aesthetics include the piece of literary criticism *Über naive und sentimentalische Dichtung/Naive and Sentimental Poetry* (1795-96). Schiller became the foremost German dramatist with his classic dramas *Wallenstein, Maria Stuart* (1800), *Die Jungfrau von Orleans/The Maid of Orleans* (1801), and *Wilhelm Tell/William Tell* (1804).

# Schlegel, (Karl Wilhelm) Friedrich von (1772-1829)

German literary critic. With his brother August, he was a founder of the Romantic movement, and a pioneer in the comparative study of languages.

# Schlegel, August Wilhelm von (1767-1845)

German Romantic author and translator of Shakespeare. His 'Über dramatische Kunst und Literatur/Lectures on Dramatic Art and Literature' 1809-11 broke down the formalism of the old classical criteria of literary composition. Friedrich von Schlegel was his brother.

He played a major role in the development of musical aesthetics of the German idealism. Seven poems by Schlegel were set as songs by Schubert.

# Schlumberger, Jean (1877-1968)

French writer. His novels include *Un Homme heureux/A Happy Man* 1920, *Saint-Saturnin/The Seventh Age* 1931, and *Stéphane le glorieux/Stefan the Proud* 1940. Among his other works are short stories, reminiscences, and a psychological study of Cardinal de Retz.

# Schnitzler, Arthur (1862-1931)

Austrian dramatist. A doctor with an interest in psychiatry, he was known for his psychological dramas exploring egotism, eroticism, and self-deception in Viennese

bourgeois life. He established his reputation with the play *Liebelei/Playing with Love* 1895. *Reigen/Merry-Go-Round* 1897, a cycle of dramatic dialogues depicting lust, caused a scandal when performed 1920 but made a successful French film as *La Ronde* 1950, directed by Max Ophuls. His novel *Leutnant Gustl* 1901 pioneered interior monologue in fiction.

## Schreiner, Olive Emilie Albertina (1855-1920)

South African novelist and supporter of women's rights. Her 1883 novel autobiographical *The Story of an African Farm* (published under the pseudonym Ralph Iron) which describes life on the South African veld, is recognized as the founding text of South African fiction, particularly for its determination to depict its context as the norm rather than the exotic. It was also radical for its presentation of the New Woman in the figure of Lyndall, a proto-feminism that Schreiner later elaborated in her feminist classic *Women and Labour* (1911). Schreiner wrote two further novels (both published posthumously), *Undine* (1928) and *From Man to Man* (1926).

Her other works include *Trooper Peter Halket of Mashonaland* (1897), a fictional attack on the expansionist policies of Cecil Rhodes, collections of allegories, and the discursive *Thoughts on South Africa*.

# Schubart, Christian Friedrich Daniel (1739-1791)

German poet. He wrote blasphemous parodies and satiric poems, for which he was imprisoned 1777-87, and expressed his passionate love of freedom in such works as 'Die Fürstengruft/The Tomb of Princes' 1781, denouncing the misuse of power. His *Samtliche Gedichte/Collected Poems* appeared 1785-86.

# Schwartz, Delmore (1913-1966)

US poet, short-story writer, and critic. He is noted for lyric poetry of intelligent phrasing and subtle tone. His books include *In Dreams Begin Responsibilities* (stories) 1938, *The World is a Wedding* 1948, *Selected Poems (1938-58): Summer Knowledge* 1959, and *Selected Essays* 1970.

He co-edited the influential magazine Partisan Review 1943-55.

## Schwob, Marcel (1867-1905)

French writer. His work is associated with the decadent and symbolist movements.

His volumes of tales include *Le Roi au masque d'or/The King with the Golden Mask* 1892, *Le Livre de Monelle/The Book of Monelle* 1894, *Vies imaginaires/Imaginary Lives* 1896, *La Croisade des enfants/The Children's Crusade* 1896, and *La Lampe de Psyche/Psyche's Lamp* 1903. He also wrote essays and various works on the 15th century.

### Sciascia, Leonardo (1921-1989)

Sicilian novelist. He used the detective novel to explore the hidden workings of Sicilian life, as in *II giorno della civetta/Mafia Vendetta* 1961.

### scolion

short lyrical poem of ancient Greece, intended as a drinking song. Its invention was ascribed to Terpander, while Alcaeus, Sappho, Simonides, and Pindar also composed scolia. The most famous scolion is that of <u>Callistratus</u> in praise of Harmodius and Aristogiton.

## Scott, Alexander (c. 1515-1583)

Scottish poet. His work includes a verse homily to Mary Queen of Scots, some comic pieces, and one or two versified psalms. The rest are passionate or cynical love poems.

## Scott, Duncan Campbell (1862-1947)

Canadian poet and short-story writer. Lifelong service in the department of Indian Affairs gave him a wide knowledge of American Indian traditions and the landscape of the northern wilderness that profoundly influenced his poetry and stories. Such works as 'The Forsaken' (1905) and 'Half-breed Girl' (1906) are among the best-known Canadian poems. *The Poems of Duncan Scott Campbell* was published in 1926. Story collections include *In The Village of Viger* (1896) and *The Witching of Elspie* (1923).

### Scott, Francis Reginald (1899-1985)

Canadian poet. A distinguished academic, constitutional lawyer, and leftist social critic, he was intellectually as well as poetically committed to social justice and regeneration through love and renewed contact with nature. His collections include *Overtures* 1945 and *The Dance is One* 1973. His volume of satirical verse *The Eye of* 

the Needle appeared 1957.

# Scott, Hugh Stowell

real name of English novelist Henry Merriman.

# Scott, Michael (1789-1835)

Scottish writer. He gives a vivid, unsentimental picture of seafaring life in *Tom Cringle's Log*, first published in *Blackwood's Magazine* 1829-31. *The Cruise of the Midge* 1834-35, based on a real incident, was also published serially.

# Scott, Paul Mark (1920-1978)

English novelist. He was the author of *The Raj Quartet* consisting of *The Jewel in the Crown* (1966), *The Day of the Scorpion* (1968), *The Towers of Silence* (1972), and *A Division of the Spoils* (1975), dealing with the British Raj in India. Other novels include *Staying On* (1977), set in post-independence India, for which he won the Booker Prize.

# Scott, Walter (1771-1832)

Scottish novelist and poet. His first works were translations of German ballads and collections of Scottish ballads, which he followed with narrative poems of his own, such as *The Lay of the Last Minstrel* (1805), *Marmion* (1808), and *The Lady of the Lake* (1810). He gained a European reputation for his historical novels such as *Waverley* (1814), *Rob Roy* (1817), *The <u>Heart of Midlothian</u>* (1818), and *Ivanhoe* (1819), all published anonymously.

His last years were marked by frantic writing to pay off his debts, after the bankruptcy of the printing and publishing business of which he was a partner. He was created a baronet in 1820.

Scott exerted a strong influence on the imaginative life of his country. He stimulated an interest in Scottish history and materially affected the literary movement of his time: his unconventional manner of writing and his total freedom from the academic point of view were largely instrumental in arousing the French Romantic movement which produced such writers as Victor Hugo, Alfred de Musset, and Théophile Gautier, and such painters as Corot and Millet. Scott was also the creator of the historical novel, combining naturalness and realism with the historical and romantic element of adventure and the marvels of superstition. His influence on

Honoré de Balzac was acknowledged.

# Scottish Gaelic literature

the earliest examples of Scottish Gaelic prose belong to the period 1000-1150, but the most significant early original composition is the history of the MacDonalds in the Red and Black Books at Clanranald. The first printed book in Scottish Gaelic was a translation of Knox's Prayer Book (1567). Prose Gaelic is at its best in the folk tales, proverbs, and essays by writers such as Norman MacLeod in the 19th and Donald Lamont in the 20th century.

Scottish Gaelic poetry falls into two main categories. The older, syllabic verse was composed by professional bards. The chief sources of our knowledge of this are the Book of the Dean of Lismore (16th century), which is also the main early source for the Ossianic ballads; the panegyrics in the Books of Clanranald; and the Fernaig manuscript. Modern Scottish Gaelic stressed poetry began in the 17th century but reached its zenith during the Jacobite period with Alexander MacDonald, Duncan Macintyre, Rob Donn, and Dugald Buchanan. Only William Livingstone (1808-1870) kept alive the old nationalistic spirit in the 19th century. During and after World War II a new school emerged, including Somhairle MacGilleathain, George Campbell-Hay, and Ruaraidh MacThómais.

# Scribe, Augustin Eugène (1791-1861)

French dramatist. He achieved recognition with *Une Nuit de la garde nationale/ Night of the National Guard* 1815, and with numerous assistants produced many plays of technical merit but little profundity, including *Bertrand et Raton/The School for Politicians* 1833.

### script

in drama, the written text or draft of a film, play, or radio or television broadcast, as used by the actors or performers.

# Scudéry, Magdeleine de (1607-1701)

French novelist. She wrote long romances on the theme of love and was the hostess of a brilliant salon in Paris from about 1650. Her works include *Artamène*, *ou le Grand Cyrus/Artamenes*, *or the Grand Cyrus* 1648-53, *Clélie/Clelia* 1654-61, and *Almahide* 1661-63.

She livened up her stories with abductions, always delicately described, and included thinly disguised portraits of contemporary figures.

### Seagull, The

play by Anton <u>Chekhov</u>, first produced in Russia 1896. It studies the jealousy between a mother and her son, the son's vain search for identity, and his ultimate suicide.

# Sears, Minnie Earl (1873-1933)

US cataloguer and bibliographer. After working at the New York Public Library, 1914-20, Sears joined the H W Wilson Company and published her *List of Subject Headings for Small Libraries*. At the sixth edition it was retitled the *Sears List of Subject Headings*, and it remains in widespread use. She also edited the American Library Association's *Standard Catalog for Public Libraries* (1927-33).

# Secret Diary of Adrian Mole Aged 13 3/4, The

best-selling novel by English author Sue <u>Townsend</u>, published in 1982, in which the fictional teenager Adrian Mole reveals his innermost thoughts and feelings about the problems of his existence, from spots to his parents' marriage. The book was adapted for the stage in 1985 and has had several sequels including *The Growing Pains of Adrian Mole* (1984).

## Secret Garden, The

novel for children by Frances Hodgson <u>Burnett</u> first published in the USA in 1911. Mary, a spoilt, sickly orphan, is sent from India to England to live at the house of her uncle, a crippled recluse. Her cultivation of the secret garden from a forgotten wilderness helps to transform her health and outlook and leads her to effect a similar change in her cousin Colin, who believed himself to be an invalid.

## Secundus, Johannes (1511-1536)

### pseudonym of Jan Nicolai Everaerts, or Everts

Dutch humanist poet. Amongst the range of Latin poetry that he wrote in his career, the most influential were his love lyrics *Basia/Kisses* which worked off the classical

poets Horace and Catullus.

### Sedgwick, Catherine Maria (1789-1867)

US writer. Sedgwick wrote several moral guidance books. The most popular American female author of her time, she was held in high regard by such contemporaries as Nathaniel Hawthorne.

### Sedley, Charles (1639-1701)

English poet and dramatist. He wrote five plays, including the comedies *The Mulberry Garden* 1668 and *Bellamira* 1687, and the tragedy *Antony and Cleopatra* 1677; and poems and songs, including 'Phyllis is my only joy'.

### Seeger, Alan (1888-1916)

US soldier and poet. His *Collected Poems* 1916 contain the war poem 'I have a rendezvous with death'.

### Seeley, John Robert (1834-1895)

English historian. In 1865 his *Ecce Homo*, a study of Christ as a man, caused much controversy. Among his historical works are *The Expansion of England in the Eighteenth Century* 1883 and *The Growth of British Foreign Policy* 1895.

Seferis, George (1900-1971)

#### adopted name of Georgios Stylianou Seferiades

Greek poet and diplomat. Although his poems are modernist in technique, drawing on Symbolism and surrealism, they are steeped in a classical past and have a spare and elegant clarity. He published his first volume, *Turning Point* (1931) and his *Collected Poems* (1950). He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1963.

He was ambassador to Lebanon 1953-57 and to the UK 1957-62.

# Segalen, Victor (1878-1919)

French writer. His travels in the Far East as a ship's doctor influenced his writing, which includes *Stèles/Stelae* 1922 (poems in the Chinese manner) and such novels as *Les Immémoriaux/The Ancients* 1907 (set in Tahiti) and *René Leys* 1923 (set in China).

# Seghers, Anna (1900-1983)

#### pseudonym of Netty Radvanyi

German writer. Her political novels are concerned with social and economic exploitation. *Das siebte Kreuz/The Seventh Cross* 1942 is an account of the workers' resistance movement during the Third Reich, and *Die Entscheidung/The Separation* 1959 concerns the division of post-war Germany.

She made her breakthrough with *Der Aufstand der Fischer von St Barbara/The Revolt of the Fishermen of Santa Barbara* 1928 and joined the Communist Party. Her years in exile from the Nazis were spent in Mexico, where she continued to write political works.

# Seifert, Jaroslav (1901-1986)

Czech poet. He won state prizes under the communists, but became an original member of the Charter 77 human-rights movement. His works include *Mozart in Prague* (1970), *Umbrella from Piccadilly* (1978), and *The Prague Column* (1979). He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1984.

# Selby, Hubert, Jr (1928-2004)

US writer. His acclaimed first novel, *Last Exit to Brooklyn* (1964), vividly depicted urban vice and violence; it became the subject of obscenity trials in the UK in 1966 and 1967. Similar portrayals followed in his later novels *The Room* (1971), *The Demon* (1976), *Requiem for a Dream* (1978) - considered by many to be his masterpiece - and *The Willow Tree* (1998).

*Last Exit to Brooklyn* and *Requiem for a Dream* were adapted into full-length films in 1989 and 2000 respectively. Selby appeared in cameos in both films. He wrote the screenplay for *Fear X* (2003). He also published a collection of stories, *Song of the Silent Snow* (1986), and the novel *Waiting Period* (2002).

# Sembène Ousmane (1923-)

Senegalese film director, producer, and writer. The first African film-maker to achieve international recognition, he directed a number of original works, such as *Borom Sarret* (1963), *La Noire de.../Black Girl* (1966), *Xala* (1974), *Ceddo/The People* (1977), and *Camp de Thiaroye* (1988). His films, predominantly in the realist style, explore indigenous cultures, political upheaval, and the isolating effects of colonialism.

Already an established novelist, he studied film in 1960. His novels, written in French, include *Le Docker noir* (1956), about his experiences as a union leader in Marseille, *Les Bouts de bois/God's Bits of Wood* (1960), *Le Mandat/The Money Order* (1966), and *Xala* (1974), the last two of which he made into films (1968 and 1975). His works have served to inspire fellow film-makers throughout the African continent.

# Semonides (or Simonides) (lived 7th century BC)

Greek poet. Born at Samos, he founded a colony on the island of Amorgos. What little of his work survives includes a satirical poem extending the misogyny of Hesiod's myth of Pandora, and a reflection on the unhappy life of men.

## Sempill, Francis Sempill of Beltrees (c. 1616-1682)

Scottish poet. He tried to restore the fortunes of his family, ruined by the English Civil War, and the poem *The Banishment of Poverty* is an allegory of his struggles. He was the son of the poet Robert Sempill.

## Sempill, James Sempill of Beltrees (1566-1625)

Scottish poet. He served as ambassador to England and France and satirized the Roman Catholic Church in his lusty *Packman's Pater Noster* (printed before 1640). He was the father of the poet Robert Sempill.

## Sempill, Robert (c. 1530-1595)

Scottish satirical poet. He wrote *The Sege of the Castel of Edinburgh* in 1573 (first printed 1724), in which he probably took part, and coarsely satirical poems on the life of his times, such as *The Regentis Tragedie* (1570).

# Sempill, Robert Sempill of Beltrees (c. 1595-1665)

Scottish poet. He was a Royalist, and his ballad 'The Life and Death of Habbie Simson, Piper of Kibarchan' 1640 provides a picture of contemporary life just before the English Civil War.

## Sendak, Maurice (Bernard) (1928-)

US writer and book illustrator. His children's books with their deliberately arch illustrations include *Where the Wild Things Are* (1963), *In the Night Kitchen* (1970), and *Outside Over There* (1981).

### Seneca, Lucius Annaeus (c. 4 BC-ADC. 65)

Roman Stoic playwright, author of essays and nine tragedies. He was tutor to the future emperor Nero but lost favour after Nero's accession to the throne and was ordered to commit suicide. His tragedies were accepted as classical models by 16th-century dramatists.

## Seneca, Marcus (Lucius) Annaeus (c. 55 BC-AD 41)

Latin rhetorician. Born at Cordoba, he visited Rome in the early years of Augustus, but returned to Spain and married Helvia, by whom he had three sons: the philosopher L Annaeus Seneca, L Annaeus Mela (father of the poet Lucan), and M Annaeus Novatus. He subsequently paid another visit to Rome and he died there. His extant writing consists of a book of *Suasoriae* (extracts from celebrated rhetoricians on standard school themes), and five of ten books of *Controversiae* (imaginary legal cases).

# Senghor, Léopold Sédar (1906-2001)

Senegalese politician and writer, the first president of independent Senegal 1960-80. Previously he was Senegalese deputy to the French national assembly 1946-58, and founder of the Senegalese Progressive Union. He was also a well-known poet and a founder of *négritude*, a black literary and philosophical movement.

Senghor studied at the Sorbonne in Paris 1935-39 (the first West African to complete the *agrégation* there), where he was a strong advocate of pride in his native Africa, developing the literary movement known as *négritude*, celebrating black identity, and lamenting the baneful impact of European culture on traditional black culture.

### sensibility

in the 18th century, the capacity to identify with and feel sympathy for the suffering of others. This quality was extolled by the 3rd Earl of Shaftesbury, a philosopher, as well as by writers of fiction, and was lampooned in Jane <u>Austen</u>'s *Sense and Sensibility* 1811.

### Serao, Matilda (1856-1927)

Italian novelist. Her works describe humble Neapolitan life, as in *II ventre di Napoli* 1884, *II paese di cuccagna* 1891, and in the short story 'Trenta per cento' 1889. Other novels include *Fantasia* 1886 and *Suor Giovanna della Croce* 1901.

### Service, Robert William (1874-1958)

Canadian author. He wrote ballads of the Yukon in the days of the Gold Rush, for example *The Shooting of Dan McGrew* 1907.

#### set

in drama, the scenery and props (properties, the movable objects used by the actors or decorating the set).

### Seth, Vikram (1952-)

Indian poet and novelist. He is most famous for his novel *A Suitable Boy*, published in 1993, an epic tale set during Indian independence. His novel *An Equal Music* was published in 1999.

### Seton, Ernest Thompson (1860-1946)

#### born Ernest Seton Thompson

Canadian author and naturalist. He illustrated his own books with drawings of animals. He was the founder of the Woodcraft Folk youth movement, a non-religious alternative to the scouting movement.

# Settle, Elkanah (1648-1724)

English poet and dramatist. The success of his play *The Empress of Morocco* 1673 annoyed the poet laureate John <u>Dryden</u>, who satirized Settle as 'Doeg' in the second part of *Absalom and Achitophel* 1682. Settle retorted the same year with the pamphlet *Absalom Senior*, or *Achitophel Transpros'd*.

He also wrote the play *Cambyses* 1667 and *Reflections on Several of Mr Dryden's Plays* 1687.

### Seuss, Dr (1904-1991)

#### pseudonym of Theodor Seuss Geisel

US author. He wrote children's books including *And to Think That I Saw It on Mulberry Street* (1937) and the classic *Horton Hatches the Egg* (1940). After winning Academy Awards for documentary films in 1946 and 1947, he returned to writing children's books, including *Horton Hears a Who* (1954) and *The Cat in the Hat* (1957).

Born in Springfield, Massachusetts, and educated at Dartmouth, Geisel began his career as a cartoonist and illustrator. He later wrote books for adults, including *Oh*, *the Places You'll Go!* (1989).

### Seven Wise Masters, The

series of stories, said to be of Eastern origin. A Roman prince remains silent by decree of the stars when every day for a week his stepmother tells the emperor a story to poison his mind against the prince. Seven sages provide the antidote by each telling the emperor a story. Finally the prince is free to talk and clears himself.

### Sévigné, Marie de Rabutin-Chantal, Marquise de Sévigné (1626-1696)

French writer. In her letters to her daughter, the comtesse de Grignan, she paints a vivid picture of contemporary customs and events.

#### called 'the Swan of Lichfield'

English writer. She wrote romantic poems, including an 'Elegy on Captain Cook' (1780); they were bequeathed to the novelist Walter Scott, who edited them in *Poetical Works* (1810). Among her prose works was *Memoir of Dr Darwin* (1804).

### Sewell, Anna (1820-1878)

English writer. Her only published work, the novel <u>Black Beauty</u> (1877), tells the life story of a horse. It was a best-seller and became a children's classic.

### Sexton, Anne (1928-1974)

### born Anne Harvey

US poet. She studied with Robert <u>Lowell</u> and wrote similarly confessional poetry, as in *To Bedlam and Part Way Back* (1960) and *All My Pretty Ones* (1962). She committed suicide, and her *Complete Poems* appeared posthumously (1981).

### Shabbi, Abu'l-Qasim al- (1909-1934)

Tunisian poet. He gained a reputation as one of the finest Arabic poets of his time as a contributor to *Apollo* magazine (see <u>Apollo poets</u>). His verse was collected as *Songs of Life* 1955.

Shabbi has been customarily described as a Romantic poet, but the intensity of his vision transcends his personal experience and problems to encompass his society and humanity at large.

## Shadwell, Thomas (c. 1642-1692)

English dramatist and poet. His plays include *Epsom-Wells* (1672) and *Bury-Fair* (1689). He was involved in a violent feud with the poet <u>Dryden</u>, whom he attacked in *The Medal of John Bayes* (1682) (believed to be his work). Shadwell became poet laureate in 1689.

Shah, Eddy (Selim Jehane) (1944-)

English newspaper magnate and novelist. In 1983 he grabbed national attention by defeating a protracted strike by the printing unions over the use of non-union workers in his Messenger group of newspapers in Warrington. He launched *Today* in 1986, but his subsequent foundation, the *Post* (1988), collapsed after a few months. His novels include *Ring of Red Roses* (1991) and *The Lucy Ghosts* (1992).

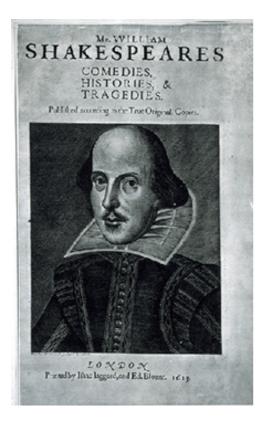
Shah launched the free newspapers the *Sale and Altrincham Messenger* in 1974, and the *Stockport Messenger* in 1977. His victory over the printing unions in 1983 arguably laid the foundation for the subsequent revolution in working practices in Fleet Street. He was chairman and chief executive of *Today* 1986-88.

## Shakespeare, William (1564-1616)

English dramatist and poet. He is considered the greatest English dramatist. His plays, written in blank verse with some prose, can be broadly divided into comedies, including A <u>Midsummer Night's Dream</u>, The Comedy of Errors, As You Like It, Much Ado About Nothing, and Measure For Measure; historical plays, such as Henry VI (in three parts), Richard III, and Henry IV (in two parts), which often show cynical political wisdom; and tragedies, including <u>Romeo and Juliet</u>, <u>Hamlet</u>, <u>Othello</u>, <u>King</u> <u>Lear</u>, and <u>Macbeth</u>. He also wrote numerous <u>sonnets</u> and longer poetry, often for wealthy patrons.

Born in Stratford-upon-Avon, the son of a maker of gloves, he was educated at the grammar school, and in 1582 married Anne <u>Hathaway</u>. They had a daughter, Susanna in 1583, and in 1585 twins, Hamnet (who died in 1596) and Judith. By 1592 Shakespeare was established in London as an actor and a dramatist, and from 1594 he was an important member of the Lord Chamberlain's Company of actors. In 1598 the Company tore down their regular playhouse, the Theatre, and used the timber to build the Globe Theatre in Southwark, London. Shakespeare became a 'sharer' in the venture, which entitled him to a percentage of the profits. In 1603 the Company became the King's Men. By this time Shakespeare was the leading playwright of the company and one of its business directors; he also continued to act. He retired to Stratford in about 1610, where he died on 23 April 1616. He was buried in the chancel of Holy Trinity, Stratford.

### **Shakespeare**



(Image © Philip Sauvain Picture Collection)

English dramatist and poet William Shakespeare. This portrait appeared on the title page of the edition of his works published in 1623.

# Shapcott, Jo (1953-)

English poet. She is the first person to have won the National Poetry Competition twice (1990 and 1991). Her first collection of verse, *Electroplating the Baby* (1988) won the Commonwealth Prize. *Phrase Book* (1992) further established her as an innovative poet. *My Life Asleep* (1998) won the Forward Poetry Prize.

Born in London, Shapcott spent most of her childhood in the USA and Ireland, where she studied at Trinity College, Dublin. She continued there as a foundation scholar 1974-79 and went on to study singing and music theory at the College of Music in Dublin. As a postgraduate, Shapcott studied at Oxford and Harvard universities. She also holds a diploma in education from Bristol University, England. She co-edited the anthology *Emergency Kit* (1996) and became poet-in-residence at the Proms in 2000, where the themes of belief, youth, and age were explored through poetry and music.

# Shapiro, Karl (Jay) (1913-2000)

US poet, writer, and critic. He is noted for the sparkling wit of his poetry and for his criticism of Ezra Pound and T S Eliot. His conception of the Jew as a prototype of the modern human informed his striking *V Letter and Other Poems* (1945; Pulitzer

Prize) and *Poems of a Jew* (1958). Later volumes include *Adult Bookstore* (1976) and *The Younger Son* (1988).

Born in Baltimore, Maryland, Shapiro taught at many institutions, notably the University of California, Davis. From 1950-60, he edited literary periodicals. He also wrote a novel, and was liked with the critical movement <u>New Criticism</u>.

### Sharp, William (1855-1905)

Scottish novelist. His romantic tales published under the pseudonym Fiona Macleod were reminiscent of <u>Ossian</u> and played an important part in the Celtic revival. They include *Pharais, a Romance of the Isles* 1894, *The Mountain Lovers* 1895, and *The Sin-Eater and Other Tales* 1895.

Sharpe, Tom (1928-)

born Thomas Ridley Sharpe

English satirical novelist. Sharpe uses satire and farcical plots to explore the eccentricities and social manners of the English middle classes, in works such as *Porterhouse Blue* (1973), *Blott on the Landscape* (1975), *Wilt* (1976), *Vintage Stuff* (1982), *Wilt On High* (1984), *The Midden* (1996), and *Wilt in Nowhere* (2004). Many of his works have been successfully adapted for television.

## Shaw, Henry Wheeler

pen-name Josh Billings

US writer. See Billings, Josh.

## Shawqi, Ahmad (1868-1932)

Egyptian poet. His poetry is collected into four volumes and known as the *Shawqiyyat*. He also wrote some of the earliest drama in literary Arabic. He has been called Amir al-Shu'ara' ('Prince of Poets').

Shawqi's early career was spent under the patronage of the khedive (viceroy) 'Abbas II, in the manner of a court poet in the old Arabic tradition. This experience is reflected in the style and themes of his work from this period. He was exiled from Egypt during World War I, and returned as an enthusiastic supporter of Egyptian nationalism.

# Shchedrin, N (1826-1889)

#### pen-name of Mikhail Evgrafovich Saltykov

Russian writer. His works include *Fables* 1884-85, in which he depicts misplaced 'good intentions', and the novel *The Golovlevs* 1880. He was a satirist of pessimistic outlook.

He was exiled for seven years for an early story that proved too liberal for the authorities, but later held official posts.

# Sheehan, Patrick Augustine (1852-1913)

Irish novelist. His best-known work, *My New Curate* 1900, contains sketches of the life of a typical Irish priest.

## Sheldon, Charles Monroe (1857-1946)

US clergyman and writer. His religious novel *In His Steps* 1896 was a best-seller. He was editor of the *Christian Herald* 1920-25.

## Shelley, Mary Wollstonecraft (1797-1851)

#### born Mary Godwin

English writer. She is best known as the author of the <u>gothic novel</u> *Frankenstein* (1818), which is considered to be the origin of modern science fiction, and her other novels include *The Last Man* (1826) and *Valperga* (1823).

She was the daughter of the English writers Mary Wollstonecraft and William <u>Godwin</u>. Her mother died shortly after her birth. In 1814 she eloped to Switzerland with the English poet Percy Bysshe <u>Shelley</u>, whom she married in 1816 on the death of his first wife Harriet. All but one of their children died in infancy. While abroad, they stayed with English poet Lord <u>Byron</u>. Following her husband's tragic drowning, Mary returned to England in 1823. She jealously preserved his memory and edited his poems, letters, and essays between 1830 and 1840.

# Shelley, Percy Bysshe (1792-1822)

English lyric poet and critic. He was a commanding figure of the artistic movement of Romanticism. His skill in poetic form and metre and his intellectual capacity and searching mind were clouded by his rebellious nature and his notorious moral nonconformity. He fought against religion and for political freedom. This is reflected in his early poems such as *Queen Mab* (1813). He later wrote tragedies including *The Cenci* (1818), lyric dramas such as *Prometheus Unbound* (1820), and lyric poems such as 'Ode to the West Wind'.

Born near Horsham, Sussex, he was educated at Eton and University College, Oxford, where his collaboration in a pamphlet The Necessity of Atheism (1811) caused his expulsion. While living in London he fell in love with 16-year-old Harriet Westbrook, whom he married in 1811. He visited Ireland and Wales, writing pamphlets defending vegetarianism and political freedom, and in 1813 published privately Queen Mab, a poem with political freedom as its theme. Meanwhile he had become estranged from his wife and in 1814 left England with the English writer Mary Wollstonecraft Godwin, whom he married after Harriet drowned herself in 1816 (see Mary Wollstonecraft Shelley). Alastor, written in 1815, was followed by the epic The *Revolt of Islam.* By 1818 Shelley was living in Italy where he produced *The Cenci*; the satire on English poet William Wordsworth, Peter Bell the Third (1819); and *Prometheus Unbound*. Other works of the period are 'Ode to the West Wind' (1819); 'The Cloud' and 'The Skylark' (both 1820); 'The Sensitive Plant' and 'The Witch of Atlas'; 'Epipsychidion' and, on the death of the English poet John Keats, 'Adonais' (1821); the lyric drama Hellas (1822); and the prose Defence of Poetry (1821). In 1816, the Shelleys stayed beside Lake Geneva, Italy, with English writer Lord Byron, and their friendship continued until Percy Shelley's death by drowning while sailing in Italy in July 1822. His ashes were buried in Rome.

## Shenshin

adopted name of the Russian poet Afanasi Fet.

## Shenstone, William (1714-1763)

English poet and essayist. His works include *Poems upon Various Occasions* 1737, *The Judgement of Horatio* 1741, the Spenserian *The Schoolmistress* 1742, elegies, odes, songs, and ballads.

## **Shepherd Tony**

pseudonym of English writer Anthony <u>Munday</u>, attached to some of his lyrics published in *England's Helicon* (1600).

### Sherwood, Mary Martha (1775-1851)

#### born Mary Martha Butt

English writer. She wrote *The History of the Fairchild Family: or, The Child's Manual* 1818, which became a children's classic. Other works include *Susan Gray* 1802 and *Little Henry and his Bearer* 1814.

## Shevchenko, Taras Hryhorovych (1814-1861)

Ukrainian national poet. Born a serf, he was freed (for 2,500 roubles) in St Petersburg, where he then studied art. His sensationally successful first collection *Kobzar/Folk Minstrel* 1840 romantically glorified the Ukraine's Cossack past. It was followed by the long poem *Haidamaky/The Haidamaks* 1841. His protest against injustice and tsarist oppression in the Ukraine led to a ban on publication of his poems and eventual exile and penal servitude for subversive activity.

### Shields, Carol (1935-2003)

US-born Canadian writer. Her book *The Stone Diaries* (1993) was short-listed for the Booker Prize and won the Pulitzer Prize in 1993. Her novel *Larry's Party* (1997) won the Orange Prize.

## Shimazaki, Toson (1872-1943)

Japanese poet and novelist. His work explores the clash of old and new values in rapidly modernizing Japan. He published romantic poetry in the 1890s and *Hakai/ Broken Commandment* 1906, the first Japanese naturalist novel, as well as the confessional novel *Ie/The House* 1910-11. *Yoake mae/Before the Dawn* 1935 is an account of the struggle for the restoration of the Empire 1862 from the perspective of a rural community.

## Shirley, James (1596-1666)

English dramatist and poet. His plays were derivative and reflected the tastes of Charles I's court, but his more interesting comedies anticipated Restoration comedy. They include *The Witty Fair One* 1632, *The Gamester* 1633, and *The Lady of Pleasure* 1635.

His tragedies include *The Traitor* 1631 and *The Cardinal* 1641. He also wrote many tragicomedies and romantic dramas, as well as masques and poems.

## Shlonsky, Abraham (1900-1973)

Israeli poet, born in Ukraine. He settled in Palestine 1921 and there edited journals and made translations into Hebrew. He was one of the first in Israel to adopt <u>Symbolism</u>. His poetry is among the most lively in the Hebrew language, and concerns the development of his new land and its people's attitudes.

### Sholokhov, Mikhail Aleksandrovich (1905-1984)

Russian novelist. His *And Quiet Flows the Don* (1926-40), hailed in the Soviet Union as a masterpiece of socialist realism, depicts the Don Cossacks through World War I and the Russian Revolution. His authorship of the novel was challenged by Alexander <u>Solzhenitsyn</u>. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1965.

### Shores, Louis (1904-1981)

US librarian. In 1933 Shores became dean of the library school at George Peabody College for Teachers in Nashville, Tennessee, where he received his PhD and pioneered courses in audio-visual materials. Later, he worked concurrently as dean of the library school at Florida State University. 1941-67, and as consultant to *Collier's Encyclopedia*.

## Shorter, Clement King (1857-1926)

British journalist and critic. He was an important influence on the English pictorial press. In 1891 he became editor of the *Illustrated London News*. In 1893 he founded and edited the *Sketch*, and 1900-26 was editor of the *Sphere*.

Shorter was born in London, England. He was educated at Birkbeck Institution. From 1877-90 he worked in Somerset House. His critical works include *The Brontës and their Circle* (1896), *Immortal Memories* (1907), *The Brontës: Life and Letters* (1908), *George Borrow and his Circle* (1913), and two books on Napoleon.

Shorthouse, Joseph Henry (1834-1903)

English novelist. His historical novel *John Inglesant*, *A Romance* 1881 captured the High Church feeling of the day.

Later novels, including *The Little Schoolmaster Mark* 1883, *Sir Percival* 1886, and *The Countess Eve* 1888, were less successful.

### short story

short work of prose fiction, usually consisting of between 500 and 10,000 words, which typically either sets up and resolves a single narrative point or depicts a mood or an atmosphere.

The form has a long history and examples of its popularity and success include *Aesop's Fables* and the tales of *The Thousand and One Nights*. It emerged as a literary genre in the 19th century, fostered by the rise of the novel and the growth of periodicals for leisure reading. Edgar Allan <u>Poe's Tales of the Grotesque and</u> *Arabesque* was very influential in both the USA and Europe and demonstrated the effectiveness of the form for literary Romanticism; abnormal sensation and heightened experience could be explained most intensely within a brief narrative. In Germany, Heinrich von Kleist and E T A <u>Hoffmann</u> used the fabulous as a means of introducing philosophical and metaphysical ideas. In contrast, Prosper Mérimée pioneered the short story as an effective form for realistic fiction. He perfected a detached, observational style which is shared to some degree by Guy de <u>Maupassant</u>, for whom the short story presented an opportunity to capture one particularly illuminating or revealing moment in the lives of ordinary people.

The short story form encourages economy of setting and concise narration. It must be succinct in presenting its central intention and the plot cannot be elaborate. Within these constraints, the focus may be primarily the events (as with Poe's stories), the presentation of character (as in the stories of Anton <u>Chekhov</u>), or the relationship between character and setting (for example, James <u>Joyce'sDubliners</u>).

Other outstanding short-story writers are Rudyard <u>Kipling</u>, <u>Saki</u>, Ernest <u>Hemingway</u>, Isaak <u>Babel</u>, Katherine <u>Mansfield</u>, Jorge Luis <u>Borges</u>, and Sherwood <u>Anderson</u>.

# Shute, Nevil (1899-1960)

### pen-name of Nevil Shute Norway

English novelist. Among his books are A Town Like Alice 1949 and On the Beach 1957.

Sidney, Margaret

US writer; see Harriet Mulford Lothrop.

### Sidney, Philip (1554-1586)

English poet and incompetent soldier. He wrote the sonnet sequence *Astrophel and Stella* (1591), *Arcadia* (1590), a prose romance, and *Apologie for Poetrie* (1595). Politically, Sidney became a charismatic, but hardly powerful, figure supporting a 'forward' foreign policy that would help the Protestant Netherlands against the Spanish.

Sidney was born in Penshurst, Kent. Educated at Christ Church, Oxford, he rounded off his education by a tour around Europe in the company of Hubert Languet. He entered Parliament in 1581, and was knighted in 1583. In 1585 he was made governor of Vlissingen in the Netherlands, and died at Zutphen, fulfilling his desire of fighting the Spanish.

Sidney's reputation, which was high among a few writers and politicians (like Edmund <u>Spenser</u>) in his life, increased immeasurably after his death. He provided the nearest thing the English Calvinists had to a martyr for their cause; his life was mythologized by Fulke <u>Greville</u>.

### Siegel, Jerry (1914-1996)

#### born Jerome Siegel

US cartoonist. Siegel and Joe Shuster, his childhood friend, created cartoons and comic strips while at high school. They had their first professional success in 1935 with 'Slam Bradley' for Detective Comics, but it was not until 1938 that their first Superman cartoon strip appeared. Siegel, who wrote the stories for the cartoons, sold the rights to this hugely successful character early on in his career, and did not profit from television and film adaptations or the spin-off merchandise. He was eventually granted a \$20,000 annual pension by Warner Bros.

## Sienkiewicz, Henryk Adam Alexander (1846-1916)

Polish author. His books include *Quo Vadis?* (1895), set in Rome at the time of Nero, and the 17th-century historical trilogy *With Fire and Sword*, *The Deluge*, and *Pan Michael* (1890-93). *Quo Vadis?* was the basis of several spectacular films. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1905.

Irish poet. Her *Collected Poems* 1907 and *New Poems* 1912 reflected her interest in the ballad form and in Celtic lore. *The Sad Years* 1918 and *Sixteen Dead Men and Other Ballads of Easter Week* 1919 were her response to the Easter Rising of 1916.

### Sigourney, Lydia (1791-1865)

#### born Lydia Howard Huntley

US poet. Sigourney was an immensely prolific and popular writer. She wrote pious sentimental poems and edited religious and juvenile publications.

### Sikelianos, Angelos (1884-1951)

Greek poet. His first mature poem, *The Light-Shadowed* 1907, shows his identification with nature. *Mother of God* and *Easter of the Greeks* both 1917 reveal a deepening mysticism. Many of his finest poems are contained in *Lyric Life* 1946.

### Silius Italicus, Tiberius Catius Asconius (c. AD 25-c. 101)

Latin epic poet, consul in 68, and governor of Asia in 77. He was the author of *Punica*, on the second of the Punic Wars, which was discovered by Poggio Bracciolini in 1416. It is by common consent the longest and worst poem in the whole range of Latin literature. Suffering from an incurable illness, he starved himself to death.

### Silkin, Jon (1930-1997)

English poet. His works include *The Re-ordering of the Stones* (1961) and *Nature With Man* (1965). His mature style is marked by slow, rhythmic movements alternating with sharp, dramatic statements, as in the collections *The Principle of Water* (1974) and *The Lens-Breakers* (1992). He founded the literary magazine *Stand* in 1952.

### Silko, Leslie (1948-)

#### born Leslie Marmon

US writer and poet. Born of Laguna Indian, Mexican, and Anglo-American heritage, Silko was raised on a Pueblo Indian Reservation. Her work includes poetry, short stories, and novels which draw on her Laguna heritage. The novel, *Ceremony* (1977), established her reputation as an important writer and she won a MacArthur Foundation 'genius' grant in 1981.

### Sillanpää, Frans Eemil (1888-1964)

Finnish novelist. His works include *Hurskas kurjuus/Meek Heritage* (1919), dealing with events that led to World War I, and *Nuorena nukkunut/Fallen Asleep While Young* (1931) and *Miehen tie/One Man's Way* (1932), both dealing with ideas of 'biological fatalism'. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1939.

# Sillitoe, Alan (1928-)

English novelist. One of the <u>Angry Young Men</u> of the 1950s, he wrote *Saturday Night and Sunday Morning* (1958), about a working-class man in Nottingham; the character, Arthur Seaton, returned in *Birthday* (2002). *The Loneliness of the Long Distance Runner* is the title story of a collection of short stories published in 1959.

Born in Nottingham, Sillitoe travelled in France, Spain, and Italy between 1952 and 1958. He published several collections of verse, including *Rats and Other Poems* (1960), *Sun Before Departure: Poems 1974 to 1982* (1984), and *Selected Poems* (1993), but is most widely acclaimed for his novels and stories about working-class life.

## Silone, Ignazio (1900-1978)

### pen-name of Secondo Tranquilli

Italian novelist. His novel *Fontamara* 1933 deals with the hopes and disillusionment of a peasant village from a socialist viewpoint. His other works include *Una manciata di more/A Handful of Blackberries* 1952.

### silver age

former name for the period of Latin literature from the death of the emperor Augustus to the fall of Rome, embracing authors as diverse as Seneca, Lucan, Tacitus, Juvenal, Martial, Pliny, and Claudian. The term is now in critical disfavour.

Silverstein, Shel(by) (1932-1999)

#### pen-name Uncle Shelby

US poet, cartoonist, and composer. Silverstein served in the US armed forces in Japan and Korea as a cartoonist for *Stars and Stripes* in the 1950s. On his return to the USA he published several innovative books of verse for readers of all ages, including *Where the Sidewalk Ends* (1974), and *A Light in the Attic* (1981).

### Simenon, Georges Joseph Christian (1903-1989)

Belgian crime writer. Initially a pulp fiction writer, in 1931 he created Inspector Maigret of the Paris Sûreté who appeared in a series of detective novels.

### Simic, Charles (1938-)

Yugoslavian-born poet. Simic emigrated to the USA with his family in 1954. Simic taught at several institutions, notably the University of New Hampshire. He is praised for his translations of the Yugoslavian poets, and for his own evocative and often surrealistic poetry, including *The Book of Gods and Devils* (1990).

### Simms, William Gilmore (1806-1870)

US writer. He wrote several historical romances, including *The Yemassee* 1835. His revolutionary romances depict social life in Charleston, South Carolina, with faithful portraits of the political and military leaders of the time.

### Simon, Claude Eugène Henri (1913-2005)

French novelist. Originally an artist, he abandoned 'time structure' and story line in such innovative novels as *La Route de Flandres/The Flanders Road* (1960), *Le Palace* (1962), and *Histoire/Story* (1967) in order to depict the constant flux of experience. His later novels include *Les Géorgiques* (1981) and *L'Acacia* (1989). He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1985.

### Simonides (c. 556-c. 468 BC)

Greek choral poet and epigrammatist. His longer poems include hymns composed to celebrate victories in the athletic games of Greece, and other competition pieces for choral performance. He was extremely successful, internationally famous, and

reputedly avaricious. He wrote the epigram on the Spartans who died fighting the Persians at Thermopylae 480 BC: 'Go, stranger, and report to the Spartans that here, obedient to their words, we lie.' His work exists in fragments only.

### Sinbad the Sailor

#### or Sindbad

in the <u>Arabian Nights</u>, an adventurer who makes seven eventful voyages. He encounters the <u>Old Man of the Sea</u> and, on his second voyage, is carried aloft by the roc, a giant bird.

### Sinclair, May (1870-1946)

English writer. Her realistic novels include *The Divine Fire* (1904) and *The Creators* (1910), both about the artist in society. *Mary Olivier: A Life* (1919), which is autobiographical, and *Life and Death of Harriett Frean* (1922) follow the lives of single women, using a <u>stream of consciousness</u> technique.

### Sinclair, Upton Beall (1878-1968)

US novelist. His polemical concern for social reform was reflected in his prolific output of documentary novels. His most famous novel, *The Jungle* (1906), is an important example of naturalistic writing, which exposed the horrors of the Chicago meat-packing industry and led to a change in food-processing laws. His later novels include *King Coal* (1917), *Oil!* (1927), and his 11-volume Lanny Budd series 1940-53, including *Dragon's Teeth* (1942), which won a Pulitzer Prize.

### Singer, Isaac Bashevis (1904-1991)

Polish-born US novelist and short-story writer. He lived in the USA from 1935. His works, written in Yiddish, often portray traditional Jewish life in Poland and the USA, and the loneliness of old age. They include *The Family Moskat* (1950) and *Gimpel the Fool and Other Stories* (1957). He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1978.

Written in an often magical storytelling style, his works combine a deep psychological insight with dramatic and visual impact. Many of his novels were written for serialization in New York Yiddish newspapers. Among his works are *The Slave* (1960), *Shosha* (1978), *Old Love* (1979), *Lost in America* (1981), *The Image and Other Stories* (1985), and *The Death of Methuselah* (1988). He also wrote plays and books for children.

### Singer, Israel Joshua (1893-1944)

Polish-born US writer who emigrated to New York in 1934. There he wrote novels depicting the conflict between European and American cultures, as in *The Family Carnovsky* (1943). A master of the Yiddish tradition in America, he is credited for paving the way for his younger brother, Isaac Bashevis Singer.

He was born in Bilgoray, Poland. He and his family moved to Warsaw in 1908, and he was educated to become a rabbi. By the age of 18 he left home and lived a secular life. He held a series of odd jobs, and studied science, language, mathematics, painting, and writing. During World War I he was conscripted into the Russian army, and worked at forced labour during the German occupation in 1915. He moved to Kiev, Russia, where he worked as a proofreader for a Jewish newspaper, and wrote stories and plays before returning to Warsaw in 1921. His novel, *The Sinner* (1933), was well received in America.

## Singleton, Charles S(outhward) (1909-1985)

US translator, author, and educator. A scholar of Italian Renaissance literature, of his many translations, essays, and critical works, the masterwork was the definitive prose translation of Dante's *Divine Comedy* (1970-75).

He was born in McLoud, Oklahoma. He taught for 40 years at the Johns Hopkins University and ten years at Yale.

# Sinyavski, Andrei Donatovich (1925-1997)

Russian literary critic and prose writer, in exile in France from 1973. His early works were published in the West under the pseudonym of **Avram Tertz**, and included two short novels, *Liubimov* and *Sud idyot/The Trial Begins* (1960), and a critique of socialist realism. Together with Yuli Daniel, he was tried in 1966 for anti-Soviet activities. His later writings include unconventional studies of major Russian writers.

A thinker who was committed to the undermining of ideology, accepted ideas, and any form of determinism, Sinyavski was sentenced to seven years' hard labour in 1966. His and Daniel's trial marked the end of the cultural thaw that had begun under Nikita Khrushchev. When Sinyavski was allowed to leave the USSR in 1973, he settled in Paris, teaching Russian literature at the Sorbonne and editing the influential journal *Sintaksis*. He published *Progulki s Pushkinym/Strolls with Pushkin* (1973), *V teni Gogolia/In the Shade of Gogol* (1975), and a volume of reflections from prison camp, *Golos iz khora/Voice from the Choir* (1976).

# Sitwell, Edith (Louisa) (1887-1964)

English poet, biographer, and critic. Her verse has an imaginative and rhythmic intensity. Her series of poems *Facade* (1922) was performed as recitations to the specially written music of William Walton (1923).

Her *Collected Poems* appeared in 1930 (new edition 1993). Her prose works include *Aspects of Modern Poetry* (1934) and *The Queens and the Hive* (1962). She was the sister of Osbert and Sacheverell Sitwell. She was made a DBE in 1954.

# Sitwell, Sacheverell (1897-1988)

English art critic and poet. His work includes *Southern Baroque Art* 1924 and *British Architects and Craftsmen* 1945; *Collected Poems* 1936; and prose miscellanies such as *Sacred and Profane Love* 1940 and *Splendours and Miseries* 1943. He was the younger brother of Edith and Osbert Sitwell.

# skaldic poetry

### (Old Icelandic skáld 'poet')

one of the two main branches of old Norse verse; the other is the poetry of the <u>Edda</u>. It is normally occasional, and attributed to named poets, or skalds, of Icelandic or (before about 1000) Norwegian origin; among them are Egill Skallagrímsson and Sighvatr Thórdarsson.

Skaldic poetry flourished between the 9th and 15th centuries, but is preserved mainly within prose texts of the 13th century onwards. Much of it is court poetry in the extended form of the *drápa* (eulogy with refrains) or *flokkr* ('group') in praise of Scandinavian rulers, their battles and voyages. The remainder consists mainly of individual, supposedly extempore, verses (*lausavísur*) occasioned by personal conflicts, loves, travels, and humorous incidents.

## Skelton, John (c. 1460-1529)

English poet. He was tutor to the future Henry VIII, under whom he became poet laureate in effect, if not in name. His satirical poetry includes political attacks on Cardinal Wolsey, such as *Collyn Cloute* (1522). He also wrote *Magnyfycence* (1516), the first secular morality play in English.

# Skene, William Forbes (1809-1892)

Scottish historian. He wrote *The Highlanders of Scotland: Their Origin, History and Antiquities* 1837 and the classic study *Celtic Scotland: A History of Ancient Alban* 1876-80, and was appointed Historiographer Royal for Scotland 1881.

# Skram, (Bertha) Amalie (1847-1905)

#### born Amalie Alver

Norwegian novelist. A feminist, she depicted the oppression of women in contemporary society. Her central work, *Hellemyrsfolket/The People of Hellemyr* 1887-98, is a realistic and pessimistic study of four generations of a family in which the characters are unable to overcome inherited weaknesses.

# Sládkovic, Andrej (1820-1872)

Slovak poet and leading writer in the Štúr school. His work includes one of the greatest love poems in the Slovak language, *Marina* 1846, and *Detvan/The Son of Detva* 1853, the story of an idealized peasant in the reign of Matthias Corvinus.

## Slaveykov, Pencho Petko (1866-1912)

Bulgarian poet and essayist. By exploring an individual's inner world, his poetry marks the beginning of a new epoch in Bulgarian literature, previously committed to causes (religious, national, political, and social). His *Epicheski pesni/Epic Songs* 1896 portray such figures as Prometheus, Michelangelo, Beethoven, and Shelley, and in *Na ostrova na blazhenite/Isle of the Blessed* 1910, he depicts imaginary poets.

He was the son of Petko Rachev Slaveykov.

# Slaveykov, Petko Rachev (1827-1895)

Bulgarian poet and nationalist. He was a prolific and talented author with a commitment to social justice and the emancipation of his people from Ottoman rule. He fostered the growth of Bulgarian as a modern literary language by publishing his early patriotic lyrics, collected in, for example, *Smesena kitka/Mixed Bouquet* 1852, in dialect. Slaveykov also collected and published collections of Bulgarian folk literature. After the liberation of Bulgaria in 1878, he became active in political life.

### Slavici, Ioan (1848-1925)

Romanian writer. He founded the journal *Tribuna*, which advocated a literature based on peasant life. His stories, collected in the volumes *Novele din popor* 1881 and *Padureanca* 1884, are examples of this. He also wrote the love drama *Mara* 1894.

## 'Sleeping Beauty, The'

European folk tale. Cursed by the fairy her parents forgot to invite to her christening, a princess falls asleep together with the whole royal court. She is awakened after 100 years by the kiss of a prince. Modern versions end here but in Perrault's version 1697, a secret marriage is followed by conflict with the prince's wicked mother, who is finally destroyed in her own tub of serpents and scorpions. The story is the basis of a ballet by Tchaikovsky, first performed 1890.

## Slessor, Kenneth Adolf (1901-1971)

Australian poet. A journalist and war correspondent, he is remembered for his superbly pictorial verse, particularly 'Five Visions of Captain Cook' 1931 and his best-known work, the title poem of his collection *Five Bells* 1939, an elegy for his friend Joe Lynch. 'Beach Burial' 1944 illustrates the futility of war in the bewildered pity of battle-hardened soldiers in the presence of casualties.

### Slick, Sam

Pseudonym of Canadian writer Thomas Haliburton.

## Sloan, Eric (1905-1985)

### born Everard Jean Hinrichs

US illustrator, painter, and author. He became an expert on everything from agriculture to weather while writing and illustrating books on early American artifacts, such as *The ABC Book of Early Americana* (1963), and *I Remember America* (1971).

He was born in New York City, and studied at the Art Students League, New York, in the 1930s under John Sloan, whose last name he appropriated. He was based in

Cornwall, Connecticut and, later, in Santa Fe, New Mexico.

# Slovak literature

The literature of the Slovak republic and people. Slovakian emerged as a literary language only in the 18th century. It served as a medium for literary patriots such as L'udovít Štur, and came of age in the 20th century in fine lyric poetry such as that of Ivan Krasko, a Symbolist, and Vojtech Mihálik.

Like <u>Czech literature</u>, Slovak literature suffered repression under the communist regime of Czechoslovakia 1948-89 but is enjoying a revival since the secession of the independent Slovak republic.

# Slowacki, Juliusz (1809-1849)

Polish poet and dramatist. He was one of the leading figures of the Romantic movement. His plays, which were never performed during his lifetime, established a tradition of Polish poetic drama. His work includes the poetry collections *Poezye* 1832-33 and *Beniowski* 1840, and the plays *Kordian* 1834 and *Mazepa* 1840. His letters to his mother are classics of Polish prose.

### **Smectymnuus**

pseudonym (formed from the first letters of their names) of the British clerics Stephen Marshall, Edmond Calamy, Thomas Young, Matthew Newcomen, and William Spurstow. Presbyterians, they were joint authors of an attack 1641 on episcopacy and the bishop of Norwich, Joseph Hall (1574-1656), which was answered by Hall and defended by the poet John Milton.

# Smiley, Jane (1949-)

US novelist and short-story writer. Her novel *A Thousand Acres*, a retelling of the King Lear story based on an Iowa farm, won the Pulitzer Prize for fiction in 1992. Her other books include *Barn Blind* (1980), her academic satire *Moo* (1995), *The All-True Travels and Adventures of Lidie Newton* (1998), and *Good Faith* (2003). In 2001 her novel *Horse Heaven* (2000) was nominated for the Orange Prize.

Smith, Alexander (1830-1867)

Scottish poet and essayist. His collection of *A Life Drama and Other Poems* 1853 included 'A Life Drama' 1852. In prose he wrote *Dreamthorp* 1863 (essays), *A Summer in Skye* 1865, his most attractive and lasting work, and two novels. His reputation was damaged by his links with the poets parodied as the 'Spasmodic School' of poetry.

# Smith, Ali (1962-)

Scottish writer. Known for her quirky, original style, with candid emotional portrayals and mysterious overtones, she achieved wide success with her second novel, *Hotel World* (2001), which follows the actions of five characters, including the ghost of a chambermaid killed in an accident, during the course of one night. Her novel *The Accidental* (2004), a tale of the influences of a mysterious and manipulative stranger taken into an unhappy family in Norfolk, won the 2005 Whitbread Award.

Smith's first novel, *Like*, the story of a long-enduring friendship set in Scotland and Cambridge, England, was published in 1997. *Hotel World* won several Scottish book awards, including the inaugural Scottish Arts Council Book of the Year Award. Smith's short-story collections include *Free Love and Other Stories* (1995), *Other Stories and Other Stories* (1999), and *The Whole Story and Other Stories* (2003). *Hotel World* and *The Accidental* were shortlisted for both the Booker and Orange Prizes for fiction.

## Smith, Arthur James Marshall (1902-1980)

Canadian poet, critic, and anthologist. His verse appears in *The Classic Shade: Selected Poems* 1978, and as a critic and anthologist he brought many Canadian poets to an international audience. His works of criticism include *Towards a View of Canadian Letters: Selected Essays, 1928-71* 1973.

## Smith, Dodie (1896-1990)

### pseudonym (until 1935) of C L Anthony

English playwright, novelist, and theatre producer. Her first play, *Autumn Crocus* (1930), was an instant success. Other plays include *Dear Octopus* (1938), *Letter from Paris* (adapted from *The Reverberator* by Henry James, 1952), and *I Capture the Castle* (adapted from her own novel, 1952). She also wrote the popular children's book *The Hundred and One Dalmatians* (1956).

# Smith, Horatio (or Horace) (1779-1849)

English novelist and parodist. In 1812 he and his elder brother James Smith jointly produced *Rejected Addresses: or, the New Theatrum Poetarum*, a series of parodies of popular contemporary writers.

This work was prompted by a competition held by the managers of Drury Lane Theatre, London, for the best address to be delivered at the reopening of the theatre; it pretended to contain entries that had been sent in and rejected.

## Smith, Iain Crichton (1928-1998)

Scottish writer. Writing in English and Gaelic, he described human loneliness in a dehumanized world and the tensions between the religious traditions of the Highlands and modern freedom. His poetry includes *Thistles and Roses* (1961) and *The Law and the Grace* (1965). *Consider the Lilies* (1968) and *The Last Summer* (1969) are novels. *Listen to the Voice: Selected Stories* was published in 1993.

# Smith, James (1775-1839)

English parodist, who worked in collaboration with his brother Horatio Smith.

## Smith, Logan Pearsall (1865-1946)

US critic and essayist. He published collections of thoughts and comments such as *Trivia* 1918, *More Trivia* 1921, and *All Trivia* 1933. He also wrote on and edited the works of John Donne, John Milton, and George Santayana.

## Smith, Pauline (Janet) (1882-1959)

South African writer. Her novel *The Beadle* (1926) is considered a classic of South African literature, and like many of her short stories, focuses on the lives of rural Afrikaners. She was encouraged by the English novelist Arnold <u>Bennett</u>, who wrote a highly complimentary introduction to her fictional debut *The Little Karoo* (1925).

Smith was born in the Karoo, in what is now the Western Cape province, South Africa, and lived there until sent to boarding school in Britain in 1895. Her fiction is based on childhood recollections of the Karoo combined with the impressions she recorded in diaries while on return visits to South Africa in 1905 and 1913. Her early writings were published as *Platkops Children* in 1935.

### Smith, Samuel Francis (1808-1895)

US clergyman and poet. He wrote 'My Country, 'tis of Thee' 1831, which, with the title 'America', was adopted as a national hymn of the USA in 1832. The tune is that of the British 'God save the King'. He took the melody from a German songbook, unaware that it was a British anthem. His *Poems of Home and Country* were published in 1895.

## Smith, Seba (1792-1868)

#### pen-name Major Jack Downing

US journalist and writer. While in Portland, Maine, he began the publication of political and satirical commentaries in the form of letters from 'Major Downing' 1830-33, published as *The Life and Writings of Major Jack Downing of Downingsville* (1833). He wrote a second series of Downing letters 1847-59, published as *My Thirty Years Out of the Senate* (1859).

He was born in Buckfield, Maine. He and his family moved to Bridgton, Maine (1799), and he worked in a grocery store, brick yard and iron foundry. He studied at Bowdoin (1815-18) and travelled in Europe. He became the assistant editor of the *Eastern Argus*, Portland, Maine 1820-26. He founded the *Portland Courier* in 1829. Smith moved to Charleston, South Carolina in 1839, then to New York City to work as an editor and writer. The success of Smith's Downing letters led several writers to imitate both the name and style, the most notable being Charles Augustus Davis. His *Way Down East* (1854), stories about typical New Englanders, was another of his popular works. In 1860 he settled in Patchogue, Long Island, New York.

## Smith, Sydney (1771-1845)

English writer. He was one of the founders of the *Edinburgh Review* 1802, and contributed to it for 25 years. A popular and witty preacher, he became a canon of St Paul's Cathedral 1831.

## Smith, Zadie (1975-)

#### born Sadie Smith

English writer. She is known for her raw, contemporary style and exploration of racial mixing and popular culture. Her first novel, *White Teeth* (2000; adapted for television 2002), enjoyed great critical and commercial success and won several

literary awards, including the Whitbread Award for First Novel and the Guardian First Book Award, both in 2000. She published her second novel, *The Autograph Man*, in 2002.

# Smollett, Tobias George (1721-1771)

Scottish novelist. He wrote the picaresque novels *Roderick Random* (1748), *Peregrine Pickle* (1751), *Ferdinand Count Fathom* (1753), *Sir Launcelot Greaves* (1760-62), and *Humphrey Clinker* (1771). His novels are full of gusto and vivid characterization.

# Smyth, Herbert Weir (1857-1938)

US classicist. He spent most of his teaching career (1901-25) at Harvard. His many publications include *The Ionic Dialect* (1894); *Greek Grammar* (1920); *Aeschylean Tragedy* (1924); and the Loeb edition of the plays of Aeschylus (1922). After his death, his personal library became the basis of Harvard's classics collection, the Smyth.

He was born in Wilmington, Delaware and gained his BA from Harvard in 1876.

### Snicket, Lemony

Pen-name of US author Daniel Handler.

## Snodgrass, W(illiam) D(eWitt) (1926-)

#### pen-name S S Gardons

US poet and writer. Based in Erieville, New York, he published translations, critical essays, and a play, but he is best known for his first volume of personal poetry, *Heart's Needle* (1959).

He was born in Wilkinsburg, Pennsylvania. He studied at Geneva College, Pennsylvania 1943-44 and 1946, and the University of Iowa (BA 1949; MA 1951; MFA. 1953). He taught at many institutions, notably the University of Delaware in 1980. Icelandic author. He wrote the Old Norse poems called <u>Eddas</u> and the *Heimskringla*, a saga chronicle of Norwegian kings until 1177.

# Snow, C(harles) P(ercy) (1905-1980)

#### **Baron Snow**

English novelist and physicist. He held government scientific posts in World War II and from 1964-66. His sequence of novels *Strangers and Brothers* (1940-70) portrayed English life from 1920 onwards. *The Two Cultures and the Scientific Revolution* (Cambridge Rede lectures, 1959) discussed the absence of communication between literary and scientific intellectuals in the West, and added the phrase 'the two cultures' to the language. He was knighted in 1957 and created baron in 1964.

# Snyder, Gary Sherman (1930-)

US poet. He was a key figure in the poetry renaissance in San Francisco during the 1950s. He combined an early interest in ecological issues with studies of Japanese, Chinese, and American Indian cultures and myths. Associated with the <u>Beat</u> <u>Generation</u> of writers, he was the protagonist of Jack Kerouac's novel *The Dharma Bums* (1958). Snyder's works include *Earth House Hold* (1969), the Pulitzer prizewinning poetry collection *Turtle Island* (1974), *No Nature* (1992), and *Mountains and Rivers Without End* (1996). He was awarded the Bollingen Prize for Poetry in 1997.

## Söderberg, Hjalmar Eric Fredrik (1869-1941)

Swedish writer. His work includes the short, melancholy novels *Förvillelser/ Aberrations* 1895, *Martin Bircks ungdom/The Youth of Martin Birck* 1901, *Doktor Glas/Dr Glass* 1906, and the play *Gertrud* 1906.

# Solinus, Gaius Julius (lived 4th century AD)

Roman compiler. He was author of a geographical work entitled *Collectanea Rerum Memorabilium*, commonly known by its second title, *Polyhistor*. Solinus was so obviously indebted to <u>Pliny the Elder</u>'s *Natural History* for his information, a debt which he nowhere acknowledges, that he is often referred to as 'Pliny's ape'.

# Solís y Ribadeneyra, Antonio de (1610-1686)

Spanish dramatist and historian. In 1654 he became secretary to Philip IV. He wrote courtly, satirical plays and a *Historia de la conquista de Mexico/History of the Conquest of Mexico* 1684.

### Solomos, Dionysios (1798-1857)

Greek poet. His *Ode to Liberty* 1823 is the source of the Greek national anthem. He wrote *Lambros*, *The Cretan*, and successive drafts of *Missolonghi*, *or The Free Besieged* but completed none of them.

## Soloviev, Vladimir Sergeyevich (1853-1900)

Russian philosopher and poet. His blending of neo-Platonism and Christian mysticism attempted to link all aspects of human experience in a doctrine of divine wisdom. His theories, expressed in poems and essays, influenced Symbolist writers such as Alexander <u>Blok</u>.

## Solzhenitsyn, Alexander Isayevich (1918-)

Russian novelist. He became a US citizen in 1974. He was in prison and exile 1945-57 for anti-Stalinist comments. Much of his writing is semi-autobiographical and highly critical of the system of Russian dictator Joseph Stalin, including *One Day in the Life of Ivan Denisovich* (1962), which deals with the labour camps under Stalin, and *The Gulag Archipelago* (1973), an exposé of the whole Soviet labour-camp network. The latter work led to his expulsion from the USSR in 1974. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1970.

Other works include *The First Circle* and *Cancer Ward* (both 1968), and his historical novel *August 1914* (1971). His autobiography, *The Oak and the Calf*, appeared in 1980. In 1994, cleared of the original charges of treason, he returned to Russia.

### Somerville and Ross

#### joint pseudonym of Violet Martin (1862-1915) and Edith Somerville(1858-1949)

Irish writers. Somerville and Ross were both members of the Anglo-Irish ascendancy, Martin living at Ross House, County Galway, and Somerville in the village of Castletownshend, County Cork. Their best-loved collaboration is the 'Irish RM' trilogy: *Some Experiences of an Irish RM* (1899), *Further Experiences of an Irish RM*  (1908), and *In Mr Knox's Country* (1915), but their masterpiece was *The Real Charlotte* (1894). Chronicling the financial and amorous ambitions of Charlotte, the novel displays Somerville and Ross's characteristic wit and astute analysis of late 19th-century life in upper-class rural Ireland.

Their work is celebrated as some of the most subtle and entertaining of the period.

# 'Song of Myself'

the longest poem in Walt Whitman's <u>Leaves of Grass</u>, relating the poet, the 'single separate person', to the democratic 'en masse'. It was regularly revised from its original form of 1855 to incorporate new experiences and 'cosmic sensations'.

### sonnet

genre of 14-line poem of Italian origin introduced to England by English poet Thomas Wyatt in the form used by Italian poet <u>Petrarch</u> and followed by English poets John <u>Milton</u> and William <u>Wordsworth</u>; English playwright and poet William <u>Shakespeare</u> wrote 14-line sonnets consisting of three groups of four lines (quatrains) and two final rhyming lines (a couplet), following ] the rhyme scheme *abab cdcd efef gg*.

The sonnet was very popular in <u>Elizabethan literature</u> and some of the finest lyric poetry of the period was written in the sonnet form. The sonnet sequence enjoyed a vogue during the 1590s, when several remarkable collections appeared, including *Astrophel and Stella* (1591) by English poet Sir Philip <u>Sidney</u>, *Delia* (1592) by English poet Samuel <u>Daniel</u>, and *Amoretti* (1595) by English poet Edmund <u>Spenser</u>. It was during this period that Shakespeare wrote his sonnet sequence.

### Sons and Lovers

novel (1913) by D H <u>Lawrence</u>. The central character is Paul Morel, the artistic son of a stormy marriage between a coal miner and his sensitive and ambitious wife. He grows up attempting to maintain a strong connection with his mother while failing in his sexual relationships, firstly with the virginal Miriam Leivers and then with the married feminist Clara Dawes. The largely autobiographical material is illuminated and shaped by Lawrence's confidently original imagination.

# Sontag, Susan (1933-2004)

US critic and writer. She established herself as a critic with the influential cultural

essays 'Against Interpretation' (1966) and 'Styles of Radical Will' (1969). Subsequent critical works include *On Photography* (1976), the powerful *Illness as Metaphor* (1978), *Aids and its Metaphors* (1989), and *Regarding the Pain of Others* (2003). Her novels include *Death Kit* (1967), *The Volcano Lover: A Romance* (1992), and *In America* (2000, National Book Award).

### Sophocles (c. 496-406 BC)

Athenian dramatist. He is credited with having developed tragedy by introducing a third actor and scene-painting, and ranked with <u>Aeschylus</u> and <u>Euripides</u> as one of the three great tragedians. He wrote some 120 plays, of which seven tragedies survive. These are <u>Antigone</u> (443 BC), <u>Oedipus the King</u> (429), <u>Electra</u> (410), Ajax, Trachiniae, Philoctetes (409 BC), and Oedipus at Colonus (401; produced after his death).

Sophocles lived in Athens when the city was ruled by Pericles, a period of great prosperity; he was a devout man, and assumed public office. A regular winner of dramatic competitions, he first defeated Aeschylus at the age of 27. In his tragedies heroic determination leads directly to violence unless, as in *Philoctetes* and *Oedipus at Colonus*, it contains an element of resignation. Among his other works are a lost treatise on the chorus, and a large surviving fragment of one of his satyr-dramas, *Ichneutai*.

## Sordello (c. 1200-1270)

Italian troubadour. He came under the protection first of Guillaume de Blacatz, and afterwards of Charles d'Anjou, and wrote in Provençal. He is credited with about 30 love songs, and his lament on the death of Blacatz is notable.

## Sorel, Charles, Sieur de Souvigny (c. 1600-1674)

French novelist. His *La vraie histoire comique de Francion* 1623-33 is a major work of comic realism. *Le Berger extravagant/The Extravagant Shepherd* 1627 (translated 1654) describes the follies of a young Parisian man influenced by reading fashionable contemporary novels.

## Sörensen, Villy (1929-2001)

Danish short-story writer and essayist. He produced three volumes of bizarre and fantastic tales, *Saere Historier/Strange Tales* (1953), *Ufarlige Historier/Harmless Tales* (1955), and *Formynderfortaellinger/Guardian Stories* (1964). His philosophical

essays in *Digtere og Daemoner/Poets and Demons* (1959) and *Hverken-eller/Neither-Nor* (1961) develop the line of thought originated by the philosopher Søren <u>Kierkegaard</u>.

### Soseki, Natsume (1867-1916)

#### pen-name of Natsume Kinnosuke

Japanese novelist. His works are deep psychological studies of urban intellectual lives. Strongly influenced by English literature, his later works are somewhat reminiscent of Henry James; for example, the unfinished *Meian/Light and Darkness* (1916). Soseki is regarded as one of Japan's greatest writers.

Soseki was born in Tokyo and studied English literature there and (1900-03) in the UK. He became well known with his debut novel, *Wagahai wa neko de aru/I Am a Cat* 1905, followed by the humorous *Botchan* 1906, but found a more serious, sensitive style in his many later novels, such as *Sore kara/And Then* 1909. He also studied classical Chinese literature and Zen Buddhism and wrote on literary theory.

### Sound and The Fury, The

novel 1929 by US writer William <u>Faulkner</u>. The story of a declining Southern family is told from four points of view including those of the three sons: Benjy, an imbecile; Quentin, a Harvard student who commits suicide; and Jason, an egotistical materialist. Dealing with historical collapse and lost love, the novel is a moving and technically difficult work.

### Soupault, Philippe (1897-1990)

French writer. He was a founder of surrealism, with which he later became disillusioned. His works include poems, novels, and plays such as *Tous ensemble au bout du monde* 1947. He also wrote essays and critical works, including *Souvenirs de James Joyce* 1945, *Profils perdus* 1963, and studies of the writers and artists Henri Rousseau, Apollinaire, Lautréamont, William Blake, Uccello, and Baudelaire.

### Soutar, William (1898-1943)

Scottish poet. He wrote both in English and in Scots with delicate artistry and rare humour, and was considered one of the most gifted poets of the modern Scottish renaissance. Among his books of verse are *Conflict* 1931, *Seeds in the Wind* 1933, *Riddles in Scots* 1937 (for children), and *The Expectant Silence* 1944.

# South African literature

the founder of South African literature in English was Thomas Pringle (1789-1834), who published lyric poetry and the prose *Narrative of a Residence in South Africa* (1834). More recent poets are Roy Campbell, Francis Carey Slater (1876-1959), Guy Butler (1918-), Sydney Clouts (1926-82), Douglas Livingstone (1932-), and Jeremy Cronin (1949-). The founder of South African fiction was Olive Schreiner, whose novel *Story of an African Farm* (1883) sought to establish the South African context as the norm rather than the exotic. Later writers of fiction include Sarah Gertrude Millin (regarded as the arch-racist of South African literature in English), Pauline <u>Smith</u>, William Plomer, Laurens <u>van der Post</u>, Alan <u>Paton</u>, Nadine <u>Gordimer</u> (winner of the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1991), André P <u>Brink</u>, and J M <u>Coetzee</u>. Preeminent among South Africa's playwrights is Athol Fugard.

Black South African writers include Sol <u>Plaatje</u>, author of *Mhudi* (1930), the first novel in English by a black South African; Peter <u>Abrahams</u>; Esk'ia Mphahlele; Lewis <u>Nkosi</u>; Njabulo <u>Ndebele</u> (1948- ), and Mongane Wally Serote (1944- ).

Original writing in Afrikaans developed rapidly after the South African War (1899-1902), and includes works by the lyricists C Louis Leipoldt (1880-1947), Jan Celliers (1865-1940), and Eugène Marais (1871-1936); the satirical sketch and story writer C J Langenhoven; the student of wildlife 'Sangiro' (A A Peinhar), author of *The Adventures of a Lion Family*, which became popular in English translation; the novelist Etienne Leroux (1922-); and the poet Ingrid Jonker (1933-1965). Probably best-known of Afrikaner writers is André P Brink, a key figure of the Sestigers ('people of the sixties') who sought to challenge the Afrikaner's literary tradition by tackling previously taboo subjects; Brink now writes more in English than Afrikaans.

# Southern US fiction

part of a long tradition of fiction and *belles lettres* in the US South since Edgar Allan <u>Poe</u>, often distinctively different from other US fiction. In the 20th century, a remarkable literary revival began, exemplified by the work of Ellen Glasgow and William <u>Faulkner</u>, dealing with the experience of a defeated agrarian region with proud traditions. Among 20th-century writers are Thomas <u>Wolfe</u>, Robert Penn Warren, Katherine Anne Porter, Eudora Welty, William Styron, and Margaret <u>Mitchell</u>, author of *Gone With the Wind* (1936). The Southern Gothic school includes Flannery O'Connor and Carson McCullers.

Writers of the 19th century include William Gilmore Simms (1806-1870), Joel Chandler Harris, and George Washington Cable (1844-1925).

# Southey, Robert (1774-1843)

English poet and author. He is sometimes regarded as one of the 'Lake poets', more because of his friendship with English poets Samuel Taylor <u>Coleridge</u> and William <u>Wordsworth</u> and residence in Keswick, in the English Lake District, than for any influence of Romanticism in his work. In 1813 he became poet laureate, but he is better known for his *Life of Nelson* (1813) and for his letters.

Southey was born in Bristol and educated at Oxford. He became a friend of Coleridge in 1794 and the two poets collaborated on a play, *The Fall of Robespierre*, the same year. In 1795 he married Edith Fricker and in 1796 visited Lisbon and published *Letters Written during a Short Residence in Spain and Portugal* (1797). In 1803 he moved to Keswick, where he lived near Wordsworth. His long epic poems include *Madoc* (1805), *Thalaba the Destroyer* (1807), and *The Curse of Kehama* (1810). In 1807 he obtained a small government pension, and in 1813 became poet laureate, after Scottish poet Walter <u>Scott</u> had refused the honour. Southey declined both the editorship of *The Times* and a baronetcy in 1835.

# Southwell, Robert (c. 1561-1595)

English Jesuit martyr and poet. He joined the Society of Jesus in 1578. He returned to England from France, where he had been educated, in 1587, and became chaplain to the countess of Arundel in 1589. During his missionary activities in England he spent most of his time in hiding in London or in Roman Catholic country houses where he wrote many prose pamphlets. In 1592 he was betrayed and arrested by the authorities. After suffering torture and being imprisoned for three years he was hanged at Tyburn, England, for treason.

Southwell was born in Horsham St Faith, Norfolk, England. He was educated at Douai and Paris. His writings include *Marie Magdalen's Funerall Teares*, *The Triumphs over Death*, *An Epistle of Comfort*, and *A Humble Supplication to Her Majesty*, all written in 1591. Several pieces, including the long poem, *Saint Peter's Complaynt* (1595), and *Burning Babe* (1595), were written to encourage Catholics under persecution.

## Soyer, Raphael (1899-1987)

Russian-born US painter and writer whose family emigrated to New York in 1912. He was a social realist, as in *Farewell to Lincoln Square* (1959), and a figure painter, as seen in *Standing Nude Female* (1960). His most famous book was *Diary of an Artist* (1977).

He was born in Tombov, Russia, the twin of Moses Soyer and brother of Isaac Soyer. He worked in a factory, studied at Cooper Union 1914-17 and the National Academy of Design 1918-22, and, beginning in 1932, taught at the Art Students League.

# Soyinka, Wole (1934-)

#### pen-name of Akinwande Oluwole Soyinka

Nigerian author and dramatist who founded a national theatre in Nigeria. His plays explore Yoruba myth, ritual, and culture, and later challenged his country's government. He was the first African to be awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature, in 1986.

His plays include *Swamp Dwellers* (1958), *The Lion and the Jewel* (1959), and *A Dance of the Forests* (1960), written as a tragic vision of Nigerian independence. Tragic inevitability is the theme of *Madmen and Specialists* (1970) and of *Death and the King's Horseman* (1976), but he has also written sharp satires, from *The Jero Plays* (1960 and 1973) to the indictment of African dictatorship in *A Play of Giants* (1984). His plays have also been produced in London, England, and New York City. A volume of poetry, *From Zia with Love*, appeared in 1992.

### Spanish literature

prose and poetry of Spain, written in any of the country's languages. Spanish literature has roots in the 12th century, but its golden age was in the 15th-17th centuries with Miguel de Cervantes's novel <u>Don Quixote</u> and the plays of Lope de Vega and Calderón de la Barca. Outstanding in the early 20th century was the playwright and poet Federico García Lorca.

### the Moorish period

Of the classical Spanish epics, the 12th-century *El cantar de mio Cid* is the only complete example. The founder of Castilian prose was the 13th-century King Alfonso X, El Sabio (the Wise), who also wrote lyric poetry in the Galician dialect. The first true poet was the 14th-century satirist Juan Ruiz (*c.* 1283-1350), archpriest of Hita.

To the 15th century belong the Marquis of Santillana (Iñigo López de Mendoza), poet, critic, and collector of proverbs; chivalric romances, such as the *Amadis de Gaula*; ballads dealing with the struggle against the Moors; and the *Celestina*, a novel in dramatic form.

#### Spain's era as a great power

The flowering of verse drama began with Lope de Rueda (died 1565), and reached its height with Vega, who wrote hundreds of plays as well as novels and poetry, and Calderón de la Barca, author of *La vida es sueño/Life Is a Dream* (1635). Poetry ranged from the work of the lyrical Garcilaso de la Vega to the patriotic Fernando de Herrera (1534-1597), the mystics St Teresa and Luis de León, and the elaborate style of Luis de Góngora (1561-1627), who popularized the decadent 'gongorism'. In

fiction there developed the pastoral romance, for example Jorge de Montemayor's *Diana*; and the picaresque novel, established by the anonymous *Lazarillo del Tormes*, Cervantes, and the biting satire of Francisco de Quevedo y Villegas.

#### influence of European movements

In the 18th century the Benedictine monk Benito J Feijoo introduced scientific thought to Spain, and French influence emerged in the comedies of Leandro F de Moratín (1760-1828) and others. Typical of the romantic era were the poets and dramatists Angel de Saavedra (Duque de Rivas) (1791-1865) and José Zorilla (1817-1893), and the lyricist José de Espronceda. Among 19th-century novelists were Pedro de Alarcón, Emilia, condesa de Pardo Bazán (1852-1921), and Vicente Blasco Ibáñez; a 19th-century dramatist is José Echegaray.

#### modern times

The 'Generation of 1898' included the philosophers Miguel de Unamuno and José Ortega y Gasset (1883-1955); the novelist Pío Baroja (1872-1956); the prose writer Azorín (José Martínez Ruiz); and the Nobel prize-winning poet Juan Ramón Jiménez. The next generation included the novelist Camilo José Cela; the poets Antonio Machado, Rafael Alberti (1902-1999), Luis Cernuda (1902-1963), and the Nobel prizewinner Vincente Aleixandre; and the dramatists Jacinto Benavente (1866-1954), the brothers Quintero, and - the most striking - Federico García Lorca. The Civil War and the strict censorship of the Franco dictatorship disrupted mid-20th-century literary life, but later names include the novelists Rafael Sánchez Ferlosio (1927- ) and Juan Goytisolo (1931- ); and the poets Blas de Otero (1916- ) and José Hierro (1922- ).

## Spark, Muriel (1918-2006)

born Muriel Sarah Camberg

Scottish-born novelist. Her early novels are mostly dark and witty fantasies, focusing on social misfits, such as feature in *The Comforters* (1957) (her first novel), *The Prime of Miss Jean Brodie* (1961), *The Girls of Slender Means* (1963), and A Far Cry from Kensington (1988). Blacker satire is found in *Memento Mori* (1959), *The Mandelbaum Gate* (1965), *The Driver's Seat* (1970), and later novels.

Other works include *Collected Poems* (1967), *The Collected Stories* (1994), and the novels *Symposium* (1990), *Realities and Dreams* (1996), and *Aiding and Abetting* (2000). An autobiography up to 1957, *Curriculum Vitae* was published in 1992.

## Spedding, James (1808-1881)

English editor. With R L Ellis and D D Heath, he edited *The Works of Francis Bacon* (in seven volumes 1857-59, with seven more volumes of *The Life and Letters of* 

Francis Bacon 1861-74).

# Speight, Johnny (1920-1998)

English comic screenwriter. His most celebrated creation was the television sitcom *Till Death Do Us Part* (1964-74), featuring the loud-mouthed, working-class bigot Alf Garnett. The controversial series earned him Screenwriters' Guild Awards in 1966, 1967 and 1968, and Garnett reappeared in Speight's sequel *In Sickness and In Health* (1985-86). Other television work includes *Spooner's Patch* (1979-82) and *The Nineteenth Hole* (1989).

Among his publications are *It Stands to Reason* (1973), *The Thoughts of Chairman Alf* (1973), and his autobiography, *For Richer, For Poorer* (1991).

# Spence, (James) Lewis Thomas Chalmers (1874-1955)

Scottish poet and mythologist. His dialect verse was one of the early influences in the Scottish renaissance; it includes the collections *Le Roi d'Y* 1910, *Plumes of Time* 1926, and *Collected Poems* 1953.

He made a special study of the early history of Central America and *The Gods of Mexico* 1923 is a standard work.

## Spencer, Elizabeth (1921-)

US writer of novels and short stories. Her early novels are based in the rural South, and several others are set in Italy, where she lived 1953-58, as in *The Light in the Piazza* (1960), but whatever the setting, her works tend to deal with expatriates and outsiders.

She was born in Carrollton, Mississippi. She studied at Belhaven College (BA 1942) and Vanderbilt (MA 1943). She married in 1956. She taught writing at Concordia University, Montréal, Canada 1976-86 and at the University of North Carolina from 1986.

# Spender, Stephen (Harold) (1909-1995)

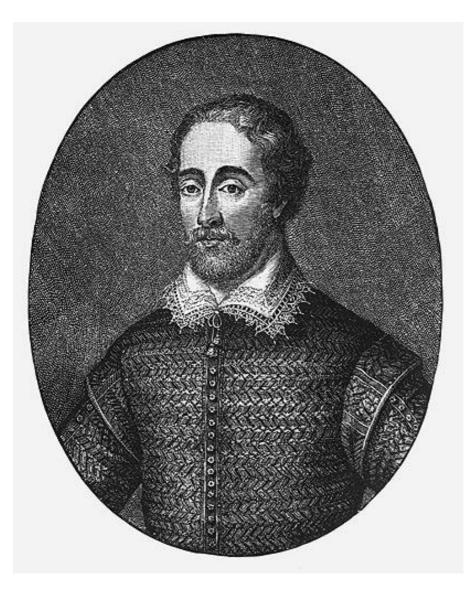
English poet and critic. His early poetry has a left-wing political content. With Cyril <u>Connolly</u> he founded the magazine *Horizon* (of which he was co-editor 1939-41), and Spender was co-editor of *Encounter* 1953-66. His *Journals* 1939-83 and *Collected Poems* 1928-1985 were published in 1985. He was knighted in 1983.

# Spenser, Edmund (c. 1552-1599)

English poet. His major work is the allegorical epic *The <u>Faerie Queene</u>*, of which six books survive (three published in 1590 and three in 1596). Other books include *The Shepheard's Calendar* (1579), *Astrophel* (1586), the love sonnets *Amoretti*, and the marriage poem *Epithalamion* (1595).

Born in London, Spenser was the son of a Lancashire clothmaker. He was educated at Merchant Taylors' School, which was then a grammar school, and in 1568 he began his studies at Pembroke Hall, Cambridge. In 1580 he became secretary to Lord Grey de Wilton, Lord Deputy in Ireland and at Kilcolman Castle completed the first three books of *The Faerie Queene*. In 1598 the castle was burned down by rebels, and Spenser and his family narrowly escaped. His attitude towards the Irish problem, expressed in both book five of the *Faerie Queene* and his *View of the Present State of Ireland* was that merciless oppression was the only solution. He died in London, and was buried in Westminster Abbey.

### Spenser





(Image © Billie Love)

An engraving of the Elizabethan poet Edmund Spenser, by George Vertue, in the National Portrait Gallery, London. In his famous allegorical poem in six volumes *The Faerie Queene*, dedicated to Elizabeth I, he created the nine-line 'Spenserian stanza,' which consists of eight lines in iambic pentameter followed by an alexandrine (a six-foot iambic line).

# Spiegel, Henrik Laurensz (1549-1612)

Dutch poet and humanist. His work includes *Hertspiegel* 1614. His Christian ideals and Platonic philosophy underlie his spiritual views.

# Spielhagen, Friedrich (1829-1911)

German novelist. His novels are topical and deal mainly with social questions. They include *Problematische Naturen/Problematic Characters* 1861 and its sequel *Durch Nacht zum Licht/Through Night to Light* 1862, *In Reih' und Glied* 1869, and *Sturmflut/The Breaking of the Storm* 1877. He wrote his autobiography in *Finder und Erfinder* 1890.

# Spillane, Mickey (Frank Morrison) (1918-)

US crime novelist. He began by writing for pulp magazines and became an internationally best-selling author with books featuring private investigator Mike Hammer, a violent vigilante who wages an amoral war on crime. His most popular novels include *I*, the Jury (1947) and Kiss Me Deadly (1953) (both made into films in the noir style in the 1950s). Later novels include The Ship That Never Was (1982) and Something's Down There (2003).

# Spingarn, Joel (Elias) (1875-1939)

US literary critic, writer, social reformer, and horticulturist. A scholar of international repute, he published literary studies and his own poetry. He also helped to found the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP) in 1909, eventually serving as its president 1930-39. During World War I he succeeded in setting up a special camp to train black officers. In his later years he became a recognized authority on the clematis.

He was born in New York City. After taking all his degrees (including his PhD) at

Columbia University, he stayed on with the faculty 1899-1911. When he got into a dispute with Nicholas Murray Butler, president of Columbia, over what he regarded as an issue of free speech, he was dismissed. his *The New Criticism* (1911) was among the first American works to draw heavily on the theories of the Italian philosopher Benedetto <u>Croce</u>. Other later works include a major anthology of European literature. A man of independent means, he continued his literary pursuits pretty much on his own, although he occasionally taught at the New School for Social Research. In 1908 he ran unsuccessfully as a Republican for the US House of Representatives - and he served as a delegate of the Progressive Party at two national conventions. He bought a newspaper in a small town outside New York City, the *Amenia Times*, and served as its publisher; in 1919 he would also help found Harcourt, Brace and Company, serving as its literary adviser until 1924. In 1913 he established the Spingarn Medal, still given annually to a black American who has shown great achievement. He was a delegate to the convention that established the American Legion.

# Spitteler, Carl Friedrich Georg (1845-1924)

Swiss poet and writer. The epic *Der Olympischer Frühling/Olympian Spring* (1900) depicts the heroism and mortality of the Greek gods. His mature epic *Prometheus der Dulder/Prometheus the Martyr* (1924) also deals with themes from Greek mythology, expressing his belief in the importance of ethical rather than aesthetic values. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1919.

# Sponde, Jean de (1557-1595)

French poet and humanist. His poetry includes 'Les Amours', 'Stances', and 'Sonnets de la mort'. He also wrote the prose *Méditations sur les Psaumes* (1588).

## Spottiswood (or Spottiswoode), Alicia Ann (1810-1900)

British poet and composer. She was known for her Scottish songs, notably 'Durisdeer' and 'Annie Laurie'. Spottiswood was born in Lauder, Berwickshire, Scotland.

## Sprat, Thomas (1635-1713)

English cleric, poet, and scientist. He became bishop of Rochester 1684 and was one of the first fellows of the Royal Society, of which he published a history 1667. He also wrote a life of his friend Abraham <u>Cowley</u>, the poet, 1668.

# Spring, Howard (1889-1965)

Welsh novelist. His realistic novels include *O Absalom* 1938 (republished as *My Son*, *My Son* 1957), *Fame is the Spur* 1940, and *There is No Armour* 1948. He also published three autobiographical works.

# Spyri, Johanna (1827-1901)

Swiss writer. She wrote many children's stories set in the Swiss mountains, notably <u>Heidi</u> 1881.

# Squire, J(ohn) C(ollings) (1884-1958)

English poet and critic. He became literary editor of the *New Statesman* in 1913 and edited the *London Mercury* (1919-34), to which he contributed under the name of **Solomon Eagle**. His verse includes *The Survival of the Fittest* (1916), *Collected Parodies* (1921), and *Collected Poems* (1959).

## Staël, Anne Louise Germaine Necker, Madame de (1766-1817)

French author. She wrote semi-autobiographical novels such as *Delphine* (1802) and *Corinne* (1807), and the critical work *De l'Allemagne* (1810), on German literature. She was banished from Paris by Napoleon in 1803 because of her advocacy of political freedom.

## Stafford, Jean (1915-1979)

US writer. She wrote novels, children's fiction, and non-fiction, but is best known for her short stories, as in her Pulitzer prize-winning work, *The Short Stories of Jean Stafford* (1969).

She was born in Covina, California. She studied at the University of Colorado, and at Heidelberg University (Germany) 1936-37. She was married three times, notably to the US poet Robert Lowell (1940; divorced 1948), taught at several institutions, and won many awards.

stage direction

in the script of a play, the dramatist's instructions to the actors concerning the movements, manner of speech, and emotions of actors on stage. Stage directions are placed in brackets and/or italics at the beginning of scenes and before a character speaks.

### Stallworthy, Jon Howie (1935-)

English poet and biographer. The collection *Root and Branch* 1969 showed him to be a meticulous chronicler of mainly familial and emotional themes. He has written biographies of the poets Wilfred Owen (1985) and Louis MacNeice (1995).

# Stambolov, Stefan (1854-1895)

Bulgarian politician and poet. He became leader of the anti-Russian national-liberals and was prime minister (1887-94). Stambolov was born in Tirnovo, Bulgaria.

## Standing Bear, Luther (c. 1868-c. 1939)

#### pen-name Chief Standing Bear

US actor and writer. Although an American Indian, he became a US citizen and worked as an actor. A transitional figure who was interested in capturing on paper the beliefs and customs of his people, as well as the difficulties of adapting to white America. He is best known for his autobiography, *My People, My Sioux* (coauthored with E A Brininstool, 1928), and *Stories of the Sioux* (1934).

He was born in Sioux Pine Reservation, North Dakota. He toured with Buffalo Bill's Wild West Show, eventually settling in Huntington Park, California.

### Standish, Burt L

US writer; see Gilbert Patten.

## Stanyhurst, Richard (1547-1618)

Irish scholar, historian, and poet. His translation of the first four books of Virgil's *Aeneid* was published in 1582.

His other writings include *Description of Ireland*, published in Raphael Holinshed's *Chronicles* (1577), and *De Vita S Patricii Hyberniae Apostoli* (1587).

### Stapledon, (William) Olaf (1886-1950)

English science fiction novelist. He attracted notice with his debut novel *Last and First Men* (1931), a history of humanity through future aeons. The immensely broad canvas characteristic of Stapledon is also present in the acclaimed *Star Maker* (1937).

### Staring, Anthony Christiaan Winand (1767-1840)

Dutch poet. His sober style and subtle humour are in marked contrast to the sentimentality and pompous style of his contemporaries.

## Statius (c. 45-96)

Roman poet. He was the author of the *Silvae*, occasional poems of some interest; the epic *Thebaïd*, which tells the story of the sons of Oedipus; and an unfinished epic *Achilleïs*. He was admired by Dante and Chaucer.

### Stead, Christina Ellen (1902-1983)

Australian writer. She lived in Europe and the USA 1928-68.

An exploratory, psychological writer, imaginatively innovative in form and style, she disclosed elements of the irrational, even the grotesque, in the subconscious of her characters. Her novels include *The Man Who Loved Children* (1940), *Dark Places of the Heart* (1966) (published as *Cotter's England* in the UK), and *I'm Dying Laughing* (1986).

### Steadman, Ralph (1936-)

English caricaturist, designer, and writer. He has worked for several newspapers and magazines and has also illustrated numerous books, including his own writings, such as *I*, *Leonardo* (1983). His cartoons are noted for their anarchic humour and sharp satire.

# Stedman, Edmund Clarence (1833-1908)

US poet and writer. He wrote rather imitative sentimental poetry, as in *Poems*, *Lyrical and Idyllic* (1860), but had some influence with his critical studies and anthologies such as *Poets of America* (1885) and *An American Anthology* (1900).

He was born in Hartford, Connecticut. His father died when he was two, and he was raised by his maternal grandfather 1835-39, and by his uncle in Norwich, Connecticut He studied at Yale in 1849-51, then worked for various newspapers in Connecticut and New York City. He ran his own brokerage house in New York City 1864-1908, and lived in Bronxville, New York.

# Steel, Danielle (1947-)

### born Danielle Fernande Schuelein-Steel

US writer of romantic novels. Her formulaic storylines of love in exotic locations with happy endings have been criticized by reviewers but her novels regularly reach the top of the best-seller lists. She achieved her first commercial success with her fourth novel, *The Promise* (1978), and has continued to write prolifically since then.

Steel also published a volume of poetry in 1981 and wrote a series of books for children featuring the characters Max and Martha. Several of her romantic novels have been adapted into films for television.

# Steele, Richard (1672-1729)

Irish essayist, playwright, and politician. Born in Dublin, he entered the Life Guards, and then settled in London. He founded the journal *The Tatler* (1709-11), in which Joseph <u>Addison</u> collaborated. They continued their joint work in the *Spectator* (1711-12), also founded by Steele, and *The Guardian* (1713). He also wrote plays, such as *The Conscious Lovers* (1722). In 1713 Steele was elected to Parliament. He was knighted in 1715.

## Stefan Ólafsson (1619-1688)

Icelandic poet. With Hallgrímur Pétursson, he towers above his contemporary Icelandic poets. Some of his love poems are among the finest in the language and his satirical poetry is also important. He translated the Snorra <u>Edda</u> into Latin.

## Stefánsson, David (1895-1964)

Icelandic lyric poet and dramatist. His poetry used simple language and a variety of metrical forms, as in the collections *Svartar fjathrir* 1919 and *Kvethjur/Greetings* 1924. His one novel, *Solon Islandus* 1940, tells of an Icelandic drifter and dreamer. His plays include *Gullna hlidid* 1941.

# Stegner, Wallace (Earle) (1909-1993)

US writer and educator. He taught English at several major universities; he was at Stanford University 1945-71. He published over two dozen novels, collections of short stories and essays, and historical works; *The Big Rock Candy Mountain* (1943) was among his most popular novels while *Angel of Repose* (1972) won the Pulitzer Prize for fiction. His non-fiction works include biographies of John Wesley Powell, Joe Hill, and Bernard DeVoto.

He was born in Lake Mills, Iowa. The son of Scandinavian immigrants, he lived in a half-dozen western states with his family before they settled in Salt Lake City, Utah. He was educated at the Universities of Utah (BA 1930) and Iowa (PhD 1935). His first book was *Restoring Laughter* (1937). Most of his works dealt with the American West, which he viewed with a mixture of scepticism about its stereotypes, yet respect for its strengths. In his later years he increasingly expressed his concern for the damage being done to the natural environment of the West.

## Steig, William (1907-2003)

US artist, cartoonist, and writer. He worked as a free-lance artist, notably for the *New Yorker*. Late in his life he began writing as well as illustrating children's books, many of them classics of the genre, such as *Roland*, *The Minstrel Pig* (1968), *Sylvester and the Magic Pebble* (1969), and *The Amazing Bone* (1976).

He was born in New York City. He studied in New York at City College 1923-25 and the National Academy of Design 1925-29. In 1930 he began to make wooden sculptures.

# Stein, Gertrude (1874-1946)

US writer. She influenced authors Ernest <u>Hemingway</u>, Sherwood <u>Anderson</u>, and F Scott <u>Fitzgerald</u> with her radical prose style. Drawing on the stream-ofconsciousness psychology of William James and on the geometry of Cézanne and the cubist painters in Paris, she evolved a 'continuous present' style made up of constant repetition and variation of simple phrases. Her work includes the self-portrait *The Autobiography of Alice B Toklas* (1933). Born in Allegheny, Pennsylvania, Stein went to Paris in 1903 after medical school at Johns Hopkins University and lived there, writing and collecting art, for the rest of her life. She settled in with her brother, also a patron of the arts, and a companion/ secretary, Alice B Toklas (1877-1967), and in her home she held court to a 'lost generation' of expatriate US writers and modern artists (Picasso, Matisse, Braque, Gris). She also wrote *Three Lives* (1910), *The Making of Americans* (1925), *Composition as Explanation* (1926), *Tender Buttons* (1914), *Mrs Reynolds* (1952), and the operas (with composer Virgil Thomson) *Four Saints in Three Acts* (1929) and *The Mother of Us All* (1947). A tour of the USA in 1934 resulted in *Everybody's Autobiography* (1937).

# Steinbeck, John Ernst (1902-1968)

US novelist. His realist novels, such as *In Dubious Battle* (1936), *Of Mice and Men* (1937), and *The Grapes of Wrath* (1939; Pulitzer Prize; filmed 1940), portray agricultural life in his native California, where migrant farm labourers from the Oklahoma dust bowl struggled to survive. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1962.

Born in Salinas, California, Steinbeck worked as a labourer to support his writing career, and his experiences supplied him with authentic material for his books. He first achieved success with *Tortilla Flat* (1935), a humorous study of the lives of Monterey paisanos (farmers). His early naturalist works are his most critically acclaimed. Later books include *Cannery Row* (1944), *The Wayward Bus* (1947), *East of Eden* (1952), *Once There Was a War* (1958), *The Winter of Our Discontent* (1961), and *Travels with Charley* (1962). He also wrote screenplays for films, notably *Viva Zapata!* (1952). His best-known short story is the fable 'The Pearl'.

# Stendhal (1783-1842)

### pen-name of Marie Henri Beyle

French novelist. His novels *Le Rouge et le Noir/The <u>Red and the Black</u> (1830) and <i>La Chartreuse de Parme/The Charterhouse of Parma* (1839) were pioneering works in their treatment of disguise and hypocrisy and outstanding for their psychological analysis; a review of the latter by fellow novelist <u>Balzac</u> (1840) furthered Stendhal's reputation, but he was not fully understood during his lifetime.

His critical works include *Histoire de la peinture en Italie/History of Painting in Italy* (1817), *Rome, Naples et Florence/Rome, Naples and Florence* (1817), *Racine et Shakespeare/Racine and Shakespeare* (1823-25), and *Promenades dans Rome/A Roman Journal* (1829). His unfinished novel *Lucien Leuwen* was published in 1894. Although he shared many of the literary ideas of the Romantics, he remained fiercely independent.

## Stephen, Leslie (1832-1904)

English critic. He was the first editor of the *Dictionary of National Biography* and father of the novelist Virginia <u>Woolf</u>.

### Stephens, James (1882-1950)

Irish poet and novelist. Born in Dublin, where he was sent to an orphanage as a child, he later moved to London as a full-time writer in 1924. His work first came to wide attention through the success of his prose fantasy *The Crock of Gold* (1912). His later publications include *Songs from the Clay* (1914), *The Demi-Gods* (1914), and *Reincarnations* (1917). Many of his works drew on his enormous knowledge of Irish history, myth, and legend.

Stephens's first publication was a volume of poems, *Insurrections* (1909), followed by his first novel, *The Charwoman's Daughter* (1912), which described poverty in the Dublin slums. His *Collected Poems* were first published in 1926, and revised in 1954.

### Steppenwolf

novel by Hermann <u>Hesse</u>, published in Germany 1927. Henry Haller ('Steppenwolf') is contemplating suicide, but comes to terms with the world around him after a visit to the surreal Magic Theatre.

## Sterne, Laurence (1713-1768)

Irish writer. Sterne was born in Clonmel, County Tipperary, and ordained in 1737. He created the comic anti-hero Tristram Shandy in *The Life and Opinions of Tristram Shandy, Gent* (1759-67). An eccentrically whimsical and bawdy novel, its associations of ideas on the philosophic principles of John Locke, and other devices, foreshadow in part some of the techniques associated with the 20th-century novel, such as stream-of-consciousness. His other works include *A Sentimental Journey through France and Italy* (1768).

Sterne became vicar of Sutton-in-the-Forest, Yorkshire, in 1738, and married Elizabeth Lumley in 1741, an unhappy union largely because of his infidelity. He had a sentimental love affair with Elizabeth Draper, recorded in his *Letters of Yorick to Eliza* (1775).

# Sternheim, Carl (1878-1942)

German dramatist. His series of comedies collectively entitled *Aus dem bürgerlichen Heldenleben/From the Heroic Life of the Bourgeoisie* 1910-22 turned a savage, satirical eye on the philistinism and questionable morality of contemporary society, and attracted the attention of the censor. Sternheim's criticism of bourgeois hypocrisy is further elaborated in *Bürger Schippel/Citizen Schippel* 1913.

Sternheim's growing concern with politics and social and individual responsibility gave rise to the drama *Tabula Rasa* 1916, in which the central character, a self-seeking workers' representative, betrays his class and joins the bourgeoisie. However, there is no social satire in the powerful and eloquent *Die Marquise von Arcis* 1919, borrowed from a story by the French philosopher Denis Diderot, which pleads against the rigid conventions that condemn individuals to their station in life. In true German expressionist manner, it demands the emergence of a new human in a new society.

## Stesichorus (c. 630-c. 550 BC)

Greek choral poet. He lived and wrote mostly in Sicily. His lyrical narratives, incorporating direct speech, had a profound influence on later Greek tragedy, but his work survives only in fragments.

### Stevens, Wallace (1879-1955)

US poet. An insurance company executive, he was not recognized as a major poet until late in life. His volumes of poems include *Harmonium* (1923), *The Man with the Blue Guitar* (1937), and *Transport to Summer* (1947). *The Necessary Angel* (1951) is a collection of essays.

An elegant and philosophical poet, he won a Pulitzer Prize in 1954 for his *Collected Poems*.

## Stevenson, Robert Louis Balfour (1850-1894)

Scottish novelist and poet. He wrote the adventure stories <u>Treasure Island</u> (1883), Kidnapped (1886), and The Master of Ballantrae (1889), notable for their characterization as well as their action. He was a master also of shorter fiction such as The Strange Case of Dr Jekyll and Mr Hyde (1886), and of stories of the supernatural such as Thrawn Janet (1881). A Child's Garden of Verses (1885) is a collection of nostalgic poetry reflecting childhood.

Stevenson was born in Edinburgh. He studied at the university there and qualified as

a lawyer, but never practised. In 1879 he met the American Fanny Osbourne in France and followed her to the USA, where they married in 1880. In the same year they returned to Britain. In 1890 he settled at Vailima, in Samoa, where he sought a cure for his tuberculosis. In depth of character and power, his unfinished novel *Weir of Hermiston* might have exceeded all his other works.

### Stiernhielm, Georg (1598-1672)

Swedish poet. From about 1640, he was court poet to Queen Christina. He wrote sonnets, lyrics, and idylls, and the allegorical poem *Hercules* 1647. A man of great learning, Stiernhielm has been called the founder of Swedish poetry. He helped to raise poetry in popular esteem and harmonize traditional Swedish culture with literary styles adopted from the rest of Europe.

## Stifter, Adalbert (1805-1868)

Austrian novelist and painter. Stifter showed humans and nature in harmony, and his novels recall his childhood spent in the country. His principal novels are *Der Hochwald/The Alpine Forest* 1842, *Der Nachsommer/The Indian Summer* 1857, Which follows the maturing of a young man, and the historical epic *Witiko* 1865-67. His short stories are collected in *Studien/Studies* 1844-50 and *Bunte Steine/ Colourful Stones* 1853.

### St John, Hector

Pseudonym of US writer Michel de Crèvecoeur.

### Stobaeus, Johannes

Greek anthologist. His collected fragments of Greek authors on a variety of topics have survived in two works, *Eclogae* and *Florilegium*, in which there are many references to earlier literature.

### Stockton, Frank (1834-1902)

#### born Francis Richard Stockton; pen-names Paul Fort or John Lewees

US writer and editor. He was assistant editor of *St Nicholas Magazine* in New York 1873-81. He wrote for adults, notably his short story, 'The Lady or the Tiger?' (1882),

and books for children, such as The Bee-Man of Orn, and other Fanciful Tales (1887).

He was born in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. He was a wood engraver. Later he lived in New Jersey in 1890, and settled in Charles Town, West Virginia in 1899.

### Stoke Poges

village in Buckinghamshire, southern England, 3 km/2 mi north of Slough; population (2001) 4,850. Stoke Poges inspired Thomas <u>Gray</u> to write his 'Elegy in a Country Churchyard'; the poet is buried in St Giles church.

## Stoker, Bram (1847-1912)

#### born Abraham Stoker

Irish novelist, actor, theatre manager, and author. Born in Dublin, he was educated there at Trinity College, and followed his father into the civil service. His celebrated novel <u>Dracula</u> (1897) crystallized most aspects of the traditional vampire legend and became the source for all subsequent fiction and films on the subject.

Stoker wrote a number of other stories and novels of fantasy and horror, such as *The Lady of the Shroud* (1909). Employed as a civil servant 1866-78, he was subsequently business manager to the theatre producer Henry Irving at the Lyceum Theatre, London 1878-1905.

## Stokes, Whitley (1830-1909)

Irish academic and lawyer. Born in Dublin, Stokes was an influential scholar of Celtic and Gaelic philology (the study of the historical development of languages), pursuing his interest while working in the Indian legal administration. He published several translations and commentaries explaining medieval Latin and Gaelic texts and manuscripts, before producing his major glossary, *Thesaurus Palaeohibernicus* (1901-03).

## Stolberg, Christian, Count (1748-1821)

German poet, brother of Friedrich Leopold Stolberg. The Stolberg brothers were representatives of the idealistic *Sturm und Drang* movement. They collaborated on the volumes *Gedichte/Poems* 1779, *Schauspiele mit Choren/Dramas with Chorus* 1787, designed to reawaken interest in Greek drama, and *Vaterländische Gedichte/ Patriotic Poems* 1815. Christian also wrote *Gedichte aus dem Griechischen/Poems*  from the Greek 1782, and a translation of Sophocles in the same year.

While the Stolbergs were studying at the University of Göttingen, they joined the Göttinger Hain, a group of young poets dedicated to fostering the ideals of freedom, virtue, and a sense of national identity. This group prefigured the *Sturm und Drang*.

# Stolberg, Friedrich Leopold, Count (1750-1819)

German poet, brother of Christian Stolberg. He was the author of the tragedy *Timoleon* 1784; and produced translations from Greek of Homer's *Iliad* 1778, of works by Plato 1796-97, and of dramas by Aeschylus 1802; and from English of the 'Ossian' poems of James <u>Macpherson</u> 1806.

Leopold also produced a novel, *Die Insel/The Island* 1788; a 15-volume *Geschichte der Religion Jesu Christi/History of the Christian Religion* 1806-18; and a life of Alfred the Great 1815.

## Stone, Irving (1903-1989)

### born Irving Tannenbaum

US writer. Early in his career he wrote plays and detective stories, but after a stay in France, he became a highly successful writer of biographical novels. He is noted for *Lust for Life* (1934), based on the life of Vincent Van Gogh, and a biography of Michelangelo, *The Agony and the Ecstasy* (1961).

He was born in San Francisco. He changed his surname legally, and was educated at the University of California (BA 1923) and the University of Southern California (MA 1924). He taught economics at the college level 1923-26, lectured and taught at several other institutions 1948-85, and lived in Los Angeles.

## Stone, Robert Anthony (1937-)

US novelist and journalist. His writing often explores the corrupting influences of politics and the horrors of violence in modern culture. His *Dog Soldiers* (1974; National Book Award) is a classic novel about the moral destructiveness of the Vietnam War.

A Flag for Sunrise (1982) similarly explores the political and moral consequences of US intervention in a corrupt South American republic. Among his other works are *Children of Light* (1986) and *Damascus Gate* (1998).

# Storm, Theodor Woldsen (1817-1888)

German poet and writer of short stories. He published his first literary works, *Gedichte/Poems* and the story 'Immensee', in 1852. His final novella, 'Der Schimmelreiter' 1888, is a finely crafted tragedy concerning a proud, isolated figure's vain struggle against fate and the forces of nature. Like much of Storm's work, it is pervaded by a profound sense of melancholy and loss.

# Story, William Wetmore (1819-1895)

US sculptor and poet. He studied sculpture in Italy in 1847 before settling there permanently in 1856. He wrote poetry and became close friends of Robert and Elizabeth Browning and Henry James. He is known for his literary interests and related sculptures, such as *Cleopatra* (1858).

He was born in Salem, Massachusetts. He studied at Harvard and practised law.

# Stout, Rex (Todhunter) (1886-1975)

US writer. He had a long and successful writing career. His first mystery novel, *Fer-de-Lance* (1934), introduced Nero Wolfe, a fat, brilliant, orchid-loving detective, and Archie Goodwin, his assistant and man-about-town. He was also a founder and director of Vanguard Press.

He was born in Noblesville, Indiana. His family moved to Topeka, Kansas, when he was young, and he was schooled locally. He joined the navy 1906-08, then held a variety of jobs in different locations. He lived in Paris 1927-29. Stout lived in Brewster, New York, served on many patriotic committees and boards, and was a radio broadcaster during World War II.

## Stowe, Harriet Elizabeth Beecher (1811-1896)

US writer, abolitionist, and suffragist. She is best known for her antislavery novel <u>Uncle Tom's Cabin</u>, first published serially in 1851-52, which is considered one of the most important books in US literature. Her Christian and abolitionist ideals, combined with the death of her infant son in 1849, provided the context and inspiration for the novel, which when published in book form was an immediate success.

Born in Litchfield, Connecticut, Stowe was the daughter of Congregationalist minister Lyman Beecher, and in 1836 married Calvin Ellis Stowe, a professor of theology. Her first book, *The Mayflower*, was published in 1843. She was living in Brunswick, Maine, a mother of six, when she wrote *Uncle Tom's Cabin*. It was radical

in its time and did much to spread antislavery sentiment, but in the 20th century was criticized for sentimentality and racism.

### Strachey, (Giles) Lytton (1880-1932)

English critic and biographer. He was a member of the <u>Bloomsbury Group</u> of writers and artists. His *Landmarks in French Literature* was written in 1912. The mocking and witty treatment of Cardinal Manning, Florence Nightingale, Thomas Arnold, and General Gordon in *Eminent Victorians* (1918) won him recognition. His biography of *Queen Victoria* (1921) was more affectionate.

### Strada, Jacopo (1515-1588)

Italian antiquary. He was appointed court antiquary by the Holy Roman emperor Ferdinand I and continued in imperial service all his life. A collector of coins and books, Strada produced for his patrons *Epitome Thesauri Antiquitatum/Summary of the Riches of the Ancients*, relating the history of the emperors from Julius Caesar to the present day, with illustrations of coins.

Strada was born in Rome. His son Octavio Strada (1550-1607) also worked on imperial history, posthumously published as *De Vita Imperatorum et Caesarum Romanorum/On the Life of the Roman Emperors* (1615).

## Strand, Mark (1934-)

Canadian-born US poet and writer whose family moved to the USA in 1938. He wrote fiction, criticism, and children's books, and worked as a translator and editor. He is best known, however, for his lyric poetry, as in *Selected Poems* (1980).

He was born in Summerside, Prince Edward Island, Canada. He attended Antioch (BA 1957), Yale (BFA 1959), and the University of Iowa (MA 1962). He taught at many institutions, notably the University of Utah (1981), received a MacArthur Foundation Grant (1987), and was named poet laureate by the Library of Congress (1990).

### Straparola, Giovanni Francesco (c. 1480-c. 1557)

Italian writer. He is chiefly remembered for his *Piacevolinotti*. This comprised a series of tales modelled on Boccaccio's *Decameron*. These provided sources for Shakespeare and Molière, among other writers, and also contained stories such as 'Beauty and the Beast' and 'Puss in Boots'. Straparola was born in Caravaggio, Italy.

# Strassburg, Gottfried von (lived c. 1210)

German poet. He was the author of the unfinished epic *Tristan und Isolde*, which inspired the German composer Wagner.

# Stratemeyer, Edward L (1862-1930)

US writer and book syndicate operator. From 1906 onwards he supplied the characters, plots, and authors' pen-names to a team of writers who over the years wrote more than 800 books under some 60 pseudonyms, including the *Tom Swift* series (by Victor Appleton) and the *Hardy Boys* series (by Franklin W Dixon). Stratemeyer himself probably wrote a total of another 220 books.

He was born in Elizabeth, New Jersey. After graduating from high school and working in his father's tobacco shop, he began writing juvenile fiction, selling his first story in 1888. During the next decade he contributed to and edited various magazines. In 1894 he began his prolific output of series books, combining rags-to-riches sentiments with formulaic adventure plots. He founded the Stratemeyer Literary Syndicate in New York (later moving to New Jersey). After his death the syndicate was directed by his daughter, Harriet S Adams, who herself had created the *Nancy Drew* series (under the name of Carolyn Keene).

### stream of consciousness

narrative technique in which a writer presents directly the uninterrupted flow of a character's thoughts, impressions, and feelings, without the conventional devices of dialogue and description. It first came to be widely used in the early 20th century. Leading exponents have included the novelists Virginia Woolf, James Joyce, and William Faulkner.

Molly Bloom's soliloquy in Joyce's *Ulysses* is a good example of the technique. The English writer Dorothy Richardson (1873-1957) is said to have originated the technique in her novel sequence *Pilgrimage*, the first volume of which was published 1915 and the last posthumously. The term 'stream of consciousness' was introduced by the philosopher William James 1890.

## Streuvels, Stijn (1871-1969)

### pseudonym of Frank Lateur

Belgian novelist. Streuvels wrote about the west Flemish farm workers, whose character and environment are explored with sympathy, if pessimistically, in such

works as Langs de Wegen/The Long Road 1902 and De Vlaschaard/The Flax Field 1907.

### strophe

#### (Greek 'turning')

in ancient Greek drama, a section or stanza of a choral ode. The strophe was sung by the chorus as they moved in one direction, and followed by the antistrophe when they moved back in the other direction.

### Struwwelpeter

collection of cautionary tales written and illustrated by German author Heinrich Hoffmann (1809-1894), published in German 1845 (English translation 1848). The tales, in verse form, feature characters such as 'Shock-head Peter' (Struwwelpeter), 'Johnny Head-in-Air', and 'Augustus who would not have any Soup'.

# Štúr, L'udovít (1815-1856)

Slovak scholar, nationalist, and poet. He was the main advocate of Slovak Romanticism. Although he wrote more in Czech than in Slovak, he was almost solely responsible for creating the Slovak literary language - a construction based on central Slovak dialects - and published his Slovak grammar in 1846. In the 1848 revolution, Štúr led the Slovak armed uprising. More of a poetic theorist than a poet, Štúr published only one collection of his own, *Songs and Lyrics* 1853.

### Styron, William Clark (1925-)

US novelist. His novels *Lie Down in Darkness* (1951), *The Confessions of Nat Turner* (1967, Pulitzer Prize), and *Sophie's Choice* (1979, filmed 1982) all won critical and popular acclaim. *A Tidewater Morning: Three Tales from Youth* appeared in 1993.

*Confessions* caused controversy and protest from black critics for its fictionalization of the leader of a slave revolt in 19th-century Virginia. *Sophie's Choice* is a poignant and heartwrenching story of a young mother during the Holocaust. Other work includes the short memoir of a descent into serious depression, *Darkness Visible* (1990) and the autobiographical trilogy *A Tidewater Morning* (1993).

### Suares, André (1868-1948)

#### pseudonym of Gelix-André-Yves Scantrel

French writer. Most of his work consists of essays and critical writings, including *Images de la grandeur/Images of Greatness* 1901, *Voici I'homme/Ecce Homo* 1906, and *Sur la vie/On Life* 1909-12. He also wrote poetry (*Rêves de l'ombre/Dreams of the Shade* 1937) and plays (*La Tragedie d'Elektre et d'Oreste/The Tragedy of Electra and Orestes* 1905).

## Suckling, John (1609-1641)

English Cavalier poet and dramatist. An ardent Royalist, he played an active part in the Civil War, fleeing to France where he may have committed suicide. His chief lyrics appeared in *Fragmenta Aurea* and include his best-known one, 'Why so pale and wan, fond lover?' He is credited with inventing the card game cribbage.

He tried to effect Lord Strafford's escape from the Tower of London. He was knighted in 1630.

### Sudermann, Hermann (1857-1928)

German playwright and novelist. After a short spell of journalism in 1881-82 he began writing novels in the Maupassant style. But it was as a dramatist that he won most of his popularity; his naturalistic plays, notably *Heimat* (1892), were highly successful. His later plays were critical and commercial failures, and made him return to prose-writing. Sudermann was born in Matziken, East Prussia. He began his career as a chemist's apprentice but received further education at Konigsberg University and later taught in Berlin.

## Sue, Eugène (Joseph Marie) (1804-1857)

French novelist. He specialized in the portrayal of the urban squalor produced by industrialization. His novel *Les Mystères de Paris/The Mysteries of Paris* 1842 revealed the sordid side of the French capital, and was to influence Victor Hugo's *Les Misérables. Le Juif errant/The Wandering Jew* 1844-45 was an attack on the Jesuits.

Sue was a socialist, and in 1848, with the establishment of the Second Republic, was elected as a representative of the national assembly. On the accession of Emperor Napoleon III in 1853, however, he was forced into exile.

# Sukenick, Ronald (1932-2004)

US postmodern novelist and theoretician. His innovative and laconic style marks the collection *The Death of the Novel and Other Stories* (1969) and such novels as *Up* (1968) and *Out* (1973). Later works include *Blown Away* (1986) and a volume of essays *In Form: Digressions on the Act of Fiction* (1985).

He was the founder and publisher of the *American Book Review* (1977). He received an American Book Award (2000) and an American Academy of Arts and Letters award (2002).

# Sully-Prudhomme, (René François) Armand (1839-1907)

French poet. He wrote philosophical verse including *Les Solitudes/Solitude* (1869), *La Justice/Justice* (1878), and *Le Bonheur/Happiness* (1888). He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1901.

## Supervieille, Jules (1884-1960)

French writer, born in Uruguay. His later poetry, as in the collection *Gravitations* 1925, shows an individual style, characterized by simplicity and humanity. He also enjoyed success with his novels and short-story collections, including *L'Homme de la pampa/The Man from the Pampas* 1923 and *L'Arche de Noé/Noah's Ark* 1938.

Supervieille began by writing poetry in the style of Les <u>Parnassiens</u>. His later poetry includes *Le forçat innocent/The Innocent Convict* 1930, *Les Amis inconnus/Unknown Friends* 1934, and the beautiful wartime poems, written in South America, *Poèmes de la France malheureuse/Poems of Unfortunate France* 1941.

# Surrey, Henry Howard, Earl of Surrey (c. 1517-1547)

English courtier and poet. With Thomas Wyatt, he introduced the sonnet to England and was a pioneer of <u>blank verse</u>. He was executed on a poorly based charge of high treason.

# Surtees, R(obert) S(mith) (1805-1864)

English novelist. He created Jorrocks, a sporting grocer, and in 1838 published *Jorrocks's Jaunts and Jollities*. He excels in the satirical observation of characters and situations from rural society life, such as he demonstrated also in *Hillingdon* 

Hall (1845), and Mr Sponge's Sporting Tour (1853).

### Svengali

person who moulds another into a performer and masterminds his or her career. The original Svengali was a character in the novel *Trilby* (1894) by George <u>Du Maurier</u>.

### Svevo, Italo (1861-1928)

#### pen-name of Ettore Schmitz

Italian novelist, encouraged by James Joyce. His work includes *As a Man Grows Older* (1898) and his comic masterpiece *Confessions of Zeno* (1923), one of the first novels to be based on Freudian analysis.

### sweetness and light

phrase popularized by the English writer Matthew Arnold in *Culture and Anarchy* 1869, where he advocated a combination of intellectual curiosity with beauty and grace. It was borrowed from Jonathan Swift, who in *Battle of the Books* 1704 compared poets to bees whose honey and wax provide 'the two noblest of things, which are sweetness and light'.

### Swift, Graham (1949-)

English novelist. His first two novels, *The Sweet-Shop Owner* (1980) and *Shuttlecock* (1981), earned him a reputation as one of the most promising English novelists of his generation. He won wide critical acclaim with his third novel, *Waterland* (1983). Its theme - the struggle to understand and come to terms with the past - is central to his other novels, such as *Last Orders* (1996), which won the Booker Prize for Fiction.

His other books include the novels *Out of This World* (1988), *Ever After* (1992), *The Light of Day* (2003), and the collection of short stories *Learning to Swim* (1982).

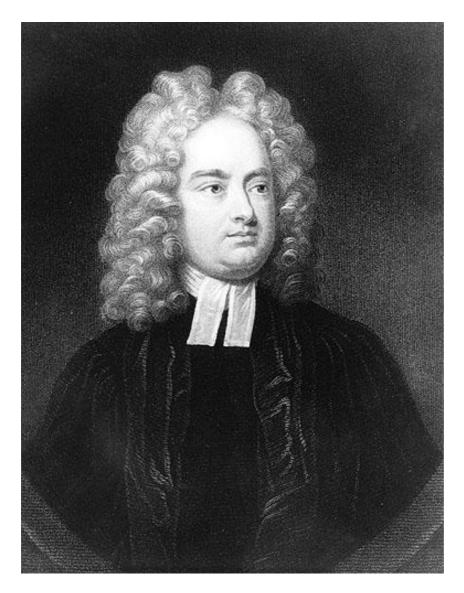
### Swift, Jonathan (1667-1745)

Irish satirist and Anglican cleric. His best-known work is <u>Gulliver's Travels</u> (1726), an allegory (symbolic story with meaning beyond its literal sense) describing travel to

lands inhabited by giants, miniature people, and intelligent horses. His satirical talents are evident in the pamphlet *A Modest Proposal* (1729), which he wrote in protest of the on-going famine in Ireland; it suggested that children of the poor should be eaten. His other works include *The Tale of a Tub* (1704), attacking corruption in religion and learning. His lucid prose style is simple and controlled and he imparted his views with fierce indignation and wit.

Born in Dublin, he was educated there at Trinity College, and ordained in 1694. Swift became secretary to the diplomat William Temple (1628-1699) at Moor Park, Surrey, where his friendship with the child 'Stella' (Esther Johnson; 1681-1728) began in 1689. Returning to Ireland, he was ordained in the Church of England in 1694, and in 1699 was made a prebendary of St Patrick's, Dublin. He made contributions to the Tory paper *The Examiner*, of which he was editor 1710-11. He obtained the deanery of St Patrick in 1713. His *Journal to Stella* is a series of intimate letters (1710-13), in which he described his life in London. From about 1738 his mind began to fail.

### Swift



(Image © Billie Love)

Irish-born Anglican clergyman Jonathan Swift, also known as Dean Swift, who was

also a cousin to John Dryden. A political pamphleteer and piercing satirist, Swift wrote his masterpiece *Gulliver's Travels*, a criticism of society and its institutions, set in an imaginary land of fantastic creatures, after his return to Dublin as the dean of St Patrick's.

### Swinburne, Algernon Charles (1837-1909)

English poet. He attracted attention with the choruses of his Greek-style tragedy *Atalanta in Calydon* (1865), but he and <u>Rossetti</u> were attacked in 1871 as leaders of 'the fleshly school of poetry', and the revolutionary politics of *Songs before Sunrise* (1871) alienated others. His verse is notable for its emotion and opulent language.

## Swindells, Robert (1939-)

English novelist. Swindells has written around 30 novels for children and young adults, one of his most widely read being *Brother in the Land* (1985). Favourite themes include mystery, fantasy, and the supernatural; titles include *The Ice Palace* (1992), *Hydra* (1993), *Inside the Worm* (1994), *Nightmare Stairs* (1998), and *Room* 13 (1998; Children's Book Award).

His work tackles serious issues for young people; *Dosh* (1999), deals with bullying at school, *Stone Cold* (1995), focuses on life on the streets of London, *Smash!* (1998) tackles issues of racism and peer pressure and *Abomination* (1999) highlights intolerance and bullying.

# Swiss Family Robinson, The

children's adventure story by Swiss author Johann Wyss, first published in German 1812-13 and expanded by subsequent editors and translators. Modelled on Defoe's *Robinson Crusoe*, it tells of a Swiss family shipwrecked on a desert island and the lessons taught to the children by their adventures there.

## Sylva, Carmen (1843-1916)

### pen-name of (Pauline) Elizabeth (Ottilie Louise); Queen of Romania

German-born author and queen of Romania 1881-1914. She published several volumes of romances and poetry, some of which have been translated into English, for example *A Royal Story Book*, 1911, and *Sparks from the Anvil: or Thoughts of a Queen*, 1913.

### Symbolism

late 19th-century movement in French poetry, which inspired a similar trend in French painting. The Symbolist poets used words for their symbolic rather than concrete meaning. Leading exponents were Paul Verlaine, Stéphane Mallarmé, and Arthur Rimbaud.

# Symonds, John Addington (1840-1893)

British critic who spent much of his life in Italy and Switzerland, and campaigned for homosexual rights. He wrote *The Renaissance in Italy* 1875-86. His frank memoirs were finally published 1984.

# Symons, Arthur William (1865-1945)

Welsh critic. He was a follower of Walter <u>Pater</u>, and friend of the artists Toulouse-Lautrec and Aubrey Beardsley, the poets Stéphane Mallarmé and W B Yeats, and the novelist Joseph Conrad. He introduced T S Eliot to the poetry of Jules Laforgue and wrote *The Symbolist Movement in Literature* 1900.

# Symons, Julian (Gustave) (1912-1994)

English novelist, poet, and critic. In 1937 he founded, and edited until 1939, the magazine *Twentieth Century Verse. Confusions about X* (1939) was his own first book of poetry, of which over the years he published four more. At first a conscientious objector during World War II, he subsequently served in the 57th Tank regiment. *The Immaterial Murder Case* (1945) was the first of his many crime novels, for which he is best known. He was instrumental in the founding of the Crime Writers' Association (1953) and was president of the Detection Club 1976-85.

His novels, in which he develops his theme with wit and intellectual flair, include *The End of Solomon Grundy* (1964), *The Man Who Lost His Wife* (1970), and *The Blackheath Poisonings* (1978), one of several works with a Victorian setting.

### symposium

### (Greek sumposion 'a drinking party')

conference or general discussion, or a published collection of opinions on a given

subject by various contributors. The title was used in ancient Greece by both Plato and Xenophon for books describing the conversations of Socrates and others.

### synthesis

in literary plots, the resolving and satisfying of an often complicated pattern of characters and relationships.

Synthesis often involves a balancing of the plot, where characters come together and no character is left outside the final union, as in the marriages that conclude Jane Austen's *Pride and Prejudice* or in the neat conclusions of Shakespeare's comedies.

# Szymborska, Wislawa (1923-)

Polish poet, awarded a Nobel Prize for Literature in 1996. Her work is particularly noted for its careful choice of words and universal themes, unusual in a Polish poet living through such importantly political times as Szymborska, who witnessed Stalinism and the Solidarity revolution of 1989. At the time of her Nobel Prize, she had published 16 collections of poetry, and had translated French poetry. Other honours for her work include the German Goethe Prize (1991) and the Austrian Herder Prize (1995). In 1996 she also received the Polish Pen Club Prize.

Szymborska made her poetical debut in 1945 in a Polish daily newspaper with a poem entitled *Szukam slowa/l Seek the Word*. In 1952 she joined the Polish Socialist Party (PZPR), and her work was branded as socialist realism which praised communism. However, she later described her disillusion with such politics, particularly after the death of Stalin in 1953, and her work became less political. She joined the editorial staff of the Polish weekly literary newspaper *Zycie literackie/Literary Life* in 1953, editing the poetry section until 1966, and continuing as a columnist and essayist there until 1981, when she joined the staff of the monthly literary journal *Pismo*. Her work has been translated and received around the world. As well as her poetry, she has published her group of essays *Lektury Nadobowiazkowe/Optional Readings*, written from 1967 to 1981.

# Tabari, al-, Abu Ja'far Muhammad ibn-Jarir (c. 839-923)

Persian scholar who wrote in Arabic. He composed the first history of the world in Arabic, a vital resource for understanding the early history of Islam, and compiled an extensive commentary on the Koran.

## Tabley, Baron de

English writer, see <u>De Tabley</u>.

## Tagore, Rabindranath (1861-1941)

Bengali Indian writer. He translated into English his own verse *Gitanjali/Song Offerings* (1912) and his verse play *Chitra* (1896). He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1913.

Born in Calcutta, into a wealthy family, he began to write poetry as a child; his first book appeared when he was only 17 years old. After studying law in England, he returned to India, where he was probably the most important and popular author of the colonial era, writing poetry, short stories, novels, and plays. An ardent nationalist and advocate of social reform, he resigned his knighthood as a gesture of protest against British repression in India.

# Tailhade, Laurent (1854-1919)

French writer. His work includes the poems 'Le Jardin des rêves/The Garden of Dreams' 1880, 'Vitraux/Stained-Glass Windows' 1892, and the collections *Poèmes élégiaques/Elegiac Poems* 1907 and the satirical *Poèmes aristophanesques/Poems in the Style of Aristophanes*. Tailhade also wrote a number of essays.

## Taine, Hippolyte Adolphe (1828-1893)

French critic and historian. He analysed literary works as products of period and environment, as in *Histoire de la litérature anglaise/History of English Literature* 1863 and *Philosophie de l'art/Philosophy of Art* 1865-69.

## Tallemant des Réaux, Gédéon (1619-1692)

French writer. His chief work, *Historiettes*, completed about 1659, comprises a number of short biographies of contemporary literary figures. It remained unpublished until 1834-35, and is now a valuable historical record of the period.

Taming of the Shrew, The

comedy by William <u>Shakespeare</u>, first performed 1593-94. Bianca, who has many suitors, must not marry until her elder sister Katherina (the shrew) has done so. Petruchio agrees to woo Katherina so that his friend Hortensio may marry Bianca. Petruchio succeeds in 'taming' Katherina but Bianca marries another.

# Tan, Amy (1952-)

#### born An-mei Ruth Tan

US writer. Her first novel, *The Joy Luck Club* (1989), told the story of four Chinese immigrant mothers and their American daughters, and was an international best-seller. She was also the screenwriter and producer of the film of *The Joy Luck Club* (1993). In 2001 she published the novel *The Bonesetter's Daughter*.

Tan was born in Oakland, California, to Chinese immigrant parents. She worked as a freelance business writer in the 1980s. Her other books include the novels *The Kitchen God's Wife* (1991), inspired by her mother's life in China before the communist revolution; and *The Hundred Secret Senses* (1993); and the children's books *The Moon Lady* (1992), and *The Chinese Siamese Cat* (1994).

# Tanizaki, Jun-ichiro (1886-1965)

Japanese novelist. His works include a version of <u>Murasaki's</u> *The Tale of Genji* (1939-41), *The Makioka Sisters* in three volumes (1943-48), and *The Key* (1956).

### Tannhäuser

13th-century German Minnesinger and crusader, identified with a legendary knight who is the subject of a 16th-century ballad, the *Tannhäuserlied*.

In the ballad, Tannhäuser is seduced by the sensual pleasures of the mountain of Venus (Venusberg), but after seven years he travels to Rome to repent for his sins. Pope Urban IV, however, says that Tannhäuser is as unlikely to find forgiveness as the staff in the Pope's hand is likely to blossom. Three days later the staff produces shoots, but Tannhäuser has returned to the Venusberg and the unforgiving Pope is eternally damned.

## Tansillio, Luigi (1510-1568)

Italian courtier, soldier, and poet, born in Venosa in southern Italy. He served in administrative and military posts under the Spanish viceroys of Naples, taking an

active part in many campaigns. As a poet he wrote in a wide range of forms, from sonnets and eclogues in the style of <u>Petrarch</u>, to didactic verse and religious epics. One of his early works, *II vendemmiatore/The Grape Harvester* (1532), was put on the Index Librorum Prohibitorum for obscenity.

His other works include numerous lyrics, which achieved wide circulation; the religious epic *Le lagrime de S Pietro/The Tears of St Peter* (1585); and *La balia/The Nurse*, written to encourage mothers to nurse their own babies.

# Tarkington, (Newton) Booth (1869-1946)

US novelist. His novels for young people, which include *Penrod* (1914), are classics. He was among the best-selling authors of the early 20th century with works such as *Monsieur Beaucaire* (1900) and novels of the Midwest, including *The Magnificent Ambersons* (1918) (filmed in 1942 by Orson Welles).

### Tarzan

fictitious hero inhabiting the African rainforest, created by US writer Edgar Rice <u>Burroughs</u> in *Tarzan of the Apes* (1914), with numerous sequels. Tarzan and his partner Jane have featured in films, comic strips, and television series.

Tarzan, raised by apes from infancy, is in fact a British peer, Lord Greystoke. He has enormous physical strength and the ability to communicate with animals. Jane Porter, an American, falls in love with him while on safari and chooses to stay.

## Tasso, Bernardo (1493-1569)

Poet from Bergamo (northern Italy). His career was spent in the service of various Italian princes: his oeuvre included Petrarchan lyrics, Horatian odes, a discourse on poetry (*Ragionamento della poesia*, 1562), and an epic *Amadigi di Gaula*, (1560), based on a Spanish work by Ordonez de Montalvo.

His son, Torquato Tasso, was also an epic poet.

# Tasso, Torquato (1544-1595)

Italian poet. He was the author of the romantic epic poem of the First Crusade *Gerusalemme liberata/Jerusalem Delivered* completed by 1575 and first published in 1581, which he revised as *Gerusalemme conquistata/Jerusalem Conquered*, published in 1593.

Tasso was born at Sorrento in southern Italy. As a boy accompanied he his father, the poet Bernado <u>Tasso</u>, into political exile, spending a short time at the court of Urbino and studying at the universities of Padua and Bologna. In these early years he produced *Rinaldo* (1562), a chivalric romance. In 1565 he joined the retinue of Cardinal Luigi d'Este, who took him to Paris, where he was influenced by the works of the <u>Pléiade</u> group of poets. In 1572 Duke Alfonso II d'Este appointed him court poet at Ferrara, where his play *Aminta* was performed in the summer of 1573. By 1575 he had completed the first of his many versions of his epic *Gerusalemme libertata*.

Soon afterwards he betrayed signs of the mental instability that remained with him for the rest of his life. In 1577, after a violent outburst in the presence of Lucrezia d'Este, he was briefly confined: two years later after abusing Duke Alfonso in public, he was confined in the hospital of Sant'Anna from 1579-86. After his release (authorized by Alfonso), he continued his wanderings, though now with the protection of prominent men and women and welcomed by various academies and religious orders. He finally settled at the monastery of Sant'Onofrio in Rome, dying before his coronation as poet laureate, which Pope Clement VIII had intended for him, could take place.

## Tassoni, Alessandro (1565-1635)

Italian poet. His principal works are the burlesque epic *La Secchia Rapita/The Rape* of the Bucket 1622, and the prose works *Considerazioni sopra il Petrarca/ Observations on Petrarch's Poems* 1609 (an attack on <u>Petrarch</u>) and *Pensieri Diversi/ Diverse Thoughts* 1612.

# Tate, (John Orley) Allen (1899-1979)

US man of letters. He is best remembered for measured, classical poems like his well-known 'Ode to the Confederate Dead'. The winner of the Bollingen poetry prize in 1956, he was also a prominent New Critic, an essayist, and the teacher of John Berryman and Theodore Roethke, among many others.

# Tate, James (Vincent) (1943-)

US poet. He is known for his preoccupation with the use of language, seen in such books as *The Lost Pilot* (1967) and *Constant Defender* (1983). He taught at several universities, including Columbia (1969-71) and the University of Massachusetts (1971).

# Tate, Nahum (1652-1715)

Irish poet. Tate was born in Dublin, and educated there at Trinity College before moving to London. He wrote an adaptation of Shakespeare's *King Lear* with a happy ending, entitled *The History of King Lear* (1681). He wrote the libretto for Purcell's *Dido and Aeneas*; he also produced *A New Version of the Psalms* (1696); his hymn 'While Shepherds Watched Their Flocks by Night' appeared in the *Supplement* (1703). He became British poet laureate in 1692.

### Tatius, Achilles

Greek writer; see Achilles Tatius.

# Tauchnitz, Christian Bernhard Freiherrvon (1816-1895)

German publisher, nephew of Karl Christoph Traugott Tauchnitz.

He founded a printing and publishing house in Leipzig in 1837, which became more famous than that belonging to the senior branch of the family. In 1841, Tauchnitz began a library of British and American authors; in 1868 he began the collection of German authors, and in 1886 the *Student's Tauchnitz* editions appeared.

## Tawfiq al-Hakim

Egyptian dramatist; see Hakim.

### Taylor, Bayard (1825-1878)

US traveller, journalist, and writer. He travelled widely in Europe (1844-45) and the Near and Far East (1851-53); he became a master's mate aboard Matthew Perry's expedition to Japan in 1853. He wrote and lectured extensively about his travels. Meanwhile, he continued to publish poetry and novels and his translation of Goethe's *Faust* (2 vols. 1870-71).

## Taylor, Edward (1642-1729)

American Puritan minister and poet. His complex sequences of poems, including *God's Determinations Touching His Electc.* 1680 and the 217-poem *Preparatory* 

*Meditations* 1682-1725, are influenced by John <u>Donne</u> and the English <u>metaphysical</u> <u>poets</u>. The poems were discovered in 1937 and first published in 1939.

# Taylor, Mildred D (1943-)

US writer. She has written realistic stories to help teach children about racism. Her books tell of the lives of black people in racially prejudiced white communities, and they often show the strength and security of family life side by side with the evils of racism. They include *Roll of Thunder*, *Hear My Cry* (1976), for which she won the Newberry Medal in 1977, and *Let the Circle be Unbroken* (1981).

Taylor was born in Jackson, Mississippi. She grew up and went to school in Toledo, Ohio, where she was the only black student in her class. After university she taught with the Peace Corps in Ethiopia and saw a pride and independence among the people there that reminded her of the stories her father had told her about his slave ancestors. When she returned to the USA, she studied journalism at the University of Colorado.

# Taylor, Peter (Hillsman) (1917-1994)

US writer. He wrote novels and plays, but is best known for his short stories, as in *The Collected Stories of Peter Taylor* (1969). He was consistently praised for his mastery of the form and his use of Southern settings.

# Teasdale, Sara (1884-1933)

### born Sarah Trevor

US poet. Her early poetry, such as *Love Songs* (1917), was marked by a delicate lyricism, but her later poems, as in *Strange Victory* (1933), reveal a more intense core. Afflicted with bouts of depression, she committed suicide in New York City.

## Tegnér, Esaias (1782-1846)

Swedish poet, literary critic, and Lutheran bishop. Tegnér's patriotic ode 'Svea' 1811 was awarded a prize by the Swedish Academy. Although he wrote first in the Romantic idiom, he gradually dropped its emotional excesses, as in *Nattvardsbarnen/The Children of the Lord's Supper* 1820. *Frithiofs Saga* 1825 is a paraphrase of an Icelandic <u>saga</u>.

# Teixeira, de Pascoaes (1879-1952)

#### pseudonym of Joaqium Pereira Teixeira de Vasconcellos

Portuguese poet and essayist. His early work was lyrical. Later prose writings focused on the metaphysical questions of the nature of good and evil and the progress of humanity. His works include *Jesus e Pan/Jesus and Pan* 1903, *Regresso ao Paraiso/Retreat to Paradise* 1912, and *Santo Agostinho/St Augustine* 1945.

### Tel Quel

French literary magazine founded 1960 by the critic Philippe Sollers. Its aims were originally aesthetic but became increasingly ideological. It promoted the writings of the Marquis de Sade, Stéphane Mallarmé, and Antonin Artaud as a revolutionary force that could change society.

# Tempest, The

romantic drama by William <u>Shakespeare</u>, first performed 1611-12, in London. Prospero, usurped as Duke of Milan by his brother Antonio, lives on a remote island with his daughter Miranda and Caliban, a deformed creature. Prospero uses magic to shipwreck Antonio and his party on the island and, with the help of the spirit Ariel, regains his dukedom.

# Tennant, Emma (Christina) (1937-)

English novelist who has achieved critical success for her works using fantasy and stream of consciousness to explore extreme psychological states, as well as for her more conventional works.

Her novels include *The Time of the Crack* (1973), *Hotel de Dream* (1976), *The Bad Sister* (1978), *Wild Nights* (1979), *Woman Beware Woman* (1983), *Cycle of the Sun: The House of Hospitalities* (1987), *Faustine* (1992), *Pemberley* (1993), *An Unequal Marriage* (1994). Her books written for children include *The Ghost Child* (1984), and *Emma in Love* (1996). Her memoir, *Girlitude*, was published in 1999.

Tenney, Tabitha (1762-1837)

born Tabitha Gilman

American anthologist and writer. She remains known chiefly for her two-volume novel, *Female Quixotism: Exhibited in the Romantic Opinions and Extravagant Adventures of Dorcasina Sheldon* (1801), a satire on literary tastes and an expression of American intellectual independence. In 1799 she published *The Pleasing Instructor*, an anthology of poetry and selections from classical writers intended to improve the character and conduct of young women; no copies have survived.

## Tennyson, Alfred (1809-1892)

#### **1st Baron Tennyson**

English poet. He was poet laureate 1850-92. His verse has a majestic, musical quality, and few poets have surpassed his precision and delicacy of language. His works include 'The Lady of Shalott' (1833), 'The Lotus Eaters' (1833), 'Ulysses' (1842), 'Break, Break, Break' (1842), and 'The Charge of the Light Brigade' (1854); the longer narratives *Locksley Hall* (1832) and *Maud* (1855); the elegy *In Memoriam* (1850); and a long series of poems on the Arthurian legends, *The IdyIIs of the King* (1859-89). Tennyson's poetry is characterized by a wide range of interests; an intense sympathy with the deepest feelings and aspirations of humanity; an exquisite sense of beauty; and a marvellous power of vivid and minute description, often achieved by a single phrase, and heightened by the perfect matching of sense and sound.

He was born in Somersby, Lincolnshire, and educated at Cambridge. An unhappy childhood and youth may account for his remarkable sensitivity, depression, and melancholia in later years. The death of English writer Arthur Hallam (a close friend during his years at Cambridge) in 1833 prompted the elegiac, mournful sequence *In Memoriam*, which grew over the years into a record of spiritual conflict and a confession of faith; it was finally published (anonymously) in 1850, the year in which he succeeded English poet William <u>Wordsworth</u> as poet laureate and married Emily Sellwood (1811-1889). He was made a peer in 1884. Tennyson lived on the Isle of Wight from 1853-69; he then built a house at Aldworth, near Haslemere, Surrey, which was his home until his death.

#### Terence (с. 190-с. 159 вс)

#### born Publius Terentius Afer

Roman dramatist. Born in Carthage, he was taken as a slave to Rome where he was freed and came under the patronage of the Roman general Scipio Africanus Minor. His surviving six comedies (including *The Eunuch* (161  $_{BC}$ )) are subtly characterized and based on Greek models. They were widely read and performed during the Middle Ages and the Renaissance.

US writer. He wrote many magazine stories and is best known for his collie stories for young readers, such as 'Lad, A Dog' (1919). After studying at Columbia University (BA 1893), he toured Europe and the Near East with his mother, then returned to New York City to work as a reporter for the *Evening World* (1894-1914). From 1912 onwards, he lived at Sunnybank in Pompton Lakes, New Jersey, where he had spent many summers as a child and which he used as the setting for many of his books.

## Terkel, 'Studs' (1912-)

#### born Louis Terkel

US interviewer, actor, and writer. From about 1949-53 he hosted *Stud's Place*, a Chicago television program where he played a bartender who interviewed various distinguished guests. He was blacklisted in 1953 for 'signing an anti-Jim Crow petition', and, unable to get work, he turned to a socially progressive radio station, WFMT. Practically a volunteer in the beginning, he developed the hour-long radio program that became the *Studs Terkel Show* and which in 1962 won the prestigious Pre-Italia Award.

## Tess of the d'Urbervilles

novel (1891) by Thomas <u>Hardy</u>. The story tells of the destruction of Tess Durbeyfield, 'a pure woman', by the fecklessness of her once-powerful family, a villain's sexual predatoriness, and the self-deluding idealism of the man she loves. Tess finally kills her seducer and is condemned to death herself. The novel contains some of Hardy's most memorable depictions of human beings at the mercy of malevolent fate.

## Testi, Fulvio (1593-1646)

Italian poet. He wrote canzoni in the classical style relating to contemporary events. He was born in Ferrara.

## textual criticism

the attempt, through scholarship, to establish the most accurate and authentic version of a literary text when several different versions exist.

## Tey, Josephine

pseudonym of Scottish novelist and dramatist Elizabeth Mackintosh.

#### Thacher, John Boyd (1847-1909)

US book collector, public official, and writer. Associated with his family's manufacturing firm for most of his life, he was also a state senator and mayor of Albany and, as a hobby, collected incunabula and valuable materials on Christopher Columbus, of whom he wrote a biography. Thacher was born in Albany, New York.

## Thackeray, William Makepeace (1811-1863)

English novelist and essayist. He was a regular contributor to *Fraser's Magazine* and *Punch*. His first novel was <u>Vanity Fair</u> (1847-48), significant for the breadth of its canvas as well as for the depth of the characterization. This was followed by *Pendennis* (1848), *Henry Esmond* (1852) (and its sequel *The Virginians* (1857-59)), and *The Newcomes* (1853-55), in which Thackeray's tendency to sentimentality is most marked.

The son of an East India Company official, he was educated at Cambridge University. He studied law, and then art in Paris, before ultimately becoming a journalist in London. Other works include *The Book of Snobs* (1848) and the fairy tale *The Rose and the Ring* (1855).

## Thayer, Ernest Lawrence (1863-1940)

US humorous poet. After graduating with honours in 1885, he went to Paris, where his friend, William Randolph Hearst, invited him to contribute a humour column to the *San Francisco Examiner*; Thayer did so under the by-line 'Phin' (1886-88), writing a series of humorous ballads that included 'Casey' (appearing in 1888). It so caught on that he recited it over 10,000 times in the ensuing years. As 'Casey at the Bat' (its widely known title) increased in popularity, many tried to claim authorship (and many ballplayers claimed to have been the original Casey), but Thayer is recognized as the true author.

## Theocritus (c. 310-c. 250 BC)

Greek poet. His *IdyIIs* became models for later pastoral poetry. Probably born in Syracuse, he spent much of his life in Alexandria under the Greek dynasty of the Ptolemies.

## Theognis of Megara

Greek elegiac poet (see <u>elegy</u>). He is said to have been the author of a collection of political verses strongly aristocratic in temper.

# Théophile (1590-1626)

#### also known as Théophile de Viau

French writer. He wrote the pastoral tragedy *Pyramé et Thisbé*, produced 1617, and some sincere and spontaneous love poetry.

The contribution of a few licentious poems to the occasional publication *Le Parnasse satyrique* resulted in him being condemned to be burnt at the stake 1623, but the sentence was afterwards reduced to banishment for life from Paris, which was not strictly enforced.

## Theophrastus (c. 372-c. 287 BC)

Greek philosopher, regarded as the founder of botany. A pupil of Aristotle, Theophrastus took over the leadership of his school in 323 BC, consolidating its reputation. Of his extensive writings, surviving work is mainly on scientific topics, but includes the *Characters*, a series of caricatures which may have influenced the comic dramatist Menander.

Theophrastus covered most aspects of botany: descriptions of plants, classification, plant distribution, propagation, germination, and cultivation. He distinguished between two main groups of flowering plants - dicotyledons and monocotyledons in modern terms - and between flowering plants and cone-bearing trees (angiosperms and gymnosperms).

## Theroux, Paul Edward (1941-)

US novelist and travel writer. His works include the novels Saint Jack (1973), The Mosquito Coast (1981), Doctor Slaughter (1984), Chicago Loop (1990), Kowloon Tong (1997), Hotel Honolulu (2001), and The Stranger at the Palazzo D'Oro (2003). His accounts of his travels by train, notable for their sharp depiction of socio-economic divides, include The Great Railway Bazaar (1975), The Old Patagonian Express (1979), The Kingdom by the Sea (1983), Riding the Iron Rooster (1988), Fresh-Air Fiend: Travel Writings 1985-2000 (2000), and Dark Star Safari: Overland from Cairo

to Cape Town (2003).

Collections of short stories include *The Consul's File* (1977), *World's End* (1980), and *Collected Stories* (1997). Theroux is a frequent contributor to magazines.

## Thesiger, Wilfred Patrick (1910-2003)

English explorer and writer. His travels and military adventures in Abyssinia (now Ethiopia and Eritrea), North Africa, and Arabia are recounted in a number of books, including *Arabian Sands* (1959), *The Marsh Arabs* (1964), *Desert, Marsh and Mountain* (1979), *Visions of a Nomad* (1987), and the autobiographical *The Life of My Choice* (1987).

## Thiard (or Thyard or Tyard), Pontus de (1521-1605)

French poet. He was a member of the <u>*Pléiade*</u> group. His works include three volumes of sonnets, *Erreurs amoureuses* (1549-55), and various essays published as *Discours philosophiques* (1552-58). He became bishop of Chalon in 1578.

## Thibaudet, Albert (1874-1936)

French literary historian. Among his works are *La Poésie de Mallarmé/The Poetry of Mallarmé* 1912, *Flaubert* 1922, *Physiologie de la critique/The Physiology of Criticism* 1930, and *Histoire de la littérature française de 1789 à nos jours/History of French Literature from* 1789 to the Present Day 1936.

## Thibault, Jacques Anatole François

French writer who wrote as Anatole France.

## Thin Man, The

novel (1932) by the US writer Dashiell <u>Hammett</u>, which introduced the suave-toughguy style of detective fiction. It was made into a lighthearted film series in 1934-47, starring William Powell and Myrna Loy.

## Thirkell, Angela Margaret (1891-1961)

#### born Angela Mackail

English novelist. She wrote more than 30 novels set in 'Barsetshire', dealing with the descendants of characters from Anthony Trollope's 'Barsetshire' novels, including *Coronation Summer* (1937), *Growing Up* (1943), and *The Duke's Daughter* (1951).

Born in London, she was the daughter of the classical scholar John William Mackail (1859-1945), grand-daughter of the painter Edward Burne-Jones, and cousin of the writer Rudyard Kipling. Her son was the novelist Colin MacInnes (1914-79).

#### Thomas, (Philip) Edward (1878-1917)

English poet and prose writer. His essays and his poems (including 'Adlestrop') were quiet, stern, melancholy evocations of rural life. *Poems* was published in October 1917 after his death in World War I, followed by *Last Poems* in 1918.

Born in London and educated at St Paul's School, London, as a child Thomas was fascinated by natural history. While at Lincoln College, Oxford University, he married and his first child was born before he took his final examinations. Always determined to earn his living as a writer, against his father's wishes, he scraped out a living for his family. He met the US poet Robert <u>Frost</u> and began writing poetry under his influence. After having to choose whether to move to the USA or enlist, Thomas chose military service and was killed on the first day of the Battle of Arras.

#### Thomas, Augustus (1857-1934)

US playwright. Praised for his use of distinctly American material, his first popular success was *Alabama* (1891), based on a family conflict in the wake of the Civil War. He wrote or adapted over 65 plays, mostly conventional in technique and narrow in appeal and all forgotten, but he led the way in establishing a true American drama. Thomas was born in St Louis, Missouri.

#### Thomas, Isaiah (1749-1831)

US printer and publisher. The foremost 18th-century American publisher, Thomas published over 400 titles, including the most important literary works of the time. He published the first English-language Bible and first dictionary printed in America, the first American edition of the popular *Mother Goose's Melody*, and a speller that sold 300,000 copies. He was the first major US publisher of children's books. Retiring in affluence in 1802, he wrote a well-regarded two-volume *History of Printing in America* (1810) and in 1812 founded the American Antiquarian Society.

## Thomas, R(onald) S(tuart) (1913-2000)

Welsh poet. His verse contrasts traditional Welsh values with encroaching 'English' sterility. His poems, including *The Stones of the Field* (1946), *Song at the Year's Turning* (1955), and *Laboratories of the Spirit* (1975), excel at the portrayal of the wild beauty of the Welsh landscape and religious. His *Collected Poems* appeared in 1993.

Thomas was born in Cardiff, but, as his father was in the merchant Navy, the family moved often. He read Classics at the University College of North Wales and then entered theological training at St. Michael's, Cardiff. When he became rector of Manafon, Montgomeryshire, he began to write poetry seriously.

#### Thomas the Rhymer

alternative name of the Scottish poet and seer Thomas of Erceldoune.

#### Thomas the Tank Engine

best-known character in the 'Railway series' of books for young children by Rev W V Awdry (1911-1997). The series features a number of train characters who converse through their funnels and are supervised by the Fat Controller. The first of the 26 volumes in the series was *The Three Railway Engines* (1945), and others include *Gordon, the Big Engine* (1953), *Edward the Blue Engine* (1954), and *Tramway Engines* (1972).

A television series, followed by videos and a range of Thomas products, have contributed to the continuing popularity of the books.

#### Thompson, Alice

original name of the English writer Alice Meynell.

## Thompson, Dorothy (1894-1961)

US journalist. A foreign correspondent in Vienna and Berlin during the 1920s, she later wrote a syndicated column (1936-57) and espoused vehemently anti-Nazi views prior to World War II. Her books include *New Russia* (1928) and *Let the Record Speak* 

(1939). Born in Lancaster, New York, Thompson was married to Sinclair Lewis from 1928-42.

#### Thompson, Hunter S(tockton) (1939-2005)

US writer and journalist. A proponent of the New Journalism school of reporting, which made the writer an essential component of the story, Thompson mythologized himself as the outrageous 'Doctor Gonzo' in his political journalism of the 1960s. An acute observer of the decadence and depravity in American life, he wrote such books as *Hell's Angels* (1966), *Fear and Loathing in Las Vegas* (1971; first published as a series of articles by *Rolling Stone* magazine, filmed 1998), and *Fear and Loathing on the Campaign Trail '72* (1973). His first novel, *The Rum Diary*, written in 1959, was not published until 1998.

He also wrote the collections *Generation of Swine* (1988), *Songs of the Doomed* (1990), *The Great Shark Hunt* (1991), *Better Than Sex* (1995), and *The Proud Highway: Saga of a Desperate Southern Gentleman* (1998; published in 1997 as *The Fear and Loathing Letters*).

## Thompson, Jim (1906-1977)

#### born James Myers Thompson

US writer. A prolific author, he was critically neglected until after his death, when he acquired a cult status for his books' powerful and original use of pulp, 'hard-boiled' genres, which he imbued with a horrific, pathological violence. His novels include *The Killer Inside Me* 1952 and *The Grifters* 1963 (filmed 1990).

#### Thomsen, Grímur (1820-1896)

Icelandic poet. Many of his subjects are taken from the <u>saga</u>s, as, for example, in his series of poems *Búarímur*. His satire *Á Glæsisvóllum* and his translations of classical Greek dramatists are also important.

#### **Thoor Ballylee**

16th-century castellated tower house near Gort, County Galway, Republic of Ireland. It was owned by the poet W B Yeats from 1915 and was his matrimonial home from 1917. The Yeats had extensive alterations made to the building, which is now a museum containing Yeats memorabilia.

## Thorbergur Thórdarson (1889-1974)

Icelandic writer. His early essays were coloured by his study of Eastern mysticism, but later ones reflected his enthusiasm for socialism. He also published autobiographical works and poetry.

## Thórdarson Ólafr (died 1259)

Icelandic poet and scholar. Of his work, a few incomplete poems and an important grammatical treatise have survived. Some scholars have maintained that he was the author of *Laxdaela Saga* (see <u>saga</u>), and he appears to have contributed, directly or indirectly, to *Knýtlinga Saga*.

He was the nephew of the saga writer Snorri Sturluson and brother of another, Sturla Thórdarson.

## Thórdarson Sighvatr (c. 995-c. 1045)

Icelandic court poet. One of the most gifted exponents of <u>skaldic poetry</u>, he was the poet of Olaf II Haraldsson of Norway throughout most of his reign from 1015 until the king's fall 1030. *Austrfararvísur/Verses on a Journey to the East* colourfully and wittily describes travels through pre-Christian Gautland to the Swedish court; *Bersöglisvísur/Plain-Speaking Verses* counsel King Olaf's son Magnús.

## Thordárson Sturla (1214-1284)

Icelandic historian and poet. He was the author of one version of <u>Landnámabók</u>, the greater part of *Sturlunga Saga*, and other sagas. Several of his poems have been preserved. He was a nephew of the historian Snorri Sturluson.

## Thoreau, Henry David (1817-1862)

US author. One of the most influential figures of 19th-century US literature, he is best known for his vigorous defence of individualism and the simple life. His work *Walden, or Life in the Woods* (1854) stimulated the back-to-nature movement, and he completed some 30 volumes based on his daily nature walks. His essay 'Civil Disobedience' (1849), prompted by his refusal to pay taxes, advocated peaceful resistance to unjust laws and had a wide impact, even in the 20th century.

## Thoroddsen, Jón (1818-1868)

Icelandic writer. He has been called the founder of the modern Icelandic novel. His *Piltur og stúlka/Lad and Lass* 1850 is a story of young love. The unfinished *Mathur og kona/Man and Wife* 1876 has a humorous romantic plot.

## Thousand and One Nights

collection of Oriental tales, also known as the Arabian Nights.

## Three Musketeers, The

historical romance by Alexandre Dumas *père*, published in France in 1844. D'Artagnan, a poor gentleman, joins forces with three of King Louis XIII's musketeers, Athos, Porthos, and Aramis, in a series of adventures.

## Three Sisters, The

play by Anton <u>Chekhov</u>, first produced in 1901. A family, bored and frustrated by life in the Russian provinces, dream that if they move to Moscow their problems will disappear. However, apathy prevents the dream becoming reality.

# Thubron, Colin Gerald Dryden (1939-)

English travel writer and novelist. He is noted for his lyrical prose. Among his travel books are *Mirror to Damascus* (1967), *The Hills of Adonis: A Journey through Lebanon* (1968), *Behind the Wall: A Journey through China* (1987), *The Lost Heart of Asia* (1994), and *In Siberia* (1999). He also wrote the novels *A Cruel Madness* (1985), *Turning Back the Sun* (1991), *Distance* (1996), and *To the Last City* (2002).

## Thurber, James Grover (1894-1961)

US humorist. His short stories, written mainly for the *New Yorker* magazine, include 'The Secret Life of Walter Mitty' (1932). His doodle drawings include fanciful impressions of dogs.

## Tibbles, Susette La Flesche (1854-1903)

#### born Susette Inshtatheumba; called 'Bright Eyes'

Omaha reformer, author, and illustrator. The Ponca Indians were forcibly removed from their lands in 1877; in the national protest that followed, Susette La Flesche travelled to the East as translator for the Ponca chief, Standing Bear, on a lecture tour. Her crusade led to the passage of the Dawes Act of 1887. Susette La Flesche coauthored, with Standing Bear, *Ploughed Under: The Story of an Indian Chief* (1882).

#### Tibullus, Albius (c. 48-c. 19 BC)

Roman elegiac poet, a friend of the poets Horace and Ovid. Two books of poems, addressed to his patron Valerius Messalla Corvinus, are extant. His pastoral poems were known throughout the Middle Ages.

#### Ticknor, William Davis (1810-1864)

US publisher. In 1832 he founded the Boston firm that, with the able partnership of James <u>Fields</u>, became one of the most distinguished American publishing companies. Ticknor was born in Lebanon, New Hampshire.

#### Tieck, (Johann) Ludwig (1773-1853)

German Romantic poet and collector of folk tales. He dramatized some of the tales, such as 'Puss in Boots'.

#### Timotheus of Miletus (446 BC-357 BC)

Greek lyric poet. By adding an 11th string to the lyre (or cithara), he incurred the displeasure of Athens and Sparta. <u>Euripides</u> wrote a prologue to his lyric poem the *Persea*, of which fragments were discovered in 1902.

#### Titcomb, Timothy

US writer and editor; see Josiah Gilbert Holland.

## Toíbín, Colm (1955-)

Irish writer. Born in County Wexford, he became a travel writer and journalist before turning to novels. Toíbín uses a delicate minimalist style to tell stories of troubled, modern characters struggling to find love and a sense of belonging. *The Heather Blazing* (1993) is set in Ireland, but *The Story of the Night* (1996) and *The South* (1990) have protagonists wandering the world, seeking to rectify a sense of lost origins. *The South* won the 1991 *Irish Times*/Aer Lingus Award and was shortlisted for the Booker Prize. Other novels include *The Blackwater Lightship* (2000).

## To Kill a Mockingbird

novel by the US writer Harper Lee (born 1926) published in 1960. Set in a small town in Alabama in the 1930s, it is a dramatic depiction of racial tension and prejudice. Its central character, Atticus Finch (based on Lee's own father), is a lawyer who defends Tom Robinson, an African-American on trial accused of raping a white woman. The narrator is Atticus' daughter, Louise Finch (known as Scout), who recalls the events many years later. When the trial took place Scout was six years old, and as the events unfolded she witnessed both the fear, hatred, and hypocrisy of the town's white community, and also the quiet heroism of her father. An immediate best-seller, the novel was awarded a Pulitzer Prize in 1961, and in 1962 was made into a successful film starring Gregory Peck as Atticus Finch.

## Tolkien, J(ohn) R(onald) R(euel) (1892-1973)

English writer and scholar. To express his theological and philosophical beliefs, and as a vehicle for his linguistic scholarship, he created a complete mythological world of 'Middle Earth', on which he drew for his children's fantasy *The Hobbit* (1937), and the trilogy <u>*The Lord of the Rings*</u> (1954-55, filmed 2001-03). His work developed a cult following in the 1960s and had many imitators. At Oxford University he was professor of Anglo-Saxon 1925-45 and Merton professor of English 1945-59.

## Toller, Ernst (1893-1939)

German dramatist and poet. His expressionist drama has communist and pacifist overtones. In his play *Masse-Mensch/Mass and Man* 1921, a messianic central figure urges humanity to renew itself through revolution. His other plays include *Die Maschinenstürmer/The Machine Wreckers* 1922, *Hinkemann* 1924, and *Hoppla, wir leben!/Such Is Life!* 1927.

## Tolstoy, Alexei Nikolaievich (1882-1945)

Russian novelist and dramatist, a soldier of the counter-revolutionary White Army who later came under the patronage of Stalin. His works include the trilogy of novels *The Road to Calvary* 1921-41 and the historical *Peter the Great* 1929-34.

# Tolstoy, Leo Nikolaievich (1828-1910)

Russian novelist. He wrote <u>War and Peace</u> (1863-69) and <u>Anna Karenina</u> (1873-77). He was offended by the materialism of Western Europe and in the 1860s and 1870s he became a pioneer of 'free education'. From 1880 he underwent a profound spiritual crisis and took up various moral positions, including passive resistance to evil, rejection of authority (religious or civil) and private ownership, and a return to basic mystical Christianity. He was excommunicated by the Orthodox Church, and his later works were banned.

Tolstoy was born to a noble family at Yasnaya Polyana, near Tula, but was orphaned at the age of nine. He studied at Kazan University, but left before graduating. In 1851 he joined the Russian forces in the Caucasus, and fought in the Crimean War, taking part as an artillery officer in the defence of Sevastopol. While in the Caucasus he wrote the autobiographical *Childhood* and *Boyhood*. He arrived in St Petersburg in 1855, and was received with admiration in the literary circles of the capital as a new star of Russian letters. During the next two years he published *Tales from Sevastopol*, which exposed and cut down romantic ideas of martial bravery, and *Youth*.

In 1857 and 1860 he travelled widely in Western Europe, feeling disgust at its materialism, and in the 1860s and 1870s he devoted much of his time and energy to educational activities, running a school on his estate, publishing a special magazine, and writing textbooks, as one of the pioneers of 'free education'. The 1860s and 1870s were also the period of his most intensive literary work, producing *War and Peace* and *Anna Karenina*. By the time he finished the latter Tolstoy had approached a spiritual crisis, which in the following years was resolved by his working out a new religious and social teaching based on renunciation of violence, wealth, and sex, a need for inner self-improvement, and love for all living things. The fame of his teaching soon spread beyond Russia, and Yasnaya Polyana became a place of pilgrimage. However, Tolstoy himself felt increasingly estranged from it and from his family, who did not share his views. Unable to reconcile his ideal of simple life with the atmosphere of his family estate, he secretly left Yasnaya Polyana and died ten days later.

## Tom Brown's Schooldays

novel by Thomas Hughes, published in 1857. Through the experiences of Tom Brown

and his friends East and Arthur, and the school bully Flashman, Hughes recalls his time at Rugby School under Thomas Arnold, and presents a boarding school ethos combining Christian principles, patriotism, physical courage, and school loyalty. The book established a new tradition of school stories for boys.

It had a less successful sequel, Tom Brown at Oxford (1861).

#### **Tom Jones**

#### in full The History of Tom Jones, a Foundling

novel (1749) by Henry <u>Fielding</u>. The story tells of a foundling, Tom Jones, led astray by the impetuousness of his own nature. He has many adventures, which take him through scenes of uproarious 18th-century life, until he is finally redeemed by his own good heart and the love of the beautiful Sophia Western. A large, self-indulgent work, full of broad, high-spirited effects, it is one of the early great landmarks of the novel form.

## Tomlinson, H(enry) M(ajor) (1873-1958)

English travel writer and novelist. His travel books include *The Sea and the Jungle* (1912), about a voyage up the Amazon, *Turn of the Tide* (1945), and *Malay Waters* (1950). His novels, which he claimed were all autobiographical, include *Gallions Reach* (1927) and *All Our Yesterdays* (1930), about World War I.

## Tom Sawyer, The Adventures of

novel (1876) by US author Mark <u>Twain</u>. It describes the childhood escapades of Tom Sawyer and his friends Huckleberry Finn and Joe Harper in a small Mississippi community before the Civil War. It and its sequel *The Adventures of Huckleberry Finn* (1885) are remarkable for their rejection of the high moral tone prevalent in 19th-century children's literature.

## Toomer, Jean (Eugene Nathan) (1894-1967)

US poet and writer. An important writer of the Harlem Renaissance, he is best known for *Cane* (1923), a work combining poetry, fiction, and drama. Toomer was born in Washington, DC. He studied at the University of Wisconsin (1914), and City College, New York (1917), and worked briefly as a superintendent of a black rural school in Georgia (1921). He studied with a mystic in France (1924), lived in Harlem (1925) and Chicago (1926-33), then married and settled in Pennsylvania (1934).

## Topelius, Zacharias (1818-1898)

Finnish novelist and poet, who wrote in Swedish. In a series of historical novels, collectively known as *Fältskärns berättelser/The Field Surgeon's Stories* 1859-67, he set the Finnish people in the context of European history over nearly two centuries. He also wrote poems, fairy tales, plays, and an opera. His anthology *Läsning för barn/Reading for Children* 1865-96 was influential.

## Torga, Miguel (1907-1995)

#### pseudonym of Adolfo Rocha

Portuguese writer. His works explore the relationship between the material and the spiritual, and attempt to locate some point of fixity in a changing world. He is best known for his 12-volume diary (1941-77), but his writings also include the novel cycle A criação do Mundo/The creation of the World 1937-38, the stories Contos da montanha/Tales from the Mountain 1941, poems, and plays.

## Toulet, Paul-Jean (1867-1920)

French writer. He published a number of novels, including *Le Mariage de Don Quichotte/Don Quixote's Marriage* 1902, and *Mon amie Nane/My Friend Nane* 1905.

Toulet's short stories *Béhanzigue* and a volume of poetry, *Les Contrerimes*, were published posthumously 1920 and 1921.

## Tourgée, Albion (Winegar) (1838-1905)

US writer, judge, and editor. He was elected judge of North Carolina's superior court (1868-74). As an ardent supporter of the Reconstruction policies and a foe of the Ku Klux Klan, he was regarded as the epitome of the carpetbagger - a Northerner who lived in the South for political advantage after the Civil War - but he seems to have been a sincere proponent of reform and justice. Moving to New York City in 1879, he edited *Our Continent* (1882-84), a magazine in which he continued to champion the rights of blacks and to expose the Ku Klux Klan;

Townsend, Sue (Susan) (1946-)

English humorous novelist and playwright. She is the author of the best-selling *The Secret Diary of Adrian Mole, aged 133/4* (1982; adapted for the stage in 1985) and later sequels. Other novels include *Rebuilding Coventry* (1985), *The Queen and I* (1992), about a dethroned royal family in a republican Britain (also adapted for the stage, 1994), the haunting tale *Ghost Children* (1997), and *Number Ten* (2002).

#### Train, Arthur C(heney) (1875-1945)

US lawyer and author. His well-loved character, Ephraim Tutt, appeared as lawyerhero in over eighty stories (1919-45); the fictional *Yankee Lawyer: The Autobiography of Ephraim Tutt* (1943) was so convincing that *Who's Who* asked Tutt to fill out its form. Train was born in Boston, Massachusetts. Twice assistant district attorney in New York (1901-08), 1913-15), he began publishing his 'court stories' in 1904; after 1922 he worked full time writing stories, urbane novels, and non-fiction works based on courtroom experiences.

## Trakl, Georg (1887-1914)

Austrian poet. His work is characterized by opaque metaphorical language and a unique use of colour symbolism; for example, in 'Der Herbst des Einsamen/The Solitary Man's Autumn' and 'Helian'. His aesthetic of putrefaction and decay drew on French <u>Symbolism</u>, particularly the work of Arthur <u>Rimbaud</u> and Maurice <u>Maeterlinck</u>, but Trakl's poetic voice is wholly original.

## Trapido, Barbara (1941-)

South African writer. Her writing is concerned with the subtleties of English society, but she credits her South African roots for giving her an appetite for subversion. Her books include *Brother of the More Famous Jack* (1982, Whitbread special prize for fiction), *Noah's Ark* (1984), *Temples of Delight* (1993), *Juggling* (1994), *The Travelling Hornplayer* (1998), and *Frankie and Stankie* (2003).

Born and educated in South Africa, Trapido went to England in 1963 and has lived mostly in Oxford.

## Traven, B(en) (c. 1882-1969)

#### pen-name of Albert Otto Max Feige

German-born US novelist. His true identity was not revealed until 1979. His books include the best-seller *The Death Ship* 1926 and *The Treasure of the Sierra Madre* 

1934, which was made into a film starring Humphrey Bogart 1948.

Born in a part of Germany now in Poland, he was in turn known as the anarchist Ret Marut, Traven Torsvan, and Hollywood scriptwriter Hal Croves. Between the two world wars he lived in obscurity in Mexico and avoided recognition.

#### Treasure Island

adventure story for children by R L <u>Stevenson</u>, published in 1883. Jim Hawkins, the story's narrator, sets sail with Squire Trelawney in the *Hispaniola*, armed with a map showing the location of buried treasure. Attempts by the ship's crew of pirates, including Long John Silver, to seize the map are foiled after much fighting and the squire finds the treasure.

## Tremain, Rose (1943-)

English novelist, short-story writer, and playwright. The historical novel *Restoration* (1989), perhaps her best-known work, was shortlisted for the Booker Prize (and filmed in 1995). *Music and Silence* won the 1999 Whitbread Award for best novel.

Short-story collections include *The Colonel's Daughter* (1982), *The Garden of the Villa Mollini* (1986), and *Evangelista's Fan* (1994). Other novels include *Sacred Country* (1992) *The Way I Found Her* (1997), and *The Colour* (2003).

## Trench, Richard Chenevix (1807-1886)

Irish churchman, philologist, and poet. An Anglican, he held a number of prominent teaching and ecclesiastical posts, including professor of theology at King's College London 1847-56, dean of Westminster 1856-64, and Archbishop of Dublin 1864-86. Trench was responsible for instigating the huge lexicographical project, the *New English Dictionary*, later the *Oxford English Dictionary*. He was buried in Westminster Abbey.

Born in Dublin and educated at Harrow and Trinity College, Cambridge, Trench was appointed curate in 1841 to the reformer Samuel Wilberforce, and in 1845 became rector of Itchenstoke. He published six volumes of poetry between 1835 and 1846. In philology, his work *The Study of Words* 1851 popularized the scientific scrutiny of words. His principal religious writings were *Notes on the Parables of our Lord* 1841, and *Notes on the Miracles of our Lord* 1846.

English surgeon and author. He was professor of anatomy and pathology at the Royal College of Surgeons (1881-86), and later acted as Edward VII's personal surgeon, but is best-remembered as the person who cared for the 'Elephant Man', Joseph Merrick. Treves rescued Merrick, who was horribly deformed from an early age by a condition known as multiple neurofibromatosis, from destitution and life as a freak-show exhibit, and housed him a the London Hospital from 1886 until his death in 1890. He gave an account of their friendship in *The Elephant Man and other Reminiscences* (1923).

## Trevor, William (1928-)

#### pseudonym of William Trevor Cox

Irish writer. Frequently taking the loss of innocence as his theme, he writes perceptively about childhood and old age; his novels, stories, and plays are noted for their gentle irony, their humour, and their subtle characterization. His novels include *The Children of Dynmouth* (1976), *Fools of Fortune* (1983), *Death in Summer* (1998), and *The Story of Lucie Gault* (2002).

Trevor was born in Michelstown, County Cork, and studied at Trinity College, Dublin, working as a teacher, sculptor, and copywriter before publishing his first novel, *A Standard of Behaviour*, in 1958. He came to prominence with his second novel, *The Old Boys* (1964). Widely regarded as one of Ireland's finest contemporary short-story writers, he published the collections *The Day We Got Drunk On Cake* (1967) and *The News from Ireland* (1986). He has also written plays and screenplays.

## Trial, The

#### German Der Prozess

novel by Franz <u>Kafka</u>, published 1925 in Czechoslovakia. It deals with the sinister circumstances in which a man is arrested for no apparent reason, his consequent feelings of guilt and alienation, and his eventual 'execution'. It was translated into English 1955, and again (more accurately) 1978.

## Trillin, Calvin (Marshall) (1935-)

US author. A Yale graduate, he was a *New Yorker* staff writer (1963) and columnist for the *Nation* and national syndication (1978). His essays reported sympathetically on ordinary American life and passionately on food and were collected in such volumes as *American Fried* (1974). Trillin was born in Kansas City, Missouri.

## Trilling, Lionel (1905-1975)

US author and literary critic. His books of criticism include *The Liberal Imagination* 1950, *Beyond Culture* 1965, and *The Experience of Literature* 1967. He also produced annotated editions of the works of English poets Matthew Arnold and John Keats.

Born in New York, USA, and educated at Columbia University, Trilling joined the Columbia English Department faculty 1932. He received his PhD 1938 and was appointed professor 1948. His novel *The Middle of the Journey* 1947 is based on the character of Whittaker Chambers, who was to be a protagonist of the Alger Hiss case.

## Trissino, Gian Giorgio (1478-1550)

Venetian dramatist, scholar, and poet. He was interested in linguistic problems, translating Dante's *De Vulgari Eloquentia* into the *volgare* and writing his own treatise *II Castellano*. He also turned his hand to tragedy, in his *Sofonisba* (written in 1514-15, but not staged until 1562) imitating ancient Greek models. He also produced an epic, *La Italia liberata dai Goti/Italy liberated from the Goths* (1547-48).

## Tristan l'Hermite (c. 1601-1655)

French dramatist and poet. He was one of the creators of French classical drama. He wrote lyrics, a comedy, and several tragedies, which gave him a reputation rivalling Corneille's. The most successful of these was his first play, the tragedy *Marianne* 1636, which concerns the unfounded jealousy of the biblical king Herod towards his wife.

## Tristan, Flora (1803-1844)

French socialist writer and activist. She was the author of *Promenades dans Londres/ The London Journal* 1840, a vivid record of social conditions, and *L'Union ouvrière/ Workers' Union* 1843, an outline of a workers' utopia.

## Tristram Shandy

in full The Life and Opinions of Tristram Shandy, Gent.

novel by Laurence Sterne, published 1759-67. The work, a forerunner of the 20th-

century stream-of-consciousness novel, has no coherent plot and uses typographical devices to emphasize the author's disdain for the structured novels of his contemporaries.

## Trollope, Anthony (1815-1882)

English novelist. He described provincial English middle-class society in a series of novels set in or around the imaginary cathedral city of Barchester. *The Warden* (1855) began the series, which includes *Barchester Towers* (1857), *Doctor Thorne* (1858), and *The Last Chronicle of Barset* (1867). His political novels include *Can You Forgive Her*? (1864), *Phineas Finn* (1867-69), and *The Prime Minister* (1875-76).

Trollope was a Londoner, and educated at Harrow. He became a post office clerk in 1834, introduced the pillar box in 1853, and achieved the position of surveyor before retiring in 1867. He went to Ireland at the age of 26 as a junior Post Office official and his first two novels had Irish themes. He tried unsuccessfully to enter Parliament as a Liberal.

## Trollope, Frances (1780-1863)

#### born Frances Milton

English novelist. Her critical and witty *Domestic Manners of the Americans* (1832), the product of a three year stay in the USA, was much resented there. Author of 115 novels, her most successful were *The Vicar of Wrexhill* (1837) and *The Widow Barnaby* (1839), with its sequel *The Widow Married* (1840). Her son was the writer Anthony <u>Trollope</u>.

Trollope was born in Stapleton, Avon. In 1809 she married Thomas Anthony Trollope (1774-1835), a failed barrister and fellow of New College, Oxford. In 1827 her husband fell into financial difficulties, which were not relieved by moving to the USA. Widowed in 1835, she travelled widely on the Continent, writing articles and fiction, and eventually settled in Florence in 1843.

## Trollope, Joanna (1943-)

English novelist. Her books, which explore the fortunes and misfortunes of the uppermiddle classes, include *The Choir* (1988; televised in 1995), *The Rector's Wife* (1991; televised in 1994), *The Best of Friends* (1995), *Next of Kin* (1996), and *Marrying the Mistress* (2000). *Britannia's Daughters* (1983) is a study of women in the British Empire. Under the name Caroline Harvey she has written romantic period sagas. Troyat, Henri (1911-)

#### pen-name of Lev Tarassoff

Russian-born French writer. His 77 books include novels and political and literary biographies. His novel *L'Araignée/The Web* (1938) won the Prix Goncourt.

## Trumbo, (James) Dalton (1905-1976)

US screenwriter and writer. During the period when he was blacklisted as a communist, he wrote 18 screenplays under pseudonyms, one of which, *The Brave One* (1956), won an Academy Award. In 1960 his real name was allowed back on the credits for such films as *Spartacus* and *Exodus*. In 1971 he wrote and directed the film of his own antiwar novel, *Johnny Got His Gun* (1939).

## Trumbull, John (1750-1831)

US poet and lawyer. Although he published a number of satirical essays and poems, he is known today solely for one work, *M'Fingle* (1775-82), a burlesque epic poem satirizing the pro-British Tories in America. He was associated with the 'Hartford (or Connecticut) Wits', an informal group, Federalist in their politics but promoting a new American spirit in their writing.

## Tryon, Thomas (1926-1999)

US actor and writer. Under the name Tom Tryon, he was an actor 1952-71 on Broadway and television, as well as in Hollywood films. He gave up on acting to become a successful novelist. He wrote compelling horror fiction, as in *The Other* (1971), and *Harvest Home* (1973), before writing novels set in Hollywood, such as *All That Glitters: Five Novellas* (1986).

Tryon was born in Hartford, Connecticut. He studied at Yale (BA 1949), and in New York City at the Art Students League and the Neighborhood Playhouse. For most of his career he lived in New York City.

## Tschudi, Gilg (1505-1572)

#### Latin Aegidius

Swiss chronicler. His Chronicon helveticum, which covers the years 1000-1470,

contains one of the principal accounts of the legendary Swiss national hero William Tell.

#### Tsvetayeva, Marina Ivanovna (1892-1941)

Russian poet. Most of her work was written after she left the USSR 1923. She wrote mythic, romantic, frenetic verse, including *The Demesne of the Swans*, written in the 1920s but not published until 1957. Her *Selected Poems* was translated 1971.

## Tuckerman, Frederick Goddard (1821-1873)

US poet. Rediscovered as a poet in 1931, he is known for his sonnets and narrative poetry, notably *The Cricket*, a study of the relationship of man and nature. Tuckerman was born in Boston, Massachusetts. He studied at Harvard (1841) and at the Law School there (1839-42); although admitted to the bar in 1844, he practised only briefly. A wealthy man, he retired to Greenfield, Massachusetts, to study literature, botany, and astronomy (1847).

## Tuckerman, Henry Theodore (1813-1871)

US art/literary critic. Independently wealthy, he is regarded today as a pedantic and sentimental critic of the arts, but during his lifetime he was highly praised. Of his many books, only one or two, such as *Book of the Artists: American Artist Life* (1867), now have much of interest. Tuckerman was born in Boston, Massachusetts. He attended Harvard (1832-33), withdrew due to poor health, and travelled abroad (1833-34). He returned to Boston, published books on Italy, and settled in New York City in 1845.

## Tudor, Tasha (1915-)

#### born Starling Burgess

US writer and illustrator. Her illustrations are reminiscent of Kate Greenaway, and her immensely popular books for children, such as *Tasha Tudor's Favorite Stories* (1965), and her illustrations for the work of other writers, continue to delight young and adult readers. Tudor elected to live a 19th-century lifestyle in Marlboro, Vermont, where she raised all her food, lived without inside plumbing, and made her own candles.

## Tufte, Edward R(olf) (1942-)

US political scientist, statistician, and information designer. He became widely known as a pioneer proponent of using graphs, charts, diagrams, and other visual elements - on both the printed page and computers - to convey significant information with more clarity. In furtherance of this he started his own firm, Graphics Press, to publish his own handsomely designed books, *The Visual Display of Quantitative Information* (1983) and *Envisioning Information* (1990), in which scientific and aesthetic elements combine to advance his ideas about making the complex more comprehensible.

## Tu Fu (or Du Fu) (712-770)

Chinese poet of the Tang dynasty. With Li Po, he was one of the two greatest Chinese poets. He wrote about the social injustices of his time, peasant suffering, and war, as in *The Army Carts* on conscription, and *The Beauties*, comparing the emperor's wealth with the lot of the poor.

## Tulsi Das (1532-1623)

Brahmin Hindi poet and religious reformer. Tulsi Das lived most of his life as an ascetic at the sacred site of Varanasi (Benares). It was here, according to legend, that the the Hindu divine hero Rama commanded him in a dream to write a version of the Sanskrit epic *Ramayana* - which tells of Rama's escapades - in language that common people could understand. Tulsi Das's version, *Ramcaritmanas*, remains the most popular religious and epic poem in the whole of Hindi literature.

## Turgenev, Ivan Sergeievich (1818-1883)

Russian writer. He is notable for poetic realism, pessimism, and skill in characterization. His works include the play *A Month in the Country* (1849), and the novels *A Nest of Gentlefolk* (1858), *Fathers and Sons* (1862), and *Virgin Soil* (1877). His series *A Sportsman's Sketches* (1852) criticized serfdom.

## **Turkish literature**

for centuries Turkish literature was based on Persian models, but under Suleiman the Great (1494-1566) the Golden Age began, of which the poet Fuzuli (died 1563) is the great exemplar, and continued in the following century with the great poet satirist Nef'i of Erzerum (died 1635) and others. In the 19th century, mainly under French influence, Turkish writers adopted Western literary forms such as the novel. Ibrahim Shinasi Effendi (1826-1871), poet and prose writer, was one of those who made use of French models. Effendi was cofounder of the New School with Mehmed Namik Kemal (1840-1880), poet and author of the revolutionary play *Vatan/The Fatherland*, which led to his exile by the sultan. Unlike these, the poet Tevfik Fikret (1867-1915) turned rather to Persian and Arabic than to native sources for his vocabulary. The poet Mehmed Akif (1873-1936) was the author of the words of the Turkish national anthem; other distinguished modern writers include the novelist and satirist Refik Halit (1888-1965), the traditionalist poet Yahya Kemal (1884-1958), and the realist novelist Orhan Kemal (1914-1970). The work of the contemporary poet and novelist Yashar Kemal (1923- ) describes the hard life of the peasant (*Memed, My Hawk* 1955 and *The Wind from the Plain* 1961).

## Tuwhare, Hone (1922-)

New Zealand poet. His first collection, *No Ordinary Sun* (1964), established him as the leading Maori poet in English. He became New Zealand's poet laureate in 1999 and published the collection *Piggy-back Moon* in 2002.

Tuwhare drew his inspiration from Eastern European poets like Vladimir <u>Mayakovsky</u> and Jan <u>Neruda</u>, and from traditional Maori chants and laments. Other collections are *Come Rain Hail* (1970), *Sapwood and Milk* (1972), and *Something Nothing* (1973).

## Tuwim, Julian (1894-1953)

Polish poet and translator. His work is characterized by irony, satire, and humour. He published several volumes of poetry, including *Czyhanie na Boga/Lying in Wait for God* (1918) and *Slowa we krwi/Words in Blood* (1926), and the long poem 'Kwiaty polskie/Polish Flowers' (1949).

## Tvardovsky, Alexander (or Aleksandr) (1910-1971)

Russian poet and editor. Early work such as *Path to Socialism* (1931) and *The Land of Muravia* (1936; Stalin Prize 1941) repudiates individualism and commends collectivized farming. His humorous wartime poem 'Vasili Tyorkin' (1941-45) was extremely popular. As editor of the journal *Novy Mir/New Worlf* 1950-54 and 1958-70, he encouraged innovative and outspoken writers such as <u>Solzhenitsyn</u>. *By Right of Memory* (1967-69), an attempt to tell the whole truth about his times, was banned by the censor.

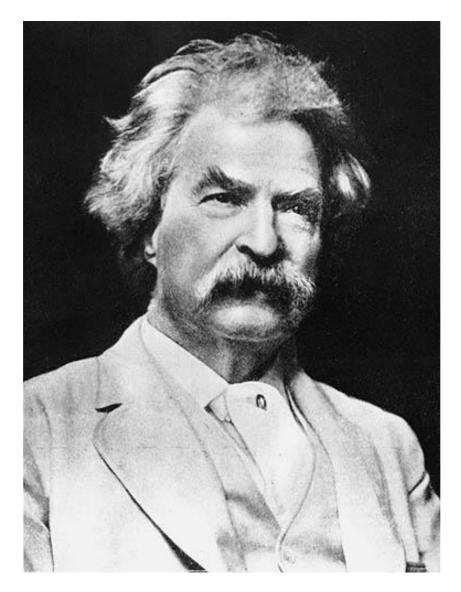
## Twain, Mark (1835-1910)

#### pen-name of Samuel Langhorne Clemens

US writer. He established his reputation with the comic masterpiece *The Innocents Abroad* (1869) and two classic American novels, in dialect, *The Adventures of* <u>Tom</u> <u>Sawyer</u> (1876) and *The Adventures of Huckleberry Finn* (1885). Twain's use of the vernacular (commonly spoken dialect), vivid characterization and descriptions, and the theme of *The Adventures of Huckleberry Finn*, underlying the humour, of man's inhumanity to man, has given it universal appeal. He also wrote satire, as in *A Connecticut Yankee at King Arthur's Court* (1889). He is recognized as one of America's finest and most characteristic writers.

Born in Florida, Missouri, Twain grew up along the Mississippi River in Hannibal, Missouri, the setting for many of his chief works. His education was cut short by his father's death in 1847, and he was apprenticed to a printer, writing articles for the Missouri Courier, which his brother ran. From 1857, he was employed as a riverboat pilot on the Mississippi until the boats stopped running on the outbreak of the Civil War in 1861. He then moved west, taking a job as city editor of a Nevada newspaper. There he began to write under the pseudonym 'Mark Twain' (the call of pilots when taking soundings, meaning 'two fathoms'). The tale 'The Celebrated Jumping Frog of Calaveras County' was his first success. After a trip by boat to Palestine, he wrote *The Innocents Abroad*. As his writing career blossomed, he also became successful as a lecturer. In the 1870s he settled in Hartford, Connecticut. In 1884 he invested in a publishing house; it went bankrupt a decade later, leaving Twain penniless. In 1895 he embarked on a world lecture tour, described in Following the Equator (1897), and managed to clear his debts. His later works, such as The Mysterious Stranger, unpublished until 1916, are less humorous and more pessimistic.

Twain



#### (Image © Billie Love)

US novelist, humorist, and satirist Samuel Langhorne Clemens, in 1904. Writing under his celebrated pseudonym Mark Twain, his two classic novels, *The Adventures of Tom Sawyer* and *The Adventures of Huckleberry Finn* drew heavily on his own background and boyhood experiences along the Mississippi river. Other works, such as *The Innocents Abroad* A *Tramp Abroad*, reflect his extensive travels as a reporter and lecturer.

## Twardowski, Samuel (1600-c. 1661)

Polish baroque poet and diarist. His work includes a vivid account of a diplomatic mission in 1621 to the Ottoman Sultan Mustafa in Constantinople, *Przewazna legacja J.O. Ksiazecia Krzysztofa Zbaraskiego/The Most Important Mission of the Illustrious Prince Zbaraski*, published in 1633. He also chronicled other historical events, and wrote pastoral poetry.

## Twelfth Night

comedy by William <u>Shakespeare</u>, first performed in 1601-02. The plot builds on misunderstandings and mistaken identities, leading to the successful romantic unions of Viola and her twin brother Sebastian with Duke Orsino and Olivia respectively, and the downfall of Olivia's steward Malvolio.

## 20th-century English literature

<u>prose</u>, poetry, and drama written in English in the UK in the 1900s. The century was a period of great artistic change, and is dominated by the impact of World War I (1914-18) and World War II (1939-45), as well as by the artistic concerns of modernism (which affected both themes and methods of writing). The range of literature and of its readership, which increased in the <u>19th-century English</u> <u>literature</u> period, rose even more rapidly in the 20th century. See also <u>English</u> <u>literature</u>.

# Tyler, Anne (1941-)

#### married name Anne Modarressi

US novelist. One of America's most highly-acclaimed writers, she won the Pulitzer Prize with *Breathing Lessons* (1989; filmed 1994), and has written numerous short stories and novels including *Earthly Possessions* (1977; filmed 1999), *Dinner at the Homesick Restaurant* (1982), and *The Accidental Tourist* (1985; filmed 1988).

Tyler was born in Minneapolis, Minnesota, but grew up in Raleigh, North Carolina. In 1961 she studied at Duke University, Durham, North Carolina, and read Russian studies 1961-62 at Columbia University, New York. She worked as a Russian bibliographer at Duke 1962-63, and as a library assistant at McGill University, Montréal, Canada 1964-65. She began to write at university, but it was only when she settled in Baltimore in 1967 that she concentrated on her writing. Her novel *Back When We Were Grownups* was published in 2001.

## Tyler, Royall (1757-1826)

American dramatist and lawyer. Born in Boston, he studied at Yale and Harvard, and after fighting in the American Revolution practised law in Maine, Massachusetts, and Vermont. He is best remembered for the comedy *The Contrast*, which, performed in 1787 in New York, was the first professionally produced play by an American. Contrasting the dandyish affectations of the English with down-to-earth honesty of Americans, the play is notable for having caught the new mood of Revolutionary

America.

## Tynan, Katharine (1861-1931)

#### married name Katharine Hinkson

Irish poet and novelist. Born in Clondalkin, County Dublin, and educated at the Dominican Convent, Drogheda, Tynan established her reputation as a writer through journalism. A leading figure in the Irish literary revival of the late 19th century, her works are influenced by Irish patriotism, devout Catholicism, and Celtic mythology. She was a prolific writer, producing some 18 volumes of verse, over a hundred novels, and around 40 other books. Her *Collected Poems* appeared in 1930.

Tynan was a friend of the nationalist leader Charles Stewart Parnell and (in London) of the literary families, the Meynells and the Rossettis. Her works include the poetry collections *Oh! What a Plague is Love* (1896), *She Walks in Beauty* (1899), and the novel *The House in the Forest* (1928). She also wrote five volumes of autobiography.

#### Tyndale, William (c. 1492-1536)

English translator of the Bible. The printing of his New Testament was begun in Cologne in 1525 and, after he had been forced to flee, completed in Worms. Tyndale introduced some of the most familiar phrases to the English language, such as 'filthy lucre', and 'God forbid'. He was strangled and burned as a heretic at Vilvorde in Belgium.

## Tyrtaeus (lived 7th century BC)

Spartan war poet, reputedly also a general. His poems are a resolute expression of early Spartan militarism.

## Tyutchev, Fedor Ivanovich (1803-1873)

Russian lyric poet. He is regarded as Russia's greatest nature poet, and his poems include 'Silentium' 1833 and 'Son na more/A Dream at Sea' 1836. They use unconventional imagery in describing stock scenes such as sunsets and thunderstorms. His love poems focus on the sufferings lovers inflict on one another.

French poet, born in Romania. In Zürich, Switzerland, in 1916, together with the artist Hans Arp and other World War I refugee poets, he founded the nihilistic movement known as Dada, from which surrealism was to develop. His works include *La Première aventure céleste de Monsieur Antipyrine/The First Heavenly Adventure of Mr Antipyrine* 1916 and *Vingt-cinq poèmes/Twenty-five Poems* 1918, as well as Dadaist manifestos.

## Übermensch

#### (German 'Superman')

in the writings of the German philosopher Friedrich <u>Nietzsche</u>, the ideal to which humans should aspire, set out in *Also sprach Zarathustra/Thus Spake Zarathustra* 1883-92. The term was popularized in George Bernard Shaw's play *Man and Superman* 1903.

## Uhland, Johann Ludwig (1787-1862)

German poet. He was the author of ballads and lyrics in the Romantic tradition.

## **Ukrainian literature**

like Russian and Belorussian writing, Ukrainian literature has its origins in books written in Kievan Russ from the 11th to the 13th century. After the disruption of Mongol invasion, Ukrainian writing revived in the 16th century. It acquired a new vigour from the late 18th century in works such as the influential Virgilian travesty *Eneida* 1798 by Ivan Kotlyarevsky (1769-1838). Ukrainian Romanticism reached a climax in the influential poetry of <u>Shevchenko</u> and *Books of Genesis of the Ukrainian People* 1846 by Mykola Kostomarov (1817-1885), despite (or because of) Russian disfavour, including an eventual ban on all Ukrainian publications 1863 and 1871. The later 19th century saw distinguished realist fiction by Panas Myrny (1849-1920) and by Ivan Franko (1856-1916), influenced by <u>Zola</u>.

In the 20th century writers such as the romantic Mykola Khvlovy (1893-1933) flourished until Stalinist socialist realism cast a blight in the 1930s, but Ukrainian literature revived in the 1960s with the work of new writers such as Lina Kostenko (1930-), who incurred official displeasure for her un-Soviet 'formalism'.

**Ulysses** 

novel by James <u>Joyce</u>, published 1922. Using the basic plot of the <u>Odyssey</u>, Joyce matches equivalent episodes to a day in the life of characters in Dublin in 1904. Using <u>stream of consciousness</u> techniques and linguistic mastery, Joyce transforms the smallest and most sordid details of everyday life.

## Unamuno, Miguel de (1864-1936)

Spanish writer of Basque origin. He was exiled 1924-30 for criticism of the military directorate of Primo de Rivera. His works include mystic poems and the study *Del* sentimiento trágico de la vida/The Tragic Sense of Life 1913, about the conflict of reason and belief in religion.

#### Unanimism

movement in French literature based on the psychological concept of collective consciousness. Founded in 1908 by Jules <u>Romains</u>, it influenced the writings of *le groupe de l'Abbaye*, a group of young poets including Georges Duhamel, Chennevière, and Vildrac. These writers are described in Duhamel's *Pasquier* novels.

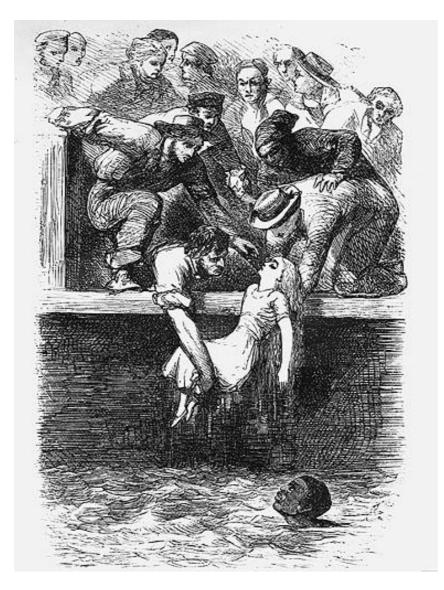
#### 'Uncle Remus'

series of US folk tales by Joel Chandler <u>Harris</u> based on the tales of Brer Rabbit, Brer Fox, and others, taken from black plantation legends in the 1870s and 1880s, and forming part of the tradition of US Southern humour.

## Uncle Tom's Cabin

best-selling US novel by Harriet Beecher <u>Stowe</u>, published 1851-52. A sentimental but powerful portrayal of the cruelties of slave life on Southern plantations, it promoted the call for abolition. The heroically loyal slave Uncle Tom has in the 20th century become a byword for black subservience.

Uncle Tom's Cabin



#### (Image © Billie Love)

An illustration of Tom rescuing Eva, taken from the novel *Uncle Tom's Cabin*, by Harriet Beecher. Published between 1851 and 1852, *Uncle Tom's Cabin* was written in support of Abolitionism, the movement against slavery. The novel had a profound impact on public opinion against slavery, and at the time sold more copies than any other book, apart from the Bible.

#### Uncle Vanya

play by Anton <u>Chekhov</u>, first produced 1897. Serebryakov, a retired professor, realizes the futility of his intellectual ideals when faced with the practical demands of life.

English poet and mystic. A friend and disciple of the Austrian-born British Catholic philosopher Baron Friedrich von Hügel, she found her way intellectually from agnosticism to Christianity. She wrote numerous books on mysticism, including *The Life of the Spirit* (1922), volumes of verse, and four novels. Her *Mysticism* (1911) became a standard work.

#### Undset, Sigrid (1882-1949)

Norwegian novelist. She was the author of *Kristin Lavransdatter* (1920-22), a strongly Catholic novel set in the 14th century. She was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1928.

## Ungaretti, Giuseppe (1888-1970)

Italian poet. His spare, lyrical poems, employing experimental verse forms and complex imagery, made him the principal figure of the 'hermetic' school of Italian poetry (from *ermetico* 'obscure'). His works include *Allegria di naufragi/The Joy of Shipwrecks* 1919, *Sentimento del tempo/The Sense of Time* 1933, and *II dolore/Grief* 1947.

## **United States literature**

early US literature falls into two distinct periods: colonial writing of the 1600s-1770s, largely dominated by the Puritans, and post-Revolutionary literature from the 1780s, when the ideal of US literature developed, and poetry, fiction, and drama began to evolve on national principles. Early 19th-century Romanticism contrasted sharply with the social realism of subsequent post-Civil War writing. 20th-century US writers continued the trend towards realism, as well as developing various forms of modernist experimentation.

**colonial period** (1607-1770s) Literature of this period includes travel books and religious verse, but is mainly theological: Roger Williams (1603-1683), Cotton Mather, and Jonathan Edwards (1703-1758) were typical Puritan writers. The *Autobiography* of Benjamin Franklin (1706-1790) is the first work of more than historical interest.

**post-Revolutionary period** (1780s-1820s) This period produced much political writing, by Thomas Paine, Thomas Jefferson (1743-1826), and Alexander Hamilton (1755-1804), and one noteworthy poet, Philip Freneau (1752-1832).

#### early 19th century

The influence of English Romantics became evident, notably on the poems of

William Cullen Bryant (1794-1878), Washington Irving's tales, Charles Brockden Brown's Gothic fiction, and James Fenimore Cooper's novels of frontier life. During 1830-60 intellectual life was centred in New England, which produced the essayists Ralph Waldo Emerson, Henry Thoreau, and Oliver Wendell Holmes; the poets Henry Wadsworth Longfellow, James Lowell, and John Whittier; and the novelists Nathaniel Hawthorne and Louisa May Alcott. Outside the New England circle were the novelists Edgar Allan Poe and Herman Melville.

**post-Civil War period** (1865-1900) The disillusionment of this period found expression in the realistic or psychological novel. Ambrose Bierce and Stephen Crane wrote realistic war stories; Mark Twain and Bret Harte dealt with Western life; the growth of industrialism led to novels of social realism, notably the works of William Howells and Frank Norris; and Henry James and his disciple Edith Wharton developed the novel of psychological analysis among the well-to-do. The dominant poets were Walt Whitman and Emily Dickinson. The short story flourished, its leading practitioners being Hawthorne, Poe, James, Harte, and O Henry.

#### 20th century

Writers specializing in the **short story** have included Ring Lardner, Katherine Anne Porter, Flannery O'Connor, William Saroyan, Eudora Welty, Grace Paley, and Raymond Carver.

#### drama

The USA produced a powerful group of dramatist between the wars, including Eugene O'Neill, Maxwell Anderson, Lillian Hellman, Elmer Rice, Thornton Wilder, and Clifford Odets. They were followed by Arthur Miller and Tennessee Williams. A later generation now includes Edward Albee, Neil Simon, David Mamet, John Guare, and Sam Shepard.

#### poetry

Poets like Edwin Arlington Robinson, Carl Sandburg, Vachel Lindsay, Robert Frost, and Edna St Vincent Millay extended the poetic tradition of the 19th century, but after the Imagist movement (see Imagism) of 1912-14 an experimental modern tradition arose with Ezra Pound, T S Eliot, William Carlos Williams, Marianne Moore, 'HD' (Hilda Doolittle), and Wallace Stevens. Attempts at writing the modern US epic include Pound's *Cantos*, Hart Crane's *The Bridge*, and William Carlos Williams's *Paterson*. Among the most striking post-World War II poets are Karl Shapiro, Theodore Roethke, Robert Lowell, Charles Ulson, Sylvia Plath, Gwendolyn Brooks (1917-2000), Denise Levertov (1923-97), John Ashbery, A R Ammons (1926-), and Allen Ginsberg.

**literary criticism** Irving Babbitt (1865-1933), George Santayana (1863-1953), H L Mencken, and Edmund Wilson (1895-1972) were dominant figures, followed by Lionel Trilling (1905-1975), Van Wyck Brooks, Yvor Winters (1900-1968), and John Crowe Ransom, author of *The New Criticism* (1941), which stressed structural and linguistic factors. More recently, US criticism has been influenced by French literary theory and the journalistic criticism of Gore Vidal, Tom Wolfe, George Plimpton, and Susan

#### Sontag.

#### novel

The main trends have been realism, as exemplified in the work of Jack London, Upton Sinclair, and Theodore Dreiser, and modernist experimentation. After World War I, Sherwood Anderson, Sinclair Lewis, Ernest Hemingway, William Faulkner, Thomas Wolfe, F Scott Fitzgerald, John Dos Passos, Henry Miller, and Richard Wright established the main literary directions. Among the internationally known novelists since World War II have been John O'Hara, James Michener, Eudora Welty, Truman Capote, J D Salinger, Saul Bellow, John Updike, Norman Mailer, Vladimir Nabokov, Bernard Malamud, Philip Roth, Ralph Ellison, Thomas Pynchon, and James Baldwin. Recent US literature increasingly expresses the cultural pluralism, regional variety, and historical and ethnic range of US life. Feminism and minority consciousness have been brought to the fore by authors such as Alice Walker, Toni Morrison (Nobel Prize 1993), and Maya Angelou.

## Unruh, Fritz von (1885-1970)

German dramatist, poet, and novelist. His play *Offiziere/Officers* 1910 was heavily critical of the tradition of German militarism and nationalism. The dramatic poem *Vor der Entscheidung/Before the Decision* 1919 expressed similar antiwar sentiments. Among Unruh's other works are a war novel, *Der Opfergang/Way of Sacrifice*, written at the front during World War I (at Verdun, France, in 1916), and the dramas *Ein Geschlecht/A family* 1916 and *Bonaparte* 1927.

# Unsworth, Barry Foster (1930-)

English novelist. Frequently reflecting on historical themes, his books are often set in locations which mirror his own wanderings, notably Turkey, Greece, and Italy. He was awarded the Booker Prize for *Sacred Hunger* (1992), an epic account of the 18thcentury Atlantic slave trade. *Pascali's Island* (1980), his sixth novel, was also shortlisted for the Booker Prize and later filmed.

Unsworth's first book was *The Partnership* (1966). Other works include *Stone Virgin* (1985), *Morality Play* (1995), *After Hannibal* (1996), *Losing Nelson* (1999), and *Songs of the Kings* (2002).

## Unwin, Stanley (1884-1968)

English publisher. An international figure in publishing, he became chairman of the firm of George Allen and Unwin, founded in 1914, and was president of the Publishers Association of Great Britain 1933-35 and the International Publishers Association 1936-38 and 1946-54. His books include *The Truth about Publishing* 

(1926; revised 1960) and Publishing in Peace and War (1944).

Unwin was educated at Abbotsholme School, Staffordshire, and studied the booktrade in Germany. His autobiography, *The Truth about a Publisher*, was published in 1960.

## Updike, John Hoyer (1932-)

US writer. Associated with the *New Yorker* magazine from 1955, he soon established a reputation for polished prose, poetry, and criticism. His novels include *The Poorhouse Fair* (1959), *The Centaur* (1963), *Couples* (1968), *The Witches of Eastwick* (1984), *Roger's Version* (1986), and *S.* (1988), and deal with the tensions and frustrations of contemporary US middle-class life and their effects on love and marriage.

Updike was born in Shillington, Pennsylvania, and graduated from Harvard University. Two characters recur in his novels: the former basketball player 'Rabbit' Angstrom, who matures in the series *Rabbit*, *Run* (1960), *Rabbit Redux* (1971), *Rabbit is Rich* (1981, Pulitzer Prize), and *Rabbit at Rest* (1990, Pulitzer Prize); and the novelist Henry Bech, who appears in *Bech: A Book* (1970) and *Bech is Back* (1982). Updike was awarded the Medal for Distinguished Contribution to American Letters in the 1998 National Book Awards.

## Uppdal, Kristofer (1878-1961)

Norwegian novelist and poet. His epic novel cycle *Dansen gjenom skuggeheimen/ Dance through a Shadowy Land* 1911-24, in ten volumes, is a study of the emergence of the industrial working class, to which he himself had belonged.

## Urfé, Honore d' (1567-1625)

French writer. His main work was a vast and influential pastoral romance, *L'Astrée/ Astrea*, the first part of which was published in 1607 and the fifth posthumously in 1627. The final section was completed by his secretary, Balthazar Baro, on the basis of Urfe's notes. This tale of shepherds and shepherdesses in love was inspired by earlier Spanish and Italian works; for example, Torquato <u>Tasso's</u> Arcadian drama *L'Aminta* (1581).

## Ur-Hamlet

an anonymous English play, now lost, written about 1589. Several contemporary

references suggest it may have been written by Thomas <u>Kyd</u>. Its original name is not known: scholars named it *Ur-Hamlet* (or sometimes *Source Hamlet*) because it was almost certainly one of the sources Shakespeare used when writing his tragedy *Hamlet*, *Prince of Denmark* 1600.

#### Uris, Leon (Marcus) (1924-2003)

US writer. He wrote popular best-sellers such as *Exodus* (1957). He also wrote many screenplays, including *Gunfight at the O.K. Corral* (1957). Uris was born in Baltimore, Maryland. He studied at local public schools, delivered newspapers by truck for the *San Francisco Call-Bulletin*, and served in the Marine Corps (1942-45), before eventually settling in Aspen, Colorado.

## Utopia

#### (Greek 'no place')

any ideal state in literature, named after philosopher Thomas More's ideal commonwealth in his book *Utopia* 1516. Other versions include Plato's *Republic*, Francis Bacon's *New Atlantis*, and *City of the Sun* by the Italian Tommaso Campanella (1568-1639). Utopias are a common subject in science fiction.

#### Utopia

social and political satire written in Latin by Thomas More, whose friend <u>Erasmus</u> arranged its publication in Louvain in 1516. In the first part of the book a traveller outlines the shortcomings of English society; in the second part he records his visit to a perfect society living on the imaginary island of Utopia (literally, 'Nowhere'), which he visited in the recently discovered New World.

Immediately popular, it was frequently issued in Latin during the 16th century, and translated into German (1524), Italian (1548), French (1550), English (1551), and Dutch (1553). It also inspired later Renaissance imitations, such as Campanella's *Città del sole*, and Francis Bacon's *The New Atlantis*, and has given its name to the political philosophy that insists upon the creation of a perfect society.

## Uttley, Alison (1884-1976)

English writer of children's stories. Born on a farm in Derbyshire, her first novel, *The Country Child* (1931), was followed by a flood of books, which revealed her great love for and knowledge of the countryside and country lore. Many of her stories

were in the Beatrix Potter tradition, featuring much-loved characters such as Little Grey Rabbit and Sam Pig.

#### Vachell, Horace Annesley (1861-1955)

English novelist. His novels, often about English middle-class life and aspirations, include *Brothers* 1904, *John Verney* 1911, *Quinney's Adventures* 1924, about an antique dealer, and *Quinney's for Quality* 1938. He also wrote a number of plays as well as dramatizing some of his novels.

#### Vailland, Roger (1907-1965)

French writer. His novels include *Drôle de jeu/Playing with Fire* 1945, *Les Mauvais Coups/Turn of the Wheel* 1948, and *La Loi/The Law* 1957. He has also written plays and volumes of essays, such as ' Eloge du Cardinal de Bernis' 1956 and 'Le Regard froid' 1963.

#### Valentine and Orson

in medieval romance, the sons of the emperor of Greece, fortuitously connected with the Charlemagne romances. Their story is based on the common folklore legend of a man reared by a bear.

#### Valerius Flaccus, Gaius (died c.ad 92)

Roman poet, author of a heroic poem, *Argonautica*, which was rediscovered by Poggio Bracciolini in 1416, and first printed in Bologna in 1472. The poem owes something to a similar work by <u>Apollonius of Rhodes</u> which also described the journey of the Argonauts. However, Valerius's work has greater merit than that of many other epic writers of the early empire.

## Valerius Maximus (lived c.Ad 30)

Roman historian. His work *Factorum et Dictorum Memorabilium Libri IX/Nine Books of Memorable Deeds and Sayings*, which was intended for use by public speakers, contained historical anecdotes exemplifying various vices and virtues. This work was popular with rhetoricians in the Middle Ages, and is interesting both as an example of the transition from classical to 'silver' Latin, and for its recording of many curious events.

# Valéry, Paul Amboise (1871-1945)

French poet and mathematician. His poetry, which combines delicate lyricism with intellectual rigour, includes *La Jeune Parque/The Young Fate* 1917 and *Charmes/ Enchantments* 1922, which contains 'Le Cimetière marin/The Graveyard by the Sea', one of the major poems of 20th-century French literature. He also wrote critical essays and many volumes of journals, which he regarded as among his most important work.

After publishing Symbolist-inspired verse in the 1890s, he abandoned poetry for nearly 20 years, devoting himself to the study of philosophy and mathematics before publishing *La Jeune Parque*.

# Vallancey, Charles (1721-1812)

English-born general and Irish antiquarian. Born in Windsor, Vallancey was posted to Ireland with the British army in 1762. He started an antiquarian journal, *Collectanea de Rebus Hibernicis*, in 1770 and his 1773 *Grammar of the Hiberno-Celtic or Irish Language* characterized Gaelic as a complex, 'masculine' language capable of great subtlety, akin to Persian and Chinese. He was a forceful initiator of many scholarly projects such as the study of ogham, an Irish alphabet based on 25 characters.

In 1779 Vallancey set up the Hibernian Antiquarian Society, and he became a founder member of the Royal Irish Academy (RIA), Dublin, in 1782.

## Valle-Inclán, Ramón María de (1866-1936)

Spanish author and poet. His works, made notorious by their frank eroticism, were influenced by French Symbolism. They include the four novels *Sonatas* 1902-05 and, set in South America, the novel *Tirano Banderas/The Tyrant* 1926.

# Vallejo, César (1892-1938)

Peruvian poet. An exponent of avant-garde poetry and a powerful advocate of social equality, Vallejo became the most influential Latin American poet of his generation. His first collection, *Los heraldos negros/The Dark Heralds* 1919, contained abiding themes of loss of family, alienation, and unhappy love. Further works, written during his imprisonment for political activities, are marked by their stylistic complexity.

## Vallès, Jules (1832-1885)

French writer. His uncompromising and often sensational works include *Les Réfractaires* 1865, *La Rue* 1866 (journalism), *La Rue à Londres* 1883, a comparison between Paris and London, and a trilogy of autobiographical romances 1879-86 published under the title *Jacques Vingtras*.

# Van Allsburg, Chris (1949-)

US writer, illustrator, and sculptor. Based in Providence, Rhode Island, he worked as a fine artist, sculptor, and creator of award-winning books for children, such as *The Polar Express* (1985). Van Allsburg was born in Grand Rapids, Michigan. He graduated from the University of Michigan (1972) and the Rhode Island School of Design (1975), where he taught illustration beginning in 1977.

# Vancura, Vladislav (1891-1942)

Czech novelist. He wrote in a picturesque style, incorporating archaisms, slang, dialect, convoluted sentences, and striking imagery. His antiwar novel *Pole orná a válecná/Fields for War and Fields for Ploughing* 1925 satirizes the attitude of both peasantry and nobility to events surrounding World War I. A communist, he was executed during the Nazi occupation of Czechoslovakia.

## van der Post, Laurens Jan (1906-1966)

South African writer. His books, many of them autobiographical tales of adventure with anthropological themes, reflect his fascination with diverse cultures and with theories of cultural difference. Several, notably *Jung and the Story of Our Time* (1976), are also influenced by the theories of Swiss psychologist Carl Jung. Van der Post believed that, in order to achieve wholeness, Western man should embrace intuition, individualism, and myth (the way he felt some other cultures do), thereby counteracting what he saw as the excessive rationality and spiritual impoverishment of Western civilization. His best-known works, which record the disappearing culture of the Bushmen of the Kalahari, are *The Lost World of the Kalahari* (1958), *The Heart of the Hunter* (1961), and *Testament to the Bushmen* (1984). He was knighted in 1981.

Born in Philippolis, South Africa, he was a commando in World War II and was captured by the Japanese. His first (and his most overtly political) novel, *In a Province* (1934), was an indictment of race relations in South Africa; later works include *Flamingo Feather* (1955), *The Hunter and the Whale* (1967), *A Story like the Wind* (1972), and *A Far-off Place* (1974). He wrote about Japanese prisoner-of-war

camps in *The Seed and the Sower* (1963, filmed as *Merry Christmas Mr Lawrence* in 1983). *Yet Being Someone Other* (1982) is a collection of autobiographical stories.

#### Van Dine, S S (1888-1939)

#### pseudonym of Willard Huntington Wright

US writer. He published *The Benson Murder Case* 1926 and *The Canary Murder Case* 1927, and other crime mysteries featuring the languid hero Philo Vance.

#### Van Doren, Carl Clinton (1885-1950)

US critic and biographer. He wrote lives of Thomas Love Peacock 1911, James Branch Cabell 1925, Dean Swift 1930, Sinclair Lewis 1933, and Benjamin Franklin 1938 (Pulitzer Prize). Critical works include *The American Novel* 1921 and, with his brother Mark <u>Van Doren</u>, *American and British Literature Since 1890* 1925.

#### Van Doren, Mark Albert (1894-1972)

US poet and writer. He published his first collection, *Spring Thunder*, 1924. His anthology *Collected Poems* 1939 won a Pulitzer Prize. He was an editor of *The Nation* 1924-28 and published the novels *The Transients* 1935 and *Windless Cabins* 1940.

Born in Hope, Illinois, USA, Van Doren was educated at the University of Illinois and received his PhD 1920 from Columbia University, where he taught English 1920-59. His autobiography appeared 1958 and his last collection of poems, *Good Morning*, 1973.

## Van Druten, John (1901-1957)

English-born US playwright and novelist. He first came to attention as a playwright with *Young Woodley*, 1928, but his most famous work is *I Am a Camera*, 1951, which was based on the Berlin stories of the English writer Christopher <u>Isherwood</u>.

# Van Duyn, Mona (Jane) (1921-)

US poet. Critics praised her for her accurate depiction of the everyday world, her

graceful use of rhyme, and her ability to make the ordinary seem extraordinary. In 1971 her 'To See, To Take' won the National Book Award and 'Near Changes' won the Pulitzer Prize in 1991. Her poems have appeared in a wide range of publications, including the *New Yorker, Kenyon Review*, and *Atlantic*. From the 1980s, Van Duyn increasingly appeared in anthologies of US poetry. In 1992-93 she was poet laureate of the US Library of Congress.

# Van Dyke, Henry (1852-1933)

US Protestant clergyman and author. From 1899 to 1923 he was a professor of English at Princeton. His publications included poetry, essays, and short stories on religious and secular themes. He was American ambassador to the Netherlands and Luxembourg from 1913 to 1916 and served as a naval chaplain during World War I.

# Vanity Fair

novel by William Makepeace <u>Thackeray</u>, published in the UK in 1847-48. It deals with the contrasting fortunes of the tough orphan Becky Sharp and the soft-hearted, privileged Amelia Sedley, who first meet at Miss Pinkerton's Academy for young ladies.

## Van Lerberghe, Charles (1861-1907)

Belgian poet and dramatist. His reputation rests on two volumes of poetry, *Entrevisions* 1898 and *Chansons d'Eve* 1904. *Les Flaireurs* 1889 is a Symbolist play. His *Lettres ... à F Saverin*, published 1924, contain discussions of his aesthetic principles.

# Vargas Llosa, (Jorge) Mario (Pedro) (1936-)

Peruvian novelist and politician. He wrote *La ciudad y los perros/The Time of the Hero* (1963) and *La guerra del fin del mundo/The War at the End of the World* (1982). In the course of his political career, Vargos Llosa began as a communist and later turned to the right; he ran unsuccessfully for the presidency in 1990, when he was defeated by Alberto Fujimori.

As a writer, he belongs to the magic realist school. His other works include *La tía Julia y el escribidor/Aunt Julia and the Scriptwriter* (1977), a humorously autobiographical novel, *Historia de Mayta/The Real Life of Alejandro Mayta* (1985), an account of an attempted revolution in Peru in 1958, and *The Storyteller* (1990).

# Varius Rufus, Lucius (lived 1st century BC)

Roman poet. Maecenas was his patron, and he was a friend of Horace and Virgil. His tragedy *Thyestes*, performed in 29 BC, was highly esteemed, being compared to Greek tragedy. He also wrote epics, only fragments of which are extant. He was commissioned to edit Virgil's <u>Aeneid</u> by the emperor Augustus.

# Varnhagen von Ense, Carl August (1785-1858)

German writer. His main works are biographies, such as lives of Goethe 1823 and General von Bülow 1853, and the five-volume *Biographische Denkmäle* 1824-30.

# Vauquelin de la Fresnaye, Jean, Sieur des Yveteaux (1536-c. 1608)

French poet. He wrote *Satyres françaises*, the earliest collection of regular satires in France; these were largely borrowed from Italian writers.

He also wrote *Art poétique* (1575, published 1605) in support of the ideals of the <u>*Pléiade*</u> poets, and *Idylles*, a collection of sonnets and epigrams.

## Vauvenargues, Luc de Clapiers, Marquis de (1715-1747)

French writer and moralist, born at Aix-en-Provence. He specialized in aphorisms on the human condition and social institutions, combining elegance with analytical rigour. His main work *Introduction à la connaissance de l'ésprit humain, suivie de reflexions et maximes/Introduction to Knowledge of the Human Spirit, accompanied by some Reflections and Maxims* was published in 1746.

# Vega, Lope Felix de (Carpio) (1562-1635)

Spanish poet and dramatist. He was one of the founders of modern Spanish drama. He wrote epics, pastorals, odes, sonnets, novels, and over 500 plays (of which 426 are still in existence), mostly tragicomedies. He set out his views on drama in *Arte nuevo de hacer comedias/The New Art of Writing Plays* (1609), in which he defended his innovations while reaffirming the classical forms. *Fuenteovejuna* (*c.* 1614) has been acclaimed as the first proletarian drama.

# Vegetius (lived 5th century)

#### born Flavius Vegetius Renatus

Roman writer, author of *Epitoma Rei Militaris* in four books. The material, on military matters, is chiefly borrowed from earlier authorities, and the style is worthless. However, Vegetius is the only extant source for much that his work contains. He also wrote *Digestorum artis mulomedicinae libri*, on veterinary medicine.

#### Vélez de Guevara, Luis (1578-1645)

Spanish dramatist and novelist. His fantastic novel *El diablo cojuelo/The Crippled Devil* 1641 is the basis of Alain-René <u>Le Sage'sLe Diable boîteux/The Devil upon Two</u> *Sticks* 1707.

His numerous plays, in the style of Lope de <u>Vega</u>, include *Más pesa el rey que la sangre* 1700, and *La luna de la sierra* 1652.

#### Vendler, Helen (Hennessy) (1933-)

US literary critic and educator. A professor at Boston University (1966-85) and Harvard (1981), she became the *New Yorker*'s poetry critic (1978); through her numerous reviews there and in the *New York Review of Books* she exerted a powerful influence over the reputations and publications of contemporary poets. Vendler was born in Boston, Massachusetts.

#### Vercors (1902-1991)

#### pseudonym of Jean Bruller

French writer. He cofounded the clandestine publishing company Editions de Minuit during the German occupation 1940-44 and published *Le Silence de la mer/The Silence of the Sea* 1941 and *La Marche à l'étoile* 1943, about the Jews in France during World War II. His later work includes novels, short stories, and several plays.

#### Verde, Cesario (1855-1886)

Portuguese poet. His verse contains charming descriptions of Lisbon seen through the eyes of a countryman, as well as profound insights into modern city life.

# Verga, Giovanni (1840-1922)

Italian novelist. He realistically described the life of Sicilian peasants and fisherfolk in such works as *La vita dei campi/Life in the Fields* 1880, *I Malavoglia/The House by the Medlar Tree* 1881, and *Mastro Don Gesualdo/* 1889. His short story 'Cavalleria rusticana/Rustic Chivalry' 1884, which he rewrote as a play, was adapted as the libretto for Pietro Mascagni's opera 1890 of the same name.

# Vergil

alternative spelling of Virgil, Roman poet.

# Verhaeren, Emile (1855-1916)

Belgian poet. The influence of the French Symbolists on his work was profound, yet his poetry is often distinctly Flemish in inspiration; for example, *Les Flamandes* 1883. His compassionate response to contemporary problems is reflected in such works as *Les Villes tentaculaires* 1895.

In the poems *Les Ailes rouges de la Guerre* 1916, he reflects on Belgium's plight in World War I.

## Verlaine, Paul Marie (1844-1896)

French lyric poet. He was acknowledged as the leader of the Symbolist poets. His volumes of verse, strongly influenced by the poets Charles <u>Baudelaire</u> and Arthur <u>Rimbaud</u>, include *Poèmes saturniens/Saturnine Poems* (1866), *Fêtes galantes/ Amorous Entertainments* (1869), and *Romances sans paroles/Songs without Words* (1874). In 1873 he was imprisoned for shooting and wounding Rimbaud. His later works reflect his attempts to lead a reformed life.

# Vermeylen, August (1872-1945)

Flemish writer. He was the critical mentor of the Flemish movement and one of the cofounders of the journal *Van Nu en Straks/Today and Tomorrow*, advocating a more serious, intellectual, and international attitude to literature. As a critic and professor at Brussels and Ghent universities he greatly influenced his generation.

His philosophical novel *De wandelende Jood* 1906 and his *History of Plastic Art and Painting in Europe* 1921-25 are also important.

# Verne, Jules (1828-1905)

French author. He wrote tales of adventure that anticipated future scientific developments: *Five Weeks in a Balloon* (1862), *Journey to the Centre of the Earth* (1864), *Twenty Thousand Leagues under the Sea* (1870), and *Around the World in Eighty Days* (1873).

#### verse

arrangement of words in a rhythmic pattern, which may depend on the length of syllables (as in Greek or Latin verse), or on stress, as in English. Classical Greek verse depended upon quantity, a long syllable being regarded as occupying twice the time taken up by a short syllable.

In English verse syllables are either stressed (strong) or unstressed (weak), and are combined in feet, examples of which are: iamb (unstressed/stressed); trochee (stressed/unstressed); spondee (stressed/stressed); pyrrhic (unstressed/ unstressed); anapaest (unstressed/unstressed/stressed); and dactyl (stressed/ unstressed/unstressed).

**Rhyme** (repetition of sounds in the endings of words) was introduced to Western European verse in late Latin poetry, and alliteration (repetition of the same initial letter in successive words) was the dominant feature of Anglo-Saxon poetry. Both these elements helped to make verse easily remembered in the days when it was spoken rather than written.

#### form

The Spenserian stanza (in which <u>Spenser</u> wrote *The Faerie Queene*) has nine iambic lines rhyming ababbcbcc. In English, the <u>sonnet</u> has 14 lines, generally of ten syllables each; it has several rhyme schemes.

**Blank verse**, consisting of unrhymed five-stress lines, as used by Marlowe, Shakespeare, and Milton, develops an inner cohesion that replaces the props provided by rhyme and stanza. It became the standard metre for English dramatic and epic poetry.

<u>Free verse</u>, or *vers libre*, avoids rhyme, stanza form, and any obvious rhythmical basis.

Dutch poet and critic. His early poetry is impressionistic and intensely individual, but his mature work is more contemplative and has been criticized as overintellectual. He was among the founders of *De Nieuwe Gids/The New Guide* 1884, and his influence as a literary historian was profound.

In 1925 he was appointed professor of Dutch literature at the university of Leiden.

# Very, Jones (1813-1880)

US poet and writer. After working briefly as a minister, he retired to Salem and became a transcendentalist poet admired by Ralph Waldo Emerson. Very was born in Salem, Massachusetts. He sailed with his ship-captain father, then attended Harvard (BA 1836), where he was a tutor in Greek. He studied at Harvard Divinity School (1836-38), but resigned and spent a month in an asylum.

# Vesaas, Tarjei (1897-1970)

Norwegian novelist and poet. The theme of his early work was the harmony of life in tune with nature. After World War II his style became more symbolic and he used visual images to represent inner conflicts. His best-known novels are *Kimen/The Seed* 1965 and *Is-slottet/The Ice Palace* 1963.

His poetry is lyrical mood-painting, and written, like his novels, in Nynorsk (the form of Norwegian language derived from dialects).

# Vestdijk, Simon (1898-1971)

Dutch writer and critic. His 38 novels, 10 collections of short stories, 28 books of essays, and 22 volumes of poetry are the products of a skilful writing technique and a penetrating intellect.

# Viau, Théophile de (1590-1626)

French playwright and poet who courted controversy. In 1623, he was condemned to be burned at the stake for his part in the publication of scurrilous verse, but the sentence was commuted to one of imprisonment and banishment.

real name of French novelist Pierre Loti.

#### Vidal, Gore (1925-)

#### born Eugene Luther Vidal

US writer and critic. Much of his fiction deals satirically with history and politics and includes the novels *Myra Breckinridge* (1968), *Burr* (1973), *Empire* (1987), *The Smithsonian Institution* (1998), and *The Golden Age* (2000). He has written plays and screenplays, including *Suddenly Last Summer* (1958), and essays, such as 'Armageddon?' (1987). His autobiography *Palimpsest* appeared in 1995.

#### Viebig, Clara (1860-1952)

German novelist. She wrote about the influence of the bleak landscape of the Eifel region of the Rhineland, near Luxembourg, on the people who live there, in such novels as *Kinder der Eifel* 1897, *Das Weiberdorf* 1900, and *Das Kreuz in Venn* 1908. Later novels are set in modern Berlin.

#### Vielé-Griffin, Francis (1864-1937)

French Symbolist poet, born in the USA. He was a leading exponent of <u>free verse</u>, which he used to great effect in some of his works. Among his many volumes of poetry are *Cueille d'avril* 1886, *Poèmes et poésies* 1895, and *Sapho* 1911.

He was one of the founders and editors of the journal *Les Entretiens politiques et littéraires* 1890-92.

#### Viereck, George Sylvester (1884-1962)

US writer and propagandist, of German origin. A published poet (1904), he became a writer and editor with German language publications, defending Germany at the outbreak of World War I. Known for his interviews of international figures - including Hitler (1923) - he was a Nazi apologist who was indicted in 1941 under the Foreign Agents Registration Act; he served four years in prison (1943-47). He wrote two novels and a memoir in his later years.

French Romantic writer. His works, pervaded by an air of melancholy Stoicism, include the historical novel *Cinq-Mars* 1826, the play *Chatterton* 1835, and poetry, for example, *Les Destinées/Destinies* 1864.

#### Villani, Giovanni (c. 1280-1348)

Italian historian. His *Cronica universale* 1559 begins with biblical times and continues until 1348; it also gives a valuable account of the early history of Florence. It was continued by his brother Matteo Villani and Matteo's son Filippo Villani, who took the chronicle to 1363.

# Villehardouin, Geoffroy de (c. 1160-c. 1213)

French historian. He was the first to write in the French language. He was a leader of the Fourth Crusade, of which his *Conquest of Constantinople* (*c.* 1209) is an account.

## Villena, Enrique de (1384-1434)

Spanish translator, astrologer, and cook. He was friends with Iñigo <u>Santillana</u> and his colourful life would be dramatized by Lope de <u>Vega</u>. On Santillana's request, he produced the first complete Castilian translation of Virgil's *Aeneid* and in 1428 translated Dante's *Divine Comedy*. He also composed an *Arte cisoria o tratado del arte de cortar con el cuchillo/The Art of Cutting with a Knife* (1423), on culinary matters.

He rose to become the Master of the Order of Calatrava, but even this supremely orthodox position could not save his library, most of which was burned on his death because of his reputation as a magician.

# Villiers de l'Isle Adam, (Jean Marie Philippe) Auguste, comte de (1838-1889)

French poet. He was the inaugurator of the Symbolist movement.

His work includes the drama *Axel* 1890; *Isis* 1862, a romance of the supernatural; verse; and short stories.

# Villon, François (1431-c. 1465)

French poet. He used satiric humour, pathos, and irony in works like *Petit Testament* or *Louis* (1456) and *Grand Testament* (1461) (the latter includes the 'Ballade des dames du temps jadis/Ballad of the Ladies of Former Times'), both of which are mock wills bequeathing absurd or obscene possessions. His *Ballades en jargon* are written in lowlife argot.

He was born in Paris and dropped his surname (Montcorbier or de Logos) to assume that of one of his relatives, a canon, who sent him to study at the Sorbonne, where he graduated in 1449 and 1452. In 1455 he stabbed a priest in a street fight and had to flee the city. Pardoned the next year, he returned to Paris but was soon in flight again after robbing the College of Navarre. He stayed briefly at the court of the Duke of Orléans until sentenced to death for an unknown offence, from which he was saved by the amnesty of a public holiday. Theft and public brawling continued to occupy his time, in addition to the production of the *Grand Testament* (1461). A sentence of death in Paris, commuted to ten-year banishment in 1463, is the last that is known of his life.

# Vincent of Beauvais (c. 1190-1264)

French scholar, encyclopedist, and Dominican priest. A chaplain to the court of Louis IX, he is remembered for his *Speculum majus/Great Mirror* 1220-44, a reference work summarizing contemporary knowledge on virtually every subject, including science, natural history, literature, and law. It also contained a history of the world from the creation.

It is noteworthy for its positive attitude to classical literature, which had undergone a period of eclipse in the preceding centuries.

#### Virgil (70-19 BC)

#### born Publius Vergilius Maro

Roman poet. He wrote the *Eclogues* (37  $_{BC}$ ), a series of pastoral poems; the *Georgics* (30  $_{BC}$ ), four books on the art of farming; and his epic masterpiece, the <u>Aeneid</u> (30-19  $_{BC}$ ). He was patronized by Maecenas on behalf of Octavian (later the emperor Augustus).

Born near Mantua, Virgil was educated in Cremona and Mediolanum (Milan), and later studied philosophy and rhetoric at Rome. He wrote his second work, the *Georgics*, in honour of his new patron, Maecenas, to whom he introduced <u>Horace</u>. He passed much of his later life at Naples and devoted the last decade of it to the composition of the *Aeneid*, often considered the most important poem in Latin literature. In 19 BC Virgil went to Greece and caught a fever while visiting the ruins of Megara. Returning to Italy, he died soon after landing at Brundisium. The *Aeneid*,

which he had wanted destroyed, was published by his executors on the order of the emperor Augustus.

Later Christian adaptations of his work, in particular of the prophetic *Fourth Eclogue*, greatly enhanced his mystical status in the Middle Ages, resulting in his adoption by <u>Dante</u> as his guide to the underworld in the *Divine Comedy*.

# Vitrac, Roger (1899-1952)

French poet and dramatist. He was associated with the surrealists, and with Tristan Tzara was a founder of Dada. His plays include *Les Mystères de l'amour* 1927 and the drawing-room farce *Victor*, *ou les enfants au pouvoir* 1928.

With Antonin Artaud he established the Théâtre Alfred Jarry 1927, where Vitrac's plays were performed. Others include *Le Coup de Trafalgar* 1934, *Le Camelot* 1936, *Le Loup-garou* 1940, and *Le Sabre de mon père* 1951.

# Vittorini, Elio (1908-1966)

Italian novelist, critic, and translator. He founded the review *II Politecnico* 1945 and had considerable influence on the post-war Italian literary scene. His novels include *II garofano rosso/The Red Carnation* 1948 (written 1933-35), *Conversazione in Sicilia/Conversations in Sicily* 1939, *Uomini e no* 1945, and *Diario in pubblico* 1957.

## Vives, Juan Luis (1492-1540)

Spanish humanist writer and teacher. Educated in his hometown Valencia and in Paris, he settled in 1512 in Bruges, Flanders. He published in 1522 a commentary on St Augustine's *De civitate Dei/City of God*, which he had undertaken at the behest of the humanist scholar Erasmus. English patronage came from Henry VIII's wife Catherine of Aragon and from Cardinal Wolsey, who paid Vives to lecture at Oxford in 1523. In this period, Vives also produced a range of works: commentaries on classical texts, educational treatises, and political works.

# Vizenor, Gerald (1934-)

US Chippewa writer. His poetry and fiction reflect his childhood experiences of desertion and death. His books include *Darkness in Saint Louis Bearheart* (1978), *Dead Voices* (1992), and the screenplay *Harold of Orange*.

# Vlastos, Gregory (1907-1991)

Turkish-born US classicist. His publications in the field of Greek philosophy include *Platonic Studies* (1973) and *Plato's Universe* (1975). He taught at the universities of Cornell 1948-55 and Princeton 1955-76, and at the University of California, Berkeley, 1976-82.

#### Vogüé, (Charles Jean) Melchior, Vicomte de (1848-1910)

French writer. He wrote critical works, including studies of the Russian writers Ivan Turgenev 1885 and Maxim Gorky 1905 and the wider-ranging *Le Roman russe* 1886 and *Regards historiques et littéraires* 1892. His novels include *Les Morts qui parlent* 1899, and his travel book *Syrie, Palestine, Mont Athos* was published 1876.

## Voiculescu, Vasile (1884-1963)

Romanian poet and novelist. His *Poezii/Poems* 1916 reflect the influence of George Cosbuc. Later volumes - *Poeme cu ingeri/Poems with Angels* 1927, *Destin/Destiny* 1933, and *Urcus/Ascent* 1937 - give voice to a more individual style.

A number of 'feigned translations of an imaginary final sequence of sonnets by Shakespeare' were written by Voiculescu between 1954 and 1958, when he was arrested. They were published posthumously in 1965, as was the novel *Zahei orbul/ Blind Zahei* 1966.

## Voiture, Vincent (1598-1648)

French writer. A wit, conversationalist, and critic, he was a prominent figure in Madame de Rambouillet's salon. His literary works, published posthumously, consist of poems and letters, many of them light-hearted and sparkling, others more serious in tone.

## Voltaire (1694-1778)

#### pen-name of François-Marie Arouet

French writer. He is the embodiment of the 18th-century Enlightenment. He wrote histories, books of political analysis and philosophy, essays on science and literature, plays, poetry, and the satirical fable <u>Candide</u> (1759), his best-known work. A trenchant satirist of social and political evils, he was often forced to flee

from his enemies and was twice imprisoned. His works include *Lettres philosophiques sur les Anglais/Philosophical Letters on the English* (1733) (essays in favour of English ways, thought, and political practice), *Le Siècle de Louis XIV/The Age of Louis XIV* (1751), and *Dictionnaire philosophique/Philosophical Dictionary* (1764).

Voltaire was born in Paris, the son of a notary, and used his pen-name from 1718. He was twice imprisoned in the Bastille and exiled from Paris 1716-26 for libellous political verse. *Oedipe/Oedipus*, his first essay in tragedy, was staged in 1718. While in England 1726-29 he dedicated an epic poem on Henry IV, *La Henriade/The Henriade*, to Queen Caroline, and on returning to France published the successful *Histoire de Charles XII/History of Charles XII* in 1731, and produced the play *Zaïre* in 1732.

He took refuge with his lover, the Marquise de Châtelet, at Cirey in Champagne, where he wrote the play *Mérope* (1743) and much of *Le Siècle de Louis XIV*. Among his other works are histories of Peter the Great, Louis XV, and India; the satirical tale *Zadig* (1748); *La Pucelle/The Maid* (1755), on Joan of Arc; and the tragedy *Irène* (1778). From 1751 to 1753 he stayed at the court of Frederick II (the Great) of Prussia, who had long been an admirer, but the association ended in deep enmity. From 1754 he established himself near Geneva, and after 1758 at Ferney, just across the French border.

#### Voltaire



#### (Image © Billie Love)

The French philosopher Voltaire (1694-1778). Voltaire was a towering intellectual and literary figure of the Enlightenment, as admired as he was despised. The English poet William Blake, for example, ranked Voltaire, along with Newton, as the man most responsible for the soulless and mechanistic rationalism that he believed characterized life after the Enlightenment.

# Voluspá

#### The Sybil's Prophecy

Old Norse cosmological poem preserved in the <u>Edda</u>, and believed to have been composed shortly before 1000, most probably in Iceland. It covers the whole history of the Norse cosmos from its creation to the Ragnarök (Doom of the Gods) and beyond. There are some Christian elements in the poem.

# Vondel, Joost van den (1587-1679)

Dutch poet and dramatist. His religious dramas include *Joseph in Dothan* 1640, *Lucifer* 1654, *Jeptha* 1659, and *Adam in Ballingschap* 1664. He also translated a number of classical tragedies. His majestic, fervent style had a considerable influence on German drama of the late 17th and early 18th centuries.

# Vonnegut, Kurt, Jr (1922-)

US writer. His early works, *Player Piano* (1952) and *The Sirens of Titan* (1959), used the science fiction genre to explore issues of technological and historical control. He turned to more experimental methods with his highly acclaimed, popular success *Slaughterhouse-Five* (1969), a novel that mixed a world of fantasy with the author's experience of the fire-bombing of Dresden, Germany, during World War II. His later novels, marked by a bittersweet spirit of absurdist anarchy and folksy fatalism, include *Breakfast of Champions* (1973), *Slapstick* (1976), *Jailbird* (1979), *Deadeye Dick* (1982), *Galapagos* (1985), *Hocus Pocus* (1990), *The Face* (1992), and *Timequake* (1997).

His short stories are collected in *Welcome to the Monkey House* (1968), and *Bagombo Snuff Box* (2000). He has written two volumes of autobiography, *Palm Sunday* (1981) and *Fates Worse Than Death: An Autobiographical Collage of the 1980s* (1992).

# Vörösmarty, Mihály (1800-1855)

Hungarian poet, dramatist, and critic. Vörösmarty was the most important of the Hungarian Romantics. He wrote an epic on the Magyars' occupation of Hungary in the 9th century, *Zalán futása/The Flight of Zalan* 1825. As a leading member of Károly Kisfaludy's Aurora group, the editor of the scholarly reviews *Tudományos Gyüjtemény/Compendium of Learning* and *Athenaeum*, and a founder of the Kisfaludy Society in 1836, he was a key figure in Hungarian literary life in the years before the 1848 revolution.

Vörösmarty was the author of the lyrical poems 'Ábránd/Reverie', 'Puszta csárda/the Inn at Puszta', and 'Szózat/Appeal'. He also wrote the fairy-tale drama *Csongor és Tünde* 1831.

# Voznesensky, Andrey Andreyevich (1933-)

Russian poet. Coming to prominence in the early 1960s, he was (along with Yevgeny <u>Yevtushenko</u>) one of the most original Soviet poets to emerge during the cultural and intellectual thaw that followed the death of Stalin. He gave many popular

readings, both in Russia and the West; poems such as 'Goya' and 'Antiworlds' have reached an international audience.

#### Vrchlický, Jaroslav (1853-1912)

#### pseudonym of Emil Frída

Czech poet, dramatist, novelist, essayist, and translator. Vrchlický was a prolific and innovative writer, interested in mythology and history. Collections of poetry include *The Sword of Damocles* 1913 and *The Flowers of Perdita* 1930, published posthumously. The latter work contains some of the finest love poetry in the Czech language.

#### Vysotsky, Vladimir Semenovich (1938-1980)

Russian ballad singer and actor famous during the 1970s for his popular songs, circulated privately since he was forbidden to publish the words. The satirical ballads he wrote and performed told of Russian hypocrisy, Stalin's prison camps, food lines, and other Soviet ills.

## Wain, John (Barrington) (1925-1994)

English poet and novelist. His first novel, *Hurry on Down* (1953), expresses the radical political views of the <u>Angry Young Men</u> of the 1950s. He published several volumes of witty and ironic verse, collected in *Poems 1949-79* (1981), and was professor of poetry at Oxford University from 1973-80.

#### Wakoski, Diane (1937-)

US poet. She is known for her literary criticism and her autobiographical poetry, as in *The Collected Greed: Parts I-XIII* (1984).

She was born in Whittier, California, and studied at the University of California at Berkeley. She taught in New York City 1963-66 and then at several colleges, notably Michigan State University from 1976.

#### Walcott, Derek Walton (1930-)

St Lucian writer, poet, and playwright. His work fuses Caribbean and European,

classical and contemporary elements, and deals with the divisions within colonial society and his own search for cultural identity. His works include the long poem *Omeros* (1990) and his adaptation of Homer's *Odyssey* for the stage (1992); his *Collected Poems* were published in 1986. His biography of French impressionist painter Pissarro, *Tiepolo's Hound*, was published in 2000. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1992.

Walcott was educated at the University of the West Indies. He has taught writing at the universities of Columbia, Yale, and Harvard. He contributed greatly to the development of an indigenous West Indian theatre, and for 25 years ran a theatre in Trinidad. Other plays include *Dream on Monkey Mountain* (1970), *O Babylon!* (1978), and *Remembrance* (1980). His collection of poetry *The Bounty* appeared in 1997.

#### Walden

#### or Life in the Woods

a classic literary work of 19th-century US individualism and political radicalism, published in 1854. It is the record kept by Henry David <u>Thoreau</u> of his attempt to 'front the essential facts of life' by building a simple cabin at Walden Pond, near Concord, Massachusetts, and observing nature there.

#### Walker, Alice Malsenior (1944-)

US poet, novelist, critic, and essay writer. She has been active in the US civil-rights movement since the 1960s and, as a black woman, wrote about the double burden of racist and sexist oppression, about colonialism, and the quest for political and spiritual recovery. Her novel *The Color Purple* (1982; filmed 1985), told in the form of letters, won a Pulitzer Prize. Her other works include *Possessing the Secret of Joy* (1992), which deals passionately with female circumcision; *By the Light of My Father's Smile* (1998); and *The Way Forward is with a Broken Heart* (2001).

She was born in Eatonton, Georgia. In 1972 she took a teaching post at Wellesley College, Massachusetts, where she founded the first women's studies course in the USA. Other novels include *The Third Life of Grange Copeland* (1970), *Meridian* (1976), and *The Temple of My Familiar* (1989). Walker's collections of poems include *Once* (1968) and *Revolutionary Petunias* (1973), and her short stories and essays are collected in *Love and Trouble: Stories of Black Women* (1973) and *In Search of Our Mothers' Gardens: Womanist Prose* (1983).

#### Walker, James Cooper (1761-1810)

Irish antiquarian. Born in Dublin, Walker was a founder-member of the Royal Irish

Academy (RIA), Dublin, and worked with Gaelic enthusiasts such as Charlotte <u>Brooke</u> and Charles <u>Vallancey</u>. Most notable is his *Historical Memoirs of the Irish Bards* (1786), which traces Irish poetry and music from their earliest points with the benefit of contemporary scholarship. Like other members of the academy, Walker worked to establish Irish culture as a dignified and vibrant area of study.

#### Wall, Mervyn Eugene Welply (1908-1997)

Irish writer. Born in Dublin, he was educated in Germany and at University College, Dublin. His writing is a combination of serious fiction and burlesque drama; his best-selling *The Unfortunate Fursey* (1946), a comedic satire of Catholic Ireland, stands in stylistic contrast to his *Leaves for the Burning* (1952), a meticulously crafted and strong indictment of the repression in Ireland during the 1930s and 1940s.

Wall worked as a civil servant throughout his career, rising to secretary of the Arts Council.

## Wallace, (Richard Horatio) Edgar (1875-1932)

English writer of thrillers. His prolific output includes *The Four Just Men* (1905) and *The Mind of Mr J G Reeder* (1925); stories such as those in *Sanders of the River* (1911), set in Africa, and sequels; and melodramas such as *The Ringer* (1926), from his own novel *The Gaunt Stranger* (1925).

#### Wallace, Irving (1916-1990)

US novelist. He was one of the most popular writers of the 20th century. He wrote 17 works of non-fiction and 16 novels; they include *The Chapman Report* (1960), a novel inspired by the Kinsey Report on sexual behaviour, and *The Prize* (1962).

## Walpole, Horace (1717-1797)

#### 4th Earl of Orford

English novelist, letter writer and politician, the son of Robert Walpole. He was a Whig member of Parliament 1741-67.

He converted his house at Strawberry Hill, Twickenham (then a separate town southwest of London), into a Gothic castle; his *The Castle of Otranto* (1764) established the genre of the Gothic, or 'romance of terror', novel. More than 4,000 of his letters have been published. He became Earl in 1791.

# Walser, Martin (1927-)

German dramatist and novelist. Harsh and uncompromising in his social criticism, he concentrates on the newly rich German middle classes in such novels as *Ehen in Philippsburg/Marriage in Philippsburg* (1957), *Das Einhorn/The Unicorn* (1966), and *Das Schwanenhaus/The Swan Villa* (1980). *Eiche und Angora/The Rabbit Race* (1962) and *Die Zimmerschlaft/Home Front* (1967) are his best-known plays.

His autobiographical novel *Ein springender Brunnen* won the German publishing industry's Friedenspreis (Peace Prize) in 1998. His strong social views have led many critics to perceive him as anti-Semitic: his novel *Tod eines Kritikers/Death of a Critic* (2002) aroused particular controversy.

# Walser, Robert (1878-1956)

Swiss writer. He wrote three novels: the family saga *Geschwister Tanner* 1907, the more realistic but comic *Der Gehulfe* 1908, and *Jakob von Gunten* 1909, in the form of a diary kept by a young boy at boarding school. He also wrote poetry and prose.

# Walsh, Maurice (1879-1964)

Irish novelist. Born near Listowel, County Kerry, Walsh was educated in Ireland before working in the Scottish Highlands in the Customs and Excise service. His stories are mostly historical romances set in Ireland and Scotland, and his works include *The Key Above the Door* (1926), *Green Rushes* (1935), and *Sons of the Swordmaker* (1938). *Green Rushes* contains his most noted story 'The Quiet Man', which became the basis of John Ford's celebrated film of the same name in 1950.

## Walton, Izaak (1593-1683)

English writer. He is known for his classic fishing compendium *The Compleat Angler*, *or the Contemplative Man's Recreation* (1653). He also wrote lives of the poets John Donne (1658) and George Herbert (1670), and the theologian Richard Hooker (1665).

## War and Peace

novel by Leo <u>Tolstoy</u>, published 1863-69. It chronicles the lives of three noble families in Russia during the Napoleonic Wars and is notable for its complex

characters and optimistic tone.

#### Ward, Artemus

#### pen-name of Charles Farrar Browne

US humorist. See Browne, Charles Farrar.

## Warner, Charles Dudley (1829-1900)

US writer. He practised law in Chicago until 1860 before moving to Hartford, Connecticut, to work as an editor for the *Evening Press* (which merged with the *Hartford Courant* in 1867). He travelled to Europe often and wrote numerous travel sketches and essays, but is remembered now for only his first novel, *The Gilded Age* (1873), which he coauthored with Mark <u>Twain</u>.

Warner was born in Plainfield, Massachusetts. He studied at Hamilton, gaining his BA in 1851. He worked as a railroad surveyor in Missouri (1853-54), then returned to school to take a law degree at the University of Pennsylvania, graduating in 1858.

#### Warner, Marina Sarah (1946-)

English literary critic and writer. Following acclaim as Young Writer of the Year in 1969, she has won numerous awards, and in 1994 delivered the Reith Lectures, a series entitled *Six Myths of Our Time*, published as *Managing Monsters* (1994). Other works include *Alone of all her Sex: The Myth and Culture of the Virgin Mary* (1976), *Monuments and Maidens* (1985), and *Mermaids in the Basement* (1993).

Warner was born in London and educated at St Mary's Convent, Ascot, and Lady Margaret Hall, Oxford. She was the Paul Getty Scholar at the Getty Centre for the History of Art and the Humanities 1987-88 and the Tinbergen Professor at Erasmus University, Rotterdam 1990-91. She won the Fawcett prize in 1986, and the Commonwealth Writers' prize (Eurasia) in 1989.

#### Warner, Susan Bogert (1819-1885)

US novelist. She wrote under the name Elizabeth Wetherell. Her emotional novel *The Wide, Wide World* 1850 was followed by *Queechy* 1852 and several similar stories of gentle piety.

# Warren, Mercy Otis (1728-1814)

US historian and poet. In addition to publishing poetry and plays, she published historical works including *Observations on the New Constitution* (1788) and *History of the Rise, Progress, and Termination of the American Revolution* (1805). She corresponded at length with Abigail Adams, John Adams, and other leading political figures, and is arguably the USA's first major female intellectual. Warren was born in Barnstable, Massachusetts.

## Warren, Robert Penn (1905-1989)

US poet and novelist. He is the only author to have received a Pulitzer Prize for both prose and poetry. His work explored the moral problems of the South. His most important novel, *All the King's Men* (1946; Pulitzer Prize 1947), depicts the rise and fall of a back-country demagogue modelled on the career of Huey Long. He also won Pulitzer Prizes for *Promises* (1968) and *Now and Then: Poems* (1976-78). He was a senior figure of the <u>New Criticism</u>, and the first official US poet laureate 1986-88.

## Wassermann, Jakob (1873-1934)

German novelist. Most of his novels are studies of post-1918 conditions and problems, and include *Christian Wahnschaffe/The World's Illusion* 1919, *Der Fall Maurizius/The Maurizius Case* 1928 and *Doktor Kerkhoven/Etzel Andergast* 1932. His autobiography, *Mein Weg als Deutscher und Jude/My Life as German and Jew*, appeared 1921.

#### Waste Land, The

poem by T S <u>Eliot</u>, first published in 1922. A long, complex, and innovative poem, it expressed the prevalent mood of disillusionment after World War I and is a key work of modernism in literature.

#### Water Babies, The

fantasy by English author Charles <u>Kingsley</u>, published in England in 1863. Tom, an orphan child who works as a chimney sweep, inadvertently frightens a girl, Ellie, and runs away. He drowns and is immortalized as an amphibious 'water baby'. After redeeming his moral character by the instruction of Mrs Bedonebyasyoudid and Mrs Doasyouwouldbedoneby, Tom is reunited with Ellie, who strikes her head on the rocks after a fall at the seashore. She dies a few days later, joining Tom as a water

# Waterhouse, Keith Spencer (1929-)

English journalist, novelist, and dramatist. His second novel, *Billy Liar* (1959), an account of a whimsical day in the life of a fantasy-prone undertaker's clerk, became a successful play and film. His play *Jeffrey Bernard Is Unwell* (1989) was based on the dissolute life of a *Spectator* columnist. Waterhouse was a journalist on the *Daily Mirror* from 1970 to 1986, when he moved to the *Daily Mail*.

Born in Leeds, Waterhouse's Yorkshire working-class background and early job experience helped produce *Billy Liar*, which he adapted for the stage in collaboration with Willis Hall (1929-). They went on to write a long line of plays, musical revues, and films together; for example, the screenplays *Whistle Down the Wind* (1961) and *A Kind of Loving* (1962) (adapted from a novel by Stan Barstow).

## Watkins, Vernon (1906-1967)

Welsh poet. He used musical rhythms and intonations in his poetry, of which he published eight volumes, including *Ballad of the Mari Lwyd* 1941, *The Lamp and the Veil* 1945, *The Death Bell* 1954, and *Affinities* 1962, and translated poems by Heinrich Heine in *The North Sea* 1951.

#### Watson, John (1850-1907)

Scottish novelist. He wrote under the name 'lan Maclaren' and was one of the victims of criticism of the <u>Kailyard School</u>. His works include *Beside the Bonnie Brier Bush* 1894, *The Days of Auld Lang Syne* 1895, *Kate Carnegie* 1897, and *The Young Barbarians* 1901.

#### Watson, William (1858-1935)

English poet. His works include *Wordsworth's Grave and Other Poems* 1890 and 'Lachrymae Musarum' 1892, an official elegy for Tennyson. His poem 'April, April, Laugh thy girlish laughter' appears in many anthologies.

#### Waugh, Alec (Alexander Raban) (1898-1981)

English novelist, the brother of Evelyn Waugh. His first novel, The Loom of Youth

(1917), was a realistic story of school life containing controversial references to homosexuality.

Waugh travelled widely, and from his experiences of the West Indies came his bestselling novel of sexual passion, *Island in the Sun* (1956).

## Waugh, Edwin (1817-1890)

English poet. He published *Poems and Lancashire Songs* 1859 as well as sketches of Lancashire life and scenery.

# Waugh, Evelyn (Arthur St John) (1903-1966)

English novelist. His humorous social satires include *Decline and Fall* (1928), *Vile Bodies* (1930), *Scoop* (1938), and *The Loved One* (1948). He developed a serious concern with religious issues in <u>Brideshead Revisited</u> (1945) (successfully dramatized for television in the 1980s). *The Ordeal of Gilbert Pinfold* (1957) is largely autobiographical.

Waugh was born in London and studied at Oxford University. He was an art student and a schoolteacher for a time, but soon began to travel and devote himself to writing. In 1927 he published a life of the English Pre-Raphaelite artist and writer Dante Gabriel Rossetti, and in 1928 published the first of his satirical novels, Decline and Fall; others are Black Mischief (1932), A Handful of Dust (1934), and Put Out More Flags (1942). These novels are witty and at the same time biting attacks on contemporary society. After World War II his writing intentionally took a more serious turn, and he produced the trilogy Men at Arms (1952), Officers and Gentlemen (1955), and Unconditional Surrender (1961), in which he attempted to analyse the war as a struggle between good and evil. The Complete Short Stories, edited by Ann Pasternak Slater, were published in 1998; the volume contains the story 'Incident in Tanzania', based on a true kidnapping case in Mongolia, which had been out of print for 62 years. He also wrote many travel books; lives of the clerics Edward Campion (1935) and Ronald Knox (1959); another religious novel, Helena (1950), about the mother of Constantine the Great; and the first part of an autobiography, A Little Learning (1964).

# Way of All Flesh, The

novel by Samuel <u>Butler</u>, published in 1903. The story tells of Ernest Pontifex, the hapless son of a clergyman, who is cruelly treated by his sanctimonious father and mother. After Ernest has been allowed to suffer long enough, he inherits money from his aunt and lives happily as a minor man of letters. The plot, however, is the merely the framework on which Butler hangs his study of bad parenting and religious

hypocrisy. Butler's novelistic imagination flags but his narrator's penetrating reflections and concerns have a startling contemporary feel.

#### Wazyk, Adam (1905-1982)

Polish writer who made his name with *Poem for Adults* (1955), a protest against the regime that preceded the fall of the Stalinists in 1956. In 1957 he resigned with others from the Communist Party, disappointed by First Secretary Gomulka's illiberalism. He also wrote novels and plays.

#### Webb, Francis (1925-1973)

Australian poet. His lucid early verse includes the book-length poems *A Drum for Ben Boyd* 1948, *Leichhardt in Theatre* 1952, and *Birthday* 1953. The later volumes *Socrates* 1961 and *The Ghost of the Cock* 1964 show Webb, a Catholic, creating a blend of sacred and pagan imagery. He consistently explored questions of identity in his work.

#### Webster, Jean (1876-1916)

US novelist. She wrote *Daddy-Long-Legs* 1912, a romance about an orphan and her mysterious guardian, which was filmed 1955. *Dear Enemy* 1915 was a sequel, and she published several other books.

#### Weems, Mason Locke (1759-1825)

American writer and cleric. His biography *The Life and Memorable Actions of George Washington*, published around 1800, contained the first published version of the 'cherry-tree' legend which was responsible for much of the Washington myth. He also wrote lives of Francis Marion 1809 and Benjamin Franklin 1815.

Born in Anne Arundel County, Maryland, USA, Weems studied for the ministry in England and was ordained in the Anglican church 1784. Returning to America, he served as a parish cleric until 1792.

#### Weinstein, Nathan Wallenstein

US writer; see Nathanael West.

# Weiss, Peter (Ulrich) (1916-1982)

German-born Swedish dramatist, novelist, and film producer. His first play, *Marat/Sade* 1964, achieved international success. It was followed by *Die Ermittlung/The Investigation* 1965, based on the Auschwitz trials; *Gesang vom Lusitanischen Popanz/Song of the Lusitanian Bogey* 1967, about the Portuguese exploitation of Angola and Mozambique; and *Viet-Nam Diskurs/Vietnam Discourse* 1968, tracing the political history of Vietnam.

He fled from Nazi Germany in 1934 and became a naturalized Swede 1945. Other work includes *Trotzki im Exil/Trotsky in Exile* 1970 and *Hölderlin* 1971. His work has affinities with the plays of Georg Büchner and Bertolt <u>Brecht</u>. He also wrote novels and made some experimental films.

# Welch, (Maurice) Denton (1915-1948)

English writer and artist. His works include the novel *In Youth is Pleasure* 1944 and the autobiographical *A Voice Through a Cloud* 1950.

Weldon, Fay (1933-)

#### born Franklin Birkinshaw

English novelist and dramatist. Her work deals with feminist themes, often in an ironic or comic manner. Novels include *The Fat Woman's Joke* (1967), *Female Friends* (1975), *Remember Me* (1976), *Puffball* (1980), *The Life and Loves of a She-Devil* (1984, filmed in 1990), *The Hearts and Lives of Men* (1987), *Splitting* (1995), *Worst Fears* (1996), and *Big Women* (1998; also a television series).

Collected short stories are *Wicken Women* (1995) and *A Hard Time to be a Father* (1998). She has also written plays for the stage, radio, and television.

## Welhaven, Johan Sebastian Cammermeyer (1807-1873)

Norwegian poet. He was professor of philosophy at Christiania (now Oslo) 1839-68. A supporter of the Dano-Norwegian culture, he is considered one of the greatest Norwegian masters of poetic form. His works include the satiric *Norges Dæmring/ The Dawn of Norway* (1834).

# Wellek, René (1903-1995)

Austrian-born literary critic. His *Theory of Literature* (1949), coauthored with Austin Warren, became a manual of New Criticism. He subsequently wrote the monumental, seven-volume *History of Modern Criticism* (1955-91). Wellek was born in Vienna, Austria. He emigrated to the USA in 1939 and taught at Yale University (from 1946).

# Wells, H(erbert) G(eorge) (1866-1946)

English writer. He was a pioneer of science fiction with such novels as *The Time Machine* (1895) and *The War of the Worlds* (1898) (describing a Martian invasion of Earth), which brought him nationwide recognition. His later novels had an antiestablishment, anticonventional humour remarkable in its day, for example *Kipps* (1905) and *Tono-Bungay* (1909). He was originally a Fabian (member of a socialist organization that sought reform), and later he became a Labour party supporter. He was a Labour candidate for London University in 1921 and 1922.

Wells was born in Bromley, Kent. He failed his examinations at the Royal College of Science, South Kensington, but was subsequently awarded a degree by the University of London. He was tutor for two years at the University Tutorial College but ill health caused him to abandon teaching and take up a career as a writer. His first published works were scientific articles and textbooks. His early 'scientific romances' include *The Island of Dr Moreau* (1894) and *The Invisible Man* (1897). Wells was a prophet of world organization. His theme was the need for humans to impose their mastery upon their own creations and to establish charitable systems and structures by which to rule themselves, and in pursuing this concept he became a leading advocate of social planning. A number of prophecies described in fictional works such as *The First Men in the Moon* (1901) and *The Shape of Things to Come* (1933), as well as in *The Outline of History* (1920) and other popular non-fiction works, have been fulfilled; among them, the significance of aviation, tank warfare, World War II, and the atomic bomb. He also wrote many short stories.

## Welsh, Irvine (1959-)

Scottish novelist, best known as the author of *Trainspotting* (1993; filmed 1996). His works are characterized by an uncompromising treatment of controversial subjects. His other works include *The Acid House* (1994), *Marabou Stork Nightmares* (1995), the trio of novellas *Ecstasy* (1996), *Filth* (1998), *Glue* (2001), and *Porno* (2002).

## Welsh literature

the prose and poetry of Wales, written predominantly in Welsh but also, more recently, in English. Characteristic of Welsh poetry is the bardic system. In the 18th

century the eisteddfod (literary festival) movement brought a revival of classical forms.

#### ancient literature

The chief remains of early Welsh literature are contained in the Four Ancient Books of Wales - the *Black Book of Carmarthen*, the *Book of Taliesin*, the *Book of Aneirin*, and the *Red Book of Hergest* - anthologies of prose and verse of the 6th-14th centuries. The bardic system ensured the continuance of traditional conventions; most celebrated of the 12th-century bards was Cynddelw Brydydd Mawr (active 1155-1200).

#### literature after the English conquest

The English conquest of 1282 involved the fall of the princes who supported these bards, but after a period of decline a new school arose in South Wales with a new freedom in form and sentiment, the most celebrated poet in the 14th-century being Dafydd ap Gwilym, and in the next century the classical metrist Dafydd ap Edmwnd (active 1450-1459). With the Reformation, biblical translations were undertaken, and Morgan Llwyd (1619-1659) and Ellis Wynne (1671-1734) wrote religious prose. Popular metres resembling those of England developed - for example, the poems of Huw Morys (1622-1709).

#### classical revival

Goronwy Owen revived the classical poetic forms in the 18th century, and the eisteddfod (literary festival) movement began: popular measures were used by the hymn writer William Williams Pantycelyn (1717-1791).

#### second revival

The 19th century saw few notable figures save the novelist Daniel Owen (1836-1895), but the foundation of a Welsh university and the work there of John Morris Jones (1864-1929) produced a 20th-century revival, including T Gwynn Jones, W J Gruffydd (1881-1954), and R Williams Parry (1884-1956). Later writers included the poet J Kitchener Davies (1902-1952), the dramatist and poet Saunders Lewis (1893-1985), and the novelist and short-story writer Kate Roberts (1891-1985). Among writers of the period after World War II are the poets Waldo Williams (1904-1971), Euros Bowen (1904-1988), and Bobi Jones (1929-), and the novelists Islwyn Ffowc Elis (1924-), and Jane Edwards (1938-).

#### Welsh writers in English

Those who have expressed the Welsh spirit in English include the poets Edward <u>Thomas</u>, Vernon Watkins (1906-67), Dylan Thomas, R S <u>Thomas</u>, and Dannie Abse (1923-), and the novelist Emyr Humphreys (1919-).

# Welty, Eudora Alice (1909-2001)

US novelist and short-story writer. Her works reflect life in the American South and are notable for their creation of character and accurate rendition of local dialect. Her novels include *Delta Wedding* (1946), *Losing Battles* (1970), and *The Optimist's Daughter* (1972). Her *Collected Stories* appeared in 1982.

## Weöres, Sándor (1913-1989)

Hungarian writer and translator. Weöres, one of Hungary's foremost modern lyric poets, constantly explored and expanded the possibilities of poetry. His technically accomplished works reflect an eclectic mix of influences, including Polynesian myths, Eastern philosophy, and children's stories. His exotic imagination, as seen in the poem cycle *Psyche* 1972, led him to reject the official socialist realism of the communist government.

# Werfel, Franz (1890-1945)

Austrian poet, dramatist, and novelist. He was a leading expressionist. His works include the poem 'Der Weltfreund der Gerichtstag/The Day of Judgment' (1919); the plays Juarez und Maximilian (1924) and Das Reich Gottes in Böhmen/The Kingdom of God in Bohemia (1930); and the novels Verdi (1924) and Das Lied von Bernadette/ The Song of Bernadette (1941).

Born in Prague, he lived in Germany, Austria, and France, and in 1940 escaped from a French concentration camp to the USA, where he died. In 1929 he married Alma Mahler, widow of the composer Gustav Mahler.

## Wergeland, Henrik Arnold (1808-1845)

Norwegian lyric poet. He was a leader of the Norwegian revival and is known for his epic *Skabelsen*, *Mennesket*, *og Messias/Creation*, *Humanity*, *and Messiah* (1830).

#### Wescott, Glenway (1901-1987)

US writer. Independently wealthy, he began his writing career as a poet, going on to publish several short stories and novels, notably *The Grandmothers* (1926). On returning from Europe to the USA, he settled near Hampton, New Jersey, and published the novel, *The Pilgrim Hawk: A Love Story* (1940), which was praised by the critics. This was followed by *Apartment in Athens* (1945), which proved to be a popular success. From then on he ceased to write fiction, although he published his

essays and edited the works of others.

Wescott was born in Kewaskum, Wisconsin. He studied at the University of Chicago (1917-19). He lived in Germany (1921-22), and in France (c 1925-33), where he mixed with Gertrude Stein and the US expatriate community; Robert Prentiss, a character in Hemingway's *The Sun Also Rises*, is based on him.

# Wesley, Mary (1912-2002)

#### pseudonym of Mary Aline Siepmann; born Mary Farmer

English novelist. Her novels are characterized by the ironic and detached treatment of her middle-class characters. She wrote children's books before turning to adult fiction (at the age of 70) with *Jumping the Queue* (1983). Her other works include *The Camomile Lawn* (1984) (televised in 1991) set in World War II, *A Sensible Life* (1990), *An Imaginative Experience* (1994), and *Part of the Furniture* (1997).

#### West, Nathanael (1903-1940)

#### pen-name of Nathan Wallenstein Weinstein

US writer. He is noted as an idiosyncratic black-humour parodist. His surrealistinfluenced novels capture the absurdity and extremity of American life and the dark side of the American Dream. His most powerful novel, *The Day of the Locust* (1939), is a vivid exploration of the apocalyptic violence given release by the fantasies created by Hollywood, where West had been a screenwriter.

His other work consisted of *The Dream Life of Balso Snell* (1931), a surreal comedy written in Paris; *Miss Lonelyhearts* (1933), a black farce about a newspaper agony columnist who feels the misfortunes of his correspondents; and a *A Cool Million* (1934), which satirizes the rags-to-riches dream of success. West and his wife died in a car accident.

## West, Rebecca (1892-1983)

#### pen-name of Cicily Isabel Fairfield

English journalist and novelist, an active feminist from 1911. Her novels, of which the semi-autobiographical *The Fountain Overflows* (1956) and *The Birds Fall Down* (1966) are regarded as the best, demonstrate a social and political awareness.

*The Meaning of Treason* (1947) was reissued as *The New Meaning of Treason* in 1964, which included material on the spies Guy Burgess and Donald Maclean.

Rebecca West had a close relationship with H G Wells; their son, Anthony West, was born in 1914. After writing as a journalist, her first book was a study of the novelist Henry James (1916). Among her novels are *The Return of the Soldier* (1918), *The Judge* (1922), *Harriet Hume* (1929), and *The Thinking Reed* (1936). She was made a DBE in 1959.

#### Westall, Robert (1929-1993)

English novelist. Many of his novels and stories share the setting of World War II; his first novel for young adults is *The Machine Gunners* (1975, Carnegie Medal), and its sequel is *Fathom Five* (1979). *Echoes of War* (1989) is a collection of short stories which focus on the aftermath of war.

Born in Tynemouth, northeast England, Westall went to university in London, and later became a teacher, writer, and art critic. Westall's war stories also include *The Kingdom of the Sea* (1990), *A Time of Fire* (1994), and *Blitz* (1995), which contains four short stories with a World War II setting.

#### Western

genre of popular fiction and film based on the landscape and settlement of the American West, with emphasis on the conquest of Indian territory. It developed in American <u>dime novels</u> and <u>frontier literature</u>. The Western became established in written form with such novels as Owen <u>Wister's</u>*The Virginian* (1902) and Zane <u>Grey's</u>*Riders of the Purple Sage* (1912). From the earliest silent films, movies extended the Western mythology and, with Italian 'spaghetti' Westerns and Japanese Westerns, established it as an international form.

## Weston (or Westonia), Elizabeth Jane (1582-1612)

English poet. Her Catholic family emigrated from England while she was still a child and settled in Prague in 1598. Despite her youth she impressed her humanist correspondents from across Europe, including Joseph Justus Scaliger and Justus Lipsius, with her learning. She published *Carmina/Poems* (1602); she married the following year but died when she was 30.

#### Wetherell, Elizabeth

Pen-name of US novelist Susan Warner.

# Weyman, Stanley John (1855-1928)

English novelist. His novels, nearly all historical, include A Gentleman of France 1893, Under the Red Robe 1894, The Red Cockade 1895, Chippinge 1906, and Queen's Folly 1925.

# Wharton, Edith Newbold (1862-1937)

#### born Edith Newbold Jones

US novelist. Her work, known for its subtlety and form and influenced by her friend Henry <u>James</u>, was mostly set in New York society. It includes *The House of Mirth* (1905), which made her reputation; the grim, uncharacteristic novel of New England *Ethan Frome* (1911); *The Custom of the Country* (1913); and *The Age of Innocence* (1920; Pulitzer Prize), which was made into a film in 1993.

# Wheatley, Dennis Yates (1897-1977)

English thriller and adventure novelist. His works include a series dealing with black magic and occultism, but he also wrote crime novels in which the reader was invited to play the detective, as in *Murder off Miami* (1936), with real clues such as ticket stubs.

## Wheatley, Phyllis (c. 1753-1784)

American poet, born in Africa. She was sold as a slave to the Wheatley family in Boston, who encouraged her to write. Her *Poems on Various Subjects, Religious and Moral* were published in London in 1773.

## Wheelwright, John Brooks (1897-1940)

US poet. He wrote poetry accompanied by his own prose interpretations and privately printed three volumes of his poems. *The Collected Poems of John Wheelwright* was published posthumously in 1972. Wheelwright was born near Boston, Massachusetts. He attended Harvard University and studied architecture at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology. He was known as a radical socialist in Boston.

# Wheen, Francis (1957-)

English journalist and writer. He is known for his astute observations and irreverent style. He published the critically acclaimed biography *Karl Marx* in 2000. A collection of his journalistic work, *Hoo-Hahs and Passing Frenzies*, won the George Orwell prize in 2003.

He has worked as a columnist for *The Guardian* and as deputy editor of *Private Eye*, and has contributed to several US newspapers and magazines, including *The Washington Post*, *The Los Angeles Times*, *Vanity Fair*, *Esquire*, and *The New Yorker*. Other works include *Lord Gnome's Literary Companion* (1994) and *How Mumbo-Jumbo Conquered the World: A Short History of Modern Delusions* (2004).

# White, Bailey (June) (1950-)

US writer. A popular essayist and storyteller, she has received critical praise for her humorous writings in *Mama Makes Up Her Mind*, and Other Dangers of Southern Living (1993). White was born in Thomasville, Georgia. She studied at Florida State University, gaining her BA in 1973. She taught first grade in Thomasville and lived in the same house in which she had been born. From 1990 she was a commentator for National Public Radio's *All Things Considered*.

# White, E(lwyn) B(rooks) (1899-1985)

US writer. He was long associated with the *New Yorker* magazine and renowned for his satire, such as *Is Sex Necessary*? (1929; with the humorist James Thurber).

## White, Edmund (Valentine, III) (1940-)

US writer. He is best known for his novels that deal explicitly with homosexual themes, such as *A Boy's Own Story* (1982), and for his non-fiction, notably *States of Desire: Travels in Gay America* (1980). White was born in Cincinnati, Ohio. He studied at the University of Michigan gaining his BA in 1962, before settling in New York City and becoming an editor (1962-73). He also taught at Johns Hopkins University (1977-79) and Columbia University (1981-83), among other institutions.

## White, Joseph Blanco (1775-1841)

English poet, born in Seville, Spain. He wrote theological works but is chiefly remembered for his sonnet 'Night and Death' 1828.

# White, Patrick Victor Martindale (1912-1990)

Australian writer. He did more than any other to put Australian literature on the international map. His partly allegorical novels explore the lives of early settlers in Australia and often deal with misfits or inarticulate people. They include *The Aunt's Story* (1948), written during his voyage back to Australia, *The Tree of Man* (1955), *Voss* (1957), based on the ill-fated 19th-century explorer Ludwig Leichhardt, and *Riders in the Chariot* (1961), exploring suburban life. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1973. White became a fervent republican after the dismissal of the Gough Whitlam government in 1975, returning his Order of Australia in 1976, and supported conservation causes in his later years.

White, a member of an established Australian pastoralist family, was born in London and educated in Australia and England. After graduating from Cambridge he lived and wrote in London and in 1940 joined the RAF as an intelligence officer. In the 1940s he returned to settle in Australia. *The Tree of Man* follows the lives of a pioneering family from the 1880s to the 1930s. Among his other novels are *The Vivisector* (1970), *The Eye of the Storm* (1973), *The Twyborn Affair* (1979), and his last work, *Memoirs of Many in One* (1986). As well as a novelist, he was a playwright, short-story writer, and poet. He used the Nobel Prize money to establish a literary award for Australian writers deserving greater recognition. His autobiography, *Flaws in the Glass*, appeared in 1981.

# White, T(erence) H(anbury) (1906-1964)

English writer. He retold the Arthurian legend in four volumes of *The Once and Future King* 1938-58.

## White, Walter (Francis) (1893-1955)

US civil rights leader and author. A leading member of the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP), he fought against lynching and launched numerous campaigns against segregation in public facilities, white primaries, and the poll taxes, and against educational discrimination. Journalistic research he conducted in Europe, published as *A Rising Wind* (1945), influenced President Harry Truman's decision to desegregate the armed forces. In 1946 he further pressured President Truman to set up the President's Committee on Civil Rights, and this led the Democrats to adopt their divisive civil rights platform in 1948.

White was born in Atlanta, Georgia. Fair-skinned, blond, and blue-eyed although part black, he could pass for white but chose to champion the cause of the black race after experiencing a race riot in Atlanta, Georgia, in 1906; later, in 1926 he published his novel *Flight*, based on his experiences of 'passing'. One of the most

ardent antilynching proponents in America, he investigated more than 40 lynchings and eight race riots. As a Guggenheim Fellow he conducted a study of lynching in the USA, which became the basis of his *Rope and Faggot: A Biography of Judge Lynch* (1929).

As an insurance company cashier, he took the lead in establishing a branch of the NAACP in Atlanta in 1916. He was named assistant secretary of the NAACP (1918-31) and NAACP executive secretary (1931-55). Author of several other books and numerous articles, he was awarded the Spingarn Medal (1937) in recognition of his efforts on behalf of African-Americans. Because of his efforts and those of A Philip Randolph, President Franklin Roosevelt prohibited discrimination in the defence industries and established the Fair Employment Practices Commission in 1941. Also concerned with worldwide prejudice, he was less successful on this front and was criticized as an autocrat inside the NAACP. Although he retained his post until his death, from 1949 on his powers were limited.

### White, William Allen (1868-1944)

US journalist and author. In 1895, borrowing \$3,000, he bought the small, rural *Emporia Gazette*, which he published and edited for the rest of his life. He also contributed articles and short stories to many other publications. His 1896 editorial attacking populism was widely circulated by Republicans during that year's presidential campaign and made him famous; he came to be regarded as an independent-minded, commonsensical spokesperson for small-town America. A 1921 essay on his daughter's death in a riding accident became a classic, and a 1922 editorial supporting striking railroad workers won him a Pulitzer Prize.

White was born in Emporia, Kansas. He quit college to become business manager of the *El Dorado Republican* and, later, an editorial writer for the *Kansas City Star*. He also wrote novels and biographies of Woodrow Wilson (1921) and Calvin Coolidge (1925, 1938). His autobiography, published in 1946, won a posthumous Pulitzer Prize.

#### White, William Hale (1831-1913)

English novelist. He wrote under the pseudonym Mark Rutherford. His works, which comment on religious and social matters, include *The Autobiography of Mark Rutherford, Dissenting Minister* 1881, *Mark Rutherford's Deliverance* 1885, and the controversial *Clara Hopgood* 1896, in which Clara's sister will not marry the man by whom she is pregnant.

### Whitman, Cedric (Hubbell) (1916-1979)

US classicist and poet. A member of the Harvard University faculty, he served as Eliot Professor of Greek Literature (1974-79). His *Sophocles: A Study in Heroic* 

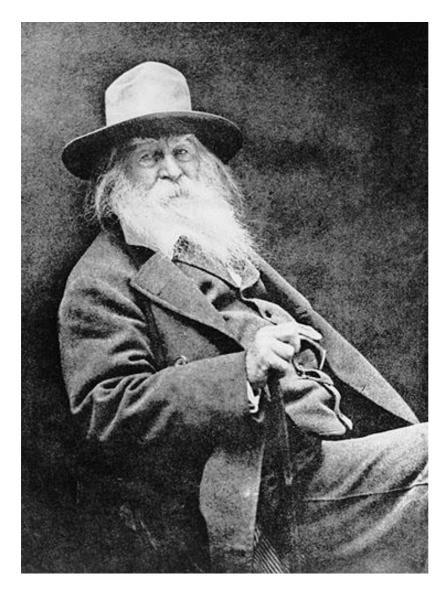
*Humanism* (1951) won the Award of Merit of the American Philological Association in 1952. His later book *Homer and the Heroic Tradition* (1958) won the Christian Gauss Prize given by Phi Beta Kappa to the best book published that year and was one of the post-war era's most influential books of literary criticism on Homer. Whitman was born in Providence, Rhode Island. He studied at Harvard University, gaining his PhD in 1947.

# Whitman, Walt(er) (1819-1892)

US poet. He published <u>Leaves of Grass</u> (1855), which contains the symbolic <u>'Song of Myself'</u>. It used unconventional free verse (with no rhyme or regular rhythm) and scandalized the public by its frank celebration of sexuality. His poems were often set by composers such as Hindemith, Vaughan Williams, Henze, and Delius.

Born at West Hill (Huntington, Long Island), New York, as a young man Whitman worked as a printer, teacher, and journalist. In 1865 he published *Drum-Taps*, a volume inspired by his work as an army nurse during the Civil War. *Democratic Vistas* (1871) is a collection of his prose pieces. He also wrote an elegy for Abraham Lincoln, 'When Lilacs Last in the Dooryard Bloom'd'. He preached a particularly American vision of individual freedom and human brotherhood. Such poets as Ezra Pound, Wallace Stevens, and Allen Ginsberg show his influence in their work.

Whitman



#### (Image © Billie Love)

A photograph of the influential 19th-century US poet, Walt Whitman. Whitman's *Leaves of Grass* (1855) is an expansive free-verse collection celebrating liberty, individuality, and sexuality.

## Whitney, Anne (1821-1915)

US sculptor and poet. She utilized her abolitionist and suffragist beliefs and drew on her experiences from travelling to such European countries as Italy in her sculptures, as in *Roma* (1869). Whitney published poetry (1847-59), then studied anatomy with William Rimmer in Boston, Massachusetts (1862-64). She opened a studio there in 1871. Whitney was born in Watertown, Massachusetts. She worked on her sculptures into her early eighties

US poet, journalist, and abolitionist. A religious Quaker, he wrote on rural and antislavery themes and became a close associate and friend of the abolitionist William Lloyd Garrison. He served in the Massachusetts legislature in 1835. Breaking with Garrison's radical abolitionist ideals, he was one of the founders of the Liberty Party in 1839 and the Republican Party in 1854. His most popular work, the narrative poem *Snow-Bound*, was published in 1866.

Whittier was born into a Quaker farming family in Haverhill, Massachusetts. Although he received a limited formal education, he was an avid reader, especially of British poetry. His first poem, 'The Exile's Departure', was accepted by Garrison in 1826 for the abolitionist newspaper *Newburyport Free Press*. His pamphlet 'Justice and Expediency' aroused antislavery sentiment, and he became one of the abolitionist movement's most famous writers. His first book to be published was *Legends of New England in Prose and Verse* (1831). He edited several abolitionist newspapers, and his poems on slavery were collected as *Voices of Freedom* (1846). After the Civil War, he returned to pastoral themes and became a regular contributor to the *Atlantic Monthly* magazine.

## Wickram, Jörg (1505-c 1560)

German writer. A town official in Colmar, he wrote novels, stories, and plays and established a *Meistergesang* society in Colmar in 1549. His significance as a writer lies in having transformed the mediaeval chivalric romance into tales that reflect the values of middle classes - a process that laid the foundations of the modern German novel.

## Widdemer, Margaret (1895-1978)

US poet and novelist. Her *Collected Poems* appeared in 1928 and 1957, and comprise crusading, sentimental, and satirical verses. Her romantic and historical novels include *The Rose Garden Husband* 1915 and *Red Cloak Flying* 1950.

### Wideman, John Edgar (1941-)

US writer. His complex and literate fiction often drew on the African-American urban culture of his youth, and includes the award-winning *Sent for You Yesterday* (1983) and *Philadelphia Fire* (1990). He was awarded a MacArthur Foundation 'genius' grant in 1993. He taught at the universities of Pennsylvania (1966-74), Wyoming (1974-85) and Massachusetts (from 1986).

Wideman was born in Washington, DC. He earned degrees from the University of Pennsylvania and Oxford University, England, where he was a Rhodes Scholar. He then attended the Iowa Writers' Workshop. His other books include *Hurry Home*  (1970), The Lynchers (1973), and Stories (1992).

### Widener, Harry Elkins (1885-1912)

US book collector. Born into a wealthy family, Widener was born in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. He was educated at Harvard University and following his graduation devoted himself to book collecting. Returning from researches in London, England, he lost his life on the *Titanic*. His mother established a library in his name at Harvard University.

### Wiechert, Ernst (1887-1950)

German writer. His novels, written in a musical, clear style, are preoccupied with psychological and spiritual questions. Published works include *Der Wald* 1922, *Die Majorin/The Baroness* 1934, *Das einfache Leben/The Simple Life* 1939, *Der Totenwald/The Forest of the Dead* 1945, drawn from Wiechert's own experiences in the concentration camp of Buchenwald, and *Missa sine nomine* 1950.

### Wieland, Christoph Martin (1733-1813)

German poet and novelist. After attempts at religious poetry, he came under the influence of Voltaire and Rousseau, and wrote novels such as *Die Geschichte des Agathon/The History of Agathon* (1766-67) and the satirical *Die Abderiten* (1774; translated as *The Republic of Fools* in 1861); and tales in verse such as *Musarion oder Die Philosophie der Grazien* (1768), *Oberon* (1780), and others. He translated Shakespeare into German 1762-66.

### Wiener, Franz

real name of Belgian playwright Francis de Croisset.

# Wiesel, Elie(zer) (1928-)

Romanian-born US academic and human-rights campaigner. He was held in Buchenwald concentration camp during World War II, and assiduously documented wartime atrocities against the Jews in an effort to alert the world to the dangers of racism and violence. His novel *La Nuit/Night* (1956) was based on his experiences in the camps. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Peace in 1986 for his work as a writer and human-rights activist. Wiesel was born in Sighet, Romania. In 1944, when he was 16, the town's Jewish population was sent to concentration camps. He and his family were sent first to Auschwitz, and then Buchenwald; Wiesel was the only one to survive. After the war he studied at the Sorbonne in Paris (he has written many of his works in French), and then worked as a journalist for French, Israeli, and US publications. Settling in the USA in 1956, and taking US citizenship in 1963, he taught first at City College, New York, and from 1976 at Boston University, where he was professor of humanities. He was chairman of the US President's Commission on the Holocaust 1980-86. In 1987 he established the Elie Wiesel Foundation for Humanity.

## Wiggin, Kate Douglas (1856-1923)

#### born Kate Smith

US writer. She was a pioneer in the establishment of kindergartens in the USA, and wrote the children's classic *Rebecca of Sunnybrook Farm* 1903 and its sequels.

### Wigginton, (B) Eliot (1942-)

US educator and author. As a high school teacher in Rabun Gap, Georgia, he initiated 'Foxfire', an innovative program of student-initiated projects based on regional folklore. His Foxfire Fund (established in 1966) and *Foxfire* manuals of traditional crafts and folklore, published in 1972, helped to document southern Appalachian culture, train teachers, and establish similar programs nationwide. Wiggington was born in Wheeling, West Virginia.

### Wigglesworth, Michael (1631-1705)

English-born US Protestant clergyman and poet. He emigrated to Massachusetts as a boy, graduated from Harvard in 1751, and was a fellow and tutor at Harvard before being ordained in Malden, Massachusetts, in 1656. His epic poem *Day of Doom* (1662) has been described as conservative Calvinist theology in readable form; it was an early American best-seller. He continued his pastorate in Malden, and also practised medicine there to the end of his life. Wigglesworth was born in Yorkshire, England.

## Wilbur, Richard Purdy (1921-)

US poet. He is noted for his cultural conservatism, urbane wit, and the elegance of his verse in such volumes as *The Beautiful Changes* (1947) and *Things of This World* (1956), which was awarded the Pulitzer Prize and the National Book Award. He also

published children's verse, as in *Loudmouse* (1963) and *Opposites* (1973). In 1987 he was named the second US poet laureate, following Robert Penn Warren.

Wilbur continued to publish poetry and win prestigious awards while establishing himself as a talented translator and lyricist. He won his second Pulitzer Prize in 1988 for his *New and Collected Poems*.

## Wilcox, Ella (1850-1919)

#### born Ella Wheeler

US poet. From the temperance verses *Drops of Water* 1872 she progressed to *Poems of Passion* 1883, criticized as immoral when they first appeared. She published nearly 40 volumes of verse, including her *Collected Poems* 1921. Her sentimental approach, and her platitudes, were very popular.

### Wilde, Jane Francesca (1826-1896)

#### pen-name Speranza; born Jane Francesca Elgee

Irish poet and literary hostess. A committed nationalist, she contributed poetry and prose to the *Nation* from 1845 under the pen-name 'Speranza'. Her salon became the most famous in Dublin.

Wilde was born in Dublin. In 1851 she married the eye surgeon William Wilde, and they had two sons, the younger of whom was Oscar Wilde. After her husband's death in 1876, she moved to London and published several works on folklore, including *Ancient Legends of Ireland* 1887, and *Ancient Cures* 1891.

### Wilde, Oscar (Fingal O'Flahertie Wills) (1854-1900)

Irish writer. With his flamboyant style and quotable conversation, he dazzled London society and, on his lecture tour in 1882, the USA. He published his only novel, *The* <u>*Picture of Dorian Gray*</u>, in 1891, followed by a series of sharp dramatic comedies, including *A Woman of No Importance* (1893) and *The Importance of Being Earnest* (1895).

Wilde was born in Dublin and studied at Dublin and Oxford, where he became known as a supporter of the Aesthetic Movement ('art for art's sake'). He published *Poems* (1881), and also wrote fairy tales and other stories, criticism, and a long, anarchic political essay 'The Soul of Man Under Socialism' (1891). His elegant social comedies also include *Lady Windermere's Fan* (1892) and *An Ideal Husband* (1895). The drama *Salomé* (1893), based on the biblical character, was written in French; considered

scandalous by the British censor, it was first performed in Paris in 1896 with the actor Sarah Bernhardt in the title role.

In 1895 he was imprisoned for two years for homosexual offences. Among his lovers was Lord Alfred <u>Douglas</u>, whose father provoked Wilde into a lawsuit that led to his social and financial ruin and imprisonment. The long poem *Ballad of Reading Gaol* (1898) and a letter published as *De Profundis* (1905) were written in jail, and explain his side of the relationship. After his release from prison in 1897, he lived in France and died in exile there, converting to Roman Catholicism on his deathbed. He is buried in Père Lachaise cemetery, Paris.

#### Wilde



(Image © Billie Love)

A photograph of the Irish writer Oscar Wilde, taken by Alfred Ellis. Two of his most famous satirical social dramas, *The Ideal Husband* and *The Importance of Being Earnest*, were published in 1895. This was the same year in which Wilde was imprisoned for homosexual offences, as a result of legal action taken by the Marquess of Queensbury, father of Wilde's intimate, Lord Alfred Douglas. Wilde left

prison two years later and settled in Paris, a broken man.

### Wildenbruch, Ernst von (1845-1909)

German novelist and dramatist. His plays on patriotic themes heralded a revival of German historical drama and introduced a new naturalism to the German theatre. They include *Die Karolinger* 1881, *Vater und Sohne* 1881, *Das neue Gebot* 1886, and *Die Quitzows* 1888. His novels include *Der Meister von Tanagra* 1880.

## Wilder, Laura (Elizabeth) Ingalls (1867-1957)

#### born Laura Ingalls

US children's novelist and pioneer. Her 'Little House' series, beginning with *Little House in the Big Woods* (1932), vividly describe her homesteading childhood and the life of the American West. Sequels include the classic *Little House on the Prairie* (1935). Wilder's family farmed in a number of states, and their experiences, adventures, and problems, including blizzards and destructive grasshoppers, are evocatively pictured in her work. The stories were televised in the 1950s, bringing them an international audience.

Born in Pepin, Wisconsin, Wilder moved soon afterwards to Missouri, and then to Kansas, where her father took up land under the Homestead Act (1862). The family returned to Wisconsin in 1870, where they had relatives, but Wilder's father still longed to be out west. In 1874, they went to Minnesota, then moved to Iowa, before finally settling in Dakota Territory. Wilder taught in the Dakota Territory (1882-85) and married Almanzo Wilder in 1885; they farmed in De Smet, South Dakota, until 1894, then moved to Mansfield, Missouri.

## Wiley, Charles (1782-1826)

US publisher. Born in New York, New York, he opened a print shop in 1807 and began a publishing business in 1814, putting out works by Washington Irving, James Fenimore Cooper, and other New York literary figures.

### Wilhelm Meister's Apprenticeship

#### German Wilhelm Meisters Lehrjahre

novel by <u>Goethe</u> published 1795-96. An outstanding example of the *bildungsroman* or novel of personal development, it describes Wilhelm's formative emotional

experiences, including his time with a troupe of actors involved in a production of *Hamlet*. The book incorporates extended critical discussion of the play and some of Goethe's finest lyrics. An episodic sequel, *Wilhelm Meisters Wanderjahre/Wilhelm Meister's Wandering Years* was published in 1821 and in expanded form in 1829.

### Willard, Nancy (1936-)

US poet and writer. Born in Ann Arbor, Michigan, she studied at the University of Michigan, gaining a BA in 1958 and a PhD in 1963, before gaining an MA at Stanford University in1960 and continuing her studies in Paris, France, and Oslo, Norway. Beginning in 1965, she taught at Vassar and lived in Poughkeepsie, New York, and from 1975 she was an instructor at Bread Loaf Writer's Conference, Middlebury, Vermont. She wrote literary criticism and adult novels, but is best known for her poetry, as in *Water Walker* (1990) and for her juvenile books, such as *The Mountains of Quilt* (1987).

# William of Tyre (c. 1130-c. 1186)

French historian. His *Historia Rerum in Partibus Transmarinis Gestarum* is one of the main authorities for events in the Byzantine Empire in the 12th century.

It covers archaeological, political, ecclesiastical, social, and topographical subjects, though fault has been found with its chronology.

He became archbishop of Soûr (Tyre), Lebanon, 1175.

## Williams, C K (1936-)

US poet, editor, translator, and professor at Princeton University, New Jersey. He published 15 volumes of poetry before winning the 2000 Pulitzer Prize for Poetry for *Repair* (1999). His 1987 book *Flesh and Blood* won the National Book Critics Circle Award and was a finalist for the Pulitzer Prize.

Other collections include *Lies* (1969), *Tar* (1983), *I Am the Bitter Name* (1992), *A Dream of Mind* (1992), *With Ignorance* (1997), *The Vigil* (1997), and *The Singing* (2003).

# Williams, Charles (Walter Stansby) (1886-1945)

English poet, novelist, and critic. *The Silver Star*, a sonnet sequence, was published in 1912. Of several allegorical fantasies, *The Place of the Lion* (1931) had an

influence on C S Lewis, whom, with J R R Tolkien, Williams met regularly during World War II in Oxford, where he moved to work and where he gave university lectures. He wrote two poetic sequences based on Arthurian legend, *Taliessin Through Logres* (1938) and *The Region of the Summer Stars* (1943).

### Williams, Hugo (1942-)

English poet who has achieved critical acclaim for his vivacious and lucid poetry as in *Self-Portrait with a Slide* (1990).

He was awarded the 1999 T S Eliot Prize for Poetry for *Billy's Rain*. Other publications include *Writing Home* (1985), and *Dock Leaves* (1994).

## Williams, Ifor (1881-1965)

Welsh scholar. An authority on early Welsh literature, he published editions of early and medieval poets, including <u>Dafydd ap Gwilym</u> 1914, <u>Aneirin</u> 1938, and Taliesin 1960, and of the *Mabinogion* 1930. He also published a volume of *Lectures on Early Welsh Poetry* 1944.

# Williams, John (Alfred) (1925-)

pen-name J Dennis Gregory

US writer. Born in Jackson, Mississippi, he studied at Syracuse, New York, gaining a BA in 1950 and doing graduate study 1950-51. He worked in Syracuse for the county welfare department, and in public relations (1952-54), and in Hollywood and New York, New York, he worked in television and radio (1954-55). He also worked in publishing for a variety of employers in New York, New York, (1955-59), and as a correspondent in Africa for *Newsweek* (1964-65). A teacher at numerous institutions, including Rutgers (1979), he lived in Teaneck, New Jersey. He wrote non-fiction and numerous novels, and is known for his opposition to American racism, as seen in *Click Song* (1982).

## Williams, Margery (Winifred) (1881-1944)

US writer. Born in London, England, she went to the USA in 1890, attended schools in Pennsylvania, and married. She spent many years travelling between England, France, and Italy, before settling in New York, New York in 1921. She wrote many books for adults (using her married name, Margery Bianco) and children, notably *The Velveteen Rabbit; or How Toys Become Real* (1922) and *Poor Cecco* (1925).

## Williams, Raymond (Henry) (1921-1988)

Welsh literary critic and novelist. His *Culture and Society 1780-1950* 1958 explores the development of culture in England since the Industrial Revolution. Other works include the novel trilogy *Border Country* 1960, *Second Generation* 1964, and *The Fight for Manod* 1979; among critical works are *The Long Revolution* 1961 and *The Country and the City* 1973.

## Williams, William Carlos (1883-1963)

US poet, essayist, and theoretician. He was associated with <u>Imagism</u> and <u>Objectivism</u>. One of the most original and influential of modern poets, he is noted for advancing poetics of visual images and colloquial American rhythms, conceiving the poem as a 'field of action'. His epic, five-book poem *Patterson* (1946-58) is written in a form of free verse that combines historical documents, newspaper material, and letters, to celebrate his home town in New Jersey. *Pictures from Brueghel* (1963) won him, posthumously, a Pulitzer Prize. His vast body of prose work includes novels, short stories, essays, and the play *A Dream of Love* (1948).

# Willis, Nathaniel Parker (1806-1867)

#### pen-names Roy, Cassius, Philip Slingsby

US poet, writer, and editor. Born in Portland, Maine, he and his family moved to Boston, Massachusetts in1812 and he studied at Yale, where he was known as a poet, gaining a BA in 1927. He became a journalist and founded the *American Monthly* magazine in 1829. After moving to New York, New York, he worked as a foreign correspondent for the *New York Mirror* until 1836, and eventually became coeditor there. He travelled to England often, maintained a home by the Hudson River, and was noted for epistolary essays, as seen in *Pencillings by the Way* (1844).

# Willis, Ted (1914-1992)

English writer and politician. He created one of British television's most popular characters, Constable Dixon (later Sergeant), the main character in the television series *Dixon of Dock Green*, which ran for 22 years. He was also the author of numerous novels, plays, and scripts for films, radio, and television.

# Wilson, A(ndrew) N(orman) (1950-)

English novelist and biographer. His first novel was *The Sweets of Pimlico* (1977). Among the subjects of his biographies have been the novelists Leo Tolstoy (1988) and C S Lewis (1990), and Jesus (1992). He has also written extensively about Victorian England, especially in his non-fiction work *After the Victorians: The Decline of Britain in the World* (2005).

The fiction trilogy that began with *Incline Our Hearts* (1988) revealed a combination of absurdist comedy and High Tory wit. 'Lilibet' (1984), a verse account of Queen Elizabeth II's early years, was ill received. Other novels include *The Vicar of Sorrows* (1993), *My Name is Legion* (2004), and *A Jealous Ghost* (2005). Wilson was literary editor of the *Spectator* 1981-83, and in 1990 was appointed to the same post on the London *Evening Standard*.

# Wilson, Angus (Frank Johnstone) (1913-1991)

English novelist, short-story writer, and biographer. His acidly humorous books include *Anglo-Saxon Attitudes* (1956) and *The Old Men at the Zoo* (1961). In his detailed portrayal of English society, he extracted high comedy from its social and moral grotesqueries. He was knighted in 1980.

# Wilson, Colin Henry (1931-)

English writer. He is best known for his non-fiction work *The Outsider* (1956), an examination of alienation in modern society that became a major success. A prolific writer in a variety of genres, he has pursued his philosophical interest in the paranormal, publishing books about criminology, existentialism, and the occult (*Mysteries* (1978) being an example of the latter). His thrillers include *Necessary Doubt* (1964).

He has also written a number of science-fiction stories and novels, including his *Spider World* trilogy, comprising *The Tower* (1987), *The Delta* (1987), and *The Magician* (1992).

# Wilson, Edmund (1895-1972)

US critic and writer. Perhaps the foremost American social and literary critic of the 20th century, he was an editor of *Vanity Fair* 1920-21, the *New Republic* 1926-31, and *The New Yorker* 1944-48. Among his most influential works are *Axel's Castle* (1931), a survey of symbolism, and *The Wound and the Bow* (1941), a study of the relationship of neurosis to creativity.

Born in Red Bank, New Jersey, Wilson graduated from Princeton in 1916. Other works include satirical sketches in *Memoirs of Hecate County* (1946), and two works of social history, *To the Finland Station* (1940), on revolutionary ideology, and *The American Earthquake* (1958), about the Great Depression. He edited his friend F Scott <u>Fitzgerald</u>'s posthumous *The Crack-Up* (1956). His *Patriotic Gore* (1962) surveys Civil War literature.

## Wilson, Halsey William (1868-1954)

US bibliographer and publisher. He published standard works in book indexes. As the owner of a Minneapolis bookstore he compiled and in 1898 began publishing the *Cumulative Book Index*, which continues as an authoritative bibliographic reference work. In 1901, he began publishing the *Reader's Guide to Periodical Literature*, followed in 1905 by the *Book Review Digest* and in 1914 the *Wilson Library Journal*. In 1913 he moved the HW Wilson Company to White Plains, New York, and then to the Bronx, New York, New York, where it remains today as a major publisher of reference works. He was born in Wilmington, Vermont.

## Wilson, Jacqueline (1945-)

English writer. One of the most popular authors of children's fiction in the UK, she writes about ordinary children and the modern-day challenges they face, revealing a sensitive understanding of children, a tremendous imagination, and strong sense of humour. She won the Smarties Prize and the Children's Book Award for *Double Act* (2001).

Her other novels include *The Suitcase Kid* (1993), *The Lottie Project* (1998), and *Bad Girls* (1998). *The Illustrated Mum* (1999; Guardian Children's Fiction Award), and *Girls in Tears* (2002) both won the British Book Awards Children's Book of the Year. She was appointed Children's Laureate 2005-07.

## Wilson, John (1785-1854)

Scottish poet and essayist. He used the pseudonym Christopher North. His 'Noctes Ambrosianae' 1822-35 form a series of dramatic dialogues on various topics. Prose fiction includes *Lights and Shadows of Scottish Life* 1822 and *The Trials of Margaret Lyndsay* 1823.

## Wilson, John Dover (1881-1969)

English Shakespearean scholar. He was joint editor of the New Cambridge

Shakespeare series 1921-66, and his works include *Life in Shakespeare's England* 1911, *The Essential Shakespeare* 1932, *What Happens in Hamlet* 1935, and *Shakespeare's Happy Comedies* 1962.

### Winchilsea, Anne Finch, Countess of (1661-1720)

#### born Anne Kingsmill

English poet. She wrote Pindaric odes and was a pioneer in nature poetry. Her only published volume was *Miscellany Poems* 1713. Her best-known poem is 'The Spleen', published 1701 in an anthology. She was a friend of Alexander Pope and other writers.

### Wind in the Willows, The

fantasy for children by Scottish author Kenneth <u>Grahame</u> (1908). The story relates the adventures of a group of humanlike animals - Rat, Mole, Badger, and Toad. It was dramatized by A A <u>Milne</u> as *Toad of Toad Hall* (1929) and by Alan Bennett (1990).

### Winnie-the-Pooh

collection of children's stories by English author A A <u>Milne</u>, published in 1926, illustrated by E H Shepard. The stories feature the author's son Christopher Robin, his teddy bear Winnie-the-Pooh, and a group of toy animals, Piglet, Eeyore, Rabbit, Owl, Kanga and Roo, and Tigger. Further stories appeared in *The House at Pooh Corner* (1928).

### Winsor, Justin (1831-1897)

US historian and librarian. As a historian, he wrote such groundbreaking works as *The Reader's Handbook of the American Revolution* (1880), *A Narrative and Critical History of America* (1884-89), *The Mississippi Basin* (1895), and *The Westward Movement* (1897). His interest in and use of maps made him the leading historical cartographer of his day.

Born in Boston, Massachusetts, his first book, *A History of the Town of Duxbury* was published in 1849 during his freshman year at Harvard. He left Harvard in 1852 without taking a degree and travelled in Europe. He returned to Boston in 1854 and began writing criticism, poetry, and fiction for various periodicals. He became a trustee and then director (1868-77) of the Boston Public Library. During his 20-year tenure as librarian of Harvard College (1877-97) he became the first president of the

American Library Association (1876-85) and a cofounder of the American Library Journal.

### Winters, (Arthur) Yvor (1900-1968)

US poet and literary critic. A controversial critic, he attacked popular literary icons ranging from Walt Whitman to Henry James. Born in Chicago, Illinois, he taught at Stanford University (1928-66), where he received his PhD in 1934. In the 1930s he began writing his literary criticism; later works include *In Defense of Reason* (1947) and *The Function of Criticism* (1957). He won the Bollingen Prize in 1961 for his taut, formalistic poetry.

### Wirt, William (1772-1834)

US lawyer, cabinet officer, and author. As US attorney general (1817-29) under presidents James Monroe and John Quincy Adams he argued landmark cases. He was the reluctant presidential candidate of the Anti-Masons in 1832.

Born in Bladensburg, Maryland, the son of Swiss-German tavern-keepers, he read law and began his practice in Virginia. After three terms as clerk of Virginia's House of Delegates (1800-02), he gained fame as assistant prosecuting attorney in Aaron Burr's treason trial in 1807.

With some ambition to have a literary reputation, he enjoyed considerable popularity with *The Letters of the British Spy* (1803), observations on society supposedly written by an English visitor. Less successful was his *Sketches of the Life and Character of Patrick Henry* (1817).

#### Wister, Owen (1860-1938)

US novelist. He helped popularize the <u>Western</u> genre. He was born in Philadelphia, a grandson of the English actor Fanny Kemble, and became known for stories of cowboys, including *The Virginian: A Horseman of the Plains* (1902). He also wrote *Roosevelt: The Story of a Friendship 1880-1919* (1930), about his relationship with US president Theodore Roosevelt.

### Wither, George (1588-1667)

English poet. In 1613 he published a collection of bold satires, *Abuses Stript and Whipt*, for which he was imprisoned. While in prison he wrote *The Shepheard's Hunting* 1615, a pastoral. The satirical *Wither's Motto* 1621 earned him another

prison term, and in 1622 he published *Faire Virtue*, the Mistress of Philarete. In his later years he wrote many religious poems.

### Wizard of Oz, The Wonderful

children's tale (1900), written by L Frank <u>Baum</u>, of Dorothy's journey by the yellow brick road to an imaginary kingdom. It had many sequels and was made into a musical film in 1939 with Judy Garland.

## Wodehouse, P(elham) G(renville) (1881-1975)

English novelist. He became a US citizen in 1955. His humorous novels and stories portray the accident-prone world of such characters as the socialite Bertie Wooster and his invaluable and impeccable manservant Jeeves, and Lord Emsworth of Blandings Castle with his prize pig, the Empress of Blandings.

From 1906, Wodehouse also collaborated on the lyrics of Broadway musicals by Jerome Kern, Gershwin, and others. Staying in France in 1941, during World War II, he was interned by the Germans; he made some humorous broadcasts from Berlin, which were taken amiss in Britain at the time, but he was exonerated later and was knighted in 1975. His work is admired for its style, erudition, and geniality, and includes *Indiscretions of Archie* (1921), *The Clicking of Cuthbert* (1922), *The Inimitable Jeeves* (1932), and *Uncle Fred in the Springtime* (1939).

### Woestijne, Karel van de (1878-1929)

Flemish poet. He was influenced by the French Symbolist movement, especially in his early works. His autobiographical volumes of baroque and sometimes decadent poetry include *Het Vader-Huis* 1903, *De Gulden Schaduw* 1910, *De Modderen Man* 1920, *God aan Zee* 1926, and *Het Bergmeer* 1928.

### Wolcot, John (1738-1819)

English satirist. Under the pseudonym **Peter Pindar**, he wrote satires and lampoons on politics and society and their prominent figures.

Wolf, Christa (1929-)

born Christa Ihlenfeld

German writer. She established her reputation, and earned the approval of the East German government, with her second novel, *Der geteilte Himmel/Divided Heaven* (1963), in which the heroine decides to forsake her romantic interest and the freedoms of the West to stay in East Germany. Though she was supportive of Marxist ideals, she was later critical of the German Democratic Republic - as in her novel *The Quest for Christa T* (1969), which was banned in East Germany.

Her other works include *Kindheitsmuster/A Model Childhood* (1976), *Till Eulenspiegel* (1972), *Parting from Phantoms: Selected Writings 1990-1994*, and *Medea* (1998).

## Wolfe, Charles (1791-1823)

Irish poet. He is remembered for one short poem, 'The Burial of Sir John Moore' 1815.

## Wolfe, Gene Rodman (1931-)

US writer. He is known for the science-fiction series *The Book of the New Sun* (1980-83), with a surrealist treatment of stock themes, and for the urban fantasy *Free*, *Live Free* (1985). His later works include the series *The Book of the Short Sun* (1999-2000), and the fantasy novel *The Knight* (2004). His writing is rich in allusion and infused with his Catholic faith.

Wolfe, Humbert (1885-1940)

English poet and critic. His volumes of poetry include *Humoresque* 1926, *Requiem* 1927, *The Uncelestial City* 1930, and *Kensington Gardens in War Time* 1940. Critical works include *Notes on English Verse Satire* 1929 and studies of the poets Alfred Tennyson 1930, Robert Herrick 1933, and Percy Bysshe Shelley 1933.

## Wolfe, Thomas Clayton (1900-1938)

US novelist. He is noted for the unrestrained rhetoric and emotion of his prose style. He wrote four long and hauntingly powerful autobiographical novels, mostly of the South: *Look Homeward, Angel* (1929), *Of Time and the River* (1935), *The Web and the Rock* (1939), and *You Can't Go Home Again* (1940). The last two were published posthumously.

## Wolfe, Tom (1931-)

#### pen-name of Thomas Kennerly Wolfe, Jr

US journalist and novelist. In the 1960s he was a founder of the 'New Journalism', which brought fiction's methods to reportage. Wolfe recorded US customs and fashions in pop-style essays in, for example, *The Electric Kool-Aid Acid Test* (1968). His sharp social criticisms were applied to 1980s New York in the best-selling novel *The Bonfire of the Vanities* (1988; filmed 1990).

Born in Richmond, Virginia, Wolfe graduated from Yale University and worked as a journalist for both newspapers and magazines. He was the Latin American correspondent for the *Washington Post* 1959-62. His other books include *The Kandy-Kolored Tangerine-Flake Streamline Baby* (1965); *Radical Chic and Mau-Mauing the Flak Catchers* (1970); *The Painted Word* (1975), about art; *The Right Stuff* (1979, filmed 1983), about the first US astronauts; and *From Bauhaus to Our House* (1981), about modern architecture. His novel *A Man in Full* was published in 1998, and a collection of essays, *Hooking Up*, in 2000.

### Wood, Mrs Henry (1814-1887)

#### born Ellen Price

English novelist who was a pioneer of the regional novel of realism. Her works include the melodramatic *East Lynne* (1861), a novel of middle-class life that sold over half a million copies; it was also dramatized repeatedly and translated into several languages. She owned and edited the magazine *Argosy*, in which she published her series of short stories, the *Johnny Ludlow Papers* (1874-87).

Wood wrote nearly 40 novels, including the highly popular *Mrs Halliburton's Troubles* and *The Channings*, both published in 1862. Her plots frequently revolve around crimes, making her works forerunners of the modern detective novel, while their narrative tone is often moralizing.

## Woodberry, G(eorge) E(dward) (1855-1930)

US literary critic. Born in Beverly, Massachusetts, he was an inspiring teacher at Columbia University (1891-1904) and elsewhere. He wrote essays, notably *Heart of Man* (1899), and biographies of Edgar Allan Poe, Nathaniel Hawthorne, and Ralph Waldo Emerson, but published little in his last, reclusive years.

Woods, Margaret Louisa (1856-1945)

English novelist and poet. Her realistic novel *A Village Tragedy* 1887 showed a rare maturity, while *Lyrics and Ballads* 1889 revealed her gifts as a poet. Her *Collected Poems* appeared 1914.

### Woolf, (Adeline) Virginia (1882-1941)

#### born (Adeline) Virginia Stephen

English novelist and critic. In novels such as *Mrs Dalloway* (1925), *To the Lighthouse* (1927), and *The Waves* (1931), she used a 'stream of consciousness' technique to render inner experience. In *A Room of One's Own* (1929) (non-fiction), *Orlando* (1928), and *The Years* (1937), she examines the importance of economic independence for women and other feminist principles.

Her first novel, *The Voyage Out* (1915), explored the tensions experienced by women who want marriage and a career. After the death of her father, Leslie <u>Stephen</u>, she and her siblings moved to Bloomsbury, forming the nucleus of the <u>Bloomsbury Group</u>. She produced a succession of novels, short stories, and critical essays, included in *The Common Reader* (1925 and 1932). She was plagued by bouts of depression and committed suicide in 1941.

## Woolrich, Cornell (1903-1968)

US writer of suspense fiction. He also wrote under the names William Irish and George Hopley (his middle names). His stories are marked by a bleak, alienated despair and create a sinister, nightmare world. Despite their sometimes clichéd plots, many of these stories were made into films, such as *Black Angel* 1943 (filmed 1946), greatly contributing to the *film noir* genre.

He spent most of his adult life as a recluse living in hotels with his mother, writing prolifically until the 1950s.

### Woolson, Constance Fenimore (1840-1894)

#### pen-name Anne March

US writer; Born in Claremont, New Hampshire (the great-niece of James Fenimore Cooper), her family moved to Cleveland, Ohio, when she was young, and she studied there and in New York, New York. She travelled with her mother in various parts of the USA and wrote travel sketches and regional stories for periodicals, such as *Castle Nowhere: Lake Country Sketches* (1875). She lived in Europe from 1879, where she became a friend of Henry James (who portrayed her in *The Aspern Papers*). She also wrote novels, including *For the Major* (1883), short stories, and

poetry. After a serious illness she committed suicide in Venice, Italy.

# Worcester, Joseph E(merson) (1784-1865)

US lexicographer. His most important work is the *Dictionary of the English Language* (1860), which reflects traditional British style in contrast to Noah Webster's recognition of US vocabulary, spelling, and usage.

Born in Bedford, New Hampshire, he worked on the family farm until he entered Phillips Academy at age 21, and then received a BA from Yale College in 1811. While teaching school he began the compilation of several gazetteers and textbooks in geography and history. In 1828 he published a revision of Samuel Johnson's famous *Dictionary of the English Language* and the next year, under the direction of Webster's son-in-law, Chauncey Goodrich, he edited an abridged version of Webster's *American Dictionary of the English Language*. He published his own *Comprehensive Pronouncing and Explanatory Dictionary of the English Language* (1830), against which Webster levelled a charge of plagiarism, thus beginning an acrimonious rivalry known as the 'dictionary wars'.

# Wordsworth, William (1770-1850)

English poet. A leader of Romanticism, Wordsworth is best known as the poet who reawakened his readers to the beauty of nature, describing the emotions and perceptive insights which natural beauty arouses in the sensitive observer. He advocated a poetry of simple feeling and the use of the language of ordinary speech, demonstrated in the unadorned simplicity of lyrics such as 'To the cuckoo' and 'I wandered lonely as a cloud'. He collaborated with English poet Samuel Taylor <u>Coleridge</u> on *Lyrical Ballads* (1798) (which included 'Tintern Abbey', a meditation on his response to nature). His most notable individual poems were published in *Poems* (1807) (including 'Intimations of Immortality'). At intervals between then and 1839 he revised *The Prelude* (posthumously published in 1850), the first part of his uncompleted philosophical, creative, and spiritual autobiography in verse. He was appointed poet laureate in 1843.

Wordsworth was born in Cockermouth, Cumberland. Orphaned at age 13, he was educated at Cambridge University. In 1792 he returned to England from a visit to France, having fallen in love with Annette Vallon (1766-1841), with whom he had an illegitimate daughter. Religious differences, poverty, and the French Revolution prevented him from marrying Annette. A legacy of £900 encouraged him to devote himself to poetry, and in 1797 he moved with his sister Dorothy Wordsworth to Somerset, where he lived near Coleridge. From 1799 he lived in the Lake District, and in 1802 he married his cousin Mary Hutchinson (1770-1859). His later years were marred by his sister's ill health and the death of his daughter Dora in 1847.

## Wouk, Herman (1915-)

US writer. He is best known for best-selling novels, such as *The Caine Mutiny: A Novel of World War II* (1951), *Marjorie Morningstar* (1955), and *The Winds of War* (1971). Born in New York, New York, he studied at Columbia University, gaining a BA in 1934, before he was employed in New York, as a jokewriter for radio comedians (1934-35) and as a scriptwriter for Fred Allen (1936-41). He also wrote plays.

## Wright, Harold Bell (1872-1944)

US novelist. He wrote the somewhat moralizing but very popular novels *The Shepherd of the Hills* 1907 and *The Winning of Barbara Worth* 1911.

# Wright, Richard (Nathaniel) (1908-1960)

US writer and poet. He was regarded as an inspiration by black American writers such as James Baldwin. His *Uncle Tom's Children* (1938), a collection of four stories, was highly acclaimed. In 1937 he moved to New York, New York, where he was an editor on the communist newspaper, *Daily Worker*, but the publication of *Native Son* (1940) brought him overnight fame.

Born near Natchez, Mississippi, the grandson of slaves and son of a sharecropper, he went to school in Jackson, Mississippi, though only up to the ninth grade, but got a story published at age 16 while working at various jobs in the South. In 1927 he went to Chicago, Illinois, and worked briefly in the post office but, forced on relief by the Depression, he joined the Communist Party in 1932. With two more minor works published, he found employment with the Federal Writers Project.

Wright was one of the first to depict the condition of black people in 20th-century US society with his powerful tragic novel *Native Son* and the autobiography <u>Black</u> <u>Boy</u> in 1945. A stage version of *Native Son* was made in 1941 (and Wright himself later played the title role in a movie version made in Argentina). *Black Boy* (1945) advanced his reputation, but after living mainly in Mexico (1940-46), he had become so disillusioned with both the communists and white America that he went to Paris, France, where he lived the rest of his life as an expatriate. He continued to write novels - such as *The Outsider* (1953) and *The Long Dream* (1958) - and non-fiction - such as *Black Power* (1954) and *White Man, Listen!* (1957).

# Wulfstan (died 1023)

Anglo-Saxon church leader and writer. He was bishop of London 996-1002, archbishop of York from 1002, and at the same time bishop of Worcester 1003-16. His literary reputation rests upon a series of sermons or moral writings, such as

Sermo Lupi ad Anglos/Address to the English composed 1014.

## Wuthering Heights

novel (1847) by Emily <u>Brontë</u>. The orphan Heathcliff is loved by Catherine, the daughter of his adopted father, Mr Earnshaw of Wuthering Heights. III-treated after Earnshaw's death, Heathcliff's extremes of love and hate are played out in the relationship between himself, the Earnshaws, and the Lintons of Thrushcross Grange and their stories. There is an ultimate reconciliation of conflicts when the daughter of the dead Catherine marries the son of Heathcliff and Isabella Linton. The novel's high reputation is based on its outstanding originality and power. It was Emily Brontë's only novel.

### Wylie, Elinor Hoyt (1885-1928)

US novelist and poet. Her poems, which combine fantasy with fine craftsmanship, appear in *Nets to Catch the Wind* 1921 and several other volumes. *The Orphan Angel* 1926 is a novel about the English poet Percy Bysshe <u>Shelley</u>; others are *Jennifer Lorn* 1923, *The Venetian Glass Nephew* 1925, and *Mr Hodge and Mr Hazard* 1928.

## Wylie, Philip Gordon (1902-1971)

US novelist. He produced the controversial work *A Generation of Vipers* 1942, a book of essays which criticized US civilization and popularized the word 'momism' for sentimentalized motherhood. He also published several novels and wrote for magazines and for Hollywood films.

Wyndham, John (1903-1969)

pen-name of John Wyndham Parkes Lucas Beynon Harris

English science fiction writer. He wrote *The Day of the Triffids* (1951), describing the invasion of Earth by a strange plant mutation; *The Chrysalids* (1955); and *The Midwich Cuckoos* (1957). A recurrent theme in his work is people's response to disaster, whether caused by nature, aliens, or human error.

### Wyntoun, Andrew of (c. 1350-1420)

Scottish chronicler. He was prior of the monastery of St Serf on Loch Leven from

about 1395 and wrote *The Orygynale Cronykil of Scotland* about 1420, a metrical record from the creation of the world to 1408. It contains the first appearance of the story of Macbeth.

### Wyspianski, Stanislaw (1868-1907)

Polish dramatist, painter, and poet. He harboured a vision of the theatre as a place where all the arts might coalesce to produce a grand symbolic event. The November 1830 rising in Poland against Russian rule is the subject of *Warszawianka/The Girl from Warsaw* 1898 and *Noc listopadowa/November Night* 1904. He wrote the highly original drama *Wesele/The Wedding* in 1901.

Wyspianski's poetic drama continues in many ways the Polish Romantic drama of Adam Mickiewicz and Juliusz Slowacki, but its formal structure links it with <u>Symbolism</u>.

## Wyss, Johann David (1743-1818)

Swiss author. He is remembered for the children's classic *Swiss Family Robinson* (1812-13). The novel was completed and edited by his son, Johann Rudolf Wyss.

## Wyss, Johann Rudolf (1781-1830)

Swiss writer. He was the son of Johann David Wyss and completed and edited his father's novel *Swiss Family Robinson* 1812-13. He was also the author of the Swiss national anthem, 'Rufst du, mein Vaterland' 1811.

## Xingjian, Gao (1940-)

Chinese-born French novelist, dramatist, and artist. Gao Xingjian's writings reflect his views as a political activist and supporter of human rights. His work combines Zen philosophy with a modern outlook and reflects the personal struggles of his people in the context of Chinese history. His works are banned in China, including the acclaimed novel *Soul Mountain* (1989), describing a mystic search through the southern and southwestern provinces of China, searching for personal freedom, roots, and inner peace. He received the Nobel Prize for Literature in 2000 for his 'oeuvre of universal validity, bitter insights, and linguistic ingenuity, which has opened new paths for the Chinese novel and drama'. He is the first Chinese person to receive a Nobel Prize for Literature.

Gao Xingjian was declared persona non grata in China and all works banned after he

published his play *Fugitives*, based on the massacre of student demonstrators in Beijing's Tiananmen Square in 1989. He has written critical essays, short stories, translations, and books on the techniques of drama and fiction. He is also a painter who produces cover illustrations for his books and has had more than 30 international exhibitions.

### Yale School

group of literary critics, based at Yale University, Connecticut, USA, who applied the deconstructionist approach of group member Jacques Derrida to literary theory. They tried to show the impossibility of a text possessing a coherent meaning by highlighting its internal contradictions and by denying the relevance of any reference to external reality or to the author's intentions.

# Yeats, W(illiam) B(utler) (1865-1939)

Irish poet, dramatist, and scholar. He was a leader of the Irish literary revival and a founder of the Abbey Theatre in Dublin. His early work was romantic and lyrical, as in the poem 'The Lake Isle of Innisfree' and the plays *The Countess Cathleen* (1892) and *The Land of Heart's Desire* (1894). His later poetry, which includes *The Wild Swans at Coole* (1917) and *The Winding Stair* (1929), was much influenced by European and Eastern thought. Throughout his career Yeats's poetic style underwent an extraordinary process of reinvention and modernization, and shaped itself around an array of personal, mythological, and political concerns. His deep influence on both Irish literature and on poetry in English in general, and his stature as an imaginative artist, can hardly be exaggerated. He was a senator of the Irish Free State 1922-28, and was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1923.

Yeats was born into a Protestant family in Dublin and was educated in both London and Dublin. He spent much time in England, and died in the south of France, but his most productive years were spent living in County Sligo, Ireland. Following his artist father's footsteps, he first studied painting but soon turned to writing. In his early verse and poetic plays, such as *The Wind Among the Reeds* (1899), *The Wanderings of Oisin* (1889), and *Deirdre* (1907), he drew heavily on Irish legend to create allusive, sensuous imagery. Later, his work adopted a more robust, astringent style and a tighter structure, and displayed a preoccupation with public affairs, all evident in the collection *Responsibilities* (1914).

## Yellow Book, The

illustrated literary and artistic quarterly in the UK to which the artists Aubrey Beardsley and Walter Sickert, and the writers Max Beerbohm and Henry James contributed. It was published in London, England, from 1894 to 1897.

### yellow press

#### or yellow journalism

exaggerated, distorted, or false information printed to boost a newspaper's circulation. The technique was first used in 1895 by two rival US publications: Joseph <u>Pulitzer</u>'s *The World* and William Randolph Hearst's *New York Journal*. It was named after a new colour process, introduced at the time, that enabled newspaper cartoons to be tinted yellow. The episode began the concept of the crusading journalist, and is still applied to stories written solely to capture a reader's attention, whether factual or not.

During the circulation war, Pulitzer hired the cartoonist Richard Felton Outcault, who pioneered the new tinting process and attracted a substantial increase in readership. Hearst retaliated by luring Outcault to the *New York Journal*. As the competition continued, the US journalist Ervin Wardman made reference to 'the yellow press of New York', giving rise to the term.

# Yerby, Frank (Garvin) (1916-1991)

US writer. He first gained recognition for his short stories about racial injustice, but he turned to writing best-selling romantic adventure novels, such as *The Foxes of Harrow* (1946).

Born in Augusta, Georgia, he studied at Paine College, gaining a BA in 1937, and Fisk University, gaining an MA in 1938, and at the graduate level at the University of Chicago in 1939. He taught English in the South (1939-41), and worked as a laboratory technician (1941-44), and as chief inspector for Fairchild Aircraft in Jamaica, New York (1944-45). He lived in Florida in the early 1950s, before settling in Madrid, Spain, in 1955. The child of a racially mixed couple, he was chided by some black American critics for not focusing on racial issues, but he did deal with Africa in *The Dahomean: An Historical Novel* (1971).

## Yevtushenko, Yevgeny Aleksandrovich (1933-)

Russian poet. He aroused controversy with his anti-Stalinist 'Stalin's Heirs' (1956), published with Khrushchev's support, and 'Babi Yar' (1961), which attacked Russian as well as Nazi anti-Semitism. His other works include the long poem *Zima Junction* (1956), the novel *Berries* (1981), and *Precocious Autobiography* (1963).

US writer. She wrote short stories, notably *Hungry Hearts* (1920), and on the basis of that publication moved from New York to California, where her collection was made into a silent movie.

Born in Plinsk, Poland, she emigrated to New York, New York, with her parents (*c.* 1901), and studied domestic science at Columbia University. She lived in the ghetto of the Lower East Side, taught cooking (1905-13), was reportedly romantically involved with John Dewey, educator and philosopher, and was married twice.

After a brief stint as a screenwriter from 1920, she moved back to New York and continued to write novels about Russian Jewish immigrants, such as *Salome of the Tenements* (1922). She published her autobiography, *Red Ribbon on a White Horse* (1950), but her novels having gone out of fashion, she died in poverty.

## Yolen, Jane (Hyatt) (1939-)

US writer, poet, and editor. She was known as a tireless lecturer, teacher, editor, and promoter of imaginative writing for children. Born in New York, New York, after graduating from Smith College in 1960, she worked for various periodicals and publishers in New York before becoming a freelance writer in 1965. Based in Hatfield, Massachusetts, from 1974, she published many fine books for children, such as *The Girl Who Cried Flowers and Other Tales* (1974) and *The Moon Ribbon and Other Tales* (1976).

### Young, Andrew John (1885-1971)

Scottish poet. He wrote many nature poems and poems of religious reflection. His first book of verse, *Songs of Night* 1910, was published privately. He reached a public with his seventh, *Winter Harvest*, in 1933. 'Into Hades' 1952, a long poem about the soul entering death, became the first part of *Out of the World and Back* 1958. He also wrote prose works on flowers and topography.

# Young, E(mily) H(ilda) (1880-1949)

English novelist. Her works are social satires set mainly in a fictionalized Bristol. They include *Miss Mole* 1930, *A Corn of Wheat* 1910, *The Vicar's Daughter* 1928, and *Chatterton Square* 1947.

The middle-aged, unmarried Miss Mole is the housekeeper in a vicarage. Her secrets and her sarcastic observations of the people she was supposed to consider her social betters display the wit and psychological insight characteristic of Young.

# Young, Edward (1683-1765)

English poet and dramatist. A country cleric for much of his life, he wrote his principal work *Night Thoughts on Life, Death and Immortality* from 1742-46, a meditation mourning the death of his wife, in defence of Christian orthodox thinking. His other works include dramatic tragedies, satires, and a long poem, *Resignation*, published in 1762.

# Young, Francis Brett (1884-1954)

English novelist and poet. His novels include *Portrait of Clare* 1927, *My Brother Jonathan* 1928, and *The Man About the House* 1942. *Poems* 1916-18 appeared 1919 and *The Island*, a long poem about England, 1944.

## Yourcenar, Marguerite (1903-1987)

#### pen-name of Marguerite de Crayencour

French writer. She first gained recognition as a novelist in France in the 1930s with books such as *La Nouvelle Euridyce/The New Euridyce* (1931). Her evocation of past eras and characters, exemplified in *Les Mémoires d'Hadrien/The Memoirs of Hadrian* (1951), brought her acclaim as a historical novelist. In 1939 she settled in the USA. In 1980 she became the first woman to be elected to the French Academy.

## Yugoslav literature

prose and poetry from the region historically known as Yugoslavia. There are different languages and cultural traditions, of which the most important are Serbian, Croatian, Slovene, and (more recently) Macedonian. They have in common strong oral poetic traditions.

#### languages

Published collections of oral material in the mid-18th century stimulated the development of the literary languages. Serbian traditionally used the Cyrillic alphabet and Croatian the Latin, reflecting religious differences, although the languages are basically the same. A meeting of intellectuals such as the Serbian Vuk <u>Karadzic</u> and the Croatian language reformer Ljudevit Gaj (1809-1872) in Vienna 1850 brought agreement to work for a common literary language. This was challenged by the controversial declaration of Croatian writers 1967 that the Croatian literary language had a distinct identity, heralding a brief 'Croatian spring' of national literary revival. Slovene survived as a separate literary language largely because of the immense popularity of the Slovenian national poet Francé Prešeren

(1800-1849). Macedonian emerged as a distinct literary language after World War II.

#### writers

The dominant Serbian writers are the Montenegrin poet Bishop Petar II Petrovic Njegoš (1813-1851), whose libertarian *Gorski vijenac/Mountain Garland* 1847 was immensely popular, and the patriotic romantic Branko Radicevic (1824-1853). Croatian literature was long dominated by the epic *Osman* by the Dubrovnik poet Ivan Gundulic (1589-1638), influenced by Torquato Tasso and the Italian Renaissance. In the 19th century the leading poets were Ivan Mazuranic (1814-1890), who completed *Osman*, and Stanko Vraz (1860-1932).

In the politically troubled 20th century there has been an unresolved literary debate in the whole region between regionalism and more universal themes, between socialist realism and modernist experiment. Among the most important writers are the satirical novelist and playwright Miroslav Krleza (1893-1981), the novelists Miodrag <u>Bulatovic</u> and Ivo <u>Andric</u>, and the poets Augustin Ujevic (1891-1955) and Vasko Popa (1922-). The leading Macedonian poet is Gane Todorovski.

## Zamfirescu, Duiliu (1858-1922)

Romanian poet, novelist, and diplomat. He wrote a cycle of five novels based on an aristocratic family, *Viata la tara* 1895, *Tanase Scatiu* 1896, *In razboi* 1898, *Indreptari* 1902, and *Anna* 1910. His posting to Italy as a diplomat had a lasting effect, and is reflected in the neoclassical style of the poems in *Alte orizonturi* 1894. He was later appointed Romanian foreign minister.

# Zamyatin, Evgeni Ivanovich (1884-1937)

Russian writer, dramatist, and critic. Although a Bolshevik in his youth, he was critical of the postrevolutionary government. In 1921, he founded an important group of writers, the Serapion Brothers. The 1920s saw the production of his finest stories and plays, including the dystopian novel *My/We*, 1924, a critique of totalitarianism that influenced the English writers Aldous Huxley and George Orwell. His criticism of the Soviet authorities ended with his exile to France in 1931.

# Zangwill, Israel (1864-1926)

English writer. He published a series of masterly sketches of Jewish life in *Children of the Ghetto* (1892). Other works include *The King of the Schnorrers* (1894), a humorous picaresque novel set in the 18th century, and *Dreamers of the Ghetto* (1898). He also wrote the play *The Melting Pot* (1909).

He was an active leader of a Zionist organization 1905-25.

# Zapolska, Gabriela (1857-1921)

#### pseudonym of Gabriela Korwin-Piotrowska

Polish dramatist. She wrote novels, short stories, and theatre reviews, but is best known for her plays, which deliver sharp, comic invective against provincial middleclass hypocrisy. The tragi-farce *Moralnosc pani Dulskiej/The Morality of Mrs Dulski* (1907) is regarded as a classic of the Polish theatre.

## Zaturenska, Marya (1902-1982)

US poet. Born in Kiev, Russia, she emigrated to the USA in 1909, and studied at Valparaiso University (1922-23) and the University of Wisconsin (1923-25). She married the poet Horace <u>Gregory</u> in 1925, and herself became a highly respected anthologist and lyric poet, as seen in her Pulitzer prize-winning (1938) *Cold Morning Sky* (1937). She also wrote a biography, *Christina Rossetti* (1949). In her later years she lived in Shelburne Falls, Massachusetts.

## Zephaniah, Benjamin Obadiah Iqbal (1958-)

English poet, novelist, performer, and cultural commentator. In 1983 he released his first poetry album, *RASTA*. Other albums include *Free South Africa* (1986), *Back to Roots* (1995), and *Belly of De Beast* (1996). His novels include *Face* (1999) and *Refugee Boy* (2001), both written for young adults.

He self-published his first pamphlet of poetry, *Pen Rhythm*, in 1980. He then became involved with performance poetry, touring extensively in the UK. His subsequent collections of poetry include *The Dread Affair: Collected Poems* (1985), which contained a number of poems attacking the UK legal system; *Too Black; Too Strong* (2001); and *We Are Britain!* (2002). In 2003, Zephaniah turned down the offer of an OBE from the Queen, saying that it reminded him of thousands of years of oppression and brutality.

# Zeromski, Stefan (1864-1925)

Polish novelist. An intense nationalist, with a keen sense of social injustice, he used his descriptive powers to shock and provoke reaction. Among his works are the novel *Popioly/Ashes* 1904, a historic panorama from the Napoleonic era; *Dzieje grzechu/A Story of Sin* 1908; and *Przedwiosnie/Before Spring* 1925. He also wrote short stories

and plays.

## Zeyer, Julius (1841-1901)

Czech poet, novelist, and dramatist. His epic verse includes adaptations of Czech mythology and of the Charlemagne legends. In prose, his masterpiece is the novel *Jan Maria Plojhar* 1891. Zeyer was sharply critical of the repressive bourgeois society of his day. *Three Legends of the Crucifix* 1895 expounds his religious and aesthetic ideals.

## Zhukovski, Vasili Andreevich (1783-1852)

Russian writer and translator. He was the leading poet of pre-Romanticism in Russia, and wrote the ballad *Svetlana* 1811. Zhukovski was tutor to Tsar Alexander II and often used his influence at the court to intercede for opponents of the regime. He introduced the genres of the elegy and the ballad into Russian literature, and made excellent translations of Schiller, Byron, Thomas Gray, Walter Scott, Goethe, and Homer.

## Zimmermann, Johann Georg von (1728-1795)

Swiss writer and philosopher. He was the author of Über die Einsamkeit/On Solitude 1756-85 and Vom Nationalstolz/On National Pride 1758. He was also a successful physician and wrote the medical treatise Von der Erfahrung in der Arznei 1763.

## Zinovyev, Alexander Aleksandrovich (1922-2006)

Russian satirical writer and mathematician. His first book *Ziyayushchie vysoty/ Yawning Heights* (1976), a surreal, chaotic narrative, represents a formal negation of the socialist realist novel and the promised 'great Future' of Soviet ideology. He complicated the quasi-scientific stance of his writing by deliberate disorganization, even in his treatise *Kommunizm kak realnost/The Reality of Communism* (1981).

## Zola, Émile Edouard Charles Antoine (1840-1902)

French novelist and social reformer. He made his name with *Thérèse Raquin* (1867), a grim, powerful story of remorse. With *La Fortune des Rougon/The Fortune of the Rougons* (1867) he began a series of some 20 naturalistic novels collectively known as *Le Rougon-Macquart*, portraying the fortunes of a French family under the Second

Empire. They include *Le Ventre de Paris/The Underbelly of Paris* (1873), *Nana* (1880), and *La Débâcle/The Debacle* (1892). In 1898 he published *J'accuse/I Accuse*, a pamphlet indicting the persecutors of Alfred Dreyfus, for which he was prosecuted for libel but later pardoned.

Zola was born in Paris. He became a journalist and a clerk in the publishing house of Hachette. He wrote literary and art criticisms and published several collections of short stories, beginning with *Contes à Ninon/Stories for Ninon* (1864). Having discovered his real talent as a novelist, he produced the volumes of *Le Rougon-Macquart* steadily over a quarter of a century, proving himself a master of realism. Other titles in the series are *La Faute de l'Abbé Mouret/The Simple Priest* (1875), *L'Assommoir/Drunkard* (1878), *Germinal* (1885), *La Terre/Earth* (1888), *La Bête humaine/The Human Beast* (1890), and *L'Argent/Money* (1891). Among later novels are the trilogy *Trois Villes/Three Cities* (1894-98) (*Lourdes* (1894), *Rome* (1896), *Paris* (1898)), and *Les Quatre Evangiles/The Four Gospels* (1899-1903) (*Fécondité/Fecundity* (1899), *Travail/Work* (1902), *Vérité/Truth* (1903), and the unfinished *Justice*).

## Zollinger, Albin (1895-1941)

Swiss novelist and poet. His novel *Die grosse Unruhe* 1939 contains social criticism and self-analysis, as do two other novels, *Pfannenstiehl* 1940 and *Bohnenblust* 1942, in which the individual seeks self-fulfilment. His poetry describes richly sensuous images and intense emotions.

## Zoshchenko, Mikhail Mikhailovich (1895-1958)

Russian humorist and satirist. His sketches and short stories, written in the language of an uneducated Soviet citizen, contrasted the ideals with the reality of Soviet life. His gibes at bureaucracy, vulgarity, and petty-mindedness often brought him into conflict with officialdom. Although he was an extremely popular writer, he was attacked by the Communist Party secretary Zhdanov in 1946 for 'cosmopolitan' views, and ceased to write. His stories include 'Bania/The Bathhouse' and 'Prikliucheniia obeziana/Adventures of a Monkey ' 1946.

# Zrínyi, Miklós (1620-1664)

Hungarian poet, essayist, and military leader. His heroic epic *Szigeti veszedelem/ The Siege of Sziget* 1651 celebrates his great-grandfather's attempt to hold the stronghold of Szigetvár in 1566 against the armies of the Ottoman Sultan Suleiman I. A major figure in Hungarian baroque literature, Zrinyi was also a successful general who wrote a number of military and historical studies.

# Zsamboky, János

Hungarian name of the historian better known as Johannes Sambucus.

# Zuckmayer, Carl (1896-1977)

German-born Swiss dramatist and writer. His plays include *Der fröhliche Weinberg* 1925, *Der Hauptmann von Köpenick/The Captain of Köpenick* 1931, *Des Teufels General* 1946, and *Das kalte Licht* 1955, a topical play about the loyalties of a German-British atomic physicist.

## Zukofsky, Louis (1904-1978)

US poet. He combined poetry, prose, criticism, musical notation, and drama in his complex epic *A* (complete publication 1979). He was a major theorist and practitioner of <u>Objectivism</u>. Zukofsky also published fiction, translations, and works of criticism and aesthetics including *Bottom: On Shakespeare* (1963) and *Prepositions* (1967). His short lyric poems were collected in two volumes in 1965 and 1966.

# Zurara (or Azurara), Gomes Eanes de (1410/20-1473/4)

Portuguese chronicler, librarian, and archivist. He became keeper of the royal library in 1451 and royal archivist in 1454 (a post he held until his death). He was also appointed royal chronicler, and the first evidence of his literary activity is his *Crónica da tomada de Ceuta/Chronicle of the Capture of Ceuta* (1449). His last surviving work is the *Crónica do Conde Dom Duarte de Meneses/Chronicle of Dom Duarte de Meneses*, completed in 1467-68.

Zurara's three other chronicles also concern particular people and incidents. The first of these was *Crónica do Infante Dom Henrique/Chronicle of Prince Henry*, initially completed in 1452-53, but a lengthy panegyric was added after his death in 1460 and the expanded version became known as the *Crónica dos feitos da Guiné/Chronicle of the Deeds in Guinea* (probably 1468/73). Zurara's other two chronicles concentrated on members of the Meneses family. The first, composed in about 1458-63, relates the life of Pedro, first governor of Ceuta, while the second (composed in about 1464-68) concerns his son Duarte, captain of Alcaçer-Ceguer.

Spanish historian from Aragon. He studied at Alcalá and in 1548 he was appointed Aragon's first chronicler. He took a more scientific and investigative approach to historical narrative than had his predecessors elsewhere in the peninsula: Zurita pursued sources in different archives, and eliminated from his accounts the more fantastic elements present in earlier chronicles. The result of his labours was the six-volume *Anales de la Corona de Aragón/Annals of the Crown of Aragon*, an account of the kingdom from the 711 Arab invasion to 1516. It was published between 1562 and 1580.

# Zweig, Stefan (1881-1942)

Austrian writer. He was the author of plays, poems, and many biographies of writers (including Balzac and Dickens) and historical figures (including Marie Antoinette and Mary Stuart). He and his wife, exiles from the Nazis from 1934, despaired at what they saw as the end of civilization and culture and committed suicide in Brazil.